

# 9 Heavenly Thunder Manual (九转雷神诀)

Chapter  
001-364

Deng Tian  
(邓天)

Story Description:

What would our world look  
like if those fictional ancient

Wuxia clans such as Er Mei, Kun Lun, Wu Dong etc persisted to modern day? Humans running on tree tops and flying through the air amongst airplanes and busses! Our main character Lei Yu belongs to a strong mysterious clan, but does not have the ability to practice his family's martial arts. He gets stepped on and tossed around but he puts up with it. Due to certain reasons, he leaves the family, coincidentally gains an ability, and makes his own path to becoming as strong as an immortal.

Original Story can be found here:

[Link](#)

# Chapter 1: Arrival of the Dragon

There are four major forces within the country of Tenglong, spread throughout the land. Although there were constant conflicts with each other, it never came to a full out war.

In a region to the West, there is a religion, the name itself sounded like a righteous religion, but it was actually an evil religion called the Ming Sect. According to legend, this religion started in the early Ming Dynasty and was originally a righteous religion. Ming sect started as a righteous sect by righteous people, but due to the passage of

time, it gradually transformed. They lost their just cause and became a despised sect by others. Amongst the four major forces, Ming Sect was the most powerful. They were in charge of the country's underground world and had a hand in many different industries. Even within key government officials, there would be Ming Sect members.

The second major force was located in the south, named the "Martial Sect". Members of this sect were all famous for their ancient clans with a long history of martial arts.

Through the history of time, they somehow gathered together, with Shangguan family as the master. The Shangguan family brought together all the separate martial clans and formed the famous group

“Martial Sect”. Of the Shangguan family, Xi Hong was the leader for daily affairs. The Martial Sect was in charge of Tenglong country’s military affairs. Their influence was something to behold.

The third major force was called the “Celestial Court.” This group was made up of arrogant people who had an unyielding faith in their diverse training abilities.

Supporting this group was a person named Shangguan Rong whom had attained the peak of the martial arts realm. Celestial Court commanded multiple prominent sects, such as Wu Dang, Kun Lun, Emei etc. (famous Sects in many Wuxia novels) Celestial Court also had an enigmatic relationship with a mysterious security force that

protected the country of Tenglong.

The last great power was actually a family. This family resided on top of a mountain in the eastern part of Tenglong. This ancient Lei family, inherited the teachings of their ancestors and continued to increase their family's influence. This family was really popular in Tenglong, and had also become a commercial powerhouse. Although there were less than 100 people in the family, their connections to the outside world is shocking to the extreme. The Lei family resides on a mountain, with established factories and processing plants. The entire Lei family all lived within this mountain and people could describe it as its own small kingdom

The master of the Lei family, Lei Yun Tian had two sons: the eldest son was named Lei Long, and the second son was named Lei Yu. Lei Yu's origin is a mystery and full of unknowns.

Inside the Lei's family great hall.

“No family brand (tattoo) so there's no possibility of practicing the family's martial arts!” A white-haired old man said in a cold tone.

Looking at his right arm, a light gradually receded, not leaving any impressions. This little boy himself was puzzled.

Once the old man concluded his announcement, the entire hall went up into a sudden commotion,

followed by bursts of disdain and ridicule one after another.

“Ha ha, this is the house master’s son? He doesn’t even have the family’s brand?”

“I don’t think he’s really that person’s child!”

“Probably a bastard child, posing as the son of the master!”

“Bastard!”

“Vile spawn!”

The little boy covered his head, turned and ran out of the great hall into the garden, screaming hysterically: “Why?! Why don’t I have the family brand? Why!”



Screaming at the sky: "I'm not a bastard! I'm not! Why?!"

Inside the great hall, a middle-aged man about forty years old, had a very ugly expression on his face. Beside him, the white-haired old man who originally made the announcement gently patted his shoulder, "I had advised you early on, but you..."

After a sigh, the middle-aged man announced: "the baptism ceremony has concluded, time to disperse." After finishing the announcement, the middle-aged man sat down in a chair with an exhausted look.

Lei Yu previously heard from his Uncle Liu mention he came to the Lei family when he was around 1

years old. He was left behind at the main gate by a woman whom was never seen again.

Lei Yu rushed towards Uncle Liu as he entered the doorway “Uncle Liu, what did my father say?”

“Well... child, you should leave this place.” Uncle Liu reluctantly shook his head. Uncle Liu had watched this child grow up so he naturally had deep feelings for him. But after this incident, there’s nothing he can change or assist him with.

Lei Yu sat back on his bed in a depressed state, Uncle Liu’s words were clear, his father does not want him to stay in the family. Was it just solely because he did not have the family’s brand? No! Lei Yu

refused to believe this, he insisted on staying.

It has been determined that Lei Yu did not have the family brand after the baptism, his life underwent an enormous change. No more words of flattery towards him, no one would greet him with a smile, everyone would walk by and scoff at this 10 year old child, and some would even ridicule him out loud.

But Lei Yu endured all these insults and ridicule, he continued to exercise on his own. In Lei Yu's heart, even if he did not have the family brand, he could still become powerful. Once he was strong enough, the family would accept him once again.

Day after day of exercising, Lei Yu used up quite a fortune to hire well-known martial artists for guidance. Day after day of blood and sweat, he kept on doing his daily exercise. Lei Yu managed to forge a strong body and mind.

Eight years went by, Lei Yu had only seen his father a few times, but it was only a glimpse of his back or his shadow.

In that eight years, Lei Yu endured daily insults of being called “bastard”, “trash”, “waste of food”, but he continued to tolerate it, in attempts to show everyone and prove to himself.

As Lei Yu was reading a book inside his room, Uncle Liu stood by the

doorway and said "Little Yu, you should really just leave this place, the master, he..."

"My father? What about him?" Lei Yu asked with a sudden bad feeling.

Gritting his teeth, Uncle Liu said "the master has decided to make you leave this family, he said the family shouldn't be raising useless people, so..."

Lei Yu swallowed hard, completely speechless. Looking at Lei Yu's face, Uncle Bo sighed, shook his head helplessly and left.

"Why? Why? Has father not seen the efforts I've put in these past few years? Why does he insist that I am useless? Is it really necessary to

have the family brand in order to be part of the Lei family? Why?" Lei Yu forcefully shook his head, he refused to believe such a thing would happen to him today, but unfortunately this was an undeniable fact.

"Bastard! Why aren't you leaving? What are you still here for?!"

While in agony, Lei Yu heard these insults being screamed outside the door. After hearing this, an ugly and disgusted expression appeared on his face. The person screaming was called Lei Yun, the grandson of one of the elder's for the Lei family. Lei Yun also happened to be the successor for the position of elder. After the baptism, this Lei Yun who was slightly older, would insult Lei

Yu on a daily basis. There were even the occasional beatings by him.

With dead cold eyes, Lei Yu glared at Lei Yun and screamed “f\*ck off!”

Lei Yun was suddenly stunned, he did not think the family’s trash would dare to use those words to him. Him, who was designated as the next successor of being an elder. Lei Yun waved behind him and up came several similarly aged young adults, each with an air of menace around them.

“Who the hell are you? You dare to speak to me like that?!” Looking around the surrounding people, he tells them “Drag him out here!”

Even though Lei Yu had practiced

martial arts for a few years, being surrounded by these few people that had practiced the special martial arts of the Lei family, Lei Yu was unable to resist them. Being held down and dragged by several people, they dragged him to the edge of the cliff.

“What do you people want?” screamed Lei Yu while struggling.

While at the edge of the cliff, they started beating up Lei Yu with their Lei family’s unique fire ability. Lei Yu was similar to a normal person, there’s no way he could bear with this abuse.

Raising his hand to block a heavy punch, Lei Yu then retaliated. Using strength from base of his legs, then



controlling the strength to his upper body, he threw out a punch, hitting Lei Yun in the chin. A “crack” sound could be heard. Some blood came out of Lei Yun’s mouth and he then spit out a tooth.

Never before had Lei Yun suffered such punishment in his life. Lei Yun experienced an extremely angry emotion. “Drop him off the cliff!”

“Uhhh...” The surrounding people looked at each other. They were able to suffer the punishment of fighting, but killing someone, they weren’t willing to bear that consequence. But Lei Yun was the next successor of being an elder, they couldn’t resist his commands either. Each one of the young adults did not know what to do.

Seeing the people hesitate, Lei Yun angrily shouted: "Push him off the cliff, I will take full responsibility!"

Lei Yu took a few steps back, standing on the edge of a cliff, eyes narrowed with a cold glare at Lei Yun. Forced to these unbearable circumstances, despised by his family and rejected by his peers, Lei Yu became utterly crazy.

"Lei Yun, if I don't die today, I will definitely come back for revenge! If I do die, my ghost will still come back to haunt you!" Lei Yu's tone was full of resentment. After hearing this, the surrounding people felt the hairs of their body rising and a cold shiver run through their backs.

Lei Yu left these words to them, turned and jumped off the cliff. Even in death, he will die with dignity. Lei Yu will not beg for mercy, knowing that he would either be beaten to death or pushed to his death, why not do it himself for a quick conclusion.

“You all saw that right? He jumped down by himself, it has nothing to do with us!” Lei Yun scratched his own chin: “F#cker, go die by yourself, why did I have to lose a tooth for this!”

The sky suddenly began to change, heavy dark clouds started gathering together. Within the dark clouds, streaks of lightning started flashing about. People who saw this thought it would rain soon and ran back

home for shelter.

Suddenly, a bolt of lightning appeared in the shape of a dragon, “Boom!,” a loud noise like a dragon’s roar. Lightning shot straight down towards the body of Lei Yu who was already floating in the river. At this point, it was unknown if he was dead or alive.

# Chapter 2: World's Biggest Joke

Floating motionless in the river, Lei Yu's body suddenly shuddered. That lightning strike entered through one of Lei Yu's arm, a powerful force constantly invading throughout his entire body. Ten minutes or so later, Lei Yu's body stopped shuddering. That lightning strike had already completely entered Lei Yu's body, leaving behind a mark, the brand of a lightning.

In an unknown paradise, beautiful flowers were blooming everywhere, the birds in the sky were chirping, beasts were in the woods crying,

this was the depiction of the environment's vitality. At the edge of this paradise by the river shore, there lay a youth with ragged clothes on with parts of his body charred. The youth's body suddenly moved. A nearby deer was drinking water suddenly turned around and fled out of fear.

This youth was not some random person, it was Lei Yu that had jumped off the cliff.

Trembling while opening his eyes, Lei Yu looked around him. Even though he did not have the strength to stand up and get out of the river, he laughed uncontrollably. He laughed for a variety of reasons. Lei Yu then gathered his strength and screamed out: "I did not die! Lei

family! Lei Yun! You guys just wait and see, wait for me!”

It was at this time, Lei Yu felt his arm, right below the shoulder area had a burning sensation. Struggling to turn his neck, looking at his arm and a sudden amazement appeared in his eyes. “This... this is... this is a brand!”

Summoning an unknown strength, Lei Yu crawled out of the river and sat down. At the edge of the shore, Lei Yu carefully focused on the burning sensation in his arm. Suddenly within his mind, a bizarre martial arts cultivation method appeared.

The explanation of the martial arts cultivation method were very in-

depth. Clearly telling him how to condense his internal energy (known as qi) and how to practice the moves. Lei Yu had never seen or heard of these cultivation methods before. But these techniques felt like it was carved into his brain, extremely clear and easy to understand.

This cultivation method had the power of lightning with a simple rating system consisting of 6 stages. The first stage was “Lightning Foundation”, releasing the power of the lightning to help cultivate the beginning stage. The second stage was “Body Refining”, using the power of lightning to cultivate a stronger outer body. The third stage was “Integration” fusing attacks with the lightning’s characteristic



in order to perform a paralysis effect. The fourth stage “Energy Suppression”, using the magnetic field characteristic of lightning and centering it on one’s self, it can manipulate the surrounding atmosphere into the body, thus completely hiding their presence. The fifth stage “Discharge,” releasing the attributes of lightning through the body, one’s attack would have a slight amount of elemental lightning damage to it. The sixth stage “Detachment” completely releases the force of lightning inside the body, in order to materialize it as an outside attack.

Within his heart, Lei Yu was unable to use any words to describe his excitement. The age old saying “If

you don't die after experiencing a huge calamity, luck will surely come your way" was actually true. He had actually attained the family's most distinguished lightning brand and gained a peerless martial art cultivation method.

Lei Yu had once gone over the Lei family's old manuscripts, and one of them recorded the history of the family. Of the Lei descendants, the ones with the most pure blood had the lightning brand, then followed by the flame brand. However, after the third generation Lei's passed away, the lightning brand never appeared in the family ever again. Therefore the flame brand became the most revered brand. Now that the lightning brand had appeared on Lei Yu's body, could anyone

imagine how excited he was?

Urgently closing his eyes tightly, Lei Yu then began carefully sensing the recorded martial cultivation methods in his mind. Lei Yu surprisingly realized that he could see all the minute details of what was happening inside his body.

Lines of purple energy was continuously flowing throughout his body. Inside his Sea of Energy (acupuncture point in the bladder area), he could feel a large amount of energy condensed there. Having read countless books in the past, Lei Yu knew exactly what this represented. It meant that he was no longer an ordinary person practicing martial arts, he was now able to practice what ordinary

people could only dream of, internal energy. And then, the practicing method to cultivate his internal energy appeared in his mind.

Following the cultivation method step by step, Lei Yu started circulating the air out of his dantian (acupuncture point near bladder) area. Each time he tried to circulate the air out, it would immediately disperse if his concentration was distracted. After several attempts, Lei Yu was finally able to barely control a thin and weak line of internal energy. Following the methods inside his mind, he slowly propelled the energy through his meridians.

As the internal energy coursed through his meridians, Lei Yu was

surprised to find that it felt like he was being bathed in sunlight. The warm and comfortable feeling almost caused Lei Yu to moan out loud in pleasure.

At this time, the internal energy approached a narrow point of his meridians and was unable to flow through. Lei Yu gathered a good amount of force before forcing it through. A “pop” sound could be heard. The meridian had actually ripped apart from the force. Lei Yu started sweating at this point.

“It broke! What should I do?”  
Fracturing of the meridians meant the internal energy would not be able to flow normally at all. But this was just a secondary issue, the main problem was the fracturing of the

meridians would cause irreprehensible harm to the body. Starting at the fractured meridian point, pain began to spread throughout the route the internal energy had travelled through previously inside Lei Yu's body. The once pleasurable warm feeling was now replaced by unbearable pain.

“God! Are you playing a joke on me?” Lei Yu felt like crying at this point. Originally, he survived a calamity without dying and gained a peerless martial cultivation method. He was not expecting his first try at cultivation would cause his meridians to fracture. Wasn't this the heavens playing the worlds biggest joke on him?

His body began trembling non-stop.

Lei Yu felt that he could not tolerate this pain anymore, especially when the pain became more intense as time went on.

As Lei Yu was about to give up, he felt a sudden tremor come from his body. An unknown green internal energy burst forth from his chest and spread throughout his body. Lei Yu examined this unknown mysterious energy and realized it did not belong to him. Lei Yu thought this was strange and wondered what it was.

With the arrival of this green energy, the fractured meridian began to absorb it like nourishment. The meridian then began recovering from the damage. While the meridian was recovering,

Lei Yu's own purple energy was waiting patiently close by, like one would wait at a bus stop. Kind of just hanging around waiting for the recovery to complete.

An hour later, the fractured meridian's repair was a success. It even became more sturdy than the original. The walls surrounding meridian point had also become tougher. Lei Yu once again tried to control his internal energy to flow through this meridian point. This time it smoothly flowed through.

"I wonder what kind of power that was. Why could it repair meridians?" Especially when this force was not his own. After thinking about it, he couldn't come up with an explanation so he just



put it in the back of his mind. Lei Yu continued training according to the cultivation methods, pushing his energy through the meridians while that unknown energy lingered around. This mysterious energy followed Lei Yu's energy like a warship escort. Each time he encountered a narrow meridian that fractured due to the pushing, this mysterious energy would immediately begin to repair it.

A full day later, Lei Yu felt tremendous changes occur inside his body. After multiple fractures and repairs, the original weak meridians had become extremely tough. And wherever his internal energy would pass through, the veins would grow larger and wider. Lei Yu also realized he was

constantly absorbing the spiritual power in the surrounding environment.

Slowly opening his eyes, there were simply no words Lei Yu could use to describe his degree of excitement. Although being super excited, Lei Yu could not suppress his hunger. Being unconscious in the water for three days and practicing his martial cultivation for a whole day, Lei Yu had not eaten anything in a total of four days.

Standing up, Lei Yu suddenly felt a bit uncomfortable. “What is this sudden feeling?”

“It doesn’t matter, I’m going to go look for food.”

Approaching a small forest area, Lei Yu went in cautiously. At this time, evening was approaching so the woods were getting dark. But Lei Yu was still able to see clearly all around.

In the distance, a tree was covered with purple/reddish fruit. Strangely, it was the only tree with such fruits. Lei Yu grabbed one, sniffed it, took a small bite, and experienced a sweet succulent taste. Unable to bear with his hunger any longer, Lei Yu started shoveling the fruits down his mouth. The juices of the fruit could be seen dribbling down the corner of his mouth. Enjoying the flavor of the fruit, Lei Yu ate over ten of them without stopping.

Lei Yu then realized this forest was

technically an unknown place to him, so he best not stay here, especially when night was approaching. Patting his full stomach, Lei Yu went back to the river's shore to sit down.

Once again, closing his eyes and concentrating, he began to practice the cultivation methods inside his mind. Lei Yu was surprised to find out that the undigested fruits inside his stomach was an excellent source of energy for cultivation. The fruits happen to contain vital elements beneficial to cultivators. Lei Yu was overjoyed – able to feel the gradual changes inside his body; the internal energy circulating everywhere; the mysterious green energy as a protector; and his body constantly surpassing its limits. Lei

Yu now understood the definition of “earth-shaking” changes.

Everyday, Lei Yu would go back to that same tree and eat the fruits for sustenance. He was surprised to find that these fruits did not seem to deplete at all. After eating some, he would come back the next day and it seemed like the fruits regrew. Lei Yu was overjoyed, at this rate, he would never run out of food. Lei Yu did not give too much thought into this miraculous circumstance.

# Chapter 3:

## Painstaking cultivation

After three months, Lei Yu had broken through the first stage “Lightning Foundation” and advanced to the early 2nd stage of “Body Refining.” At a different stage, the method of cultivating had also changed.

“Body Refining,” by definition, was to allow the outside body to become solid and tough, but not for big explosive power. For someone like Lei Yu who relies on those big explosive speed and power for attacks, this body refinement

method seemed a bit contradictory.

After doing daily physical exercises, Lei Yu would leave himself an extended period of time to relax.

This will allow the muscles to relax and not become overworked.

Overworking the muscles without downtime could cause necrosis.

Maintaining a certain balance in training was one of the most important aspects of martial arts practitioners.

Every muscle on Lei Yu had become toned with defined lines on them, not the overly big bulky muscles. Even so, Lei Yu's muscle still gave people a feeling that it contained explosive power like a fierce leopard.

Reaching the “Body Refining” stage, Lei Yu was able to freely control his body’s internal energy along with the inherent power of lightning attribute. Circulating this power throughout the body including all the large and small meridians, bone structure, skin and muscles, all would be enhanced by the power of lightning. At each critical refinement stage, there would be significant changes. One could hear a “pak pak” sound from the bones, while the skin and muscle would have the crackling sound of lightning. The pain was intolerable to Lei Yu, but all he could do was clench his teeth and deal with it. In his heart, he held onto a belief, one that had taken root and could not be swayed. (T/N: probably to become strong for revenge)



Using the internal power of lightning to refine his body was like doing homework at night. While during the day, he would work on a series of physical fitness training.

Loaded running was basically an essential part to training. Lei Yu carried a bundle of logs on his back weighing over 100 jin (1 jin 斤 = 1.33lb or 640g). Of course he had a difficult time at first, but combining his evolving body with his own adaptability, Lei Yu eventually was able to jog at a slow pace. Then ultimately, he was able to run like the wind.

Unloading the heavy logs off his back, Lei Yu flopped down onto the river's edge grasping for air. Watching fishes swim by in the

river, Lei Yu thought to himself, “the fruits were really good, but eating vegetarian all the time gets tiring. Wouldn’t it be great if I could eat a bunch of meat instead...”

There’s always a big difference between fantasy and reality. With a helpless smile, Lei Yu came back to his senses. The first thing to do was to raise his current strength, then he can think about other things later.

Picking up the bundle of logs weighing over 100 jin, Lei Yu continued to run and train.

The process of refining one’s body was difficult. It was also the hardest stage to cultivate amongst the 6 stages. Lei Yu was unable to let go

of the anger in his heart. For an adolescent teenager who had experienced years of humiliation and abuse, he had already forged a strong and determined mind. But the boiling anger of a teenager would sometimes escape, this would give Lei Yu a surge of momentum. This momentum was also the push to make him reach new heights.

-----

Inside the forest, a teenager with some leaves wrapped around his body stood still. Across from him, a fierce beast was using its tongue to lick its sharp fangs. This beast had the appearance of multiple animal parts making up his unique body. It had a tiger's head, but did not have

the tiger's stripes, a mane of hair on its chest instead of the back was touching the ground, there was a sharp horn on top of its head similar to a rhino's horn, six spikes on its back that protruded from its spine, and claws like a majestic eagle soaring through the air. Finally, this beast was covered in dark fur with a pair of blood red eyes.

The teenager's body slightly vibrated as all his internal energy started boiling inside. Condensing the energy into both his arms, this teenager was careful not to make a single mistake. Facing a unnamed fierce beast, he could feel the oppressive aura emanating towards him.

Suddenly, the fierce beast stood up, blood red eyes staring straight at the teenager, eyes giving off the impression “you are going inside my stomach.” Stepping forward with his powerful claws, he pounced towards the teenager.

The teenager immediately sidestepped.

Whoosh!

Like a gust of wind, the teenager’s body maneuvered around a few trees. Not just evading the beast’s pounce, he gripped a small tree with one hand and using the momentum, kicked upwards at the beast in mid-pounce, striking it in the abdominal area.

Having escaped serious injury from the teenager's heavy kick, the fierce beast was now seriously pissed off. Planting all four legs on the ground firmly, it arched its body up high for elevation. The beast turned around and one can see the vibration from the six spikes on his back. The spikes were searching for their target and once it located where the teenager was standing...

“Click!” The teenager rapidly retreated. The next moment, the tree he was originally next to split into 2 with very neat cuts. We can see how dangerously sharp the beast's spikes were.

The teenager was rapidly breathing. In order to beat this fierce beast, he definitely had to formulate a

strategy.

Changing his method of fighting, the teenager went head-on instead of retreating. Copying the stance of the fierce beast, both parties clashed together in a heap. The teenager turned his head to the side, narrowly avoiding the beast's attack with its rhino horns. The teenager then used both hands to grasp onto the 2 front paws of the beast. After several months of training, this teenager not only had a powerful body, both his hands and legs had become very powerful as well. The teenager was very confident in his hands' grasping power.

As the beast's claws clashed together with the human hands, the

beast had to push forward in order to be not pushed back. The beast attempted multiple times to use its fangs to bite the teenager, but the teenager was able to easily avoid them.

His lips slightly upturned in a smirk, the teenager's reserved internal energy immediately burst forth in both arms. The fierce beast's 2 front paws immediately had a numb feeling.

“Aaaaa!”

A loud howl could be heard. The fierce beast forcefully retracted its claws from the grasp, then rolled backwards. The beast stood back up and one could see the trembling in those 2 front paws.



The teenager laughed out loud, “it seems quite powerful once reaching the Integration stage!”

The fierce beast was now completely enraged, it needed a few seconds to recover. After his 2 front paws recovered, the beast’s body became a blur sprinting to the side, it wanted to attack the side of this difficult to deal with teenager instead of facing him head on.

Standing motionless in place, the teenager warily watched the beast for any flaws. Once the beast reached him around the 1 meter distance, the beast suddenly pounced over. At this time, the teenager also reacted, squatting down to the ground, using the power of over 1000 jin in his legs,

he jumped up and used his shoulder to ram into the fierce beast's solar plexus area (between chest and abdominals).

A "crack" sound could be heard. The fierce beast roared in pain, a few of its lower ribs were broken.

When the teenager trained his internal energy and his external physique, he also inadvertently trained the power of his shoulders. That's how those bundles of woods weighing over 100 jin were lifted up and carried over his back. Once one releases those powers in the shoulders and legs, its outcome was quite natural.

While the fierce beast was rolling on the ground, the teenager

approached the beast and wanted to finish it off. Unknowingly, the beast's tail resting on the ground caught the teenager by surprise and he wasn't able to dodge. The tail wrapped around the teenager rendering him immobile. Taking advantage of this situation, the beast used his hind claws and randomly attacked the teenager. Even with a strong external body, the teenager was unable to resist this random fierce attack. The teenager sustained multiple scratches and cuts with blood dripping everywhere. In a surprise move, a spike from the back of the fierce beast fired "whoosh!" stabbing into the teenager's thigh.

The piercing pain made the teenager's power explode. Using

both hands, he blocked the attacks of other incoming spikes. With the aid of his internal energy, he smashed at the spike protruding from his thigh. A “crack” sound could be heard, the spike broke apart and could be easily pulled out now. Holding a piece of the spike, the teenager aimed it at the eye of the beast and thrust forward. The aim was true and penetrated deep down, through the eye and straight into the brain. After a burst of struggle, the fierce beast gradually lost its life. The teenager then collapsed, lying on top of the fierce beast’s body while recuperating his own.

This teenager was indeed Lei Yu who had cultivated over year in this unknown paradise. And the fierce

beast was his first encounter with something dangerous. This encounter proved that Lei Yu succeeded, he had the ability to protect himself in the face of danger.

After recuperating, Lei Yu opened his eyes and stared up into the clear blue skies. Inside his brain, he was thinking: What should I do now? Remain here to cultivate? Or go to the city? Should I go back to the Lei family to prove himself to them, to show how strong he had become? At least beating up Lei Yun now is as simple as a side dish (T/N: as in “piece of cake”).

Lei Yu shook his head, no! I hate the Lei family’s narrow mindset, I hate everyone inside the Lei family!

Standing up with a slap of his hands, Lei Yu decided that since his mother left him at an early age, he wanted to go look for her and figure out why she would drop him off and then leave him. Except... where would he start looking? Whatever, first he would return to the city and then figure something out.

Turning around and looking at the dead body of the fierce beast lying on the ground, Lei Yu realized the spikes on the fierce beast were extremely sharp. Using them as weapons would be a good choice. Lei Yu then pulled out the spike that had penetrated the beast's eye. As he was pulling out the spike, Lei Yu happened to see a brief sparkle of light in the eye socket area.

# Chapter 4: Round yellow bead

Lei Yu used the spike to open up the wound larger. Closing his eyes (in disgust), he shoved his fingers inside the eye socket and retrieved an object that gave off some light.

This was a yellow bead that was constantly flashing a faint light. Lei Yu grabbed the blood covered bead along with the spike. He then slowly limped towards the river.

After cleaning it in the river, this round bead regained its original appearance. The crystal clarity of the bead gave off a feeling like it was a thousand year old precious

amber. Lei Yu brought the bead to his nose and took a sniff, an aromatic scent could be detected. The absurd Lei Yu even brought the bead to his mouth and licked it with his tongue. The round bead with saliva on it became even more brilliant and elegant looking as it flickered in the light. This dazzling light forced Lei Yu to involuntarily close his eyes.

Suddenly, the round bead moved by itself and plunged into Lei Yu's mouth. The bead became similar to melted liquid, easily going down Lei Yu's throat and dispersing throughout his body.

Lei Yu immediately panicked, trying to spit the round bead out, but now it had become an impossible feat.



Afraid of any adverse effect, Lei Yu immediately sat down cross-legged. Monitoring the internal changes, he saw that once the round bead entered his mouth, it turned into a gas and went straight to his dantian where his purple energy resided. Both forces collided together for a short period of time, then calmed down. Lei Yu did not notice any feelings of discomfort, and did not feel anything else unusual. After a long period of observation, no conclusion could be made.

Opening his eyes, Lei Yu looked at the direction the river was flowing in. He himself floated down the river, therefore if he followed the opposite direction, he should be able to get back to the city. Making up his mind, he went to pick more

of the fruits he had been eating for the past year. He then used his tattered clothing to wrap the fruits up. Ignoring his leg injury, he limped towards his destination.

---

Outside the Lei's family main gate, a teen similar to Lei Yu's age asked: "Where is Lei Yu? Is he home?"

Curling his lips in disdain, a man wearing a black suit replies: "Lei Yu? You mean that vile spawn? He's dead."

"Dead?!" The teen stared wide eyed in shock. "How did this happen? And when did it happen?"

"Little master Nuo Hu, this I am not too clear on. Hearing from little

master Lei Yun, it appears to be a suicide by jumping off a cliff. After answering the questions, the man wearing a black suit turned and walked back into the Lei family manor, ignoring the shocked teenager standing outside.

“Nuo Hu!”

Hearing someone call out his name in a familiar voice, he immediately turned around. After seeing a stranger, he was a bit disappointed. But this stranger seems to be dressed in an over the top manner.

Naked upper body, wearing material from nature to cover his lower body (T/N: think Tarzan). He had extremely long hair that one could not make out his face.

“You are...?” Nuo Hu asked, completely baffled.

“I’m Lei Yu!”

“Lei Yu! No way!” Nuo Hu took a few steps forward to look more carefully. This modern version of Tarzan swished his hair away to reveal his face.

“It really is you! Why do you look like this?” Nuo Hu asked after confirming it really was Lei Yu.

“We’ll talk once we leave this place.” Pulling Nuo Hu, they walked towards a car a short distance away. Seeing the Lei family household again, his eyes were filled with anger and resentment.

While sitting inside the car, Lei Yu

told Nuo Hu what happened the past year, but concealing his miraculous attainment of the lightning cultivation method.

“They have crossed the line! Nuo Hu slapped the steering wheel in anger, “this won’t do, I will bring my father back here so he can settle this.”

“No need, the Lei family kicked me aside, but I can still survive and make something of myself. One day, I will make them regret the decision they’ve made.” After saying these words, one can see the hatred in Lei Yu’s eyes.

“What do you plan on doing now?” asked Nuo Hu.

“I don’t know, nothing planned right now.”

“How about this, Bao and I will arrange for you to enter the Dragon Group. In there, you can get a better workout of your martial arts. Since you have something to prove, you will need to continuously attain higher cultivation levels.”

Lei Yu was currently without a plan. Wanting to look for his mother’s whereabouts requires some clues first. The probability of finding a needle in the haystack was too little. Additionally, Lei Yu wanted to secretly contact Uncle Liu, after all, he had seen his mother back then. And Uncle Liu had always treated Lei Yu well since he was young, even treated him the same after his

unfortunate results at the baptism. He was the only person in the Lei family that Lei Yu had a favorable impression of, even though he was not blood related.

Taking Lei Yu out to buy some new clothes and to get a haircut, a brand new Lei Yu appeared before Nuo Hu.

“Now you look decent!” Nuo Hu smiled while patting Lei Yu’s shoulders.

Pertaining to Lei Yu’s experience, Nuo Hu was heartbroken. Knowing Lei Yu had jumped off a cliff and his status unknown, this person who he grew up with, a friend that was more like a brother, had once again appeared in front of him.

Nuo Hu's family was very prominent and had considerable status inside the country of Tenglong. His father was a member of "Martial Sect", one of the major forces in the country. Once known as one of the ancient martial clans of the country, the Nuo family relied on their courage and strength to be in charge of one of Tenglong country's most outstanding military army, known as Dragon Group.

After some arrangements, Lei Yu was placed into a solitary building apartment to live temporarily. Nuo Hu's personal bodyguard Bao, was able to successfully assist Lei Yu in joining the big organization Dragon Group.

Martial Sect's Dragon Group was



similar to other military units, having extremely strict requirements. Each soldier could be considered the elite of the elite. One would not necessarily call them experienced veterans, but through their training, they've achieved an iron-clad body and a strong will. There isn't even a need to mention how loyal they were to their own groups.

Entering the Dragon Group was every martial artist's dream. Because Lei Yu was easily able to get in due to Nuo Hu, this caused many people to look at him through eyes of disdain.

Soldiers entering Dragon Group were hand-picked from the best after going through layers of

screening. And Dragon Group was divided into three teams. They were currently in the Wild Wolf's team area. This team numbered only a few, about 2000 people. Even so, a normal team member could effortlessly deal with 3 – 4 ordinary people. So basically their team could deal with 5 – 6 thousand people without any problems.

These newly joined soldiers would go through rigorous training and testing. After attaining a certain level of proficiency, one could then enter the higher level Lion team. Basically, out of 20 members from the Wild Wolf team, only 1 would attain this proficiency and enter Lion team, therefore there's only a hundred or so members. These members were different from the

ordinary tough soldiers, each person had extraordinary abilities.

The most mysterious was Dragon Group's Dragon team. Not only were they Dragon Group's trump card, they were the soul of the entire group. Although there were only a mere 18 people in the team, they maintained a really strong existence here. These powerful soldiers were able to train in the cultivation methods of the ancient martial art clans, embarking on the road to the next level with internal energy. Each person were absolutely loyal to the Dragon Group. Just the Dragon Group alone had such a powerful force, one can wonder how much power the entire Martial Sect held in its hand.

Lei Yu entering the Dragon Group naturally had to go through a series of tests. Even with his connection to Nuo Hu, a random position could not be casually given.

Dragon Group's testing were demanding and strict, there's no back door to get in. Nuo Hu could forcibly put Lei Yu in the group, but whether Lei Yu could settle in peacefully would be up to his own ability.

This test given happens to be completely customized for Lei Yu because it wasn't the normal scheduled time for the Dragon Group to recruit new people.

Presiding over the testing was Dragon Group's famous #3 ranked,

Fan Hong Chang. Dragon Group had 3 big mountains backing it up (3 pillars of strength). The first mountain was Nuo Hu's father, Nuo Yi Long. His strength had reached a scary Fifth Order Warrior.

Following close behind Nuo Yi Long was his twin sister, Nuo Yi Feng.

This pair of Long and Feng (dragon and phoenix) can be described as tough to unimaginable proportions.

As for the third mountain named Fan Hong Chang, he is a descendant from the ancient martial arts clan. He has reached the Fourth Order Warrior stage, he just needed a breakthrough and will be able to attain a higher rank.

Lei Yu entering Dragon Group through a special relationship

would of course cause many people to see him in a bad light. Not only were ordinary soldiers looking at him with disdain, Fan Hong Chang was also looking at Lei Yu with disdain.

# Chapter 5: Where the sky meets the earth

“The test is divided into two parts, written and martial arts. Entering Dragon Group is extremely strict, if one does not have higher abilities than an ordinary person, I advise you to leave as soon as possible, no need to waste everyone’s time here.” Fan Hong Chang did not care about the relationship between Nuo Hu and Lei Yu so he did not have a fawning smile. He had the face of an impartial judge.

“Can I start?” Lei Yu asked with indifference. Raising his head

exposing his face with arrogance, this was Lei Yu's biggest change. Being constantly humiliated at a young age, this has made Lei Yu's personality different from an ordinary person.

This simple reaction from Lei Yu made the so called "iron mask" judge's face light up a bit. If one did not have some air of arrogance, they were considered spineless (feeble). Even possessing a good innate talent, if one did not have a mindset and personality to back it up, they were equal to useless trash.

Outside the walls of the testing area, soldiers crowded around to watch. They wanted to see what ability this arrogant guy had, daring to stand there waiting to be tested



by himself.

Lei Yu's performance made Fan Hong Chang and all the surrounding soldiers dumbfounded. A normal person could carry the weight of 200 jin as their maximum limit, Lei Yu was carrying on his shoulders barbells weighing 270 jin while steadily jogging around. This made all the nearby newbie recruits jaws drop in surprise.

Originally, the strength test and stamina test were separate, but Lei Yu carrying the barbells went for a run. A lap around the testing area was about 200 meters, Lei Yu ran 30 laps which was equivalent to 6 kilometers (3.7 miles). Running with weights on him was a simple task, this past year, Lei Yu went

through a myriad of physical training while in the [Body Refining] stage.

“He passes! He passes! Strength and endurance far exceeds an ordinary person!” Fan Hong Chang excitedly ran towards Lei Yu. Grasping the barbell on Lei Yu’s shoulder with one hand, he then casually throws it aside. This soldier was definitely material that would enter the Dragon Team in the future. Anyone of the “3 mountains” would be extremely happy at this point.

Standing outside the testing ground, all the newbie recruits were shocked. The original eyes of disdain had disappeared without a trace replaced with surprise and admiration. Was this something

humans were capable of?

Rules were rules, Lei Yu had to participate in the other test as well, but for someone that grew up reading many books, the next test was actually by far the easiest task for him out of everything. Lei Yu's performance on the second test garnered cheers and applause. After testing, the next day will be conducting team assignment.

Typically, soldiers were required to live in the military barracks. Lei Yu got rid of the stigma of entering Dragon Group through the back door with Nuo Hu's connection. He was now able to continue living in the solitary apartments, allowing him to cultivate without being disturbed.

Nuo Hu and Lei Yu both ate a simple lunch, then went to a nearby supermarket to buy daily necessities for Lei Yu.

Lei Yu was very grateful towards Nuo Hu. When he was back in the Lei family household, he and Nuo Hu were relatively good friends. Now expelled from the family and penniless, this friend of his was still treating him very well. Compared to his heartless cold blooded family, this difference was too great.

Walking towards the supermarket, Lei Yu turned around and said: “Thank you Nuo Hu.”

“Thanking me for what? For helping you?” Nuo Hu smiled and said: “We two grew up as close as

brothers, why are you saying those words to me? You don't have a home, but you have me as a good friend, a good brother, doesn't that make up for it?

Lei Yu's eyes became moist. Lei Yu did not cry when he left the Lei family. Alone in an unknown place for over a year, he struggled and survived it. But facing Nuo Hu's statement, Lei Yu could not restrain his tears.

"Thanks, thank you!" Lei Yu said emotionally.

"Come on, don't be like this." Nuo Hu patted Lei Yu's shoulders, "I'm older than you by two months, how about we two become sworn brothers?"

Lei Yu immediately nodded. Regarding relationships, Lei Yu was extremely eager for them. Whether it was familial relationships or friendship, Lei Yu would treasure them. Since he had lost his family and his home, now someone was willing to become his sworn brother, to Lei Yu, this was undoubtedly a colossal gift.

Not needing to hold any formal ceremony, and only needing the words between the two to form a brotherhood, this was considered a real relationship.

Since they were now brothers, Lei Yu did not withhold any secrets and told Nuo Hu about the brand on his arm and all the details of the martial cultivation methods

imprinted into his mind. Nuo Hu was naturally very happy for Lei Yu.

-----

Never stopping his cultivation, the surging internal strength inside his body cannot be compared to the weak body from a year ago.

Invigorating internal energy was now circulating around his body and meridians. And Lei Yu was able to manipulate his internal energy with relative ease. Each time he pushes and circulates his internal energy, he will gain some benefits from the workout.

Night time – as the cool wind blows, one can see outside the window that the leaves on the trees were continuously swaying due to the

wind. Lei Yu was sitting on the floor with his eyes closed cultivating.

Peering inside his body, the energy of the yellow bead from before was originally quiet, but now it suddenly started surging again. Like the current of the red sea, a flood of yellow energy was endlessly surging in the Sea of Energy point. Lei Yu panicked, using his own internal energy to wrap up and consume the yellow bead's energy trying to make it his own. But no matter how hard he tried to consume it, the energy would find a gap to escape, he was unable to control it.

The yellow energy had the power to go from the meridians to the heart vessels' pulse points. The vigorous energy scoured through Lei Yu's



internal impurities while also expanding his meridians. Lei Yu did not feel any discomfort, so he temporarily controlled his own energy to stay in the Sea of Energy point. He wanted to see what exactly the force of energy was up to.

The energy continued from the heart vessels going upwards, dividing and moving through different channels. Lei Yu panicked again, if it was only a single stream of energy, with some planning he could eventually fuse it together with his. At this rate, there were simply too many channels for him to stop. It was too late to fix anything now. Lei Yu's forehead was covered with sweat, carefully monitoring the powerful energy,

wanting to figure out just exactly what this energy was up to.

The energy continued without the slightest pause, continued flowing upwards through multiple channels. Its task was the same before, scouring and removing all the internal impurities, pushing them outside of his body while travelling to its next destination.

Finally inside Lei Yu's mind, the energy travelling in different channels converged together. In-between the eyebrows lie an important meridian point. If by chance an energy invades that area, it will be difficult to expel it. And trying to control the energy that has already invaded the meridian point will be a difficult task. Lei Yu

regretted somewhat for not making a decision early on, then again, there weren't any strange occurrences where the yellow energy passed through, except for the expelling of impurities which is considered a positive thing.

Suddenly Lei Yu felt his mind become hazy. A yellow light was constantly swirling around, making Lei Yu feel a bit dizzy. Trying his utmost to control his brain... when he finally recovered, Lei Yu was surprised to find everything around him had changed. There's nothing around him and looking at a distance, one could see where the sky meets the earth. (T/L: where the sky meets the ground forming a line)

Obstructing that line, Lei Yu saw two wild beasts fighting against each other savagely. Carefully observing, Lei Yu was surprised to find one of the wild beasts was exactly the one he had killed in the forest earlier on. Why did this wild beast suddenly appear in his mind?

And the appearance of the other wild beast, Lei Yu's first instinct was a good omen, because the other beast was a Qilin. (T/L: aka Kirin, dragon head with a horse/deer/ox body).

The two wild beasts wrestled and tangled together, causing non-stop tremors at the line. A roar resonated through the sky and a powerful explosive force was felt inside Lei Yu's mind.

Gradually, the battle between the two wild beasts slowed down. It appears the Qilin did not have enough stamina for the prolonged fight, and was eventually torn to pieces by the black wild beast. A yellow bead came out of the Qilin, continuously shimmering with light. The yellow bead was gulped down by the black wild beast, turning into a yellow gas and entering its body.

Lei Yu was surprised to find out the origin of the yellow bead came from the body of a Qilin. But why did he find it inside the head of the black wild beast? Gradually, Lei Yu completely comprehended the situation.

After witnessing this ground

shaking battle amongst the backdrop where the sky met the earth, Lei Yu resumed control of his brain. The yellow energy in his head began to condense, increasing in speed, and eventually forming the yellow bead.

Lei Yu opened his eyes “wait a minute...” Lei Yu could not understand one point. The Qilin and the black beast would be comparable in power, why would the Qilin let itself be devoured? It’s even possible the Qilin was more powerful... what’s going on?

This whole matter made Lei Yu feel like his brain was going to short-circuit. No matter how much he thought about it, he could not come to a conclusion. As to what the

main purpose of the yellow bead's function was, Lei Yu did not know. He only knew it cleared a lot of impurities inside his body's meridians.

Exhaling a breath, Lei Yu felt his whole body was sticky. Looking down at himself, his white t-shirt was covered in a black disgusting ooze that would make a person want to throw up. He immediately took off his clothes and went straight to the bathroom.

# Chapter 6: Dragon Group Tests

Quickly taking a bath, the dawn sky was already starting to get hazy with light. Lei Yu lived in a solitary high-rise, since it was still early in the morning, Yu Lei stood in front of the window watching all the cars coming and going by on the street.

Lei Yu recalled the battle scene between the two wild beasts and that yellow bead, “I wonder what was up with that?” Without realizing it, Lei Yu touched his forehead. Thinking that there was a bead inside his head made him a bit uncomfortable.



Inadvertently turning around, Lei Yu saw his tattered clothes.

Remembering wrapped inside his tattered clothes were the unknown named fruits he had picked but never ate. Unwrapping the clothing, he took a bite out of the fruit. The fruit was still plump, juicy, and very sweet. It had not gone bad even though it was picked quite a few days ago.

“Ahhh, so good, I should really let Nuo Hu try some.” After eating another one, his internal energy slightly vibrated giving Lei Yu an enjoyable feeling. Usually after eating the fruit, he would sit down and absorb it, but today he didn’t do that. Picking up his newly purchased backpack, shoving a few pieces of fruit inside, he left the

house.

Lei Yu's apartment was a bit far from the Dragon Group grounds, but he did not take any public transportation, he chose to jog there. Even though jogging would not increase his cultivation level by that much, but he would still attain some tiny benefits from it.

“Little Yu!”

The currently jogging Lei Yu turned his head and saw Nuo Hu driving towards him.

“Take this.” Nuo Hu took out a brand new top of the line cell phone from his pocket and handed it to Lei Yu. “This will help us communicate easier, and I have

good news to tell you.”

“Oh? What good news?” Lei Yu asked.

“Do you remember Ai Er?”

“Ai Er? Didn’t she go live abroad?” Lei Yu remembered Nuo Hu’s little sister called Nuo Ai Er. Since they were young, this little girl loved playing together with her two brothers. And since she was young, she was intelligent and easy to get along with, gaining Lei Yu’s adoration.

“Right, but she is about to return home, she’s currently filling out paperwork these few days.”

“That is great!” The cell phone was just handed to Lei Yu, it then

started ringing. Lei Yu could see a smirk on Nuo Hu's face, indicating he should answer the phone.

“Hello?”

“Brother Yu!” (T/N: should be brother little Yu, but doesn't make sense in English)

“Ai Er?”

“Wait for me, I'm coming home soon, I want to see if you've become more handsome! This is an international long-distance call, very expensive, hanging up now!”

Not letting Lei Yu respond, the other side already hung up the phone. Lei Yu shook his head helplessly, living abroad for several years, this little missy's thoughts

were quite westernized, starting a conversation with such a greeting.

Putting the phone in his pocket, Lei Yu mysteriously took out the purple reddish fruit from his backpack and handed it over to Nuo Hu.

Hesitantly holding the fruit, Nuo Hu first took a small bite. His eyes suddenly opened in surprise, proceeding to gulp down the fruit with such ferocity. Watching Nuo Hu close his eyes in contentment, Lei Yu also smiled in satisfaction.

“What kind of fruit was that? How could it taste so good?”

Lei Yu shrugged, “I don’t know but I’ve been eating it the past year to survive.”

As Lei Yu was saying that, Nuo Hu's look of surprise became more obvious, "such a feeling of rejuvenating energy! What is going on?" Gently rubbing his stomach, Nuo Hu asked in amazement.

"I also don't know, but it definitely helps with cultivation."

While sitting inside the car, Nuo Hu closed his eyes and experienced the rejuvenating energy. Nuo Hu's smile gradually became more brilliant, just one fruit and he was able to feel earth-shaking changes in his body. He could not even fathom this monster Lei Yu had actually eaten this fruit for a whole year, what kind of improvement has he gained.

“I still have some more here, it’s all yours.” Lei Yu generous took all the fruits from his backpack and gave it to Nuo Hu.

“What about you?”

“I ate a lot of them already, I don’t think they have much effect on me anymore.”

Nuo Hu excitedly took all the fruits. One could see that in his eyes, they were filled with gratitude towards Lei Yu. Lei Yu acted selflessly because he felt that it was a normal thing to share with one’s’ brother.

Nuo Hu belonged to ancient clans inside the Martial Sect. He learned martial arts since he was young, and they were the top tier martial

cultivating arts, naturally making him different from ordinary people. This spiritually infused fruit for Nuo Hu was like a cultivation increasing elixir, how could he not be excited?

Going with Nuo Hu, they arrived at the military camp.

“Has your energy consumption recovered from yesterday?” asked Fan Hong Chang.

“Completely recovered.”

Fan Hong Chang nodded his head: “Are you willing to accept another test today?”

“Huh? Why?” Lei Yu hurriedly asked, thinking that there problems with yesterday’s test.



“Your ability has already exceeded the standards of the Wild Wolf Team. The Commander, Deputy Commander and I, have decided to have you test for admission into the Lion Team.”

The test results were expected by Lei Yu and Nuo Hu, that’s why Nuo Hu did not show much surprise during yesterday’s test. But for those new recruits, it was definitely unimaginable.

Lei Yu naturally agreed, if he could attain a higher level, it would mean he will be in contact with more powerful individuals. This may help him improve his cultivation greatly.

For this test, endurance and strength were no longer the

objective, instead it was fighting. This was actually Lei Yu's weakness. When in the Lei family household, he was often beaten by others, never retaliating. Just before he left the Lei household, he only retaliated slightly, it could not be really considered fighting back. Counting the days until now, he had only fought with the unnamed fierce beast in a death struggle, therefore Lei Yu's actual combat experience were rather inadequate.

"What type of fighting are we engaging in?" asked Lei Yu.

"Within the Lion Team, I will pick the weakest soldier to fight with you. If you can win against him, you will have some time to rest. You can then choose to challenge the next

strongest fighter, or you could give up. Naturally, you will be able to enter Lion Team at this point, but you will also be like that weakest soldier, at the bottom of the barrel” explained Fan Hong Chang.

Lei Yu nodded his head, “I understand, lets start then.”

Hearing that yesterday’s new recruit who had just entered the Wild Wolf Team was now being tested for team advancement, it attracted the attention of new recruits and veterans, all running to come watch.

“Isn’t this guy a bit too powerful? He passed the test yesterday to get into Dragon Group, now he can participate in the team

advancement test!”

“That’s right! It’s too unbelievable!”

Many new recruits stood outside the testing grounds discussing this. Then the Lion Team’s veterans were brought to the center of the testing grounds, sitting around in a circle forming a fighting ring.

“You, come out!”

“Yes!”

A strong looking soldier stood up and walked towards the center of the ring. Fan Hong Chang said: “Very simple rules, you’re not allowed to hurt vital areas, not allowed to kill, knocking down or making the opponent yield will end the match. Understood?”

“Understood!” Lei Yu and the unnamed soldier replied in unison.

“Start!” yelled Fan Hong Chang, quickly withdrawing to the edge of the ring. Nuo Hu crossed his arms and nonchalantly looked at Lei Yu.

Being with Lei Yu these past 2 days, Nuo Hu knew how much power Lei Yu possessed. Even if they were Lion Team’s soldiers, they were no match for Lei Yu. Their physical abilities were only beyond the Wild Wolf Team soldiers, reaching the pinnacle levels of ordinary people, but still only an ordinary person. Lei Yu and Nuo Hu both discussed that the aim was to directly enter Dragon Team. But they still had to follow normal testing procedures for this.

Sure enough, the soldier assumed a standard fighting stance and slowly approached Lei Yu, and began throwing out punches. But Lei Yu did not block or counter-attack because he did not think his opponent's fist was able to hurt him. Once in a while, he would move his hand to deflect a fist aiming for his head, but when it came to his body, Lei Yu did not resist and allowed the attacks to land.

One by one, the Lion Team members revealed looks of surprise. Even if the participating soldier was the weakest out of them all, no one would dare to stand there and take the beating. If someone was to say Lei Yu did not know how to defend himself and could only take on the

attacks, yet strangely why did his face not suffer any attacks.

The new recruits outside the testing grounds began to have their blood boil in excitement. This was really unimaginable!

“Wow! He is too strong!”

“That’s right, look, he’s not even making any moves!”

“What do you know, if he was to fight back, his opponent will immediately get knocked out!”

“I think that’s an accurate assessment!”

The uproar outside the testing ground had cause some anxiety to the soldier who was currently doing

his best throwing out punches. His fists became more rapid and powerful, aiming at Lei Yu's head area. But no matter how hard he tried, he was simply unable to break through this line of defense.

Lei Yu relied on his speed and powerful defense. After the [Body Refining] stage, Lei Yu was not someone an ordinary person could hurt, even if that ordinary person was at their pinnacle limit.

“Do you think it is necessary to continue fighting?” Lei Yu asked as he gently deflected a punch that was aimed at his face.

Immediately after the question was asked, the soldier stopped his attacks, standing there breathing in



ragged breaths. In that short 3 minutes, he was already exhausted and out of breath. While Lei Yu looked like nothing much had happened except a friendly chit chat had just occurred. Is this something humans are capable of doing?

Not only the new recruits, even those Lion Team soldiers sitting around the ring began to tense up, constantly whispering to each other.

“Be quiet!” yelled Fan Hong Chang running to the center of the ring, “the results are very obvious!”

This soldier lowered his head, ran back to the edge of the ring and silently sat down. He knew deep

inside that if Lei Yu attacked, even if it was just 1 punch, he may be currently lying down inside the military's field hospital.

“Lei Yu, you can choose to continue challenging stronger opponents, or you can also choose to give up, either way, you can enter the Lion Team.”

“Wow!”

The audience were in an uproar. Just on the second day, this teenager who had recently joined the Dragon Group was able to advance into the Lion Team, which was the team that all new recruits dreamed of joining. This could be considered something that has never happened before in Dragon

Group. If one insists on saying this could happen, then it could only happen to a descendant of those ancient martial arts clans who had the ability. Looking at Lei Yu, it seems he only had a close relationship with Nuo Hu with no mention of which clan he was from.

Lei Yu smiled: "I choose to continue the challenge!" Pausing briefly, he then said: "I choose to challenge the Lion Team's strongest soldier!"

"Okay!" Fan Hong Chang eyes shone with excitement, he hadn't seen such an outstanding soldier for a long time. As to the identity and history of Lei Yu, he has heard some stories about it. But to be abandoned by the family as useless trash could actually be this

powerful, this was a shocking situation.

The entire audience was once again boiling with excitement. Daring to challenge Lion Team's strongest person, this was undoubtedly the most challenging feat in the existence of an ordinary person.

This situation has never happened in the history of Dragon Group. The strongest would most definitely be the number one pick to advance into Dragon Team at the next scheduled exam. His great strength would naturally be revered by all soldiers.

“I accept the challenge!”

A soldier with a rosy looking face stood up from the corner and ran to

the center of the ring. Lei Yu carefully sized up the soldier. Even though the physical appearance did not look as strong as the last soldier, but the imposing manner he gave off had already exceeded that last soldier. This was the spirit that Dragon Group's soldiers were required to have.

# Chapter 7:

## Restaurant Conflict

“Start!”

Everyone held their breath, they all wanted to see this exciting fight. The #1 strongest in the Lion Team’s fighting ability was something everyone wanted to see. But the conclusion made everyone’s jaws drop. Lei Yu continued to stand at the same spot only defending his head area. He allowed the soldier’s most powerful attacks to land on the rest of his body, yet those attacks could not even force Lei Yu back half a step.

“Is... is he even human?”

“Isn’t he too overpowered?”

“I bet he can definitely enter Dragon Team! Dragon Team, my dream place!”

This challenge was extremely quick, just a mere 10 seconds. The soldier stopped his attacks and said “you are very strong, there’s no way I can defeat you.”

Lei Yu’s powerful defensive capability garnered everyone’s applause. And no one dared to imagine this person’s attack power.

“Lei Yu, you really have caught me off guard!” Fan Hong Chang had already abandoned yesterday’s cold expression and look of disdain, instead was really excited. “Today’s

test is over, 1 month later, you can choose to participate in the exam for Dragon Group's strongest team, Dragon Team."

"Oh heavens!"

Shouting came from everywhere, losing their soldier's demeanor. But no one had encountered this outcome before. Only entering Dragon Group for 2 days and was qualified to participate in advancing to Dragon Team, which was the soul of Dragon Group. Was this something a human is capable of?

After a day of bustling, to show his gratitude of receiving the unknown fruit from Lei Yu, and for Lei Yu's outstanding performance today, Nuo Hu generously treated Lei Yu



to a big feast. Inside a high-class restaurant, Nuo Hu reserved a VIP room. And this meal was Lei Yu's most sumptuous meal he has eaten this past year.

Two people were at their height of enjoyment eating when a loud commotion could be heard outside the door.

“Who allowed you to let people occupy my young master's private room?”

“Sorry sir, it... it was the manager” answered a staff member with a quivering voice.

Lei Yu and Nuo Hu glanced at each other, the noise outside did not stop. “Get your manager here now, I

want to see who has the panache (the ability), there's only a few people who are eligible to be like our young master capable of using the VIP room!" (T/N: young master as in the son of house's owner)

Lei Yu actually did not care, but Nuo Hu was already frowning. As the son of Dragon Group's commander, his identity automatically gained respect from others. Yet there was someone bold enough to bluster those comments, especially coming from a henchman, this made Nuo Hu very angry.

Without waiting for Nuo Hu to get up, the room's door was forcibly opened. Three twenty-something year olds came inside. One of them

in the lead pointed at Nuo Hu and Lei Yu, seeing that both of them looked like young teenagers, opened his mouth and said: "You two rascals, before I get angry, get out of here immediately. Oh right, I can pay for the meal that you 2 ate, consider that your leaving fee, what do you say?"

Insult, such a big insult. For Nuo Hu, besides his father, no one has ever dared to speak to him in such a manner.

"You dog-like fcukers really dare to speak like that!" Nuo Hu cursed.

The lead guy in a black suit said: "Oh? Mouthing off like that! Fellow brothers, let's go teach this rascal a lesson on the difference between

heaven and earth.

The three people rubbed their fists, cracking their joints with a “pak pak” sound, then approached Nuo Hu and Lei Yu.

Nuo Hu’s eyes gleamed with anger, he wanted to get up and take care of those guys. Lei Yu gently patted Nuo Hu’s shoulder and at the same time, the other hand gently smacked on the table top. Lei Yu’s force could be described as terrifying. This was gained by training hard for the past year. One side of the table received pressure so the other side sprung up. Because it was a round table, just when the three guys neared, they were all struck in the chin at the same time. Those three people all

sat on the ground clutching their mouths with “ow ow” sounds coming from them. The lead guy in the black suit then spit out a tooth. Lei Yu thought that this scene seemed very familiar to him.

“You rascals wait here, I’m going to bring my young master here, then you will know the meaning of death!” Because a tooth came out, dog fcuker said this with a lisp.

The three people rushed out of the room, heading towards the main entrance.

A white BMW vehicle arrived and out came a well-dressed young man in his twenties, sporting slicked back hair.

“Young master! Someone has taken over your room and attacked us!” said one of the three holding his chin in distress.

“Mutherfcuker! Who dares to do that? Lets go, take me there!” said the young man with a sneer. Screaming and cursing, those 3 arrived at the VIP room with the young master.

This was the year that the young man known as the young master arrived at the VIP room and saw Nuo Hu, his face suddenly became pale and even trembled a bit. He knew who Nuo Hu was, while he himself was just the son of the mayor. While in front of him was the country’s most prominent military force “Dragon Group”

commander's son. One cannot even compare their status on the same level. The mayor's son in the eyes of others was just a local official's child. When facing Nuo Hu, one could only stand down and back away.

“Nuo...”

“Who are you?” asked Nuo Hu while casually sipping a cup of juice without bothering to look up.

“Open your dog eyes and look clearly, this is the son of our mayor, Luo Yong young master!” said one of the beaten up henchmen while holding his chin.

After his own attendant said that, this Luo Yong suddenly panicked.

Grabbing the attendant that mentioned his name, he then slapped his big mouth with a “pak pak” sound, causing the man to become confused.

Then with his head lowered, ran to the round table and bowed, “master Nuo, s... sorry! sorry! I did not teach them well, sorry for disturbing your dinner!”

“Skinny dipping? Such a good name! Go home and carefully teach your henchmen, they really lack discipline, disturbing our dinner and all!” said Nuo Hu smirking. (T/N: Luo Yong can be written other ways and sounds like skinny dipping in Chinese)

“Thank you! Thank you! I



understand, I ... I'll go back and discipline them properly!"

Those several henchman saw their own family's young master treating the two young teenagers before their eyes with such courtesy, became completely blindsided. Their own bodies began to quiver, unsure how bad they would be beaten up when they get home.

After those people left, the room resumed its peacefulness. Lei Yu said: "wow, there really are many types of people in the world."

"Ignore them, come, let us continue to eat!"

After leaving the restaurant, it was already past 9PM. Nuo Hu took Lei

Yu back to the military housing before driving home himself.

Returning home, Lei Yu could not wait to take off his clothes. He was sitting on the floor naked because he was afraid that while cultivating, it would dirty his clothes again.

According to the records in his mind, Lei Yu was at the peak of the first stage of [Integration].” At this stage, he only needed to control the internal energy, merge it into his body, allowing his attacks to contain elements of lightning in it. Although at this high level, he could not stop, he had to continue improving to higher levels. Even though he could currently control his internal energy with ease, it was still not enough. His internal energy

was continuously growing stronger so he needed sufficient capability to control it.

The unknown cultivation technique to this day did not have a name yet. Lei Yu thought for a while and laughed: “How about I call it Lei Yu Divine Arts!” Settling down with a smile, he then closed his eyes and continued experiencing this miraculous feeling.

Controlling his internal energy and causing them to constantly circulate, Lei Yu pushed the energy through the meridian’s predetermined path. Carefully moving step by step since he was afraid of making mistakes.

Inside his body, the two pieces of

fruit he ate in the morning, one of the fruit's spiritual energy had not completely dissipated yet. So this allowed Lei Yu to completely use it up now. Additionally, he was absorbing the necessary components in the air, his internal energy slowly grew stronger. This slow growth cannot be detected right away, but would only show its results over time. Lei Yu could also feel that his internal energy had become more profound and free of impurities. This contribution was thanks to the yellow bead inside his brain.

# Chapter 8: Return of Ai Er

As the purple colored internal energy slowly circulated forward, it would encounter some minor obstacles. With just a bit of added strength, he could break through those obstacles. Lei Yu really enjoyed his success – the way his internal energy flowed, it was like cutting down anything in his path whether it be soldiers or generals (metaphor). When arriving at a meridian, there would be another barrier blocking him, similar to a defending warrior. Usually Lei Yu could pass through leisurely, but if he used too much force resulting in

his meridians fracturing, pain would be felt. Then the green energy would immediately activate, repairing the damage. After countless fractures and repairs, Lei Yu's meridians had enlarged several times, becoming tougher and more flexible than before.

The spiritual energy in the air was being absorbed by the circulating internal energy. And the yellow bead in Lei Yu's brain would immediately transform into a gas, acting as a filter for the newly absorbed energy from the air, removing all the impurities, making the spiritual energy become extremely fine and pure.

Lei Yu currently has three types of forces in him: the purple energy

being his own used to cultivate his abilities; a green energy that would work behind the scenes to repair any damages to his meridians and other acupuncture points; and the yellow energy that will remove impurities from the spiritual energy he absorbs from the air.

But the most confusing thing for Lei Yu was that he did not know the origin of those three forces. And he did not know why they were residing inside his body. But these weren't important, the most important fact was his body kept continuing to increase in power.

Two weeks later, Lei Yu continued cultivating as always. On a typical day with nothing to do, he would hang out with Nuo Hu.

Occasionally, they would go to Dragon Group headquarters to learn some military policies and procedures. The days passing by were simple but strictly disciplined. Lei Yu never thought of breaking the current routine. But once “this” person appeared, everything became a bit chaotic.

Nuo Hu and Lei Yu both stood at the main entrance of the airport chatting. It appears if they were waiting for someone.

“Brother!”

A voice that sounded like beautiful wind chime floated into their ears. They looked up and both Lei Yu and Nuo Hu became shocked.



Nuo Hu also has not seen his sister for three years. These three years she did not come back at all, just studying abroad. Now that she was back, Nuo Hu had trouble recognizing her.

The delicate face with a high nose, a pair of bright eyes as clear as moonlight, a pouty red cherry like lips, wavy long hair gently swaying in the breeze, if not for the undeveloped chest area, one would really mistaken her for a young maiden ready to be married off.

The young girl ran up to Nuo Hu and gave him a big hug. The brother and sister had not seen each other for 3 years. This emotional embrace proved how much they missed each other.

“Brother, could he be...” Ai Er turned her head to look at Lei Yu, eyes revealing a somewhat surprised look.

“You don’t recognize him? He is little Yu!” said the smiling Nuo Hu.

“Wow!” This Ai Er did not restrain herself, turned and hugged Lei Yu, “brother Yu! I haven’t seen you in a long time! You’ve really become handsome too!”

Lei Yu forced a gulp down. When they were young, he would be usually carrying this little sister with him, running all over the mountains without any intimate feelings whatsoever. Now this little Ai Er had grown up to become a teen, especially one of such beauty,

Lei Yu suddenly did not know how to react.

People walking by or the crowds waiting to pick someone up would cast envious stares at them. If such an attractive girl were to give them a hug, how wonderful would life be then, were their thoughts.

The three drove back to Lei Yu's military apartments. Talking about the the two siblings, their life story was quite pitiful. They lost their mother at a young age, and their father rarely spent time with them. The two siblings rarely got along with other children, always only hanging out with Lei Yu. Those three naive children would then enjoy their days carefree without worries.

The two siblings did not return home because Nuo Hu's father had to deal with some military affairs. Also later on, Nuo Hu had to accompany his father Nuo Yi Long to an important banquet.

“Brother, today I'll be staying at brother Yu's home right? Father and you have to attend a banquet anyway, and I don't want to stay at home by myself” said Ai Er nonchalantly.

“Ai Er, forget it! Little Yu will accompany you to dinner, then you will have to go home since he has to cultivate during the night” said Nuo Hu.

“Cultivate? Brother Yu, are you currently being specially respected

inside the Lei household? You must defeat Lei Long to become the next master of the household!” As Ai Er finished speaking, Lei Yu’s mood suddenly became a bit depressed. Nuo Hu lightly pulled at her while giving her a forceful stare.

“What? Did I say something wrong?”

“Enough! Ai Er! Stop talking!” Nuo Hu suddenly shouted. Ai Er did not think her brother would have such a big reaction, suddenly became teary eyed.

“It doesn’t matter, Ai Er does not know the whole story.” Lei Yu reluctantly smiled and gently patted Ai Er’s head.

“What? Tell me! Tell me what happened?” Ai Er thought Lei Yu lived here simply because it was closer to school, and did not bother with living anywhere else.

Seeing Lei Yu nodding with the go ahead, Nuo Hu gave out a long sigh. “Alas! One year ago...”

“This Lei Yun is really a big bad guy! Brother Yu, you... how come you didn’t tell me earlier?” Crystal like tears came down Ai Er’s delicate face. Just seeing her appearance would make one fill with sympathy and affection.

“It doesn’t matter, the incident is in the past now, aren’t I doing great now?” Lei Yu said nonchalantly, but deep in his heart, did he really not

care about it?

“Brother Yu, come on, let’s go eat dinner!” said Ai Er while grabbing onto Lei Yu’s arm.

Nuo Hu hurriedly said farewell to the two and drove away. The Nuo family only had one son and Ai Er is unable to succeed her father.

Naturally, the candidate as successor fell on Nuo Hu. Coming into contact with high-level figures early on was a good thing for his future developments.

They both walked together towards a restaurant.

“Such a pretty girl yet I don’t recognize her?” said a young man to his nearby buddies. This young

man was in his early twenties standing at a distance away, staring at Ai Er approaching.

“Brother Han, we do not recognize her either” said several people nearby.

These young guys slightly squinted their eyes, deep down inside, they were up to something.

After dinner, Ai Er took the lead exiting the restaurant. Lei Yu was in the back, busy taking care of the bill. The young man from before appeared, following behind him were his two buddies.

“Hey pretty girl, can we chat for a bit? You look so beautiful, how about we become friends?”



Ai Er observed the young man – he was very well dressed, and was born with a face that women were attracted to, but it was the spitting image of what a “tool” would look like. (T/N: the term tool is defined as someone that lack abilities and can only rely on their good looks or “penis” to get ahead)

Ai Er politely smiled, “I’m sorry, I still have stuff to do, I’m going to leave now.” Then, she was about to go around these 3 people to leave...

“Hey hold on!” Blocking Ai Er’s path, “I am known as Zhao Han, you should have heard of my name, right?”

Ai Er frowned, “I’m sorry, I’m really busy.”

“Damn it, we’re giving you face and you’re refusing it! Not everyone has the privilege to talk to our brother Han!” cursed someone standing behind Zhao Han.

“Shut up!” Zhao Han turned around with vicious cold stare, “who said you could talk to her?”

This student immediately lowered his head, with the appearance of a henchman.

Then with a smiling face towards Ai Er: “Pretty girl, I only want to be friends, why are you refusing my requests? Do you have time tonight? I will treat you to a drink.”

Ai Er did not want Lei Yu to see her in this situation, and did not want

Lei Yu to get into trouble since he's already having bad luck with his life. Besides, her brother wasn't here right now.

"Sorry, please let me get by."

Ai Er wanted to leave, but Zhao Han would not quit, he then grabbed Ai Er's hand. Just at this moment, Lei Yu came out from the restaurant.

"Bastard! Stop!" shouted Lei Yu.

Zhao Han frowned, "this girl fits my taste, you kiddo better stay away from her or don't blame me for any consequences!"

"If you don't let go, YOU will suffer the consequences!" Lei Yu stared menacingly. Inside Lei Yu's heart, Nuo Hu and Ai Er were very

important to him. Therefore he will not allow any harm to befall them.

“You’re seeking death!” Behind Zhao Han, a buddy of his rushed over throwing out a punch, intending to knock Lei Yu to the ground.

# Chapter 9: Zhao Han's Provocation

Lei Yu with a blank facial expression retreated a few steps back avoiding the incoming punch, extended his hand and grabbed onto the person's wrist and forcefully bent it downwards. You could hear a "ka cha" sound that would give nearby people a shiver in their hearts. This person's whole arm bent in the opposite direction to a degree that was unimaginable.

Lei Yu slowly walked forward a few steps, coldly looked at Zhao Han, "I'm going to say it once more, let go of your hands!"

Zhao Han narrowed his eyes, “you seem to have some skills huh, but in front of me it’s still nothing!”

Instantly releasing his hands from Ai Er, his hands formed something similar to tiger claws, exuding the Tiger Claw style, dashing towards Lei Yu.

Feeling a powerful internal energy coming from his opponent, Lei Yu wasn’t taking any chances, immediately going into a defensive posture.

“Hu!”

\*Pak\*

The fists of both of them continuously clashed, both their reactions can be described as

extremely sharp, and it appears at the current situation, their powers were at a draw. Lei Yu was not expecting this at all, and neither was Zhao Han. Zhao Han was really surprised someone was able to contend with his abilities.

After a brief clash, the two separated, staring at each other's eyes.

Ai Er nearby was tightly clutching her clothes at a loss for words, while the other person who was holding his previously injured arm dared not to make a sound. This was not a fight either of them could jump into.

Zhao Han's body stood up, inconspicuously pulled out of a

dagger from behind, then pierced forward aiming for Lei Yu's chest area. Ai Er screamed out in fear, but Lei Yu was not someone that could be easily beaten. In the nick of time, he also withdrew from his hip a shimmering sharp edged tool. This sharp edged tool was actually "the" spike, the spike that was not ordinary at all, where upon sunlight hitting it would give off a cold white aura.

"Bang bang" collisions could be heard. The spike in Lei Yu's hand did not suffer any damage at all, while the dagger in Zhao Han's hands had several cracks in it.

For someone like Zhao Han who could not get the upper hand, he came up with a wicked idea.



Turning around to face Ai Er, he used his top speed and dashed towards her.

“You bastard!” Lei Yu’s eyes were filled with a cold anger. With a shout of power, his whole body dashed forward with the speed of lightning. With all the long distance weighted running Lei Yu trained in, his speed was extremely quick. As Zhao Han arrived in the front of Ai Er, Lei Yu was already in there as a shield. The dagger in Zhao Han’s hands sliced through Lei Yu’s sleeves, revealing a strange brand on his arm.

Gritting his teeth, Lei Yu lifted his leg and kicked out, hitting Zhao Han in the abdomen area. Staggering backwards a few steps,

Zhao Han felt something in his throat, then a mouthful of blood sprayed out.

Slightly gasping for breath, eyes staring viciously at Lei Yu, “who exactly are you?”

“Is there a need for you to know?” Lei Yu turned away, ignoring the wound on his arm, looked at Ai Er, determined nothing was wrong with her before sighing in relief.

“If you really have the guts, 8 o'clock, in the hillside behind the university, go alone, we will go for another round, whoever doesn't show up is a grandson!” said Zhao Han. (T/N: grandson is meant to be something offensive)

“I’m not interested, and my grandfather already died.” Without a care, Lei Yu pulled Ai Er behind him, walked away without looking back.

“Coward! How can you be such a pussy in front of a woman, it’s fine if you don’t dare to go, leave the girl behind so she can spend the night with me, then we’ll call it even” said Zhao Han as he wiped some blood from his mouth.

“You fcuking bastard!” cursed Lei Yu, since he could not tolerate this anymore.

“Then are you going or not?” asked Zhao Han with narrowed eyes in a cold tone.

“8 o’clock, wait for your funeral!”  
Leaving these words, Lei Yu took Ai Er and left without looking back.

Arriving at the entrance to Lei Yu’s military apartments.

“Don’t go, I will call my brother first!”

“Don’t!” Lei Yu stopped Ai Er’s action, “your brother is currently engaging in important affairs, don’t bother him, it’s not a big deal, I will take care of this matter.”

“But...”

“It’s really not a big deal, you saw it, he is no match for me right?” said Lei Yu, gently patting Ai Er’s head in a comforting gesture.

“Then... then you have to be careful tonight!” said Ai Er filled with concern.

The current time was already 7:30PM, Lei Yu pulled the reluctant to leave Ai Er into a taxi, told the taxi driver the destination, then walked alone to the hill that was behind the local university.

This so-called hill in the back was actually just a small slope, not very tall with weeds everywhere. If one doesn't squat down, they can be easily seen by anyone.

The only reason Lei Yu decided to come was that he did not want to leave unfinished business behind. Although Ai Er was not his biological sister, he holds her in his

heart even more dear than a biological sibling. Nuo Hu and Ai Er could be considered the only family Lei Yu had. He did not want any harm to come to either of them. Nuo Hu's temper isn't very good, when encountering a situation such as this, he would definitely make some impulsive move. Moreover, someone that can contend evenly with him, Nuo Hu may not necessary be able to deal with. So this matter must be settled by Lei Yu, especially when he could not tolerate those verbal abuse.

On top of the desolate hill, looking at his watch, the current time was five minutes to 8 o'clock. Lei Yu looked around and sure enough, two people were coming towards him.

“You really have the guts! But you’re dead now!” as Zhao Han’s familiar “tool” face appeared before Lei Yu, along with a twenty-something year old person in black. This person had a sinister cold atmosphere about him, entirely dressed in a black tight-fitting clothes, with long hair obscuring half his face.

“Cousin, that’s him.” Zhao Han said that to the person in black clothing. (T/N: referring to older male cousin)

The person clothed in black did not speak, but nodded slightly, then walked step by step towards Lei Yu.

As the distance got closer, Lei Yu could not detect his opponents

presence (life energy), which made him lose some confidence in himself. Lei Yu adjusted his breathing, it appears he has encountered a strong opponent, not daring to thoughtlessly circulating his own internal energy.

The person clothed in black planted his left foot on the ground, right foot gently slid along the ground's surface, giving one an atmosphere as if a caged bison was about to storm out. He was exhibiting an imposing manner, but setting off a sinister cold appearance which was somewhat not quite compatible with the prior.

Lei Yu gently raised his hands up, ready to take on his opponent's attack.



The speed of the person in black was very fast, almost instantaneous, treading firmly on the ground, kicking up dirt with each step, his body was like a black panther directly rushing at Lei Yu, while at the same time both his hands formed like claws.

As the powerful imposing manner approached him, Lei Yu's hair was blown back from this momentum's force.

“Strong!”

Lei Yu drew an arc with one hand, trying to stop the opponent's attack. The rapid figure of the person in black was like a loose kite, immediately swaying to the other side. Although this speed was

something Lei Yu was capable of, he had never met anyone that could do it so effortlessly.

“Hu!”

A gust of wind blew by, the figure of the man in black once again dashed towards Lei Yu, both parties clashed together.

\*Pak!\*

When fists clashed with claws, it gave off a crisp sound. The two opponents both retreated two steps backwards and a look at each other with surprise in their eyes.

“Youngster, you’re not bad!” said the man in black.

“You are quite strong yourself!”

“But unfortunately, the person you offended is part of our Ming Sect, my condolences!” The body of the man in black began to shake.

“Aghh!”

A powerful shout went up into the sky (T/N: think Dragonball), due to the roaring sound of immense power, the surrounding weeds and grass all bent away from the source. Then, as the grass settled down, one could see hidden amongst the grass was a pair of eyes staring out at them dueling.

# Chapter 10: Battle Again In Three Years

Like a bullet, the man in black's speed suddenly increased exponentially, rushing towards Lei Yu with razor sharp nails shimmering with coldness. Lei Yu raised his hand to block his opponent's attack. Those two were like the drifting wind, from east to west , from south to north, those clashes were almost unimaginable, each clash would result in a burst of strong wind pressure. Observing at the side, Zhao Han was scared silly. "Fortunately, this evening the kid did not fight seriously with me or I

would have suffered a great deal, who exactly is he? Why is he so powerful?”

Meanwhile, within the grass was a pair of eyes with a look of surprise, but no one knew it was there.

The fight between the two had been going on for over a minute now. As Lei Yu gently deflected the man in black's left-handed attack then quickly turned around. The man in black saw this weakness and five lines of cold sinister light flashed by. Lei Yu suddenly felt a hot sensation on his back because the man in black had used his right hand to split it. At that moment with blood pouring down, Lei Yu frowned, beads of sweat on his forehead was dripping down and he

was slightly panting out of breath.

“Do I really need to use the power of lightning?” Lei Yu pondered, “there’s no other way, the opponent is just too strong!”

Clenching his teeth, Lei Yu initiated the next attack, with both hands at a knife-like form, he chopped down at the man in black. The man in black raised both of his hands, grabbing both of Lei Yu’s arms and ripped downwards. Both of Lei Yu’s sleeves were then ripped off, leaving 5 lines of bloodstains on each arm. Clenching his teeth to endure the pain, his hands did not stop, continuing to chop down on the shoulders of the man in black. Containing a burst of paralysis within a powerful force, the man in

black's body began to tremble, surprise revealing in his eyes. But more importantly he saw the brand on Lei Yu's right arm.

Quickly retreating a few steps back, the man in black said: "You are very strong, and your internal energy is not bad, if we continue fighting both of us could end up seriously injured!"

"What do you want then?" Lei Yu asked while slightly panting.

"Tell me your name." The man in black was most concerned with the numbness he felt and the lightning brand on Lei Yu's arm. Currently, if one was to look closely at the man in black, you would be able to see his arm constantly trembling. In

fact he had no ability to fight anymore, with his arms in a paralyzed state, there's no way for him to continue attacking. If at this moment Lei Yu rushed forward, this person would not have anyway to fight back.

“Lei Yu!”

“A member of the Lei family household?” The man in black slightly widened his eyes.

“No! I'm not of the Lei family!” Lei Yu's voice was slightly emotional, he wanted to rush forward and slap his opponent's face a few times. Except his internal energy consumption had been nearly depleted, there was no strength left to battle again. But fortunately the



other side announced a cease fire.

“My name is Cai Zhong, Ming Sect’s northern branch’s leader.

(So what if he’s of Ming Sect!)

“Three years, three years later at this exact same place, same time and date as today, we’ll battle it out again, how about it?” asked the man in black.

It’s rare to encounter a worthy opponent, as Ming Sect’s branch leader, Cai Zhong was naturally excited. Especially when the opponent’s age was much younger than him and already possessing such skill and strength. This inspired Cai Zhong’s fighting spirit, a fighting spirit that was not willing

to lose out when compared to Lei Yu.

In fact Lei Yu's thought process was the same as his opponent's, when faced with someone more powerful than themselves, they naturally want to pursue them. Today it was clear he was at a disadvantage, if it wasn't for his reliance on the power of lightning, the one being seriously injured would be himself. Lei Yu promised himself that from today onwards, he will definitely put more effort into cultivating. Yet cultivating requires an opponent to test its strength on, and in front of his eyes was the obvious best choice.

“I accept this match! But...”

“I know what you’re worried about, I assure you, this Zhao Han is my younger cousin, and from now on he will not bother you or your girlfriend.”

“Uh...” Lei Yu wanted to explain, but thinking about it, it wasn’t necessary, so he just nodded his head.

“Good, we have a deal!” Pulling along the still surprised Zhao Han, the two quickly left Lei Yu’s eyesight.

As the two left, Lei Yu fell to the ground, he had consumed too much of his internal energy. The previous fight in the evening had already depleted a portion of it, and now his final blow used all the last ounce of

internal energy he had left. All these combined made Lei Yu especially exhausted. Yet with all his last strength staked in the final blow, the other side was able to leave, striding away with such ease and grace. Inside his heart, Lei Yu was inspiring himself to put in more effort to become strong. Three years, three years will pass by fast, we must seize every day. But then remembering after two weeks, he would have the opportunity to enter the Dragon Team. And inside Dragon Team would be many master practitioners of cultivating techniques. The daily training and duels will definitely make him improve faster compared to cultivating alone. Thinking about this caused Lei Yu's blood begin to boil in excitement.

At this moment, someone suddenly came out of the bushes. The scared Lei Yu hurriedly retreated backwards raising his hands ready to attack.

With a “plop” sound, the person that rushed out in front of Lei Yu actually kneeled down and shouted: “Master! Please accept me as your disciple! You are really too handsome! So great! \*clapping sound\* your dashing palms landing on his body was way too cool, so brilliant!”

Lei Yu blinked a few times looking at the person in front of him, “are you trying to scare me to death?”

“My apologies master, do you have any thoughts on accepting a

disciple? I am willing to serve and wait on you without any regrets! I hope you will not refuse this sincere disciple!”

“Stop joking around!” Lei Yu used his last ounce of strength to support his body before standing up, “I have never thought about taking in a disciple, and oh yeah, you best not disclose what happened here today.”

“As long as you agree to my requests, I will definitely not disclose this!”

“I already said I don’t accept disciples.”

This person helplessly watched Lei Yu. With a long face “if you do not

agree to my request, I will stay kneeling here to my death and not get up!”

“You should first put your pants back on! Or else people would think...” said Lei Yu who was already exhausted, his body somewhat shaking.

“Ah!” looking down, the student said: “I was just taking a shit, students aren’t allowed to smoke cigarettes so I was hiding here to get a smoke, then seeing your exciting fight that I actually forgot to pull up my pants. Ahhhh! I forgot to wipe!

“...!” Lei Yu did not know whether to laugh or cry. He currently did not have any energy left to laugh. Yet

he couldn't hold in his laughter when faced with this student in front of him.

"Help me out, give me your hand for support."

"No problem!"

"Are you still a student?"

"First year (freshman), in that school."

"What is your name?"

"Liu Hao!"

"Okay."

As they arrived at the school's main entrance, a fast car drove towards them, getting out of the car were



three people: one was the familiar face of Nuo Hu; the other was Ai Er; and the third was someone Lei Yu had seen before, it was Nuo Hu's bodyguard Bao.

"How was it? How come you didn't tell me sooner!" Nuo Hu hurriedly scolded as he observed the wounds on Lei Yu's arms.

"It's okay, everything's alright now."

"Brother Yu, you've been wounded, quick, let's go to the hospital!" Ai Er held onto Lei Yu, and with one person on either side, they assisted Lei Yu into the car.

"This brother (buddy), you are..." asked Nuo Hu sitting in the front passenger seat and looking behind

at Liu Hao.

“My name is Liu Hao, first year student and I’m... I’m master’s disciple.” Liu Hao did not know what Lei Yu’s name was so he could only answer like this.

“Huh...?”

# Chapter 11: Averse To Accepting A Disciple

At a high-end residential villa.

“Cousin! Why did you...” (T/N: older male cousin)

“That kid is really powerful, I suspect he is a member of the Lei family, after all his surname is Lei, but it might or might not be it” said Cai Zhong, exhaling a breath as he came out of his meditative state. (T/N: this meditative state is how cultivators recoup their energy loss or to heal injuries)

“Lei family?” asked Zhao Han.

“Right, it’s the Lei family, but the brand of the Lei family should all be flame shaped, but this kid actually has a lightning shape, could it be that he tattooed it on himself?” Cai Zhong thought about it, then rejected the answer. “Shouldn’t be tattooed on, his attacks contain attributes of the lightning and I almost suffered a major loss. If he did not hold back, it’s a possibility that I would not be able to return here.”

“How could he be so powerful? Should I ask my father to go to the Lei family to ask about him?” asked Zhao Han.

“No need to disturb the elder. In

three years time... wait until three years later and we will definitely see which of us is stronger!” Cai Zhong’s eyes shimmered with lights, Lei Yu unintentionally stimulated Cai Zhong’s inspiration for training.

“That young girl...”

“Give it up, I promised him, do not bother them!”

“Okay, I understand.”

-----

Lei Yu was brought to the hospital by Nuo Hu. There, he was bandaged up and then driven home. Liu Hao left by himself in a taxi, but before leaving he said “tomorrow, I’ll come back to your house and perform the

induction ceremony!" This gave Lei Yu a big headache.

"The incident has concluded, they promised not to bother you anymore" said Lei Yu with a smile.

Ai Er felt her heart ache looking at Lei Yu. She did not want to cause trouble for Lei Yu since his life was already quite pitiful. Yet these things already happened, fortunately he only suffered minor injuries, nothing major or Ai Er would die of guilt.

"Brother Yu, try to rest well." Ai Er then placed a cup of water at the bedside for Lei Yu.

"I do want to recuperate a bit."

Nuo Hu heard from Ai Er what had

happened so he didn't ask any further questions. "Rest well little Yu, we are leaving now."

Lei Yu nodded his head, after accompanying the two to the door, he returned to his bedroom, took off all his clothes and sat down cross-legged. From earlier on, he felt a throbbing sensation inside his body so Lei Yu had urgently wanted to figure out exactly what was going on.

After calming his mind, Lei Yu concentrated and monitoring his internals. It was exactly as he expected, that green energy had appeared again, continuously repairing the wounds on Lei Yu. The claw wounds on his arms and back were being wrapped up by that

green energy.

“What exactly is this power? Why does it have such an extensive repairing ability?”

Lei Yu still could not understand, yet the wounds were currently being repaired at a rapid rate. First to be repaired were the blood vessels, then followed by the muscles. As the wounds were slowly closing up, Lei Yu attentively experienced the warm feeling of when the green energy nourished them.

Two hours later, Lei Yu’s skin had actually completely healed, only a layer of blood was left on the surface. Lei Yu lightly pinched all around. “My god! There’s no scars!”



Lei Yu really had to admire this green energy's repairing ability. At the same time, it made him want to know the origin of this power even more. But he did not know where to start investigating because this power appeared together with the lightning brand and the Lei Yu Divine Arts.

Suddenly, his internal energy started to surge. What little left of his internal energy underwent some turmoil before slowly converging to his dantian's Sea of Energy area. The sparse spiritual energy in the air was gradually being drawn into Lei Yu, and that yellow energy would start removing the impurities of the spiritual energy entering his body. This series of steps were completed almost instantaneously,

while Lei Yu only had to propel his own purple energy according to the cultivation methods in his mind.

Lei Yu, who had entered the early [Integration stage] already felt strong enough. After all, before he came back to the city he did kill that an unknown wild beast. And this beast was able to rival the legendary qilin. But today when facing Cai Zhong did he realize he was still too weak. Since he made a battle date with his opponent in three years time, he must intensify his own cultivation. With a resolute and unyielding personality, Lei Yu naturally was not willing to fall behind.

The internal energy inside the body was continuously being enriched,

and the energy in his dantian area continued to recover and enlarge, giving Lei Yu a surprise as the scene unfolded. His purple energy originally was only the size of a baby's fist, residing in his dantian's Sea of Energy area. But now it had increased by a full size, containing small amounts of explosive force giving Lei Yu a shock. "This is... what the heck is going on? How could it improve so fast?"

Lei Yu clearly understood, wanting to absorb the trace amounts of spiritual energy in the surrounding air required a lot of effort. Although with the unknown yellow energy assisting him in removing impurities did save him a lot of time, but even so, the speed of absorbing the spiritual energy

should not change that much. But now it had just been a few short hours, the spiritual energy inside his dantian's Sea of Energy area had increased by a lot! Could it be that he depleted his internal energy too much, therefore it made his absorption rate increase?

All these situations were running around in his mind, yet he could not figure out an explanation.

Currently the most important thing to him was to recuperate the loss of internal energy from yesterday.

Although the internal energy inside his dantian had increased by a full size, the meridians inside his body felt a bit empty, it did not have the previous feeling of being full of strength when it was filled up, it

actually felt a bit weak now.

Lei Yu slightly exhaled, opened his eyes and turned around to look at his old tattered clothes. Inside still contained a few fruits. He picked one up and brought it to his mouth while walking towards the bathroom to wash up.

This Liu Hao was definitely in a rush to perform the induction ceremony. Lei Yu had just finished washing up and changed his clothes and the doorbell rang.

“Master! I came to deliver breakfast to you!” Liu Hao had brought bread and hot milk with him.

“Thank you, and don’t call me master. I’ve told you, I’ve never

thought about taking in a disciple”  
said Lei Yu as he took the breakfast.

Liu Hao immediately put on a pitiful face, his lips quivering, his eyes shimmering back and forth, “I beg you, I beg you to accept me as a disciple!”

“How about I call you boss, can’t you just let me go! You’re even a freshman in a University!” (T/N: very prestigious to be a University student)

\*Ba thump\* Liu Hao knelt down. “If you don’t accept me, I will never get up from this kneeling position!”

Picking up the bread and taking a bite, the other hand holding the hot milk, Lei Yu said: “Have fun

kneeling, I'm going to go run some errands, oh yea, when you leave, don't forget to lock the door after you." Without waiting for Liu Hao's reply, Lei Yu fled the area.

Exiting and waving down the car, Lei Yu needed to buy some daily necessities and clothes. Nuo Hu treated Lei Yu, this sworn brother quite well, he easily took out tens of thousands of yuan (T/N: chinese currency) making Lei Yu extremely moved.

Nuo Hu helped him too much, Lei Yu was always thinking about how to repay his kindness and how to pay back, it wasn't that he didn't want to repay him right away, it just wasn't the right time yet.

In the evening, Lei Yu was carrying a lot of packages and upon opening the door, he was caught completely off guard.

“Why are you still kneeling here?”

“Master, just listen to me! Oops, I mean, just accept me!” Liu Hao pitifully rubbed his trembling legs.

“You’ve been kneeling here all along?” asked Lei Yu.

“No... nope, just before I couldn’t hold it in anymore and went to the toilet.”

“I really commend you, quickly get up. You haven’t eaten the whole day right?” asked Lei Yu.

Liu Hao continued to put on pitiful



face and nodded hard.

“Fortunately I just bought some instant noodles, wait a bit, I will cook it for you.” Lei Yu then added: “Stand up while you wait!”

“Master, are you accepting me?” ask Liu Hao excitedly.

Lei Yu helplessly sighed, “if you can eat five bags of instant noodles then I’ll accept you, oh, and plus five eggs.”

“Hell yeah!” Liu Hao slammed his hand down, abruptly getting up from the ground, nodded and said: “I promise I’ll complete the task!”

A full pot of noodles plus five eggs, Lei Yu watched as the pot rapidly decreased in content. Finally, even

the soup was gone. He was completely impressed by Liu Hao, he didn't think this guy could eat that much! It seems it's best not to invite this guy over for dinner in the future just in case.

“I've finished eating, master!”

Lei Yu unconsciously said “Niu bi!”  
(T/N: Chinese slang, similar to – so awesome)

“That's right!” Liu Hao looked up with an insufferable face.

“Oh right, I only know your name is Liu Hao, I don't know anything else.”

# Chapter 12: Added Extra Event

“My dad is the governor!”

“Governor?” Lei Yu was surprised, does this person even look like the son of a governor?

“That’s right master, you don’t need to believe me, but what I say is true. I am so awesome out there, surrounded by a bunch of underlings all the time. (T/N: author uses little brothers which basically means underlings)

“You’re the eldest son of the governor yet how can you be so dedicated in wanting to be my

disciple? One can hardly figure out what was going on here.”

“Because you are stylish, because you are strong, think about it, if I follow you and attain martial enlightenment, in front of my underlings I would gain so much face! If I met a strong opponent, raising my hand \*ka cha\* and solve the issue, the feeling of being admired and the subject of attention would be way too cool!” As Liu Hao said this, he displayed an arrogant appearance.

“I really applaud you, you have underlings?”

“That’s right, I don’t like to go home so I live on campus. My father is too strict at home while at school, I

would have a group of underlings following me.”

Seeing Liu Hao's eager to study martial arts face, and then thinking about the small town mayor's son, the one called Luo Yong, even his henchmen had such overbearing and arrogant looks. Lei Yu was flabbergasted, the difference between the two's attitude was way too big.

“Learning from me is not an issue, as long as you can endure hardship. And right now, I don't have the ability to open up your meridians or help you build your foundation, so you'll have to rely on the daily accumulation of practice, do you understand?”

Although he did not quite know what Lei Yu was talking about, Liu Hao just kept on nodding.

The current city is the capital city and the economy is flourishing. But most of the businesses are a controlled monopoly in the hands of the Lei family. South of the city is an important military base where a group of elite soldiers are stationed there, this is the location of Dragon Group.

On typical days, Nuo Hu would be in the military base standing by and also undergoing special training. This training for the average person might be a bit unimaginable, but for someone like Nuo Hu, who was trained since childhood would be able to finish it quite easily. Ancient

martial clans would naturally have some profound cultivating techniques passed onto their descendants.

Cultivators are considered a minority in the population. The country of Tenglong's population has reached around 1.5 – 2 billion people. Within a few hundred thousand people, there would be two or three people that were martial cultivators. Cultivators could be divided into several types and stages. The ancient martial clan's cultivating levels were separated accordingly to detailed ranks, from First Order Warrior to Sixth Order Warrior, the most powerful naturally being a Sixth Order Warrior. Perhaps in the Martial Sect, there's only one or two

people who has reached such power. And similarly, Celestial Court cultivators separated their levels of cultivation into stages as well, First Grade Celestial to Sixth Grade Celestial. Same as Martial Sect, someone who had attained the rank of Sixth Grade Celestial would be so strong that it will exceed an ordinary person's imagination.

Whether it be Ming Sect's evil cultivating methods or Celestial Court's unique cultivating methods, or Martial Sect's various martial practitioners, when their strength reaches a certain power, their ranks will naturally increase. As for the Lei family being a unique existence, they might be the only exception here since they were considered very enigmatic.



The test in one month's time arrived very quickly. Lei Yu was filled with confidence and was fully prepared. Nuo Hu drove Lei Yu, and the vehicle went into the military base located south of the city. This base only allowed a few private cars to enter it and of course Nuo Hu's car was considered one of them.

Inside an extremely large office.

“Today, that Lei Yu kid will be partaking in the test to enter Dragon Team” said Fan Hong Chang while sitting on a couch.

“It is something I would not have thought possible, the trash that was thrown out of the Lei family household in the past, today is able to stand in the midst of Tenglong

country's proudest military army, moreover it being the most powerful Dragon Team." The person who said this was a physically strong looking middle-aged person, dressed in a military uniform, with an upright face giving people an invisible sense of dignity. This middle-aged person is the country's greatest army Dragon Group's commander.

Although the total number of people in Dragon Group added up was only about two thousand plus, each one of them were an elite. This military brigade focuses mainly on the performance of individual ability, and not entirely focused on firearms training. Entering Dragon group's most powerful Dragon Team, the threat of firearms

towards these people weren't that significant.

“Elder brother, what do you think the chances are for him to get into Dragon Team?” This woman was someone with the same age as Nuo Yi Long. Although already considered middle-aged and perhaps she maintained herself very well – her skin was very delicate looking and her features gave out a mature woman's special attractive charm. If one only considered her looks, they would not believe that she was one of Tenglong country's top ranked masters. This person was indeed Nuo Yi Long's twin (younger sister), Nuo Yi Feng. But when comparing their looks, only a few minor details were similar.

“I heard old Fan say this kid was not too bad, I hope he doesn’t let us down. There’s one thing you all have to pay attention to – the Lei family members possess a mysterious brand. The reason this kid Lei Yu was driven out of the family was because he did not have the family’s unique brand. The Lei family discarded him, but that does not mean we will reject him as well because of that. Even if he does not have the brand, if he is able to transcend the abilities of ordinary people, he too can become the elite of the elite and work for our country.” This was Nuo Yi Long’s analysis of Lei Yu.

“What elder brother said is right. So is today’s exam according to our normal way?” asked Fan Hong

Chang.

“Nope!” Nuo Yi Long smiled while shaking his head: “The reason Lei Yu possesses power beyond an ordinary person at his age, is depended on his family giving up on him. This child’s disposition should be more tough and powerful when compared to other people. Today’s test, little Feng and I will also participate in.”

Nuo Hu parked his car to the side and a soldier came forward, “little master Nuo Hu, the commander is waiting for you two in the office.”

“Okay, I got it.” Bringing Lei Yu across several buildings, the came to the entrance of a building that looked like a villa. Two soldiers saw

people approaching and hurriedly opened the door. Nuo Hu and Lei Yu then went inside.

“Uncle Nuo, aunty Nuo.” Lei Yu greeted the two with manners. Seeing Fan Hong Chang at the side, he smiled and said: “Senior officer, you are here as well.”

The three smiled and nodded their heads. Nuo Yi Long said: “Are you prepared? The three of us will be participating in today’s test. Consider this a hurdle since it will require a firm determination and patience exceeding an ordinary person.”

Lei Yu exhaled heavily, “uncle Nuo, regarding my situation I think you should already know. I was driven

out of the family because I was identified as the useless trash of the family, but I had never given up on myself. Even though others had given up on me, I still have confidence in myself. This tenacity is not something everyone can achieve so please be assured.” Lei Yu did not speak a word of the lightning brand he possessed.

“Very good, I’m glad you have that self-confidence.” Nuo Yi Long went forward, patted Lei Yu on the shoulder, “come with me.”

Going with Nuo Yi Long, they climbed up the stairs to the second floor. The others also followed up. Lei Yu was wondering if the test was going to be taken here.

On the second floor facing the stairs was a door. Nuo Yi Long opened the door and inside was a large room furnished with a variety of equipments. A dozen or so young people were struggling to exercise, everyone drenched in sweat. Together with Nuo Yi Long, everyone went inside.

“Commander!” Seeing people arrive, all the young people put down the equipment in their hands, and with the utmost speed neaten themselves and shouted in unison.

Lei Yu could feel the imposing manner of these people. Although few in number, their imposing manner was overwhelming.

“Very good, today there’s a high



possibility that a new teammate will be joining your team.” Nuo Yi Long faced these young people, revealing an irresistible domineering and majestic presence. Everyone that saw Nuo Yi Long instantly exposed the look of worship on their faces. This shows how much command and respect this commander gets in front of these elite soldiers.

Hearing Nuo Yi Long’s words, everyone looked at each other. At this time, Fan Hong Chang came out, “the test is ready to begin, Lei Yu, today’s event is relatively complicated, there are three of them: First part, the gravity test, you have to bear with the weight that ordinary people cannot handle, it will put high stress on your body but this part I have confidence in

you. The second part, testing of the mind, you will be injected with a drug that will test your mental capacity. And the third part, the selection of one of the elite members of Dragon Team for a fight.

“Drug? What type of drug?” asked Lei Yu.

Nuo Yi Feng said from the side: “This drug came from abroad, after injecting into the body, it will cause the person to become unconscious. During this time, your brain will continuously show a series of pictures, some sad or dangerous pictures, the normal time to pass the test is half an hour which was determined according to the average disposition. Of course, the

longer you tolerate this means your mental strength far exceeds the minds of an ordinary person.

Lei Yu nodded his head to show he understood.

In fact, in order to enter Dragon Team only required two tests: the first was the gravity test. Just this test alone, in the entire country only a few dozen people are able to withstand it. This test is completed by using a certain special equipment. And the second test was the mind test that often can eliminate the majority of people, even if a few dozen individuals were able to pass the first round of testing, they will be cut in this round. This shows how demanding Dragon Group are of their elite

soldiers.

As for the third test, Lei Yu had to challenge a member of Dragon Team to a fight, this was the added on extra test event.

# Chapter 13: Super Strong Endurance

Dragon Team's members were a bit surprised when hearing the third event but did not say anything.

With the highest ranking officer in front of them, how would they have the right to speak?

“Let the tests begin.”

The test to enter Dragon Team could be considered extremely challenging, even Nuo Hu on the side who did not say anything this whole time immediately came forward to cheer for Lei Yu.

Fan Hong Chang led Lei Yu to an

open area, then a seemingly transparent overhead glass cover slowly came down, enclosing around Lei Yu. Although he did not understand what was going on, Lei Yu did not speak up to ask.

The glass completely isolated Lei Yu, without any gaps. There were only two pipes at the top attached to the enclosed glass. Fan Hong Chang standing outside speaking could still be heard by Lei Yu.

“This is a gravity type machine. While inside, you’ll feel the atmosphere weigh ten times the gravity we normally experience, and this will be shown on a panel with numerical data on it. If you can endure for more than five minutes under ten times the gravity, the

machine will automatically increase the gravity from ten to eleven times. Five minutes later, it will increase again. The regulation requirements are that you endure it for at least ten minutes in order to pass the test.” Fan Hong Chang looked at Lei Yu and asked: “Are you ready?”

Lei Yu heavily nodded his head, then took a deep breath.

Fan Hong Chang had a remote in his hands, he then pressed the red button. The numbers on the equipment changed very quickly, jumping from one to ten.

Lei Yu who was standing inside suddenly felt his whole body sink down, almost making him sit on the ground. Clenching his teeth, he

concentrated all his strength in his legs, standing back up. Although it was ten times the pressure, it was not only testing one's ability to bear with a heavy weight, but it also had great impact on one's internal organs. If an ordinary person was subject to such pressure, their internal organs may rupture causing them death in a short time. But how can an ordinary person be compared to Lei Yu and the rest of the elites that exist here?

The current time just passed one minute and one second, Lei Yu's body was already drenched in sweat. Under such gravity conditions, both his legs were constantly trembling. Although it was simply ten times, it was similar to ten people with the same weight



as yourself, hanging off your neck. And supporting this weight is just your own pair of legs.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth. Sweat dripped past his eyes yet he did not have time to wipe it. His fists tightly clenched together, the veins in his forearm popping out, Lei Yu then forced his head to tilt back up.

This test had a certain degree of risk. If one was to give up against the pressure, they would need to lie down fully on the ground. And the body had to become a balanced equipment, because if one was to instantly give up, then their head would have a high chance of being snapped by the gravity. Therefore having a strong spine and back muscle was an important

requirement.

Lei Yu's sweat had already drenched the ground, he could still see out his eyes due to his own perseverance. Fan Hong Chang, Nuo Yi Long, and Nuo Yi Feng all three nodded their head from the side. Nuo Hu was forcefully clenching his fist at the side since he too had experienced this pressure before. If one was not careful, this unbearable pressure would prove fatal.

During this time, Lei Yu began to realize what "passing the day was like a year" meant. In the past, his loaded running could not be compared to the same level of pressure he was experiencing right now. Fortunately for Lei Yu, he had

pass through the [Body Refining] stage, not only was his musculoskeletal system stronger than a normal person, his internal organs and meridians exceeded most typical people.

“Four minutes fifty-five seconds, four minutes fifty-six seconds... four minutes fifty-nine, five minutes!” Fan Hong Chang watched the time on the machine while at the same time glancing at Lei Yu. He did not have any intentions of giving up, that meant he wanted to continue to endure the increase in gravity.

The present elite soldiers on scene had also tested and endured the added increase in gravity in the past. Even if it was only adding the additional 100% of the base gravity,

the pressure was something they would remember for a lifetime. Out of the whole team, only one person insisted on enduring past the required time, but because the pressure of the gravity was too much, this led to injuries and resting in the hospital for two months before fully recuperating.

Once the gravity increased, Lei Yu's leg buckled forward, but quickly recovered and stabilized his body. His legs were shaking even more now. And one could see within his clenched fists, nails were embedded into his flesh. Yet the current Lei Yu could not worry about that, he had to endure, he wasn't being conceited at all, Lei Yu just felt he could handle it. He welcomed this pressure that ordinary people could

not handle because this was the only way to make himself become more powerful. Lei Yu also wanted to know how strong he currently was.

As if time was passing by at a slow pace, Lei Yu's breathing became more rapid, the chest rising with each breath became more evident, and the bones in his entire body gave off a continuous "pak pak" sound. Fan Hong Chang looked at the time on the remote in his hands, it was already nine minutes and a half, only thirty more seconds to reach ten minutes. If Lei Yu did not give up after that, he will continue to endure gravity with an additional 100% of base value. At this time, not only did the elite soldiers feel surprised, even Nuo Yi

Long and his twin sister opened their eyes wide in surprise, this kid was really strong. He was able to endure such a powerful gravity pressure to the present.

“Nine minutes and fifty-seven, nine minutes and fifty-eight, nine minutes and fifty-nine, ten minutes!”

“Oh heavens!”

“He was able to endure it!” The soldiers one by one could not help but exclaim out loud.

Once again, the gravity inside was increased. Both of Lei Yu’s legs were pressed down to a curve shape, then to a kneeling position. When Fan Hong Chang was about

to the press the green button to stop the gravity's pressure, Lei Yu pressed both hands onto the ground, clenched his teeth and looked up, all the veins in his neck had burst out, an "aggh!" cry came out. All eyes were suddenly wide with disbelief because Lei Yu had stood up once again.

"Strong, way too strong!" Nuo Yi Feng gasped and said: "A person who is not using any internal energy as support, but only relying on their own endurance to see how much weight they can support, it seems this kid Lei Yu is really quite good! It's Lei family's big loss!"

Nuo Yi Long also nodded. This meant he agreed with his sister's opinion. Nuo Hu was already so

excited that he couldn't speak, both hands continuously rubbing together in anxiety.

Once the machine's panel showed fifteen minutes on it, Lei Yu finally but unwillingly, opened his mouth and said: "I give up!"

Fan Hong Chang quickly pressed the green button, "twelve times the gravity, he has passed the gravity test!" From his voice, one could tell it revealed a tone of excitement.

The machine instantly decompressed the pressure. Lei Yu felt like he finally regained control of his body. Also at this time, his internal energy started surging like a raging storm. Quickly closing his eyes, Lei Yu felt his entire body as a



whole seemed to have become more powerful.

Applause. Everyone was clapping their hands loudly, “not bad, this kid is really not bad.” Nuo Yi Long clapped his hands as he walked forward.

“Thank you.” Although Lei Yu’s entire body increased in power a bit, he pretty much used up all his strength and then some more.

Twelve times the gravity, no one present was able to endure it when they were in his place. Though by using one’s strength along with their internal energy they could last just as long, but Lei Yu did not use any internal energy.

“The next phase will be testing of

the mind, take a break, we'll continue in the afternoon" said Fan Hong Chang.

Lei Yu followed Nuo Hu to a bedroom on the first floor, he indeed needed time to rest.

Taking off his clothes, Lei Yu quickly rinsed the sweat off his body, then went out wrapped in a towel. Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Hu were both sitting on the bed when he came out.

"Uncle Nuo, how come you're here?" laughed Lei Yu.

"Child, little Hu's referral of you was quite good, you have great potential." When Nuo Yi Long eyes landed on Lei Yu's right arm

imprinted with a lightning brand,  
his eyes suddenly opened wide,  
“what is that on your arm?”

Lei Yu looked at his right arm and  
said: “This is the Lei family  
household’s family brand.”

“Family brand!” Nuo Yi Long  
suddenly stood up, “weren’t you  
kicked out of the family because  
you didn’t have the family’s brand?  
How come...”

Lei Yu smiled, “the family  
abandoned me, I am no longer of  
the Lei family, even if I currently do  
have the brand, I will not go back, I  
will never forgive the humiliation  
I’ve endured there!” All the anger  
he had in his heart was awoken by  
Nuo Yi Long, Lei Yu’s words were

filled with hatred.

“But as far as I know, the Lei family’s brand should be the shape of a flame right? Why is yours a lightning?” asked Nuo Yi Long extremely puzzled.

“Why is the Lei family’s last name Lei?” (thunder) With this simple response, it was sufficient to make Nuo Yi Long completely understand.

“The surprises you keep giving me is really unimaginable, previously was your endurance, and now it’s your brand, child, do you have anything else to shock me with?”

Lei Yu laughed, “uncle Nuo, can you keep this a secret for me? I don’t

want the members of the Lei family to know about this.”

“Don’t worry, I will keep this a secret” said Nuo Yi Long, “you have a good rest, I have some things I need to take care of.”

# Chapter 14: Unable To Figure Out A Solution

Lei Yu nodded his head. Only Nuo Hu and him were left in the room.

“Little Yu, you are too awesome. Before, I was only able to get through eleven times the gravity, didn’t think that you could actually endure up to twelve times, formidable, really formidable!” said Nuo Hu as he laughed.

“Come on, aren’t you currently incredibly formidable as well?”

“That’s of course, everyone of the

elites in Dragon team all possess a miraculous cultivating technique. But there's a few members that I cannot even compare to" said Nuo Hu.

"There are people much stronger than you?"

"Of course there is, the elites in Dragon team all possess a cultivating technique specially tailored to them, provided by the ancient martial arts clans, they are all very powerful. The Dragon Team has a rule, anyone is eligible to challenge a fellow teammate, but the fight between teammates is only a tool to learn from each other. You have just entered Dragon Team so no one will challenge you within a year, and you are not eligible to

challenge others.

Lei Yu took special interest in Dragon Team's rule. Allowed to challenge someone more powerful than themselves was one of the best platforms for him to improve.

Three o'clock in the afternoon, Lei Yu was prepared to take the second test. When arriving at a large hall, Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Yi Feng, and Fan Hong Chang these three, were already on scene, while the rest of the elite soldiers had already disappeared. There was only one soldier standing behind the three.

"Uncle Nuo, where are the rest of the elite soldiers?" asked Lei Yu.

"They are currently on a mission"



replied Nuo Yi Long.

“Your test has been cancelled” said Fan Hong Chang.

“Cancelled? How come?” asked the surprised Lei Yu, “did I do something to disqualify?”

“Nope, your abilities are in full compliance with the standards of entering Dragon Team, congratulations to you on joining Dragon Team!”

Lei Yu really did not understand what happened and how he'd so miraculously entered Dragon Team. But this was the result of Nuo Yi Long and the other two deciding after a long discussion. Lei Yu also did not want to ask too much about

it.

In fact, the reason this happened was because of Lei Yu's brand. The mysteriousness of the Lei family was well known to all, just a single person could turn the heavens and earth upside down. There were about fifty to sixty Lei family members, which in the whole Tenglong country's population is considered so minutely small. Yet each of the major forces in the country only had about one hundred or so powerful experts. Of course, amongst these experts, there is a great number of people not accounted for because they were out wandering the world, doing their own thing.

Although the numbers of experts

inside the Lei family were the least, yet they were still all elites. The most important was the family head and the family's elder – the family head had reached the most revered place of martial practitioners, the rank of a Sixth Order Warrior, while the family's elder was at the Fifth Order Warrior rank.

Nuo Yi Long believed that Lei Yu would become an even stronger presence, all because of Lei Yu's statement, "why is the Lei family's surname Lei?"

"Uncle Nuo, can I put in a request?" asked Lei Yu.

"Tell me."

“Can I use this gravity machine in the future? I think it will help me further improve myself.”

“Of course you can!”

As this response came out, it made the people on scene a bit surprised. The most surprised person was the unnamed soldier standing behind the three, but of course he did not make a sound.

-----

One year can be considered not a long time and not a short time either. Within this year, Lei Yu's strength had improved steadily, from the beginning stage of [Integration] to the mid-stage. Although they are still the same

stage, one could say the quality of the power had matured. Previously he was only able to consolidate his internal energy over his arms and hands, now he was able to consolidate the energy into his legs as well. Of course, this was thanks to the training while inside the Dragon Team, especially that gravity machine. Lei Yu was now able to solely rely on his body's endurance without using any internal energy, to withstand fifteen times the gravity.

In the beginning, Fan Hong Chang wanted to provide Lei Yu a cultivation technique but was stopped by Nuo Yi Long. The Lei family had their own cultivation methods, if you introduce another cultivating method mixed in as well,

it wasn't something necessary beneficial. Of course, Lei Yu did not ask Dragon Team to provide him a cultivation method either.

Even though he had only reached the mid-stage of [Integration] from the beginning stage, Lei Yu was still very satisfied with the results. After all, he did not neglect his training this past year, but realized the speed of his improvement has been slowed down. There is no doubt that any kind of cultivating method will too see their improvement speed slow down around this point.

As for Lei Yu's disciple, he too became determined and put in a lot of effort into training. Without giving up, he persisted with Lei Yu's devilish method of training which

was similar to torturing one's body. His originally big belly gradually flattened out, replaced with an eight-pack abs that was essentially filled with his accomplishment. There was one particular characteristic that remained, he could still eat like no tomorrow.

“Master, take a look, how do I look?” That's what Liu Hao asked while inside Lei Yu's apartment sitting on a sofa, proudly showing off his body underneath his clothes.

“Stop thinking so highly of yourself, you've currently trained your physical body to an acceptable level, now you should be learning to gather internal energy. Once you are able to condense the internal energy into your dantian, then you

can freely and continuously absorb it into your body, attaining the requirement to be considered a cultivator.

“How do I do that?”

“This is for you.” Lei Yu especially copied the cultivating methods in his mind down onto a piece of paper. After being together for the past year, he has developed a deeper understanding of his disciple. Naturally, he has relaxed his guard towards him, imparting some real skills to the disciple is something a master must do. Lei Yu has never been a stingy person.

Holding onto the few pages of scrap paper that his master imparted onto him, Liu Hao forcefully sniffed



back his nasal mucous, this kind of gratitude on his face was self-evident. (T/N: basically sniffed back his booger like he was about to cry)

“Slowly think about it, then gradually understand its meaning. Don’t worry too much since this kind of training cannot be rushed.”

“I understand.”

Leaving Lei Yu’s residence, Liu Hao happily went back to the school’s dormitories. Of course, he obeyed his master’s command, prohibited from letting anyone else see those cultivation methods including his parents and siblings.

Lei Yu only taught Liu Hao the early stages of [Lightning Foundation]. If

a person was suitable for this cultivation method, then they will gradually feel some changes. As long as they grasp this feeling of change, then they will continue to advance. After a year of contact, Lei Yu realized that Liu Hao was indeed fit for martial arts training.

Endurance and tenacity of the mind were both quite good, but also able to endure and persist through suffering hardships. There was more than once that Lei Yu doubted Liu Hao's identity, whether he was actually the son of the governor. It was only after he saw a few cars arrive to pick him up with registration plates that only government officials were allowed to use, was he thoroughly convinced.

We will currently not talk about Liu Hao's cultivation training, but how Lei Yu never relaxed in his own training. No matter what time it was, he would always be thinking about how to improve, and also be thinking about some fighting skills. When he was fighting with the Ming Sect's Cai Zhong, Lei Yu only used some routine fighting techniques, which came from a few years ago when he was still in the Lei family and used a small fortune to hire martial arts masters to teach him the moves. Although Lei Yu still remembers all the moves he was taught, they weren't really of much use. No wonder his father still did not pay any attention to him during those years, and even kicked him out of the household.

Lei Yu's power and ability to withstand attacks were quite good, and melee combat was something Lei Yu preferred when fighting. If a person held a gun or some type of hidden weapon, then the fight would be pointless and not satisfying to him.

"How to combine my internal energy and force this power to explode out of my body?" This has been the ongoing problem. Lei Yu's power was quite strong, but he couldn't always control it smoothly. Either he completely consumes all the internal energy or his power cannot be fully released.

Completely consuming his internal energy does help a bit in improving his cultivation, and the speed will

improve quite a bit, but the main problem is not his cultivating speed. For example, if he encountered an opponent, and he spared no effort in releasing all his internal energy, then he would simply not have enough strength to even stand. In this scenario where he did not have any strength left, if the opponent could still move, then he would just become a sandbag waiting to be beaten. He would at the minimum have to reserve some strength, so if he needed to escape, he could still manage to do it.

Lei Yu currently must be more skilled in controlling the internal energy inside his body. Sitting quietly inside his room, Lei Yu monitored his body with his inner vision, then focused all his past

experiences on controlling his internal energy.

The internal energy's output from his dantian's Sea of Energy area was the root cause. And to ensure the he would not be completely exhausted, he would have to accomplish in leaving a trace of internal energy, which was really difficult to do. Lei Yu had previously tried a variety of ways to no avail.

Using a lot of effort to extract the internal energy from his dantian, the condensed internal energy gradually began to decrease. While it slowly gathered in his arm and leg areas, gradually, the internal energy in the dantian became thinner. At the last moment when there was only a hint left, Lei Yu

would stop the extraction. Once the internal energy was cut off, the same situation just like in the past happened again, once the internal energy was cut off from the dantian, the energy would dissipate everywhere, unable to gather within his arms and leg anymore.

“What a headache! Once cut off, there’s no way for me to control it!”

# Chapter 15: Exchanging Pointers Competition

(T/N: exchanging pointers is where they fight in order to learn from each other, or to show off their skills to see who is better, but it's not a match to kill or severely wound)

Suddenly, Lei Yu thought of something. Since he could not control it after the cut off, why not just continue controlling it, wondering what effects will occur?



Thinking up to this point, he once again made an attempt. Circulating the internal energy to his arms and legs then returning it back to the Sea of Energy. Lei Yu then extracted a small amount of energy from the Sea of Energy, shaping his internal energy into a thin line. This created a small connection between the energy of his dantian and the main vessels. Followed by controlling the internal energy from the other meridians to circulate, that previously made thin line acted like a coil of suction, following closely at the side of the main vessels where the energy from the other meridians were circulating. Regardless of where the main internal energy flowed to, this thin line always maintained a hint of connection with the Sea of Energy.

When all the energy successfully gathered together, the Sea of Energy maintained a trace of absorption there, Lei Yu was suddenly overjoyed. So not only could he perform a high-power attack, he will not completely exhaust his internal energy at the same time.

He Relaxed his body. Once the internal energy returned to the Sea of Energy, Lei Yu opened his eyes. The next step was to consider what type of attack skills to use.

The essence of close-quarter combat is very simple, described in three words: fast, accurate, and vicious.

Lei Yu's speed and accuracy was quite good, if he had explosive

power, then this vicious power could easily burst forth. The main flaw he had was that he could not combine everything together. Lei Yu had always been cultivating according to his own interpretation of the methods in his mind, he had never done any systematic training like someone from those ancient martial clans, therefore his moves did not have such coordination amongst itself.

If this was the case, then he can only rely on the benefit of surprise. Lei Yu possessed an unrivaled sharp spike, which should not be taken out unless it was a last resort. Lei Yu had always hidden the spike behind his back hip, and it will become a good killer move. While at a crucial juncture of a battle, his

sudden thrust will play a vital role. Add the unique strength of Lei Yu into play, if that sudden outbreak of strength appears , then the chance of winning will be greater.

Cultivating all night, his improvement was almost negligible. Lei Yu put on his clothes, ready to return to Dragon Team. The standards for cultivating were quite strict towards the elites of Dragon Team, but Lei Yu was considered an exception. Even though they were less strict towards him, he would still go there every day.

At this moment, his cell phone rang.

“Little Yu, are you doing anything tonight?” asked Nuo Hu.

“Nothing going on, just about to go back to Dragon Team to train, what’s up?”

“Can’t you rest for one day? Want to come with Ai Er and I to a banquet?” asked Nuo Hu.

“Forget it, I don’t want to go, I’m not interested in those lively bustling environments” said Lei Yu as he shook his head.

“Oh my, brother Yu, just go, if you don’t go then it will get boring!” said Ai Er in a whimsical voice after grabbing the phone.

“Well... fine then!”

“Wohoo!”

(T/N: Wàn suì was the actual word,

meaning 10000 years of longevity, my “wohoo” suffices)

Today’s banquet was very special, it was a banquet for martial arts exchange. A lot of social celebrities will be attending so in order to participate in this banquet, one’s identity would have had to reached a high level of respect, while the majority of attendees will consist of Martial Sect’s ancient martial arts clans. This banquet’s main purpose was to use martial arts as an expression to make friends with fellow cultivators, and also to verify the junior clan members of their improvement and strength. Held once every three years, they would invite a number of representatives from each powerful force to attend. But the core attendees of the

banquet would be from the ancient martial arts clans, after all, they were the organizers.

Accompanying Nuo Hu and Ai Er, they arrived at a highly rated restaurant. A lot of cars were already parked in the front. Lei Yu roughly swept through with his eyes and noticed all the cars were of luxury brand.

The banquet hall was on the second floor and the decoration there was indeed quite impressive.

Everywhere the eye could see were the colors gold and white as the main focus, giving off a high-class impression.

Inside the banquet hall, it was completely filled with people. But

everyone was portraying a gentle elegance, they all had an air of quality which someone belonging to the social elite would have.

Lei Yu, Nuo Hu, and Ai Er all went to a corner of the hall and sat down. Lei Yu carefully looked at the layout of the hall – the rectangular tables were filled with food and drinks, but no one consumed them, most were holding a glass of wine standing there chatting.

In the center of the banquet hall was a huge square shaped stage. It seems this stage was where the so-called exchange of martial arts would be held.

“Little Yu, Ai Er, you two sit here for a bit, I’m going to go prepare.”



“Okay, go ahead” said Ai Er while smiling.

Seeing Nuo Hu leave, Lei Yu asked: “What’s he doing?”

“In today’s exchange of martial arts assembly, there’s a competition where they fight and learn from each other, and my brother is one of the participants.

“Eh? Then we better cheer him on!”

At this time, from a distance came a teenager, well-dressed, one look and you could tell that he was rich. His facial features were quite attractive looking, but had a pair of bottomless eyes that made people uncomfortable when looking at it, because you couldn’t tell what he

was thinking.

“Ai Er!”

They both turned towards the voice and Ai Er frowned a bit, “how come you’re back as well?”

“Once you left, there was no reason for me to stay abroad, so I returned.”

“Don’t use me as an excuse.” Ai Er was obviously not too happy, grabbing onto Lei Yu and trying to walk away.

This teenager frowned and looked at Lei Yu who was at the side of Ai Er, “who is this guy? Why does he have such a close relationship with Ai Er?”

“Hello everyone!” In the center of the hall stood a host on top of the stage. “Today is the martial arts exchange banquet held once every three years, we are very honored to have with us the governor Liu Wen Jin to be the judge of this, let us all warmly welcome him!”

The sound of applause rang out through the hall, Lei Yu looked up and saw a fat man standing below the stage, waving his hands in greeting to the audience. Even though he was fat, his demeanor seemed very friendly. When Liu Hao had not undergone his training, he too had that plump and elegant demeanor.

Besides Governor Liu, Lei Yu saw his own disciple Liu Hao’s figure,

apparently Liu Hao did not see Lei Yu.

“And the other two judges – first being Instructor Zhuang from Dragon Group, and the second being Eagle Group’s Captain Zou. Captain Zou rushed over here all the way from another province thousands of miles away, let us all warmly welcome them both!”

Followed by another round of applause, once the applause ceased, the host continued: “In addition, we also invited the young genius from the special Lei family household, belonging to the main family, Lei Tian.”

Lei Yu’s brow went up with a frown, why would there be a figure of the

Lei family here? Lei Yu had heard of this martial exchange banquet before, but the Lei family had never participated in it before.

A twenty something year old young adult looked around smiling and waving his hands. The current sound of applause was even more enthusiastic than before. Everyone knew of the Lei family, they were a commercial family, their wealth could match the country's, and the inner workings of the family were very mysterious. Many people wanted to get close to them but had no way of doing so, but they actually appeared here today so how can people not be surprised and become excited? Although only someone of the younger generation within the main family, but he was

still an important member of the Lei family.

Lei Yu recognized this person called Lei Tian. On a normal day, he was usually a smooth talker, often hanging around Lei Yun Tian to suck up to him, and his status in the family did carry some weight. But Lei Yu had always looked down on this person because his actions were no different from a henchman. As for his current cultivation rank, Lei Yu was not too clear on. After all, he had never seen the Lei family's cultivating methods, did not know how their techniques worked, and also did not know how they advanced in rank.

Seeing Lei Yu frown, Ai Er with an apologetic face said: "I'm sorry

brother Yu, I did not know someone of the Lei family would be here as well, you should know that if this was the case, then I will not have let you come.”

Lei Yu laughed a bit, “don’t worry about it.”

As both their eyes were on the stage, the host then said: “Without further adieu, we will begin the competition. In this competition, we will select the first, second, and third place. The top three will have a huge monetary bonus as a reward, and there’s a possibility that they will be selected to join either Dragon Group or Eagle Group as an elite soldier of these two powerful armies.

Once his words came out, the audience suddenly went into an uproar. This piece of information was really shocking to them since of all the armies Martial Sect controlled, the most powerful were Dragon Group, then followed by the Eagle Group. And the recruitment process for these two armies were extremely strict and harsh, even to unimaginable proportions. And now actually be able to be selected here and directly join them, how can people not be surprised?

Although both army's military training were extremely harsh, they did receive good compensation for it. It can be said that belonging to those two armies were something a young passionate person would dream of.



A long table was pulled besides the stage, Governor Liu, Captain Zou, and Instructor Zhuang were then seated in order. And the Lei Tian who was introduced early on, began moving towards the back, it seems that he would be participating in this exchange of martial arts competition.

“I’m going to stop spouting useless words, let the competition begin. This competition is purely for exchanging pointers, friendship first, ranking second! Participants get ready.” Once the host stopped talking, from the door at the back of the hall walked out two young adults. They appeared to be the first round of participants for the competition. The both had a smile while getting onto the stage,

clasping their hands together to greet each other, they then prepared for the fight.

# Chapter 16: Bastard Of The Lei Family

The competition rules state that you are not allowed to use any internal energy because a large portion of the audience were just ordinary people. If the ability used is too astonishing, it will cause a severe disturbance amongst the ordinary folks. Therefore, participants are competing on their moves, their power, and their endurance to withstand hits.

After the “start” command was issued, the two young men began to approach each other, watching each other and trying to find any flaws. With his fastest speed, one of the

young men sped towards his opponent. As the two briefly clashed, one of them lacked endurance and admitted defeat. The winner stood below the stage, waiting for other participants to continue the competition.

Nuo Hu was the son of Dragon Group's commander, naturally his strength was not weak so he was deliberately placed in the last position to participate.

The competition on the stage was extremely fierce, those government officials and aristocrats spectating began to disregard their own image, openly screaming. These hysterical cries they emitted were as if they were watching a fierce underground cage fighting match.

The first five pairs of participants had already concluded their match, therefore there were five winners. At this time, the whole hall suddenly became quiet. The next participant was considered somewhat of a big shot, a teenager wearing a brilliant white clothing jumped up onto the stage from behind. Lei Yu and Ai Er took a closer look, wasn't this the teenager that just greeted Ai Er not too long ago?

From what the referee said, this was the son of the Eagle Group's commander, named Xiao Fei, no wonder he dared to speak to Ai Er previously in such a manner. But his opponent was not weak either, was a descendant of one of the ancient martial families, naturally

someone that's not easy to deal with, but still not considered much in Xiao Fei's eyes.

After they both clasped their hands in greeting, the fight began. Xiao Fei was very calm, and his facial expressions did not give away any hint of emotions, he was just quietly standing still. While his opponent was unable to bear with the situation, raised his hands and began to attack.

“Pak! Pak! Pak!”

Those three sounds went off. Xiao Fei still stood proudly, his deep eyes full of disdain, while his opponent was lying on the ground, body constantly twitching.

The audience suddenly went into an uproar, shouting and cheering for Xiao Fei. The entire hall was filled with boiling emotions and Xiao Fei just faintly smiled, clasped his hands and bowed to the audience before turning around and stepping off the stage. At the same time, his eyes drifted to where Ai Er was sitting, then stared daggers at Lei Yu before silently leaving.

“Coming up to the stage is Nuo Hu!”

“Ohhh!”

“Awesome!”

Nuo Hu’s popularity was quite impressive, it seems that many people know of him. That is

needless to say since he was the son of Dragon Group's commander. Nuo Hu naturally was the object that everyone paid close attention to. Although Xiao Fei is not weak, he did after all live abroad for a few years while Nuo Hu's name inside the country continued to gain fame.

Bursts of shouts came one after another. Following the crowd's shouting, Nuo Hu appeared on the stage. His whole body covered in explosive-like muscle, and inside every muscle contained earth shattering strength, giving people a mesmerizing feeling.

"Sorry everyone!" The host suddenly said: "As Nuo Hu's opponent had a sudden emergency and cannot participate in the competition,



therefore Nuo Hu automatically wins!”

“Tsk! What a disappointment!”

“Coward, I bet he was just too scared to fight against Nuo Hu!”

“That’s right! I think so as well!”

Inside the hall, no one was blaming Nuo Hu, putting all the responsibility onto the participant that did not show up. Nuo Hu helplessly threw his hands up, walked down the stage, and stood around with the other six winners.

The host raised his hands, trying to maintain order in the chaotic scene. Once the noise gradually quieted down, he then said: “Although we did not get to see an exciting fight,

but we will not disappoint you with the next round.” The host’s voice suddenly grew louder, “the following appearance will be from the Lei family, Lei Tian!”

“Woa!”

“A member of the Lei family is making a move?”

“Oh heavens!”

Something that has never happened before is now happening. Everyone knew the Lei family was powerful, but they had never seen their fighting techniques before. Today they were finally able to witness this scene so a large amount of people were extremely excited.

Without waiting for the cheers to

stop, the next words that came out of the host's mouth caused the atmosphere to gain a new level of frenzy.

“Lei Tian's opponent will be Governor Liu's son, Liu Hao!”

At this time, Liu Hao was only wearing a pair of black shorts, his upper body was bare, revealing the results of this past year. His entire body filled with exquisitely sculpted muscles caused many girls to stare hard and do double takes.

Lei Yu could not stay calm, from Ai Er's side, he ran towards the edge of the stage, “wait! You cannot fight with him!”

The audience fell completely silent,

all eyes were watching this person that opened his mouth to stop the fight. They had no idea who he was, but at this moment, there were two people that recognized him and both of them happened to be on the stage.

“Master?” Liu Hao did not think Lei Yu would actually appear here. Originally he wanted to let Lei Yu know about today’s competition, but then he held back, wanting to give Lei Yu a surprise, but definitely did not expect to see him here.

“I said you definitely cannot fight with him, come down immediately!” Lei Yu once again lashed out.

“Lei Yu?” While standing on the stage, Lei Tian’s face was filled with

surprise.

The entire audience began to get worked up, who was this person? Why would he suddenly appear and cause trouble? Originally someone wanted to openly curse out at this person, but when he heard the words “master” coming out of Liu Hao’s mouth, he immediately shut up.

Lei Yu with an emotionless face stared at Liu Hao, he did not even acknowledge Lei Tian’s existence. Liu Hao really had no other choice, he could not ignore the commands of his master right? Moreover, everything he had now (abilities wise) was given to him by Lei Yu.

“Okay then.” Liu Hao jumped off

the stage slightly depressed, then went next to Lei Yu. At this time, Liu Hao's father Governor Liu, with surprise on his face looked at this teenager who was younger than his own son. He would have never thought that the drastic changes his son went through was caused by this teenager, this whole situation has made him feel utter shock.

Lei Tian noticed Lei Yu did not even acknowledge him, suddenly said angrily: "Lei Yu, you coward, did not expect you to come here to accept disciples under fraudulent circumstances! Didn't you jump off a cliff that day to commit suicide?"

The entire audience once again became riled up, everyone began to talk about this situation, discussing

the relationship between the two. But more focused on the jumping off a cliff topic that Lei Tian mentioned.

“Shut your dog mouth!” Lei Yu cursed, unable to tolerate it any longer.

“What? Afraid of letting people know about it? The more afraid you are of people knowing it, the more I want them to know about it!” Lei Tian did not care about Lei Yu’s anger. Pushing the host aside and grabbing the microphone in his hands, facing the entire audience and said: “This person is called Lei Yu, the leader of Lei family’s second son. But unfortunately, after our verification proved he was a bastard. He wasn’t even a member

of the Lei family and did not have our family's distinguished brand. Therefore he was kicked out of the family by our leader and he couldn't handle it anymore so he jumped off a cliff to commit suicide. I did not think this coward would actually be so lucky to survive!"

"Woa!"

"Such a scandal!"

"This is too incredible!"

The entire audience became chaotic, in an instant, Lei Yu became the center of ridiculing jokes.

Ai Er ran up to the side of Lei Yu while Nuo Hu also hurriedly came over. They both looked up the stage



at the asshole who was unceasingly spouting stuff out.

“Such a person teaching a disciple, I’m guessing this disciple is also a weak trash!”

“Ha ha...” The entire audience erupted in laughter.

“Shut your mouth fcuker!” Liu Hao jumped up, landing on the stage once again. At this moment, all the people remembered this coward’s disciple was the governor’s son. The entire audience suddenly became quiet again. What kind of person is the governor? How would he allow his son be the object of ridicule? One by one, people started regretting a bit.

“Oh, my apologies, I dragged you into this.” Lei Tian said off-handedly.

Governor Liu’s fist were tightly clenched together, the meat on his face was constantly twitching, appearing to be angry to the extreme, this was equivalent to not give him any face at all.

“Liu Hao, come down” said Lei Yu in a cold tone.

“Master, this asshole dared to...”

# Chapter 17:

## Complete Domination

“I told you to come down!” Lei Yu raised his voice, “I’ll fight with him!”

Upon hearing this, Lei Tian’s eyebrows perked up, “you, alone? Do you even have the qualifications?” Continuing to speak in a carefree attitude: “But since you don’t want any face, then I will let you shame yourself all the way back home. This will also let the governor’s son know that he acknowledged the wrong person as a master, and made friends with the

wrong person.

Liu Hao obediently jumped down from the stage, staring towards the stage while directing the words to Lei Yu, he fiercely said while spitting out saliva: "Master, pummel him, beat him so bad that when he goes home, his own mother won't recognize him!"

Because of the governor's presence, some people openly jeered.

"Fight, fight with him!"

"A good show is about to start!"  
Xiao Fei said on the side, secretly sneering.

Lei Yu lightly jumped onto the stage. Lei Yu did not allow Liu Hao to fight with Lei Tian because the

reason was very simple. The power of the Lei family were hidden, unlike other people, the Lei family will spread their internal energy throughout the body's periphery, no one would be able to see it so there would not be any violations. The rules of the competition was based on strength and techniques, but the Lei family all use hidden strength, so even if they used their internal energy, no one will notice it. What his own disciple is capable of, Lei Yu knows very well, he was definitely not Lei Tian's match.

Lei Yu gently exhaled. In front of so many people, Lei Tian's action today was undoubtedly to show people that the Lei family and he were on the complete opposite side of Lei Yu, similar to enemies. Since

it has come to this, he would not hold back anymore..

Since the competition has evolved to this point now, everyone would like to see exactly how exciting these two antagonists' fight will be. Governor Liu and the other two judges discussed amongst themselves, then decided the competition would start right away.

Lei Yu gently stroked his sleeves, while Lei Tian was indifferent. He had already experienced Lei Yu's ability two years ago, so he did not even consider Lei Yu as anything in his eyes. But little did he know how big the changes were for Lei Yu in the past two years.

Since he wanted to make a fool out

of Lei Yu, then it should be a quick move, a one strike victory. Lei Tian gathered internal energy into both his arms, but from the outside one could not see any traces of it. But Lei Yu also secretly gathered his purple internal energy into his arms and legs.

Lei Yu did not move while Lei Tian first rushed forward.

“Ahh!”

Lei Tian raised his hand, a straight punch directed at Lei Yu’s head, the air around his fist giving off a whirring noise. Lei Yu stood motionless waiting for the arrival of the attack. When Lei Tian’s fist was only one palm length distance away from his head, Lei Yu suddenly

raised his left hand to quickly block, and at the same time, the stored power at this moment explosively burst forward, releasing all the hatred he had against the Lei family at this single point in time.

The humiliation in the past along with the shame of today, with a “ka cha” of shattering bone sound that chilled the hearts of everyone that heard it, the competition had ended.

“Agh! My arm! Agh!” Lei Tian fell to the ground rolling back and forth. One hand was clutching his other arm while suffering from a terrible pain so bad that it made Lei Tian want to go crazy.

Silence. Complete silence. The only



sound came from the ground where Lei Tian was rolling around screaming in pain.

The entire audience, the three people sitting on the judge's seat, winners from the five rounds, including Ai Er and Nuo Hu, plus Lei Yu's disciple Liu Hao, all involuntary had their jaws drop and their mouths agape. They all did not know just exactly how it happened, Lei Yu simply raised his hand and his opponent was lying on the ground cry out in pain. All this happened in an instant.

Time seemed to freeze at this moment, and after a full ten seconds, the entire audience began to boil in excitement.

The youths in the audience began chanting “awesome!”

One by one, these government officials and social elites began to cheer, some even chanted “Lei Yu, Lei Yu...”

Liu Hao looked at his master, eyes filled with worship. This level of worship is even more intense than before.

“Starting today and onwards, no... Should be from the start of two years ago, the Lei family and I do not have the slightest relationship. You openly and publicly humiliated me, I think no matter who you insult, they will definitely not let it go you asshole! You forced me, it was your Lei family that forced me!”

Lei Yu made this statement on top of the stage so that everyone would understand his determination, and also see Lei Yu's strive for independent recognition.

Sounds of cheers and whistles everywhere. Lei Yu suddenly became the focus of the entire audience. Xiao Fei and other several official participants felt a big gloomy, as for the Lei Tian who was crying bitterly on the ground was carried off by two people for first aid.

The reason the entire audience were boiling with excitement was not because they understood the conflict between Lei Yu and Lei Tian. Everyone knew the Lei family's strength was considered

great even though no one had seen it because the Lei family was extremely secretive. Lei Yu who was labeled as a coward actually only used one move to easily cripple Lei Tian's arm. Plus with Lei Tian's arrogance and during introductions, he was introduced as a genius of the younger generation by the host. These cheers were for Lei Yu who deserved to win and establishing a precedence on this high stage.

“Master, you are too awesome! You are the idol I most admire!” Liu Hao was holding onto Lei Yu in an excited fervor.

Nuo Hu and Ai Er on the side were so happy that they couldn't even close their mouths from grinning. Yet Lei Yu was unable to laugh out

loud, the relationship he had with the Lei family were now really and completely cut off. And after today's incident, the Lei family will not sit idly by, in the coming days he will definitely be harassed by them. Lei Yu could not avoid thinking about what he should do in the future.

Being together with Lei Yu for such a long time, Nuo Hu knew what he was thinking in his heart.

Whispering in Lei Yu's ear, he said: "Don't worry, I will ask my father to go to the Lei family to settle this matter, I think they should at the very least, give my father some face."

Lei Yu nodded gratefully, in his eyes, this big brother of his

suddenly become bigger and taller.  
(T/N: metaphor for growing  
admiration)

After some celebration, Lei Yu faced the host and the three judges on the side and said respectfully: "I'm sorry for interrupting the competition, I'm really sorry about today's incident."

"Child, you're quite good, I will leave Liu Hao in your care!" said Governor Liu, laughing and patting Lei Yu's shoulder.

On the side, Captain Zou and Instructor Zhuang weren't your typical person. Lei Yu's simple performance on the stage were clearly absorbed into their eyes. This kind of instantaneous burst of

strength, reaction speed, and cool headedness made the two appreciate his skills.

“Do you have an interest in joining our Eagle Group? I believe you will get even better training in the Eagle Group” said Captain Zou.

Lei Yu responded with an apologetic smile and said: “I’m sorry, I’ve already joined Dragon Group.”

Instructor Zhuang on the side did not say a word, he already knew the existence of Lei Yu. Although he has never seen him yet, but had heard about him. This Instructor Zhuang was only responsible for training the new recruits, so naturally he did not have the

chance to see the elites of Dragon Team, this extremely powerful existence.

The uproar Lei Yu caused today were based on three factors: the first, Lei Tian was placed in a high position of admiration, yet Lei Yu instantly shot it down, naturally replacing Lei Tian's position or even higher; the second, driven by the banquet hall's atmosphere: and the third, Lei Tian's personality of being arrogant and unreasonable.

Lei Yu smiled and said "please continue with the competition."

Leaving these words, Lei Yu hurriedly left the banquet hall. Ai Er and the other three wanted to follow and leave, but because of Lei



Yu's words, they were unable to. Nuo Hu had to continue participating in the competition, Ai Er had to stay to cheer for her brother, while Liu Hao had to stay to watch the competition and learn from it.

Lei Yu standing outside the banquet hall exhaled a long breath, "it looks like I need to quickly get into touch with Uncle Liu, to see if I can get any news about my mother from him." At this point, Lei Yu was more concerned for his personal life and origins.

Today's results was depended on his skillful control of his internal energy. If this happened a year ago, it's highly possible that he may not be able to leave this banquet hall in

one piece.

Lei Yu took a taxi back to his residence. Right now, he had to recover the internal energy he had just used up. Constantly keep their body in a state that is filled with internal energy was something a cultivator had to maintain.

The surging internal energy shuddered for a while before restoring its calm. Lei Yu methodically caused his internal energy to flow throughout, and at the same time, absorbing the trace amounts of spiritual energy from the atmosphere.

Currently, Lei Yu was at the mid-stage of [Integration] and had only started at the beginning stages of

joining the traditional hierarchical ranks. There were actually quite a lot of people at this rank, therefore Lei Yu would not dare to slack off. Raising one's strength was the only way to be not defeated, only what the strong say is the right way, that is what Lei Yu has realized. If one was strong enough, the shame he experienced today and the humiliation he suffered two years ago would never have happened. Today at this point in time, Lei Yu had become a different person, he was no longer the Lei family's second son of the leader, who worked tirelessly and trained for the family's recognition. He is to become a powerful force for himself, to become a strong and independent Lei Yu.

Lei Yu's performance today had not been spread around, only the people in attendance knew of it. When Lei Yu left, Nuo Hu actually stood on top of the stage and explained to everyone the situation. Everyone had to keep today's incident a secret. Nuo Hu was not considered to have much influence, but his father on the other hand, not many people would dare offend. Therefore everyone kept a tight-lip.

# Chapter 18: Fierce Beast Cub

The recovery rate this time was much faster than before, mainly because not all of the internal energy was used up. Having some left over was actually very beneficial for recovery.

More than an hour later, Lei Yu opened his eyes, he quickly took a shower, changed into some clean clothing, and then sat in his room looking over some books.

He knew that after the competition, Nuo Hu and them will come by, so he didn't bother to continue cultivating. And sure enough...

Exactly as Nuo Hu predicted, the commander of Dragon Group definitely had a sufficient deterrent effect. The Lei family did not cause any difficulties for Lei Yu, not even a single person appeared. This incident was eventually swept away.

Lei Yu requested two days off from Dragon Group, then drove towards a certain direction with Nuo Hu's car.

Driving was definitely much faster than walking, only a short half a days time, Lei Yu arrived at a desolate location. Because the car was unable to proceed any further, he parked the car and continued walking inside.

Walking for about three hours, the

sky began to gradually darken. Lei Yu finally came to the place he was familiar with. At this place, Lei Yu had a lot of memories of, and these memories from two years ago were thanks to the Lei family.

He continued forward according to the route etched inside his memory. A large tree that embodied the representation of this forest was in front of him, this was “the” fruit tree. Even though to this day, the name of the fruit was unknown, when facing this fruit tree, Lei Yu had a feeling of deep affection to it. If it weren’t for these fruits, he would not be able to survive to this day.

Walking over, picking a piece of fruit from the tree and then putting

it into his mouth, he began chewing it savouringly, the sense of succulent sweetness once again went down his throat. Lei Yu then continued to walk forward. Inside this small forest, that fierce beast's corpse should have become a pile of bones now right? Or maybe even the bones have disappeared by now.

The thing that caught Lei Yu in complete surprise appeared in front of him. The corpse of the fierce beast was lying there completely intact without any signs of rotting.

“It's already been a year now, this... what on earth is going on?” Lei Yu's brain started to short circuit.

Even if there was no rotting of the body leaving behind the bones,



there should be some carnivorous animal passing by, right? Apart from the wounds all over the beast's body, everything else was unchanged. There weren't even any flies around.

"It moved?!" Lei Yu suddenly stepped a few steps back, forcefully rubbing his eyes.

"An illusion?"

No, not an illusion, this beast did indeed move, but it wasn't moving on its own, there appears to be something moving around inside its body.

Filled with courage, Lei Yu took two steps forward. The movement in the abdominal area of the fierce beast

became more severe. Lei Yu swallowed hard, he wanted to find out what was going on. At this time, a weak roar could be heard inside the abdominal area.

“Is there something inside its stomach?” Lei Yu took out the spike from his back, aiming carefully at the beast’s stomach, he then sliced down. No blood flowed out, but there was a black mass gently wriggling around.

Lei Yu was completely shocked, this was actually a cub!

This cub and the fierce beast were very similar, except that its back did not have any spikes. Its fur was smooth and shiny, and it did not have the fierce beast’s horrific face,

it was actually quite cute. Blinking its blood red eyes, with an “ow ow” sound twice, it crawled out of the belly of the fierce beast.

The instant the little thing climbed out, the corpse of the fierce beast suddenly underwent some changes, it turned into something similar to scattered gravel on the ground.

“This...” Lei Yu carefully thought back to the scene in the past. It seems that he came to this area and heard a roar before starting the fight. So the fierce beast was originally pregnant and its body became weak. If it wasn’t for this reason, there would have been no way for Lei Yu to win the battle. And this little thing was inside the mother’s stomach for an entire

year, during which the beast used its own energy to support the little cub's life. Looks like the beast has exhausted its energy at this time, otherwise it will not have instantly turned into gravel.

This scene was like mythological story, making it hard for Lei Yu to believe what was going on. Looking at the little thing that was the size of a kitten, Lei Yu suddenly felt a bit guilty. What should have been a reunion of a mother and child turned into a permanent farewell situation.

Lei Yu used his hands to pick up the little thing. The little thing then gently licked Lei Yu's arm, "if I left it here, it will definitely not survive for long, what should I do? Its

mother was already killed by me, should I take him away from here?" Lei Yu was suddenly deep in thought, if the little thing could grow up, it would definitely scare people. And once time passes, the spikes on its back will form, then it will undoubtedly become a monster? Nope, definitely cannot take him home.

A fierce struggle was going on inside Lei Yu's mind, one side was guilt, the other being difficulty.

The little thing in Lei Yu's palm was rubbing around for a long time, then suddenly jumped down. It made a "ow" sound, then ran towards the depths of the forest. Lei Yu hurried forward in an attempt to catch up.

The little thing was fast while Lei Yu followed closely behind. After running for a long distance, the little thing stopped in front of a large boulder, lifting its head up to look at it.

The boulder was more than two meters high, deeply entrenched in the dirt. Looking around the boulder, Lei Yu saw two parallel lines carved on the top. There is a certain distance between the two lines. The little guy at this time, once again made a “ow” sound, then his body suddenly lighted up, but this light was actually black. Lei Yu blinked a few times, then the light disappeared and the little thing was also gone.

Lei Yu looked all over but did not

find any sign of the little thing.  
When his attention was once again focused on the boulder, Lei Yu was completely shocked. The originally blank space between the two parallel lines suddenly had an image there, and the image was very familiar, it was that little beast!

“What... what is going on?”  
Furiously scratching his head, Lei Yu gave up and just sat down.

Observing it for most of the day and still not seeing any changes on the boulder, “forget it!”

Going to the edge of the river and washing his face, Lei Yu then once again went to pick a bag full of the unnamed fruit before going back to the river and sitting down to

cultivate. Currently it was already dark out, wanting to return to his residence would probably be impossible for now.

At the same time as Lei Yu had closed his eyes to cultivate, the boulder deep inside the woods started shaking, followed by returning to a calm state. But the image of the beast carved onto the face of the boulder was a bit different now, it had one blood red eye, while the other eye was blind.

Lei Yu's main purpose of coming back here was to pick these unnamed fruits. These fruits were very beneficial to Nuo Hu's cultivation. If Liu Hao can successfully condense his internal energy, then these fruits would be a



great help to him as well.

After a night of cultivation, the slight improvement had already made Lei Yu very happy. Carrying a bag full of these fruits, he was going to leave this familiar place, but this place did have some slight changes to it.

-----

“These fruits have a very long shelf life, no need to fear it rotting or going bad.” From his backpack, Lei Yu poured out the fruits he picked. Liu Hao did not know what they were, but Nuo Hu on the side was excited to the extreme. These fruits were a huge help to someone that was cultivating!

“Master, what are these? Does it taste good?” ask Liu Hao while holding a fruit and looking at it all over.

“Remove the question mark from you statement and taste it yourself” laughed Lei Yu.

Liu Hao blinked, put the fruit in his mouth, then his chewing gradually became faster, his looks becoming more and more surprised, “Oh man! Really delicious!” One hand grabbing another one and stuffing into his mouth again.

“You little thing! Really... ” Nuo Hu seeing Liu Hao’s actions became a bit distressed. These fruits were considered a precious miraculous elixir to him, yet to Liu Hao, it

looked like he was eating something as ordinary as a peanut, how can one not have their heart ache?

“Hm? What is going on?” Liu Hao suddenly starting rubbing his stomach, its surface went from red to green.

“No way, this thing is making him sick?” Lei Yu did not understand at all, he had been eating the fruit for over a year and did not get sick or any strange disease, why would Liu Hao just eat two and become like this?

“Nope, I’m not getting sick! Master, how come inside my stomach there’s a gas moving back and forth?”

Lei Yu was overjoyed, “hurry up and sit down cross-legged, focus your mind, carefully feel around what’s happening internally, at the same time follow the cultivating methods I gave you and see if you can grasp this gas.

Following Lei Yu’s words, Liu Hao sat down. Lei Yu and Nuo Hu stared at him without blinking, hoping there would be some result.

Half an hour later, Liu Hao had no response. An hour later, Nuo Hu yawned “how come it’s going so slow?”

“Master! Oh crap!”

# Chapter 19: Seeing Uncle Liu Again

“How was it!” Lei Yu hurriedly asked.

“I almost grasped the gas, but what a pity!”

“You are an imbecile! Dummy!”

Separating the fruits to the two, they each returned to their own home.

Lei Yu took out his cell phone, after thinking back and forth, he then dialed a number.

“Who is it?”

“Uncle Liu!”

“Little... little Yu?”

“It is. Uncle Liu, I want to see you, but don’t let the Lei family members know, is that possible?”

“I’ve already left the Lei family household, ever since you... since you left, I did not stay with the Lei family.”

“Oh? How did this happen?”

“I have something to do the next few days, I will call you afterwards.”

“Okay.” Hanging up the phone, Lei Yu lay on the bed and stretched around. Sleep suddenly overwhelming him, he wanted to have a good night’s rest. But once

he thought about the battle date in three years with Cai Zhong, now being only two years left, Lei Yu sat up again, "I cannot slack off!"

Three days later in the afternoon, Lei Yu's cell phone started ringing. Once a place was determined with uncle Liu, Lei Yu rushed over there.

Inside the room of a teahouse called "Pin Ming Zhuang" (Taste of Tea Village)

"Ever since the day you were being kicked out of the Lei family, I began packing to leave together with you. But once I found out you had jumped off a cliff, then I knew it was too late to tell you what I was planning." Uncle Liu's face showed some guilt.

For this jumping off the cliff incident, Lei Yu did not want to explain too much of the details. The thing he was most concerned with right now was his mother's whereabouts.

“Uncle Liu, who exactly is my mother?”

From uncle Liu's pocket, he took out a small rectangular box. Carefully opening the box, uncle Liu took out a photo and a piece of jade pendant.

“This is a photo of your mother, and this... this is jade pendant that was left to you by your mother.”

Lei Yu's hands were trembling as he took possession of these two things.



Due to the passage of time, the photo had become a bit yellow. This was a photo of a young and beautiful girl, but this was taken almost twenty years ago. In the photo, Lei Yu was being gently stroked by his mother while he was gently grasping onto her.

Floundering around while looking for a family member he had never been in touch with, this all seemed a bit too fake, too unrealistic.

Picking up the jade pendant that uncle Liu gave him, this was a clear colored emerald green jade, carved in front was the word “moon.” Lei Yu with a slightly choked voice asked: “Uncle Liu, did my mother ask you to give this jade pendant to me?”

Uncle Liu nodded, "right, nineteen years ago on that day, a woman was holding a baby in her arms, this baby was you." Uncle Liu let out a long sigh then said: "That day, the leader of the Lei family's wife was still alive, so two women were quarrelling quite fiercely. Everyone in the family did not agree that you were considered a descendant of the Lei family, but the family leader threw away the customs and still accepted you. Your mother also disappeared in the night after that. But before she left, she gave me those items, and made me promise that when you reached the age of twenty, to give you these items and to tell you everything that had happened.

Lei Yu's heart was startled, nineteen

years ago the leader of the house actually accepted me? This, how was this possible? Why would he be able to accept me nineteen years ago, but gave me up only because I did not have the family brand? And to even kick me out of the family? It's all somewhat unreasonable.

“This jade pendant is only half of the original, the other half is in your mother's possession. If you are able to be reunited with your mother, then you only need to take out the two pieces of the pendant and match it up to prove your identities.

No matter how Lei Yu thought about it, he did not think those tragic drama TV show plots that he used to watch growing up would actually happen to himself. This

whole thing was like a dream, for nearly two decades, he didn't even know what his mother looked like.

“So where is my mother right now?” asked Lei Yu.

Uncle Liu shook his head helplessly, “the day your mother left was the last time she was ever seen again. Everything I know has been revealed to you, I hope you can find your loved one soon, I have to leave now.”

“Wait!” shouted Lei Yu as uncle Liu was walking away. He then asked: “Why did you leave the Lei family?”

“This...” Uncle Liu's body was shaking, and one could even see tears forming in his eyes.

“Uncle Liu, what is it?”

“No, nothing, I’m fine, well, don’t ask too many questions, I have stuff to do so I have to go now.” Then uncle Liu left in a hurry, leaving a Lei Yu by himself.

Sitting down on a seat, he had to find his mother and ask her why she would leave him without a care. Why did she have to leave, making him motherless for these ten plus years, especially when he had to endure being bullied at a young age.

Lei Yu was basically in a daze, and a whole afternoon had passed. Lei Yu was staring at two things motionless until someone knocked on the door before he regained his composure.

“Excuse me, do you need any more water?”

“Uh, no need, I’m leaving soon.” Lei Yu exhaled a long breath, putting away the photo and the jade pendant, he then immediately left the area.

Lei Yu did not tell anyone about this situation, even Nuo Hu and Ai Er did not know about it. Lei Yu hung the jade pendant around his neck, then put the photo inside his wallet before returning to Dragon Group.

“How did things go?” asked Nuo Hu as he patted Lei Yu’s shoulder.

“Uh, pretty well I guess.”

“That’s good then.”

Lei Yu had dinner with the two siblings around ten o'clock at night. Lei Yu then returned home and was about to cultivate when the phone started ringing.

“Master, are you currently free?”

“Liu Hao, I was just about to cultivate, what is it?”

“I’ll be right there!” With just those words, Liu Hao hung up the phone.

Pertaining to this son of the Governor, Lei Yu did not know what to do at times. As the son of a senior government official, no matter how you look at him, he doesn’t behave like one.

But no matter how you look at it, Lei Yu was still quite satisfied. Even

though on a typical day, them two would be joking and laughing and not look like a master / disciple relationship. But when something happens, Liu Hao is still relatively obedient.

A short while later, the doorbell rang. Lei Yu opened the door and slightly hesitated, “this is...?”

“My sister.” (older)

Pulling a girl in her twenties, the two came through the door into Lei Yu’s apartment.

Lei Yu carefully examined this young girl, dressed in somewhat skimpy clothing, a one-piece tank top with skirt showing off her figure, buxom buttocks and a full



chest formed the well sought after S-curve. Below the skirt were two long slender white legs, the face was delicate and the five main facial features matched each other, looking at her would make one feel very comfortable.

“How come I didn’t know you had a sister?” said Lei Yu while scratching his head. He also did not understand why Liu Hao would bring her sister here in the middle of the night.

“Of course you wouldn’t know because I’ve never told you!” Said Liu Hao with a mysterious smile. “But she’s not my biological sister, she’s from my school that became my god sister. Her name is Cui Ying Ying and her father and my father

have been good friends for many years.”

“Oh, please sit. What would you like to drink?”

“No need to be so polite.” replied Cui Ying Ying. Her voice sounded very gentle and it even startled Lei Yu.

“How about some juice, I still have some juice here.” Lei Yu turned around and went into the kitchen towards the refrigerator. Liu Hao looked at Cui Ying Ying and smiled before following into the kitchen.

“Why did you bring your sister to my house for?” asked Lei Yu while pouring a glass of juice.

# Chapter 20:

## Alluring Guest At Night

“Sister Ying Ying’s admiration of you is like an endless surging river, so I brought her here to meet you, get to know each other a bit.” Liu Hao’s voice wasn’t that loud, just loud enough for them both to hear each other.

\*Splash!\*

“Master! Stop playing around!” Liu Hao took a cloth from the side, wiping the juice from his face with it.

“You stop playing around! That’s a dirty dish cloth!”

“Ah crap!”

“What are you doing? Bringing such a beautiful girl to my home in the middle of the night!”

“Master, you still don’t understand?” Liu Hao raised an eyebrow, with a malicious smile, then said: “Previously, we were together at a bar drinking, she then asked me some things about you.”

“How does she know about me?”

“She was there during your awesome performance at the competition! Then she asked me to give you a call, to see if you were free, and then we came. I also want

to know what she's up to." Liu Hao made an evil smirk.

"What on earth were you thinking! Don't do stuff like this!"

"What are you so afraid of! You possess all the charms and qualities of what a man should have, handsome looks, nice body, very powerful, these are very typical things that women are attracted to.

Lei Yu started frowning, not replying to his nonsensical disciple, then went out holding the juice. He then handed the juice to Cui Ying Ying.

"Thank you!" The soft sweet voice made Lei Yu's body experience a numb feeling, like it was quietly

attacking his spirit.

“Excuse me...” Although Lei Yu felt that asking this was a bit difficult, but he still asked anyway. “Is there something I can assist you with this late at night?”

As the small mouth sipped the cup of juice, Cui Ying Ying sweetly smiled and said: “I’m really attracted to you, I hope to become friends with you.”

“Ah!” Lei Yu opened his mouth and his jaws dropped to the ground.

“I saw your competition the other day, you’re so powerful, just by raising your hand you were able to break that guy’s arm.” Cui Ying Ying apparently was still

reminiscing that day's match.

“Thank you.”

“I also know your life story, being kicked out from a prominent family would be really difficult for one to accept, but that's okay, you are very strong and persistent, I really admire you.

“Thank you.” Lei Yu did not know what else to say.

“At school, I have thousands of people chasing after me, but I've never really paid any attention to them. It has nothing to do with family rules and such, it's just that I think they are a group of inferior people, they don't possess any real ability or anything outstanding, but

you're different."

"I'm sorry, I... right now, I don't intend on having a girlfriend!" Lei Yu had to stress that this issue had nothing to do with Cui Ying Ying being not beautiful enough. As higher-intellect mammals such as humans being faced with such an impulsive confession, one may just blurt out what they really wanted. But for Lei Yu, he could not because inside his heart, there was already someone very important.

"It doesn't matter." Seeing Lei Yu with an embarrassed expression, Cui Ying Ying laughed: "We can slowly get to know one and another for now. I'm going to leave now, Liu Hao, what about you, are we leaving together?"



“Oh? Uh, sister Ying Ying, you go ahead and leave first, I still have to talk to master about some stuff.”

Sweetly smiling, Cui Ying Ying slowly strutted her long beautiful legs towards the front door. Lei Yu even forgot to see her off, but she did not seem to care too much, opening the door and leaving by herself.

“Master, you’ve really won the jackpot! I did not expect sister Ying Ying to be so direct! This is something I’ve never seen in my entire life!” Liu Hao had a weird grin on his face.

“You asshole! Why didn’t you give me some advance notice of this introduction?”

“I was thinking, if I didn’t say anything and you were cultivating while completely naked, then that scene with sister Ying Ying...” Liu Hao squinted his eyes, daydreaming what a splendid show that would have been.

“You’re courting death!” Lei Yu turned around, raising his hand ready to strike, “Ouch! Mercy master! I now know I was wrong! Ouch!”

Liu Hao did not stay for too long, he was there only to briefly introduce Cui Ying Ying to Lei Yu.

This beautiful young girl was a second year student at the Tenglong University. Normally there would be quite a few guys going after her,

but she just ignored them all, she was considered the school's ice queen. How many people wished they could use their flames to melt that layer of ice, but the results were quite predictable.

Cui Ying Ying's family could not be compared to the four major forces in prestige, but in the country of Tenglong, they were considered not bad. They had a national chain of jewelry stores and the store names all contained "Cui Ying" in them.

In the eyes of all the students, this wealthy princess was similar to a sparkling diamond. Not only did she have an appearance that stimulated a man's urges, but she also had a prominent family.

Lei Yu was a bit puzzled, this son of the Governor chased after him desperately because he wanted to learn his martial arts. Strangely this Cui Ying Ying was also attracted to him because of his strength. It seems like becoming strong is indeed a good thing. When his thoughts switched to Ai Er, Lei Yu firmly shook his head.

After getting rid of those distractions, Lei Yu squeezed the jade pendant hung around his neck. After exhaling a long breath, he removed all his clothes and sat down cross-legged.

His internal energy was vast and endless, this torrential momentum of energy circulated throughout his meridians. Although this way of

cultivating was considered a bit crazy for a typical practitioner, if one was to accidentally fracture a meridian, then it will become an irreparable fault of themselves. Lei Yu was not afraid of this because he had the mysterious green energy guarding and escorting, paving a smooth path without any barriers.

While absorbing the trace spiritual energy in the air, Lei Yu's body suddenly trembled, "this... what is going on?"

A warm energy from the outside began entering into his body. And this energy did not have any impurities whatsoever, so the yellow bead's assistance was not needed at all. Lei Yu carefully experienced this pure energy, and

then was surprised to find out that it came from the jade pendant.

Rejoicing in his heart, Lei Yu concentrated onto the pure energy entering his body, and with ease, Lei Yu was able to control it.

The Sea of Energy inside his dantian continuously devoured this energy, similar to a ghost that died of hunger would never get full in the afterlife, absorbing the energy like crazy. (T/N: Chinese belief of why people should always die with a full stomach)

Lightly spitting out some turbid air, in this dark night, the piece of jade pendant gave off a crystal clear emerald green light. Lei Yu's consciousness was involuntarily

drawn to the jade, the ground and the sky suddenly rotated, plunging him into a world of darkness.

Lei Yu looked all around, there was nothing but darkness and he was standing all alone in the midst of it. Such a scenario would indeed cause one to feel some surprise and fear mixed in, but this was only within his awareness so Lei Yu was not at the point of being too afraid yet.

Within the dark space, a small light suddenly appeared. This light gradually became brighter and Lei Yu subconsciously took a few steps forward. This was a full moon!

“Would there be any relevance with the ‘moon’ word on the jade pendant?”

Under careful observation, Lei Yu determined his conclusion was correct. The full moon gradually rose higher up into the air, and its soft warm light shone a white beam directly onto Lei Yu. A warm and comfortable feeling covered every inch of Lei Yu's entire body.

It was because of this comfortable feeling that Lei Yu could not miss out on this opportunity, he started to absorb it. This soft and warm energy being absorbed into Lei Yu's dantian would actually cause his cultivation level to have a tremendous growth.

This was the power of a full moon? Why would it appear within this piece of jade pendant? Lei Yu could not figure out these questions, but



since it helped him improve his level, why not just ride the wave to wherever it goes.

Absorbing this soft and warm energy into his body gave him a kind of excitement. Because of this kind of unprecedented comfort, Lei Yu focused all his efforts onto the feeling. As time progressed, his internal energy gradually increased at frightful speeds, and eventually Lei Yu's abdominal area began to have a bloated feeling.

“Oh no! I have to immediately stop absorbing!”

If he did not immediately stop, then his internal energy being at maximum capacity could make his whole body expand, there was a

chance he would explode! Lei Yu had read about this experience before in some scrolls. How much internal energy one could sustain was based on their strength. If one's strength was not up to par and there was too much internal energy, then that energy would become uncontrollable. That person would ultimately die from self explosion.

“How come I can't get out?” Lei Yu's head was covered in sweat, he could not figure out how to withdraw his consciousness from the jade pendant.

# Chapter 21:

## Clearing Away The Clouds

The warm energy continued entering his body. It appears this warm energy was an nightmarish illusion and the most scary thing behind all of this was the fact that it was continuous and unceasing. If his consciousness doesn't break away from this soon, his life will likely end today!

Lei Yu messed up big time! No matter how hard he tried, he couldn't do it. "What should I do? What should I do? Do I really want to give up my life at this point?"

The most surprising thing to Lei Yu was that the mysterious green energy that had always been protecting him was now hiding somewhere, not even the slightest hint of its whereabouts. If this powerful energy did not help him out, then the consequences would be disastrous.

At the most crucial moment, inside his mind a powerful yellow energy suddenly exploded forth. This force was like a sharp sword, cutting off his consciousness with the full moon within the jade pendant.

Lei Yu suddenly awakened from the trance, his hands on the ground supporting his body while he gasped for air. Sweat was continuously dripping from his

body onto the wooden floor.

When gasping for air, Lei Yu felt his body tremble. After calming his breathing, he monitored his internals once again, his consciousness deliberately bypassing the jade pendant that was resting against his chest.

Inside his dantian area, the powerful energy was constantly surging around forming a vortex, and in the middle of the vortex, Lei Yu was able to see an electric net like threads slightly shimmering. A loud “Ka cha” sound was heard, startling Lei Yu.

Clearly remembering he was still in the mid-stage of [Integration], from the current changes he could detect

inside his body, and according to the cultivating methods imprinted into his mind, it was similar to being in the fourth stage [Energy Suppression]. What on earth was going on?

The purple energy inside his dantian area began to settle down as the lightning elements calmed down. Like a machine suddenly unplugged, it was lifeless inside, not even a slight tremor, it was now completely different from the past.

Lei Yu swallowed hard, attempting to control his internal energy, his consciousness reaching the Sea of Energy in an instant. His internal energy actually moved around easily according to his will, his control had actually improved by a

lot! This meant his advancement was actually true and not in error. The [Energy Suppression] stage was in fact being of stillness, “using calmness to react to an action, waiting carefully to adjust to any scenario.” (T/N: Chinese idiom)

Lightning has a powerful gravitational force, thus the need for mutual attraction of an opposite reaction force in order for his lightning infused internal energy to not leak out.

Meanwhile, Lei Yu noticed that not only were there changes in his Sea of Energy, there were changes in his bones as well. His bone density actually felt heavier.

“What’s going on?”

Under careful observation, Lei Yu realized that the makeup of his skeletal structure had completely changed in nature, now his bones had metallic elements infused inside. In the [Energy Suppression] stage, it required the Yin and Yang to complement each other, undergoing attraction and friction. Making the dantian's Sea of Energy as the focal point, the bones in his skeletal structure as a counter force, forming an attraction force, this made the emerging internal energy hide his vital status.

Heavily exhaling a breath, he stopped monitoring his internals. Lei Yu stood up, lightly jumped a few times and did not have any heavy feeling. It seems that his bones containing traces of metallic



elements inside did not cause too much of a burden. And even though his bones became a bit heavier, this did not cause any reduction in agility for his body.

Lei Yu was overjoyed, “f\*cking hell, I had one foot in the grave, scared the crap out of me!”

Lei Yu screamed out this sentence, but thankfully the soundproofing in the apartment was pretty good.

Lei Yu grabbed the jade pendant dangling on his chest, he wasn't sure if he hated or loved this thing. He almost died from self explosion while being trapped in there, but the benefit it brought allowed him to directly breakthrough a bottleneck. If it wasn't for the

yellow bead's power that exploded forth at that instant, he maybe a pile of rotting meat spread all over the ground right now.

Lei Yu's current strength – although not at the same level as the Lei family's master or elder, but if in the same generation as him, he was absolutely sure that no one would be his match

Tidying up everything, he was used to washing up before leaving the house. Lei Yu's mood was quite good, kind of like having the feeling that he could fly. Making a breakthrough meant he had just become stronger a bit, and this pleasant feeling for him was not something everyone would understand or comprehend.

Outside the military compound gate, Nuo Hu and Ai Er were standing there waiting for Lei Yu.

“I see that you’re in high spirits, your mood is quite good!” Nuo Hu said while raising his eyebrows.

“Why are both of you here?” asked Lei Yu slightly surprised. Ai Er rarely came here so this was a rare encounter.

“Is there a reason why you’re so happy?” Asked Ai Er with pouted lips, slightly unhappy.

“Ai Er, what’s wrong?” Asked Lei Yu a bit confused.

“Is it because last night, a hot girl visited your home that caused this happy attitude? Despicable! Forget

about you!” Ai Er pushed her hair back, turned around and stormed away.

“What... what’s going on?” Lei Yu was speechless

“Little Yu, you... \*sigh\*, what should I say to you?” said Nuo Hu shaking his head.

“Oh my god, you’ve all made a mistake! I... this...” Lei Yu did not know how to explain at this moment.

“Shortly before, someone named Cui Ying Ying called Ai Er’s cell phone.” Nuo Hu then said: “She told Ai Er she wanted a fair competition to see who would get you, after this, do you think Ai Er was happy? For

such a long time, did you not know that Ai Er had always liked you? And it just so happens that you appear in this elated mood, you tell me what Ai Er would think?”

Lei Yu was scratching his head with both hands, his mind was suddenly plunged into chaos, while his brain felt like a pot of glue.

“Nuo Hu, you guys misunderstood me! I...” Lei Yu forcefully shook head, “I’m happy because my cultivating level went up a stage, why wouldn’t I be in a good mood right?” Lei Yu slightly frowned, “it must be that bastard Liu Hao who gave Cui Ying Ying, Ai Er’s cell phone number, in fact... I also like Ai Er but just did not know how to tell her, I... I...”

“Go chase after her.” Nuo Hu patted Lei Yu’s shoulder. Lei Yu took a deep breath, then ran after the direction Ai Er went towards.

Dragon Group’s training ground. Ai Er was leaning against a wall, her eyes were a bit dejected and did not know what to think.

“Ai Er, don’t be angry!”

Seeing Lei Yu, Ai Er turned her head away from him, her pink little face was a bit swollen, and was still very cute. Lei Yu was a bit startled, then said: “I didn’t know what you were angry about just then, but now I know, in fact...” Lei Yu lowered his eyes and scratched his head, even though at this point, he still didn’t know what to say?

“In fact what?” asked Ai Er with her clear big eyes staring at Lei Yu.

“In fact...” Lei Yu took several deep breaths, then said: “In fact, that day at the airport picking you up, I had already fallen for you, but I’ve never had the courage to tell you. Just then, Nuo Hu said you also... you also...”

“I also like you!”

Ai Er stepped forward, wrapped her arms around Lei Yu’s neck with such ferocity, face blushing red, then dove into the embrace of Lei Yu.

Lei Yu was in a daze, standing there not knowing what to do. He did not think Ai Er would be this forward, it

seems his most sensible choice right now is not to say anything.

Lei Yu raised his arms, lightly resting on Ai Er's narrow waist in an embrace, enjoying this very comfortable feeling. They could feel each other's heartbeat and Lei Yu experienced an unspeakable happiness.

In a distance, countless soldiers were looking with jealous and envious stares.

"Let me take you home?" Asked Lei Yu while gently stroking Ai Er's hair.

Ai Er nodded, in reality her heart beat was jumping around in chaos. Lei Yu borrowed the car keys in



Nuo Hu's hands, then drove Ai Er back home.

"The two of you must be really pleased right now!" Said a teenager approaching the two.

"Xiao Fei?"

"What? Surprised? I just bought a villa here, very honored to become neighbors with you." Said Xiao Fei with his eyes gleaming, relentlessly glaring at Lei Yu with his deep sunken eyes.

"Despicable, such a stalker!" Ai Er then angrily went into the house.

"Lei Yu, I know you've had a miserable life experience, but do you really have to bother Ai Er day in and day out relentlessly?"

Shouldn't you think about your status, what makes you qualified to be with her?" Said Xiao Fei forthrightly.

Lei Yu turned around with a blank face and coldly said: "People who insult me will regret it later on, and aren't you just relying on the power of the Eagle Group's commander for your status?"

# Chapter 22: Genius Of The Lei Family

Lei Yun Tian = Lei Yu's father

Lei Tian = the one that got his arm  
broken by Lei Yu at the competition

-----

“My status is more higher class  
than yours!” Xiao Fei angrily  
responded.

“Right, higher class, isn't Nuo Hu  
higher class than you? Why do you  
have to put up a face that makes  
people disgusted with you?”

Xiao Fei's cold deep eyes were full

of anger now, “get away from Ai Er, otherwise I will give you a horrible death.”

“Get lost! I don’t have time to waste on you!” Lei Yu ignored Xiao Fei’s anger and provocation, walking around him and leaving.

“You just wait and see!” Xiao Fei’s anger completely exploded at the walking away Lei Yu. When he was abroad, he went to school together with Ai Er. A year ago Ai Er returned home, so after begging and pleading, Xiao Fei finally convinced his family to allow him to return home. But now a Lei Yu came out of nowhere, the beauty that was almost within his grasp was intercepted by another person. Xiao Fei promised that he would not let

this go without a fight.

-----

Lei Yu is currently with Dragon Group, which is just one of the many forces belonging to Martial Sect. Inside Martial Sect, all the large and small military units were actually set up by the families of different ancient martial clans. But nevertheless, all these military units are lead by the most powerful Shangguan family.

Although the elite members of Dragon Team only had eighteen members, adding the newly joined Lei Yu this past year made it nineteen. Everyone worked hard continuously cultivating, and Lei Yu cultivated by himself had reached

the [Energy Suppression] mid-stage, which also happens to be the mid-stage of the rank Fourth Order Warrior. If he was able to attain the rank of the Sixth Order Warrior, which according to his cultivating methods imprinted in his mind, would be the [Detachment] stage, then what should he do after that? Would that mean he would no longer have any further cultivation methods? But he shouldn't dwell on this too much because ever since he improved with the help of the jade pendant, he had relaxed his cultivating schedule a bit. Lei Yu sat down cross-legged, and as usual, went into his consciousness, but this time he did not dare to use it to enter the jade pendant. Although the gains were enormous and improved his cultivation greatly,

this was still a bit too dangerous for him.

The Lei family household, Lei Yun Tian's office.

“Master (of the family), the child Lei Yu, are you sure you don't intend on dealing with him? Asked an elderly person with white hair.

Lei Yun Tian shook his head, “not time yet, definitely not time yet.”

“You should be able to see the situation with Lei Tian was quite clear, especially when Lei Tian himself said that his arm was broken in an instant. This destructive power is not something an ordinary person is capable of, besides, there were traces of a

lightning power, could it be...”

“I’ve already thought about this point, the problem is that day, I was the one that gave the order for him to be kicked out of the family. If we go back on our words now, then our family will definitely lose face!” Lei Yun Tian was helpless, the decision that day was too arbitrary.

As a descendant of the Lei family, who happens to have the ability of lightning, there’s only one possibility right now – the original “lightning” brand. In the Lei family, this brand appeared on the third generation’s master of the family, but ever since he had passed away, the brand never appeared anymore in the descendants. Based on Lei Tian’s description, it is likely that



Lei Yu could be the Lei family's ultimate genius that appears once every 10,000 years. That day, Lei Yu was suspected of not having a pure enough family blood line so the flame brand did not appear on him, now thinking about it, not only the master of the family Lei Yun Tian, even the white-haired Elder felt a bit embarrassed. They forced a person who could've been the successor to lead their Lei family to the next higher level, right out of the family's door.

“So master, what are you waiting for?” asked the Elder.

“We have not seen with our own eyes whether Lei Yu is the so called ultimate genius, and also no one has actually seen whether he has

the lightning brand or not, so this matter cannot be settled yet.”

“Isn’t that easily solved? I’ll just send someone to investigate quietly and then we’ll know?”

“That’s fine then, but this situation should be conducted in secrecy so the other family members do not know about it. You should know, Lei Yu has currently joined Dragon Group, every move we make should be extra careful. This situation should only be known between you and I, pertaining to Lei Tian..., warn him that if he spreads this secret out, then he will be punished according to the Lei family’s rules!”

“I understand.” The Elder turned around and left the office.

Lei Yun Tian looked up and sighed, "I am such a fool! That day's decision has really made me beyond regretful. Perhaps it's all too late now, but I just hope Lei Yu does not hold this grudge against me!"

Lei Yun Tian was completely clear about Lei Yu's performance ever since he was young. Towards the family, the child did not have any disloyalty. Even when he was identified as not having the family's brand, he would still put in a lot of effort into improving himself, proving his existence to others. Now that he was kicked out of the family, he wasn't sure if Lei Yu would hold a grudge or not?

Little did they know, during times unknown to Lei Yun Tian, the little

Lei Yu suffered so much humiliation in those five years and survived countless beatings. Even the truth behind Lei Yu jumping off the cliff, he knew nothing of. He had always thought it was the results of Lei Yu being too weak. If he had only knew the truth, then perhaps he would not put any hope in bringing him back into the family.

Unaware of what was happening, Lei Yu continued going on with his life like before. But off to the side, there was a pair of eyes staring and following him wherever he went.

After several days, the person arranged by the Elder to investigate whether Lei Yu had the brand or not, did not make any progress.

Mainly he was unable to enter the restricted area of the Dragon Group's military grounds, since this was a dangerous action he should avoid.

This man hurriedly went into a store to buy something before ending up in front of Lei Yu's home. While Lei Yu was still at Dragon Group, he picked the lock and opened the front door.

It was currently in the evening, Lei Yu was holding onto Ai Er's hands, arriving at the front entrance to his home.

"You two are really like love birds!" A voice could be heard by the two. Turning around to look, a voluptuous figure appeared in front

of them.

“Cui Ying Ying? Why are you here by my house?” asked Lei Yu.

“You’re the one that called me?” Ai Er’s eyes were shimmering, looking at the person in front of her dressed in a sexy mature attire.

“Little girl, I did not expect you to form a relationship this quickly, this truly surprises me.” Cui Ying Ying laughingly said.

Lei Yu suddenly became dumb, standing there not knowing what to say. He could not just start cursing her out, after all, Cui Ying Ying did not treat him with malice.

“Brother Yu, let’s go, just ignore her.” Grabbing onto Lei Yu, Ai Er

angrily walked towards the main entrance of the apartments.

“Hey! I am not giving up, you have to watch your lover carefully, don’t let me steal him from you! Ha ha...” a silvery laughter entered their ears

“Why is she like that? She’s so despicable.”

“Okay, do you think I’ll be so easily taken away by her? Silly girl, let’s go, I’ll take you home?”

“I don’t want to! I want to go to your house!”

“You can’t joke around like that, I...” Lei Yu suddenly felt everything was spinning around, what was happening to this generation? How could girls become more forward

than boys?

“I’m just kidding with you, dummy!”  
Ai Er made a funny face, then ran off in a good mood.

The two ate dinner, then bidding Ai Er farewell, Lei Yu returned to his apartment and stretched around, “time to cultivate!”

After some warm up movements, Lei Yu took off his clothes leaving only his underwear on. Sitting cross-legged on the ground, he began to circulate his internal energy.

Across from Lei Yu’s apartment was a hotel, and inside a guest hotel room...

“He really does have a lightning



brand!" A middle-aged man stared at the computer screen, his eyes revealed a look of shock.

"Looks like our decision that day was a complete blunder! Ugh! Should not have, should not have!" Sighed the white-haired Elder.

"You can leave now, but remember, you are forbidden from mentioning this to anyone!" said Lei Yun Tian to a young man.

"Yes!" The young man left the room filled with shock. No one would think that the useless trash without the pure blood of the Lei family lineage, considered a bastard child, would actually become the Lei family's most pure blooded person and possess "the" original lightning

brand.

“Master, what should we do now?”  
asked the Elder.

“What do you think?”

The Elder thought for a moment and then said: “Since we’ve determined he is the foundation of our Lei family, then we should do everything possible to re-invite him back into the family. Right now, we can’t consider the issue of saving face, we can’t miss this opportunity!”

“I was thinking the same thing, but how do we explain this to all our family members? Could we say that we both got drunk that day and made a bad decision?” Lei Yun Tian

suddenly became worried again.

“Now is not the time to consider these things, this original brand and its importance to the Lei family, you master, should understand it. If we lose it, it means that in the next one thousand years, or even ten thousand years, we may never see this miracle happen again.

# Chapter 23:

## Surprise Guest

Indeed, the emergence of such a brand would mean that the in the history of the Lei family, this would be the fourth clan member to have this brand. The laughable thing was that they made such a stupid decision that day.

“Lei Yu of course does not want to go back, he himself should know what it means to possess that brand since he has seen countless ancient scrolls pertaining to this subject. Since he has not returned to the family, that means he does not forgive us.”

Ten years ago, Lei Yu did not have the family's brand, Lei Yun Tian felt powerless. Now that Lei Yu had the family's most pure blooded lightning brand, Lei Yun Tian felt even more powerless. Doesn't this whole course of event feel like the heavens are playing a joke on our family?

“How about... how about we go directly to him, and ask his opinion?”

“What if he refuses?”

“Trying is better than not doing anything right?” said the Elder.

“Ugh!” After a long sigh, Lei Yun Tian said: “Fine then, but it looks like he is currently cultivating, it is

a taboo to interrupt people cultivating so let's wait until he finishes, then we'll go.

The Elder nodded his head meaning he agreed.

The young man that the Elder sent to investigate did not achieve any results after days of following Lei Yu. He could only go to a store to buy some wireless pinhole cameras to install in Lei Yu's bedroom and bathroom. When Lei Yu took off his clothes to cultivate, that's when this previous scene took place.

Lei Yu focused on his dantian as the center of his attention, nothing distracting him at all, after breaking through and reaching the [Energy Suppression] stage, Lei Yu became

more skillful in controlling his internal energy. It was similar to holding onto a string and flying a kite. Leading his internal energy to circulate, each step he took was very careful. He was afraid of any further accidents, not like before where he would just carelessly force through every meridian point.

Lei Yu was worried that if another accident occurred, and if that powerful unknown green energy did not show up to help like before, then he would be in big trouble. Being careful is better, it's best to rely on his own since he can always count on that. Lei Yu has learned his lesson ever since the jade pendant situation.

The internal energy inside his Sea

of Energy did not move at all, but when it does move it's pretty much earth-shattering. Mixed with threads of lightning and loud noise, as if the clouds in the sky was warning people a storm was about to come. The internal energy inside his dantian and within his bone structure had a trace of lightning that was near invisible being attracted to them. It was because of the bone structure that the internal energy was able to be still like it was lifeless, but then explode forth capable of astonishing others.

Lei Yu slowly exhaled a breath, the internal energy flowing to the heart vessel was the most noteworthy of places. The heart vessels are where the human body houses its most vulnerable meridians, it is the



center point where all meridians gathered. What made Lei Yu rejoice the most was during the process, the green energy once again appeared, protecting and escorting all the way, helping Lei Yu heal all the damaged areas. Without realizing it, he shouted out “asshole, you should’ve came out earlier!”

With the appearance of the green energy, Lei Yu felt his worry go away. When cultivating before, the thin internal energy was easy to enter into the heart vessels, now the thickness of his internal energy had been doubled, but he still had to be careful.

After breaking through the [Fusion] stage and reaching the [Energy Suppression] stage, Lei Yu had

always been consolidating his internal energy, so he did not continue to follow the methods imprinted on his mind to circulate that internal energy. Today is the first time he is controlling this internal energy that is double the power than previously. Lei Yu was naturally a bit nervous, but fortunately that green energy was following.

After breaking through the first line of defense, the complex heart vessels structure caused Lei Yu to pause a good amount of time. Finally selecting the target, then condensing his internal energy together by using the energy from the rear, forming something similar to a crowded line, he opened the flood gate and pushed forward.

The soldiers guarding the heart vessels were a lot stronger than the other meridians, but after several confrontations, Lei Yu was still unable to break in. Slightly gasping for breath, the condensed internal energy he previously gathered together doubled in size again, this time Lei Yu was determined to ruthlessly breakthrough.

However, Lei Yu's entire body system could be considered more powerful than before. Having experienced the [Body Refining] stage, whether it be his meridians or his bone structure, his muscles or his skin, they've all become much more tough and powerful than an ordinary person.

Clenching his teeth, Lei Yu readied

himself for the finale, making his internal energy instantly burst forth towards the meridians of the heart vessels. Sure enough, the heart vessels were unable to handle the pressure from the instantaneous momentum. After struggling for a few minutes, a fracture broke open.

A heart-piercing pain transmitted from his chest to his brain. Lei Yu's breathing increased, but his eyes were still tightly closed, he could not afford the slightest disruption. His heart vessels suffered a fracture from the impact, which for a typical cultivator would mean the signs of imminent death. The majority of people that were unable to breakthrough, would be stuck on the same level unable to progress to the next rank. Lei Yu had the

unknown green energy protecting and escorting, naturally did not realize just how terrible his situation was.

Lei Yu felt a terrible tightness on his chest, and even felt that he was unable to breathe. Every inhale of breath was a small amount, but exhaling was a lot. This condition could be considered extremely serious.

Sure enough, the green energy started its powerful force, holding Lei Yu's own purple energy back, it then instantly rushed forward, wrapping around the fractured heart vessels and blood vessels. At the same time, a thin thread was pulling a blood vessel, attempting to reconnect it to its original place,

but it was not that easy. After several more attempts, it finally succeeded. From the cluster of green energy that had wrapped around the fractured areas, a separate energy split off to nourish the recently fixed blood vessel.

When Lei Yu's whole body became stronger, the mysterious green energy all became more powerful as well. Previously, it required one to two hours of repair time, however today, it only took a few minutes for it to complete. Meridians that had gone through being repaired became much tougher than before. After Lei Yu's breathing became normal, he made a second attempt, this time the breakthrough went very smoothly, even Lei Yu had no idea it could be this easy.

The newly broken through heart vessels required a follow-up internal energy, but it was too far from the dantian. The most straightforward way was to draw the trace amounts of spiritual energy from the surrounding air, by extending out multiple threads from the Sea of Energy, then forming them as one. This whole process actually required the yellow bead inside his brain to help out. So with the fastest speed, turning the outside spiritual energy into a gas, then the newly entered energy inside the body had its impurities removed.

After the entire process was completed, Lei Yu was completely drenched in sweat. Apart from the floor covered in sweat, there were

also the dirty impurities removed from his body.

At this time of day, the sky had already started to become bright. Lei Yu rushed into the bathroom to scrub away like his life depended on it. Lei Yu had faced these disgusting impurities everyday, he was already sick and tired of it, but it was all in the name of cultivating so there was nothing he could do about it.

One could only say the city's pollution was too severe, even the spiritual energy in the air was invaded by the pollution. That night not too long ago he had cultivated in the unnamed paradise, the impurities left on his body was not as much dirt as today's.



After washing up, he changed into a set of clean clothes. Putting away some textbooks into his backpack, he was ready to leave.

\*Ding Dong\*

At this time, the doorbell rang. Lei Yu blinked “what time is it now? Who would come by? It shouldn’t be that asshole Liu Hao right?”

Putting the backpack on the sofa, Lei Yu went to open the door. He had originally wanted to mockingly laugh at the person but then his face froze, his whole body was motionless as if this moment, time stood still.

# Chapter 24:

## Accepting The Challenge

Unknown how much time had passed, Lei Yu finally woke up from his trance like state. With a pair of haunting eyes, he stared at the two familiar faces but unemotionally attached to, “what do you two want?”

“Can we chat with you for a bit?”  
Lei Yun Tian’s speech almost came out in a hiss through his clenched teeth.

Thinking for a moment, Lei Yu let the two men into the house

“What do you want to talk to me about?” Asking straight to the point. Lei Yu’s attitude was like talking to a stranger, his tone did not show what mood he was in. The ten year ago Lei Yu who always stuck to his father’s side was now completely different in the eyes of the two men.

“Little Yu, I know you’ve hated me for many years, right?” Lei Yun Tian said hesitantly. He still wasn’t completely sure of what Lei Yu thought about the whole situation.

“Nope! You and I have become estranged. Two years ago we no longer have any relationship, so why would I hate you?” Lei Yu’s eyes were filled with anger, there were some things that could not be

forgotten, especially those etched into the core of his being.

The Elder on the side sighed while shaking his head, he also did not know what else to say. The atmosphere was filled with dead silence.

After a while, Lei Yun Tian clenched his fists hard, then said: "I know for the past many years, it was all my fault, because of our negligence on the day of your baptism, this has caused today's mistake. As your father, I hope you can forgive me." As a commander-level figure in one of the major forces of the country of Tenglong, to say these types of words to a youngster around twenty years of age, this shows how much he values Lei Yu's importance.

“Mistake? A mistake that lead me to being kicked out of the family? A mistake that allowed everyone to cast me aside and give me dirty looks?” Lei Yu’s chest showed his breathing quickening, becoming very emotional.

“Little Yu, return with us, you are our family’s future hope!”

“Impossible!” Lei Yu suddenly stood up from the sofa and shouted: “I, Lei Yu, have nothing to do with the Lei family!”

“But your surname is Lei after all!”

“There are so many people in this world with the surname Lei, would they all happen to belong to your Lei family?”

“Lei Yu!” The Elder’s eyes were filled with anger, “watch your words! How could you say those words to the master of the family?”

Lei Yu turned his head, coldly looking at the Elder, “you two came into my home and aren’t allowing me to speak freely? This place does not belong to your Lei family, and originally, I did not have such deep hatred of the Lei family. It was all because of you, because of your grandson, resulting in how things turned out today. Your grandson Lei Yun bears the greatest responsibility.”

“Lei Yun? How could that be?”

“You go ask him yourself, I do not want to explain it.” Slowly exhaling,

Lei Yu then said: "I know you've already seen my brand, and I've also seen the family's ancient scrolls. In the past, I've tried many times to prove that I was not a coward, wanting to prove to my father how powerful I had become. But time and time again I was shot down with indifference, and then even kicked out of the family. Since I've already left the Lei family's main gate, I have never thought about going back again. I am sorry, you two please return, I still have training to do at Dragon Group."

After Lei Yu made that statement, he raised his hand in a gesture towards the door inferring that they please leave.

Lei Yun Tian and the elder glanced at each other, their eyes filled with

helplessness were quite obvious. Shaking their heads, they turned to leave. But things were far from simple, as a genius in the Lei family that only appears once every thousands of years, they were not going to give up this easily.

Sending off Lei Yun Tian and the Elder, Lei Yu leaned his back against the door. His heart was unable to calm down. That day's shame was brought on by the family, and while he was at the lowest period of his life, the person that helped him the most was his childhood friend. And the members of his family, especially his own father did not even say one single word to him during that period. How could Lei Yu be not be utterly disappointed?



Wearing his backpack, and like always, Lei Yu jogged to the direction of Dragon Group. While on this path, Lei Yu was preoccupied with many thoughts.

“Little Yu, today is the date you’ve joined Dragon Group for a full year. You need to be careful, maybe someone will come and challenge you.” Nuo Hu laughingly said while patting Lei Yu’s shoulder.

“That’s even better, someone challenging me would mean I would learn something new from it, exactly what I want” replied Lei Yu with a forced smile.

They two arrived at Dragon Group’s most special villa. Inside was where Dragon Group’s elites were

gathered. One could say they were the elites of the elite, everyone had extraordinary strength.

This past year, Lei Yu continued to grow. Every level of growth was gained by his sweat and by his hard work which were inseparable. It was from the large amount of blood and sweat that was exchanged for the current Lei Yu.

During the past year, a lot of people knew that Lei Yu was the type to hide his strength. There were some who were very prideful, unwilling to admit his strength and wanting to challenge him. But because of Lei Yu's entry to Dragon Group was less than a year, they had to keep waiting. And the day has finally come, a few of the elites slowly

made their move, seeing Lei Yu's eyes give off a significant change in his manner.

Dragon Group had an unspoken rule – Dragon Team members were allowed to challenge anyone, but the challenge was restricted to only within the ten plus Dragon Team members themselves. If the person being challenged refuses, then they will be identified as the Dragon Team's coward. Of course, one was also able to challenge the Commander of Dragon Group Nuo Yi Long, the Deputy Commander Nuo Yi Feng, or the Senior Officer Fan Hong Chang. But to this day, no one had dared to challenge the three. If one was to really ask who would dare to challenge them, then it's possible that only Lei Yu would

have the capability. But currently, no one knew what level of strength Lei Yu had reached to this point.

Reaching the [Energy Suppression] stage, Lei Yu's ability to hide his strength had reached a greater degree. This was actually the most important point because hiding one's strength, at the most crucial moment, one could surprise the opponent unexpectedly and overwhelm them.

Sure enough, once the two entered the training hall on the second floor, a large 1.85 meter tall (6ft 1in) male came forward. Lei Yu recognized this large male, his name was Hu Li. On a typical day, he would train abnormally hard, and had already reached the Third

Order Warrior rank. His entire body was covered in thick defined muscles which one could tell contained a surprising amount of strength.

“Hu Li, is something up?” Seeing someone blocking them, Lei Yu lifted up his head to ask.

“Lei Yu, today is the day you’ve joined Dragon Group for a full year, I’ve waited for this day for a long time. Today, I want to challenge you!” Hu Li’s rich and loud voice spread throughout the hall and all eyes were turned towards them.

Although Lei Yu had a premonition that someone would challenge him, he just didn’t expect it to be this quick. He also understood that he

could not refuse. If someone refused, then everyone will consider him/her a coward. Of course Lei Yu did not want to bear with such a reputation inside Dragon Group.

“I accept your challenge!” said Lei Yu with a smile.

“Good, very good! I will arrange the competition for you two.” At this time, Nuo Yi Long came in from another door.

“Commander!” Shouting in unison, everyone lined up neatly in the center of the hall.

“Tonight, I’ll arrange the competition for you two here, but you both should know the rules of Dragon Group, you are the pillars of

this country, Dragon Group's elite, I do not want anyone to suffer irreparable harm, therefore, watch yourselves in today's competition, accidents will not be tolerated, do you two understand?" Asked Nuo Yi Long.

Lei Yu and Hu Li replied in unison: "Understood!"

Nuo Yi Long had always been interested in Lei Yu, not only because of Nuo Hu introducing him to Dragon Group, but more importantly there were two things: the first was the lightning brand on his upper arm; and the second being Lei Yu's mind and internal strength had exceeded an ordinary person. Exactly how did he cultivate those?

After a day of training, Lei Yu did not choose any exercises that made him lose too much stamina, nor did he go through weight training. He wanted to retain his strength in order to meet tonight's competition.

Going against someone that was a mere Third Order Warrior rank, Lei Yu had a high certainty of winning. But no matter who the opponent was, he must always be cautious, he must not be overconfident, there is often a fine line between winning and losing. This point Lei Yu understood clearly that anywhere and anytime, unforeseen circumstances may happen.



# Chapter 25:

## Fighting Hu Li

Night time, it's already around ten o'clock. Most of Dragon Group's soldiers had already returned to their dorms while it was very lively inside the villa.

The training hall on the second floor had been vacated to allow a large open space, covered with a layer of blue carpet. In the center of the carpet were written two large eye-catching characters "Dragon Group". Surrounding those two characters was a life-like dragon.

"Today is Lei Yu's one year anniversary of entering Dragon

Group.” Fan Hong Chang was standing in the center of the blue carpet, he then continued saying: “He also received a challenge. It has already been a decade since Hu Li joined Dragon Group. Everyone is familiar with Hu Li, one step at a time, he went from the Wild Wolf Team to the Lion Team, after a long and harsh journey, he entered Dragon Team. Going through continued hard work, he has reached the strength of a Third Order Warrior. Today’s competition is very special, let us all be witnesses to their strength!”

Cheers erupted everywhere. Even though there were only ten plus or so people present, the atmosphere here was no less than a 10,000 person concert. Also at this time,

Lei Yu and Hu Li both entered the main hall at the same time.

Both of them had a bare upper body, lower body wearing Dragon Group's military issued camouflage pants. The pants had some pale colors in it and were actually designed with some fashion sense.

As the two entered, cheers erupted once again. The two belonged to entirely different body types: Hu Li's whole body was full of bulky muscles filled with explosive force; and Lei Yu had a very masculine toned muscles. Although it was unlike Hu Li's muscles that gave off a bear-like feeling, it still contained a wild explosive power, just like a black panther lurking in the darkness of the night.

“I’m not going to say anymore useless words, the competition begins, be careful of your actions, causing any major disabilities are not allowed, understood?” Once Fan Hong Chang’s words ended, they both ran forward to get ready.

Lei Yu did not move, only watching Hu Li who had begun to exert some strength. His entire body was surrounded by a pale yellow light, the muscles on his body began to expand again as if they had become blocks of hard stone.

Lei Yu casually stood on the side, waiting for his opponent’s strengthening. Although his current appearance gave people a very casual feeling, the power of lightning within his body was

surging non-stop. The dantian region's trace internal energy were being absorbed by the meridians, while the rest of his internal energy were surging around, circulating through his four limbs, upper and lower body, as well as all parts of the body.

At this point, Lei Yu had completely become an electricity conductor, anything that encounters him will be subject to a bombardment of lightning.

After they were finished with preparing, they both rushed towards each other. At this time, the entire audience were holding their breath, this was not an arena competition, nor was this an underground life or death struggle,

therefore there weren't any unruly shouts or clamor, everyone here had dignity and class.

Having to admit, Hu Li's strength was very powerful. After Lei Yu raised his hand to ward off a punch, his body was helplessly knocked backwards. Forcing Lei Yu to have such a reaction, one could see how powerful this Hu Li was.

Hu Li was not better off, when his punch came in contact with Lei Yu, a numbness passed through his fist, causing his movements to be somewhat slower. His eyes revealed a look of surprise, he did not see Lei Yu charge up any special moves, so why would he experience such a strong sense of paralysis? Could it be related to the brand on his arm?

Thinking to this point, Hu Li had an idea. Since once his fist touches his opponent, he will suffer a paralysis effect, then why not just use his feet, with the military boots as protection, it can definitely play the role of insulation.

Seemingly slow but in reality it was extremely fast, without hesitation, Hu Li raised his right leg. A standard text book side-kick stance was taken, then a kick was completed in a blink of an eye, a kick that was precisely aimed at Lei Yu's chest area.

If Hu Li's speed was considered extremely fast, then Lei Yu's speed could only be described as the speed of lightning. Simply withdrawing a step to the right, he

easily dodged Hu Li's heavy kick, followed by approaching his left side. When there is only one leg on the ground, a person's balance will be affected to some extent. Lei Yu simply went for Hu Li's left leg that was supporting the body, gently hitting his knee joints, causing Hu Li to instantly fall to the ground. This beautiful series of moves by Lei Yu was pulled off in perfection.

The audience could not help but start boiling with excitement, the moves Lei Yu made were seen clearly by everyone, only one word could describe it, "fast!"

If one was to say that Lei Yu's actual strength relied on the power of lightning, then his speed was the outcome of relying on said



lightning.

Hu Li who did not have enough time to react to the attack fell to the ground, but immediately slapped the ground with his hands to stand back up. He looked at Lei Yu and observed his facial expressions appeared to be more focused.

Although he did not receive any damage from blow to the joint, but he had to recognize his opponent's superior speed. He could only use the power of his strength to contend with the opponent, since this was Hu Li's forte. The cultivating methods he received from Dragon Group happened to be strength-based methods.

Raising his huge fists, he went forward and smashed it downwards.

The air around his fists gave of a “whirring” noise as it went down, this punch could be described as containing all of Hu Li’s power. Even if he had to suffer the paralysis feeling from striking Lei Yu, Lei Yu will not be better off receiving the punch.

After all, Hu Li’s thought process was a bit too simple. Lei Yu was indeed going to rely on speed to win. High strength could generate a lot of speed and a large collision was dependant on that speed. But if a weak punch was thrown, as long as there is enough speed behind it, the power of that punch would no longer be considered weak.

Let’s use an example of two cars in a collision, if the speed of the cars

were slow, there would be at most dents and scratches. But if cars were travelling at high speeds, then the results of that crash could be easily imagined.

While Hu Li's fist was still travelling forward through the air, Lei Yu made a quick decision. Slightly lowering his head, raising his right hand, then condensing a hint of lightning power, using the fastest speed possible, he threw a punch hitting Hu Li in the abdominal area. Lei Yu's timing was really good, if one was to be hit in the stomach with a high force, then it will make the person lose their breath (getting the wind knocked out of them), completely losing the ability to fight. Even if the force wasn't too great, it could still make

the opponent temporarily stop their current action.

“The results of this competition is very obvious.” Nuo Yi Long excitedly stood up. This competition was quick and simple, the opponent merely threw out some punches and kicks and it’s already over.

Withdrawing his fist in the air, Hu Li did not show any signs of anger after his defeat. He smiled and said: “I never would have thought you would be this powerful, you have my admiration, thank you for going easy on me.”

Lei Yu laughed and patted Hu Li’s shoulders, “if you were my enemy, I will definitely not go easy on you,

but we are brothers in Dragon Team, naturally I would not use all my strength, aren't we all family?"

"Your statement about being a family is great! Lei Yu, you have not disappointed me!" Fan Hong Chang happily ran forward, disregarding his status as Dragon Team's instructor.

"Woa!"

Lei Yu left a not too bad record in Dragon Team which gave him a lot of idle time. But what Lei Yu wanted most were more battles, because only when one constantly fought, then they would be able to grasp more techniques and guidance.

Gradually, Lei Yu tried to challenge other members of Dragon Team. At first, there would be one or two members accepting the challenge, but in the end, even though accepting the challenge, they would all be knocked down or admit defeat within the first round. This situation made Lei Yu quite helpless, but in the meantime, there was one person silently watching in the background, and this person was scarcely seen by Lei Yu.

Dragon Team's treatment of their members were really quite good. Being with them for only one year, Lei Yu was able to purchase a good car and also move to a new place. This was primarily due to the space inside the military apartments weren't sufficient. Sometimes at

night he would want to try out some new combat methods but due to the lack of space, he was unable to practice.

Lei Yu bought a residence within the urban areas of the city that was close to the Dragon Group headquarters. The place was indeed not small, a full two hundred square meters (2152 sq ft) of living space. Half of the space was used for normal living while the other half had become a practice/cultivating area (dojo like). Whether it be cultivating his internal energy or refining his combat skills, Lei Yu would be there. And Lei Yu's house also became a place that Liu Hao would often come by.

In today's society, gun battles with

bullets flying everywhere, relying on personal strength as a unique weapon is something ridiculed by others. But the geniuses among them are actually the most scary people in the world.

-----

In Lei Yu's hands was the spike that was pulled from the unnamed beast's back. His mind constantly replaying a scene, that day he was chasing the cub, why would it suddenly disappear? And the picture carved on the boulder, what could it mean?



# Chapter 26: Ice Queen Beauty

It was natural that he could not figure it out. Currently he was a bit hungry so Lei Yu decided to simply go out, ready to find a random restaurant to eat at.

The city's night was illuminated with lights throughout. About one street away from Lei Yu's house, there was a street filled with snack stalls (street market). Compared to other streets, it was way more lively here.

Randomly selecting a relatively clean stall and sitting down, Lei Yu looked around. The signature dish

of this stall was a noodle dish, by adding some tasty side dishes and drinking a glass of beer, this will be such a relaxing idea.

“Where should we hang out tonight?”

“The Rose Park is not bad, the girls there are super cute, and quite a few of them are university girls.”

The voices came from behind him but Lei Yu did not turn around, just eating his midnight snack minding his own business.

“Right, I know of a few university girls that are quite cute, especially one called Cui Ying Ying. Listening to those two people chatting, it appears that Cui Ying Ying is one of

the school's beauty.

Hearing to this point, Lei Yu felt surprised. Isn't Cui Ying Ying the one that came to his house in the middle of the night, the daughter of some jewelry store magnate? Did someone have their eyes on her? He couldn't help eavesdropping, carefully listening to the sounds of conversation behind him.

"This piece of news is reliable, I heard that her family is very rich, if someone amongst our buddies could get her, then we would not have to worry about money for the rest of our lives."

"Come on, what are you guys waiting for? Hurry up and eat so we can go look!"

Hearing the name Rose Park, Lei Yu's first impression was of an entertainment place where illegal transactions took place. After listening to them chat for a while, he then realized it was just a bar. Many young men and women enjoyed frequenting those establishments in the evening to pass their time. What they sought there were some excitement away from their mundane lives.

Those young adults that prefer nightlife enjoy meeting up with people of the opposite sex; or they would meet up to play with whatever games that were currently popular; or they were just there for unclean thoughts. Those sitting behind Lei Yu were obviously of the latter.

In any case, they were considered acquaintances. Even if Ai Er despised this Cui Ying Ying, how could he turn a blind eye if he knew she may be in danger?

The first time Cui Ying Ying came to his house, Liu Hao mentioned they both drank at a bar first before coming over. It seems this Cui Ying Ying enjoys clubbing so this matter of her being targeted is highly likely.

Quickly eating their food, the people behind all left together. Lei Yu also paid his bill and followed behind them.

Rose Park was not far away from their current location, it was only about a ten minute walk before

getting there. The neon lights on the front door were flashing constantly while the large name Rose Park up top was particularly conspicuous.

Following along with four other people and entering, the bar in general was a quiet and elegant place, but after ten o'clock at night, the place will begin to go crazy. The DJ would be spinning music shockingly loud; countless young men and women were wildly moving their bodies; even some of the opposite sex who were dancing would start grinding each other's lower parts to seek a more exciting thrill. (T/N: it appears that a bar and a club are the same thing, unlike in the U.S.)

In the corner of the bar, a girl wearing tight-fitting white clothes with a skirt was sitting there, her small mouth sipping a glass of wine. On the side, there were a group of young people that wanted to approach and greet her but were shot down by her cool gaze, it seems that her mood wasn't very good today.

These four people were able to quickly locate this girl. Wanting to go to that direction, Lei Yu also followed behind.

“Brother Hui, there's the chick, look at that fine piece of ass, her figure is fcuking damn attractive!” Since the music was so loud, one of them shouted this into the ear of a fat guy which allowed Lei Yu to hear very

clearly.

“Don’t you see? All the men have been rejected by her scolding, it seems like she’s an ice queen beauty, not bad, I really like it.” The fat guy rubs his unshaven chin with his right hand, nodding with a weird smile.

Lei Yu could determine from seeing her back that this was the Cui Ying Ying he was acquainted with. She was indeed very attractive, especially in this environment. Cui Ying Ying was like a clear crystal amongst a ground of weeds, but this crystal’s outer appearance was exceptionally cold, very hard for people to approach.

After the four discussed something



amongst themselves, they set off going forward.

“Miss, you seem to be very lonely, are you in a bad mood? Do you want me to drink with you?” The fat guy from before leaned on top of Cui Ying Ying’s table, the look on his face could only be described as shameless.

“Get lost!” Cui Ying Ying openly scolded, but even though her delicate and charming eyes expressed wrath, it looked particularly enchanting.

“Damn! You are sure fcuking spicy, not bad, I really like your hot temper. After I conquer you, the accomplishment would feel so great!” The fat guy nonchalantly

looked at his other three buddies laughing as he said this.

“Miss, brother Hui is an important well-known figure, drinking with our brother Hui is actually your good fortune.”

“Right, isn’t your family very rich? Matching it with brother Hui’s strength, that can be called a match made in heaven!” These ruffians knew Cui Ying Ying’s family had money, but did not know to what extent of wealth she had so they dared to say such things.

“I’m going to say it once more, get lost!” Cui Ying Ying was obviously in bad mood, meeting several flies who had verbally harassed her, she once again scolded them.

“Fcuk, I gave you face but you won’t accept it! Fellow brothers, grab her and drag her to the back alley, watch how I will give her a good time!” The fat guy seeing such an attractive beauty, coupled with her hot temper, he could not resist anymore, directing his buddies to ready to take action.

Inside the bar, scenes like this happened plenty of times, so of course it was not something surprising. But for such a great beauty to be treated like this was the first time, so for a lot of people looking over, they had surprise on their face.

Lei Yu was about to intercept them but right at this moment, a good looking twenty something year old

male came over from the side.

“Don’t you guys know how to be tender to the fairer sex? You should be more gentle to such a beautiful girl, don’t go near if you aren’t capable, why would you resort to force?”

“Fcuking brat, you dare to disturb my scene?” The fat guy frowned, throwing out a punch directed at the male’s face.

\*Pak\* The male fell to the ground clutching his face in pain rolling back and forth. The atmosphere in the bar really started boiling up, some people even started shouting in excitement.

Those men that were previously rejected by Cui Ying Ying saw that

the ice queen beauty was about to be dragged away, also cursed:

“Bastard, who do you think you are acting all high and mighty?”

Looking at the young man lying on the floor, the fat guy spit a few mouthful of disgusting phlegm at him “you don’t know what death is, you dare to interfere in my affairs!”

The remaining three individuals did not stop their actions, still pulling onto Cui Ying Ying’s arm. One of them wanted to take this opportunity to squeeze her round ass a bit, but was suddenly stopped by an outstretched hand.

Those several people got a little surprised, looking at a youngster standing in front of them, the fat

guy turned around, “fcuking hell, another person that doesn’t know their place!”

The sudden appearance of this person was not Lei Yu, but was someone else. Lei Yu stood at his original spot smiling and not saying a thing.

# Chapter 27:

## Appearance of Liu Hao

“Fcuker, you’re seeking death!” The ruffian with his hand caught was struggling to pull his hand away, wanting to grab the neck of the youngster that suddenly appeared. The youngster stepped back a little, grabbed a bottle from the table that Cui Ying Ying had previously drank from and smashed it down on the ruffian’s head.

\*Clang!\*

The breaking of the bottle sounded throughout, the excitement in the

bar completely increased at this time. The DJ on the front stage immediately turned off the music, standing there watching with interest. Then several security guards came from the outside, led by a middle-aged man wearing a black suit. He appeared to be the manager of the place.

“Kiddo! I see you’re looking to die!”  
Said the fat guy after seeing his underlings actually get hurt. Angrily approaching them, the manager went up to the fat guy and said:  
“Brother Hui, it’s not right for you to cause trouble here, at least give me some face.”

“Fcuker, if I give you face, who’s going to give me face? Don’t you see that my buddy was hit by a



bottle and was wounded by someone?” Said the angry fat guy.

Cui Ying Ying seeing the arriving people, forcefully broke off from being held by the two people, and ran behind the youngster, “Liu Hao, let’s go, don’t get involved in this.”

The person that appeared wasn’t a stranger, it was Lei Yu’s disciple, the Governor’s son Liu Hao.

“Sister Ying Ying, are you okay?”

“I’m fine, let’s go!” Cui Ying Ying pulled Liu Hao’s arm, wanting to leave.

“You want to leave? Do you have the ability to go?!” Those previous ruffians that were holding onto Cui Ying Ying ran over and shouted:

“You want to leave after hurting my buddy? Fcuk, we’re having such bad luck today!”

Without waiting for what the other two were going to do, Liu Hao rushed forward like an arrow.

Within a blink of an eye, the two were knocked to the ground, unable to get up. This caused the entire audience to stare in silence, everyone’s eyes were round and wide, they were unable to see what exactly happened.

If there were cultivators within the audience, they would naturally know what Liu Hao did, but unfortunately, Liu Hao who had already reached the rank of Second Order Warrior, how could his actions be observed by the ordinary

people here?

Although Liu Hao did not have the special power of lightning like Lei Yu, because he received cultivating methods, Liu Hao still had some internal energy circulating inside him. But according to his own personality, although he was able to be improve gradually, but his improvement speed compared with Lei Yu would be considered comparing heaven and earth.

After everything was messed up by Liu Hao, the fat guy whom people referred to as brother Hui suddenly became dumbfounded. He has heard that in this world there exists some special people, yet he did not expect to actually hit the jackpot and meet one today.

“Can we go now?” Liu Hao did not look at anyone else, just staring at the fat guy asking the question.

“Who is causing trouble at my place?” Came a vigorous voice from the outside crowd. The fat guy was the first to react; Lei Yu also looked over following the sound of the voice.

The fat guy ran towards this person, with a smile: “Brother Gui, I’m sorry, there was a bitch that didn’t know her place, I originally wanted to teach her a lesson, didn’t expect some random guy to run out.” After saying that, his finger pointed towards the location of Liu Hao and Cui Ying Ying.

“Bastard!” Cursed the person

known as brother Gui: “Who do you think you are? You better scram right now!”

The fat guy was actually a regular at Rose Park, and the boss in front of him, brother Gui, was usually quite friendly with each other.

Occasionally them two would drink together, and although their relationship could not be considered close, they were still friendly with each other. He did not expect that for the sake of these two young man and a woman would create a falling out between them. He then asked: “Brother Gui, what do you mean? I believe I have never pissed you off, why aren’t you giving me any face?”

“Have you not caused enough

trouble in my place? I know you are in control of some areas, but this place is not yours, I told you to scram so just scram, don't interfere with my conducting of business." After saying this, he went towards Liu Hao and Cui Ying Ying. Cui Ying Ying was actually quite close to this brother Gui, that's why she often came to this place to drink. As for Liu Hao, he has visited this place a few times, their identity was naturally known to brother Gui. One was the world famous jewelry tycoon's daughter while the other was the Governor's son, neither of them was someone he could afford to offend.

But unfortunately this fat guy was unable to recognize Mount Tai in front of him (unable to recognize

someone of importance). Still not giving up, the fat guy said: “Brother Gui, calling you brother Gui is giving you face, if you don’t give me a good explanation today, don’t blame me for not recognizing you anymore!”

“What do you want then?” Brother Gui wasn’t a newbie in the underground world, in such a busy downtown area and was able to establish their own place is not something anyone can do.

“You just wait and see.” After saying that, the fat guy reached for his cell phone. In this area, there had never been anyone that dared not to give him a bit of face, let alone calling him a bastard, making him extremely angry. From his pocket,

he took out his cell phone and began to dial a number, “gather several hundred brothers, I’m currently at Rose Park!”

“You actually have the guts? You dare to call people to mess with my place?” Cursed brother Gui.

Seeing this volatile situation, all the people in the bar were starting to leave. There were only a few dozen people that stayed behind hoping for a good show, they wanted to see this once in a lifetime scene.

“You’re not giving me face, today I will let you know the meaning of fear!” Ever since he was young, this fat guy had already hung around the bad crowds in this area. After ten plus years, he had met a lot of



people, setting up his own little gang, the number of underlings under his control were quite impressive. Based on manners, calling him brother Hui was to give him some face, but this has really caused his ego to get out of control. He had completely forgotten what character brother Gui was. Even though brother Gui was just a minor figure inside Ming Sect, what sort of status did the Ming Sect's name carry? As one of the four major forces in the country of Tenglong, even a minor figure inside Ming Sect, in the eyes of ordinary people, he was as mighty as Mount Tai.

“Brother Gui, no need to call for more people, this is a perfect opportunity for me to try out my

moves.” Liu Hao stopped the brother Gui who was just about to make a call.

“Don’t think that just because you’ve wounded a few of my brothers, you’ve become superman. Kiddo, just wait a bit and you will become meat paste!” As the fat guy’s voice faded, Liu Hao angrily rushed forward.

This fat guy was utterly clueless, he was the only one left standing while his other buddies were injured quite heavily. Yet, he was still so boastful, wasn’t it obvious that he was asking to be beaten?

After only a couple of moves, the fat guy’s face was black and blue and blood was coming down from his

nose. Clutching his nose and pointing at Liu Hao: “It looks like you want to die! You are courting your own death!”

The people present seeing the fat guy’s embarrassed face all began to laugh. Lei Yu was also laughing, standing at the rear of the crowd laughing non-stop.

A short while later, outside the walls of Rose Park, one could clearly hear the squeels of motorcycles and cars braking quickly to park. This was followed by a noisy group of people rushing in.

“Brother Hui!”

“Brother Hui! We’re here!”

Now that there were helpers on

scene backing him up, the fat guy was immediately filled with spirit. Ignoring the blood flowing from his nose and pointing to Liu Hao, "take care of him for me!"

A dozen or so people rushed up, all with vicious intentions. These underlings did not really have hobbies, fighting and brawling to them were as simple as a family dinner. It may be the mentality of a young person, thinking that these types of acts were what impressed others.

Liu Hao was not flustered nor in a hurry, he did not move at all after seeing those dozen or so people rushing towards him. While seeing this, Cui Ying Ying and brother Gui standing behind Liu Hao were

sweating enough for the three of them.

# Chapter 28: You Cannot Afford To Offend

The opponents were using knives but Liu Hao wasn't afraid. After following Lei Yu for such a long time, his master's teaching was focused on the fitness of one's body and the speed of one's body.

Naturally he was not worried, even if a knife came at him, he could easily deflect it.

That was the reason why Lei Yu had still now shown himself. He was completely clear on what abilities his disciple possessed, if his disciple wasn't even able to defeat these

ordinary people, then he might as well just not teach him anymore.

Sure enough, in less than three minutes, none of the dozen plus people were able to stand up anymore. Although presently there were over a hundred plus people crowded around the bar, no one dared to step forward.

The fat guy became anxious, he had never encountered a situation like this before. But relying on the fact that he had more people, he was not afraid, “fellow brothers, he is only one person, do not be afraid, everyone attack at once, I doubt he will be able to survive!”

After a scream of acknowledgement, the hundred

plus people started surging forward. Without waiting for these people to make the first move, a disturbance arose at the rear of the crowd, followed by screams of agony without stopping. Because there were too many people here, the ones in front did not know what was happening.

Four or five people had fallen to the ground unable to get up, while two of them had become unconscious.

Once Lei Yu heard the fat guy telling all the people to rush forward together, he suddenly began to worry. Even if Liu Hao was already quite tough, but under the simultaneous attack of all these people at once, he may not be able to handle it. Moreover, there was a



Cui Ying Ying next to him, so it was best to attack first to avoid any possible accidents.

Shortly after, a path was opened up within the crowd. Lei Yu slowly walked up from behind to the front. When Liu Hao and Cui Ying Ying saw who this person was, the fat guy was actually the first to speak: “Fcuk, there’s always a busybody not minding their own business, but this year there’s especially a lot of them!” (T/N: Chinese idiom)

“Great!” Brother Gui could not help it anymore, he certainly admired Liu Hao after seeing how strong he was. But with so many people rushing forward at once, if Liu Hao and Cui Ying Ying suffered any injuries, then this minor figure of

Ming Sect would not be better off, it was even possible that he would be punished by the upper ranks.

“Hui, stay your hands, this is Governor Liu’s son, how many extra heads do you have?”

Previously everyone’s attention was drawn to Lei Yu but after hearing this statement, everyone suddenly backed down. The fat guy’s voice stammered and said: “Governor Liu’s son? It... it can’t be right?”

The Governor’s son is not someone these ruffians would dare to offend. Just a simple offense could make them go to jail and eat the public system’s food for two years, which was something perfectly normal. Plus, the things these shady

government officials did on a routine basis would never come to the light of day. (T/N: eating public's food = food paid by taxpayers)

An underling went up to the fat guy's ears and whispered: "Brother Hui, I heard the son of the Governor became the disciple of a master and learned some very powerful martial arts, just looking at his fighting ability, it shouldn't be false."

"Fcuking shit! Why didn't you mention this earlier!" The fat guy slapped the top of his underling's head.

"I, I did not know before!"

“My apologies young master Liu! My eyes did not recognize Mount Tai, I’m sorry, I’m really sorry! I do not know this... this lady was your friend.”

Brother Gui laughed, “friends? They are truly friends, but I forgot to introduce to you, this lady here is the daughter of Cui Ying Corporation’s Chairman, could you afford to offend her?”

“I was possessed!” This was the first sentence out of the fat guy, then he began to get scared. If a power was big enough, it could make him go to life in prison. One could also use money to get him killed, this scene was definitely something a small fry like him could not afford to offend. (T/N: being possessed is an excuse

they make when they realize they messed up big time)

“There’s also one thing you seem to have forgotten.” Brother Gui softly said: “You should also remember that I am a member of the Ming Sect? You dare to mess with a place belonging to the Ming Sect?”

At this time, the fat guy finally remembered, suddenly taking a few steps back, slightly dumbfounded. Where did he get the guts to act like this? Daring to provoke these three powerful characters, wasn’t he courting death himself?

“Do whatever you want to me, but let my fellow brothers leave!” The fat guy simply threw that request out, but he really had no other way.

“You’re quite loyal, not bad, not bad.” Lei Yu who had not said anything until now nodded his head and laughed.

“Who do you think you are? This is not the time or place for you to interrupt us!” Screamed the fat guy angrily. While speaking halfway with these three characters he dared not to offend, and out comes some random kid?

With a rapid speed, Liu Hao had already rushed over in an instant. Raising his hand and slapping the fat guy’s mouth, “fcuker, you dare you curse at my master?”

The fat guy who was slapped started seeing stars, then forcefully swallowed some saliva. “What is

going on today? It looks like my brains are really muddled up big time!" The fat guy clearly remembered, just then his underling told him that the Governor's son had gotten himself a very powerful master. Since Liu Hao was already this strong, then his master must be out of this world.

"That's enough, stop causing problems, just all disperse" said Lei Yu waving his hand.

Like a wish granted from heaven, the fat guy cried out: "Thank you, thank you! Fellow brothers, quickly disappear!"

The two to three hundred people without any sort of organization or

direction were actually able to withdraw from the bar within two minutes – this was indeed miraculous to behold. One could see how badly they wanted to leave this place where so many outstanding people had gathered.

After the storm, the bar once again opened for business. Brother Gui simply spoke some polite words before he and the other security all left in a hurry.

“You went to the bar alone tonight without calling me? How dangerous!” said Liu Hao looking at the Cui Ying Ying who did not say a word.

“That’s right, in the future it’s best to frequent these places less often.



Even if you have to come, just bring Liu Hao with you, at least it will be a bit safer” said Lei Yu on the side.

“I don’t need you guys to look after me!” Cui Ying Ying lifted up her head and completely drained the glass of wine.

“Sister Ying Ying, if there’s something upsetting you, just tell us about it, why bother drinking alone?”

Looking at the slightly drunk Cui Ying Ying, this made her even more attractive. With all the right curves on the body plus a beautiful face, she definitely would arouse a man’s desire and make them have impulsive thoughts.

“Lei Yu,” putting down her glass, Cui Ying Ying whom was filled with sadness softly said: “Every night I would be in front of your house, but your life is too disciplined, you never go out after ten o’clock, why? Why do you put all your time into Dragon Group and on your little girlfriend, not giving me any chance to get close to you? Why?”

Once these words came out, the two suddenly realized... “Master, then you’re in the wrong, how could you treat my sister Ying Ying so coldly?” While saying this, Liu Hao was continuously using his eyes to give Lei Yu signals.

“Uh...” Lei Yu suddenly became dumb, not knowing what to say.

“I am going home.” Cui Ying Ying immediately stood up, getting ready to leave.

“I’ll take you!” said Liu Hao.

“No! I don’t need you to take me, Lei Yu, are you willing to take me home?”

“This...”

“If you’re not willing, forget about it!” Filled with anger, Cui Ying Ying turned to leave first.

“I’ll take you home okay? I’m giving into you.” Lei Yu shook his head helplessly.

Liu Hao took a taxi to leave on his own. Lei Yu drove Cui Ying Ying’s convertible sports car towards the

direction of the upscale residential district.

“I’m not going in, go back and get some rest, drink this...” Mid sentence, Lei Yu looked at the already asleep Cui Ying Ying, helplessly shaking his head again, supporting and helping her out of the car.

He escorted her the entire way until reaching the bedroom, making Lei Yu feel really helpless. To help someone, might as well help them all the way to the end since this was out of his control. Looking at the Cui Ying Ying lying on the bed, her image as a virgin beauty was now gone. She was originally wearing a miniskirt and in-between her legs revealed a spring of happiness. Lei

Yu forcefully swallowed hard, a rush of blood immediately surged towards his manhood.

# Chapter 29: Have Some Self-respect

Shaking his head, he was about to turn and leave. Cui Ying Ying suddenly woke up as if she came out of a nightmare, “don’t go!”

“Just go to bed and rest up, I need to hurry back.” Lei Yu did not want anything to happen here, if this was to spread out, then even if he had a thousand mouths, he would not be able to explain it satisfactorily to Ai Er.

“Can you not give me a bit of your time? Why are you always avoiding me to this extent?” With some reddish glow on her cheeks, Cui

Ying Ying stood up from the bed.

“You’re not drunk? I thought...”

“If I did not pretend to be drunk, would you have escorted me all the way back to my bedroom?” Cui Ying Ying lightly stepped forward, her smooth and tender hands rested on Lei Yu’s shoulder, her mesmerizing eyes revealing a look that was hard for one to refuse.

Hurriedly breaking away from her grasp, Lei Yu took a step back, “I’m really going back now.”

“Is it that I’m not beautiful enough? I’m not pretty enough compared to your little girlfriend huh?”

“You are both pretty.” Lei Yu did not know how to exactly answer

this question, he could only feel that his face was getting red and hot.

At this time, Cui Ying Ying put her hands in front of her dress, she gently made some flicking gestures around her chest area and the hidden buttons were undone. A pair of soft and white bouncy things appeared more evident. Although they were wrapped up with a piece of cloth (tube shirt), but it could not hold back a woman's fiery strength. (T/N: I think it means it cannot hold back the shape of a woman's secret weapon)

Lei Yu suddenly backed up two steps again, his body tightly backed up against the wall. His hands were also against the wall, as if the other



person was an extremely hard to deal with enemy.

During his life or death battle against the unknown black beast, Lei Yu did not feel that much fear. But today, because of the moves by a girl, he, a dignified ranked Fourth Order Warrior, had the pressure of wanting to flee with his tail between his legs.

“Hurry up and put on your clothes!” Lei Yu said anxiously, his eyes did not even dare to take one glance at the super sexy beauty before him. Lei Yu felt something was strange, within such a big house, there was only Cui Ying Ying living here alone.

“You don’t like my body?” Cui Ying

Ying's face was flushed, her delicate hands flourishing in front of her chest area while gently walking forward.

"I don't like you like this!" Lei Yu exhaled heavily, "I do not know the real reason why you like me, but I do know you're not such a casual woman. Liu Hao told me about this so I hope you do not destroy the image I have of you, please have some self-respect!" Once finished, Lei Yu opened the door and left without looking back, leaving Cui Ying Ying alone.

A short while later, gently buttoning up her hidden buttons on the shirt, she sighed: "Are you really that unique? What should I do then?" Cui Ying Ying firmly shook her

head: “Why did I commit such actions? Was I really drunk?”

Thinking about the actions she just made, her face started feeling red and hot. But after recalling Lei Yu’s words, this so called princess of a wealthy family became more resolute and determined.

Escaping from Cui Ying Ying’s house, Lei Yu walked for some distance before hailing a taxi, and then hurriedly returned back to his house.

“What on earth just happened? If I let Ai Er know about this, she would eat me alive!” Lei Yu sat on his bed, remembering the erotic scene that just happened. His lower part began to “rise” up again. He rushed to the bathroom to splash cold water onto

himself, then went to sit down preparing to cultivate.

Having already reached the [Energy Suppression] stage, Lei Yu's strength is equivalent to the rank of a Fourth Order Warrior. Within the country of Tenglong, he could be regarded as one of the few top masters. As for the future of his cultivation, the degree of difficulty in improvements becomes greater. The time and effort he needs to put into improving grows exponentially the higher he climbs up. Since the beginning, Lei Yu had never thought of giving up. Since he wanted to become strong, wanting to stand in the position of the best of the best, then the effort he expends needs to be greater than others.

“For the battle date in three years, currently more than a year has passed by. I don’t know the current strength of Cai Zhong, whom is a branch leader of Ming Sect.” Lei Yu dared not to neglect his training. Although normally inside Dragon Group; he was able to gain quality training during the past year; especially since he was inside Dragon Team for the full year being able to challenge any member of Dragon Team. But he still could not forget this opponent of his that was comparable to his own strength. Due to his miraculous encounters, his strength has surged. But who can say Cai Zhong’s strength has not increased either? Since he has gained good fortune, he has to assume other people could also have found good fortune. At least

that's what Lei Yu was thinking.

Internal energy slowly spread out from his dantian's Sea of Energy region. Ever since he had broken through the stages, Lei Yu had become more careful in monitoring the changes to his body. If any abnormality was detected, he will focus his consciousness into it to investigate. It was no long the previous First Order or Second Order power he was controlling. The higher the ranks he climbs, the more careful he had to be, each step he took had to be careful and considerate.

Circulating his internal energy according to his cultivating methods, the energy flowed slowly inside his body's meridians. Each

time it passed a meridian point, there would be subtle changes. This change belongs uniquely to the power of lightning's effect. After passing through the [Body Refining] stage, regardless of any time, as long as Lei Yu was in his cultivating state, his internal energy will formlessly and slowly refine his body, creating a constant and endless reinforcement.

The first changes were to Lei Yu's bone structure – his bones contained metallic properties making it exceed the ordinary hardness of steel. If he were to suffer attacks that did not contain any internal energy, then he would not get hurt under those normal circumstances.

His purple internal energy slowly crawling forward, the unknown green energy inside his body was constantly following, taking the role as a protector and escort. And inside his head, the yellow bead as always was busily doing its own thing. Those three energies were each performing their duty, making everything appear in good order.

After a night of cultivating, apart from making Lei Yu more energetic, there wasn't much improvement in his strength. But just this alone had already made him very satisfied; at least all aspects of his body were functioning normally.

It's hard to blame Lei Yu because whenever he cultivates, he is filled with worry and fear. The green



energy inside him is simply an unknown, although it has played the role in helping him repair fractures, who knows when it will suddenly go crazy one day? One thing for sure is that Lei Yu was unable to control this energy because it was just too powerful.

There was also the yellow bead – until now, Lei Yu still did not know what it was. Since it was something very beneficial to Lei Yu, he was reluctant to exclude or abandon it. Just like the jade pendant resting on his chest, although it was extremely dangerous to use, it did cause an unprecedented rapid increase in his strength. Moreover, it was something left to him by his mother, and even if it was dangerous, Lei Yu will always wear

it on his neck.

The sky was getting light. Lei Yu was used to washing off the dirt from his body now. Putting on some clean clothes, he wore his backpack and was ready to jog back to Dragon Group.

Halfway there, “beep beep” sound of a car horn was heard. The incoming person was none other than his sworn brother Nuo Hu.

“Come on, I’ll drive you there!”

“No need, I prefer jogging.”

“Come on, we have a mission today!” said Nuo Hu.

“A mission?” Lei Yu was surprised, after joining Dragon Group for such

a long time, he has never received any missions.

“That’s right, my father already told me to rush there as soon as possible so that I could bring you along. Last night, they had a meeting with their superiors and my father did not even come home at all.”

“What kind of mission? Why would it be in such a rush?”

“I don’t know, but I heard it’s not a simple task.”

Getting into Nuo Hu’s car, those two hurried towards Dragon Group headquarters.

# Chapter 30: Special Assignment

Inside a villa within Dragon Group. When Lei Yu and Nuo Hu arrived, the villa's lobby was already filled with the elites of Dragon Team.

As the Deputy Commander, Nuo Yi Feng came to the first floor and to the right of the stairs was a small door. Inside was a conference room. Although the door was small, the inside of the room was extremely spacious; able to accommodate twenty to thirty people was not a problem at all.

Everyone was sitting around a circular conference table. At this

time, the door opened and two people came in from the outside. The first one everyone was familiar with, the Dragon Group's commander Nuo Yi Long; the other was slightly older, although a head full of gray hair, his whole body gave off a majestic aura along with eyes filled with dominance, this was not something one could learn to imitate.

They two sat themselves at the front of the table. "Let me introduce this person to all of you, a senior official of Martial Sect, Chief Shangguan Rong."

"Greetings to the chief!" A unified loud shout showed Dragons Team's elite were full of energy; their imposing manner was like the

waves of the Yangtze River.

“Today’s task is very special; it’s completely different from the past.” Shangguan Rong then said, “we received from the superior’s, that in a distance of about two hundred kilometers or so, an emergency has emerged in that area. We do not know where it came from, but an unknown wild beast that’s extremely destructive has emerged. Fortunately, the place the beast appeared at was not populated so there weren’t any casualties. But we can’t guarantee what may happen in the future.”

“Chief, this mission’s objective is the beast?” Lei Yu had never received an assignment before, so he naturally did not know the rules

and procedures of speaking out in a conference, thus he cluelessly blurted out the question. But when he heard the two words wild beast, he suddenly remembered that he had encountered one before, but it was still a cub.

“What is your name?” asked the Chief.

“Lei Yu!”

“Interrupting the Chief during a conference is considered extremely rude!”

“Sorry Chief!”

Frowning and looking at Lei Yu a few times, Shangguan Rong continued saying: “Your task is to pick out two elite of the elites,

coordinate with two elites from Eagle Group, then capture this wild beast. Unless it comes to a last resort, capturing it alive is the preferred outcome.

“What??”

Inside the conference room, discussions abound suddenly erupted. Everyone was discussing who were to be picked.

“Everyone quiet down!” Nuo Yi Long waved his hands and all the elites instantly stopped their loud discussion. “Last night we had already met and discussed this – a helicopter on routine patrol discovered it; since this is the first time an unknown wild beast has appeared in the country of



Tenglong, we have to capture it alive for research. Unless it's at a life or death situation, do not kill the beast, is that understood?"

"Understood!"

Nuo Yi Feng then said: "Is there anyone amongst you that are willing to volunteer for this mission? There are only two spots available."

Although the elites did not say anything, inevitably everyone had their own thoughts. At least no one was willing to blindly volunteer to charge ahead first since nobody knows exactly how strong this wild beast was. Why would one offer to voluntarily undertake such an arduous mission?

Ming Sect's Shangguan family were obviously using Dragon Team as cannon fodder, this was most evident to Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng. There were so many experts inside the Shangguan family, why would they not use their own personal strength to complete the mission but instead, send their heavyweight military regiment Dragon Group and Eagle Group? Their purpose was obviously to preserve their own personal power.

The Shangguan family were in charge of Martial Sect, which meant they were in charge of all of Tenglong country's military forces. This prideful family is not going to care about anyone complaining and give up their current strategy because in their hearts, the lives of

Shangguan family members were more valuable.

The conference room was filled with silence, the atmosphere felt like a slow death, no one wanted to become the wild beast's lunch.

Shangguan Rong's eyebrows had gradually begun to lock up, the enthusiasm or lack thereof from the Dragon Team members made him disappointed.

"I'll go!" Lei Yu suddenly stood up, he had been worried whether that wild beast was the cub or not. He had already killed its mother, if something was to happen to the cub, then his heart would not be able to bear with the guilt.

“Good, very good!” Shangguan Rong originally was still blaming Lei Yu for being rude, but was now laughing.

“I would like to know what unique characteristics does this wild beast have?” asked Lei Yu.

Nuo Yi Feng naturally had some concerns for Lei Yu’s safety, but because a member of the Shangguan family was present, she did not want to open her mouth to say anything. She replied: “Based on the report of intelligence personnel on scene, the whole body of the wild beast is black, there are multiple spikes on its back, and it looks extremely ferocious!”

Nuo Yi Feng wanted used the term

“extremely ferocious” hoping to shatter Lei Yu’s thoughts of going. Lei Yu’s life story and encounters is well known to Nuo Yi Feng, a child that has suffered a pitiful life, yet his background and lack of experience was of no use to them yet. But the next words that came out of Lei Yu almost made everyone fall out of their seats.

“For this mission, is it okay for me to complete it alone?”

“No!” Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng both stood up at the same time. Originally wanting to speak up, Nuo Hu was actually surprised by them. He would have never thought that his father and his aunt would have such a big reaction.

“Commander, I think in this situation, having too many people go would make the wild beast more oppressive, so having a lot of people is not necessarily a good thing.” Lei Yu was worried the little wild beast may be killed by other people.

“I will go with you then!” Nuo Hu stood up.

The most worrisome situation has happened; the two that wanted to bravely participate were exactly the two that Nuo Yi Long and his sister did not want them to go. Yet it happens that the two would volunteer.

“He is indeed the son of Dragon Group’s commander, such courage!” At this time, Shangguan

Rong also stood up. "I think this decision is final, Eagle Group should have results pretty quickly as well. Combining your strengths, your success rate should be quite high."

"But..." Lei Yu did not want to let the Eagle Group participate, but a small soldier like him could not make too many demands. Without waiting for anyone else to say anything, Shangguan Rong was the first to leave the conference room.

But this situation cannot be all blamed on the Shangguan family, Eagle Group and Dragon Group were the two military regiments closest to the appearance of the wild beast, there would be no reason to look for another military

group that's further away right?

“All of you withdraw; Lei Yu and Nuo Hu stay behind.” Nuo Yi Long heavily sat down, waving his hands to imply for everyone to leave.

The only people left in the conference room were Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Yi Feng, Lei Yu, and Nuo Hu.

“You guys are really too impulsive! It is impossible to estimate a safety factor for this kind of mission, what should we do if an accident occurs? Do you guys not understand what exactly the Shangguan family was expecting from this mission?” Asked Nuo Yi Feng while frowning.

Lei Yu will never forget the people that have treated him well.



Regardless of the reason why these two were so concerned for their safety, either to ensure the strength of Dragon Group or for the sake of their personal safety, Lei Yu will remember it with his heart.

“Just let me go alone, this will be considered training to me.”

“No, how can I be assured if you go alone? I’m going with you!” Said Nuo Hu.

“I don’t know how to deal with you two anymore.” Said Nuo Yi Long in a powerless manner. “We will be unable to accompany you two on the mission so you will have to count on yourselves.”

“Don’t worry, we will be careful!”

Nuo Hu and Lei Yu both said.

Nuo Yi Feng took off a bracelet from her wrist and gave it to Nuo Hu, “this thing you should know what uses it has, when in a dangerous situation, it can at least protect the two of you.” As the aunt, how could she not take care of her nephew?

After a series of instructions, Lei Yu and Nuo Hu were both ready to go.

“How confident are you?” Asked Nuo Hu while driving the car with Lei Yu.

“I’m not sure.” Lei Yu tapping his legs: “But I don’t think we’ll have too much of a problem.”

“The Shangguan family are like this,

letting others do the manual task while they sit in their office. Once the task is accomplished, they will run to the leaders and ask for credit and rewards, we've grown accustomed to it now" said Nuo Hu with indifference. "Anyway, since this situation has become the burden of Dragon Group and Eagle Group, the success of capturing the beast will be credited to them, failure in capturing or accidentally killing the wild beast, the responsibility will be on our heads, this is fcuking bullshit!"

"Come on, you and I are still a long way from the destination. Once we arrive, we still have to join up with Eagle Group members."

This incident is not considered too

big since it has not disturbed that many people yet. Only assigning Tenglong country's two elite groups – Dragon Group and Eagle Group; and then dispatching select elite troops of each group. If they were unable to ascertain the level of danger in this mission, then the safety factor could not be predicted, then normally Lei Yu and them would not be sent out. In case the wild beast were to enter a populated city, then the consequences would be disastrous.

The two drove to the edge of a forest about two hundred kilometers or more away from the city. With Nuo Hu's driving skills, the time spent driving was about two hours; it would be impossible for Lei Yu to do this if he were to

drive.

“Should be in the front, we should arrive once we pass this forest.” Lei Yu pointed to the forest in front and the car slowly stops at the edge.

“Greeting you two, I am a member of Eagle Group, called Hui Wei Tao” came a voice not too far away. Lei Yu and Nuo Hu turned around to look; a soldier dressed in a camouflage uniform then came over.

# Chapter 31: Fight Over A Dispute

“Hello, I am Nuo Hu.”

“My name is Lei Yu.”

“How come you are alone? Aren’t there supposed to be two people?”  
Asked Nuo Hu.

“Can’t help it, I was forced to perform this mission, other members were not willing to come. Were you two also forced to come here?” This Hui Wei Tao had a helpless look on his face.

Lei Yu and Nuo Hu both slightly smiled without actually replying.

Those three people discussed some simple strategies then walked deep into the forest. This place was no different than before, one could hear beasts growling and birds chirping everywhere. The visibility inside the forest was getting low so those three were walking quite slowly.

“Three directions, Hui Wei Tao, you go to the right side, Nuo Hu will go to the left, and I’ll go forward.” Lei Yu waved his hands at the prearranged paths.

Seeing Hui Wei Tao going off into the distance, Lei Yu quickly went in the direction towards Nuo Hu, “follow me!”

“Why are you...?”

Accompanying Lei Yu for a period of time, they arrived at the edge of a small river. Following the familiar path, going around and entering another entrance of the forest, they arrived at the place where the cub was born.

“That’s strange, where did it go?” Lei Yu looked all around with an urgent look on his face.

Seeing Lei Yu’s actions, Nuo Hu became more hesitant, “little Yu, you seem to be very familiar with this place?”

“It’s not the right time to explain, we’ll talk more after we find it.” Lei Yu did not stop, continuing to walk forward, Nuo Hu could only keep following.



“Oww!”

“Aggh!”

A scream of a beast and then a scream of pain, that sharp contrast immediately made the forest animals excited, startling countless birds and animals.

“Not good!” The two ran at high speeds towards the direction of where the voices came from.

When seeing a beast with its whole body covered in shiny black fur, forepaws stepping on where Hui Wei Tao’s head was supposed to be, Nuo Hu could not hold back a burst of nausea. Hui Wei Tao had already become a corpse, and his neck clearly showed signs of being cut

with something sharp. Fresh blood was pouring out; it appears to be caused by the spikes on the wild beast's back.

“Little Yu! What should we do?”  
Asked Nuo Hu grabbing onto Lei Yu.

The moment Lei Yu saw the wild beast, he was immediately surprised. The wild beast's physique was very large, exactly the same as the mother he had fought before. The most obvious characteristic of this wild beast was that one of its eyes was actually blind.

“You stay here and don't move!” Lei Yu pulled Nuo Hu's arm and then went forward on his own.

“Don’t go over there!” Seeing the ground all bloody, Nuo Hu wanted to catch up. Lei Yu suddenly shouted back: “Don’t move!”

Seeing Nuo Hu standing still, this assured him to return looking to the front. The wild beast’s upper and lower teeth were tightly clenched; a single ferocious looking eye would give anyone the chills if they saw it right now.

When Lei Yu was about to approach the wild beast, a “swishing” sound suddenly came from the sky. Looking up, a few strands of white light similar to lightning rushed down towards them, the target being the black wild beast. The white lights stabbed into the ground, and only

afterwards did Lei Yu realize they were swords. The swords did not directly attack the wild beast, the twelve swords stabbed into the ground was used to form a cage. At the end of the swords, a flow of milky white internal energy was seen. This energy appears to play the role of a seal.

With the sudden appearance of the swords, the wild beast became extremely angered, howling into the sky. Extending its claws, it started swiping at the swords. The toughness of the swords appear to be beyond the wild beast's expectation, helpless, it started using the spikes on its back. That was obviously not effective; the twelve swords only slightly trembled before restoring its calm.

Lei Yu looked all around, where did the swords come from? Why did it suddenly appear trapping the beast in the middle?

“Swish, swish” sounds of leaves rustling came from deep inside the forest. Three figures then rushed out from within the forest.

One old and two young people, all dressed the same in old traditional Chinese clothes, the type you tie around, not button up. It appears these people were also martial arts cultivators.

“Who are you people?” Asked Lei Yu to the three that suddenly appeared.

“You guys should be soldiers sent

by Martial Sect to perform this mission right? Not bad, you guys have some courage, seeing the death of your companion and still able to keep going, it seems like the people raised by Martial Sect aren't all trash." Said the old man gently stroking his long white beard.

"Who are you people exactly?"  
Asked Lei Yu once again.

These three people in front of him gave off an aura, relying on his own power of lightning, he was able to determine that the old man had the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior while the other two had the strength of a Third Order Warrior. And from the weapons they used and the clothing they wore which were hard to tell apart, they should

belong to one of the four major forces of Tenglong country...  
“Celestial Court!”

“Then is there any further need to ask? Didn’t Martial Sect teach you juniors that when you see members of Celestial Court, you need to avoid and step aside?”

Lei Yu did know some things about Celestial Court, but he personally had never been in contact with a member before. The three in front of him were clearly of Celestial Court, but they suddenly entrapped the wild beast, what exactly were their intentions?

“Dragon Group of Martial Sect are undergoing a mission, why did you people suddenly appear?” From the

back, Nuo Hu came forward and asked.

Everyone was disregarding the roar of the wild beast and its resistance. These three people seemed to be very confident in their swords' ability in caging the beast.

“You guys can go back and report to command that Celestial Court is taking over the situation.” After saying these words, the old man turned and walked toward the wild beast's direction, with an overbearing proud look on his face.

“You wish!” Lei Yu narrowed his eyes. If something was to happen to the wild beast, he would definitely feel guilty about it. This wild beast is most likely the cub from the



other time, although the injury to its blind eye were similar to what Lei Yu had caused to its mother back then, Lei Yu believes that this cub's injury was an accident.

“Oh? Looks like you're trying to prevent Celestial Court members from accomplishing their task? The old man slowly turned around, the two younger people beside him had faces filled with anger. It looks like the relationship between Martial Sect and Celestial Court were like oil and water.

“Enough with the bullshit, we were the first to discover the wild beast, and our companion has died because of it, you guys better step aside!” Nuo Hu naturally had a bad temper so he would never allow

someone to insult Martial Sect. There were internal strife but that was family business, once they encounter an enemy, they would band together and work against them.

“This is troublesome, looks like we have to settle you two first.” The old man waved: “You two go take care of them, they are buzzing around like flies.”

One can hardly blame the old man for being so confident, thinking his underlings were able to get rid of Lei Yu and Nuo Hu. Their companion behind them had died in the hands of the wild beast, so based on his estimation, Lei Yu and Nuo Hu could not be much stronger.

The two heeded the old man's words, stepped forward a few steps. As if they were suicide soldiers, they obeyed the old man's words without hesitation. Pulling out a sword strapped to their back, their mouths muttering some unknown chant. Their swords suddenly started flashing a bright light; a sharp internal energy similar to a bone chilling wind blew towards where Lei Yu and Nuo Hu were standing.

"I'll take care of it!" After a shout, Lei Yu shot forward like an arrow, his arms containing the power of lightning had a slight amount of suction ability, particularly noticeable when it came to metallic objects. The sword in the hands of the two gradually became harder to control as Lei Yu got closer to them,

the swords began to vibrate non-stop.

# Chapter 32:

## Shangguan Xi Hong

The eyes of the two had a look of surprise, and the old man on the side suddenly fiercely opened his eyes. Lei Yu's speed was too fast, his speed almost matching a gust of wind. "Bang bang" sounds of metallic objects colliding, the swords those two had in their hands landed on the ground. Their bodies were also forced back five steps by the power of Lei Yu's arm.

Lei Yu directly used his fists to collide with the two swords, one could not imagine this inhuman person was just standing there after the clash.

“Martial Sect had such a powerful junior? Which military group are you guys from?” The old man openly asked after seeing Lei Yu’s display of power.

“Dragon Group!” Without waiting for the old man to speak, Lei Yu then said: “Let go of the wild beast.”

“Let it go? Are you kidding with me? Isn’t your goal here to capture it as well? Such a valuable thing is not something only Martial Sect wants!”

Lei Yu frowned looking at Nuo Hu at his side, then looked at the old man and asked: “Valuable thing? What do you mean?”

“Ha!” The old man stroked his

beard again then laughed: “Are you actually an idiot, when you were given the mission, didn’t your superiors tell you to capture it alive instead of killing it?”

At this moment, Lei Yu and Nuo Hu only now recalled it was indeed true, their superior’s order was to make their best effort to capture the wild beast alive, unless it was a last resort, they were not to kill the beast. Does this mean the wild beast possesses something of great value? Then why would the Shangguan family members not come themselves? They do not lack masters capable of it.

“You said it was valuable, exactly which part of it is valuable?” Asked Nuo Hu.

“There’s no harm in telling you, would I, a dignified Fourth Grade Celestial, fear you kids of snatching it away from me?” The old man then proudly said: “I will not speak of anything else, this wild beast, do you know its name yet?” Looking at Lei Yu and Nuo Hu’s expression, he was certain they did not know. He then said, “this wild beast is called an Ink Beast; it is an ancient magical beast, considered one of the four demonic beasts. Its sworn enemy is the magical beast Qilin.

Hearing these words, Lei Yu’s heart suddenly skipped a beat – sworn enemies with the Qilin. Would there be any relation to when he saw that battle scene in his mind amongst the backdrop of where the sky met the earth? Quelling the



questions in his heart, he continued listening to the old man.

“The extinction of the magical beast Qilin was caused by the Ink Beast because an Ink Beast needs to consume the Qilin’s spiritual bead in order to survive to the present. And in the entire world, there aren’t any Ink Beasts left except for this one, so tell me, how valuable do think it is?”

Since consuming the Qilin’s spiritual bead allows it to live until now? So does that mean within the Ink Beast’s body, they have a longevity pill? Then that definitely means it is a heavenly treasure.

“That means I definitely cannot allow you guys to get it!” A distant

voice could be heard, suddenly, a huge pressure came from somewhere. Lei Yu and the old man were able to tolerate it, while Nuo Hu and the two youngsters immediately frowned. Looking at their faces, it seems to be extremely uncomfortable for them.

The pressure gradually disappeared, followed by the emergence of a middle-aged man, dressed in black impressive clothing, his athletic physique unequalled. Just walking by Lei Yu, his aura gave off an oppressive feeling.

“Who are you?” Frowned the old man, feeling the immense strength of the newcomer.

“Shangguan Xi Hong!” The middle-

aged man's voice had penetrating effect, startling and scattering the surrounding beasts, showing how powerful his internal energy was.

“You are Martial Sect's Shangguan Xi Hong?!” The old man said with bulging eyes, “despicable!”

“Despicable? Are you, a little Fourth Grade Celestial, actually qualified to say I'm despicable? You're courting death!” With an explosive shout, Shangguan Xi Hong's single palm condensed a rich yellow internal energy, launching a palm strike through the air. The yellow internal energy came out like surging waves, directly aiming for the old man.

\*Bang!\* An extremely strong palm

strike hit the chest of the old man. From the impact of the attack, the old man's body flew out backwards landing in the grass, blood spraying out from his mouth.

“Strong!” This was the first impression Lei Yu got. Was this the person in charge of all matters in Martial Sect, in charge of the entire military of Tenglong country, the master of the Shangguan family, Shangguan Xi Hong? This was without a doubt the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior.

“You two kids back up a bit, I'd like to see why this trash of Celestial Court thinks he is qualified to boast in front of my Martial Sect.” Shangguan Xi Hong waved his hand implying to Lei Yu and Nuo Hu to

back up. This sense of awe-inspiring dominating appearance made Lei Yu and Nuo Hu slightly startled.

The old man on the ground struggled to get up and the two youngsters hurriedly approached to support his arms. Compared to dying, how much worth was the demonic beast? Even if he had gotten the spiritual bead of longevity, what use was it here? In front of a Sixth Order Warrior, wouldn't he still instantly die with no ashes remaining? This the old man could still comprehend, "you are ruthless! We Celestial Court will not let this go so easily! We'll leave!" While supporting the old man, the two youngsters and he quickly left the area.

Once the three left, Lei Yu coldly said: "Chief, since you were already here, why did you watch Eagle Group's Hui Wei Tao get killed without lifting a finger?"

"What a joke!" Shangguan Xi Hong turned around and said, "as a warrior, when facing an opponent you believe you cannot overcome, you must carefully probe the situation. Are you telling me that while in Dragon Group, Nuo Yi Long and them did not teach you this?"

This was obviously treating his men as cannon fodder, it looks like everyone's opinion was not wrong, Shangguan family members saw their own lives as more valuable compared to others.

“But...”

“There is nothing left here! Your mission has been accomplished; you can go back and report to command!” With those final words, Shangguan Xi Hong walked towards the direction of the wild beast.

It seems to be able to sense the immense strength of Shangguan Xi Hong, the wild beast within the cage of swords frantically roared and struggled. But it was useless, no matter how hard it struggled, it was unable to break out.

Both feet planted firmly on the ground, the surrounding area started shaking and waves of yellow internal energy came out from Shangguan Xi Hong. The twelve

swords seemed to come alive; each of them took off from the ground into the sky, flying off into the distant. The direction was exactly where the three Celestial Court members were headed. And the internal energy sealing the wild beast disappeared without a trace.

This so called demonic Ink Beast realized its cage had been broken, so it desperately moved in the opposite direction of Shangguan Xi Hong to escape.

“Demonic beast! Where do you think you’re going?!” Once again condensing a powerful yellow internal energy on his palm, using the same technique like the one he dealt with the old man from Celestial Court, he threw a palm



strike. A ferocious and powerful energy flew straight at the Ink Beast.

\*Howl!\* A loud sharp cry of pain, the Ink Beast instantly fell to the ground, its body thrashing around, Two of the spikes on its back was split into two due to the power of the energy, and blood kept flowing out.

Walking forward, wanting to finish off the Ink Beast with another palm strike, but at this moment, Lei Yu's body intercepted with the speed of lightning, blocking Shangguan Xi Hong's path.

“What are you doing? Move aside!” Shouted the angry Shangguan Xi Hong at Lei Yu.

“You can’t kill it!”

“You are not qualified to tell me what to do!” Knowing that the Ink Beast possessed a spiritual bead capable of eternal life, he only had to kill the Ink Beast and extract it, no longer needing to capture it alive.

# Chapter 33:

## Demonic Ink Beast

“You cannot kill it!”

“Move aside!” A strong forceful impact blasted Lei Yu’s body out of the way. Shangguan Xi Hong then with extreme speed released forth his internal energy attacking the Ink Beast. It seemed like the Ink Beast was no longer in extreme pain; with its single red eye, it stared fiercely at Shangguan Xi Hong whom was the person that was ending its life. Right after the attack, the body of the Ink Beast began to blur and become illusory, turning into a black gas like substance, and then dissipated into

the air without a trace. The meridian point between Lei Yu's eyebrows briefly flashed a black light; he then felt his mind go blank before becoming unconscious.

"Chief, you..." Nuo Hu hurriedly rushed to Lei Yu's body supporting it, then looking at Shangguan Xi Hong in front of him.

"Such rotten luck, I wasted so much effort and didn't think the legend would actually be fake! It originally never had any spiritual bead of longevity!" Stamping one foot on the ground, Shangguan Xi Hong flew into the air, disappearing in the depths of the forest.

---

In a world of darkness, Lei Yu seemed to have once again gone inside the space of the jade pendant, but currently, the sky did not have that round moon. Lei Yu cautiously walked forward.

“You killed me time and time again, why?”

“Who is it?!” Lei Yu looked all over but there was only darkness and only the sound of his voice, he simply could not see anything. At this time, inside the world of darkness flashed a red light. This red light steadily approached Lei Yu.

“It’s you! How can you be here?” Lei Yu was surprised to find that in front of him was the Ink Beast

previously killed by Shangguan Xi Hong. And the red light was actually the Ink beast's eye. But why did it appear within his subconscious mind?

“The line where the sky meets the earth; after recovering from the battle, perhaps this was destined; the day I defeated the Qilin, I received the spiritual bead of longevity. As the flow of time passed by, I, the Ink Beast was no longer the king of the world. I was actually sealed inside a boulder for ten thousand years!”

“I really cannot understand what you're talking about...” Lei Yu looked at the pondering beast in front of him.

“The day that I was able to break free from the seal, my strength was at only 10 percent of my peak power, who would have thought I would run into you. And you, you’re the one that killed me and extracted the spiritual bead of longevity from my head!”

“Are you saying I have the spiritual bead of longevity? That yellow bead?” Lei Yu was suddenly shocked. Could it be this yellow bead that assisted him in clearing away impurities was what Celestial Court and Martial Sect fought over to gain, the spiritual bead of longevity?

“That’s right! You were supposed to die!” said the Ink Beast sitting on the ground. “After being killed by

you and having the spiritual bead of longevity removed, if you had only waited a while longer to absorb it, then I could have relied on the trace connection with the spiritual bead to resurrect. But because of your curiosity that day, you happen to absorb it. \*Sigh\* But fortunately inside my body still had trace amounts of the spiritual bead's energy, allowing me to use the power of self-breeding for my rebirth. Coincidentally you appeared again, rescuing me from the body's stomach. Tell me; does this count as killing me once but then saving me? Unfortunately, this time I have been truly destroyed."

"So that's what happened!" Lei Yu then hurriedly ask: "So are there any methods for you to revive



again?”

“Impossible!” Said the Ink Beast.

“You killed me then saved me, so we should be considered even. But today you helped me by speaking on my behalf, so let’s consider the spiritual bead of longevity a present I gift to you.”

“This... this doesn’t sound too good right?” Lei Yu thought back to the day where the Ink Beast resurrected and came out of its own stomach, thinking about it made him a little sick. If he ever died and the only way to resurrect was using that method, then he’d rather just die permanently.

“Many people sought but failed to attain the bead, yet you don’t want

it? They why did you dig it out of my head that day?” The Ink Beast asked in a hateful tone.

“I...” Lei Yu was suddenly dumbstruck. That day, he only killed the Ink Beast in order to protect himself. And it was because of his curiosity that made him extract the unknown bead. He did not expect it to be a spiritual bead capable of longevity.

“Enough talking about this. Although I’ve been destroyed, the Ink Beast species should not be allowed to become extinct in this world.” The Ink Beast then said, “I need to borrow your body to nurture a new beast.”

“Screw that, no way!”

“You need to quickly improve your strength, so I will then be able to awaken and appear once again. But you shouldn’t count on any good fortune because I will not help you in anyway. My spiritual energy is too weak, I need to sleep. Maybe in a few years, or maybe in a thousand years, everything depends on your karma...” “The voice of the Ink Beast gradually disappeared and Lei Yu gained back control of his consciousness. Searching within his body, he was unable to find any traces of the Ink Beast’s spiritual energy.

In a hazy condition and feeling his face being wiped with something, it was kind of warm and felt very comfortable. Lei Yu then gradually opened his eyes.

“Ai Er?”

“Brother Yu! You’ve finally woken up!”

In front of Lei Yu was Ai Er. Seeing Lei Yu awaken, Ai Er was immediately filled with joy. “You scared me to death; you’ve been unconscious for a long time.”

“Ai Er, where am I?” Lei Yu sat up; felt a slight headache and began kneading his head.

“Don’t get up, you should rest well, I’ll tell them you’re awake.” With that, she then rushed out.

Shaking his head, his headache seemed to have lightened a bit. “I somehow had gotten the spiritual bead of longevity? How could this

be? Why did I become unconscious?” Lei Yu blinked a few times thinking about everything. “Fcuk! The Ink Beast is inside my body!”

“Little Yu, you’re awake!” The door suddenly opened and Nuo Hu, Air Er, Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng came in.

“I’m fine now.” Lei Yu scratched his head and hurriedly got off the bed.

“You’ve been unconscious for seven days; it’s great that you’re okay now.” Nuo Yi Feng smiled as she said that.

“Seven days?! No way!”

---

Everything was the same as always. Every day, Lei Yu would train his body at Dragon Group headquarters, and then he would cultivate his internal energy at home. And occasionally, he would go out on dates with Ai Er or accompany her to go shopping.

One and a half years later, Lei Yu was currently calculating the date. The three year battle date he had with Cai Zhong will arrive in approximately two months. This past year, it was unfortunate for him because his improvement speed was too slow. He was only able to advance from the mid-stage of [Energy Suppression] to the late-stage. It seems he is still very far away from breaking through this bottleneck.

At around the same time, in a sealed dark chamber.

Black smoke filled the entire chamber, the smoke was swirling around pushed by a strong wind. A deafening howl could be heard, filled with resentment like it came from the depths of hell.

Smoke gradually dissipated, and the howling gradually stopped. A young man dressed in black was sitting cross-legged in the center of the chamber. His long hair obscured his face; one was simply unable to clearly see what he looked like.

“It’s soon nearing the three years’ time. Lei Yu, I worked hard for the past three years just for this day. I have finally reached the Fourth

Stage of the Demonic Realm; I'd like to see whether you can oppose me!"

The chamber's door opened and the man clothed in black left.

"Cousin, were you able to succeed?"

"Yes, now we wait for the duel in two months time." The person in black was none other than Cai Zhong, the northern branch leader of the Ming Sect.



# Chapter 34: Uncle Liu Shishi

“Cousin, I inquired around, that guy joined Dragon Group and has some association with Martial Sect” said Zhao Han.

“Oh? Martial Sect?”

“That’s right cousin, you were behind closed door training so you haven’t heard what’s been happening on the outside.”

“It seems like we need to change the way how our contest will be held.” A red light briefly flashed in Cai Zhong’s eyes while he coldly laughed.

On the other side.

“Instructor Fan, are you alright? You’re actually challenging me?” Said Lei Yu with his eyes wide in surprise.

“What’s the fuss about? You still don’t know about your own evaluation after joining Dragon Team. Within the two plus years you’ve joined, ever since you’ve defeated Dragon Team’s strongest member Chen Chao, no one has dared to challenge you anymore. If it weren’t for the other team members pressuring me, did you think I want to challenge you?” Fan Hong Chang also looked helpless. This instructor appears to be thoroughly discredited since it was the Dragon Team members that put

him in this embarrassing situation. Challenging Lei Yu, if he happens to lose, then he will no longer have any face in the team. If he did not challenge Lei Yu, then the team members will say he was a coward.

“Well, that’s fine then, I could actually learn some fighting techniques from you” said Lei Yu with a smile.

“How could you say these words so carefreely? Let me ask you, what level of strength have you actually attained? You Lei family members... uh no, I meant you special people are too mysterious, I cannot tell at all.” Fan Hong Chang realized he said the wrong thing, thus hurriedly changed his statement.

“It’s a secret, but don’t worry Instructor Fan, I should not be a difficult opponent for you.” Lei Yu smiled and then said: “This match is at night right?”

“Ten o’clock, second floor training hall, I’ve already told the other members to prepare for it.”

“Understood, see you tonight.”

Leaving the gates of Dragon Group, he has been jogging every day, he rarely drove at all. Coincidentally Nuo Hu left early today; he wasn’t able to hitch a ride. Looking at his watch, it was currently a bit later than six o’clock. There was still quite a bit of time before the ten o’clock match, Lei Yu didn’t really have anything else to do.

He went to a busy downtown area where it was very lively and crowded. It looked like something had happened. Lei Yu then joined the crowd to also engage in its liveliness, wanting to see exactly what was going on.

The crowd surrounded a person who was huddled on the ground, his body constantly shaking. Lei Yu got a closer and cried out in surprise: “Uncle Liu!”

After this shout, the crowd of people turned to look at Lei Yu. A good-hearted person then said “young man, quickly take him to the hospital, did he have some serious illness?”

Lifting up Uncle Liu, Lei Yu rushed

out of the crowd, stopping a random taxi, they then rushed towards the hospital.

Uncle Liu had already been inside the operating room for two hours yet there weren't any news of what was going on. Lei Yu was pacing back and forth in the hallway, his heart filled with unease. "How was this possible? Why would uncle Liu become like this? What exactly happened?" Once again looking at his watch, it was already past eight o'clock. If there still weren't any news with what's going on with uncle Liu, then even if his teammates considered him a coward, he will not attend tonight's match.

Every second of every minute went

by, Lei Yu's heart feel more and more uneasy. Looking up, the operating room lights went off. Lei Yu quickly ran up as the door opened, the doctor then came out.

"Doctor, what's going on? How is the patient?" Lei Yu anxiously asked.

\*Sigh\* The doctor helplessly shook his head, "I'm sorry, we tried our best, if you have anything to say, you should say it to him soon. I believe he doesn't have much time left."

"What?!" Lei Yu could feel a ringing buzz in his head. His mind went blank, "how could it be like this? What exactly happened?"

At this time, a few of the nurses came out of the operating room pushing uncle Liu. Lei Yu followed behind them, arriving at a hospital room.

Looking at uncle Liu's hollowed out face and his sunken eyes, Lei Yu felt like needles were stabbing into his heart. Since he was young, the Lei family household had cast him aside, despising him for being a bastard. It could be said that uncle Liu alone took care of all of his daily necessities. Sometimes he would openly berate those that had ridiculed Lei Yu. Lei Yu would have never thought the person he most respected would become like this, how could his heart not ache?

Uncle Liu's eyes had some slight



movement. Lei Yu hurriedly grabbed his skinny hand which was like twigs. His eyes all red, he said: "Uncle Liu, how did you become like this?"

"It's you little Yu!" Uncle Liu smiled weakly, "child, don't cry, it looks like this was destined by the heavens, allowing me to see you on my last breath."

"Uncle Liu, hurry up and tell me what happened!" Said Lei Yu anxiously.

"Enemies, they were enemies, enemies of your mother."

"Enemies of my mother? Who are they?" Asked Lei Yu with eyes filled with anger.

“Child, your current strength is not enough to go against them. It’s best that you didn’t know, but you must remember one thing, there is another piece of jade pendant apart from your own, possessed by your mother. When those two jade pendants are close to each other, there will be a strong reaction. Once the time comes, you will understand everything.”

Lei Yu unconsciously touched the jade pendant hanging around his neck. He once again asked, “but when can I get to see my mother? Where exactly is she?”

“Don’t ask too many questions, I \*cough cough\* there are some things that you cannot know right now. When the time comes, you

will naturally understand. Child, just once, can you call me grandpa?” (maternal)

“Grandpa?” Lei Yu was immediately shocked, what exactly is going on?

“Child, twenty years ago, I accompanied your mother to the Lei family household. When your mother left, I was allowed to stay and take care of you. Once you left the Lei family, I was then driven out.” Uncle Liu was gasping for breath before continuing: “Back then, your father and your mother had sinned, but you were the one to suffer. Our Liu family apologizes to you, child I... I...” Uncle Liu became faint of breath, he was breathing out more than breathing in. His breathing intensified with short

shallow breaths.

“Gran... grandpa! Grandpa!” Lei Yu firmly grasped uncle Liu’s hand; the tears on his face were dripping down involuntarily, dropping onto uncle Liu’s extremely thin arms.

“No! Grandpa!” Lei Yu began to wail and cry. He had just learned that the person who had accompanied him since childhood was actually his grandfather, but now he had drifted away from the living world. To this Lei Yu who had been tortured since he was a child was undoubtedly a big blow, this blow he suffered may be considered too great.

Inside the hospital room, the sound of crying gradually stopped. Lei Yu’s eyes had become even more intense

and terrifying. He suddenly thought of something, and ran out of the room to find the doctor that had performed the operation.

“What happened to my grandpa? Why did he become like this?”  
Asked Lei Yu.

“We found this thing within his body, but we don’t know what it is, we are currently studying it.” From a white container, the doctor used some tweezers to take out a black chip, “this thing is the reason it lead to the death of your grandfather. We discovered it in his brain, and it appears as if it’s been there for a long time. This chip was pressing against your grandfather’s nerves. By the time you brought him to the hospital, there was nothing we

could do.”

Lei Yu then proceeded to store the black chip inside his own wallet.

“You cannot take this away, we still need to study it. It might be something that was grown inside his body, something like a new type of disease” the doctor hurriedly cried.

“You shut your mouth!” Lei Yu angrily said. “If you want to study, go look for someone else to study on. Immediately prepare the death certificate, I want to have my grandpa cremated as soon as possible.”

He didn’t need any grand funeral, Lei Yu just wanted to quickly find a

permanent place of refuge for his  
grandfather.

# Chapter 35:

## Mysterious Enemy

Lei Yu's phone kept ringing, but he was sitting on a chair in the hospital hallway in a daze. Lei Yu's current location was outside the doors to the hospital's morgue, very few people were here. The dim lighting combined with the night's cold air gave this place a chilling atmosphere. It even felt a bit scary around here.

“Mother, mother! How should I find my mother?” Lei Yu was firmly clenching his fists, suddenly feeling hopeless. My grandfather's words were very clear, my current strength was not enough to oppose mother's



enemies. "I need to put in more effort in cultivating! I need to put in much more effort! That's right! I must put more effort in cultivating!" Suddenly snapping his head up, Lei Yu recovered from his grief, then finally noticed his cell phone had been ringing non-stop.

"Eighteen missed calls!" Looking at the numbers, it was not just Nuo Hu that called, there were also the phone numbers of Nuo Yi Long and Fan Hong Chang. Lei Yu then remembered, tonight was supposed to be the match where Fan Hong Chang challenged him. But because of the incident with his grandfather, he had completely forgotten about it.

Thinking about it, he then answered

the call from Nuo Hu.

“Hello.” Lei Yu’s voice sounded a bit depressed.

“Little Yu, where are you? Did you forget about the important event tonight?”

“Big brother, I think... I think I won’t be able to attend, I’m currently at the hospital.”

“What?! Why are you at the hospital? Did you get hurt?” Nuo Hu’s voice was a bit anxious, from his end of the line, one could hear a lot of noise in the background.

“Don’t worry, I’m okay, I’m coming back now.”

The hospital’s paperwork and

procedures needed another day before it could be completed. Lei Yu could only return to Dragon Group and explain to those worried about him about what exactly was going on.

“Little Yu, what happened? How come you were at the hospital?” Nuo Hu was filled with concern after seeing Lei Yu. Even though he and Lei Yu were only sworn brothers, Nuo Hu actually treated him as real younger brother.

\*Sigh\*

A deep sigh could be heard. Lei Yu was currently sitting in a main hall within the villa of Dragon Group. Next to him were all the people concerned about him, including

Nuo Yi Long and his sister, Fan Hong Chang, Nuo Hu, and his beloved Ai Er. Everyone's face revealed an anxious look.

“I found my grandfather. It appears that he raised me since I was young and took care of all my daily necessities; uncle Liu was actually my grandfather.”

“Eh? How could...” Everyone was astonished after the explanation. Everyone knew what Lei Yu had to endure growing up – labeled as trash since he was young, being kicked out of the Lei family when he was eighteen years old, and growing up without a mother.

“I just found that out today. This evening, I found my grandfather

lying on the street, surrounded by a crowd of people. I then rushed him to the hospital but it was already too late. I was told a black chip was removed from his brain, and it was only around this time that I found out he was my grandfather.” As Lei Yu was talking, once again the tears would not stop streaming down. Such a powerful and dignified man would actually shed tears, perhaps only familial love will cause him to be in such a vulnerable state.

Because of what Lei Yu told them, everyone could feel his grief. Nuo Yi Long suddenly asked, “black chip? Did you say a black chip? Do you have it with you? Take it out and let me see.”

“I have it; I deliberately took it from

the doctor.” After saying this, Lei Yu took out the chip from his wallet and handed it over to Nuo Yi Long.

“It’s really them!” Nuo Yi Long’s eyes became extremely wide after seeing the black chip in his hand.

“Uncle Nuo! Do you recognize this thing? Who does this belong to? Who killed my grandfather? Who are my mother’s enemies?” Lei Yu suddenly stood up, his emotional stress was at its limits. But after seeing Nuo Yi Long’s facial expression, Lei Yu began to have some doubt.

\*Sigh\* Shaking his head, Nuo Yi Long said: “Little Yu, your current strength is not enough to oppose him, this... let’s talk about this in

the future.”

“Uncle Nuo! Who exactly is this person, I beg you to tell me!”

“Did you not hear what I just told you? Stop asking about it! Nuo Yi Long’s tone suddenly became angry. Everyone inside the hall was confused, and only his sister Nuo Yi Feng knew why his brother would have such a big reaction.

Nuo Yi Long turned to leave; Nuo Yi Feng smiled at the rest of the people before following in his steps. The people left in the hall were all extremely confused.

In a remote corner of Dragon Group’s military headquarters.

“Brother, did you really have to

show such a big reaction?” Nuo Yi Long then said, “little Yu does not understand what’s going on. It’s only because of the death of his grandfather that he would be so eager to find out who the murderer was, why did you exhibit such a big temper towards him?”

“Well, what do you think I should have done then?” Nuo Yi Long’s resolute face now suddenly became dispirited. This was like a completely different person from the mighty and domineering commander of Dragon Group.

“Brother, sister-in-law has died for so many years now; you should stop thinking about it.”

“I did not think... did not expect



that our Nuo family's enemy and little Yu's enemy is actually the same person, I really hate him! Twenty plus years, these twenty years I have painstakingly cultivated, hoping to break through the Fifth Order Warrior rank, becoming a Sixth Order Warrior. But I've been stuck here unable to break through the bottleneck. If I could break through, then I could avenge your sister-in-law!"

"Brother, don't be like this. I know you feel bad deep inside your heart, suffocating for twenty years, but seeing you like this again, my heart also aches."

"At least there's some hope in this situation." Nuo Yi Long suddenly thought of something as he said

this.

“Brother, you mean little Yu?”

“Right, come with me.”

Inside the main hall.

Instructor Fan, I’m sorry, the situation today delayed our match.”

“Let’s put aside my challenge towards you for the time being. Death is final, there’s nothing we can do about it so you should overcome this. I will mention this to the commander, about giving you a one month break; you can take care of things and adjust your life.” Fan Hong Chang said this intending to comfort Lei Yu. (T/N: death is final is a Chinese saying to console someone)

“No!” Lei Yu shook his head: “I cannot rest, I need to put more effort into cultivating. Not only did uncle Nuo say it, but my grandfather on his deathbed also said it – my current strength is not enough to oppose this enemy. I need to work harder in improving myself! Even though I currently don’t know who my enemy is, but I cannot give up, I cannot become dissolute! ”

“Good! You have ambitions!” Nuo Yi Long’s vigorous and powerful voice came from outside the door.

“Uncle Nuo.”

“Commander.”

“Father, are you okay now?”

Everyone hurriedly approached him.

“I’m fine now little Yu.” Nuo Yi Long smiled and said “Before I was a bit too emotional, I hope you won’t mind it. Maintaining this dedication and tenacity, I believe that sooner or later, one day you will become a force to be reckoned with. Once you are strong enough, I will tell you everything you need to know.”

“Don’t worry! I can do it!” Lei Yu nodded his head in enthusiasm.

Everything went smoothly after that. The next day, Ai Er and Nuo Hu accompanied Lei Yu to the hospital. There, they completed the paperwork and had uncle Liu

cremated and buried in a cemetery.

The soldiers of Dragon Group were currently training with their utmost effort. Lion Team were training without slacking at all. But occasionally, they will gather together to discuss things that were going on.

Outside the villa stood a few of Dragon Team's elite, all were abnormally alert. It seems like within the main hall, there's the presence of an important figure.

# Chapter 36:

## Dueling The Instructor

“Why is it that you’ve never mentioned this to me before?” asked Nuo Yi Long.

“Uncle Nuo, this happened three years ago. The duel between Cai Zhong and I is something personal between the two of us, it will not affect Dragon Group or Martial Sect” replied Lei Yu.

“Naive!” Shangguan Xi Hong’s single palm heavily struck the coffee table. “Don’t you know? On the surface, the duel between you

and Cai Zhong is a mutual exchange of pointers, but in reality, it's a contest of power between the two major forces Martial Sect versus the Ming Sect? You better properly explain how this situation came to be!"

"Uncle Shangguan, it is my fault. It was all because of me that caused this problem." Ai Er stated this in a weak voice and stood up besides Nuo Yi Feng.

"What exactly happened?" Asked Nuo Yi Long with a frown.

"The incident started when..."

"So that's what happened." Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng gave Lei Yu an appreciative look. But

Shangguan Xi Hong, Martial Sect's highest authority figure still with a cold attitude said: "I still don't even know if you have the ability to fight with Cai Zhong or not. I'll tell you all frankly; yesterday Ming Sect had already informed Martial Sect that the contest location has been changed. And they have invited the other two major forces – Celestial Court and Lei family to watch the battle. Do you know what they are intending to do? Ming Sect is using this opportunity to demoralize our Ming Sect's power and influence!"

"Chief, I will fight with all my effort!" Lei Yu said confidently.

"That's ridiculous! In order to become a branch leader of Ming Sect, do you think your opponent's



strength is weak? This is not something you can depend on your confidence to win! You should know, this is related to Martial Sect's face, if you were to be defeated, I will not let you off easily!" Shangguan Xi Hong angrily said.

"Little Yu, he..."

"Whatever, you don't need to say anything more." Shangguan Xi Hong prevented Nuo Yi Long's explanation. "Freakin stupid! Daring to not ask for my consent before accepting the duel, you better be prepared, or..." \*Slams table again\* Shangguan Xi Hong left these words before turning around and angrily leaving.

\*Sigh\* “Little Yu, you really should have told us about this situation earlier, why have you not mentioned it to us all this time?” Asked Nuo Yi Long with a frown.

Lei Yu looked at the several people left here; he wasn't sure what he should say. Originally it was just an agreement between two people; he did not expect to involve the reputation and strength between Martial Sect and Ming Sect. This was similar to burdening Lei Yu's shoulder with a 1000 jin item.

“Uncle Nuo, whatever I say now is useless. There's still a little over a month's time, I want to devote myself to cultivating.” Lei Yu exhaled a deep breath, and then walked towards the second floor's

training hall.

“Brother, do you not have any confidence in little Yu?” Asked Nuo Yi Feng.

“That’s right father, little Yu is currently very powerful, within Dragon Team, he is already the most powerful” said Nuo Hu sitting on the side.

“It’s not that I don’t have any confidence in little Yu, but did you guys know? Before Shangguan Xi Hong came over, we already spoke over the phone. The person called Cai Zhong, whom was a small branch leader, had been promoted to become the Northern Main Hall’s leader. Do you know what it means to be a Main Hall’s leader?

You need at least the strength of a rank Fourth or Fifth Order Warrior. Also, Ming Sect mainly cultivates demonic energy; their moves are all sinister and ruthless. Even if little Yu's strength was equivalent to his opponent, there is no guarantee that some surprise could not happen. Besides, we currently do not have any information pertaining to little Yu's current strength, and we don't even know what rank of strength he has achieved." Nuo Yi Long's fears were indeed reasonable. Demonic cultivators relied on yin energy – they were ruthless and proficient in poison. For someone like Lei Yu who has been mainly relying on the power of strength, it indeed had quite a few drawbacks.

“Then... what about the challenge between little Yu and I, are we still continuing that?” Asked Fan Hong Chang.

Nuo Yi Long thought for a bit, “I think it’s necessary, at least we will get to know the extent of his current strength.”

“When should we do this?”

“We’ll do it tonight.”

“That’s fine, I’ll go get ready and notify little Yu.” Fan Hong Chang nodded and left.

That night, a space was cleared on the second floor of the training hall. On top of a spacious blue carpet stood Lei Yu and Fan Hong Chang. This match had been pushed back

for a few days already, a match that all the Dragon Team members had looked forward to. There was no one absent tonight and the audience also included the two siblings Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng, Nuo Hu, and Ai Er.

“Little Yu, it’s time to test your strength” laughed Fan Hong Chang.

“Instructor Fan, please!” Lei Yu clasped his fists together in respect.

Fan Hong Chang is a descendant of one of the ancient martial arts clans. By using his family’s inherited cultivating methods, he has reached the strength of a rank Fourth Order Warrior in a short thirty plus years. Within the country, he was already considered

an outstanding genius.

Most people will often encounter a difficult to breakthrough bottleneck in the third stage of a rank. Highly talented individuals may be able to break through in a year or two, but for the normal people, they may be trapped in the third stage for a decade, twenty years, or even their entire lifetime. Breaking through from the Fourth to the Fifth Order Warrior rank could be considered a critical juncture. Fan Hong Chang has spent quite some time at this critical juncture, unable to break through at all. If we are talking about the hardest part, then it will have to be from the Fifth Order to the Sixth Order. In the country of Tenglong, Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng could be considered as top-

level figures. Of course, besides the leaders of the four major forces in the country, Nuo Yi Long has been stuck on the Fifth Order rank for over a decade; he is still unable to have an insight in breaking through.

Based on this, the thing we must mention is how absurd Lei Yu's luck was. The process of him from the Third Order breaking through to the Fourth Order, he relied on the jade pendant left by his mother. While hanging on a thread between life and death, he managed a breakthrough. Perhaps Lei Yu felt the fear of treading the fine lines of life and death, therefore he did not have to experience the hardships in advancing a rank.



“Ahh!” After a burst of shout, Fan Hong Chang’s whole body surged forth a rich white internal energy. Inherent in its power, it was formlessly interacting with the surrounding environment causing ripples in the air, like it was bonding unceasingly with Fan Hong Chang. Inside the main hall, half the air was instantly sucked out, and to a normal person, breathing would be quite difficult. But everyone present weren’t ordinary people so it was natural that they were able to easily withstand it.

Lei Yu as always did not move, but was ready to counter any circumstances, he was waiting for the arrival of Fan Hong Chang’s attacks. The internal energy inside his body was instantly surging

around, almost circulating throughout every inch of his body. Having already reached the stage of [Energy Suppression], Lei Yu relied on his power of lightning to hide his true strength to the extent that one would call it almost perfect. Lei Yu was able to give off a feeling to others filled with elusive mystery. And it was this mysterious atmosphere that gave people an illusion that Lei Yu was not a strong individual.

Fan Hong Chang's body moved, causing a short burst of whistling sound in the air. His move made him similar to a cheetah, at breakneck speeds rushing towards Lei Yu, his fist containing a powerful explosive force. But Fan Hong Chang's degree of power

burst forth after careful consideration, he did not want Lei Yu to suffer any irreparable harm, therefore he held back some power. But his concern was unnecessary; the extent of Lei Yu's strength was no less than Fan Hong Chang. Already in the late stage of [Energy Suppression], he could easily rely on his body's ability to generate a gravitational field that could detect the strength of any attack.

His mouth gently curved to a smile, at the moment Fan Hong Chang got close to him, he effortlessly lifted up his right arm, "Bang!"

# Chapter 37: Strong Absorption

The instant both their arms came into contact with one and another, Fan Hong Chang's body was forcefully knocked back a few steps; a look of surprise was clearly shown on his face. The audience on the side including Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Yi Feng, and all the other Dragon Team members were shocked beyond expectations.

If one was to look closely at Fan Hong Chang's arm, you would see his right hand was slightly shaking at this time. But the cause of this effect, only Lei Yu would understand it. His attacks contained

the hidden power of lightning, and in addition to his skeletal bone structure containing trace metallic properties, being in contact will make his opponent's hand feel numb, especially with the added force of impact.

“Little Yu, you are really strong, it seems that I really need to concentrate in order to fight you or else Dragon Team will see me as a joke.” Fan Hong Chang had a brief smile before frowning. Lei Yu's performance has made him feel a little uneasy, this type of strong opponent other than Nuo Yi Long, he hasn't encountered for a very long time.

The white internal energy on the surface of his body began to surge

forth again, enveloping and concentrating on Fan Hong Chang's eyes, then focusing his will onto his arms.

Those that practice martial arts, those that cultivate internal energy, and those that cultivate demonic energy were all very different.

Those that focused on martial arts were strong and powerful by relying on their internal energy to stimulate their bodies, performing a powerful attack in order to kill their opponent. Practitioners of internal energy would rely on their internal energy's circulation of their life essence, and then expel forth that power out of their body for long range attacks. Practitioners of demonic energy are a combination of both, although not considered a

perfect union. Of course, the body of practitioners focused on martial arts were sturdier than those in Celestial Court by double or even triple, which is their clear advantage.

Inside the large main hall, there was complete silence; everyone's eyes were firmly fixated on the two men dueling. One whose internal energy was surging around like a river, the other calm and steady anticipating any moves or changes. It appears the atmosphere of hall was filled with extreme tension. It's possible that any moment now, an overwhelming flood of ferociously powerful attacks would appear.

Sure enough, the first to move was Fan Hong Chang. Both his legs

were on the ground balancing on the balls of his feet, and then his body was like a hare, pouncing towards Lei Yu approaching him through the air. Surrounding his arms were white internal energy resembling two waterfalls that were spiraling straight towards Lei Yu's location.

This time, Lei Yu had to pay full attention. He understood that Fan Hong Chang had not used his full power yet, but seeing the posture of attack in front of him, this magnificent onslaught attack showed Fan Hong Chang was no longer hiding his cards. Quickly circulating his internal energy, a thin line of energy absorbing within the meridians so that there was a hint of connection to his Sea of



Energy, Lei Yu's response to his opponent was the usual, by using the shortest amount of time in order to bring forth his strongest attack power.

Focusing his internal energy as one instead of spreading it throughout his body, Lei Yu's right arm was similar to a completely loaded anti-aircraft cannon, ready at anytime to fire off an unimaginably powerful attack.

The figure of Fan Hong Chang was drawing closer, now it was just a short second between them, he had now entered Lei Yu's attack range. He shifted his stance, not daring to drop his guard, Lei Yu focused on his concentration. Fan Hong Chang's two white waterfall of

internal energy passed by Lei Yu's ear with a whistling sound, making it unbearable for him. Although the attack seemed to be slow, but this actually took place within a blink of an eye. Fan Hong Chang's reaction speed was also really fast, once the attack reached empty air, his hand reversed. The attack that was frontal suddenly became a side sweep, directly aiming for the Lei Yu who had dodged sideways.

Lei Yu, who had already stored his power, had use a portion of his lightning power to evade. Adding his shifting footwork on the ground by borrowing the force of his waist, this combined effect allowed him to create another collision between them. Two palms versus a single fist, the two instantly stood their

ground after the collision. Staring at each other warily, except without the enmity, Fan Hong Chang was just too shocked with Lei Yu's strength. Is this person in front of him really in his early twenties?

With their fist and palms still connected in a struggle, Lei Yu was currently focusing his entire attention on Fan Hong Chang when his mind suddenly shook. He was feeling slightly faint, but soon regained his concentration. The yellow energy inside his brain, without being controlled, started flowing towards Lei Yu's right arm. A powerful adhesion force caused Lei Yu and Fan Hong Chang to both shudder at the same time. Lei Yu's arm would not stop trembling while Fan Hong Chang was not better off,

he felt like his internal energy was rapidly leaking out, as if a strong suction power had decided to absorb the essence of his internal energy.

Clenching his teeth, Lei Yu used his strength to wrench his arm away, separating Fan Hong Chang from him. Both their faces exposed an inconceivable expression. Fan Hong Chang's forehead was beaded in sweat, thinking that was way too dangerous. If Lei Yu continued his struggle between their fist and palms, he would definitely be not able to break free by relying on his own power.

Lei Yu currently felt that there was some kind of power within his body kindling, and that yellow energy

after suddenly absorbing had now restored its calm. Inside his Sea of Energy, a portion of energy had been depleted due to the previous strike, but now seemed to have regained some of its lost internal energy. “Could it be...?!”

“Great!” Nuo Yi Long was the first to recover from the surprise, clapping his hands.

Then the audience burst into applause. It was as if all the Dragon Team members had just witnessed a battle of epic proportions.

Although they did not personally participate in this battle, those that have crossed paths dueling with Lei Yu know that this mysterious guy is quite deadly. Especially when they go on an all out melee, every

contact with him produced a sense of paralysis that was quite unbearable.

“Little Yu, you are very strong, this match, I...”

“We will call it a draw!” Lei Yu interrupted Fan Hong Chang from continuing his words. The latter looked at Lei Yu with gratitude, his expression revealing admiration and shock. Possessing such strength at this young age, plus a thoughtful and generous attitude, there’s no way he could not admire him.

Although the battle between the two only resulted in them clashing twice, yet Fan Hong Chang knew that the first time they made contact, he himself did not use his

full power and neither did Lei Yu. The second time they clashed, even though their power were on a similar level, Lei Yu's body later exhibited an absorption power making his internal energy leak out. There was no way he could continue fighting, but then again, this was Fan Hong Chang's own thought process.

Lei Yu understood that Fan Hong Chang had exhausted all his internal energy dealing with his attack. If it wasn't for the spiritual bead of immortality inside his head suddenly activating and absorbing Fan Hong Chang's internal energy, the two would probably be able to battle it out for another few rounds.

Thus, one could see how fearsome

the spiritual bead that everyone wanted to get their hands on was. And it even had this unimaginably frightening ability of absorption, perhaps the scope of this ability was not limited to just this.

“Little Yu, it seems we unnecessarily worried too much!” Nuo Yi Long and others walked towards the center of the stage area.

Nuo Yi Feng laughed, “that’s right, we didn’t expect little Yu to have already reached the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior. Hong Chang is already at the peak of the late-stage Fourth Order rank, we didn’t think the fight between you two would result in an undetermined winner or loser.



“It was Instructor Fan going easy on me, or how else would we draw?”

Lei Yu scratched his head and laughed.

“Okay, it’s time to dismiss, we still have training tomorrow.” Nuo Yi Long turned around and said this to the ten plus Dragon Team elites.

“Yes commander!” People started to leave, and they left with both surprise and admiration in their eyes while looking at the most recently joined Dragon Team member. After this competition, it had stirred up the fighting spirit of these competitive elites, the spirit of wanting to become stronger.

“After seeing everyone leave, Fan Hong Chang asked “little Yu, what

exactly is the current level of your strength?”

Hearing Fan Hong Chang ask this, the few that were left in the hall had some doubts. Nuo Yi Long asked, “isn’t it very clear? Little Yu should be at the Fourth Order rank right?”

“Nope, it shouldn’t be. I feel like I had just returned from taking a stroll through hell. If it wasn’t for Lei Yu promptly withdrawing his arm, I believe I would not have any strength left to be standing here.” Fan Hong Chang recalled the scary scene of being absorbed, a chill then ran down his spine.

“What?!” Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Yi Feng, Nuo Hu, and Ai Er all shouted out

in shock.

# Chapter 38: Liu Hao's Advancement

“That’s right.” Fan Hong Chang then said: “Little Yu’s power had originally been fused with properties of lightning, causing a paralysis effect on people. I intentionally concentrated all my internal energy onto my arm in order to nullify the paralysis effect. It should have been enough to resist it, but an inexplicable force suddenly came from his body. And this force was extremely powerful, containing a strong siphoning action. My internal energy that was beyond my control was then absorbed. Little Yu must have

realized such circumstances so he immediately broke off contact.”

“Little Yu, do you have any more shocking things you haven’t told us?” Nuo Yi Long’s eyes were filled with surprise, unable to hold in his joy before openly asking.

“Uncle Nuo, this I’m not too clear on, I... I want to go back and rest a bit.” Lei Yu did not know how to explain that this force was granted by the Spiritual Bead of Longevity. Which happens to be the objective item from his last mission, but now this thing ended up inside his body. So, there’s no way he can openly tell them all these things right? Even though Nuo Yi Long and them would not eye his prize, but if this information somehow got out, then

other people will definitely see him as a prey for hunting.

“Nuo Hu, take little Yu back to rest, we will all disperse as well. I am now very confident with the match against Ming Sect!” Laughed Nuo Yi Long.

Ai Er and Nuo Hu took Lei Yu home together. In order to allow Lei Yu to have adequate rest, Nuo Hu did not do stay too long. Ai Er also only cuddled with Lei Yu for a bit before leaving in a hurry as well.

Returning to his bedroom, Lei Yu sat on his bed. He wasn't cultivating but only monitoring the internal changes inside his body, therefore he did not have to take off his clothes.

“Why would the spiritual bead suddenly activate such an effect? How come this has never happened before?” Lei Yu was completely puzzled.

When looking at his body with his inner vision, Lei Yu then found out the previously absorbed white internal energy of Fan Hong Chang had disappeared without a trace. He had no clue when did it disappear.

“That’s strange, what’s going on? Didn’t I absorb some of it?”

After careful exploration, he still could not come to a conclusion. The energy he had absorbed silently disappeared without a trace. There was no hint on where to start looking making Lei Yu extremely

depressed.

Taking off his clothes, he sat cross-legged on the floor. Lei Yu had always been strict with himself when it came to cultivating, never giving himself a break. Even since he attained the self-named “Lei Yu Divine Arts”, he had never ceased to seek newer heights. Each time he advanced a step, Lei Yu would have a fulfilled feeling.

Ever since he had reached the late stage of [Energy Suppression] which correlated to being a rank of a late-stage Fourth Order Warrior, his improvement speed had gradually slowed down. And there were even times when he felt that he did not make any progress at all, which made Lei Yu very distressed.



Circulating his internal energy, and within the Sea of Energy, his internal energy was floating around in silence. The energy there entirely relied on Lei Yu's spirit to move it. Reaching the [Energy Suppression] stage allowed Lei Yu to better control his internal energy, and when cultivating, he was able to control the thickness of the flow of internal energy through the meridians in order to safeguard against any dangers. After more than a year, although the unknown green energy continued to follow his own internal energy acting as a bodyguard and escort, the frequency of repairs had decreased a lot; perhaps this was related to Lei Yu's improvement.

Exactly because of this reason, it

caused Lei Yu to have doubts. Did he really have to make his internal energy into a powerful torrent in order to fracture his meridians, so that the green energy could repair it in order for him to improve? No, the idea was quickly rejected by Lei Yu. Those that have reached the late-stage of the Fourth Order rank all have encountered this extremely difficult to break through bottleneck. And it is this thin barrier that hampered the growth of most people making them stay permanently on the Fourth Order rank, unable to break through. This was a threshold; one needed enough patience and insights in order to pass through.

Slowly breathing out a breath of turbid air, by the time he opened

his eyes, the light of dawn could be seen in the sky. After stretching his body, he rushed to the bathroom to wash off all the impurities his body had expelled through the night.

“Master! I’ve succeeded!” Hearing this from the end of the line, Liu Hao’s voice was very excited.

“What did you succeed at? Speak more clearly!” Asked Lei Yu while blinking his eyes.

“Just wait, I’m coming over right now, oh yea, sister Ying Ying is with me, we are coming over together.”

“Hey! Wait! Hello? Hello? I think I’m going to faint!” Lei Yu shook his head helplessly. This Cui Ying Ying had already gradually drifted out of

his life, but now she's going to reappear again?

Sure enough, in less than half an hour, Liu Hao arrived to his house bringing Cui Ying Ying along. Because during this period, Lei Yu had to concentrate on cultivating his internal energy, wanting his utmost to break through the [Energy Suppression] stage, he did not go to Dragon Group headquarters that often. Of course this was only allowed through the consent of Nuo Yi Long.

It has already been over a year and a half, Lei Yu's eye widen a bit after seeing Cui Ying Ying once again. Was this the girl that was usually dressed in sexy clothing, causing men to daydream everywhere she

went, the same Cui Ying Ying?

At this time, Cui Ying Ying was only wearing jeans and a white t-shirt, completely different than the past where she would be in scantily clad clothing. Her black hair was tied up by a plain black rubber band in a ponytail style. With this getup, she was still a beauty to behold. No matter how much she changed her style, there was no way to hide her looks that could stun a man or her eyes that could steal a man's soul away.

“Lei Yu, I haven't seen you in a while” smiled Cui Ying Ying, vividly revealing her charming personality. With the clothes she was wearing, her smile completely expressed her natural beauty, completely

dropping her past image of only wearing provocative fashion.

“Yea, it’s been a while, what have you been up to?” Asked Lei Yu.

“I transferred to another school abroad, taking classes in business management. My father wanted me to inherit the family business, so there was nothing I could do. This past year and a bit, I made an effort in changing myself. I haven’t participated in any nightlife activities, nor drank any alcohol. I clearly remembered the words you told me that night before you left. Since you did not like how I was back then, I did my best to change, becoming someone you would like” replied Cui Ying Ying with a smile.

Lei Yu could not help gasping, no way! How could there be such a persistent girl? But Cui Ying Ying's way of speaking whatever was on her mind instead of playing psychological games was something a lot of men desired. Lei Yu's heart could not help but throb a bit for her, regarding this girl; he did not know what else to say, so he was only able to give her his usual clueless smile hoping the subject would be put to rest.

“Oh yea!” Remembering something, Lei Yu turned and said “Liu Hao, you said you succeeded, what did it mean?”

“Master, I thought you only cared about reminiscing with sister Ying Ying, forgetting my existence

already!“ Liu Hao’s finger rubbing his chin, exposing an evil grin.

“Are you telling me or not?” Lei Yu raised his hand pretending he was going to smack Liu Hao.

“I’ll say, I’ll say it! I’ve finally reached a breakthrough from the second stage onto the third stage; I am now officially a Third Order rank Warrior!” Liu Hao smiled triumphantly.



# Chapter 29:

## Grinding Before The Battle

“You kiddo really did it!” Lei Yu laughed, “but don’t get too carried away with a bit of progress, you still need to continue working hard on cultivating, got it?”

“I know! Master, today I’m going to be the host, treating you and sister Ying Ying to a meal. The first to welcome sister Ying Ying home, the second to celebrate my rise in rank.”

“Ok, then let’s eat dinner together.” Lei Yu smiled, his eyes covertly

glancing over Cui Ying Ying's body, twice.

During lunch, Lei Yu told them about the upcoming battle in a little over a month and how Martial Sect's reputation was on the line. The two naturally told Lei Yu that they weren't going to bother him while he was undergoing training and cultivating.

Through his observation, Lei Yu found that Cui Ying Ying had really changed dramatically. Not only did she become quieter than before, but whenever she spoke, she would occasionally blush. Compared to the previous rich princess who did not fear the heavens or the earth, she was currently like a completely different person.

Meeting Lei Yu again, Cui Ying Ying had a new plan. In her heart, she had never given up on the idea of being together with Lei Yu. Perhaps two years ago, she fell in love with Lei Yu for naive and ignorant reasons, but this ignorant fascination with him until now had not diminished one bit, one could say it was even more intense. But deep inside her heart, she was holding onto the remark Lei Yu made that day before leaving. Cui Ying Ying will not become too persistent because that could lead the relationship between the two them into an uncomfortable territory.

Lei Yu returned home and entered another section of the house, the training area.

“My specialty is in speed; inaction to counter an opponent’s action; at the precise moment deliver an instant fatal blow to the opponent and cause a short-term paralysis on them. But only relying on this to beat Cai Zhong, I’m not expecting it to be easy or enough.” Inside Lei Yu’s heart, Cai Zhong was his rival. Although three years ago his battle with this rival was a draw, there’s no guarantee that some fortuitous event may have happened. It’s possible that his cultivation had improved at a pace much faster than his own, but Lei Yu could not give up.

His feet were continuously shifting around, allowing his body to become more nimble and flexible. Inside his mind, he was constantly

thinking about how he could take advantage of his main strengths when it was time to face an opponent in battle.

Inaction in order to counter an action was indeed a relatively good strategy. Catching an opponent off-guard with a surprise attack, in the face of weaker or evenly matched opponents, the effects were not bad. But if your opponent was really strong or much stronger than yourself, then this strategy would not cut it. There's a possibility that you could not react fast enough and by the time you did, you would be a flattened already.

It's fortunate for Lei Yu to have experienced the [Body Refining] stage, because his own body had

developed to the point where his melee ability was regarded quite high. The [Integration] stage had these abnormal characteristics so Lei Yu was carefully pondering, how could he combine these strengths together in order to produce an extraordinary effect?

Meanwhile in Lei Yu's heart, he had always been thinking about his mother's enemies and the person that murdered his grandfather. Nuo Yi Long and his grandfather both said that he was still too weak and insignificant to his enemies, so these statements made Lei Yu want to become stronger more and more. Sometimes hatred can blind a person, blocking common sense, and making a person violate human decency. But it could also become a

driving force, and this force could drive a person to towards a road of success. Obviously Lei Yu was a person of the latter, and at least he did not ever lose his cool headed reasoning.

In another part of the city, within a huge villa.

“Cai Zhong, you really did not let me down.” A person clothed in black with a thin stature said this to Cai Zhong with a smile.

“Thank you for the praise, Sect Leader!” Cai Zhong stood in the main hall of the villa, bowing respectfully.

“Very good, since you have reached the Fourth Stage of the Demonic

Realm, I have a treasure as a gift for you.” After saying that, the person in black clothing waved one hand slightly shaking it, a black light flashed briefly, then immediately, a small black knife appeared in his hand.

“Wow! Thank you Sect Leader!” Cai Zhong hurriedly bowed in appreciation.

“You must remember, this small knife is named Blood Edge, and it contains a powerful evil force. It will accompany you while you grow stronger so that it may gradually bond with you. If you are able to care for it with all your heart, then it’s possible that you and the short sword will be able to become as one. However, it is necessary to feed



it with blood in order for it to show its true abilities, do you remember everything I've said?

“Cai Zhong has remembered everything in his heart, thank you Sect Leader for the reward!” Cai Zhong's eyes brightened up while staring at the lustrous black colored Blood Edge in his hands. “Sect Leader, in a short period of time will be my duel with Lei Yu, have you decided yet?” Asked Cai Zhong as he put away Blood Edge.

“Ah, that's right; I've already arranged it, notifying the other two major forces of this match. I believe on the day of the match, there'll be unexpected results. As long as you can defeat or even kill this brat called Lei Yu, our Ming Sect's

reputation in the Tenglong country will no doubt rise to a whole new level!”

“Your subordinate understands!”

After hearing the instructions from the Sect Leader of Ming Sect, a room was arranged for Cai Zhong within the villa.

Holding Blood Edge, Cai Zhong slowly closed his eyes, concentrating on Blood Edge in his hands. Suddenly, a fearsome force of resentment flowed out from Blood Edge, flooding the entire room. And this force began invading into Cai Zhong’s body bit by bit, and because of this, his personality underwent a complete change. A torrential force of

resentment began scouring throughout every corner of Cai Zhong's body.

From the beginning of Blood Edge's invasion, Cai Zhong felt a wave of fearsome killing intent, showing how much blood this tiny weapon had encountered in its life.

A short while later, Cai Zhong threw up a mouthful of blood and clutched onto his chest hard. And the Blood Edge in his hand miraculously disappeared. The next moment, Cai Zhong opened his eyes, a look of shock on his face. "I never expected this tiny Blood Edge actually contained such a powerful force. In just a few short hours, my strength had actually increased so much! Already attaining the late-

stage of the Fourth Stage Demonic Realm.”

The two of them were both training hard in preparation of the match. While in another area, inside the main hall of the Lei family household.

“There was actually such an event!” A hot energy wavered above Lei Yun Tian’s hand, burning a red invitation in his hands into ashes.

“Master (of the family), I would never have thought little Yu would represent Ming Sect in dueling against the Ming Sect’s main hall leader. This... this was really unpredictable. However, we can see that little Yu has indeed been considered someone of importance

within Ming Sect, but unfortunately... \*sigh\*” The Elder helplessly said this on the side.

“Whatever we say now is too late, but I, Lei Yun Tian will not give up, even though he doesn’t want to return to our family, if we have to, we will forcefully tie him up and take him back!”

“Once the duel starts, we will figure it out and play it by ear right? If we make a move too early, the variables would be too great!”

“What you’ve said is correct, since we’ve missed the chance that day, you cannot mess up a second time. In these short few years, little Yu had actually become so valued by Martial Sect; therefore his genius

talent must have been revealed. Our Lei family's root and lifeline must not be stolen by others for profit!"

Within the forest of a mountain lies a huge mountain villa. Inside the mountain villa, the construction of the building was mostly made up of wood or bamboo, looking like an image you would see in a beautiful painting. The antique ambience was clearly felt throughout every part of the villa. On top of the mountain villa's main gates, large eye-catching characters revealed those inside each had a special identity, "Celestial Court."

"Elder, the Court Master is currently not here, are we going to attend their dueling match?" An old man with a head full of white hair

wore a long white robe politely asked a middle-aged man sitting on top of a high platform, who gave of an artistic feeling of an immortal.

“We’re attending, why would we not attend? We will take a good look at their dogfight, maybe some unexpected surprises may happen” laughed the middle-aged man.

“Yes, this disciple understands” nodded the old man. This seemingly middle-aged person regarded as an elder did not appear more than 40 something years old. But due to him cultivating mystical and immortal-like methods, it made his face look younger than he really was. It’s no wonder that this old man with a head full of white hair would actually claim to be his disciple.

One and a half months went by. But it was actually a month ago that a stadium was taken over. After a whole month of arrangement and preparations, the original huge stadium had completely changed its appearance.

Because it was currently in the hot weather period, several pavilions were setup at the four corners of the stadium seating area. It appears that those pavilions were set up in preparation for the important people from the four major forces of the country.

A 400 meter large sports field becoming the stage of a match would make people feel a bit shocked. In a typical martial arts competition, the largest stage would



only be a distance of fifteen steps from one side to the next. Such a large stage was indeed difficult for people to understand. But for cultivators, they clearly knew in their heart that for some practitioners, merely activating or using their powers would create turmoil of ten plus meters. So in their eyes, such a large stage was a normal thing.

For this current match, ordinary people were not qualified to attend. Only the members of the four major forces would be allowed to enter. Even the few people at the doors acting as security were the ranks of a Second Order Warrior. From this, one could see how much emphasis they regarded this important match to be.

# Chapter 40: The Four Major Forces

The stadium was not as lively as one would think. Those that were attending apart from the two main contestants were the pivotal members of the four major forces of Tenglong country. If anyone of those four major forces were to merely stomp their feet, half the country of Tenglong would feel the tremors from their might.

The four major forces were all seated at the four corners of the stage; this was to avoid any unnecessary verbal disputes that may arise.

“Master, looks like Ming Sect really values this duel.” The Lei family’s elder said this while stroking his beard.

“That’s right, I’m just not sure if little Yu can win this duel. One need to know that his opponent is a leader of the main hall, his strength would at least be on the rank of a Fourth Order. No matter how talented little Yu is, it’s impossible for him to achieve the rank of the Fourth Order at his age” said Lei Yun Tian with concern.

“Master, in case of a last resort, should we make a move? Maybe when little Yu is in a pinch, that will help change his mind.”

“We’ll see what happens when the

times comes.” Lei Yun Tian looked all around at the rest of the major forces entering the stadium. Amongst them included the representative of Celestial Court who was known as Elder Qing Feng, and followed behind him was his ten plus Celestial Court disciples.

At another entrance, Martial Sect's Shangguan Xi Hong and several members of the ancient martial families were seen; this also included Nuo Yi Long and the rest. Ai Er and Nuo Hu were following behind the crowd of Martial Sect members, yet their eyes were scanning the crowd looking for Lei Yu's whereabouts. Ever since their last meeting about a month and a bit ago, they have not even caught a glimpse of Lei Yu's shadow all this

time. Even finding no one at home when they went to his house, this made these two people closest to him very anxious. And this Xiao Fei also followed behind the crowd, his eyes never leaving the sight of Ai Er.

Near the easternmost entrance, a group of people with dark auras all dressed in black entered. Looking at them, the number of people should be in the one hundred plus range. All of these people respectfully followed behind a middle-aged man that did not look too strong, maybe even a bit frail looking. From the middle-aged man's deep set of eyes, one could judge that he was not of simple status. The look on his eyes gave people the feeling of an aura of death, as if everything he saw

were just corpses in his eyes. Following behind this middle-aged man was one of the main stars of today's match, Cai Zhong. This entire month and a bit, Cai Zhong was concentrating on bonding with Blood Edge. Although he hasn't grasped too much of the true essence of Blood Edge, but he at least was able to freely call it forth or store it away, and his strength had reached the late-stage of the Fourth Demonic Realm.

“The strength of Cai Zhong is definitely not weak; I predict little Yu is unlikely to win this duel.” Lei Yun Tian softly said.

Within the area where Ming Sect's forces were gathered.

“Cai Zhong, what do you think of your chances in winning this match?” Asked the thin and frail middle-aged man calmly sitting in the pavilion.

“Responding to the Sect Leader, 120% chance for sure!” Replied Cai Zhong confidently.

“Good, very good.”

Currently at the stadium, those that needed to arrive had already arrived. According to the time on the invitation, it was only half an hour before the match begins, but there was still one person that had not arrived on scene, Lei Yu.

Every second and minute past by, Lei Yu’s figure was still nowhere to

be seen. Cai Zhong was already impatient, walking to the middle of the stage quietly waiting.

“What is going on with little Yu? How come he still isn’t here?” Nuo Hu anxiously said this and kept looking all over for him.

“Yeah, brother Yu is usually the most punctual, how come he still hasn’t arrived yet?” Whispered Ai Er on the side.

Xiao Fei walked near those two, “I think he’s probably afraid and doesn’t dare to come to this fight?”

“Shut up! Brother Yu would never be afraid! He will definitely come.” Rebutted Ai Er with her pouted cheeks, and angrily staring at the



annoying Xiao Fei.

“Really? So why hasn’t he shown up yet? Is that still not considered afraid? If he was scared, he should’ve told us earlier so that the rest of us wouldn’t have to waste our time waiting here.”

“Enough! You guys keep quiet!” Shangguan Xi Hong’s hearing was exceptionally sharp so he naturally heard them talking.

They immediately shut their mouths, quietly waiting.

But as time progressed, the people’s hearts were all over the place, why has Lei Yu still not shown up on scene? The time and place of this match had already been notified in

detail to him, and it was determined that Lei Yu knew about it, yet why is there still no signs of him?

Probably the most anxious person was undoubtedly Shangguan Xi Hong. Hearing about Lei Yu and Cai Zhong agreeing to fight had already made him very angry. If it were one of his Shangguan family members accepting the challenge, he could accept because he puts the most trust in his own family members. But since it was someone that the Lei family had abandoned as useless trash becoming the person to accept the challenge, it was hard to not feel depressed about. But things had already happened, so even if he was filled with worry, he could only patiently wait.

The few dozens of Martial Sect members, Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng were also frowning. Everyone was anxiously looking back and forth and all around, but did not see the person they wanted to see emerge. Some of the Dragon Team members that had a good relationship with Lei Yu were also quite anxious. Others did not believe Lei Yu could beat Cai Zhong but they did. In order to fight the instructor of Dragon Team to a standstill without a winner or loser was already an unimaginable thing to them. Perhaps there was something hindering Lei Yu so that he could not arrive at the stadium.

“Master, do you think little Yu was actually afraid, that’s why he still hasn’t arrived?” The time before the

duel was only a mere ten minutes away, the Lei family's elder also felt some anxiety.

"I don't think so, since he was a child, little Yu was quite stubborn, if he promised something, then he will certainly fulfill it. Maybe there's something delaying him, let's continue waiting patiently" said Lei Yun Tian pretending to be calm.

Cai Zhong was standing in the center of the stadium with his hands behind his back, his eyes were slightly closed. He believes Lei Yu would not go back on his words today, moreover, riding on the lines of this match weren't just exchanging of pointers but the reputation of Ming Sect and Martial

Sect. If Lei Yu did not come, it would be certain that Martial Sect would be discredited and their face wiped all over the floor, and they will definitely not forgive him. Therefore Cai Zhong was not worried, worrying was useless, and the only thing to do was to wait patiently.

“It seems that today, we are unable to see a good dogfight show. The representative of Martial Sect was actually a coward, too afraid to fight” sneered Celestial Court’s Elder Qing Feng as he observed the anxiety and anger from the spectators.

Although Celestial Court brought the least amount of people, yet every member of Celestial Court

here had extraordinary strength. If one was to show off strength with numbers, then Martial Sect was #1, the soldiers they had weren't just the two Dragon Group and Eagle Group. But if one wanted to count the number of truly strong people, Celestial Court was undoubtedly the most powerful. Not only was Elder Qing Feng whom had already reached the realm of a Sixth Grade Celestial, the Court Leader of Celestial Court was at the late-stage of being a Sixth Grade Celestial. Between the four major forces, only Celestial Court had two super-strong people in the Sixth rank of martial cultivation. This also happens to make up for the small number of Celestial Court members.

At this point, the time for the match had come, but Lei Yu had still not appeared. The thin middle-aged man shouted out in a voice that everyone in the stadium could hear towards where Shangguan Xi Hong was located: “Does Martial Sect not have the guts to duel with us Ming Sect? Simply a turtle-like coward!”

“Shut up!” Shangguan Xi Hong’s anger was at its limit. With the presence of all four major forces here and this guy wasn’t giving Martial Sect any face. One should know, between the four major forces, face was the most important thing they valued. “If this kid dares to not show up for this fight, I will cut him up into 10,000 pieces!”

“You dare?” Lei Yun Tian’s words suddenly shocked the entire audience. The Lei family’s strength was the most mysterious. Every member of the Lei family cultivated extremely special methods, and very few were shown the public, but Lei Yun Tian’s strength was known to the people of the Fifth rank and up.



# Chapter 41:

## Representing Martial Sect

“Brother Lei, this issue is between Martial Sect and Ming Sect, it’s best that you don’t interfere” said Shangguan Xi Hong as he looked towards the distant Lei Yun Tian.

As these super-strong people of Tenglong country conversed, simply no one would dare to interrupt. Additionally, this dialogue they were having was ear deafening so it was impossible for someone to do this if they did not have a strong internal energy, how great was the surface area of the stadium? Only

they and a few would have such strength.

“Brother Shangguan, you seem to have forgotten that Lei Yu is part of our Lei family household, have you forgotten this point?” Asked Lei Yun Tian in a cold tone.

Once his words came out, the entire audience suddenly exploded. The previous quietness was broken by Lei Yun Tian, suddenly everyone started discussing, but it became quiet soon afterwards.

“Brother Lei, if I remember correctly, a few years ago, it was you that kicked Lei Yu out of the family, how is it now that you are saying he is a member of the Lei family? Such a joke” stated Shangguan Xi Hong

in a cold tone as well.

“Today is a match between Martial Sect and Ming Sect, have you guys made up your mind whether Lei Yu is representing the Lei family or Martial Sect? Our Ming Sect does not mind either, but at least give us a clear accountability?” Asked the leader of the Ming Sect.

Indeed, regardless of which major force they were going against did not matter one bit, the goal of this match was to show off their strength. The four major forces had always been at equilibrium in the country, it had never been broken. At least after today, this balance will no longer exist.

Lei Yun Tian gritted his teeth, “he is

representing our Lei family household!”

Once Lei Yun Tian said this, the Lei family members behind him all began to rile up. That day, Lei Yu was indeed identified as useless trash and kicked out of the house, but why would today, the master of the family would suddenly say the trash was part of their Lei family? Especially the elder’s grandson Lei Yun, within the Lei family he had always been the most outstanding and prominent person. Apart from the master of the family’s eldest son Lei Long, he would have the highest prestige within his generation of members.

But of course they did not know of the changes Lei Yu underwent,

which meant they were clueless on how Lei Yu was now the once in a millennium genius of the Lei family.

“No! I am representing Martial Sect!” Suddenly an extremely strong voice came from the direction of an entrance. The voice actually contained a strong magnetic power, which was a unique property in the power of lightning.

Everyone in the stadium turned their attention to the figure that had just entered. His upper body was bare, his lower body wearing a pair of long black pants, exposing his exquisitely toned muscles that did not give off a sense of explosive power. The perfect lines of his muscles showed off the power it

contained, his deep set of profound eyes showed his unfathomable thoughts, causing people to be uncertain at all times. If one was to mention the most special place, it would undoubtedly be the lightning brand on his right arm. That's right; the appearance of this person is the other star of this match, Lei Yu!

The words Lei Yu said while entering the stadium made Lei Yun Tian's heart falter a bit, but he did not say anything further, only turning around and sitting back down. The rest of the Lei family members then stared at Lei Yu with hatred in their eyes, this Lei Yu dared to not give any face to the master of the family?

"You're late!" Cai Zhong opened his

eyes wide and slightly smiled.

“No, I’m not late. From the time we agreed back then, we’re still early. The time we agreed on was eight o’clock in the evening, did you forget this?” Lei Yu went to the middle of the field, standing to the side of Cai Zhong.

“Did you not receive our Ming Sect’s notification of the time? Why are you late? Are you actually looking down on our Ming Sect?” Asked the Ming Sect’s leader at the newly arrived person.

“You are the leader of Ming Sect right?” Lei Yu asked politely. Lei Yu gently bowed to show his respect, after all, his identity at this time was not enough to go against this

super-strong individual so he naturally had to demonstrate humility with his attitude. Of course, this humble attitude allowed the Ming Sect's leader to be slightly less disgruntled.

“But you should not forget, three years ago on this day, Cai Zhong and I made an agreement of the date as individuals. Today Ming Sect changed the place; I only changed the time a little bit, is that not okay?”

Once he said these words, Ming Sect's leader once again got angry, “this is what our Ming Sect had decided, so that means you disagree with it?”

“But you shouldn't forget that I am



representing Martial Sect here in this fight. This duel originally was just between Cai Zhong and me, but since you intervened in this duel and changed it into a duel amongst the major forces, am I in the wrong by wanting to be better prepared for this event?" Lei Yu said in reasonable manner.

"You...!"

"Well spoken, this kid gave us Martial Sect back some face." Although Shangguan Xi Hong did not say this very loud, but one could hear joy from the tone of his voice. The first reason being the appearance of Lei Yu, the second being Lei Yu's words won back the face of Martial Sect to allow them to stand back up on this stadium.

The Martial Sect members on the side all nodded in a pleased atmosphere, it seems that Lei Yu's preparations have been very adequate.

Ai Er pursed her lips and coldly looked at Xiao Fei, "didn't you say he would not dare to come? Humph, brother Yu is stronger than you; would you dare to go up for this duel?"

Once Ai Er said this to him, Xiao Fei suddenly became angry, but he directed the source of his anger onto Lei Yu standing at the center of the field. Forcefully clenching his fists, he silently promised in his heart that he will one day surpass this love rival.

Amongst all the audience, those that were optimistic about Lei Yu's performance were only Nuo Yi Long and the dozen or so others. He personally witnessed the fight against Fan Hong Chang while the rest did not know, therefore it was natural to see Lei Yu as the weaker contender.

The Ming Sect's leader slightly furrowed his brows, thinking: strange, I cannot tell what strength this kid possesses? Is he more powerful than my cultivation? Impossible! He's just a nobody stinking brat, but why I can't I see through his strength?

"Enough spouting nonsense, are you guys going to fight or not?" Urged the Elder Qing Feng from the

corner of Celestial Court whom had kept silent throughout.

“Come on, let me experience how much you’ve grown in these three years!” Said Cai Zhong as he retreated a few steps back.

Lei Yu faintly smiled, “I too have been looking forward to this.”

No one knew where Lei Yu went or did this past month, but he was very clear, after just over a month’s time, he had already pushed his strength from the late-stage of [Energy Suppression] to the peak condition. So for this match, Lei Yu was filled with complete confidence.

They both instantly stood still in place. The atmosphere of the entire

stadium was filled with tension, everyone held their breath waiting, waiting for the exciting duel to open the curtains and begin.

They two seemed like that weren't stirring, but they were actually continuously circulating their own internal energy. Lei Yu spent a long time thinking and theorizing on how to combine the strengths of [Energy Suppression] stage into his melee expertise, to create a more perfect fusion of his strengths together.

The internal energy appeared to be standing still was actually absorbing and circulating to every part of his body. Compared to before, it was like heaven and earth. Whether it was his arms or legs, the

internal energy stayed still there as if it was dead. As long as something happens, Lei Yu would rely on his spiritual strength to skillfully control this internal energy to instantly explode forth, sending out an extremely strong attack.

# Chapter 42: Black Smoke

On the other side, the body of Cai Zhong began to emit a faint black smoke, as if his body was slowly burning. They both did not make any moves first since after three years, they did not know each other's strength and to what degree they had each achieved. If they hastily made a move, they might suffer for it. So, they just observed each other waiting for an opportunity.

The audience present naturally understood this logic, therefore no one opened their mouths to press the fight on, they just sat quietly

watching the two.

They've already confronted each other for over two minutes. A faint breeze blew by and the grass on the ground slightly quivered. Cai Zhong took this opportunity to make a move while Lei Yu as always, stood his ground. By using his own principles of fighting, he chose not to act in order to counter his opponent's move.

Cai Zhong's figure was very quick, each step he took on the ground, a gust of wind would pick up. Borrowing the wind's gust to his advantage, it seemed to speed Cai Zhong up more quickly causing a blur of his afterimage being seen.

Lei Yu did not dare to



underestimate this opponent of his that he fought to a draw three years ago. His internal energy started condensing while he deliberately abided his time. The moment the figure of Cai Zhong got close, they both struck out at the same time, every fist containing an explosive power. Lei Yu dodged around, punching whenever he saw an opportunity, but was cleverly blocked by Cai Zhong. Lei Yu had to recognize his opponent's ruthless attacks, each strike his opponent threw had implicit penetration ability. And this penetration ability had an aura of death contained in it, as if attacking Lei Yu's soul, making him unable to quell his trembling heart.

Cai Zhong was not better off, every

time he dodged or attacked, he was deliberately avoiding Lei Yu's fist. The feeling of paralysis made it somewhat difficult for him to control his own strength and accuracy. The two were currently fighting evenly, not knowing who had the advantage or disadvantage.

“Unbelievable! I've never expected little Yu could have reached such strength already!” Lei Yun Tian's eyes revealed a look of surprise. Included were the clan members behind him, each with their mouths agape. With an opponent like this amongst the younger generation, it would be undoubtedly the most powerful they've ever seen. Some of them even began to regret how they had treated Lei Yu in the past. But the fight had just begun, everything

was still an unknown.

Each time either of them attacked, their accuracy would be pinpoint. They also did not use their full strength because if they missed, then they would just be waiting for failure to arrive. From what we can see, they were still testing each other.

Their feet were shifting around non-stop, from east to west, from south to north, a rapid “pak pak” sound spread throughout the stadium. From this we can tell how fast their hand strikes were.

Cai Zhong cleverly shifted his hand from the bottom, bypassing Lei Yu’s blocking arm in a flash, aiming directly for Lei Yu’s chin from

underneath. The palm speed with fingers of sharp nails caused a sharp whistling sound. Lei Yu's reaction was considered quite fast, his body leaned back slightly so Cai Zhong clawed nothing but air. Their two bodies backed up a step before charging at each other once again, the collision of momentum instantly started up again.

As Cai Zhong drew close to Lei Yu again, he wanted to rely on his own forces of darkness to penetrate through and hit the chest area, but his flaw was revealed. Cai Zhong's abdomen area was unguarded which was perceived by Lei Yu. One hand rose to block a series of violent attacks, his right leg was raised up without detection, his knee turned to the side, and then a

side-kick directly struck Cai Zhong in the abdominal area. With no time to block, an extremely strong impact combined with waves of paralysis suddenly blew his body outwards.

Cai Zhong tried to stabilize his body but a wave of pain accompanied by sporadic paralysis made his body unstable, a mouthful of blood burst forth. And at this time, Cai Zhong's gaze at Lei Yu became more vicious.

The audiences in the stadium were all up in a commotion, especially from the Lei family's area. Wasn't this the person that was originally considered useless trash? From the present situation, Cai Zhong's strength was definitely at the late-

stage of the Fourth Order rank, while Lei Yu's strength was still undetermined. Being able to rival his strength and even hurt him meant that this Lei Yu's strength was definitely not weak.

"I never thought little Yu would be able to reach the strength of a Fourth Order rank at his age!" Lei Yun Tian cried out in excitement while jumping out of his seat in shock.

After slightly gasping for air, Lei Yu slowly restored his calm. Cai Zhong wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth and said: "You've improved a lot, looks like I have to become more serious in order to deal with you!"

Lei Yu did not do answer. Once Cai Zhong ended his words, a thick black smoke started to surround his body, his entire body was slowly wrapped up in this black smoke. Lei Yu stayed still while cautiously observing this black smoke.

Within the black smoke, Cai Zhong condensed his demonic power, his eyes suddenly turned blood-red, and a small black knife inexplicably appeared in his hand. But this entire scene was not seen by Lei Yu due to the thick black smoke, but those up in the spectator seats such as the Ming Sect's leader and Zhao Han clearly saw it, Cai Zhong was completely filled with rage.

Suddenly, Cai Zhong's figure with the black smoke disappeared, and

the next instant appeared behind Lei Yu. All this is happened in a blink of an eye, no one knew exactly how he accomplished it.

No matter how fast Lei Yu's reaction speed was, he could not foresee this situation happening. A sudden breath of chilled yin energy was felt on his back. Lei Yu wanted to turn around but it was too late, a cold light flashed by from top to bottom.

“Aghh!”

“Brother Yu!”

“Little Yu!”

The audience spectating suddenly bustled in a commotion; Nuo Yi Long and the rest, including Lei Yun



Tian were anxiously looking at Lei Yu.

Cai Zhong's attack would not be that simple, after slashing with his knife he raised his hand, and then threw a palm strike at Lei Yu's back. "Agh!" Lei Yu cried out in pain once, his body was blown away a short distance, tumbling onto the grassy field.

First it was the deep wound on his back, followed by a palm strike with penetrating power; Lei Yu suddenly felt that he was unable to continue controlling his own power. The wound on the right side of his shoulder blade emitted a terrible pain. Lei Yu then coughed out a mouthful of blood, his body constantly shaking.

The short knife stained with blood within Cai Zhong's hand appeared to be in a frenzy, its surface showed a touch of red light followed by the disappearance of the layer of blood belonging to Lei Yu.

“Little Yu!” Nuo Hu forcefully clenched his fist, the situation in front him showed that Lei Yu had been seriously injured. If allowed to continue, then he would most likely lose his life, he did not expect Cai Zhong to be this sinister and vicious.

But this was an impossible situation since before the duel; no one said that weapons weren't allowed. Besides, the participants in this match knew that life or death had been decreed by fate; this match

was no different from a life or death match.

The anxious look on Ai Er's face was obscured by her hand; she did not dare to continue looking. As to the Xiao Fei on the side, his mouth gently turned upwards in a smile, his eyes filled with satisfaction as if he vented out his frustration.

Large drops of perspiration covered Lei Yu's forehead; it was getting harder and harder for him to breath. Lei Yu clenched his teeth, keeping a close eye on the Cai Zhong in front of him. Was this the same rival as before? Why had he become so vicious? The previous time they fought could be considered quite vicious, but they were now somehow putting their

lives on the line. And within Cai Zhong's blood-red eyes, Lei Yu could not see any signs of humanity, there was only a frightening thirst for blood.

“Accept your death!” Cai Zhong stuck out his tongue and licked the blood on the corner of his mouth. He got closer to Lei Yu one step at a time, Blood Edge in his hand exuding a flash of chilled light. This aura of death approached Lei Yu one step at a time.

# Chapter 43:

## Hanging By A Thread

“Since you are no longer the Cai Zhong I know, then I, Lei Yu will have to kill!” At the edge of death, Lei Yu naturally could not care about anything else; saving himself was the most important thing.

During the previous clashes, he did not consume too much internal energy, only some faint amount of output. Although he was seriously injured, Lei Yu was still able to dish out some fatal attacks.

Lei Yu and Cai Zhong were

considered evenly matched so an explosive powerful attack should seriously injure Cai Zhong as well. Thinking up to this point, while Lei Yu was under an extreme crisis, he focused all his internal energy into his right arm causing the lightning brand on his right arm to faintly shimmer.

Naturally, most people were unable to see what Lei Yu was doing, including Cai Zhong, there's no way he could detect it. Most of the spectators in the stadium were frantic for Lei Yu whose life was hanging by a thread. Even though Lei Yun Tian wanted to make a move to rescue him, it was impossible. Ming Sect's leader was worried of such a situation happening, so from beginning to

end, his stares did not leave either Shangguan Xi Hong or Lei Yun Tian.

As Cai Zhong neared, his aura of death became richer and thicker. Lei Yu could not help moving his body backwards. Maybe it was because of this that made Cai Zhong feel that his opponent was in a fragile state, so it further aroused the bloodthirstiness in his mind.

As his foot hit the ground, he explosively dashed forward. Cai Zhong was attempting to finish Lei Yu off with this last move because he had already lost control of his true nature.

“Fu fu” sound of the wind made the audience hold their breath. This

blow could be the one that takes Lei Yu's life away. Ai Er immediately fainted and Xiao Fei wanted to support her, but was immediately pushed away by Nuo Hu so that Ai Er fell into the arms of her brother.

Once Cai Zhong was extremely close to Lei Yu, Lei Yu clenched his teeth and was prepared to throw out a punch, a punch that contained his entire strength. Lei Yu did not think Cai Zhong was capable of such a move back then, able to instantly disappear within the black smoke and appear behind him, or else he would not have suffered such a serious injury. The situation before him was at a critical juncture, suddenly, the yellow energy inside Lei Yu's brain fluctuated, pulling back Lei Yu's



desire to fight to the death,  
recovering his sense of being cool  
and logical.

Cai Zhong's black demonic internal  
energy surfaced again, the small  
knife in his hand started rotating  
like a drill in a high speed, he then  
suddenly advanced forward  
followed by continuous attacks.

“Whoosh!”

“Whoosh!”

Two vibration sounds were heard.

Lei Yu still hadn't made a move yet  
since he was still waiting for the  
best opportunity. Failure was not an  
option during the most crucial  
moment.

Cai Zhong could not help having a cold sneer appear on his face, his next move was to use Blood Edge's aura of death to directly kill Lei Yu. But if he was able to so easily get rid of Lei Yu, then this fight would be too simple. But the Cai Zhong who had lost his true nature would not mind it being so simple. Cai Zhong's mind invoked a thought; Blood Edge then disappeared from his left-hand and appeared in his right-hand. Like lightning, Cai Zhong stabbed Blood Edge directly where Lei Yu's heart was, its speed achieving extreme speeds. "CLANG ~~~" sound of metals colliding was heard. Cai Zhong only felt his arm go numb and then he was blown backwards. Lei Yu clenched his teeth, fighting off the pain on his back; he then slammed the ground

and spun his whole body back to a standing position. He wiped off the blood on the corner of his mouth while coldly staring at Cai Zhong. Looking closely, under unknown circumstances, Lei Yu appeared to be holding a white knife object in his hand, seemingly very sharp. In reality it was actually a spike, that's right; this was the spike that he removed from the eye socket of the Ink Beast he defeated. The clash they had just now seemed slow, but it was actually as fast as lightning. From the start to finish, those slightly weaker cultivators in the audience would have only seen a brief flash, and the sudden collision was already over.

The strength that Lei Yu had stored did not explode forth because he

suddenly remembered his special weapon. Compared to Blood Edge, the spike was probably a grade or more inferior, but when faced with such a critical moment and unable to throw out the punch, Lei Yu could only take out the spike to withstand the attack. At this time, the spike in his hand showed a series of cracks, Blood Edge's reputation was indeed justified.

The spectators in the stadium all had their mouths agape, wasn't Lei Yu supposed to be seriously injured? Why was he still able to resist? The rest of the people could not understand this except for Lei Yu. Although the wounds on his back looked terrible, it was still just a flesh wound. His skeletal bone structure has metallic properties in

them, so naturally his bones were not damaged. And through all his training efforts, his skin and muscles have built up some resistance. Since Cai Zhong's previous attack came too suddenly which led him to receive a serious injury, Lei Yu who was originally distraught with his mind in chaos was stabilized by the yellow energy inside his brain, thus allowing him to react with the collision of weapons.

“Hmph, Cai Zhong, you’ve really surprised me, but... you are too cunning and vicious. Just then you caught me by surprise so I was not fully prepared, but if this is all the strength you have, then it’s still a bit too weak” sneered Lei Yu.

After he said those words, the audience started boiling up. This Lei Yu was clearly seriously injured, why would he still dare to say such a thing? Could it be that everything that had just happened was just Lei Yu testing his opponent? Was he using his injury as an ante for the test?

But inside Lei Yu's heart, a sensation of fear was left behind. This Cai Zhong in front of him had already lost his senses, and for a brief instance, his heart was able to feel the sense of death emanating from him. And after those two simultaneous attacks, if his disposition was not strong enough to resist, maybe now he would already be a corpse. Appearing as if he ignored Lei Yu's statement, the

black internal energy coming from Cai Zhong's body became more obvious, his entire body was completely shrouded in black which made Lei Yu surprised once again. "Ha ha ha..." a glint of carnage briefly flashed in Cai Zhong's eyes." Lei Yu, if you thought my powers were only at this level, then you are wrong, get ready for your funeral!"

Once again rushing forward, it appears that this time, the black internal energy on the surface enshrouding Cai Zhong had become a protective barrier capable of protecting against attacks. In addition, borrowing the trace connection between him and Blood Edge, this stab he was about to perform would easily make the living become the dead.

“Little Yu, watch out!” Cried out Nuo Yi Feng in her heart while she was wringing her hands. Nuo Yi Long on the side also showed expressions of worry all over his face.

This battle represented Martial Sect’s strength and reputation, so either winning or losing was no mere trivial matter. So Shangguan Xi Hong and some of the elders from the ancient martial clans were extremely nervous of the outcome.

Previously when Lei Yu suffered a serious injury, they thought that everything was over. They never expected a sudden turning point would appear; now everything would depend on this seemingly final clash.



Both of Cai Zhong's hands grasped onto Blood Edge. Blood Edge was currently similar to a black snake giving off a "hissing" sound that seem to penetrate Lei Yu's ear. An opportunity?!

Lei Yu could see an unprotected area of Cai Zhong. Cai Zhong was aiming for his chest and his head area was completely exposed. Lei Yu single handedly held onto the spike to block Blood Edge's attack, his right arm that had been long charged with his internal energy was getting ready, the moment Cai Zhong arrived in front of him...

"Clink!"

"Woosh!"

“Agh!” They both cried out at the same time. Only Blood Edge’s handle was seen sticking out of Lei Yu’s chest while the rest of the blade was stabbed inside.

# Chapter 44:

## Appearance Of Variables

Cai Zhong's body flew back in an inverted position, landing on the grass motionless about ten meters away from Lei Yu. At this time, Lei Yu's body was constantly wobbling side to side, his eyebrows were in a frown and his face filled with pain.

“Master, is this the time we make our move?” Asked the Lei family's elder in a whisper.

Lei Yun Tian nodded, Lei Yu's current injuries had become more serious, his chest and his back had

suffered a fatal wound, if it weren't treated immediately, they may not be able to save his life. Lei Yun Tian was about to make a move when a voice that reverberated through the sky came from the Ming Sect area.

“No one is allowed to intervene!” Staring intently, the speaker was clearly Ming Sect's leader. “Since they are both seriously injured, then we will see who is unable to continue fighting. Anyone that intervenes would mean this fight has become unfair!”

Sure enough, once that statement was made, the people that originally wanted to rush out such as Nuo Yi Long and Lei Yun Tian all hesitated.

The entire audiences were holding

their breath, waiting for any changes coming from the two in the center of the field. Lei Yu finally could not keep standing and fell down.

“Little Yu!” Nuo Hu could not tolerate anymore, laying Ai Er against Nuo Yi Feng before readying to rush out.

“Stop right there!” Shangguan Xi Hong coldly eyed Nuo Hu, “what do you think you’re doing?”

“Little Yu has been seriously injured, there’s no way he can stand up anymore! I have to go save him!” Replied Nuo Hu anxiously.

“Nonsense! Is this something you can intervene in? You better stay

here and keep quiet; you do not have permission to go!”

“But...”

“No buts. Commander Nuo, keep an eye on your son, or don’t blame me for being ruthless towards him!” Indeed, what Shangguan Xi Hong wanted was the word “fair.” He wanted to see what situation would evolve between those two at the center of the field. Lei Yu was only considered to have joined Dragon Group halfway. Although he may be considered a member of Martial Sect, but ultimately his roots were from the Lei family. So in the eyes of Shangguan Xi Hong, Lei Yu was not even worth a dime, he was nothing more than a pawn in this chess game.

Lei Yu's existence for the master of the Lei family's eldest son Lei Long was a great threat, but fortunately he was not present. But there were two people present who hated this useless trash that was kicked out of the family. They did not expect Lei Yu to change from trash to a treasure, becoming someone the master of the family valued.

One of them was Lei Tian. On that day of the exchanging pointers match, he suffered terribly. To this day, he still could not forget the pain he suffered, it could be said that deep in his heart, his hatred for Lei Yu was a bit more than the envy he had. The other person is exactly whom you are thinking of, that is Lei Yun. The day Lei Yu, who had been kicked out and was forced by

him to the cliff's edge, the master of the family and his grandfather the family elder scathingly denounced him for his actions. With his deep hatred and now jealousy as well, seeing how it was unknown if Lei Yu was dead or alive, them two in addition to Xiao Fei could be considered the most happy people out of the entire audience.

Time slowly passed by, the audience were worried for the two people lying down on the field. How are their current conditions? One minute, two minutes, three minutes... it's already been ten minutes now, yet the two people still had not regained their consciousness. The Ming Sect's leader began to lose patience, "I think this duel is going to become a



tie...”

“Wait a moment!” A wailing cry of resentment suddenly came from the center of the field; everyone was searching for the direction of where the sound was coming from.

“It’s Cai Zhong!”

“That’s right! Everyone look, he’s standing up!”

In an uproar, the entire audience went into a commotion. The sound of intense debates became more intense; the way they were speaking made it seem that they had forgotten that the leaders of each of the four major forces were still present.

“Little Yu, he...” Nuo Hu tightened

his fists; his eyes were already a bit watery. Looking at Lei Yu lying on the grass still with a knife stuck in his chest, making Nuo Hu feel like his heart was being stabbed with needles, as if that sharp knife was impaled into his own chest.

Fortunately Ai Er had already fainted back then; otherwise she would have ignored the words of Shangguan Xi Hong and rushed onto the field. Even though Nuo Hu wanted to do that exact thing, but in reality he couldn't since he was a member of Dragon Group, his body was not really his own. Even if it was his own father Nuo Yi Long lying on the field, he still could not rush out.

Shangguan Xi Hong heavily sighed, "looks like we lost?"

Cai Zhong crawled up from the ground, his body swaying side to side. Step by step, faltering towards Lei Yu, his goal was to remove Blood Edge that was sticking out of Lei Yu's chest. In his eyes, Lei Yu was already a cold corpse.

Inside Cai Zhong's mind, he was no longer possessed by Blood Edge's demonic energy; he was just going to retrieve this masterpiece that is Blood Edge since he could not give it up.

Step by step, Cai Zhong was getting closer to Lei Yu. The entire audience's hearts were beating to the same rhythm as Cai Zhong's footsteps. If that knife was pulled out and there weren't any reaction from Lei Yu, then that would mean

he had really died. Now the majority of the people present did wish to see this scene happen. But only the master of the Lei family, the Elder of the Lei family, and Martial Sect members; they all hoped to see Lei Yu stand up again.

Cai Zhong was getting closer, ten meters, nine meters..., three meters..., one meter, and finally with great effort, he was next to Lei Yu. He raised his hand and stretched towards the handle of Blood Edge. There was nothing Lei Yun Tian could do, his hands constantly rubbing each other out of anxiety, and even his forehead was covered with sweat. Lei Yu, you better be okay! The Lei family's lifeline and future rests in your hands, you have to be fine!

When Cai Zhong's hand grasped onto Blood Edge, Nuo Hu finally could not hold it anymore as tears streamed down his face. The two siblings Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng also sighed while shaking their heads. Shangguan Xi Hong was just restless, he had already stood up from his chair, it seems liked the outcome has already emerged; there was no hope for Lei Yu to have survived this.

At this time, the expressionless Cai Zhong suddenly opened his eyes wide. He could hardly believe what he saw, Lei Yu at this time was staring at him, and it was Lei Yu's green colored eyes that completely shocked him. And at this exact time when Cai Zhong grasped the handle of the knife, a powerful

suction force made his body startled. His body's only little bit of internal energy left was then absorbed in a hungry manner by Lei Yu's body.

“You guys look! Lei Yu's not dead!”

“Wow!”

“Heavens, it's for real! He actually survived!” The audience once again went into an unprecedented excited manner. In the area of the Lei family, both Lei Yun Tian and the Elder's eyes were opened wide. With their shocking eyesight ability, they were naturally able to see Lei Yu with his eyes open.

“I'm not seeing things, right? This kiddo actually did not die?”

Shangguan Xi Hong's mouth was slightly curved like he was smiling but not really; he was staring at the center field where Cai Zhong's body was continuously trembling.

And on the side of the Celestial Court spectators, they looked like they were watching something strange. Elder Qing Feng stood up laughing, "I never thought this would be worth seeing, I thought this was over already. Ah, not bad, not bad, today was not in vain. Even though it was just a duel between two little insignificant kiddos, but it was still quite enjoyable."

"F\*ck!" Zhao Han cursed where the Ming Sect members were seated, "his life is like a cockroach, he just won't die."

“I’m afraid this was the unknown variable.” The Ming Sect’s leader narrowed his eyes to a glint; his heart was already in a slump. If it was only because of Lei Yu opening his eyes, then there would be nothing special about it. The key was that he felt the changes to Cai Zhong. Being also a demonic cultivator, he could clearly feel the little bit of demonic energy left inside Cai Zhong was gradually disappearing.



# Chapter 45:

## Becoming Unconscious

“Little Yu, stand up! Stand up!” Nuo Hu was constantly shouting in his heart, that was what he wanted to see the most. Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Long were suddenly filled with spirit once again.

“Plop!”

“Agh!”

Lei Yu’s body was suddenly shaking on the ground, making Cai Zhong back away in shock. This was due to Cai Zhong grasping onto his most

precious treasure reluctant to let go, he then forcefully pulled out Blood Edge from Lei Yu's chest. Lei Yu sprayed out a mouthful of blood, but the next moment, the two were actually both standing and staring intently at each other.

"This little Yu... he is really beyond my expectations!" Lei Yun Tian could not help saying, and the Elder on the side nodded his head in agreement.

Looking intently, those few powerful people at the rank of Fifth Order or above realized even though Lei Yu had stood up once again, his face was expressionless, as if he was a moving corpse standing still there. But the most unusual thing was his eyes; his

pupils had already become the color green, as if he had already turned into a ghost. And there on is his right arm; his original lightning brand had become green as well, becoming even more eye-catching than before.

On the other side, Cai Zhong who had what's left of his demonic energy absorbed by Lei Yu was barely able to stand. Yet Blood Edge in his hand, who had just sucked up Lei Yu's blood started boiling up again, a red wavy halo arose on its surface. This strong bloodthirsty aura was becoming one with Cai Zhong, entering his body like crazy allowing Cai Zhong to feel that he was filled with explosive power once again.

“You are very strong, but you still cannot escape the fate of death!”  
Said Cai Zhong coldly, his eyes becoming red again and glowing a red light.

But Lei Yu appeared like he did not hear what was said to him, still using his horrible lifeless eyes staring at Cai Zhong in front of him.

Cai Zhong whom had already been surrounded in an aura of killing intent could not stop his heart from feeling fear when looking at Lei Yu's lifeless eyes. Even though his persona that wasn't under his own control and was filled with bloodthirstiness could not stop trembling.

“I will not let you stand up again, accept your death!” Cai Zhong could not bear with this horrible gaze, both hands clasp onto Blood Edge, an unprecedented force exploded outwards from the center of the field. Cai Zhong’s black energy and the red light emitting from Blood Edge in his hands combined together as one. This resulted in a black and red shimmering aura of death. The whistling sound brought out some sharp wailing cries, and the wailing cry was like what someone would scream out before dying. All of this rushed towards the motionless Lei Yu.

Lei Yu remained expressionless, but his eyes of green suddenly flashed brightly. He simply raised his hand

and a “bang” sound of metals colliding was heard. This made everyone in the audience wonder – they did not see any weapons in Lei Yu’s hand, why would there be such a sound?

\*Crack!\* Suddenly, cracks on Blood Edge held by Cai Zhong started appearing. Gradually, more and more cracks began to cover the blade of Blood Edge. \*Ka Cha\* Blood Edge become little bits of blade fragments falling onto the ground while Lei Yu’s fist was still raised in the air, not showing the slightest trace of being wounded by the knife.

“Strong! How did this happen?”

“That’s right! After being cut by the

sharp knife and stabbed in the chest, how did his punch cause the sharp knife to end up becoming pieces of shattered debris?" The entire audience suddenly cried out in surprise. The eyes of everyone looking at Lei Yu looked like they were staring at a monster.

"Little Yu, he..." Nuo Yi Long's voice was trembling, "he was actually this strong?"

In the area of the Lei family: "Is this really little Yu? How could he emit such a terrible aura of death? Even I cannot guarantee that I could take him on at his current state if I was his opponent!" Lei Yun Tian eyes were filled with shock. The shock that Lei Yu has given him could not be describable in words. The clan

members behind him all had their mouths open agape, not one of them dared to look down on this powerhouse who was once considered useless trash.

“My Blood Edge! My Blood Edge!” Muttered Cai Zhong continuously. It seems like he did not care about what was going on with Lei Yu, his eyes only saw the weapon that supported him and gave him his current strength.

Just when everyone thought the outcome of this battle was very clear, a thick black smoke once again came from Cai Zhong's body. The black smoke became more and more thick, enshrouding both Lei Yu and Cai Zhong within it. Anyone lower than the Fifth Order rank had



absolutely no idea what was going on inside the black smoke. Even Nuo Yi Long and the other Fifth Order rank or stronger powerhouses could only rely on their senses to detect what was going on inside the smoke.

Within the smoke, Cai Zhong's blood-red eyes looked at Lei Yu with complete hatred. He was staring at Lei Yu like he was the killer of his entire family. Losing Blood Edge, Cai Zhong felt like he lost something he could rely on, thus vowing to render Lei Yu in front of him into four pieces.

With one hand imitating a claw, sharp nails protruded with a flash of white light. Within the thick smoke, people on the outside could

not see anything at all. Only those few super-strong individuals knew exactly what was happening inside.

Cai Zhong was aiming for Lei Yu's head, although this claw attack would not take a person's life immediately, but it should be enough to take out Lei Yu's fighting ability.

\*Crack\*

This strange sound rose up into the air, echoing throughout the stadium, chilling the hearts of the audience. "This... this is the sound of bones breaking!" It was unknown where these words came from but then, everyone held their breath. The thick black smoke in the center of the field began to dissipate,

following the gentle breeze, the two shadowy figures of the contestants once again revealed themselves in front of everyone.

Both of Cai Zhong's hands were down on the side of his body – one of his hand was constantly dripping blood onto the ground while the other hand was constantly trembling.

Lei Yu remained expressionless, as if everything happening here simply weren't related to him in the slightest bit. The green in his eyes continued to shimmer slightly, and his eyes continued staring at the Cai Zhong in front of him.

“I... I lost!” Cai Zhong weakly stepped backward a few steps, then

suddenly fell on his buttocks before ending up unconscious.

Lei Yu suddenly screamed into the sky.

“Aghh! Aghhh!” Both hands cradling his head, screaming as if his head was about to explode.

Cai Zhong who admitted defeat had determined this duel had come to an end. Lei Yun Tian, the Lei family Elder, Nuo Yi Long and the rest did not bother with anything anymore, rushing to the center field towards Lei Yu screaming up at the sky. They didn't know what was happening to Lei Yu's body.

The Ming Sect members seeing Cai Zhong had failed only coldly

snorted. Bringing more than a hundred people, they disregarded the unconscious Cai Zhong in the field and left in a hurry. As for Shangguan Xi Hong, he opened his mouth and started laughing out loud. The final outcome of this duel was Martial Sect winning, how could this not make him happy?

Since the show was already over, Celestial Court's Elder Qing Feng spoke in a voice that allowed everyone in the stadium to hear: "Congratulations to brother Shangguan, your Martial Sect won! Since the duel is now over, we Celestial Court will be taking our leave."

"Take care!"

“Take care!”

Symbolically, Shangguan Xi Hong also went onto the field; after all, Lei Yu was the one that earned Martial Sect lots of face today. Those elders from the ancient martial clans that had come with Shangguan Xi Hong today all looked at each other, not one of them believed Lei Yu could have actually won this duel.

Lei Yu was still screaming. Lei Yun Tian was the first to arrive at his side, his hand wanted to grab onto Lei Yu's arm, “aggh!” An unbearable sense of paralysis assaulted Lei Yun Tian forcing him back a few steps. And at this time, the surprise in his eyes became more evident.

“How could there be such a powerful force? Is this the true strength of little Yu?” Lei Yun Tian took in a deep breath, this was already beyond the scope of his imagination.

“Little Yu, how do you feel little Yu!” Nuo Hu wanted to grab onto him but Lei Yun Tian suddenly shouted “don’t touch him!”

# Chapter 46:

## Breaking Through Again

“Why?” Obviously, not too many people had been paying attention to the prior reaction by Lei Yun Tian; they were all focused on Lei Yu who was still screaming into the sky.

“The lightning power in his body is too strong, even I cannot tolerate it, and you definitely shouldn’t touch him!” Shouted Lei Yun Tian.

“Then... then what should we do?” Nuo Hu and others were anxious. Eyeing Lei Yu cradling his head and screaming in pain, those that truly



cared about him were all filled with anxiety.

As the situation become more urgent, a sudden “agghh” sound burst forth from Lei Yu. The layer of light green energy on the surface of his body suddenly disappeared. The green in his eyes also started fading, and even the lightning brand on his arm was restored to its previous color.

His head slumping forward, Lei Yu fell to the ground in front of everyone. Testing the waters, Nuo Hu extended his hand to touch – there was still a slight numbing feeling, but it was already at the level one could tolerate. They hurriedly rushed Lei Yu and Ai Er to a nearby large hospital. As for Cai

Zhong, it went against some people's conscience to leave him there so they brought him along as well.

If it were for ordinary people, any hospital encountering such badly injured patients would certainly contact the police for an investigation, but what status did these current people hold? They were members of Dragon Group and the Lei family household, the hospital staff did not dare to ask too many questions, they only had to focus on healing them.

Lei Yu's consciousness gradually returned to a state under his own control. Since his mind was still in a daze, he continued staying in the state of a deep sleep. However, it

was starting to get lively inside his body.

“What’s going on? What happened just now?” Lei Yu carefully monitored his internals to see what was going on. The intricate and complicated meridian paths were circulating a strong energy countercurrent, and this energy did not belong to him.

The green energy was going crazy right now, crashing all over the place. And every time this green energy collided into a meridian, the impact would cause a fracture.

“How could this be?” Lei Yu was suddenly anxious; didn’t this energy usually play the role of a repairing force? Why would it suddenly become so violent and start

wreaking havoc all over the place? Could it be that its previous actions were all an act?

No, Lei Yu's thoughts were quickly rejected. Although the unknown green energy was wreaking havoc all over, a soothing energy would arrive after the impacted areas, repairing the previously damaged meridians. And Lei Yu was able to clearly feel his chest and back had some green energy circulating in the area, where each and every single dead cell would at rapid speeds recover its vitality.

The undeniable thing was that Lei Yu's subconscious mind and spirit was very strong. This strength and his childhood experiences were closely connected; being abused and

ridiculed during his childhood years has made Lei Yu possess patience exceeding a normal person. With a tough and an unyielding personality, it allowed Lei Yu to forge a strong physical body along with a strong spiritual strength while persevering through his cultivation.

The violent green energy gradually subsided, and the work of repairing started up. Bit by bit the small fractures were repaired, every inch of damaged skin or cells including his meridians were silently and slowly healing. Lei Yu also reveled in this comfortable feeling and slowly entered into a state of falling asleep again.

Unknown how much time had

passed, a familiar voice was heard inside him, causing the asleep Lei Yu to awaken. But he did not actually wake up in reality, his eyes were still shut.

“I really can’t tolerate it anymore; I have to say a few words.”

“Ink beast? How could it be you? Didn’t you say that there’s no way for you to appear again?” Asked Lei Yu extremely puzzled.

“Right, there was no way I could have awoken again, but the force inside your body is just too strong, forcefully waking me up from my slumber.”

“A powerful force? Could you be speaking about this green energy?”

“Correct, it’s that force.” Hearing the Ink Beast’s tone, it appeared he was in a thrilled and excited state.

“What kind of power is it? Why would it appear inside my body? Would there be any harm?” Lei Yu had not forgotten the previous violent situation with the green energy; his heart could not help feeling a bit fearful.

“I do not know, but you kiddo are very lucky to have such a powerful force. It seems that my time of resurrection will be ahead of schedule! Ha ha ha...” The Ink Beast’s voice started fading off into a distance.

“Hey! Don’t go! Don’t go!” Shouted Lei Yu, but the Ink Beast had

already disappeared without a trace.

His brain was working hard trying to remember the previous fight. First it was the Spiritual Bead of Longevity that helped him in recovering his impulsiveness, right after that was absorption, and the object of absorption was naturally Cai Zhong. Lei Yu had also carefully inspected and did not find any excess energy left inside his body, which made him filled with many questions without answers. Since he was able to absorb, why wasn't he able to retain it for his own use?

He will temporarily not consider these things; the most important was the green energy. After it finished restoring a bit of his



energy, the green energy suddenly exploded forth. This strong force made Lei Yu blank out so that he did not know what happened next. He only knew that the instance the green energy exploded forth, he could not find a trace of his own power within his body while this force occupied it.

Inside his dantian area had some vibrations. Lei Yu hurriedly monitored inside, he was surprised to find that the energy inside his Sea of Energy had recovered a lot, and at this moment it was constantly churning around, compared to the [Energy Suppression] stage, there was a slight difference. To be in the [Energy Suppression] stage meant silence throughout his body, to be

motionless to face the ever changing. So why would it churn without stopping? Could it be...?!"

\*Ka cha\*

A loud noise was heard. Lei Yu only felt his mind go blank, then a lightning cut across the sky and shot down, its goal was the newly recovered energy inside the Sea of Energy acupuncture point. At the instant the lightning landed, his internal energy dispersed out, and the next moment, this lightning at a very high speed began to gather the dispersed internal energy, combining them together again. The purple internal energy was flowing about very slowly and Lei Yu was able to see that within this internal energy were specks of light

that constantly shimmered. According to the information set forth within the cultivating methods etched into his mind, Lei Yu was suddenly overjoyed, “isn’t this the phenomenon when breaking through the [Energy Suppression] stage reaching the [Discharge] stage?”

The ecstatic Lei Yu careful explored the changes within his dantian region; he saw strands of extremely strong energy constantly condensing together. The excitement inside Lei Yu’s heart was indescribable.

He could not believe what he was currently experiencing. This internal energy with layers upon layers of something similar to a net

of lightning, it actually contained an unimaginably huge explosive power. Lei Yu began to test it out by concentrating his will, trying to extract a trace of internal energy. And there it was, it was really his own power. The internal energy containing nets of lightning began to circulating according to his will, and the circulation speed was completely in the hands of Lei Yu. Once he was able to really feel the strong power of his new internal energy, Lei Yu swallowed hard. Comparing this to the [Energy Suppression] stage, there was no way they were even remotely near the same level. Lei Yu felt that the improvement in strength he gained could not be so simply described as it being doubled, if one was to say that while he was at the [Energy

Suppression] stage fighting against Cai Zhong, he was at a slight disadvantage. Yet now, Lei Yu could say for sure this time that simply raising his hand, Cai Zhong would immediately lose the ability to continue fighting.

“Oh yea! Isn’t the duel over? How were the results?” Lei Yu’s mind suddenly thought of this situation, immediately sitting up, scaring a young nurse that was changing the IV pouch, making her stagger and falling onto her butt.

“You’re awake? You scared me to death!” Said the embarrassed young nurse while straightening her clothes, patting her not quite full chest.

Lei Yu scratched his head, “was I unconscious?” As Lei Yu asked this, he felt his question was kind of silly. If he wasn’t unconscious, then why would he be sent to the hospital and not know what’s going on?

“That’s right; you’ve been unconscious for over twenty days.” The young nurse’s blush did not subside at all, her eyes were constantly checking out Lei Yu’s body.

Lei Yu gasped, “over twenty days? How come I’m the only one here? No one else stayed with me?” Looking around the hospital room, it belonged to those high-end type personal rooms[1]. Just that apart from the young nurse, there weren’t

anyone else here. This made Lei Yu a bit depressed.

“You can’t say that.” The young nurse pursed her lips, “little sister Ai Er accompanied you day and night, but she just left to buy some breakfast, let me replace her for a moment.

Listening to what the young nurse said, Lei Yu’s heart suddenly felt sweet to the extreme. Thinking that he had been unconscious for twenty plus days and Ai Er had been here with him all that time, Lei Yu actually felt a bit sorry for her.

On a typical day, he would only care about cultivating; he did not spend a lot of time with his loved ones. Lei Yu quietly vowed that he would

treat Ai Er better to make up for his past neglect.

-----

[1] In a lot of countries of Asia, multiple people share a hospital room under the government's healthcare system. One could pay extra money out of pocket to stay in their own personal room.



# Chapter 47: One Husband Many Wives

Carefully observing the young nurse, this girl's height was about 1.65 meters (5'5") and was considered not too short. Perhaps because the young nurse was wearing a white button down uniform that only revealed her slender white legs, this gave Lei Yu a feeling that she was taller than she really was. Her face could only be described as cute, giving off an adorable appearance. When one looked at her, they just want to grab her and give her a kiss.

Her long hair was tied up and a white angel-like hat was on top of her head. Looking at the young nurse, Lei Yu could not help being in a daze. He also noticed the nurse's eyes were constantly glancing at him as well, and her flushed face was getting more obvious. Lei Yu thought that he was staring at her too hard making her feel uncomfortable, so he hurriedly looked away. The actual shocking thing was that he found himself naked sitting on the bed, the blanket covering him had slid off when he suddenly sat up prior.

“Oh crap!” Just like a frightened girl that suffered a wardrobe malfunction, he hurriedly grabbed the blanket and wrapped it around his body.

The young nurse found Lei Yu's reaction quite funny so she started giggling.

"It's okay, no need to be embarrassed, what haven't us nurses seen before? No need to be so nervous." Even though her mouth said this, yet the red blush on her face did not subside at all. Unknown why, when the young nurse saw Lei Yu's strong toned outer body and his deep gaze, her heart could not help but skip a beat, thump thumping fast non-stop.

"Uh... hehe." Pretending to be calm, Lei Yu cleared his throat, "have you known Ai Er from before? What's your name?"

"My name is Fang Yi Ke, you can

call me little Ke. Yeah, little sister Ai Er and I have known each other a long time ago, we used to be elementary students at the same school” stated little Ke as she introduced herself.

“Oh.” Lei Yu nodded his head. At this time, Ai Er arrived at the door holding two plastic bags in her hand. Seeing Lei Yu sitting up on the bed, the breakfast in her hands fell onto the ground with a “splat.” Upon looking at Ai Er, he could see her eyes were already filled with tears.

“Ai Er, it’s been hard on you.” Lei Yu smiled. Originally wanted to stand up and give Ai Er a loving hug, but he remembered he was currently naked so he dropped the

idea.

Ai Er quickly came over, “you’re finally awake, I was really worried you’d never wake up.” Pouting her lips, Ai Er looked really adorable at this time. Her face carried two crystal tears before she plunged into Lei Yu’s embrace.

Lei Yu’s heart was filled with warmth and guilt. Gently stroking Ai Er’s long hair, “okay, stop crying, I’m fine now right?”

The two cozy couple went off into their own little world. Lei Yu used his hand to hold up Ai Er’s chin, using his mouth, he wiped away the tear stains on Ai Er’s face before the two long-awaited lips tightly bonded together. Little Ke did not

know why but her heart had a slightly faint reaction. But she still knowingly left the room in a quiet manner, closing the door gently behind her.

They both kissed for a while, then Ai Er's hand seemed to have grabbed onto SOMETHING. "Ahh!" Her whole face flushed red, "nasty, why aren't you wearing any clothes?"

"I... I just woke up! Besides, I haven't seen any signs of my clothes anywhere." Lei Yu blinked, recalling the prior scene with little Ke, he suddenly wanted to laugh out loud.

"Wait a bit, I'll go get you some clothing and also let my brother,

father and them know you're awake. They were all worried to death about you, each day they would come by several times to check in on you." Ai Er stood up to organize her clothing and her messy hair; she then turned and left the room.

Lei Yu looked at the white gauze that was taped to his chest. The smell of medicine was especially strong and he could not help but frown, remembering that Cai Zhong's knife was stabbed in there not too long ago. He did not expect to make it out alive with his little life – he was indeed lucky.

Lei Yu gently touched it but did not feel any pain. He used his nails to grab the edge of the gauze, and

then ripped it off. “How come there aren’t any scars?”

Suddenly thinking of something, he noticed there was a bandage in a strange arc extending past his arm to his back. On his back, he was also taped with this white gauze. Little by little, Lei Yu removed the gauze and thoroughly touched the area. It was just like his chest; his back was smooth and did not leave any scars after the injury. He immediately understood the reason – it must have been the green energy’s repairing effect. Otherwise, even if it was some miraculous medicine, it would not have such a fast effect, actually able to make scars disappear without a trace.

“Master!” Lei Yu smiled and sat up



as he heard a familiar voice from outside the door.

“Liu Hao.”

“Master, you really scared me to death, I thought you were going to become a vegetable.”

Lei Yu slapped Liu Hao in the head, “your dog mouth really spews out horrible words! By the way, how did you know I was awake?”

“Oh, as I walked into the hospital, I ran into master’s wife who was on the phone, she was the one that told me you were awake.” Liu Hao’s eyes showed excitement seeing his master awake after being in a comatose state, how could he as the disciple not be happy?

“Who’s your master’s wife? So hateful, making someone sound so old!” Ai Er pouted as she came in. “I’ve made a call to them; they’ll be over right away. Huh? Where’s the gauze that was taped to your body? Where are your wounds?” Asked Ai Er completely surprised.

“Wow!” Lei Yu pretended to be surprised, “what miraculous medicines, the wounds on my body are all healed, I can leave the hospital now.” After saying that, he grabbed the hospital gown from Ai Er’s hand to put on, of course this was all done under the blanket’s cover.

Hearing the news that Lei Yu was awake, Nuo Hu, his father and his aunt quickly rushed over. As for Lei

Yun Tian and family, no one notified them because they knew Lei Yu did not want to see them.

After asking Lei Yu a bunch of questions and insistent demands, Lei Yu went through a thorough examination before everyone agreed he could leave the hospital.

Strange to say, Lei Yu was very clear himself that his bones contained trace metallic properties. Yet when going through instruments of monitoring like X-Rays and MRI's, nothing unexpected was observed by hospital staff?

Parked in front of the hospital entrance were a few luxury brand-named cars, and with quite a few people surrounding it, giving off an

impressive manner. Lei Yu stretched and worked out the kinks in his body, then breathed in a few mouthful of fresh air. This was definitely better than smelling the hospital's medicine and disinfectants they used.

Suddenly, a “screech” sound of brakes could be heard. A red convertible sports car stopped in front of everyone and an attractive young girl got out of the car. From her appearance, she was the type that men would never tire of looking at, the most attractive points to her was her mesmerizing eyes and the perfectly shaped body.

“Sister Ying Ying!” Liu Hao waved and smiled.

Seeing the arrival of this person, Lei Yu secretly eyed Ai Er on the side. Indeed she had already pouted her little mouth, making her look super cute.

“Lei Yu, you’re okay now right? This is really great!” That’s right; the newly arrived person was Cui Ying Ying. After receiving a phone call from Liu Hao saying Lei Yu had woken up, she immediately dropped everything and drove here non-stop.

“Yea, I’m fine now, thank you for your concern.” Although Lei Yu’s tone was a bit indifferent, Cui Ying Ying could tell from Lei Yu’s gaze that he showed a look of gratitude and her heart became super sweet like someone just tipped over a pot of honey. Even though it was just

one look, she indulged in that look filled with happiness.

“How come it’s you again? You’ve come to this hospital several times already.” Ai Er could not resist saying this in displeasure.

“Hello Ai Er, you don’t mind me calling you by your name right?” Cui Ying Ying indeed changed quite a bit, even the way she spoke compared to a year ago were like two different people. On the side, Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng realized it was some sort of drama amongst the youngsters so they did not want to be involved, immediately getting inside one of the cars first.

“Whatever, anything is fine.” Ai Er

freely answered, but her hands were deliberately hugging onto Lei Yu's arm.

“Can I speak privately with you for a bit?” Asked Cui Ying Ying.

Thinking about it, not sure why but Ai Er nodded okay. “Brother Yu, you go into the car first and wait for me.”

Nuo Hu and Liu Hao knew better to leave first as well. Lei Yu paused for a bit, scratched his head and continued stepping into the back of the car.

“Just say whatever you want to say.” Said Ai Er in an uncaring attitude.

“Ai Er, I know you hate me, and not willing to give Lei Yu to me. But you

should know that I truly do like Lei Yu, and although I cannot be together with him, I do sincerely hope that you do not push me away and deny me of being friends with him. As long as I can chat a bit with him, then I'm already fully satisfied." Cui Ying Ying's tone sounded like she was begging.

Ai Er did not think she would say this to her and her heart did soften a little. Indeed, ever since she has known about Cui Ying Ying, she has never thought highly of her. Besides her having left for more than a year, and it still had not diluted her feelings of love towards Lei Yu, this showed Ai Er that Cui Ying Ying's feelings were for real.

"But he is my boyfriend, you



cannot..." Ai Er did not know how to make her words sound less cold; after all, she appeared to be a kind-hearted girl.

Cui Ying Ying hurriedly waved her hands, "I'm not asking for much, just treat me as a friend, is that okay? Even though I can't forget about Lei Yu in my heart, but you don't have to worry, I'm not going to do anything, I've already given up." As Cui Ying Ying said these words, her eyes could not help fluttering.

Perhaps it's the bond between women, seeing a girl with a similar age as her that could not attain the love they desired, she indeed felt sympathy. If this situation happened to them, there would be

no way they could accept it, but since Cui Ying Ying had said those two words “given up”, then if she continued denying her then it would be considered a bit unreasonable. After all, she was close to Liu Hao and his family. “Fine, we can become friends, but you better not have any ideas of stealing Lei Yu from me!” Ai Er pouted her lips unknowingly putting up a cute appearance.

“I understand! You silly girl.”

“He he he...”

Seeing those two laughing with such happiness, Lei Yu who was sitting inside the car and did not hear their conversation just now could not help feeling puzzled.

What bewitching magic did this Cui Ying Ying use on Ai Er? How could they suddenly get along so well? Could it be that Ai Er suddenly had a Buddha's heart, agreeing to allow him to have many wives? Impossible, impossible...

(T/N: The literal translation was One husband, many wives. But the use here seems to be one guy, many girlfriends.)

# Chapter 48: Long Hua's Barbeque

(T/N: BBQ places in China are not like Americans, they don't do ribs or burgers, they use a variety cuts of sliced meat over an open flame or grill)

Waving to the rest of the people, Cui Ying Ying slowly drove off in her red convertible. Ai Er also got back inside the car.

“What were you two talking about eh?” Asked Lei Yu, pretending to be nonchalant.

Ai Er smiled mysteriously, “I'm not going to tell you, make you fret

about it, hmph!”

“Ugh...”

Liu Hao and Nuo Hu sitting in the front laughed. Nuo Hu then thought of something and asked: “Little Yu, before the duel you were missing for half a month, where did you go? We looked all over for you but still couldn’t find you.”

“Yeah, even I went looking for you several times but could not even find a trace of your whereabouts.” Added Liu Hao.

“Oh. Big brother, do you remember they place we went to for our mission?”

“You mean the mission to deal with the Ink Beast?” Asked Nuo Hu.

“Right, that’s the one; I went to that place again. Originally, I wanted to cultivate at home but felt my improvement was too slow, so I went to that place. The fruit that I gave you two to eat before also came from that place. I wanted to rely on the special elements of those fruits to improve myself.”

“Ah! So that’s what happened.”  
Everyone then realized.

“Oh right!” Lei Yu then asked:  
“How’s Cai Zhong? I was only focusing on packing and leaving the hospital so I forgot to ask you guys. What was the result of the match? Did I lose?”

That day, Lei Yu’s body was taken over by the green energy, including

his mind. In the case of his ferocious retaliation and the incessant screaming, he could not remember a thing.

“Cai Zhong is very pitiful now.” Nuo Hu then continued: “Both his hands have been crippled, and his head suffered some type of impact from his eyes, so he’s still in a coma. I think he might be at a permanent vegetative state.”

“How could this be? Was it...” Lei Yu’s heart suddenly skipped a beat. He remembered that Cai Zhong losing his humanity was closely tied to the small knife, could it be that this power of death was originally intended for him?

“You don’t remember how horrible

you were that day; your eyes had become freakishly green.

Fortunately, Ai Er had already fainted because of the wound on your back so she did not see how horrible you looked. Cai Zhong cultivated in demonic energy, so with his ability, he once again created a thick black smoke. I could not see what was happening inside the thick smoke but once it dissipated, Cai Zhong's hand already looked like they had been crippled. \*Sigh\* Little Yu, what on earth did you do?"

"I... I don't know." Lei Yu really did not know what happened. If one really had to ask, then it would be best to ask someone of the Fifth Order rank and above, or to ask Cai Zhong who was still in a coma.



Seven o'clock in the evening, everyone was gathered in Lei Yu's house. But they were just the youngsters including Lei Yu himself, Ai Er, Nuo Hu, Liu Hao and the recently acquainted young nurse, little Ke.

"To celebrate brother Yu's discharge from the hospital, we'll eat dinner together!" Ai Er stated while laughing.

"Oh good, where should we go?" Once Lei Yu asked this question, everyone started pondering where they should eat.

"How about..." Little Ke then continued asking, "how about we try this barbeque place at the night market? It's not bad, I frequently go

there.”

“New type of cuisine sounds good.” Lei Yu nodded in agreement and saw the others without any further opinions, the decision was final.

“I’ll give Ying Ying a call; have her come out as well.” As these unprecedented words came out of Ai Er’s mouth, Nuo Hu and Lei Yu both stared at her with eyes of bafflement, making her feel a bit embarrassed.

“Good, good, good, I’ll call, let me make the call!” Liu Hao’s attitude looked like he was more excited than anyone else.

After setting up the time and location, the all left driving towards

the night market. Cui Ying Ying also departed from the other side of the city.

South of the city, this place became extremely lively at night. During the day there weren't too many people around, but once evening came, sidewalks were filled with lots of chairs and tables, and every table was filled with people.

A flashing sign with red neon lights had the word "Long Hua's Barbeque City" on it. Looking at the restaurant, it was an impressive large scale barbeque place.

In this place, people came for the lively atmosphere. If you wanted high-end food, it would be best to go to some sort of "X star" rated

restaurant instead.

During the weekdays, this place was usually filled with society's younger crowd or some office workers getting off work with nothing better to do. Whether it be co-workers or friends, they will all flock together at this place. And the fact that the weather was hot, being able to grab a few cans of beer while eating a mouthful of barbequed lamb, this was truly one of life's most enjoyable moments.

But today was different from a typical day, parked in front of Long Hua's Barbeque City were two cars – a Mercedes-Benz S600 and an Audi A5 Cabriolet

Getting out of the car were three

men and two women. The men were chic and handsome, the women were alluring and beautiful, this drew the attention everyone inside the place. Driving luxury brand-named cars and accompanying beautiful girls, this was what most young men dreamed of doing sometime in their life. But the sudden appearance of these people amongst such a noisy and modest place, it made the restaurant's atmosphere a bit peculiar.

The boss of the restaurant was a snobby fat man. Seeing them get out of two expensive cars and the expensive clothes they wore, he ran up to them and bowed: "Welcome pretty ladies and handsome men, what would you like to order? Our

meats here are guaranteed to be clean and fresh!" Most of the time when rich people came to places like his, the most common thing they were fearful of was the cleanliness of the food preparation, that's why he greeted them that way.

"Hold on, not all our party has arrived yet, we'll take two cases of beers for now to quench our thirst" said Lei Yu with a smile.

"What brand of beer would you like?"

"The most expensive kind" said Liu Hao with impatience.

"Okay okay, coming right up!" The boss ran into the kitchen with a

huge smile on his face.

“Beep, beep, beep, beep, beep!”

Several short car horn beeps were heard, and then a “screech” sound of brakes. Everyone looked at each other wondering what happened, then Liu Hao laughed and spoke up “it seems that sister Ying Ying has arrived since this is her usual method of parking.”

Sure enough, a red convertible sports car parked behind the other two brand named cars. A young and tall girl then got out of the convertible. Although the girl was not dressed in sexy or charming clothing, but her refined aura and her beautiful face was enough to make men daydream thousands of thoughts. Especially captivating

were her alluring eyes, becoming deadly weapons capable of taking down countless men.

All the men's gaze were focused on this girl, even a young guy who had just stuffed a piping hot piece of lamb meat into his mouth had burned himself without realizing it.

Ai Er stood up and grabbed Cui Ying Ying to sit down beside her and said: "You're late! Your punishment is to drink twice the amount of beer!"

"That's fine, I'll drink, I'll drink it."  
Cui Ying Ying smiled and sat down. From her Louis Vuitton purse, she took out a beautiful box and handed it to Lei Yu,  
"congratulations on your discharge



from the hospital, this is a gift for you.”

“Eh? Thank you.” Lei Yu did not bother being over polite, immediately opening the box. A pair of exquisite pendants in a heart shape appeared, and in the center was inlaid with a large diamond, it seems like the carat was not a small number so it definitely was quite expensive. But the worth of this gift coming from her own family’s jewelry business should not be considered much for Cui Ying Ying.

The pendant was a pair so Lei Yu gave Cui Ying Ying a puzzled look.

“Don’t look at me, this is for you, don’t you want your heart linked to Ai Er’s? You both have one each so

quickly put it on.” Cui Ying Ying smiled while sipping her mug of beer.

“Wow, thank you so much.” Ai Er took one, brought it up against her neck and said “it’s so pretty!”

Liu Hao pouted on the side, “sister Ying Ying, I’ve known you for so long but you’ve never given me any presents, you are so biased... Agh! I was wrong, I was wrong!”

“Hahaha...”

A short distance away sat a dozen or so youngsters filling two tables, some of them shirtless. Their chest and backs were tattooed with multiple designs, and one look at them would give people the feeling

that they were the scum of society.

“You see that? A group of tools are being looked after by several rich girls, what kind of f\*cking world is this.” Sneered a youngster with small eyes.

“What? You jealous?” Sneered a young man sitting across the table while he was playing with his ring on his middle finger. “If you can’t take it, go play with them for a bit, we have so many fellow brothers here, there’s nothing to be afraid of.”

“That’s right, there’s nothing to be afraid of.” After the youngster said this, the whole table went into a ruckus; everyone started banging on the table become rambunctious

while the youngster had an arrogant look on his face.

“Let’s go, a few of us will get to smell the scent of hot girls today.” Four sturdy looking youngsters stood up at the same time, then walked towards where Lei Yu and them were sitting.

# Chapter 49:

## Displaying Their Prowess

Surrounded by his fellow brothers, the youngster with the small eyes went up to Cui Ying Ying and put a single hand on her shoulder, disregarding the other people's faces of surprise, "miss, looks like you're quite wealthy right? Giving your lover such a precious pendant, how about you give me one as a present as well?"

Cui Ying Ying frowned, and then looked at Lei Yu. The others did not even have time to say anything before Ai Er openly scolded:

“Stinking low lives, don’t ruin our appetite when we’re eating!”

“Ohh? This chick is pretty bold, not bad, not bad, I like it.” After saying this, he wanted to get go mess around with her but before he could even get close to Ai Er, he felt a chilled feeling hit his back, he did not even have the chance to turn around and a “crack” sound of a beer bottle breaking and scattering all over the place could be heard. The few surrounding tables of people hurriedly jumped out of their seats and backed away a short distance watching this spectacular show.

“Agh!” The small eyed youth cried out. The back of his head was bleeding, staining the collar of his

shirt. The person that made that move was Nuo Hu who was sitting nearby.

“F\*cking bastards, scram! Don’t invite trouble to yourselves.” Said Nuo Hu in a cold tone, slapping his hand down onto the table.

“F\*cker! You dare to hit our boss? Brothers, come on out!” Cried another youth towards the two tables filled with his own people. Those people threw out their cigarette butts and headed over, each of them carrying a beer bottle in their hand.

The owner of the restaurant then hurriedly ran out to settle the commotion. On one side were the people with money, a small

business owner like him could not afford to offend. On the other side were the scourges of society, barely any wealth at all, but they brawled and hacked up people with weapons without mercy, so he could not afford to offend them either.

“Please just settle this with words.” The restaurant boss hurriedly took out cigarettes from his pocket and tried handing it out to everyone.

With all his fellow brothers standing behind the youngster, he spoke up in defiance, “f\*cker, raising your hand and hitting someone, what else is there to talk about? Fellow brothers, f\*ck him up!” Shouted the youngster pointing at Nuo Hu.



Lei Yu calmly stood up, gently scratched his head, “I can’t even enjoy a quiet meal, so disappointing.”

“You! Sit the f\*ck down! Damn it, don’t you dare make us even more pissed off!” The youngster shouted at Lei Yu as he saw him standing up.

A crisp “pak” sound rang out and the youngster suddenly felt his head spinning. Shaking his head forcefully, a palm print appeared on his face, but he was unable to see who had actually hit him.

“Who? Who was it?” Looking all around, even his fellow brothers behind him did not see what exactly happened.

Lei Yu smiled and looked at his disciple asking: "Liu Hao, do you want to play a bit?"

"Sure, we'll just consider this an appetizer before the meal." After saying this, he loosened up his wrist and his hands, and then slowly walked towards the group of people.

"Remember, don't break anything." Pushing aside the small eyed youngster with the bloody head in an effortless manner, this youngster flew away like a falling meteor hitting another table a distance away, then falling to the ground crying out "ow ow" sounds.

The youngster took a step back, "brothers, we have over a dozen

people, would we fear the three of them? Let's do it!"

After the shout, everyone complied and smashed the bottles they were carrying in their hand. Sounds of glass shattering were heard everywhere, and each youngster was holding the broken bottle pointing at Lei Yu's group like they were holding a gun.

Liu Hao pretended to roll up his sleeves that did not exist. "Ahhh!" A yellow internal energy was condensed in his hand, then focusing on the floor; he suddenly dropped down and smashed the ground. A loud "BANG" noise could be heard and felt; people in the area could only feel their bodies involuntarily jump up from the

impact. A crater with a depth of about ten centimeters and a diameter of twenty centimeters appeared in front of everybody.

The youngster with the smashed beer bottle in his hand dropped it to the floor with a “clang,” his mouth was agape wider than an egg. The ruffians behind him forcefully swallowed hard, each one had their eyes round and wide in shock. Ever since they came from their mother’s womb, they had never witnessed such a scene, was this something humans were capable of?

“Not bad kiddo, upon reaching the Third Order rank, your strength has definitely improved. If you had actually struck a human body, it’s

possible the force would go through three or four other people, won't that mean you would open up a hole in all of them?" As Lei Yu said this, his eyes were looking at all the youngsters in front of him.

Lei Yu did not want to stir up trouble here, simply deterring them would be good enough, no need to make this situation bigger than necessary. It seems that Liu Hao's actions had a certain effect, the dozen plus youngsters were standing there stupidly without moving.

\*Cough cough\* Liu Hao smiled while quietly coughing a bit. The group of youngsters felt a shiver go through their bodies from fear.

The crowd of people watching had wanted to pay their bills early and leave as soon as possible, but after seeing the move by Liu Hao, their eyes suddenly lit up in worship. Especially the people that were once bullied by those ruffians, their worship of him were to the max.

“Wipe the snot from your nose, take your people with you and scram! Stop disturbing others while they’re eating here!” Lei Yu said this while shaking his head.

The youngster had finally noticed that booger was coming out of his nose and dripped to his mouth already while he was unaware. These ruffians would usually only bully the very weak that could not retaliate, but once they meet

someone strong; they will tuck their tails between their legs.

“Cling cling clang clang,” the sound of bottles falling on the ground.

After seeing the impressive inhuman deed, who would still dare to rush forward to their deaths? One by one they dropped the bottles in their hands.

“That’s enough Liu Hao, come sit back down.”

At this moment, everyone was wondering why such a powerful person would obediently listen to the words of the guy in front of them. Liu Hao’s following words scared the daylights out of everyone present: “Master, if we don’t teach these guys here a lesson, they will

continue to corrupt and ruin our society.”

“Wow!”

A burst of noise came from the surrounding onlookers. The disciple was already this powerful, then wouldn't the master's strength be out of this world?

The face on those ruffians spoke a thousand words; they immediately tucked their tails between their legs and quickly ran.

Looking around, it looks like things had subsided. The boss ordered his staff to quickly sweep up the glass shards on the ground, then with a face full of smiles, “you pretty ladies and handsome men, you haven't



ordered yet, what would you like to eat?

“Five hundred slices of lamb, two hundred slices of fish, hurry it up, I’m starving!” Carelessly saying this, Liu Hao acted like the entire previous incident had nothing to do with him at all.

On the side, little Ke who had been silent the entire time was the most shocked; she had never seen such a scene in her lifetime. She was originally extremely worried for her group of friends, but did not expect Liu Hao to be so powerful, one punch from him was able to produce a crater in the ground, definitely enough to freak people out. And Liu Hao had called Lei Yu master, which shocked little Ke’s

heart even more, why would such a powerful person be hospitalized? But thinking back carefully, the two wounds on Lei Yu's body were big enough to give people a scare. Yet within the short twenty or so days, the wounds disappeared without a trace, one could see this group of people were not ordinary at all. Deep in her heart, this mysteriousness that surrounded Lei Yu actually made her want to get closer to him.

Perhaps they staff were overawed by Lei Yu's group, those that came before them did not get their food yet but Lei Yu's group already had all their dishes come out. Gradually, everyone began to forget the previous show and began eating and drinking, enjoying themselves

immensely.

---

“Master.” Inside Lei Yun Tian’s office, the Elder then said: “Little Yu was released from the hospital today; it seems that he has fully recovered.”

“That fast?” Lei Yun Tian raised his eyebrows.

“That’s right, what are your plans?”

Lei Yun Tian then said: “I want us to reach out to him once more.”

After the match between Lei Yu and Cai Zhong ended, a large wave of calamity had appeared within the four major forces. Lei Yu’s super strength not only shocked Martial

Sect's Shangguan family, it also made them value Lei Yu more.

On the flip side, the Ming Sect was also greatly interested in Lei Yu. Since Cai Zhong had become a cripple in the eyes of Ming Sect, he was already useless trash and had absolutely no value to them at all. Ming Sect had to find ways to draw in Lei Yu to their side, but if they failed, they could not allow such a person to continue to exist. If space was given to Lei Yu allowing him to grow, then it will be too difficult to eliminate him in the future.

(T/N: I think the author forgot to mention what happened to the crater...)

# Chapter 50: Kou country's Nagasaka

(T/N: The Kou country is the old name the Chinese gave Japan, Kou means “Pirate.” In the Ming dynasty 1368-1644, Japanese pirates repeatedly harassed the Chinese on the coast and even along the Yangtze River.)

“Sect Leader, Mr. Nagasaka has arrived.” An underling in a black suit respectfully bowed and said this to the skinny middle-aged man.

“Ask him to come in, everyone else stay outside.”

“Yes.”

The Ming Sect Leader's name was Du Zhang Hai. Although he looked really thin, he was a master that had reached the strength of a Sixth Order rank. He studied the Ming Sect's unique demonic cultivating methods, already reaching the Sixth Demonic Realm. He was one of the handful of Sixth Order masters inside the country of Tenglong, in charge of all matters relating to the Ming Sect.

The murders his underlings committed were countless, but no one dared to do anything about it. Within the country of Tenglong, whatever his Sect did was pretty much untouchable. The forces of the underworld were extremely strong, so whatever business they were into, no one else would dare to

meddle in it. Today was the day another business transaction had to be discussed.

A middle-aged man with a dwarf-like head with a fat body came in. "Boss Du, haven't seen you in a long time!" The words that came out of his mouth showed his Tenglong language was merely adequate.

"Mr. Nagasaka, you came from the distant Kou Country, you must be very tired, come, please take a seat!" They both shook hands and then sat opposite each other.

"Boss Du, I've brought over a model, please look it over." Mr. Nagasaka opened his briefcase, taking out a small bottle containing some clear water-like liquid.

“Ah, let’s talk about its efficacy and the price.” Du Zhang Hai lightly stated as he scrutinized the drug in his hands.

“This is a bacterium, after invading into the human body; it only needs a short one day’s time to infect the entire body without anyone’s knowledge, causing the host to fester into blistering sores resulting in their mysterious death. Even if the host had some powerful assistance, it would still be useless. And in order to use this is actually quite simple, you can add it into water or tea, onto food etc, it’s colorless, odorless and tasteless. As for the price...” Mr. Nagasaka deliberately let his words hang, looking at Du Zhang Hai’s expression. Indeed, after hearing



the effects, Du Zhang Hai's eyebrows were raised, he did not expect this little bottle of bacterium could be so powerful.

“Well, can this thing hurt the masters of Tenglong country with the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior?” Asked Du Zhang Hai.

“Please don't worry!” Mr. Nagasaka said confidently, “my Kou country's Ultimate Ninjas are the same strength rank as your country's Sixth Order Warrior, even they could not resist the invasion of these bacteria.

Du Zhang Hai's eyes suddenly shone, if this thing could be used against his rivals, then wouldn't that mean he could stand at the top

of this country?

“What is the price that you want for this?” Asked Du Zhang Hai.

“The cost of this drug’s agent is really high, and it’s also considered a contraband, if Mr. Du has intentions of purchasing this... \$1.5 million per bottle, what do you say?

“Damn, that high?! What contraband drugs have I never played with?” This was what Du Zhang Hai was thinking in his heart but of course he did not say it out loud. Still smiling, “isn’t the price a little too expensive? After all, these things are considered nothing more than poison to us.”

“Poison?” Mr. Nagasaka took the

drug back, “ordinary people have ordinary drugs, rat poison is just as useful and can poison someone to death. But what is this? This is a pharmaceutical researched drug that is designed specifically for use against those super strong individuals. Since you don’t seem to appreciate these goods, then there’s really nothing else for us to talk about.” After saying this, he got up and was about to leave.

“Wait!” Du Zhang Hai quickly thought through everything in his mind. Indeed, it was not easy to deal with a Sixth Order Warrior, so using this colorless and odorless drug was a good choice. But the price of this product was indeed too high.

“What? Mr. Du wants to think about it some more?” Mr. Nagasaka laughed, “if you are really interested in, I can do you a personal favor, and we’ll call it a deal at \$1.2 million.”

Clenching his teeth, “we have a deal!” Even though Du Zhang Hai did not care about the money, he still felt like using this amount of money for such a small bottle of poison made his heart ache.

“This was just a sample, how many of these do you want Mr. Du? I will send for someone to bring it over later.” Stated Mr. Nagasaka.

“Five bottles. Once the goods arrive, the \$6 million will be deposited into Mr. Nagasaka’s account.”

“Boss Du is really an easygoing person to do business with, good, very good.” Nagasaka negotiated a large business deal, the upper management had set the price of each bottle at \$1 million, but since he has negotiated it to \$1.2 million, five bottles of potions meant that he would be pocketing \$1 million personally, how could he not be happy?

“Everything has been arranged, inside your hotel room are three of Tenglong country’s finest beauties waiting for you to enjoy” laughed Du Zhang Hai.

“Oh?” Nagasaka eyes shone bright. “Then I sincerely thank Boss Du’s warm hospitality, hahaha...”

-----

Fully satisfied, Lei Yu and the rest left this barbecue city restaurant. Before they left, the boss knew that Lei Yu and company weren't normal people so he deliberately gave them a 20% discount off their bill. Even though Lei Yu and them did not care about such discounts yet they were still grateful to him.

Nuo Hu and Ai Er drove Lei Yu home while Liu Hao left on his own in a Mercedes. Cui Ying Ying was responsible for taking little Ke home, and consequently, Cui Ying Ying's driving ability made her quite fearful of her life that night.

Shaking his head, Lei Yu finished taking his comfortable bath and

began preparing to cultivate.

He appeared to be very urgent, having just reached the [Discharge] stage; he wanted to see what huge changes his body had undergone. After all, this newly gained strength of Lei Yu was still an unfamiliar power, so he had to get familiar with its ability as soon as possible.

Lei Yu did not dare to slack off. Even though the duel was already over, he was not a fool. The four major forces were able to clearly see his strength, not saying he had suddenly become a valued commodity, but these major forces would more or less start making some moves. In addition, there was still the most important factor...

His enemy. Who were mother's enemies? Grandpa had already died, and the doctor said that the black chip inside grandpa's brain was not there for just one or two days. If it was inside there for a long time, then why would it suddenly activate?

Inside Lei Yu's mind, this was all still a mystery to him. Since my grandpa and Nuo Yi Long both said his strength had not reached the point capable of going against this opponent, then he would just have to strive harder to improve. Lei Yu will not beg Nuo Yi Long to tell him who the murderer was because doing this would not do him any good. Although this hatred for an unknown enemy was more challenging than a known enemy,



Lei Yu also wanted to push aside all interfering thoughts and focus on cultivating. If he really knew who his enemy was, then he might be focused on getting revenge instead of focusing on increasing his strength.

Layers of internal energy were circulating in his body. His calm internal body was suddenly surging around like endless waves. The purple energy inside his dantian's Sea of Energy contained lines of lightning, and every time he circulated it, it gave Lei Yu many surprises.

According to the methods inside his mind, Lei Yu controlled his internal energy to slowly push through his meridians. Since the energy

contained traces of lightning in it, every time it passed through a meridian, it will formlessly stimulate it, playing a certain role in improving it. In the past, he had to focus and deliberately control the energy in order to achieve some results, but now he did not have to worry and strain too hard. His meridians, bone structure, skin, and even every minute hair were being formlessly refined. It was inevitable for Lei Yu's heart to be ecstatic.

Relying on his strong spiritual force, within a very short time, Lei Yu's internal energy was fully under his control. Without spending too much time, he was able to grasp all the benefits [Discharge] stage brought with it. His whole body was formlessly improved while the

power of his lightning had become stronger.

What Lei Yu was unclear on were what effects his power would have after discharging it outside his body. Currently, there weren't any chances for him to try it out since he was inside his own house.

The sky started getting lighter; Lei Yu began to come back to his senses from cultivating. Seeing the dawn's early light was usually when Lei Yu would be the most excited because he would feel the slight improvements he had made cultivating the previous night. Even though at times, his improvement would be so slight that he could not detect it, but maintaining a positive attitude about it was the most

important thing.

After washing up, he put on some clean clothes. "I haven't been back to Dragon Group for a long time; I should go back and take a look."

Gently swiping through his not yet completely dried hair to get rid of some water, he then put on his backpack. Out of habit, Lei Yu began jogging in the direction of Dragon Group Headquarters.

"Little Yu!" A familiar voice was heard behind him. Looking back, Lei Yu's brow turned into a frown.

# Chapter 51:

## Challenging The Commander

“You need something?” Asked Lei Yu in a cold tone.

“Can we talk?” Parked beneath a street light was a black car, and sitting inside was Lei Yun Tian.

Sighing softly, Lei Yu walked towards the black car. Because it was still early in the morning, not many people were on the street so Lei Yun Tian got out of the car.

Lei Yu asked impatiently, “quickly say whatever you want, I need to

rush back to Dragon Group.”

“Little Yu, I won’t beat around the bush, that day’s mistake was caused by Elder and I. And afterwards, I had solemnly asked for your forgiveness. What do you want me, as your father to do before you will finally agree to return to the Lei family?

“Afterwards? Father? Ha!” Lei Yu felt this was funny. “Have you performed any responsibilities as a father? I suffered ridicule and insults for so long inside the Lei family, have you ever helped protect me from it? Afterwards, you did apologize to me, but what if today I did not have that brand you feel was so important, would you still have come to apologize to me?”

“I do not deny it that I was too cruel back then, but you have to understand, the Lei family has always been like this. You indeed did not manifest any brands; I had no other choice but to do this as a last resort.” Lei Yun Tian was a bit emotional, it seems that when it comes to his own pain, he did suffer, but Lei Yu suffered even more.

“I was beaten and abused by the Lei clan, that I can still tolerate. Ever since the baptism ceremony, a full eight years, you had not spoken a single word to me, and you say you are my father?” Lei Yu’s eyes were filled with tears. “Yes, I admit that in order to once again get your fatherly love, I trained day and night, finding a large number of

martial arts masters to learn from, wasn't my goal just so you can look in my direction and acknowledge me? And you? Did you even glance at me? Ever since you and the Lei family kicked me out of the household, I had already promised myself, I will never again walk half a step into the Lei family!"

Lei Yu exhaled heavily and lifted his head up. He was trying his hardest to keep the tears from falling out, but it didn't seem to be working. Lei Yu suddenly stepped back a few steps, kneeled on the ground, and "boom, boom, boom," three loud kow tow sounds were heard hitting the ground.

"What are you..?!" Lei Yun Tian hurriedly went forward to support



Lei Yu, but was pushed away.

“Your son Lei Yu hereby thanks you for these eighteen years of upbringing, if one day the Lei family encounters trouble, I, Lei Yu, will certainly give his life in assistance.” After saying these words, Lei Yu made a self-deprecating smile, “I think with the Lei family’s strength, that day will not come, and I certainly don’t wish for it to come.”

“You’re intending on being this cold? Are you not even considering any familial ties? No matter what, we are still tied together by flesh and blood!” Lei Yun Tian’s voice trembled as he said this.

“The day you kicked me out, if only you understood those same words

you just uttered, then we would not have today's scenario. Anyway, I have to go." Lei Yu exhaled while trembling. Slowly standing up, he turned around to have one last look at the father he used to respect, before jogging away. He left Lei Yun Tian standing there, whose eyes were filled with grief.

Although Lei Yu was jogging, the tears in his eyes would not stop flowing. His tears scattered into the wind from the rhythm of his running. What Lei Yun Tian said was right, blood was always thicker than water, how could Lei Yu be so cold and heartless? It's because deep in his heart, the resentment towards his father was too great. When he was at his most depressed state or when he jumped off the

cliff, no one thought of looking for him. And now that he possessed great strength, they came scrambling to apologize. Doesn't that mean he was placing the emphasis of power as being more important than his own son?

After returning to Dragon Group, Lei Yu felt much better. When he saw the new members of Wild Wolf Team training hard in the early morning, this also made him more energetic. Making an effort to stop feeling sad, he was going to focus everything he had on increasing his potential with more training; this was his main goal for the time being.

When the soldiers of Wild Wolf Team and Lion Team saw Lei Yu,

their eyes looked at him filled with admiration. Even though they did not see Lei Yu's duel, they heard the elites of Dragon Team talk about it, making their blood boil. This was not only winning glory for Martial Sect, but also for all the different military groups, especially the soldiers of Dragon Group. This halo of glory above Lei Yu's head was rightfully his. And now, every soldier regarded Lei Yu as their idol, and their goal for intense training was to reach Lei Yu's level.

After a day of intense training, his entire body was sore all over yet it allowed Lei Yu enjoy that feeling. Pushing one's body to the limit was the purpose of training. At this moment, the green energy would quietly emerge to help him recover.

From a sore body recovering back to normal, the green energy made him feel so wonderful that it was hard to describe. Currently, Lei Yu was sitting cross-legged in the villa's second floor training hall quietly recovering his energy.

“Little Yu.” Nuo Yi Long stood at the doorway, his face covered with a smile.

“Eh? Uncle Nuo?!” Lei Yu hurriedly stood up.

“How is it? How's your recovery going? Your body must have just recovered and you're already rushing to improve yourself?” Although his mouth said this, but Nuo Yi Long's heart was very pleased. It looks like this child Lei

Yu would not easily become complacent, and geniuses such as him would definitely reach further heights in the future.

“Uncle Nuo, a cultivator’s foundation is built from hard work; comprehension ability and talent are second, plus I cannot forget about my enemy. Since you told me my current strength was not enough to fight against them, then I can only work harder in cultivating.” Lei Yu’s eyes revealed a firm resolution, making Nuo Yi Long slightly startled.

“Good! You have not disappointed me, continue recovering for now.” After saying this, he smiled and turned to leave.

“Uncle Nuo!”

Stumbling half a step, Nuo Yi Long turned around.

“I... Can I challenge you?” Stuttered Lei Yu as he asked this. Lei Yu understood that currently, he did not have the strength to confront Nuo Yi Long at the same level, but he realized if he went up against a stronger opponent, this would allow him to improve his strength. After the match against Cai Zhong, Lei Yu came to understand that as a warrior, only through constant battles, constantly fighting stronger foes, could he improve his strength at a faster rate.

Nuo Yi Long was slightly startled, “you want to challenge me?”

“Uh, yeah, I... I’m not sure if I’m qualified though.”

“Sure you are, the rules of Dragon Group state that everyone is eligible to challenge anyone, including me.” He paused slightly, Nuo Yi Long then said, “I accept your challenge. In one month’s time, everything will be arranged. During this time, you need to recover fully and properly prepare for it; I will not go easy on you. ”

Lei Yu was overjoyed. “Great, I understand!”

At this time, Nuo Yi Long began to leave and in his heart, Lei Yu had become someone of greater importance in his life. That day when Lei Yu fought a match with



Cai Zhong, without a doubt, everyone could tell that based on his performance, Lei Yu's strength was at the late-stage of a Fourth Order Warrior. Could it be that after the fight, his strength has once again improved?

Even though it's just his theory, he wasn't exactly sure. Everyone had two major bottlenecks they need to get past: The first was advancing from the Third Order to the Fourth Order which Lei Yu clearly had passed; the second was advancing from the Fourth Order to the Fifth Order, which was much harder. Not only did one need to possess innate talent, but also some type of extraordinary encounter in order to breakthrough. Fan Hong Chang has been stuck in the Fourth Order for

many years, still without the slightest hint of breaking through. Could it be that Lei Yu who was only in his early twenties had already broken through? This was clearly impossible and he should not even entertain that idea, therefore he decided on the day of the challenge, he should hold back a bit in order to not seriously hurt Lei Yu.

The news spread really quickly throughout Dragon Group and any soldiers that heard it exploded into disarray. Challenging the commander had never happened before ever since the establishment of Dragon Group. No one expected Lei Yu to have this courage, which made everyone overwhelmed with shock. Those especially shocked

were Nuo Hu, Nuo Yi Feng and Instructor Fan Hong Chang.

During this period, no one bothered Lei Yu and he like always, continued to train his body and cultivate his internal energy. Everyone could see Lei Yu continued to work hard without ever slacking off.

One month's time past by really fast, and today was the match between Lei Yu and Nuo Yi Long. But this time, it wasn't held at the villa's second floor training hall, it was held in the center of Dragon Group's large open training ground. For two super strong individuals having a duel, how could the villa's small area be enough for them to show their true potential?

It was very lively inside Dragon Group headquarters, even Martial Sect's Shangguan Xi Hong had heard about the duel and expressed he would be attending. This match was indeed an event everyone looked forward to. Lei Yu who had just joined Dragon Group for not too long, and a commander in charge of all the soldiers within Dragon Group, the excitement this match generated was no less than when Lei Yu was going to fight Cai Zhong. Since Wild Wolf Team and Lion Team were unable to witness that match, this time they were finally able feast with their eyes, hoping they could enjoy and learn something from this one.

It was bustling on the training grounds, one to two thousand

people were gathered here.  
Everyone was sitting orderly around  
the edge of the training ground, and  
on the top of a nearby small  
building, Shangguan Xi Hong and  
several other important individuals  
were gathered there.

# Chapter 52: Gifting A Treasure

“I did not expect things to be on this grand scale!” Exclaimed Lei Yu as he stood at the railings of the building, looking down at the bustling scene.

“You challenged Dragon Group’s commander, how can it not be lively? Little Yu, you are the hottest topic within Martial Sect now.” Smiled Nuo Hu.

“That’s right, my master’s strength is considered top class, so let them discuss about it, there’s no harm in it. But today’s match...” Liu Hao had special permission to enter Dragon

Group headquarters to see this match, which was Lei Yu's idea. Although Liu Hao had daily encounters with the high ranking people in society, but as the son of the Governor, those he meets are usually just dignitaries and government officials. Unlike today, this was his first time seeing the Shangguan family members, all these powerful figures were considered heavy hitters within the country of Tenglong, so it wasn't easy for even an official's son to encounter them.

However, taking into account of Lei Yu's opponent, even Liu Hao was worried for him. Even though he knew Nuo Yi Long will not cause any serious harm to Lei Yu, but this time, the opponent was no longer a

Fourth Order rank strength like Cai Zhong, but a person with the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior. Within the country, he was considered one of the masters standing all the way at the top.

A mere Cai Zhong had made Lei Yu fall into a coma for twenty plus days, then what would happen when clashing with Commander Nuo Yi Long?

“Little Yu, come here for a bit.” Nuo Yi Long waved Lei Yu over, so Lei Yu quickly responded.

“Uncle Nuo, are we starting now?”  
Asked Lei Yu.

“Just a minute, it will begin soon so don’t worry too much.” Nuo Yi



Long's smile looked like normal while Lei Yu's heart was incredibly anxious. Challenging someone of the higher rank was not uncommon within Dragon Team, but the person being challenged was the Commander, so this was the first time in history.

"Little Yu." Shangguan Xi Hong patted Lei Yu's shoulder, "I have some things to say to you."

"Yes Chief!" Lei Yu stood still, his body upright which showed his respect for the Chief.

"No need to be so stiff." Shangguan Xi Hong smiled, "no need to make our relationship seem so distant, I'd be happy to accept you calling me uncle Shangguan from now on."

“Then... okay, uncle Shangguan.” The words out of Lei Yu’s mouth made it sound like they got closer, but inside his heart, there was nothing but contempt for Shangguan Xi Hong. Lei Yu’s impression of Shangguan Xi Hong was not good at all – the first time was when he was carrying out the mission for the Ink Beast, and the second time was dealing with situation of Cai Zhong’s battle date. These two encounters have made Lei Yu clearly see this supposedly awe-inspiring person on the outside, but a petty and narrow-minded individual on the inside.

“That’s more like it, and I’ve already decided, whether you win or lose this match, you will be rewarded for it.”

“Eh? How come?” Asked Lei Yu.

“If you lose, consider it a reward for your courage. In the entire history of Martial Sect, this is the first time I’ve seen someone challenging a commander, shouldn’t that be rewarded?”

“What kind of reward is it?”

Although Lei Yu wasn’t that concerned with a reward, his main goal was only pursuing his own growth. But if were something really useful to him, then he would not hesitate to accept the reward. As the saying goes, if it’s free, why not take it.

Shangguan Xi Hong looked at Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng, then turned around and said, “if you lose

in this match, I will promote you to become Dragon Group's Deputy Commander, the same rank as little Feng. Do not be surprised about this because compared to all the soldiers, even the elite ones, you are regarded as the strongest out of all of them.

Lei Yu swallowed hard. This wasn't something he expected at all, but since this was said in the presence of so many people, then it would not be false. In reality, people like Nuo Yi Long and the elites of Dragon Team weren't that surprised. Lei Yu's strength was enough to exceed Instructor Fan Hong Chang already, so there's no big deal in becoming a Deputy Commander. At least in the eyes of all the soldiers inside Dragon

Group, Lei Yu had already become their idol.

“If you can actually win this match?!” Shangguan Xi Hong’s voice suddenly became louder, “I will promote you to the rank of a Commander of Dragon Group, alongside with Nuo Yi Long!”

“Woaa!”

A collective voice of people cried out penetrated through the clouds. Shangguan Xi Hong’s voice was quite loud, allowing all the soldiers around the training field to hear very clearly. All the soldiers were staring up wide eyed at the building where the higher-ups were sitting.

“How can that be?! No way no way!”

Lei Yu hurriedly waved his hands, but then he realized, wasn't he being too arrogant right now? Nuo Yi Long was a late-stage Fifth Order Warrior rank, how would he be that easily defeated?

Sure enough, Shangguan Xi Hong laughed, "little Yu, you can not underestimate Nuo Yi Long. Even though his strength cannot be compared to the leaders of the major forces in the country, but inside the country of Tenglong, he is considered one of the top masters." Without any shame, Shangguan Xi Hong painted himself as one of those supreme masters.

No one would believe that Lei Yu had broken through to the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior. Lei Yu also

did not disclose this information, even Nuo Hu and Liu Hao did not know.

Those with the strength of the Fifth Order Warrior would be considered by the major forces as a prized possession, everyone would try to steal and fight over them, and this was happening for Lei Yu. If he was able to reach such strength at such a young age, then his future would be limitless. But in the eyes of everyone, this was something that was simply impossible.

“Little Yu.” Fan Hong Chang came over and laughed, “able to serve as the Deputy Commander of Dragon Group is already one of the highest honors for many people, yet you are not satisfied with that?”

“How could I not be satisfied Instructor Fan, stop making fun of me.” Lei Yu scratched his head.

“And now for the main event...” Shangguan Xi Hong interrupted their conversation, smiled and said: “No matter win or loss, I will gift you a treasure.”

“What kind of treasure?” Lei Yu’s spirit immediately perked up. Now this was the most practical thing instead of some position.

After saying this, Shangguan Xi Hong’s palm briefly flashed. From an unknown place, a dark blue box appeared in his hand. “It is this treasure; it’s called a Spiritual Energy Bead.” While taking out the bead, Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Yi Feng,



Fan Hong Chang and the dozen plus elites were staring straight at it filled with envy.

“Spiritual Energy Bead? What can it do?” Asked Lei Yu.

There’s a reason why Lei Yu did not know about this item. This Spiritual Energy Bead had some history, and it happened before Lei Yu joined the Dragon Group.

It was during a mission that Shangguan Xi Hong attained this bead. To an ordinary person, this bead would just be a decoration to them. But for cultivators, this bead was an absolute priceless treasure.

But unfortunately, Shangguan Xi Hong’s family members were

unable to use it, which made them quite depressed. Perhaps their family's cultivating methods with the Spiritual Energy Bead were mutually inhibited, or else he would not be so generous in giving it to Lei Yu.

“As the name of the Spiritual Energy Bead suggests, it gathers spiritual energy into the bead. When you cultivate with this bead in your possession, you put it between your legs or elsewhere, as long as it's close to your dantian, the spiritual energy you absorb in the air while cultivating will become more refined and pure. Although it cannot fully purify everything in the air, but at least it will save you the trouble for your body to naturally purify it.

“Shangguan Xi Hong looked at Lei Yu, but he did not see the surprised reaction he was expecting.

“Thank you uncle Shangguan!” Lei Yu faintly smiled. If one did not know the power behind Lei Yu, then they would think he did not fully comprehend the words Shangguan Xi Hong said, but does Lei Yu still need such a thing at all?

# Chapter 53: In The Nick Of Time

“What’s wrong? You’re not interested?” Shangguan Xi Hong thought this was strange. If this gift was given to someone else, their reaction would probably be jumping out of their seat or at least cheering out in joy, but Lei Yu looked very calm and did not have a face that showed any particular excitement.

“Interested! Of course I’m interested!” Lei Yu realized his face was a bit too stiff, hurriedly grabbing the box, he said: “It’s just that I was momentarily struck dumb, the happiness hasn’t

registered yet, thank you uncle Shangguan!” Pretending to have a pleased face, Lei Yu gently opened the box and a blue egg sized bead with a transparent body appeared in front of his eyes. Looking at it gave one a different kind of feeling of beauty, and one was able to feel up close that this bead was able to do what Shangguan Xi Hong had mentioned. Apart from being able to clean out impurities, the current surrounding air had already become cleaner due to the effect of the exposed bead.

Lei Yu’s current expression was what Shangguan Xi Hong wanted to see, and was his purpose only to reward Lei Yu? Nope, it was never this simple. That day of Lei Yu’s duel against Cai Zhong, at the most

critical moment, even though both of them were covered in a black smoke, how could this super strong master not see? It was obvious that inside Lei Yu, there was an uncontrollable force. Once that force explodes forth, it's definitely not something many people could handle.

If such a good seedling did not stay in Martial Sect and was stolen by others, then it would be such a big loss to them. So, Shangguan Xi Hong came up with this show of generosity, but unfortunately he miscalculated. Lei Yu's face showed many thanks and appreciation, but in fact, this object to him was just a surplus item. Just one of the effects of his Spiritual Bead of Longevity's efficacy was much stronger than

this Spiritual Energy Bead. But since he received this, regardless of giving it to Nuo Hu or his disciple Liu Hao, it's still a good thing that has happened to him.

“Let's not waste anymore time with chatting; we are ready for the competition!” Hiding his envious stares, Nuo Yi Long said this to Lei Yu.

“Okay!” The two walked towards the railing where Nuo Hu and Liu Hao were. Nuo Yi Long stomped his foot and leapt off the three-storey building onto the ground of the training field, then slowly moved towards the center.

“Big brother, can you hold onto this for me?” Lei Yu gave the box

containing the Spiritual Energy Bead to Nuo Hu. Nuo Hu could not help feel a bit surprised, such a rare treasure and Lei Yu just casually shoved it in his hands? Wasn't he a bit too trusting with this sworn brother? This action moved Nuo Hu greatly, at least in Nuo Hu's heart; Lei Yu gave him his absolute trust.

With a gentle leap, Lei Yu also jumped down to the ground.

The two stood in the middle of the training field and began to form their own fighting stance.

Nuo Yi Long's internal energy was already fluctuating out of his body, giving off a strong pressure that even distorted the air in the surrounding atmosphere. If this



incredibly strong power exploded forth outwards, there was no doubt that it could easily destroy a building.

Facing against such an opponent, Lei Yu could not afford to be careless. Inside his body, the surging purple internal energy with threads of lightning shimmering within it was circulated throughout his entire body. This time, Lei Yu was going to demonstrate his new ability.

According to the explanations of his cultivating methods, after reaching the [Discharge] stage, his attack not only had the effect of lightning within it, but he was also able to discharge lightning in order to extend the reach of his attacks to

a certain point.

And this force was more powerful compared to before, and can be easily seen by simply looking at the lightning contained within this newly formed internal energy.

The competition was about to start. Everyone was holding their breath, their eyes staring unblinkingly at the two, fearing they'd miss something if they looked away.

Lei Yu was changing his past tactic of not moving and countering, first by modifying his battle stance. The opponent he was facing today was not someone similar to his own strength; he was facing an individual with the power of a late-stage Fifth Order Warrior. If he

waited for his opponent to attack first, it's not certain if he can even block it, let alone counterattack.

Lei Yu's speed was really fast, with a flash of several steps as if he was the embodiment of lightning, he had arrived in front of Nuo Yi Long. They both threw out a punch at each other.

\*Bang Bang!\*

As their fists travelled through the air, it brought forth the sound of a roaring wind. Their two fists collided at extreme speeds, causing ripples of distorted light. This was Nuo Yi Long using his strength to negate Lei Yu's power of paralysis.

With more and more number of

fists colliding in midair, the surprised expression on Nuo Yi Long's face was becoming increasingly evident. Lei Yu's attack speed was very fast – the moment he finished punching, his next punch was already on its way as the process repeated itself. At this time, Nuo Yi Long could only solely concentrate on defense since he was unable to counterattack.

“This kid really has great potential!” Shangguan Xi Hong thought to himself, his head also could not stop nodding. It appears the gift he expended today in return for this good seedling was worth it.

In the training field, Lei Yu's left fist punched out, while the blur of his kick had already neared Nuo Yi

Long's abdominal area, his leg was like the shadow of a lightning strike. As it got close, Nuo Yi Long threw out a palm strike forcing Lei Yu's leg to retract. They both felt a numbness come to pass. Nuo Yi Long felt numb because of Lei Yu's kick contained the lightning paralysis effect, while Lei Yu was slapped by the palm strike; the raw power behind it was like him kicking a solid block of steel. "Ahhhh!" Nuo Yi Long stomped onto the ground and the earth tremored. His eyes glowed red, and his whole body was already in the air, flying in the opposite direction away from Lei Yu. He could not keep entangling himself in the current melee with Lei Yu because he simply could not find a chance to fight back.

Backing away, he once again somersaulted backwards, both hands striking the surface of the ground, allowing him to flip into the air and creating an additional ten plus steps distance between them.

“Peng!”

Lei Yu's fists became palms, again with lightning speed trying to rush over, but this time, Nuo Yi Long will not give Lei Yu the opportunity. Yellow internal energy suddenly surged, Nuo Yi Long's face suddenly reddened, focusing his waist as the center, and his back as the pillar, he twisted his waist, his entire body's strength was almost completely focused into his right fist, enlarging all the muscles in his right fist,

veins popping out with a pattern like a slab of granite, the speed was extremely fast, following along a straight line, the attack rushing towards Lei Yu.

“Agh!”

Feeling the incoming fearsome heavy punch, Lei Yu suddenly could not stop his current pace, he could only recklessly continue forward. If this punch landed upon Lei Yu's head, he would definitely lose the ability to continue fighting.

The situation was at a critical point and he could not worry too much. Lei Yu poured his internal energy into his right arm only to find a bloated feeling from it. “Ahh!” His voice burst out. With his strong

power of lightning, he rushed forward to clash with Nuo Yi Long's super heavy punch. Also at this time, Nuo Yi Long's fist went slightly off course in an attempt to avoid colliding with Lei Yu's fist. Cleverly moving half an inch to the left, if Lei Yu continued rushing forward at this trajectory, then Nuo Yi Long's fist would be the first to reach Lei Yu's head. Because his physique was more sturdy than Lei Yu's, and his arm length was also longer, it's because he saw this minute detail that it was decided that Nuo Yi Long would easily win this competition.

The moment he determined his success in winning easily, everything suddenly changed. In front of Nuo Yi Long's eyes, he saw



a thin purple thread flash and then disappear, and the next moment, his fist involuntarily pulled back, blocking both his eyes tightly. But it appears everything was already too late.

# Chapter 54: Dragon Chanting Method

Lei Yu took this opportunity, the instant Nuo Yi Long pulled back his fist, he did not stop his own attack. A powerful force mixed with “pak pak” sounds of lightning colliding together that made people’s heart shudder, could be heard. Then, a sudden “ROAR!” of a dragon was heard next. Looking at Nuo Yi Long, Lei Yu’s attack had not reached him yet, but behind his back, a 2 meter long yellow dragon rose up. The image of the dragon was slightly blurry, and it suddenly dragged Nuo Yi Long’s body back a few steps, avoiding Lei Yu’s strong attack.

“Woa!”

“This is amazing! What just happened?”

“I have no clue! I only saw a flash of purple lightning; I simply couldn’t see anything clearly!”

Soldiers sitting at the edge of the training field were applauding and cheering. Everyone looked like they were excited to their limit. If it weren’t for Lei Yu taking the initiative to challenge the Commander, these soldiers that have never studied any cultivating methods would never be able to see such a fight.

“Uncle Nuo, you are really very strong!” Lei Yu’s attack missed, so

he stood there and said this.

“Little Yu, the surprises you give me are way too much, I really want to know what stage have you actually reached?” Nuo Yi Long slightly exhaled some turbid air, the yellow dragon behind him then disappeared without a trace.

“The martial methods I cultivate in also has six stages, and I’ve just entered the early fifth stage.”

“What?!”

“What?!”

Not only was Nuo Yi Long shocked, even Shangguan Xi Hong sitting in the building had his mouth agape and his eyes wide in shock, grabbing the railing in front of him.

But these words were only heard by the two of them, one was close by, while the other was a super strong master with uncanny hearing ability.

“Fifth... Fifth Order...!? How is this possible? How long have you been cultivating? How old are you right now? How could you already reach the Fifth rank?” Asked Nuo Yi Long filled with shock.

“I don’t really know so I can only let uncle Nuo test it out and check if I’ve really reached the Fifth Order rank. Uncle Nuo, be careful now!” Once he said this, Lei Yu stepped off and burst forward, “swish!” His body instantly flew through mid-air towards Nuo Yi Long.

As one of the top masters in the late-stage Fifth Order rank, how could his reactions not be quick?

Changing his hands into a claw form, this was what Nuo Yi Long cultivated, the Dragon Chanting Method's primary means of attack. His dragon claws' strength was comparable to an artillery bombardment. Lei Yu's body was like a flying bolt of lightning, the heavy punch landed on his chest area without much resistance. Nuo Yi Long's body trembled from the power of paralysis, that power travelling all the way to his left shoulder. This paralysis feeling was really hard to resist, fortunately he was not seriously injured by it.

His left arm was slightly paralyzed

but his right arm was still able to move freely. Bringing forth the howling winds, his dragon claws swept in front of him towards Lei Yu's body.

“Thump, Thump!”

Eyes with an unbelieving gaze at Lei Yu, Nuo Yi Long's chest were hit at the same time he struck at Lei Yu. Nuo Yi Long could not believe, with his impenetrable defense, Lei Yu was able to find an unprotected spot and exploit it. Using his right leg, he used the ground as a leveraging point, spun his body around performing a perfect dragon kick. His left leg was like a python striking at the front of Lei Yu.

The length of his leg of course

exceeds his arm, but Lei Yu did not show any signs of fearing Nuo Yi Long's dragon kick. Lei Yu's mouth actually curved into a smile.

The instant Nuo Yi Long's heavy leg was about to land, Lei Yu suddenly squatted down, with one hand on the ground for support, he kicked up both feet into the air, aiming for Nuo Yi Long's right leg that was standing on the ground supporting his body.

\*Pak\*

\*Ping\*

These two different sounds went off simultaneously. Both of Lei Yu's feet collided into Nuo Yi Long's right leg, which the latter flipped



beautifully into the air before standing firmly on the ground. The goal of his left leg did not change, it still being Lei Yu, but his attack just changed its trajectory going downwards.

Lei Yu's body was suddenly smashed down into the ground. A heavy \*cough cough\* sound could be heard, and a mouthful of blood was spit out. Lei Yu was clutching onto his chest that suffered the attack.

Just then, Nuo Yi Long's dragon kick cracked Lei Yu's sternum and the shock wave damaged his internal organs. At this point in time, Lei Yu could barely tolerate the pain. With his strong defense and his special bone structure, his

sternum was actually fractured by raw power. This shows how powerful Nuo Yi Long's blow was.

"Little Yu, are you okay?" Nuo Yi Long immediately stopped attacking and was ready to rush forward to support him.

"No! Don't come over! We continue the fight!" Lei Yu forcefully spit out a bloody phlegm and stood up again, but this terrible pain caused him to be breathless.

"You're already hurt, we shouldn't keep fighting." Nuo Yi Long was advising Lei Yu to stop the fight out of the worry for his health.

"No. If I give up this match just because of my injury, then if one

day I was really in danger, then I will be giving up my life, this cannot be allowed!” Lei Yu’s eyes were filled with an explosive look of determination, as if all his fighting energy had returned to his person.

“Purple!”

One of the soldiers suddenly opened his mouth and cried out. From his angle, he was able to see a net of purple lightning intertwining on Lei Yu’s back, slowly fluctuating.

Indeed, after Lei Yu reached the [Discharge] stage, he was able to materialize the power of lightning to appear on the outside of his body. This allowed his attacks to be extended a short distance away from his body. Not only that, but it

could also be used as a defensive net. As long as his opponent doesn't use a weapon to attack him, then Lei Yu would be advantageous in unarmed fights.

"You still haven't used your full strength for this fight?" Nuo Yi Long's shocked appearance was more obvious now.

"The real battle has only now started!" Lei Yu's body slightly trembled, the surface of his body manifested numerous lightning nets wrapping around itself. Lei Yu looked like he was clothed in a suit of lightning.

"I really have to keep my eyes on you!" Standing against the railings' edge of the building, Shangguan Xi

Hong eyes revealed a trace of determination in it. No one knows what he was thinking, but at least for now he would not hurt Lei Yu who was considered a genius class person.

Sensing Lei Yu was fighting for real now, Nuo Yi Long did not dare to be careless. His internal energy once again rose up and a yellow dragon appeared behind him. The Dragon Chanting Method's ultimate move was to form an illusory dragon with internal energy, then making the illusion become a real entity. It looks like Nuo Yi Long's current level; he could only form the illusory dragon. He was still a long way off in making that illusory dragon become a real entity and attacking with it.

But for now, he could use his internal energy to form an illusory dragon, thereby making his attacks more powerful and violent.

Lei Yu moved his body here and there, then stretched a bit, it looked like his previous injury didn't exist. His feet constantly shifted in a footwork pattern (like boxing), and the lightning net surrounding his body began pulsing in a stronger fashion. With "pak pak" sounds, Lei Yu rushed towards Nuo Yi Long.

"ROAR!" Once again, the voice of a dragon resounded through the sky, causing the hearts of ordinary soldiers to quiver in fear, this domineering pressure was enough to suppress the masses.

Both his claw-like hands raised up high, the illusory dragon behind him began to blur, condensing into his hands. With his claw-like hands, they both came down at the same time, smashing into the ground in front of him. This attack was capable of turning rocks and boulders into pieces of rubble.

Lei Yu was getting closer, and closer...

# Chapter 55: Outcome Of Winning And Losing

Fang Yi Ke = little Ke = the nurse Lei  
Yu met in the hospital

---

“Agh!”

“Ka Cha!”

With those sounds, a dazzling  
piercing light burst forth as the two  
clashed together, brightening the  
entire training ground. This caused  
most of the soldiers to close their



eyes, but they couldn't completely close them, revealing a slight crack hoping to see the outcome of this final struggle.

In the past high-level duels, the outcome was usually decided with a final ultimate move, and this scenario was also the same.

“Poof!” Nuo Yi Long’s mouth sprayed a mist of blood into the air. His body took a few steps back before standing steady again. His chest area had suffered a heavy attack that contained the fury of lightning.

As for Lei Yu, an “ugh” sound was heard from him. Big mouthfuls of blood came out of his mouth, all of his internal organs were damaged,

his internal energy was running amok inside. “Agghh!” Lei Yu fell onto the ground with a heavy thud, the lightning net surrounding his body disappeared without a trace.

The outcome of the match was very obvious, Lei Yu suffered serious injuries and cannot continue. And for Nuo Yi Long, apart from his bodily injuries, he also took a hit to his mental state. Originally this match was just an exchanging of pointers to him; no serious injuries should result from it so he was supposed to hold back his use of internal energy. But because of Lei Yu’s previous statement provoking Nuo Yi Long’s fighting spirit, this tragic outcome appeared.

“Quick, send him to the infirmary!”

Nuo Yi Long once again spit out a mouthful of blood, hurriedly shouting towards the group of soldiers frozen in shock.

“Ahh! Okay!” A dozen soldiers rushed over and picked up Lei Yu while several other soldiers went to support Nuo Yi Long, rushing towards the direction of the infirmary.

As for Nuo Hu and the rest of the spectators up on the building, a drop of cold sweat dripped from their forehead. The look of shock in their eyes would not dissipate at all.

“Master, he...”

“Little Yu is way too strong, able to fight against my father and cause

such injuries to him, I'm afraid there aren't many people in existence that can say that. I did not expect this, not at all!" Nuo Hu and several others even forget that the two had been seriously injured and were sent to the infirmary. The shock in Shangguan Xi Hong's heart was no less than the others, this Lei Yu, he must think of way to firmly hold onto him and not let him leave no matter what.

Shangguan Xi Hong was the first to recover, "let's quickly rush to the infirmary and see how they're doing!"

"Ah! Right! Let's go!" Nuo Hu and the rest finally recovered, rushing down the building and towards the infirmary.

The green energy inside Lei Yu's body was continuously surging, and at the same time, it was gradually repairing the injured meridians and internal organs.

Fortunately, the degree of injury to Lei Yu was not life threatening. Although Nuo Yi Long's use of power was ruthless, he still held back about ten percent of his power. After all, his mental state was still rational and was not intending to kill Lei Yu, this was just a challenge match to test each other's strength.

After some emergency treatment, the pain Lei Yu felt had been reduced by some. After all, the infirmary here was not equipped with as much medical equipment as

the large hospitals out there.

Inside a hospital room.

“How come you’re hurt again? How long has it only been?” Fang Yi Ke asked Lei Yu on the hospital bed, blinking her eyes.

Liu Hao wet his lips and said, “it’s good that master is okay, but master, you are truly way too powerful! My admiration to you is like the flowing water of the Yangtze River...”

“Stop with the bullshit!” Lei Yu half scolded and half laughed as a burst of severe pain hit his chest.

“Stop moving around and rest, your injury this time is less compared to last time, but not that much better

off. I really don't understand exactly what kind of job do you do, why are you always getting hurt?" In actuality, little Ke wanted to say this out loud, but could only say this inside her distressed heart. Seeing Lei Yu in this condition where every movement would cause him pain, she felt like her heart was being stabbed with needles.

"Oh yea!" Lei Yu suddenly remembered, "how is uncle Nuo?"

"Him? He's also in the hospital but his injuries aren't as serious compared to yours master, he never lost conscious."

There was a "bang" sound and the door was suddenly thrown open, and a naturally attractive girl

rushed in, “Lei Yu, are you alright?!”

“Oh, you came! I’m fine, still alive.”  
Lei Yu smiled faintly, shifting his body back while holding a half sitting half lying down position.

“So hateful! You scared me half to death and still say such things? What’s going on with you, always getting hurt, and each time it’s so serious!” Cui Ying Ying rushed over to the bed and looked all over Lei Yu’s body, causing him to be slightly embarrassed.

“Sister Ying Ying, how come you’re here?” Asked Liu Hao.

“Ai Er gave me a call crying over the phone. She went to see her father first but will come over here soon.”



Cui Ying Ying replied.

Sure enough, as Cui Ying Ying finished saying this, another “bang” was heard the door was thrown open again. Ai Er’s eyes were still filled with tears as she came in, causing anyone’s heart to ache upon seeing her.

“How could you challenge my father?! How come none of you told me this in advance?” Ai Er’s speed was not slow running over. “Do you know how strong he is? How can you be his opponent?! Always causing people to worry about you, I was worried to death! ” Ai Er saw that her father and Lei Yu was okay before throwing such a tantrum, or else she would be voiceless and only crying.

“I know I was wrong okay?” Lei Yu was despondent, “can you all not complain and lecture the first time you lay eyes on me? I’m still in a bad shape... aggh!” After saying this, a wave of pain hit his chest once more.

All three women rushed forward at the same time and asked “how are you feeling?!”

“Still in a lot of pain?”

“You’re okay right? Don’t talk so much.”

“Tsk, tsk.” Liu Hao shook his head, “how could master’s fate with women be this good?”

After saying this, the atmosphere in the room suddenly froze. Ai Er was

okay, but Cui Ying Ying suddenly felt a bit weird and stood up, half bending down towards Lei Yu and half standing up in an unnatural position.

Now the person that felt the most out of place was Fang Yi Ke; her hands were still resting on top of Lei Yu, still stroking his chest. She suddenly blushed from her face all the way down to her neck, looking particularly cute to others.

“I’m fine, I’m fine! Ai Er, how is uncle Nuo doing?” Lei Yu tried changing the subject while glaring his eyes at Liu Hao. Eyes filled with blame, the receiver of the glare swallowed hard and dared not to say a word anymore.

“My father is okay, but his chest suffered a violent impact so he’s currently being scanned by an X-ray, he should be fine.” Replied Ai Er.

The hospital room was filled with the love of three women towards one man. Liu Hao filled with envy was sitting quietly at the side, slapping his thighs with nothing else to do.

This time, Lei Yu had to stay in the hospital for a longer period. Even though his injury was not as serious as last time, but last time he did not damage his bones, while this time, he fractured quite a bit of his bones. Thus, he had to rest longer so that no accidents would occur in the meantime.

In reality, Ai Er saw through how Cui Ying Ying and Fang Yi Ke tenderly treated Lei Yu. Although seeds of jealousy did sprout in her heart, but no matter what, the man she loved had so many other women attracted to him, she could not help admiring her own choices in picking people.

Three months time passed by very quickly. During this time, Lei Yu was able to thoroughly enjoy being surrounded by three beautiful women taking turns caring for him, but at times he would also feel a bit helpless with this situation.

On the other side of the city, inside a luxurious private hotel room filled with a deep sense of spring, two women and a man in different

positions were on the bed. A beautiful sexy girl was lying between the man's crotch area, sucking up and down vigorously.

# Chapter 56: A Generous Gift

\*Boom boom boom\*

“Mother f\*cker! Who is it?!” Cursed a middle-aged man in the language of the Kou country.

Pushing away the girl at his crotch, the middle-aged man wrapped himself in a towel and walked towards the door. He took a look through the peep-hole before hastily opening the door for the person.

“Official[1] Otsuka!” Cried the middle-aged man in the towel, looking quite nervous.

“Asshole!”

“Yes!”

The man outside rushed in but when he saw the two girls on the bed, his brow wrinkled, and cursed at them with a less than fluent Tenglong language, “get out!”

“So annoying, making us come and now screaming for us to get out, what is the meaning of this?!” Complained the two girls getting dressed before leaving hastily.

Waiting until the girls were gone, Otsuka slowly sat down, his hands playing with a golden chain on his neck. His looks were normal, one would guess his age to be in the forties, medium build. But



Nagasaka treated this person called Otsuka with extreme respect.

“There’s a directive from up top, so you better pay attention. The next few days, I don’t want to see what I just saw happening.” Otsuka lightly said.

“Understood!”

“According to the original plan, we were aiming to gradually spread our influence in Tenglong starting at the central area of the country, but it looks like it won’t be that easy now. The conflicts inside this country are too intense between the four major forces, so it looks like we can only start by getting Ming Sect’s assistance. Let’s see if we can get some benefits out of the chaos. As

long as our products are circulated in the market, we won't be afraid of not making any money." Otsuka coldly sneered.

"Sounds good, I'll go discuss this matter with boss Du again. Official Otsuka, don't worry about it, I'll take care of everything!"

"Good, but no need to be in such a rush. The latest development of our new prototype bacterial agent still needs some time so before this drug gets delivered to us, it's best not to mention this matter for now.

-----

Early morning, Lei Yu breathed in a deep mouthful of fresh air, he was finally leaving the hospital. This

past year, a third of the time was spent in the hospital causing him a headache, he had wasted so much time that could be used for cultivating instead.

Shangguan Xi Hong was true to his words, although this match could be considered as both parties mutually suffering losses, Lei Yu did fall while Nuo Yi Long continued standing, thus Lei Yu was made a Deputy Commander of Dragon Group.

The halo of glory. After the conclusion of Lei Yu and Nuo Yi Long's match, everything was focused on this youngster that was only in his early twenties, how many people have actually dreamed of bathing in this glory? For a super

existences such as Shangguan Xi Hong, there's only about five people in the whole country. And for the existence of people like Nuo Yi Long, there would be no more than twenty. And now Lei Yu had entered those ranks while being the youngest of them all, this was definitely an unprecedented event.

To celebrate Lei Yu leaving the hospital, the previous group once again met up at the downtown's street market barbeque place, Long Hua's Barbeque City.

Seeing this group of people again, the boss was extremely delighted. Of course, not daring to slight them, he brought out only the freshest meat and the most expensive beer in accordance to their taste.

“Little Yu, that Spiritual Energy Bead of yours, I’ll bring it back tomorrow to Dragon Group and return it to you. These days that you’ve been staying in the hospital, I’ve kept it in my home.” Nuo Hu said this while taking a bite of the delicious lamb meat.

“Eh?” Lei Yu blinked, “I had forgotten about that thing already.”

“Forgotten?” Liu Hao wrinkled his nose, “master, you are really hard to decipher. That day, didn’t that Shangguan something make it very clear? The role of this Spiritual Energy Bead is very important for assisting cultivators, it could at least save you half the cultivating time. If it weren’t for the fact that their cultivating methods being

incompatible with it, they would never have given it to you.”

“What about it? Do you like it? If you like it, I’ll give it to you since I don’t really need it.” Said Lei Yu in a carefree attitude.

\*Clatter\* Two beer glasses fell on the table, splashing onto Liu Hao and Nuo Hu. The three girls showed a confused expression while Liu Hao and Nuo Hu had no reaction afterwards, their eyes about to pop out of their heads.

A short while later, Liu Hao asked while stammering, “ma... master, you... you aren’t joking with me right?”

“Right, little Yu, you cannot joke

around with this. This item is something that all cultivators in Tenglong dream of having, how can you say that you don't need it?" Nuo Hu had to forcefully swallow the lamb meat before asking.

"It's a secret." Lei Yu smiled, drank a mouthful of beer and then said: "Anyway, this thing is not much use to me so how about this, since you and Liu Hao both like it so much, then you guys take turn using it."

"Master!" Liu Hao forcefully sniffed in his snot, "my admiration for you is like the Yangtze River..."

"Enough, enough! Don't make my hair stand on end, it's decided then."

Liu Hao and Nuo Hu's excitement made them reach for their glass of beer, even their hands were constantly shaking, thus toasting Lei Yu and draining their glass.

Such a bead in the eyes of ordinary people were similar to a decoration, but for cultivators, it was a priceless treasure. Able to purify the energy in their air for their absorption, this was equal to taking a shortcut. You don't need to waste your own internal energy to do this time-consuming and labor-intensive work, so how can Liu Hao and Nuo Hu not feel excited about it?

But this thing for Lei Yu was really not much use, the Spiritual Energy Bead could only attain a basic purification level, still requiring



one's body to remove some the remaining small amount of impurities. As for the Spiritual Bead of Longevity inside his brain, it could easily purify all the impurities before it entered his body. Just this one effect of the Longevity Bead exceeded the ability of the Spiritual Energy Bead.

This group of people were happily enjoying their food and drinks, the most invigorated being Liu Hao and Nuo Hu. As for the three beautiful women, though they did not know what the guys were talking about, but at least they knew that Lei Yu gave them something precious causing the two to be so excited.

“It's getting late, it's past midnight already.” Lei Yu stretched his neck,

“it’s time for me to go home and cultivate.”

They paid their bill and began to leave. The boss was generous like before, giving them a 20% discount. This group of people weren’t ordinary people so the boss wanted to curry their favor so they would return again.

“Let’s go, I’ll take you home.” Nuo Hu patted Lei Yu’s shoulder.

“No need, you go home with Ai Er, I’m going to walk.” Laughed Lei Yu.

“It’s so late already, don’t go off for a one man tour, just come with us.”

“It’s fine, I haven’t exercised at all due to this past three months spent in the hospital. I will feel more

comfortable moving around a bit. So just go home first, when you get home, give me a call.” The last sentence was said to Ai Er.

“Fine, then be careful. This place is pretty far from your home, if you don’t feel like walking anymore, get a taxi to go home, don’t stay out too late, okay?” Ai Er said this with concern out of love. In reality, Ai Er was not worried Lei Yu would encounter any danger, rest assured that such a powerful man could take care of himself.

“Then we’re leaving first!” Liu Hao, Cui Ying Ying, and Fang Yi Ke those three were the first to leave. Lei Yu walked in the direction those three left in, while Nuo Hu and Ai Er drove away in the opposite

direction.

Lei Yu looked up to the sky and didn't see any stars. He noticed the street had become empty, only a few night market stalls still had some customers left sitting there.

“Enemies, my enemies, I must become stronger!” There was nothing in Lei Yu's mind except for these two things. He wanted to know who his enemy was. Until now, the death of his grandfather was still a mystery, and the only way to solve this mystery was to become stronger.

As he was walking, his mind was constantly thinking about all his past memories: there were bitterness; there were resentment;

but there were also happy events. But all of these were in the past, the most important thing was to look towards the future.

Walking for about half an hour, he walked by a small dark alley. Lei Yu suddenly heard some screaming noise and some shouts. Narrowing his eyes, he peered inside.

“Agh! Go away! I’m begging you, let me go!” A girl’s voice was screaming hysterically, and the next thing you could hear was a man’s excited laughter.

-----

[1] Not a government official but used to address a high ranking person in the organization.

# Chapter 57: Kou Country's Ninja

“Something’s wrong!” Lei Yu’s heart burst, “this girl’s voice is very familiar... little Ke!”

Lei Yu felt his mind became numb as he rapidly rushed over. Lei Yu’s speed was like lightning, instantly arriving where the cries originated from.

Jumping into the air, he kicked out aiming for the man’s head.

“Agghh!”

The man’s body flew away sideways, landing heavily on the ground and

smashing into some trash cans.

“Little Ke! It’s really you!” Lei Yu’s heart was trembling. He observed little Ke’s hair was disheveled; her eyes filled with fear; her clothes were messy; her white skin appeared whiter in the contrast of darkness; and the clothes on her upper body had been ripped to shreds.

That one kick by Lei Yu was enough to take the life of an ordinary person because during the desperate situation, Lei Yu could not accurately judge his target’s distance and the strength to use. But the surprising thing was this man could actually stood back up, and with a poorly accented Tenglong language, “you dare to

ruin my good time?!”

“F\*ck you, I’m going to f\*cking kill you!” Lei Yu stared at the shameless man with blood-red eyes.

“Kill me?” The man sneered. \*Clap, clap, clap\* The sound of three hand claps was heard. From a side door rushed out four people, all dressed fully in black and with their faces covered. Lei Yu realized that these were Kou country’s most respected fighting elites, ninjas. But why would they appear here?

“Kill him; he dared to ruin my fun!” Once the man gave the order, the four ninjas responded in unison: “Yes, Official Nagasaka!”

Lei Yu readied his stance. He didn’t



feel any oppressive atmosphere so it seems that the ninjas in front of him were lower ranked ones. In the eyes of Lei Yu, these people were nothing to him.

Not waiting for the ninjas to act, Lei Yu stepped off like an arrow. With his lightning like speed, his rapid fists were already aiming for their heads.

One could hear four “smack, smack, smack, smack” sounds, and the four ninjas were knocked to the ground.

The man that was previously kicked in the face by Lei Yu was completely shocked, “who are you?!”

At this moment, Lei Yu was only

thinking about settling little Ke's anguish for her. Inside his heart, little Ke was a cute and adorable girl, and her meticulous way of taking care of him in the hospital, Lei Yu had nothing but gratitude for her. Yet for her to suffer such indignity at this moment, Lei Yu was thoroughly enraged – "I will take your life!"

Assuming his lightning stance, a purple lightning net appeared around Lei Yu's fist. This powerful attack pierced through the silence of the night. A "screeching" sound like the howling of death arrived at this man's chest.

\*THUMP\* The man's eyes were round and wide, a deep crater had formed on his chest. His eyes

looked like they were going to fall out of its socket from shock. The man then slowly fell to the ground, no longer able to stand ever again.

Hurriedly turning around, “little Ke, are you okay little Ke?” Lei Yu wanted to reach out and support her, but Fang Yi Ke struggled like she had gone mad. She pushed Lei Yu’s hand away and screamed: “Don’t touch me! Don’t touch me!”

“Little Ke, it’s me little Ke, I’m Lei Yu!” Lei Yu’s mood was a bit emotional, his heart aching upon seeing Fang Yi Ke having a mental breakdown.

“Lei Yu? Lei Yu? Lei Yu... I love Lei Yu... But! No! No! I’ve already been sullied, no! I no longer dare to show

my face in front of Lei Yu, I am not worthy of Lei Yu!” Fang Yi Ke’s eyes were wide open filled with fear that could not be eliminated. Lei Yu’s heart was almost shattered by her words. He wrapped his arms around little Ke with the torn up messy clothes, his heart filled with unbearable pain.

Waiting for little Ke to gradually calm down, Lei Yu took off his shirt off and draped it over her. Pulling out his cell phone, “Nuo Hu, I need you to come to my location right now, call Liu Hao as well but don’t disturb Ai Er, also don’t let Liu Hao contact Cui Ying Ying, my current location is...”

Lei Yu’s voice was very anxious, so Nuo Hu and Liu Hao did not dare to

delay. Within ten minutes or so, they both arrived at the same time, and upon seeing the scene in front of them, they both sucked in a deep breath.

Lying on the ground were four people in black, and a partially unclothed middle-age man with a sunken chest. They noticed Fang Yi Ke sitting in a corner with dull unmoving eyes, tightly wrapping Lei Yu's shirt in front of her chest.

"Little Yu, what... what is the meaning of this?"

"Master, what on earth happened?"

\*Slap!\*

Lei Yu heavily slapped Liu Hao in the face, "how did you take little Ke

home? She has been sullied! Why didn't you escort her all the way to the front door?" Lei Yu's anger made his breathing faster, this was the first time Lei Yu actually hit Liu Hao for real.

Covering his face, for a master to hit their disciple, naturally he could not say anything. But Liu Hao felt aggrieved; his tears could not help itself from dripping down. After hitting Liu Hao, Lei Yu also felt some regret.

"Master, I ..... I did escort little Ke to her front door. Her house is not far from here, so I don't know why she would come here." Liu Hao explained.

"I'm sorry, I was too impulsive." Lei

Yu gradually calmed his emotions.  
“Big brother, can you help  
investigate and look around their  
bodies for their property? If my  
guess is correct, they are foreigners  
from the Kou country.”

Turning his head around, “Liu Hao,  
you contact your circle of friends, I  
think you as the son of the  
Governor should have some pull at  
the police station right? Let’s get  
some police raids in the  
surrounding areas under whatever  
pretense you want, see if anything  
suspicious crops up. But don’t  
disclose what happened here, it’s  
best that word about this doesn’t  
spread since I’m afraid little Ke  
won’t be able to handle it.

They all split up and started

working; Nuo Hu searched the bodies for clues; Liu Hao started making calls; and Lei Yu went into the door that the four ninjas came out from.

The lighting inside the room was dim but there was a lot of space here. Lei Yu couldn't understand how such an alley only had one door? And such a big room had such a secretive door, if it weren't for the four ninjas rushing out, Lei Yu would have had a difficult time finding the door.

In the middle of the room was a table surrounded by four chairs; playing cards were scattered on top of the table. Looks like the four ninjas were playing cards here to pass their time.



“Something’s not right.” Lei Yu suddenly turned around and saw a wooden crate in the corner of the room. The crate’s height was about two meters; the four sides were the same, about 1 meter wide. What could be inside the crate? In the entire room, there were only the crate, the table and the chairs... were the ninjas guarding the crate?

Filled with suspicion, Lei Yu walked towards the crate, lightly tapped it, and heard a faint hollow noise. Lei Yu thought this was weird, so relying on his strong wrist strength, he forcefully ripped apart pieces of the wooden crate and created an opening.

“Oh my god!” Lei Yu sucked in a deep breath, then called out: “Big

brother, Liu Hao, come quickly!”

The two heard Lei Yu calling out and immediately rushed in. After seeing the scene in front of their eyes, they immediately froze. Liu Hao’s voice stammered a bit, “what... what... what is this thing?”

# Chapter 58:

## Scheming For Profit

Inside the wooden crate was a glass case, almost the same size as the crate. It looked as if the wooden crate was put together just to protect this glass case.

Inside the glass case were densely covered with insects. The whole insect's body was black; covered with a sticky ooze that would make someone want to throw up; and they each had two sharp teeth.

“F\*cking sickening!” Frowned Liu Hao.

“What were these bunch of

bastards doing?” Lei Yu turned his head, “big brother, I have no clue what these things are, I’ve never seen them before in my entire life. Should we contact Dragon Group and have this crate taken away?”

“Sounds good.” Nuo Hu nodded and walked outside. One look at these disgusting looking insects made one want to throw up so no one wanted to give it a second glance.

Lei Yu supported Fang Yi Ke and brought her towards a taxi. They hurriedly returned to Lei Yu’s home while the rest of the scene was left for Nuo Hu and Liu Hao to take care of.

As for killing several of the Kou country’s people, Nuo Hu conveyed

the situation to his fellow Dragon Group brothers and the police once they arrived on scene. What Dragon Group was involved in, the police here were not qualified nor authorized to interfere in. Nuo Hu only explained to the police that Dragon Group was on a mission.

As for Fang Yi Ke's incident, this was not disclosed; all the focus was put on the crate of unknown insects. The crate was quickly shipped to the research centers while everyone waited for the results.

Lei Yu supported little Ke and brought her into his house. He grabbed some clean clothes which actually belonged to Ai Er whom had left behind when she stayed

over in the past – both their body sizes happened to be similar in stature.

Fang Yi Ke's gaze were still lifeless and not responding to any stimuli, causing Lei Yu's head to somewhat ache. Forced to this circumstance, he gave Ai Er a call.

“Can you come to my house for a bit? Little Ke is here with me.”

“It's 2 o'clock in the morning, why is she at your house?” Asked Ai Er.

“Don't ask too many questions for now, something happened, oh yea, don't come over by yourself, it's best that you have someone drive you here.” Lei Yu was a bit afraid, he could not shake off the paranoia

feeling he was experiencing. Looking at little Ke's lifeless eyes, he could still see a trace of fear in them. Lei Yu felt his heart ache... "Lei Yu, I love you!" These words kept repeating itself in Lei Yu's mind. Little Ke's words made him feel like he wanted to go crazy.

Ai Er hurriedly put on a change of clothes, then used cold water to wash away her sleepiness. She hastily called her family's chauffeur and they drove to Lei Yu's house.

Lei Yu told Ai Er everything that had happened. For an entire night, Ai Er meticulously took care of little Ke. For a good friend to have suffered such a huge humiliation, how could a friend of hers not feel heartache and sorrow?

Although it was uneventful throughout the night at Lei Yu's house, and little Ke was finally able to sleep, the outside world was experiencing an earth shattering event.

Liu Hao contacted and influenced the police for large-scale raids; the aim was to find some clues on what's going on. Coupled with Nuo Hu and Dragon Group's presence, Liu Hao's words were more persuasive. Each police officer only knew to look for people acting suspiciously, but they didn't know who they were specifically looking for.

Outside the research room door, stood a few imposing people. This group included Nuo Yi Long and



several other local army commanders.

The results will be out soon so Nuo Yi Long and the others wanted to get the results first hand and immediately report it to their superiors.

A bald old man wearing eye glasses came out from the research room, followed by a young man and woman who were both also research scientists.

“Professor Luo, how was it? What are these creatures?” Asked Nuo Yi Long.

Professor Luo pushed the glasses resting on his nose, “quite frightful, but fortunately it was found early.

Inside the insect's body contains a lot of bacteria, if a human came in contact with it, it will likely cause a serious illness before leading to paralysis. According to my research, this bacterium is not from nature but was somehow injected into it. These insects should have been some common insects. During the larval stage, they were injected with these bacterium causing them to look like what we see now. These insects are extremely interested in any types of flesh, and once they discover that presence, no matter the obstacles, they will be desperately sink their mouths into it. From this we can see how frightful their characteristics are.

“These insects are that horrifying?”  
Nuo Yi Long's eyes were wide with

shock.

“That’s right; you should quickly report this situation to our superiors, while I would like to conduct further research. It’ll be fine if this were the only case of insects, but if there are others floating around, then things may become really bad. I suspect that someone wants to maliciously release these insects here in Tenglong.

The seriousness of this situation had exceeded everyone’s expectations. Nuo Yi Long and others took the report Professor Luo printed out and left with it, heading in the direction of the main city.

The sky was already getting bright.

Lei Yu did not sleep the whole night, just blankly watching over the two girls sleep.

His thoughts were interrupted by the sudden ringing of his cell phone. Lei Yu quickly picked up the phone, "Liu Hao, what's going on?"

"Master, we haven't found any clues but Nuo Hu has something to tell you." Then Nuo Hu's voice came over the phone.

"Little Yu, things are very serious, those insects you discovered actually have some type of bacteria in them. The people up top suspect those sons of bitches from Kou country were intending to release the insects to cause a widespread of disease, and then sell us some

curing treatment at a high price.

“Those bastards!”

Lei Yu hung up the phone and found that Ai Er had awoken, “please take care of little Ke, I have to return to Dragon Group, some important things have come up.”

“I will, just be careful yourself.”

Inside a conference room in Dragon Group’s villa.

Nuo Yi Feng and Lei Yu sat across from each other at a large conference table, places next to the Commander’s empty seat. It seems that Lei Yu’s identity as a Deputy Commander has been approved.

Nuo Yi Feng looked at Lei Yu and

said: “Little Yu, you should be up-to-date on the current situation, and you were the one that discovered this whole incident so how about you relay this to everyone?”

Lei Yu nodded, then explained the state of affairs in detail to the elites of Dragon Team, and emphasized the seriousness of the situation. Everyone’s eyes revealed a trace of anger; those people from the Kou country were indeed bastards for such a thing to be schemed.

“The current assignment does not require Wild Wolf Team or Lion Team to take action. My fellow elite brothers of Dragon Team, I wish for everyone to spread out, combine with police efforts to search for clues. If there is even a single insect

exposed to society, then the consequences would be disastrous. One thing everyone must be clear on: The reason why this assignment only consists of Dragon Team members is because during this task, you may encounter some troublesome things – and this troublesome thing is likely the ninjas from the country of Kou. Therefore everyone needs to be alert and pay 120% attention to this task. Also, your actions cannot disturb the common civilians to avoid chaos. Does everyone understand?” During the explanation, Lei Yu unconsciously revealed his domineering aura.

“Yes, Deputy Commander!” The cry in unison brought forth an imposing manner.

After the meeting, the elites set out on their assignment. Lei Yu and Nuo Yi Feng sat in the conference room discussing some more things. Coincidentally, Nuo Yi Long at this moment returned to Dragon Group, it appears he was rushing back from the main city.

“Uncle Nuo, what did up top say?”  
Asked Lei Yu.

Sitting on the sofa, Nuo Yi Long’s face seemed a bit unpleasant, “when we reached the main city and reported our findings to the superiors, those up top directly communicated with the leaders of the Kou country, but they outright denied that it had anything to do with their country.



“Those bastards!” Lei Yu tightened his fist, the thought of little Ke at his house made Lei Yu’s anger flare up.

“Those up top gave some speculations for this situation, but none of the two speculations given had any direct relationship with the leader of the Kou country. First, it’s likely an attempt by the underground forces scheming for profit; and the second being some departments were accepting bribes leading this item to flow into Tenglong.”

“How could this be?” Lei Yu said frowning, “the underground forces scheming to profit from the disease spreading and selling the treatment at a high price; and Customs

accepting bribes is an ironclad fact;  
so how can this have nothing to do  
with the Kou country?"

# Chapter 59:

## Searching In Vain

“Since our country doesn’t want to meddle with this, it looks like they don’t want any direct conflicts with the Kou country. We can’t do much about it but at least for now, the most important thing is to search throughout the country for the presence of anymore of these bacterial insects, it’s the only recourse we have.” Said Nuo Yi Long helplessly.

Lei Yu heavily sighed, “since our country doesn’t want to clash with the Kou country, I personally have nothing to be afraid of so I’ll get to the bottom of this.”

“Little Yu, what are you planning to do?” Nuo Yi Long hurriedly asked with surprise.

“Nothing major, uncle Nuo, don’t worry about it.” Lei Yu stood up and then said: “I’m going to coordinate with my fellow brothers to look for clues, if something comes up, I will contact you immediately.”

Although Lei Yu seemed a bit strange, they couldn’t put a finger on exactly what’s wrong, so Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng both nodded while Lei Yu then turned and left.

Inside Ming Sect, Du Zhang Hai’s office.

“Why is Mr. Otsuka personally bringing this bacterial agent?” Du

Zhang Hai's voice sounded very polite.

A forty to fifty year old Kou person in less than fluent Tenglong language replied: "Nagasaka and several of his men were killed in Tenglong, and some important goods left behind were seized by your country so the situation is very serious for us."

"Oh? Something like this happened?" Du Zhang Hai put on an act because he had already received news of this early on. Among the major figureheads of the country, Ming Sect had placed their own members to keep a watchful eye on them, thus for a matter like this, it could be considered him already gaining first

hand information. Of course he made no mention of this in front of Otsuka.

Otsuka did not usually show his face in deals because his identity in the Kou country could be regarded as pivotal. The country of Kou were divided into two great forces, one could say these two forces were evenly matched, so they each could not eradicate the other.

One of the major forces was openly known to the public, mainly made up of officials that ran the day to day affairs of the Kou country. The other major force were the underground world that were singularly handled by the Yamaguchi-gumi, one could say they were untouchable. Even

though these forces were considered good vs. bad, they would at times mutually benefit off each other as if they were partners. As for Otsuka, he is considered an Advanced Ninja in the Yamaguchi-gumi. Ninjas in the Kou country were respected and admired by everyone, so with the emergence of the insects carrying a deadly bacterium, the officials of Kou naturally had to cover-up for the Yamaguchi-gumi. But of course they could not openly assist them; otherwise if this incident went all the way to the United Nations, then things would become troublesome.

Du Zhang Hai did not chat too much with Otsuka, except Otsuka did request the Ming Sect for help in finding the murderer of his

underling Nagasaka. In actuality, this was not a difficult task so Du Zhang Hai agreed to the request, then bid farewell to this foreign guest.

“Sect Leader, it looks your intentions are well planned out!” A masked man in black came out from a hidden door behind the bookcase.

“I actually knew of this a long time ago, I was just waiting to see how Martial Sect was going to handle it. Can’t say for sure, but we might even get some unexpected gains out of this.” Du Zhang Hai’s eyes revealed a cold glint.

---



Lei Yu's heart felt very anxious. Since the matter was related to the Kou country, his own country did not want to pursue this. As long as no irreparable situation occurs, everyone just wanted to turn a blind eye to it.

But Lei Yu could not do this, his own friend little Ke had been sullied. And now she was disoriented from suffering a mental breakdown, making him extremely angry. He vowed to find out which major force inside the Kou country dared to be so savage. Not only that, actually daring to come to Tenglong and stirring up such a major incident along with it.

All the elite troops were coordinating with the police in

searching for clues, hoping no major catastrophe would happen. As for Lei Yu, there's really not much he could help with so he simply returned home.

Ai Er had already called a doctor over in the morning, but it wasn't one from the hospital little Ke worked at for the sake of her reputation. Lei Yu of course kept his mouth shut about it, now only nine people in this world knew little Ke had been sullied, and five of them could not speak ever again.

“Little Ke's mental status gradually stabilized after taking some anti-anxiety medication, she's asleep now. I've already called her hospital to request some time off so there shouldn't be any problems.” Ai Er

sighed as she looked at Lei Yu.

“How should we explain this to her family? Asked Lei Yu a bit worried.

“What? You don’t know?”

“Know what?”

“Oh, I thought you knew...” Ai Er looked at the sleeping little Ke, her heart turning a bit sour. “Little Ke grew up in an orphanage, I’ve never heard her mentioning anything about her personal life. I only know that she was an orphan that was adopted around the age of ten. When she arrived at my school, we became classmates and our relationship had always been close. After I went to school abroad, we haven’t been in contact. It was just

this past year that I realized she had become a nurse at the hospital you stayed at. Little Ke's personal life experience was already very sad, I did not expect her to suffer such an experience as well, the heavens are really unfair!"

Lei Yu's heart ached like it was tied into a knot; such a happy and lovely girl would experience such an unfortunate event overnight. And while this girl was suffering a mental breakdown, she actually mentioned she loved him, this made Lei Yu feel even more sad and distressed.

Lei Yu secretly vowed that he would see this matter to its end. Not only was the person behind attacking little Ke had to pay with his life, but

everyone this person was associated with had to pay their price in blood. Besides, whoever this group of people belonged to are probably bad people anyway, were there even any good people in the Kou country?

After a month of searching in secret, not a single clue was found. The forces of Martial Sect gradually returned to their bases, while the police also gradually withdrew from this incident. The fear and danger of the insect's bacteria slowly faded as time went by.

No matter what, Lei Yu was unable to figure out the identity of those people he killed and whom they had worked for.

When things had been thought to have come to a conclusion, perhaps the Ming Sect thought of a person of great potential, so they made the initiative to contact the Advanced Ninja Otsuka.

“Mr. Otsuka, I have some news for you about the situation you asked me to investigate about.” Du Zhang Hai lightly smiled as he sipped a cup of tea.

Hearing there was news, Otsuka’s spirit immediately perked up. The Kou country’s ninjas identity and status were very respected, no matter what rank the ninja was, as long as one of them dies, then the murderer must be found. Especially for the underground force Yamaguchi-gumi who prided on

their viciousness as their motto.

“Mr. Du, tell me this person’s name and the cost of our previous transaction will be returned to you.”  
Asked Otsuka.

Du Zhang Hai smiled, “Mr. Otsuka is so generous.” Able to grab drugs worth \$5 – 6 million for free, then why not? Moreover, he could borrow the power of a foreign force to get rid of a troublesome seedling, seeing the best of both worlds was something the Ming Sect was most happy to see.

“His name is Lei Yu.”

# Chapter 60: Little Ke Is Abducted

Otsuka noted down the name, and at the same time found out from Du Zhang Hai that Lei Yu was a member of Tenglong's military group. If that was the case, he could not take care of him outright in the open, he had to use some behind the scene methods.

Du Zhang Hai did not really see this Advanced Ninja as the same status as him, just with his own strength, even if he was a citizen of the Kou country he would stand at the top. But when it involved money, then he had to give this Otsuka some face because no one would ever



think they had too much money.

After leaving Du Zhang Hai's office at Ming Sect, Otsuka promptly ordered his men to tail and investigate this Lei Yu. Things took shape very quickly; although the Yamaguchi-gumi was only in its infancy stage within Tenglong country, but to search for a person wasn't a difficult thing. And since Lei Yu typically does not take any evasive maneuvers while he travels, even if he was a member of Dragon Group, Lei Yu did not make any attempts to announce or hide his status.

"Official Otsuka, we've found Lei Yu's home address."

"That's good." Otsuka gestured his

hand for his men to leave, he was then planning his next move silently.

If this situation was not thoroughly investigated, he won't be able to explain himself to headquarters. The death of four Elementary and one Intermediate Ninja was no small matter; he had to be careful in dealing with this.

-----

Fang Yi Ke suffered from a psychological trauma so she could not be subject to anymore shocks or excessive stimulus. Ai Er had been accompanying her the entire time, and because Dragon Group did not make any progress, Nuo Yi Long and others gradually slackened

their concentration with the incident.

“Brother Yu, you’ve returned.”

Hearing Ai Er’s voice, Lei Yu’s mood improved a lot. He went to Dragon Group and requested areas to be searched again in case an important clue was missed, but due to the complicated relationship of the superiors up top, Nuo Yi Long denied the request.

“Ai Er, you’ve worked hard during this period of time, always accompanying at the side of little Ke.” Lei Yu gently stroked Ai Er’s hair, smelling the scent of her which made him relax somewhat.

“Little Ke and I are like sisters, of

course I would take good care of her, especially when she is this unfortunate.”

A “clank” sound was suddenly heard. They both glanced at each other before running towards the bedroom.

But they found little Ke still sleeping, so where did the sound come from? Lei Yu frowned slightly. According to his senses, he quietly walked towards the window and peered out through a curtain seam, seeing a black shadow swaying.

“What is it?”

“Shhh!” Lei Yu placed his index finger on his lips as a sign to be quiet, so Ai Er immediately stopped

talking.

The black shadow outside the window paused for about a minute, then started moving again. By the window, a “clank” sound was heard again. Lei Yu finally understood where this sound was coming from – in order to keep hanging onto the wall, the black shadow stabbed his/her weapon into it as leverage.

Slightly exhaling, Lei Yu suddenly opened the curtains. The black shadow’s reaction was extremely fast, it jumped backwards instantly leaving Lei Yu’s attacking range. The teacup that Lei Yu was holding in preparation shot out of his hands. With a “crash,” the teacup struck the black shadow making it fall. Even though this was only the

second floor, but because of Lei Yu's sudden attack, the black shadow could not keep calm and the injuries sustained should not be light from landing in a bad angle.

Lei Yu turned around and cried out: "Not good, they're ninjas from the Kou country!"

"Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!" As Lei Yu just finished crying out, three black shadows sprang from the eaves of the house, crashing through the windows and into the house. Lei Yu clashed with them, and at that moment, a loud noise came from outside the door. Two ninjas had broken the door lock and rushed in from the outside, finding that their three companions weren't able to handle Lei Yu. One of them

reacted swiftly by wanting to rush to where Ai Er was standing. That ninja was then knocked to the ground by Lei Yu's spinning kick. Ai Er who had just recovered from shock wanted to hide behind Lei Yu's back.

Once again, some wind noises were heard. Like grasshoppers, five black shadows pounced into the room. At this moment, there were still three ninjas confronting Lei Yu. In order for Lei Yu to ensure the safety of Ai Er, the speed to defeat his opponents had to be slowed down. Two ninjas grasped this chance to rush towards where little Ke was sleeping.

When Lei Yu was finally able to react, it was already too late. A long

shiny knife was placed on little Ke's white neck.

“Bastards!” With a cry of rage, Lei Yu's punch penetrated into the chest of ninja in front of him, his hands immediately covered with blood. But the knife was already placed against little Ke's neck, no matter how fast Lei Yu's speed was, it was impossible for him to instantly save her. “What to do, what should I do?”

Lei Yu couldn't think of way to deal with this. The ninjas remaining also knew they couldn't take on Lei Yu since several of their companions had already been killed by him. Perhaps it was from seeing Lei Yu's anxiousness, thus, two of them picked up little Ke and jumped out



of the window in a panic to flee with her.

“F\*cking beasts!” Lei Yu also jumped out the window running after them.

It may have been from carrying the hostage, but the speed of the two ninjas were very slow, slow enough that Lei Yu caught up to them within seconds.

“Let go of her, otherwise don’t even think of leaving here!” Screamed Lei Yu viciously while clenching his fists.

They two did not seem to understand Lei Yu’s words, only glancing at each other. Coincidentally, little Ke happened

to wake up at this time and seeing two people carrying her, she desperately struggled. But no matter how much she struggled, she could not wriggle her way out of their grasp. The blade of the small knife still resting on little Ke's neck cut open a small wound, and blood started trickling down the blade.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth, yet what could he do right now? Was he to ignore little Ke's life and directly kill the two?

One of the ninjas blurted out a badly mangled Tenglong language, "don't follow us or we will kill her!"

Both ninjas starting retreating backwards, half focused on holding

onto their hostage and half focused on this strong opponent. Lei Yu did not dare to make any sudden movements. The ninjas continued moving backwards slowly, farther and farther away, ten meters... fifteen meters... Lei Yu dared only to take small steps forward.

A black commercial car came rushing over. Once Lei Yu realized what was going on, it was already too late. The two ninjas shoved little Ke into the car, stepped on the throttle to the max, and the car quickly left the area. Lei Yu stood there with bloodshot eyes, but his heart realized that being anxious was of no use, he could only wait. Lei Yu could be considered calm facing this sudden situation, at least his mind was able to think things

through instead of making rash decisions.

“Their goal should be seeking revenge on me, so their intent on capturing little Ke as a hostage should be to threaten me with it. Ugh, things are getting more and more complicated.”

Ai Er ran out of the house and asked: “Where’s little Ke?”

“My fault, it’s all my fault. Little Ke was abducted because they were coming after me.” Lei Yu helplessly exhaled.

“How could that be? Those bastards!” Ai Er was angrily stamping her feet. “Little Ke is already so pitiful; growing up

without parents; sullied by these animals; and now they even abducted her. Brother Yu, you have to save her!”

“Don’t worry, I will definitely save her. But right now I don’t even know where their nest is, and Dragon Group is reluctant to intervene in any situations related to the Kou country. Looks like I can only rely on myself to solve this.”

“I will give my brother a call.”

“Don’t!” Lei Yu hurriedly stopped her. “We can’t involve any more people in this situation. Those psychotic sons of bitches aren’t from a small organization. According to the information obtained from Dragon Group, these

could be the members of a huge underworld organization inside the Kou country. I will take you home immediately so just keep this thing a secret from your brother for the time being, you definitely can't mention it. If there's any news of little Ke, I will immediately let you know so don't worry."

"But you..."

"Don't worry, they aren't my equal. I have nothing to fear even if they come for me right now. I'm actually afraid for your wellbeing so it's definitely safer for you to go home. No matter how brazen these people are, I don't think they would dare to blatantly attack the family members of this country's military Commander."

“Fine then, but you must be careful, if there’s any news, you must tell me immediately!” Ai Er’s eyes were filled with concern.

Lei Yu nodded his head. He then went to his garage and drove Ai Er home. There was really no need to notify Nuo Hu of this situation, the less people that knew the better. As long as Lei Yu is able to find the tiniest bit of clue, he will completely erase this group of bastards from the world.

# Chapter 61: The Hero Rescues The Beauty?

The strange thing was that ever since Lei Yu went home, he did not leave his house for three days.

There weren't any appearances of suspicious people during that time, or any suspicious phone calls.

His mind at its limit, Lei Yu was only focusing on rescuing the pitiful little Ke. Smacking his forehead, "I'm so stupid!"

Quickly packing some things, Lei Yu was ready to head to the Ministry of Transportation to get



the traffic surveillance videos for the past three days, hoping to find a clue. At this time, his cell phone rang. An unfamiliar phone number appeared so Lei Yu quickly picked it up.

After conversing some words, Lei Yu was told a location. He then drove out of the city towards a suburban area.

This suburban area was filled with crops, and there were areas that did not grow anything. Amongst this was a three-storey building with a wall surrounding it. Lei Yu parked his car outside of the wall, then went to the front door and forcefully knocked.

A young man dressed in modern

clothing opened the door, his eyes revealing a hint of hatred in them. Lei Yu asked: "Where's little Ke?"

The young man did not answer, just turned around and walked inside.

Lei Yu thought for a bit before following behind, noticing the three-storey building appears to have not undergone any decoration or furnishing. But at the current level they were on, five ninjas in full black clothing were standing at the center of the building.

Lei Yu increased his awareness, coldly looking at the several Kou bastards in front of him. At this time, footsteps were heard from the stairs to the second floor. Lei Yu used his peripheral vision to take a look and noticed a middle-aged

man walking down.

“Mr. Lei Yu, you are quite powerful, actually daring to kill twelve of my honorable Kou country’s ninjas.”

Said the middle-aged man in a less than fluent Tenglong language.

“Where is little Ke?” Lei Yu once again asked the same question.

“It seems like you are very concerned with this girl.”

“Enough with spouting nonsense! I’m going to ask again, where is little Ke?” Lei Yu’s eyes were already releasing a chilling intention to kill. According to his unique aura, he could already feel his opponent’s power. Among the people present, five of the ninjas

were only Elementary Ninjas, having the strength equivalent to a First Order Warrior. The young man that had opened the door for Lei Yu could be considered an Intermediate Ninja, his strength equivalent to a Second Order Warrior. But the middle-aged man speaking with Lei Yu was an Advanced Ninja; his strength was slightly above the rest.

Lei Yu wasn't too clear with the situation on the second floor because he hasn't yet attained the ability to detect at a further distance.

“It's very easy to save her, just kill yourself and I will release her!” Said the middle-aged man softly.

Lei Yu's eyes narrowed to a glint, "that's fine, but before I die, I'm going to kill everyone here first!" Lei Yu was already clenching his fists.

The middle-aged man did not expect Lei Yu to say something like this. From the mouths of his returning men, he found out that this twenty something year old Lei Yu was quite strong. But no matter what, this middle-aged man refused to believe someone so young would have such a level of strength. Even if he was able to kill his Elementary Ninjas, he thought Lei Yu's strength would be at around the late Intermediate Ninja stage. At most, at the early stages of an Advanced Ninja, so nothing for him to worry about.

The young man that previously opened the door coldly snorted before rushing forward. Lei Yu looked at him expressionless. This young man said a bunch of words in a language he could not understand before taking out a knife from his waist and thrusting at Lei Yu's chest. Even though his opponent's attack was fast and sudden, in front of Lei Yu, it was considered nothing. Lei Yu looked up and simply swiped his hand across in a horizontal line, a "BAM" sound was heard, the knife in the young man's hand fell to the ground and a crack appeared on it. Everyone present was staring at Lei Yu with shock.

"I am warning you all! If you still won't let her go, I will slaughter

everyone here!” Lei Yu said in cold voice.

The young man that had his knife knocked out by Lei Yu was suddenly furious. He rushed forward once again, and with a loud “HAH”, he performed a jump kick. Lei Yu simply sidestepped a bit, followed by single-handedly grabbing onto the young man’s ankle with his left hand, then smashing down with his right elbow, “CRACK!”

The young man painfully screamed while he fell to the ground, holding onto his leg and rolling back and forth. Anyone would know exactly what that sound meant, it was the sound of bones being broken.

Simply raising his hand to stop an

Intermediate Ninja's attack, and then seriously wounding him, the middle-aged man suddenly became anxious. "Stay your hands or I will kill the girl upstairs."

"One of the things I hate most in life is being threatened, especially taking important people in my life as hostage and using them to threaten me with. Today, you must all die!" Lei Yu was no longer able to control his emotions. Thinking about little Ke's pitiful life experience; growing up in an orphanage; her adoptive parents having passed away; she was always by herself without family; no one would have expected such a strong willed and happy girl to have been actually sullied by a bunch of animals. And now that little Ke's



mind was at an extremely fragile state, these assholes had actually abducted her to be used as a means to threaten him with, how could Lei Yu not lose control of his anger?

“Agh!”

A girl’s scream could be suddenly heard from upstairs. Lei Yu’s mind felt startled, but quickly rushed towards the staircase. The middle-aged man blocked the staircase with his body, becoming a barrier to Lei Yu’s path.

“Get lost!” With a furious cry, Lei Yu had already punched out a fist that was covered in a lightning net. The speed of the punch was too fast and could not be avoided, the middle-aged man was struck in the

chest, his whole body flew backwards smashing against an opposite wall.

Lei Yu ignored everything and desperately rushed up. Upon seeing the scene in front of him, Lei Yu's anger was at its limit. Two burly men were holding onto the weak little Ke, their face filled with the look of lust, little Ke's shirt had been torn off, revealing a pair of soft pink breasts. One of the burly fellow's hand was about to grab her breasts, but stopped when he saw the emergence of Lei Yu.

"You, two, must, die!" Lei Yu pronounced each and every single word with force. Layers of lightning energy surged out of his body creating a strong magnetic field.

Everything with metallic properties on the second floor starting shaking non-stop.

The two burly men saw the surrounding scene and immediately released little Ke. They then took on their fighting stance that was unique to ninjas. Lei Yu's anger was at its limit, there was nothing in his eyes but killing intent. Both his fists were surrounded with a powerful lightning net creating a "hissing" sound. With fearsome speeds that the two burly men could not react at all to, Lei Yu smashed his fists into their heads. One could only see their eyes widen before they fell onto the ground. Although the two men had already died, they were still moving a bit because their body still had residual lightning inside,

and that lightly stimulated their muscles and bones. People downstairs hurriedly rushed up but the scene in front of their eyes caused them not to dare take a step forward.

At this time, the middle-aged man stumbled around and managed to get up the stairs. Even though his brain was working fine, he still could not understand what was going on; his original plan was so easily broken through. One should know, five Elementary Ninjas; three Intermediate Ninjas, and one Advanced Ninja, this battle plan was considered almost perfect. But he did not expect this Lei Yu in front of him to so easily destroy everything.

# Chapter 62:

## Suffering Indignity Again

“All of you must die!” Lei Yu’s glare turned to the remaining few people, his eyes showing no emotional fluctuations. His empty eyes made those bastards want to jump out of the building to escape.

At this time, little Ke stood up with lifeless eyes, went over to one of the burly men that had already died, took a knife from his waist and aimed it at her left chest before forcefully stabbing in.

“Ahh!” Lei Yu hurriedly turned

around, “little Ke!”

Forcefully holding this girl that had suffered repeated misfortune, Lei Yu’s chilling eyes disappeared, replacing it were eyes of endless deplore and sorrow. An anxious look had covered his entire face yet little Ke appeared to be very peaceful, her mouth muttered, “able to see... you rescue me twice... I’m already... very satisfied. Lei... Lei Yu, I love... love you. But my body... my body... is no longer pure, I do not want to tarnish you, I don’t want you to be disgusted with me. Thank you for coming to save me, in my next life I will...”

“No! No little Ke! Don’t die!” Tears were pouring out of Lei Yu’s eyes, a piercing scream cried out in front of

this girl that had suffered so many misfortunes. Everything was already too late, little Ke stabbed a critical spot.

Lei Yu gently placed little Ke on the ground, his palms condensing a strong surge of lightning, placing his hands on top of little Ke's two exposed soft breasts and pressed down. The electric current rushed into little Ke's body causing her body to start shaking. But that move was unsuccessful, so Lei Yu attempted a second time, and a third time, but was unable to reverse heaven's decision.

"Little Ke! Little Ke! Wake up! Wake up! Hurry up and wake up! You cannot die! You cannot die!" Lei Yu's tears continued to stream

down, dripping onto little Ke's white skinned stomach and flowing to her navel.

The rest of the people started to shuffle, wanting to escape in a hurry. But they did not dare to make any big movements in case they disturb this Lei Yu that was experiencing a mental breakdown.

“Stand still!” Lei Yu's voice was very low, slowly standing up straight. From experiencing his previous grief, Lei Yu became completely in rage. His previous tender eyes instantly turned into a hair-raising killing intent.

“You... you have killed so many of our people, now it's just the death of one girl, you... what else do you



want to do?!” The middle-aged man’s voice was trembling; he finally knew what fear was. Apart from seeing super-strong experts in the Kou country, this was the first time he felt such terror in Tenglong country.

“Your people raped my friend, am I wrong to kill them? Your people came to my house to kill me, so am I wrong to kill them? Your people made my friend commit suicide, am I wrong to want to kill you?” Lei Yu asked three consecutive questions, yet the other side could not respond at all.

Inside his heart, the middle-aged man was cursing Nagasaka and all his ancestors. That lecherous pervert could have grabbed any girl,

but happened to grab the friend of this god of killing. Looks like his little life would end here today.

“It is my fault for not instilling discipline into my men that caused this blunder; please... please forgive us Mr. Lei Yu. How about this, what do you need? Money? Beautiful girls? I will give it all to you, but only I hope that you will spare us today.” This middle-aged man was exactly the deceased Nagasaka’s superior, Otsuka.

“I will honestly tell you guys, I was going to kill everyone here for sully little Ke. But forcing her to commit suicide, I will completely destroy your organization!”

“Bastard!” Otsuka stared with wide

eyes, “who do you think you are? Daring to look down on my Kou country’s Yamaguchi-gumi organization?” The Kou people were like this, they will tolerate any personal insults you throw at them, but you can’t insult their organizations or their country or else you will piss them off.

Lei Yu did not care about the words of these disgusting insects, killing intent briefly flashed in his eyes. His body was like a ghost that suddenly drifted across; the several people did not even see how Lei Yu suddenly appeared in front of them. A palm strike crushed the skull of one of the Elementary Ninjas; then right after, his body left a ghostly afterimage by the dead ninja. The next moment, another person fell to

the ground; his neck had been twisted to an unimaginable degree.

Lei Yu's figure was extremely fast, Otsuka who was standing rearmost felt that his men's life were being taken one by one by the reaper of death. In a blink of an eye, all five ninjas were dead on the ground. Within a short time of Lei Yu arriving, his men included: three Intermediate Ninjas and five Elementary Ninjas, had all been killed.

Lei Yu's figure stopped; like a demon, he approached Otsuka one step at a time. With a last ditch effort, Otsuka grabbed a rounded bead and forcefully threw it to the ground. The room was suddenly filled with smoke dispersing

everywhere. Lei Yu's actions were slightly delayed before rushing into the smoke. Unfortunately, it was too late, the middle-aged man was nowhere in sight. Lei Yu searched all over but could not find any traces of the middle-aged man. Filled with sadness, he tidied little Ke's clothes before carrying her and leaving the place.

On the roof of the building, a man clothed in black was lying quietly while watching Lei Yu drive away in his car. Exhaling heavily, "this guy is really fearsome; I have to return to the Kou country to explain this situation to my superiors." Making up his mind, Otsuka also quickly left the area.

Bringing little Ke back to his house,

Lei Yu's heart gradually calmed down. From around his own neck, he removed a heart-shaped pendant and lightly clasped it onto little Ke's necklace resting on her pale skin.

"I'm sorry, I did not have the strength to protect you, it was my fault." As Lei Yu was saying this, tears were involuntarily streaming down again. "I accept your love; I am willing to always carry you within my heart. In my heart, you will always be forever pure. I believe Ai Er would not object to my actions." Gently stroking little Ke's already cold face, Lei Yu contacted Ai Er.

The pain that Ai Er suffered was just as much as Lei Yu. When she saw the heart-shaped pendant around little Ke's neck, Ai Er

understood what it meant. While embracing Lei Yu, she looked at him and said: "If little Ke was able to resurrect, I am willing to share you with her."

Lei Yu sighed heavily. The next few days after cremating little Ke, Lei Yu had new plans. As for Otsuka, he gave Ming Sect's Du Zhang Hai a simple excuse and rushed back to his country.

Out of the blue, Lei Yu received a phone call from an unknown person that Du Zhang Hai had arranged. The purpose was to tell Lei Yu that Otsuka had left Tenglong.

Lei Yu decided he would travel by himself to the Kou country, find the

location of the filthy bastard Otsuka, and then kill him. Lei Yu did not tell anyone his plans, only telling people that he wanted to leave to get some fresh air. Ai Er insisted on going with Lei Yu because she saw the grief and dejection he had suffered from this situation, like he had abandoned all hope. No matter what, knowing her own boyfriend had another woman in his heart is something quite difficult to bear. But little Ke had already passed away, so as Lei Yu's girlfriend, she had to have a fair and reasonable trait, and being gentle and considerate as a plus.

Lei Yu knows that his actions would cause Ai Er to worry incessantly, but this was something he had to do. Abducting little Ke was arranged by



Otsuka, and little Ke committing suicide was ultimately the results caused by Otsuka. Lei Yu could not let this beast get away, moreover, this guy brought in insects filled with a dangerous bacteria into the Tenglong country. If it was not coincidentally discovered by him, who knows how many people would be harmed by it. Lei Yu decided he could not just let this go.

Inside Lei Yu's heart, Ai Er, Nuo Hu, and Liu Hao were the closest people he had to a family, he did not want any of them to experience further dangers. No matter how strong and firm minded a person was, they would not be able to deal with a family member getting hurt. In order to ensure everyone's safety, Lei Yu hurriedly left and embarked

on a flight to the Kou country.

# Chapter 63: First Time Abroad

There were some people that received first hand news of Lei Yu's departure. One of them being Ming Sect's leader Du Zhang Hai; Martial Sect's Eagle Group Commander's son Xiao Fei; and the Lei family's master Lei Yun Tian.

They each were occupied with their own thoughts. Lei Yu's departure was a good thing for Xiao Fei, giving him more opportunities to get close to Ai Er, especially since their residences are not too far apart, the distance between them being only a few steps away.

Originally, it was Du Zhang Hai that notified Lei Yu about Otsuka going back to the Kou country. His goal was for Lei Yu to go there and not return, since if he continued staying in Martial Sect, then in the future his strength would become problematic.

The plane slowly landed on the airport runway. A youngster's height that would be considered fairly tall in the Kou country was dressed in loose clothing. A black wheeled suitcase was being pulled behind him as he exited the airport's main doors.

This youngster is no other than Lei Yu who had just arrived in the Kou country.

On the side were two men bickering over something. He eavesdropped on their argument but Lei Yu was at a loss, he was simply unable to understand their language, what was he to do?

Lei Yu did not wave a taxi down; he did not speak with anyone; just pulling his luggage along and walking forward aimlessly.

Even though Lei Yu did not study the Kou language during his studies, his proficiency in English was pretty good. The word “Hotel” was something Lei Yu easily recognized, and the size of the hotel in front of him was quite big. Its location was only about six – seven hundred meters away from the airport (0.3 – 0.4 miles). Lei Yu

stepped inside of the hotel and a young looking doorman hurriedly took over the luggage in Lei Yu's hands. He spoke in polite words that Lei Yu did not understand, so Lei Yu opened his eyes wide and asked in standard English, "do you understand English?"

"Yes sir." Lei Yu's skin complexion and hair color were similar to Kou citizens, but his height was somewhat surprising to people, that's why the doorman treated Lei Yu as if he was a native of the Kou country. But after hearing Lei Yu's English, he was able to react agilely.

"I need a room as well as a laptop."

"I understand sir, please come with me."

Arriving at the front desk, Lei Yu went through the process of renting a hotel room. The female receptionist deliberately looked at Lei Yu's appearance and her face slightly blushed. Lei Yu's face and appearance could not be considered particularly handsome, but he possessed a unique deep gaze and a confident look. Add that to a tall and muscular body, it caused this girl's heart to waver since she was accustomed to seeing short average men.

After Lei Yu received a keycard to his hotel room, he gave a faint smile. Even though he hated the Kou country's people, he did not hate every single one of them. This young and beautiful receptionist had exuded a style to his liking so

Lei Yu couldn't be stingy with his smile.

After that smile, chaos went through the female receptionist's heart and she jumped into the office behind the front desk like a rabbit. The doorman then said: "Sir, please come with me." After that, he brought Lei Yu to the elevator, and then brought him to room number 3688 before stopping.

"Sir, this is your room here. If you need anything, please press the remote control in your room and our staff will be ready to assist with all your needs."

"Thank you." Lei Yu then entered the room. The room was indeed lavish, although there were only



two areas, but the space was a full eighty square meters – the living room and bedroom were separated by a wall. Lei Yu opened the curtains and looked at the outside scenery. He inhaled a deep breath allowing oxygen to keep his mind awake, which also eased the pain in his heart somewhat.

On the bedside, he noticed there was a placard with several services the hotel provided; fortunately it was all English so Lei Yu could understand it.

On the right corner of the placard all the way at the bottom, it mentioned if one wanted “special services,” please call \*\*\*\*\*.

Laughing a bit, he wondered if a lot

of women in Kou country provided these types of services.

Lei Yu pressed the bedside remote control and shortly after, there was a knock on the door. Perhaps the staff who responded was notified previously, they inquired in English, “sir, what assistance are you in need of?”

“Where is the laptop computer I requested? How come it hasn’t arrived yet?” Asked Lei Yu.

“Please wait a bit, we’re currently applying for one through our headquarters, it should be sent over soon.”

The hotel staff then left. Lei Yu lay down on the sofa and stretched, his

mind was figuring out what steps to take in the future.

Having just arrived in the Kou country, everything around him was still unfamiliar. He had previously received a strange phone call telling him the Kou country person he was looking for was called Otsuka. Even though he was in the Kou country now, not even mentioning finding Otsuka's whereabouts, he didn't even know where the Yamaguchi-gumi was located.

Lei Yu was not an impulsive person. Only after careful verification, he did find the immigration records of this Otsuka person at the airport before leaving for the Kou country.

The room's doorbell interrupted Lei

Yu's thoughts. Opening the door, a beautiful girl dressed in the hotel's uniform was holding a silver and white laptop with English letters "SONY" on the cover. The laptop was transferred to Lei Yu's hand, then bowing lightly, "sir, is there anything else I can assist you with?"

Lei Yu lightly smiled, "what other service can you help me with?"

After such a question, the girl suddenly blushed. Although she was dressed in unisex uniform, three or four of the buttons from the top of her the white shirt she was wearing was unbuttoned, exposing a view of her bountiful cleavage. Two soft white mounds could be partially seen bouncing up and down while the girl was

breathing, which was extremely enticing.

“If you need it, the hotel will do its best to meet your request.” The girl’s mind was in turmoil as she hurriedly replied.

“Oh?” Lei Yu raised his eyebrows, but then smiled, “I don’t need anything for now, thank you.”

As the girl was leaving, she could not help looking back at the already closed door of Lei Yu’s room. In her heart, she couldn’t help thinking about Lei Yu’s looks and the words he just said. Just thinking about it made her tense up; she couldn’t forget the deep expression in Lei Yu’s gaze that had a trace of sadness in it. If any girl saw his

eyes, they would want to do whatever they could to placate that sadness. This was a feeling that the girl would not easily forget.

Lei Yu hoped to find some clues on the internet, but it was futile after searching for an entire afternoon. Closing the laptop, Lei Yu went to open the door ready to leave and eat something when he encountered the previous girl that delivered the laptop to him. The girl was standing there, her left hand holding onto a small notebook while her right hand was about to press the room's doorbell.

“Do you need something? Asked Lei Yu.

“I'm sorry to disturb you, sir.” Said

the girl while bowing, revealing her tempting chest in front of Lei Yu's eyes. Even though his disposition was firm, those two white mounds bulging out was hard for anyone to not look at. Lei Yu weren't like those hypocritical people that wanted to look but pretended they weren't interested. If he wanted to look, then he would boldly and openly look at them, but this also made the girl tense up. The words she wanted to say previously were completely forgotten, she just froze there with a red blush on her face.

“How come you're not saying anything? Is there something you need from me?” Asked Lei Yu once again.

# Chapter 64: Nami

## The Interpreter

The girl's face was blushing but managed to say: "It's like this, when I had left previously, I forgot to have you sign some paperwork. Because you are using our laptop, our repository needs a record of it, therefore..."

Lei Yu understood her errand. Taking the girl's pen and small notebook, he accidentally touched her hand in the process, that smooth feeling surprised Lei Yu a bit. Do all the girls in Kou country have such nice skin?

After being touched, the girl's heart



started beating faster. She took the signed notebook, bowing quickly and rushed off in a hurry.

Walking into the hotel's restaurant, the style of decoration was completely different from Tenglong country. After ordering some dishes he had not eaten before, Lei Yu was a little disappointed. Even though their service was attentive; each girl that came to his table would pour tea for him on their knees looking extremely respectful; but the plates of food were mostly raw and Lei Yu was not used to eating it like that. After only touching a few things on his plate, Lei Yu left the restaurant with his stomach barely filled.

Right now it was getting late and Lei Yu suddenly thought of one

thing; since he was by himself abroad, Ai Er and Nuo Hu would be worrying about him so he should take care of business as soon as possible.

Lei Yu went to the hotel lobby's front desk and asked: "Excuse me; do you have any interpreter services I could use?"

"Hello sir, each and every employee in our hotel can understand and speak English; it's our hotel's policy. If you have a need, you can select any staff member that's right for you, but it's quite expensive, the daily fee is \$300." Explained the front desk staff.

Lei Yu's eyebrows perked up, thinking to himself: sleeping with a

girl for a night was not this expensive, why was it so expensive for an interpreter? Fortunately for Lei Yu, money was not a big issue nowadays for him. "I can pick anyone I want?" Asked Lei Yu.

"Except for the restaurant staff and the front desk staff, you can pick anyone you want from the hotel room staff since it's easier for us to fill in their shifts after they leave."

Lei Yu nodded, thinking of the previous klutzy but gorgeous and sexy girl, his mouth twitched slightly. "Good, then I will pick the girl that previously came by my room for me to sign a notebook."

"The person you picked is..." The front desk receptionist was not too

clear on who Lei Yu was talking about.

Frowning, Lei Yu then said: "Can't you guys go figure it out? How am I supposed to know?"

"I'm sorry sir." The front desk receptionist hurriedly bowed to apologize. She then picked up the phone, said some words in the Kou language, and her face looked surprisingly anxious. Lei Yu thought: would this bitch be saying bad things about me right now?

A short while later, the front desk receptionist hung up the phone and respectfully said: "Sir, we have found the person you specified. If you could please leave a deposit, then you can take her out with

you.”

“Damn it, I’m not even selecting an escort, but I have to leave a deposit?” This was what Lei Yu was thinking but he did not say this out loud. While in a depraved country like Kou, it was hard for Lei Yu to not be in a nasty mood.

After paying \$500 for the deposit, Lei Yu put the receipt in his wallet and sat down on the lobby’s sofa waiting for the girl he picked.

Several girls working at the front desk were whispering between each other, “it would be great if he picked me \*sigh\*, unfortunately us front desk staff cannot accompany guests outside, such a disappointment.”

“That’s right! Look at him, he’s so handsome! He looks like...”

But the words of those several girls, Lei Yu couldn’t understand them. Besides, his distance from them was quite far away, and the girls were whispering to each other, so normally, it was impossible for anyone to know what they were talking about.

Five minutes later, the girl that previously delivered the laptop to Lei Yu ran up with her face blushing red, “sorry sir to keep you waiting, my name is Nami, I am in your care.”

Lei Yu nodded his head and did not reveal any expressions. Brushing away some hair that was covering

his eyes, Lei Yu revealed his pair of deep profound eyes. He walked out of the hotel's main door first while the beautiful girl called Nami hurriedly rushed out to follow.

Those several front desk girls began whispering amongst themselves again, "wow! Did you see that? When he brushed back his hair, he looked so cool!"

"His gaze is really enchanting!"

"I really envy Nami."

The Kou country was regarded as a country, but to borrow from a self-proclaimed comedian's word from a certain big country, "the weather forecast would only require one sentence: there is rain today." This

showed the size of the Kou country [1].

[tl: [1] = People who are confused, there's not enough surface area to have multiple weather systems to warrant separate weather forecasts. ]

Indeed, the sky began to drizzle already. Lei Yu walked in front while Nami was behind holding onto a pink umbrella that appeared from an unknown place. She was covering the taller Lei Yu with the umbrella and appeared to be having some difficulty. Nami's height compared to other women in the country of Kou was considered rather tall, about 1.63 meters (5Ft – 3In), but when compared to Lei Yu, she was too petite. The males



passing them could feel their heartache for her, and add the fact that Nami had such a beautiful appearance; the males could not help silently cursing Lei Yu.

They two walked for about half an hour and Lei Yu did not say a single word during that time. Nami did not dare to say anything either, only walking by his side, following with an umbrella.

The previous meal Lei Yu had was not filling, and coincidentally, the road junction ahead had a KFC. Lei Yu turned his head around: "Have you had dinner yet?"

Nami shook her head. Her charming face with the wet hair and wet shirt from the rain made

Lei Yu slightly hesitate, “let’s go, I’ll treat you to KFC, I’m not used to the food you people eat.”

They two ordered a full table of fast food. Initially, Nami was kind of shy, eating slowly and daintily. Gradually chatting with Lei Yu a bit more, she became more used to him and her small mouth took big bites of the food.

From ordinary conversation, Lei Yu seemingly slipped in to ask about ninjas in general. In the beginning, Nami was semi-avoiding the topic, but Lei Yu’s gaze made it difficult for her to avoid the questions, so she simply introduced the basics to him.

Inside the country of Kou, the

number of ninjas in the population was considered very small. Within the population of about 100 million people, there were no more than five thousand ninjas. From this, we can see the extent of respect ninjas have in the Kou country, the reverence they receive here is almost on the same degree as cultivators in Tenglong country.

Most ninjas have joined the Yamaguchi-gumi organization, while the others belong to the country. The reason for this was because the benefits of a ninja joining the Yamaguchi-gumi were twice as much as what the country would have given them.

As for how powerful the forces of the Yamaguchi-gumi were, Lei Yu

did not ask in detail but was able to estimate it from what he was told. In control of most of Kou country's ninjas, how weak would they be? And their abundance of wealth linked them to the country; of course government officials would regard them as a cash cow. Therefore, the power of the Yamaguchi-gumi in the country of Kou should be on a quite fearsome level.

Of course, with regard to the location of the Yamaguchi-gumi headquarters, this small-time hotel staff would naturally not know, she only knew that the Yamaguchi-gumi monopolized many industries and the scope of their reach were very wide across the country.

Lei Yu had attained his goal. Even though he did not get too much useful information, he was able to gain some general knowledge of the Yamaguchi-gumi. The two then left the KFC restaurant.

Nami originally thought they were going to walk back, but she did not expect Lei Yu to wave down a taxi. The two then took a taxi back to the hotel.

Opening his hotel room door, Lei Yu went in. Nami also came in, and he saw her start to pour more hot water into the teapot. Lei Yu did not care too much, he just smiled at her as a gesture of gratitude.

# Chapter 65: Special Services

“Please have some tea.”

“Thank you.”

Putting down the cup, Nami went into the bathroom. Lei Yu turned on the laptop, randomly going through today's e-mails. Lei Yu found it odd when he started hearing the shower head going off inside the bathroom. After about ten minutes, the sound of the bathroom door opening was heard and Nami came out wrapped in a white towel. One could clearly see that besides the towel, she wasn't wearing any other pieces of clothing underneath. Her white skin

was exposed where the towel could not cover, just enough to cover the most seductive areas of her chest and upper thigh. If Nami were to slightly bend over, the view will result in an instant nosebleed.

Lei Yu hurriedly asked: “What are you doing?”

“Sir, tonight I’ll be performing special services for you.” Nami’s voice showed a hint of embarrassment.

“Oh?” Lei Yu stood up, “I don’t need it, you can leave now.”

“But the money you paid also included such services, and since you personally selected me...”  
Nami’s heart was beating wildly;

she did not know what else to say.

“I think you are mistaken.” Lei Yu then said, “I only needed an interpreter, I had also wondered why the interpreter service would be so expensive, I did not expect such services to be also included. I’m sorry, I do not need this special service, you can go back and rest now.”

A burst of disappointment assaulted Nami’s heart, but seeing Lei Yu somewhat oggle her, her face could not help starting to blush again. Gently pulling the towel, it slowly slid to the ground. A hot nosebleed gushing scene appeared before Lei Yu’s eyes.

Nami’s body was in great shape, as



for the golden ratio; she had firm breasts; a slim waist and a round ass; plus with her white tender skin and charming flirtatious look; she was the embodiment of a beautiful piece of art.

Lei Yu suddenly felt a surge of heat go straight into his family jewels, causing it to suddenly stand up in a salute. After deeply inhaling and exhaling a few breaths, Lei Yu walked towards the direction of where Nami was standing. Nami tightly closed her eyes; her heart was already tensed to the limit. Although Lei Yu's face was somewhat cold and his deep profound eyes were hard for one to grasp, but his cold exterior had already melted her heart. His eyes that revealed a slight trace of

sadness in them made Nami want to console him. Waiting for Lei Yu's pair of strong hands to grab her body, nothing happened after she waited for a long time. Nami opened her eyes and Lei Yu came out of the bathroom holding her clothes.

“Quickly put on your clothes so you don't catch a cold. I already have a girlfriend so I have no need for such services.” Lei Yu said this rather flat out, seeming that to this perfectly proportioned female, he simply did not have any interest at all.

In fact, how many men could actually withstand such a temptation? In front of such girl with a hot and flawless body – even if a man had erectile dysfunction

would react somewhat, and Lei Yu was a healthy young man.

Slightly disappointed with the outcome and seeing Lei Yu holding her clothes, Nami put on one piece of clothing at a time in front of Lei Yu before deeply bowing, “sir, you should rest early then, I will prepare the bed for your sleep.” After saying this, she expertly set-up the bed with speed before hurriedly leaving the room.

Lei Yu could only faintly smile while shaking his head. No wonder the room staff were able to leave the hotel with the customers, there was actually this extra service. But the requirements of this hotel were a bit strict; each employee must be proficient in English. Comparing

this hotel to the international environment, it would be considered relatively common, but he did not expect this four-star hotel would also have such strict language requirements.

After Nami left, she was not too happy. But after thinking about Lei Yu's words, "I already have a girlfriend," she could not erase the favorable impression in her heart towards him. With his girlfriend not present and him as a male was still able to resist this type of temptation – it is really rare to find that in men nowadays.

In actuality, Nami did not know his thoughts and assumed this. Lei Yu was able to resist the temptation was mainly because he had Ai Er.

And secondly, little Ke's funeral had just passed, so there's no way he would be in any mood for it.

Additionally, Lei Yu already had conflicts with people of the Kou country. Even though the conflict was with the ninjas and the members of the Yamaguchi-gumi, but since they are from the same country, it was natural that Lei Yu did not want to get involved or waste his time with these things.

Calming his mood, and then sitting cross-legged on the ground, Lei Yu realized he had not properly cultivated in a long time. First, it was staying in the hospital for three months after challenging Nuo Yi Long to a duel. Then after being discharged, he encountered little Ke's incident. Lei Yu could not be

lax in cultivating because in his heart, there were still many important things he has not completed. The enemies that killed his grandfather, this main point Lei Yu will deeply remember and never forget.

A powerful internal energy with traces of lightning flashing about was circulated throughout his meridians. The current internal energy he possessed compared to when he first began to cultivate had stark differences; it was like comparing night and day.

A strong life force was accompanied by the “hissing” sound of lightning. Not only was it flowing in accordance with the cultivating methods, it was playing

a role of tempering his meridians, bone structure, and even his skin. Lei Yu's body was gradually changing, although the changes are minute, but over time, the benefits will add up to a frightful degree.

The next day while sitting inside Lei Yu's room, Nami felt somewhat uncomfortable. Lei Yu raised his head and softly said: "Nami, there is something I would like you to help with, but don't worry, I will pay you under the table for this service and any other costs you incur."

"Sir, whatever you need help with just say it, there's no need for additional payment; it's the policy of this company." Nami's voice was very soft, simply no different from the noise of a mosquito.

Fortunately, Lei Yu's hearing was not too bad.

"No." Lei Yu shook his head, "I would like to ask you a few questions, I hope you can answer them truthfully."

Seeing Lei Yu's sincere and deep profound gaze, Nami's heart started to melt again. In fact, Nami was considered a "clean" girl, ever since working in the guest rooms department; she had never had to do what she did "yesterday".

Yesterday could be considered the first time she has ever been fully naked in front of a man. Perhaps it was because of Lei Yu's gaze that brought out her impulsive side.

This hotel would rarely have guests



requesting an interpreter. Even if there were requests for special services, it would be made in the evening when a guest would call down asking for advice. Although she had never received any work like yesterdays before, but upon entering the hotel as a new hire, she received a series of training which contained this type. If a guest requests for private service, then their service would also contain this “special” experience as part of the package.

“Sir, please go ahead and tell me.”

“How much is your yearly salary? In U.S. dollars.” Asked Lei Yu.

Doing some quick calculations, Nami replied, “probably a little

more than four thousand U.S. dollars.”

Lei Yu thought for a bit before nodding, “I have here, a bank card.” Lei Yu pulled out from his pocket a green card, and the VISA logo was clearly printed on it. Lei Yu had just requested the card today in the afternoon, “there’s two hundred thousand U.S. dollars in this account. My request is very simple; you are to notify the hotel that you are resigning; and will become my full-time interpreter. The money inside this account should equal to your earnings from working at this hotel for fifty years. But I don’t need you for that long, I only need you to accompany me during the time I’m in the Kou country, and it should not be too long. Do you agree with

my conditions?”

# Chapter 66: Clues Appear

“Why did you choose me?”

Although Nami was extremely happy, she still had to ask this out of curiosity.

“You are the only one I know in the Kou country. Although I don’t easily trust people, but at least in the Kou country, I feel like I can trust you. And another thing, I really need an interpreter.” Replied Lei Yu.

Seeing Nami resting her hands on her chin, she looked really cute in that pose. She seemed to be considering something, but Lei Yu wasn’t in a rush, gently sipping his

cup of tea. After three to four minutes passed by, Lei Yu smiled and asked again: "Do you agree? It's fine if you don't think you can do it, I'll look for someone else, I don't want to force you into anything."

"No, I agree!" Nami replied in a hurry.

In fact, Nami had already decided what her response would be without much consideration. The first time she laid eyes on Lei Yu, she was already attracted to him by his tough looks and deep profound eyes. Naturally, she would be willing to continue to be by his side when given a chance. And when you add the \$200,000 U.S. dollars as a compensation, which would definitely take many years for her to

save up. The only reason why she seemed to take a long time to consider this proposal was because she thought she was dreaming, she just couldn't believe what her ears had just heard.

"That's good. Go to your hotel management and take care of your business, I'll be waiting for you here. Once you're done, we will leave right away."

"Okay." Nami stood up; her footsteps were light as if she was skipping out of the room.

Lei Yu faintly smiled, while in the Kou country, having an interpreter with him was indeed important. Moreover, Nami was extremely attractive so it added a certain flair

to his stay here.

A little over an hour had passed yet Nami had still not returned. Lei Yu looked at his watch and stood up.

Inside the Customer Service Manager's Office, Nami lowered her head to a middle-aged man with a full beard, conversing with him in the Kou language.

The middle-aged man shifted his legs apart; one of his legs was constantly shaking while he looked at Nami with lustful eyes.

“Why are you quitting?”

“Manager, I... I... I have a new boss now.” Replied Nami with a stutter.

The middle-aged man sat up

straight from his chair, “you have a new boss? Don’t you know that you’ve signed a contract with the hotel? You can’t just leave whenever you want. Your contract is in my hands, if you dare to leave, then I’ll take you to court.” It was actually just a simple labor contract; the situation was not serious enough for the courts to handle. It was only because this middle-aged person known as the manager did not want Nami to leave, thus he used this tactic. He has not gotten his hands on this beautiful and charming girl yet, but he has tried a few times in the past and did not get his wish fulfilled due to some hindrance.

This middle-aged man has been with the hotel for at least ten plus



years. Inside the guest rooms department, he has played with every girl on the job that was remotely pretty. And the exception was Nami in front of his eyes, who was the most prettiest of them all. She had just arrived for a year, and coincidentally, this past year he had been accompanying the president in dealing with some important figures, there was no time for him to get close to her. Now that Nami wanted to leave, how could he agree with it?

“I could let you leave on one condition.” Seeing Nami nibble her lips with a miserable face, the middle-aged man narrowed his eyes, giving off a lewd look.

“Manager, what’s the condition? As

long as I am capable of it, I will agree to it.” Nami replied without hesitation. Right now, she only wanted to return to Lei Yu’s side as soon as possible. Only by Lei Yu’s side would she feel a sense of security. This sense of security is her knowing that Lei Yu would never intentionally harm her.

The middle-aged man rubbed his chin, slowly emphasizing each word, “take off your clothes.”

“No! I can’t do that!” Nami had tears in her eyes while shaking her head. She knew what the manager meant, but also understood she may not be able to escape her doom today.

“This is my office, without my

permission no one would come in. As long as you promise to sleep with me, then I will let you go, and will not hold you responsible for breaking the contract.” The middle-aged man stood up, like a demon looking at its prey, he walked one step at a time towards Nami.

“Don’t come over!” Nami started backing up, but the speed of the middle-aged man was a bit quicker than hers.

Saliva was almost dripping from the middle-aged man’s mouth, with just a few steps and he had rushed to the front of Nami. Grabbing onto her shirt, he forcefully pulled down. But he was obstructed by Nami tightly clutching onto her shirt who was struggling with all her strength.

She didn't want to be sullied by this man in front of her, so Nami started hysterically screaming, hoping someone would hear her and come in to assist. But everyone knew the behavior of the guest room department's manager, even if someone had heard the screams, they would not go in to interfere.

Outside the door, a figure stood still. Although he didn't understand what they were talking about, hearing the cries coming from inside the office, it was simple to deduce what was going on from the tone of the voices.

His palms started vibrating, placing his fingers against the door, he used the one inch punch on it. A "BANG" was heard while the door flew wide

open. The one inch punch caused the door lock to break off and smash into a bookcase on the back wall.

When he saw how much Nami was struggling and how crazy and relentless this middle-aged man was becoming, Lei Yu said in English, “let her go!”

“Who are you? Who allowed you to enter my office without permission? Get out!” The middle-aged man saw someone interfering with his play time and didn’t care who the other party was. A surge of anger rushed to his head, he then pulled back his hands from grasping onto Nami’s shirt.

Nami ran behind Lei Yu while

crying and forcefully holding onto her clothes. That scene made Lei Yu think of little Ke's encounter, the smoldering anger in his heart began rising up again.

“One of the things I hate most in life is people like you. Nami is already mine; you will have to pay for your actions!” After blurting this out, Lei Yu suddenly felt his words were somewhat inappropriate, and even a little awkward. But since he already said this out loud, he could no longer change it. Even though her face was filled with tears, but when those words entered Nami's ears, she could not help blush red from the neck up.

“You are her new boss?” The middle-aged man coldly “hmp'h'd”

while looking at Lei Yu with eyes filled with vicious thoughts.

“That’s right, since you dare to bully my people, then you must suffer the consequences.” Lei Yu gently cracked the joints in his fingers, making a “pak pak” sound.

“What are you doing?” The middle-aged man then frowned and said: “Do you know who I am?”

“You? You aren’t even a human being, at most, you can be considered as a son of a bitch.” Lei Yu’s voice was cold; hating people like this manager had become a norm for him.

The middle-aged man did not see any hints of fear from Lei Yu and

hurriedly said: "I am a member of the Yamaguchi-gumi, do you dare to mess with me? I'm telling you now; I've reached the Elementary Ninja stage. Inside the Kou country, no one would dare to disrespect the Yamaguchi-gumi. Even though you are a foreigner, I still will won't be lenient towards you."

"Oh?" Lei Yu's heart was suddenly overjoyed. He had pretty much come to a dead-end looking for clues, yet out comes a person claiming to be part of the Yamaguchi-gumi. This will really save him a lot of trouble.

"Now that you're afraid, get the f\*ck out immediately and leave Nami behind, or else today, you will be leaving horizontally!" The middle-



aged man saw that Lei Yu was surprised and hesitated a bit so his heart was suddenly overjoyed.

# Chapter 67:

## Mysterious Young Master

“Oh really?” Lei Yu lightly sneered and took two steps forward. The middle-aged man suddenly frowned, did he mistake Lei Yu’s look? Perhaps the other party was not a citizen of the Kou country, that’s why he wasn’t afraid when the Yamaguchi-gumi was mentioned.

Without waiting for the middle-aged to talk anymore, Lei Yu instantly appeared besides the man, raised his hand and grabbed onto his neck. The middle-aged man with the strength of an Elementary

Ninja thought he could easily break free, but no matter how hard he struggled, he was unable to escape from Lei Yu's grasp. A realization appeared in his heart, this youngster in front of him was not an ordinary person!

"Answer a few of my questions and I can spare you from death!" Lei Yu narrowed his eyes, his emotionless words echoed inside the middle-aged man's head.

"Let me go! Otherwise, the Yamaguchi-gumi will not let you off!" Lei Yu had encountered a lot of people with this type of stubbornness that came from the middle-aged man, and not surprising, this man will need to suffer a bit before he understands

his situation.

The seemingly endless strength of his right-hand lifted the middle-aged man off the ground, and raised him above his own head. Lei Yu then forcefully slammed the man towards the ground, the point of impact along with the force of gravity focused on the middle-aged man's head.

“Bang!”

The sound of the middle-aged man slamming to the ground was heard. On the side, Nami had already covered her eyes. She did not think that Lei Yu was actually this strong, and today he was taking action on behalf of protecting her. The sweetness inside Nami's heart was

indescribable.

“Uggh!”

A mouthful of blood was sprayed out from the middle-aged man and the constant coughing made him unable to speak. His previous eyes of arrogance had been replaced with fear.

“Are you willing to answer my questions or do you prefer to lose your little life?” Lei Yu asked again in a cold tone.

“I’ll talk! I’ll talk! Just ask me!” The middle-aged man recovered somewhat but his voice was now trembling.

Lei Yu laughed, “if you had only cooperated earlier, then you

wouldn't have had to suffer this pain right? Let me ask you, inside the Yamaguchi-gumi, is there a person call Otsuka who is an Advanced Ninja?"

"You... you... how do you know about Official Otsuka?" The eyes of the middle-aged man were filled with surprise.

"Looks like this man does exist, so where is he right now? Inside Yamaguchi-gumi headquarters?" Lei Yu coldly hmph'd.

Suddenly, the middle-aged man's fear became one of terror. His voice trembled even more while asking: "Are you Tenglong country's Lei... Lei Yu?"

“You’ve guessed correctly. Now answer my question, I am looking for Otsuka, other than a satisfactory response, you won’t be leaving this office alive!” Lei Yu’s words were filled with indifference; it seems the person in front of him wasn’t even a human being, but something no different than a bug.

Forcefully swallowing his saliva, the middle-aged man said: “Official Otsuka is at... at the Yamaguchi-gumi headquarters.”

“Where is the location of the headquarters?”

Seeing the middle-aged man hesitate, Lei Yu tightened his grip around the man’s neck. Suddenly having difficulty breathing, the

middle-aged man hurriedly flailed his arm and said: "I'll say it! I'll say it! Our headquarters is on a small island off the east coast of the Kou country."

Releasing his grip, Lei Yu stood up. His heart felt a lot better at this point. Originally in a situation without any clues, he did not expect that Nami's resignation will lead to a new trail of clues.

"Let's go." Lei Yu did not want to kill the manager but he knew at times if he didn't kill, then it may lead to more serious consequences. His enemies may be alerted and trouble might seek him out. So only as a last resort, Lei Yu picked up a pencil sharpening knife on the desk; a flash of purple light



appeared and Lei Yu finished off the middle-aged man that was just climbing to his feet.

Pulling along Nami that had been scared stiff, the two left the hotel. When Lei Yu registered his hotel room with the front desk reception, he did not leave any real information. For Dragon Group members, this was standard routine. When they were performing missions, they had to hide their identity all times so Lei Yu had numerous fake passports and identification cards.

Leaving in a hurry, the hotel immediately became lively. The guests were in chaos, the blaring of sirens, onlookers were gathered in a crowd, and the roadway was

jammed. Far away, a man and a woman disappeared into the distant streets.

“Sir, I...”

“Don’t call me sir anymore, call me by my name.” Said Lei Yu.

“No, I don’t dare to!” Nami hurriedly shook her head. Not only did Lei Yu shock Nami with his actions, she couldn’t figure out the mysteriousness surrounding Lei Yu. Although she knew that following Lei Yu would be dangerous, but unbeknownst to her, she felt reluctant to leave Lei Yu’s side, one could even say she felt unwilling to no matter what.

Moreover, the things that happened

today were related to her, so in her heart, she had a feeling of fear and respect for Lei Yu. At the same time, her heart felt a sense of throbbing towards him.

Lei Yu shrugged, “whatever you want, but I do not like people calling me sir.” Lei Yu did not want to say it, but the word “sir or mister” felt awkward to him, since that’s how people would address an already married man.

“Young master?”

“That’s doable, young master it is.” Lei Yu grew up being called young master, and now that he had left the Lei family, he hasn’t heard anyone call him that in a long time. It felt kind of good to hear it again.

“What people do you have in the family?” Asked Lei Yu.

“Only my (paternal) grandmother, my parents have died over ten years ago.” Nami’s voice did not fluctuate from sadness; it seems that she had already become accustomed to her current life.

Lei Yu’s heart ached a little bit since it inevitably reminded him of the deceased little Ke.

Although she was sullied, but inside Lei Yu’s heart, little Ke will always be a pure, sweet and an innocent young girl. He was unable to forget the short time together with her. As these thoughts appeared, the intense hatred in his heart for the Yamaguchi-gumi flared up.

If Nuo Yi Long and the others knew that Lei Yu came to the Kou country for revenge, they would definitely not allow his actions. Lei Yu wasn't even strong enough to confront his true enemy, let alone targeting Kou country's largest underground force. This was equivalent to a bottomless abyss, he could enter but most likely never to return.

Lei Yu wasn't that rash, he must form some strategy in dealing with this. The so-called know thyself like you know thy enemy; Lei Yu was not in a hurry for a quick revenge. His goal was to thoroughly investigate the Yamaguchi-gumi before coming to any decisions. Perhaps his own strength was indeed too weak, even if he had Nami with him, she was just a

physically weak girl that knew the local language.

They two arrived at a car dealership. Lei Yu was reluctant to operate the Kou country's locally manufactured cars. On a side note, Lei Yu was interested in the Mercedes-Benz brand. While the brand was a usual favorite for those suddenly rich, but Lei Yu still really liked it.

Before he had no savings, but after being part of Dragon Group for these few years, he was considered quite wealthy now since the compensation from Dragon Group was definitely not little. Lei Yu decided on a Mercedes-Benz E-Class Cabriolet costing about \$130,000 U.S. dollars. Combine the

car with his handsome face and dashing personality, he would definitely attract and charm many while driving on the roads, of course it was limited to the female sex.

Checking his bank card balance and calculating in accordance with the US dollar's exchange rate, he had more than \$500,000 dollars. Lei Yu also felt some headaches; after arriving at the Kou country for a short two to three days, he actually used up close to half of his savings. It looks like he was unfit to manage his own accounts, but at least what's left of the money should be enough for whatever he needs to do.

Lei Yu's identity was currently a

mystery. Apart from Nami knowing, no one else knew. If he were to suddenly appear on the little island without preparation, it could become very dangerous. So, Lei Yu planned on falsifying an identity which would allow him to slowly get close to the source. It appears the trip to the Kou country will have to be extended. Inside his mind, Lei Yu already had a preliminary plan so he started dialing Cui Ying Ying's phone number.



# Chapter 68: False Identity

At a luxury hotel, Lei Yu was quietly watching some random television program. Due to mental fatigue, Nami had already entered a deep sleep; her petite body was curled up to one side of the sofa. He had originally wanted her to sleep on the bed; however a familiar guest would be arriving soon, so Lei Yu gave up on that idea in order to avoid any misunderstandings.

“Ding dong.” The hotel room’s doorbell rang. Lei Yu had wanted to get up to open the door, but Nami suddenly woke up and beat him to it.

“You are...” Standing outside was a beautiful girl, her eyes revealed an unmatched sensual side of a woman that even made Nami feel a bit jealous of.

Seeing Nami, the girl was a bit surprised. She then tried asking: “Is Lei Yu here?”

“Ying Ying, quickly come in!” Lei Yu shouted from inside the room. Cui Ying Ying smiled and went inside but did not forget to take a few glances at the beautiful body of this foreign land’s local girl.

“Young master, I will wait outside, just call out if you need something” Seeing they had guests, Nami bowed respectfully before turning to leave. Lei Yu smiled and nodded

his head, “go arrange for dinner, later Miss Ying Ying and I will dine together.”

“Yes, young master.”

Cui Ying Ying looked more confused. Blinking her charming eyes, she glanced at Lei Yu and Nami as if thinking of something.

Three days have passed since the hotel incident. Lei Yu was originally treating Nami as an interpreter, but ever since Nami started calling him young master, the way she acted and treated him completely changed. It seemed like he was treated like he was really some young master from some prominent family. The way Nami acted was exceptionally respectful

to him, Lei Yu couldn't help thinking: She's not treating me like I'm her owner right? I heard the girls in the Kou country enjoyed becoming maids, what if..."

Once Nami left, Cui Ying Ying asked: "What's the meaning of this? I am completely confused by your actions." Having lived abroad herself, Cui Ying Ying naturally understood the English that Lei Yu had just spoken, and understood what Nami had just said. So naturally, it was hard for her to not be confused.

Lei Yu scratched his head, "I'll explain about this later since it's complicated. But for now, Cui Ying Ying, I only asked you for advice on how to proceed, yet why did you

personally show up?”

Initially because of the unclear relationship between Lei Yu and Nami, Cui Ying Ying could not quite focus. But now that the two were conversing by themselves, hearing Lei Yu say her name, it made her heart feel like a sweet honey pot had been spilled all over the place.

Immersed in her sweet thoughts, Cui Ying Ying had to be pushed by Lei Yu a few times before she woke up from her fantasy. “Ah? Oh, I just wanted to come by and see what you were planning. Anyway, I thought you would never hide anything from Ai Er? Why aren’t you letting her know about this situation?”

“The thing is, there’s no way I can tell her the reason for this. When you go back, don’t tell them I’m in the Kou country, or else all hell will break loose!” Even though he had already explained the situation to her over the phone, Lei Yu had to repeat himself to make sure Cui Ying Ying understood it.

“Don’t worry, I will be kept this a secret. So tell me, what are your plans young master?”

“Uh...” Scratching his head, Lei Yu then said: “I want to create a false identity inside the Kou country, and this identity must have a certain prominent status, therefore I’m asking for your help. Can you help me think up of a way to save money but also create the best results? I

remember you went abroad for further studies in economic management, so you should have a way to make this happen right?"

Cui Ying Ying thought for a bit, then said with a frown: "This is not an easy task, who are you trying to get close to?"

Lei Yu nodded and said: "You can say, the false identity must have a distinguished position, preferably someone covered in gold and diamonds so that wherever I go, I would draw people's attention."

"Lei Yu, what on earth are you trying to do? This... isn't this a bit too difficult?" Cui Ying Ying had foreboding thoughts but she couldn't quite describe the feeling.

Even though seeing Lei Yu in the Kou country, she didn't think too deeply about his reasons. But if she was to think about little Ke, then she would more or less guess the connection and know what he was planning to do.

"Is it really that difficult? It seems that my original plans will not work out. Well, I'll just have to try another path then." Lei Yu was a bit disappointed.

When a woman loves a man, one of the worst things for them is seeing that man disappointed. At least at this point, Cui Ying Ying was that type of woman. She then suggested: "The Lei family's wealth could match a country, if you were to ask, they will definitely help you out."



“Do not mention the Lei family in front of me! I do not have any relationship with them!” Lei Yu’s voice was a bit agitated; this subject was one of the wounds in his heart. The bandage covering this wound was called ‘temporarily forgetting’ it, revisiting it would only make his wound more painful.

“I’m sorry, I... I forgot that you don’t like people mentioning your past, I’m sorry!” Cui Ying Ying hurriedly covered her mouth to apologize.

Sighing heavily, Lei Yu forced himself to smile: “Forget it, if there’s really no way then I’ll think of other means.”

“Let me think some more.” Cui Ying Ying was lost in thought. Lei Yu

dared not to make a noise in fear of disturbing her.

After a while, Cui Ying Ying mysteriously smiled: "Don't worry, in less than a month, I promise to make you respected in all of the Kou country. But I need your full cooperation in order for it to work."

"Oh? What great idea did you come up with that can take care of this in a month?" Lei Yu asked excitedly.

"Heehee." Cui Ying Ying laughed. "Now is not the time for that question, give me two days to formulate the plan. Once I have the complete plan, then I'll tell you. The most important thing for you to figure out now is how to explain this to Ai Er."

Lei Yu tightened his brow. The reason he did not want Ai Er to know was very simple, he did not want the person he loved to worry. But since he has decided his course of revenge, then he must stay the course. This will also allow him to face little Ke, who is resting in peace.

If Ai Er knew about this situation, then regardless of consequences, she will definitely come find him. Lei Yu was reluctant to put Ai Er in such a dangerous position. Even if it was Cui Ying Ying in front of him, once the plan looked like it has taken root, then he would send her away. This type of dangerous place, it's best for the people close to him to stay far away as possible. Lei Yu only hoped to take on any difficult

situations by himself, he was not willing to lose a single one of the few family members around him.

Lei Yu tightly shut the windows and opened the door. Seeing that Nami had returned, he assumed the dinner reservations were already made. "Nami."

"Oh, young master, what do you need?" Nami bowed while asking.

"It will be hard on you but don't let anyone come in, including housekeeping."

"I understand, please be rest assured young master." After replying, Nami closed the door. Nami stood outside, her mind constantly thinking back to what

happened a few days ago. Thinking how Lei Yu silently and effortlessly killed the manager, she was definitely scared. But it felt like a big rock had been lifted from her heart, her mind kept remembering the things that happened to her a decade ago.

# Chapter 69:

## Shocking News

Lei Yu returned into the room, he then made a gesture to Cui Ying Ying to keep silent before dialing the phone.

“Ai Er.”

“Ah, I’m fine, don’t worry. Right, right, how would I not miss you? Yes, I know, oh, I’m planning on going to a deserted place to cultivate. If it’s quick, then it’ll take a month or two, if it’s slow, then I estimate about three months. And don’t worry about me, when I get back, you’ll have to make some good food for me! Bye, okay, I

understand. You have to be well-behaved too.”

After hanging up the phone, Lei Yu exhaled a deep breath. Actually, he was not willing to hang up the phone, hearing the voice of Ai Er; his heart had a feeling making him unwilling to part from her. He wanted to immediately fly home and see the person he loved.

Seeing Lei Yu's expression, Cui Ying Ying smiled and said: “What's wrong? Too reluctant to let her go?”

Lei Yu smiled, “I was reluctant to part with her but there's nothing I can do. Oh yeah, can't you just tell me your plan now?”

“Hmph, it's a secret!” Cui Ying Ying

wrinkled her nose and then said:  
“Aren’t you treating me to a big meal?”

The three arrived at the first floor restaurant. Since Lei Yu did not give her any special requests, Nami just reserved a table in the main dining room. Under the attentive eyes of everyone, a man and two women entered the room. With a rare resolute face and deep profound eyes, many young girls had an intoxicated look to them after seeing him. And the two girls were extremely eye-catching; all the males in the dining room cast eyes of brutish desire, as if they wanted to grab the two girls and make them theirs.

This time, Lei Yu became a bit



smarter, he ordered a table filled with cooked food; the raw sashimi was too hard for him to swallow. This meal he had made him very happy. Apart from Nami occasionally looking at the plates of food she was eating off of, her eyes would mostly be looking at Lei Yu.

Lei Yu decided to make a household name for himself in a short time was justified. If he alone went and inquired about the Yamaguchi-gumi, and if he was found out, it would be difficult for him to escape. If they came to his house, it would be slightly more manageable.

As the saying goes, a strong dragon cannot repress a local snake [1]. Instead of going to someone's house to pick a fight, might as well

let them come to him. As long as he makes some preparation, everything would be simplified.

[tl: [1] = A strong person may still lose out to someone who is familiar with the environment, knowing where all the good ambush points are, where to hide etc. ]

The only issue is that Lei Yu still doesn't know what Cui Ying Ying is planning in order to achieve his purpose. No matter how much Lei Yu asked, she would not say anything. She just kept saying as long as he fully cooperated, everything would work out.

After dinner, Lei Yu helped Cui Ying Ying rent a hotel room. When Cui Ying Ying invited Nami to stay

in her room, she was rejected.

“Sorry Miss Ying Ying, I need to serve the young master so I cannot leave his side.”

Although she was even more surprised by those words, but because it was getting quite late, Cui Ying Ying did not ask for details. The word ‘serve’ had a plethora of meanings, so it was hard for her to not think about some type of special relationship. But after thinking about Lei Yu’s personality, she did not worry about it anymore. She, a big beauty in the eyes of all men gave herself to Lei Yu but was still rejected; therefore there was nothing to fear right?

Moreover, Lei Yu’s feelings to Ai Er were absolute. If it weren’t for the

death of little Ke, Lei Yu would never accept the love from another person.

“Nami, you should go rest, if I need anything I’ll call you.” Lei Yu smiled and took two blankets from the wardrobe by the front door and laid it down on the ground. Nami slightly bowed; behind her sweet smile was unlimited happiness. As long as she could stay by Lei Yu’s side, no matter what, she would be very happy and satisfied.

Seeing Nami enter the bathroom and change into pajamas, the light hitting her white smooth skin made it even more enchanting. It was inevitable for Lei Yu to glance a few extra times. Nami gently laid down on the living room floor, and

quickly entered her dreamland, inadvertently revealing her smooth and long slender legs. Lei Yu swallowed hard before going into his bedroom.

Two days later. Apart from occasionally going out shopping with Cui Ying Ying and Nami, Lei Yu did not see this Cui Ying Ying, he had no clue what she was up to.

“Young master.”

Lei Yu heard himself being called so he started stretching his neck a bit and stopped cultivating. Opening his eyes, he saw Cui Ying Ying in front of him and was suddenly startled, “why are you addressing me that way?”

Cui Ying Ying smiled sweetly, "I've completed my task. Starting today, your name is no longer Lei Yu, and you could also say you are no longer Lei Yu. Outside in the public, we will address you as young master. A little later, there will be a car to take you away, and right now, I'm going to tell you some things you need to do today."

Waiting for two days, he was finally able to know what Cui Ying Ying was planning. Lei Yu quickly stood up and smelled a stench coming from himself. Embarrassed, he said: "I'm sorry, I'm going to take a bath, I will be ready soon." Lei Yu then hurriedly rushed into the bathroom. Although there weren't too much growth when he cultivated overnight, but the grime expelled

from his body seemed to be especially much more. After washing up for half an hour, he realized he had forgotten to bring a change of clothes with him since he was rushing about. Lei Yu wrapped a towel around the lower-half of his body and stepped out of the bathroom; rows of solid muscle were presented in front of the eyes of two beautiful girls. His upper-body had an inverted triangle figure; coupled with his messy hair and deep profound eyes; the two girls suddenly became infatuated, ogling at this man in front of them. Lei Yu smiled and said: "What are you two looking at? Wait for me while I put on some clothes."

As Lei Yu walked away, Nami and Cui Ying Ying both looked at each

other and spontaneously laughed together. They could see that the other had a red blush on their cheeks.

“I’m ready!” Lei Yu came out, interrupting the two beautiful girl’s fantasy. Lei Yu had no clue what had just happened.

Cui Ying Ying took out a stack of white paper from her Louis Vuitton purse. On the paper, it was packed densely with English as well as a copy of the Tenglong language. This was to make it easy for Lei Yu to read.

Reading the entire plan, Lei Yu gave a thumbs up. “Ying Ying, you’re amazing. In today’s society, using the media is indeed the best means



of publicity. As long as there is spotlight, the main character will soon become the hottest discussion amongst everyone.”

Cui Ying Ying’s plan was to notify several media outlets, tell them a mysterious figure had returned from the United States and was ready to hold a grand banquet. Many celebrities throughout the country had been invited to this banquet, and during the banquet, there will be an announcement that would shock the entire Kou country.

The media were afraid of false hype, but if they were to get a hold of a piece of news no matter how bland, then they will do everything possible and without the fear of consequences, to embellish or even

exaggerate that piece of news.

These past two days, since the three were occasionally wandering the streets shopping, they did not pay attention to the media.

In fact, these two days, a piece of information had already caused madness throughout society. The business community; the showbiz community; and it even spread to the government as well as the top ranks of the underworld.

Multiple newspaper headlines wrote that a mysterious 'young master' returned from the United States and will be announcing a shocking event at a banquet.

Even though it's a simple sentence that did not contain any hidden

meanings; but a day earlier, Cui Ying Ying has started printing a number of invitations and sending it out to major newspaper outlets. Not only did she invite reporters and editors from major newspaper outlets, she also invited many celebrities. With such a gathering that gave multitude of benefits to the media, they would naturally be happy to oblige and unknowingly become a pawn to this plan.

# Chapter 70:

## Impressive Scene

“Ying Ying, will this cause any controversy amongst people? If this kind of information was announced with such fanfare, will it be difficult for us to deal with it in the end?”  
Asked Lei Yu filled with concern.

“Don’t worry, I’ve already leaked some information all over the Internet, no one will know who you really are. With your fluency in English, especially when it comes to your American accent, nobody will think you were a citizen of Tenglong. Furthermore, you have to believe in the power of the media. Before, I had completed a series of

publicity, if I had not secretly leaked some of your information, people would not be so focused on you now. Don't worry, the response was not bad, they are all looking forward to meet this mysterious young master." Cui Ying Ying's confident face made Lei Yu speechless.

In fact, the release of the leaked information was not a surprising move; the praiseworthy thing was that Cui Ying Ying was able to help Lei Yu realize this grand plan. Although initially they will spend a lot of money, but it will quickly come back soon. For the remarkable economic major Cui Ying Ying, this whole plan of hers was actually quite simple for her to formulate.

Sure enough – half an hour later, a black stretch Hummer parked in front of the hotel. A group of people had instantly surrounded the roadway, their eyes focused on the hotel entrance. At the rear of the Hummer, four black Mercedes S500 sedans pulled up behind it. And from each car, four people ran out, a total of sixteen people. One of them opened the door of the Hummer while the rest lined up, each side with eight people. They were all respectfully waiting for something to happen.

The General Manager of the hotel heard from his staff about such an impressive scene was suddenly shocked; he did not know a VIP was actually staying at his hotel. Rushing down to the lobby with

sixteen people following behind him, they were all various department heads of the hotel.

For the hotel management to show up as well, this was not deliberately planned. But for such an impressive scene to occur, the hotel probably did not dare to neglect their duty so this was all under Cui Ying Ying's expectation.

People started gossiping on the main road, "who could it be to cause such a big scene?"

"That's for sure; could it be some high ranking official?"

"Impossible, officials that dare to be this showy? Not mentioning the Hummer, they would not dare to so

blatantly drive their Mercedes-Benz around.”

“That sounds logical, then who could it be?”

“My guess is some wealthy person, I am so envious!”

Everyone was discussing their opinions, but it seems they forgot one thing: The headline all over the newspapers the past two days.

Ten minutes later, no one was seen coming out. The sixteen men in black suits stayed silent, quietly waiting. The hotel’s General Manager and various department heads did not dare to show impatience, their eyes occasionally glancing inside to see if anyone was



approaching.

“Ding ding.”

The elevator's light came on indicating it had stopped at the first floor. The elevator doors opened and three people came out from the inside. The one in the lead was a youth that was twenty something years old with slightly messy hair; deep profound eyes that revealed a kind of mystery that could not be imitated; his handsome face showed maturity and one where he had experienced a lot in life; dressed in a tucked in black shirt with dark jeans and black boots; he came out into the lobby one step at a time.

Following behind his left and right

were beautiful girls in professional attire. One of them had a pair of feminine eyes that could seduce and hook the very soul of a man; and the other was a young girl that had a body of a goddess who looked shy, but her gaze never left the body of the young man leading them.

Inside the hotel lobby, everyone suddenly became still, all eyes were focused on this emerging trio. Apart from their eyes revealing a look of shock, it also revealed a look of infatuation.

When the trio exited the main entrance, all the good looking men and women on the main road suddenly couldn't contain themselves; you could even hear their shrill cries. All the girls could

not help staring at the mysterious man; and some of the men were fiercely catcalling, their target was precisely the two stunning beauties behind the guy.

The three did not seem to care about what was going on, they just faintly smiled.

The sixteen men in black suits bowed in unison before saying: “Young master.”

Lei Yu lightly nodded, then got into the car. The two beautiful girls also followed behind, getting into the stretch Hummer. The sixteen people hurriedly ran to the rear and got into the Mercedes-Benz. The five cars slowly left the crowd's sight, while people could not help

but stare unblinkingly at the disappearing cars. It was a long time before they woke up from this scene.

In the midst of the crowd, a voice was heard shouting: “That guy was the young master!”

Suddenly the buzz of discussions started. “That guy was the young master that has caused an uproar these past two days? He’s so handsome!”

“Such an impressive style!”

The hotel’s upper management was also secretly surprised. The General Manager then scolded several of his underlings, “such an important person staying in our hotel and you

guys didn't even know? What use are you guys?"

"Boss, what's the background of this young master?" Asked a staff member.

"Seeing the discussion by the media, they say he is a mysterious figure that just returned from abroad. And tonight, he will be holding a banquet at an upscale hotel to announce some important message." The General Manager shook his head, "he did not select our hotel for the banquet, which means it's negligence from you guys! I'm deducting your wages!"

Inside the stretched Hummer. Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying were conversing in a whisper with the

Tenglong language. “I say Ying Ying, wasn’t that scene you planned a bit too exaggerated?”

Cui Ying Ying smiled mysteriously, “this is just the beginning, you must continue maintaining your mysteriousness. It’s not the time for you to make a public appearance yet.”

“Well, didn’t you say we were going to announce a piece of news tonight? How am I supposed to announce it if I don’t make an appearance? Asked the confused Lei Yu.

Cui Ying Ying shook her head, “today’s arrangement was deliberate. Making a high-profile departure, the purpose was to

attract those tabloid reporters. I will take care of the banquet later on while you'll be taking this and getting off halfway.”

Lei Yu took a car key and some type of keycard, “what are these?”

“A little later, you will get off at a nearby parking lot. A car for you is already prepared there. Take this door keycard, and once you find the new hotel I’ve arranged for you, stay in the room and wait for my message.”

“This car... the car you’ve prepared for me, where did it come from?”

“You don’t need to bother with the details.”

The line of vehicles drove for about

twenty minutes more, and wherever they passed, bystanders would get excited from the unusual scene.

Under the watchful eyes of everyone, Lei Yu and Nami got out of the Hummer. At the parking lot, Lei Yu pressed the buttons on the key fob in order to search for their car and quickly found it. He and Nami then watched the five cars slowly leave. Lei Yu had no clue what Cui Ying Ying was planning next.

Driving the convertible sports car prepared for him, he and Nami followed the hotel's location on the provided door keycard.

At the front entrance of a luxurious 5-star hotel, a stretch Hummer and four Mercedes-Benz stopped there.



Right after that, the people started crowding around like a swarm of ants, completely blocking the entire roadway to the hotel. These people were all reporters from either newspapers or small radio media companies. They did not receive an invitation but hastily came anyway after hearing the news. They were hoping to get any first hand news on the mysterious young master, but the only person getting out of the car was only Cui Ying Ying.

“Can you tell us the background of the young master?”

“Can you tell us the real name of the young master?”

# Chapter 71: The Grand Banquet

A bunch of words in the Kou country's native tongue was thrown at Cui Ying Ying, which of course she didn't understand. Pushing away the sea of reporters, Cui Ying Ying said in fluent English: "I'm sorry, but the young master will be arriving shortly so please be patient."

Cui Ying Ying's words were obviously a lie, but these reporters acted like they found some key information and stood their ground outside, waiting for the so-called young master.

Walking into the banquet hall in an exaggerated manner, many people had already gathered inside. There were famous stars from the entertainment industry; business tycoons; and even some government officials had arrived, they too wanted to take a glimpse and rub shoulders with this young master. They wanted to see who this young master was that had become an overnight sensation and the hottest topic in every household.

The banquet hall had 3,000 square meters of useable space (32000 sq ft), no less than any large auditorium. The four walls were painted with a special stucco burnished gold paint that gave off a grand and rich look. Four huge

pillars were placed inside the hall, carved with delicate patterns; it was definitely done by some top class craftsmen. Inside the hall were two twenty meters long table side by side (65 ft); they were possibly formed by combining dozens of tables together. On the top of those tables was a gold colored tablecloth, followed by a large variety of delicious food. On the other twenty meter table, a variety of name brand wines were placed there; and many people were gathered at this table. Strangely, the tables filled with food seem to be deserted of people.

Everyone was dressed in clothes as grand and gorgeous as possible to show off their distinguished identity. In the center of the hall was a large empty space providing

an area for people to dance. Occasionally, you would see some couples go out and intimately embrace each other for a slow dance.

In the front of the grand hall and on top of a large stage, a few young men there were reading over their densely lined script.

One could say the most eye-catching display of the banquet hall were the four large crystal chandeliers hanging from the ceiling. A bright golden light illuminated the place, making the hall seem more grand and majestic. Everyone that was invited here felt proud of themselves since it showed they had risen high enough in society to be a part of this.

Of course to Cui Ying Ying, the most valuable group of people that had arrived here were the members of the media. All the reporters inside this hall were sent by the biggest and most well-known media companies in the Kou country. Included among them were people with a sharp tongue, but Cui Ying Ying had already come up with good rebuttals. With their news report, this young master will quickly become the hottest topic within the country, wouldn't that satisfy Lei Yu's request?

As for why he had to be known throughout the country, Cui Ying Ying did not know. Since Lei Yu did not say anything, then he had his reasons. As long as she was able to help him with his work, Cui Ying

Ying already felt very happy.

“Everyone, please quiet down.” Cui Ying Ying picked up the microphone. Living abroad for more than a year, it allowed her to improve her graceful people skills. She did not have the typical Oriental beauty’s sense of modesty, but she gave off an aura of being extremely capable.

Everyone stopped their conversations. While holding onto their glasses of wine, they all gazed at the beautiful girl standing on the stage of the banquet hall. Flashes from cameras were constantly landing on Cui Ying Ying’s body

“Ladies and gentlemen.” Cui Ying Ying cleared her throat, “today I am

apologizing on behalf of my young master." Everyone present certainly understood English, so an interpreter was not needed.

"Our young master had to take care of some things so he could not personally come today, so he made me his representative. To everyone present today, I extend my sincere apologies."

"Ah!"

"What?! How could this be?"

"Isn't this too arrogant?"

Discussions suddenly filled the air. Cui Ying Ying gently waved her hands, and although the atmosphere seemed a little anxious, everyone soon quieted down; one



could only hear the sounds of cameras snapping pictures.

“Today’s goal of the banquet will remain the same, which is to announce one thing. And this announcement is just a small event our young master is participating in while staying at the Kou country. He had several other projects he needed to oversee the operations of, so I hope everyone here can understand.” Cui Ying Ying said this gracefully without being alarmed.

The sound of discussions started up again. “He invited so many celebrities of society yet in the eyes of your young master, this was only considered a small event? Who is he exactly?”

“That’s right, what does he actually do? Such a cocky statement!”

Hearing the sounds of discussion, Cui Ying Ying’s mouth formed a sneer; she had reached her preliminary goal. “Before announcing this thing, I have a message I wish to disclose to everyone.” Cui Ying Ying’s voice slightly increased its pitch, quelling people’s discussion. The huge banquet started quieting down again. Looking at everyone below the stage, Cui Ying Ying then said: “Prior to this, our young master made a trip to the Tenglong country. I do not know whether the present celebrities of society know of a Cui Ying Corporation?”

A middle-aged lady laughed,

“everyone present definitely knows of them, the jewelry of Cui Ying Corporation is world famous, the diamond accessories on my body are mostly their brand. Within the Tenglong country, Cui Ying jewelry could be regarded as the most luxurious of items.” Although she said those words, but in fact she meant to belittle Tenglong citizens that they did not have the luck to enjoy it, while she was decked out with sparkling accessories. Even though Cui Ying Ying was somewhat angry, but she, whom was experienced in life, did not show any emotions, only smiled and said: “What this lady said was correct. Cui Ying Corporation is a large chain store; one could say that it may have monopolized the entire jewelry industry being the head of

it. But a few days ago, our young master invested two billion U.S. dollars and took over this huge corporation, so it's considered one of the many businesses belonging to our young master."

If an ordinary person heard what Cui Ying Ying said, they would certainly think it was a joke. Two billion U.S. dollars, this figure alone will allow a person to stay firmly among the world-famous Forbes magazine's richest list, yet she said this so casually.

One day ago, Cui Ying Ying had quietly contacted her father in Tenglong country. With her soft and hard persuasion tactics, her father finally agreed verbally, but of course no real contracts were

involved. He could not handle his baby daughter's pouty and charming words so he could only agree to her demands.

And the Supervisory Board along with the Board of Directors had already been notified and agreed to this. Although it caused a major ruckus, but actually Cui Ying Corporation did not lose a single penny, they only changed a single name.

“May I ask...?” A thirty something year old woman within the crowd of media picked up the microphone and brought it to her mouth: “May I ask if your statement can withstand our verification?”

Cui Ying Ying smiled faintly, “aren't

you insulting me and insulting my young master? Why would I lie to you for such a small business investment?”

The celebrities of society couldn't help gasping, such a large corporation was actually just one of his many investments? Then what kind of amazing background does this young master have? This young master had such an unfathomable background, then no matter what, they must try to get close to him.

This was not only the thoughts of business tycoons present, but also some government officials were thinking about this.

While the celebrities in the entertainment industry had an

alternative plan, especially the women who were dressed more provocatively. Each one began to fantasize, since this so called young master could make such a large investment, then he shouldn't be stingy with money right? If they could engage in a short-term relationship with him, then wouldn't just a little pinky of his fortune showered unto them will allow them live worry-free for the rest of their lives?

# Chapter 72: Project Collaboration

“Ladies and gentlemen, I am the young master’s Executive Assistant. For today’s announcement, I will only say it once; I hope everyone present can carefully listen to my words.” Cui Ying Ying’s tone had changed to being firm now but no one dared to voice any doubt. Being able to take over Tenglong country’s Cui Ying Corporation who had a monopoly of the jewelry industry, what type of status would one need to have in order to do this? Moreover, these people were willing to let the media confirm this information; in the presence of



such a large dragon, even if the present people could cling onto this dragon as a worm at its beck and call, they could be proud of their position.

Everyone held their breath, waiting for this beautiful young lady Cui Ying Ying to announce the news.

Gently clearing her throat, Cui Ying Ying then said: "Our young master intends to leave his presence within the Kou country. Those that have been invited to attend this banquet include the entertainment industry's A-list stars, business tycoons, as well as senior government officials. To summarize this, our young master is looking for a partner because he does not have a lot of time to deal with

things here.”

Upon hearing this, the meaning of Cui Ying Ying’s statement was expressed quite clearly. This mysterious young master wishes to invest in the Kou country and needs to find a business partner.

Cui Ying Ying saw the crowd beginning to discuss in whispers, and all of them looked excited. It looks like her desired effect has been achieved. Cui Ying Ying then said: “Since we have invited everyone here, we don’t intend to hide anything. The young master intends to present some opportunities before all of you today: The first, finding partners to co-find a talent agency firm. All the stars and actors present should take

notice, if you are interested in joining our new firm, then once your contract expires with your existing company, we will happily welcome you. Of course, you do not have to worry about your compensation; we will surpass your old contract and help you attain more magnificent achievements in the future.”

After her statement, many people had their hearts moved. Not only were the management level people who were already involved in the film industry moved, those absolute beauties of the industry were tempted as well. Cui Ying Ying did her homework, in a short amount of time; she was able to ascertain the contract expiration date of these stars present. This did take a

lot of money to handle but for this princess of Cui Ying Corporation, it wasn't even worth mentioning.

“In addition, there is a project collaboration opportunity: Our young master wishes to enter Kou country's real estate industry. To all the bosses here, this is a golden opportunity so I hope some of you will be able to grasp it.”

Suddenly, the entire audience in the banquet hall was in a commotion. The waiters that poured wine and filled drinks, along with the waitress staff, all had eyes wide in surprise. These people were all pivotal figures inside the Kou country, how could they be so loud and rowdy today? These people here weren't acting like their usual

high society self demeanor that they were used to seeing.

Within a lot of discussions, they were debating the credibility of these joint ventures. But when they thought about it, being able to gather most of the dominant people of society here just to play a joke with them? And in order to ensure the credibility of Cui Ying Ying's words, she announced the acquisition of Cui Ying Corporation first. So no matter how much they debated, everything was airtight and there weren't any flaws to doubt Cui Ying Ying's words.

Cui Ying Ying stood still for almost three minutes and the sounds of discussion continued. Gently patting the microphone, a "pomp

pomp” sound was heard and the voices gradually quieted down.

“I’ve already prepared contracts for artists or actors who wish to cooperate with our new agency and are ready to sign on. Therefore, this means there are only two collaboration projects. As for the artists and actors, there are only ten places available for now, what we need are four men and six women. Now, if you are interested in partnering with us, then our young master will welcome it with open arms. The day after tomorrow, our young master has scheduled another banquet at noon, at this same place here.” When she finished, Cui Ying Ying smiled while revealing a charming look. The men present could not help

ogling at her beauty. The most charming thing about Cui Ying Ying was her curvaceous body and her angelic like face, but her strongest point were her pair of eyes that could seduce the hearts of every man in this world.

“Excuse me.” In the midst of the reporters came a voice. Everyone’s eyes looked over at a twenty something year old female reporter who asked: “Can you tell us the young master’s identity from the United States?”

“I’m sorry; the young master is unwilling to disclose this for his own privacy so I hope you can all forgive me.” Cui Ying Ying said apologetically with a smile.

“Then what credentials do we have to ensure that the young master has indeed acquired Tenglong country’s Cui Ying Corporation?” The reporter asked again.

“This young miss reporter, I’ve already said it before, anyone can go verify this information’s validity themselves. It doesn’t matter if you think our young master’s credibility is zero; with our young master’s ability, he could dispatch any upper management personnel into the Kou country from the United States. With their strength in management, do you think it will be any lower than the people present?” Pausing, Cui Ying Ying then said: “Of course, in order for everyone present to feel more at ease, today I have especially invited a multinational lawyer. And



with perfect timing, we will have a video conference with Cui Ying Corporation's Board of Directors.

At this time, a forty something year old middle-aged man came in through the banquet hall's main entrance; with his blonde hair and white skin, it confirmed his bloodline as a foreigner.

After being bombarded with a series of questions from the reporters, they learned the middle-aged American was named Bruce Reid. Bruce had presented a series of documents to prove his identity.

Sure enough, the crucial time had arrived. At the front of the hall, a white screen slowly came down. In front of Cui Ying Ying's eyes,

familiar faces appeared on the screen, among them was her own father Cui Zhong Hao.

After the multinational Attorney Reid's authentication, and a real-time video conference to discuss questions from the people present, no one had any doubt left of the young master and his plans.

After everything was over, Cui Ying Ying smiled again, "the day after tomorrow, I will go into more detail about the collaboration contracts. I hope today everyone can enjoy themselves, and because I have some business to tend to, I will be leaving first. Please feel free to do your own thing."

The previous dozen or so men in

black suits that had followed Cui Ying Ying to the banquet all came forward surrounding her.

Regardless of the reporter's questions; the business tycoons request for more detailed information on contracts; or questions from the artists; Cui Ying Ying would just smile at them before hurriedly leaving the place.

Cui Ying Ying did not bring any attention to the government officials attending this event because she knew they could not be in the spotlight of the media. She wanted them present so they would know of Lei Yu's intentions, and that there would be benefits for them. And these government officials would probably come to the next banquet uninvited since

without their help, things would not progress that smoothly. The hidden meaning Cui Ying Ying gave them should have been very clear.

Returning to the hotel where Lei Yu was staying, she made a some phone calls before heavily exhaling. She looked at the confused Lei Yu with his mouth agape and Nami just had no clue what was going on.

“Do you really need to have that facial expression?” Laughed Cui Ying Ying.

“How are you going to end this? Real estate, talent agency, how come you never mentioned these in your plan before?” Asked Lei Yu after coming back to his senses.

“Originally, I planned this strategy knowing that I didn’t have faith in its execution, but Bruce Reid was able to fly over in time, so I executed my original superior plan. You said you wanted to become well-known in a short amount of time, so apart from getting you into the business industry, the other option was to make you an entertainment star. But you can’t sing nor can you dance, so I had to choose the first option.” Said Cui Ying Ying.

“Then how should we deal with the banquet 2 days from now? You know we don’t have that much money to fix this mess.” Lei Yu was somewhat dejected, this thing was getting too big for him to handle.

“I have my ways.” Smiled Cui Ying Ying in a mysterious manner.

Nami on the side was in cloud of confusion, she did not understand what the two were saying in the Tenglong language, but she was still reminiscing the earlier impressive scene as they exited out of the hotel.

# Chapter 73: The Whole Story

The sensation of the event was huge. The next day, not only were the major media outlets broadcasting it on television, but many newspapers everywhere had headlines stating: “Young master is advancing into the Kou country, business tycoons are eager to cooperate!”

Moreover on the Internet, someone uploaded a video that was shot using a cell phone from a long distance. Although the picture was kind of blurry, but it still resulted in tens of millions of hits from viewers. Overnight, a small thread

at a forum site became a major place where professionals would discuss and debate the whole situation.

In the video, a man and two women walked into a stretched Hummer; a dozen men dressed in black suits appearing to be the bodyguards of these three young people all got into four Mercedes-Benz vehicles. This video has been reproduced multiple times and even landed onto Tenglong country's websites. Within a short time, this scene had become the talk of the crowd, of course, many of them were praises and of admiration.

Some reporters went through special channels to inquire on any news about the young master's



acquisition of Cui Ying Corporation. The Board of Supervisors and the Board of Directors did clarify the situation so how could it be fake? Suddenly, television and other media broadcasts created a sensation again with the clarification. Some newspapers that only printed fresh stories actually made an exception and reprinted this new piece of information.

“Isn’t this a bit too sensational?” Lei Yu wiped the cold sweat from his forehead. Causing such a scene, even when he was still with the Lei family, he has never seen his father Lei Yun Tian cause such a ruckus.

“Don’t worry, since I’ve started this, I will take care of it all the way to

the end, I won't leave any bothersome leftovers around. Just pretend you are playing a game, but don't forget you can't give out any names. So who cares if they come looking for us?" Laughed Cui Ying Ying.

"Then the day after tomorrow's banquet, what should I say when I make my appearance? I don't understand any of the business lingo, what if I embarrass myself? Asked Lei Yu.

"The day after tomorrow is not the time for you to make an appearance yet."

"Still not time? Isn't that being over cocky now?" Endless sweat was dripping down Lei Yu.

Cui Ying Ying laughed, “don’t worry, I will arrange everything, just enjoy your time staying at this hotel with Nami and I will take care of everything for you.”

“Ugh...”

These past two days, Cui Ying Ying never left the hotel fearing she would bump into some reporters. If they really found out about this place, then even if Lei Yu wanted to hide, there would probably be no place in the entire country he could hide in.

Even after the banquet on their way back to where Lei Yu was staying, they had to change their cars twice. This situation was like an undocumented worker afraid of

revealing his identity to the authorities.

As for those bodyguards and luxury cars, Cui Ying Ying only had to pull some strings. For a worldwide reputed Cui Ying Corporation, would they not have direct reseller stores or licensed distributors in the Kou country to call on?

These direct reseller stores or licensed distributors would definitely send a few cars to wait on Cui Ying Ying. They were aware of the Board of Supervisors secret meeting, but even though they knew some young master had acquired the corporation, they did not know the in-depth content of the meeting. Cui Ying Corporation was basically playing a huge joke on

the entire world. Being able to assist this young master, the dealers all felt it was an honor for them, making this mysterious young master's fake reputation increase in believability.

Tenglong country, a large mansion was built on top of a mountain top. The mansion gave off a luxurious and ancient feeling. In front of the main entrance were six young people dressed in black modern clothes that were observant and alert. They were walking back and forth, and paying attention to any intruders that may come forth.

Inside one of the many offices of the mansion.

A middle-aged man put down his

newspaper and slapped the desk top with his palm. "This Cui Zhong Hao... immediately contact him, I want to see him now!"

"Yes master, I will contact him right away." The Elder hurriedly left the office and punched in a series of telephone numbers, contacting the chairman of Cui Ying Corporation, Cui Zhong Hao.

Not long after, a private helicopter slowly landed on top of an empty field. From the inside, a forty to fifty year old middle-aged man exited, followed behind by two large burly men that appeared to be bodyguards.

"Boss Cui, my Lei family wanted to acquire your Cui Ying Corporation

but was rejected by you. Can you explain to me regarding the news I've heard today? Are you intending to offend our Lei family household?" Lei Yun Tian placed a newspaper in front of the middle-aged man, his voice filled with anger.

"Boss Lei, this whole thing was actually schemed up by my foolish girl." As the head of a multinational company, Cui Zhong Hao was naturally not afraid of anyone. But when facing the Lei family whose fortune could match a country's, no matter how courageous he was, he would not dare offend them. Cui Zhong Hao could only reveal the truth of the situation.

"The girl you are referring to is Ying

Ying?” Lei Yun Tian’s tone softened. Even though there were some doubts in his mind, he knew being angry doesn’t solve anything.

“That’s right; it’s all because of her. In fact, this situation is somewhat related to your Lei family.” Cui Zhong Hao then said: “Your son Lei Yu has been pretty close to my Ying Ying recently. I am not too clear on the whole story but the only thing I do know is that your family’s second young master already has a girlfriend. But Ying Ying is adamant on being with him, even though they cannot be together, she is still willing to unconditionally expend herself. Being her father and unable to persuade her to listen, I can only help her to the best of my ability.”



“Boss Cui, you should tell me everything in detail.” Lei Yun Tian heard his son’s name and was suddenly puzzled.

“A mysterious young master returning from the United States and acquiring Cui Ying Corporation was all schemed up by Ying Ying. There is no such person, from what Ying Ying explained to me; Lei Yu wanted to make a big move in the Kou country, but needed some type of influence and prestige, so Ying Ying was bent on helping him. You should know that all my wealth was accumulated solely for my precious daughter, so when she requested my help, how can this father not help? Not to mention... Lei Yu is part of the Lei family, even if Ying Ying cannot be together with the

second young master, I will still try my best to help out.”

After these statements, Lei Yun Tian finally understood what was going on. But whatever Lei Yu was trying to accomplish in the Kou country, he had no way of figuring out.

“I fully understand the situation now. Everything you’ve said today, the most pleasant thing to my ear was your last sentence.” Lei Yun Tian’s domineering aura could not be imitated. No matter how wealthy Cui Zhong Hao was, he would dare not offend this lofty figure. Since Lei Yu was in fact a member of the Lei family, then confessing that one of their own was involved in this situation allowed him to not offend

this fearsome clan.

The Elder accompanied Cui Zhong Hao to send him off before returning to Lei Yun Tian's office.

“Master, what is Lei Yu playing with?”

Lei Yun Tian shook his head, “I’m not sure, but in order for Lei Yu to have a change of heart and return to our Lei family, we have to come up with something. Make some preparations; we’re going to the Kou country to see what Lei Yu is up to.”

“Understood.”

The next day, a mess of people were hanging around the entrance of a luxury five-star hotel. A variety of

brand name cars were neatly parked in the front parking lot. A host of distinguished figures steadily trickled into the hotel. There were a bunch of small time reporters and the daydreaming second-rate stars sticking around the front entrance, hoping to catch a glimpse of the young master; this caused a chaotic traffic jam of humans. At this moment, anyone able to enter the hotel could not help feeling proud of themselves.

# Chapter 74: Small Eastern Island

The huge crowd of people flocking to the hotel caused the Kou country's government to utilize their police force to maintain order, and the degree of madness these people were exhibiting had fully fallen into Cui Ying Ying's expectations. This atmosphere was not the mass wanting to meet just a mysterious young master anymore, but she had successfully stirred this situation into the mass wanting to meet a world renowned superstar.

Cui Ying Ying was very intelligent; the distance between the hotel they were staying at and the hotel where

the banquet was being hosted at was not too far away. She chose to walk so that it would not attract people's attention. This could also add some mysteriousness to it, but the main point was to help conceal Lei Yu's residence location without luxury cars giving it away.

If the reporters caught wind that the young master whom had acquired a world-known jewelry brand and was going to advance his business into the Kou country; was actually living at this little mediocre hotel; then he would probably become the laughing stock of the country in an instant.

With no one paying any attention to her, Cui Ying Ying walked into the hotel's entrance.

“Miss, please present your invitation.” A young man in a security guard uniform stepped in front of Cui Ying Ying’s path.

A bit confused, Cui Ying Ying did not understand what the other person was saying. But after seeing the scene where reporters were being blocked from entering, this uniformed person probably wanted her to show something, but why would she have an invitation she sent out to others?

Smiling politely while speaking English, Cui Ying Ying said: “I’m sorry sir, if you don’t allow me to go in today, then this banquet will be cancelled.”

How could this little security guard

understand English? This hotel was not near the airport so foreign guests were non-existent, so the requirements for hotel staff were naturally less stringent.

Not waiting for the young man's reaction, Cui Ying Ying stepped aside and continued walking in. She happened to bump into a middle-aged man, looking up; it was the hotel's lobby manager. With one look, the manager recognized the person in front of him. Before he could even say anything, the young security guard ran over and grabbed onto Cui Ying Ying's arm. With a smile at the manager, he then said to Cui Ying Ying: "If you don't have an invitation today, you can't enter the hotel!"



The manager took one look and immediately became stunned. Only after a short moment did he finally recover, “you idiot! Let go of your dirty hands right now!”

The young security guard was confused. Cui Ying Ying straightened her clothes, turned her head to survey the scene, and then said directly to the manager: “You did a pretty good job on maintaining security.”

Upon finishing her statement, she didn’t care about what just happened and only walked past the two to press the elevator button.

The instant the elevator door closed, one could see a scene where the manager was lecturing the

security guard as if he was lecturing a small child.

Lei Yu was in his hotel room sitting cross-legged. Gently breathing out some turbid air, he then stretched his arms and heard “pak pak” sounds coming from all over his body.

Ever since he reached the [Discharge] stage, there were no signs of him making any leaps in progress. Lei Yu was not in a hurry, with his current age, whether it is in Tenglong country or the Kou country, those with the same strength as him were usually reaching the ages of an elderly person. The youngest was probably in their forties or fifties.

Being at his current stage, progress was originally very slow. Coupled with the fact that lately, he was unable to calm his heart and mind down, Lei Yu still began to blame himself somewhat.

Nami was sitting on a sofa in the living room daydreaming, but when she heard some sounds coming from the bedroom, she recovered her senses.

Lei Yu hurried into the bathroom to wash up before putting on some clean clothes.

“Nami, do you want to go outside with me for a bit?”

“Sure, young master.”

Although Lei Yu thought being with

her felt good, but he felt Nami had really made him her master. As to why? Lei Yu did not ask, perhaps this was a custom in the Kou country?

The two exited the hotel's main entrance. On a whim, Lei Yu wanted to go and see what was going on with the banquet. Grinning, he got into his convertible and they drove towards the banquet that was not too far from their current location.

Traffic jams were a driver's most annoying situation, and the current congestion he encountered was definitely not normal. Lei Yu carefully looked about; the hotel where his banquet was held at was cordoned off and most of the cars

were unable to get close but still tried. This shocking scene made Lei Yu completely give up. If he had to personally deal with such a scene, he would probably just stand there in front of everyone dumbfounded.

Just at this time, an odor wafted over from the side. Lei Yu gently sniffed and frowned, a stench had almost made him throw up. He turned his head to the side and observed a black car; inside the car sat two people dressed up in a very strange manner. He could also see flies flying back and forth around these people... Lei Yu hurriedly pressed the button to close the top before closing the windows tightly in order to escape this disgusting smell.

His mind was actually pondering:  
Can't these two people smell their  
own disgusting stench? Did this  
stench come from their own body  
odor?

Through his own unique lightning's  
gravitational force, he subtly  
released his internal energy out,  
enveloping the surrounding black  
car. Very quickly, Lei Yu came to a  
conclusion: These two people  
weren't ordinary, inside the Kou  
country; their strength would be  
comparable to an Intermediate  
Ninja. But the way they were  
dressed were nothing like the  
previous ninjas he had encountered  
so Lei Yu wondered what was going  
on?

While Lei Yu was deep in thought,

the car behind them started beeping their car horn like crazy. Lei Yu looked up and realized there weren't any cars in front of him and he was the one blocking traffic now. He hurriedly shifted gears, stepped on the throttle, and drove past the hotel and left the area.

In the evening, Cui Ying Ying left the banquet and returned to the hotel to meet up with Lei Yu.

“How was today? Did everything go well?” Asked Lei Yu.

Cui Ying Ying placed a white plastic bag on top of the table and then slowly sat down. “Pretty good, today, I’ve selected ten well-known business tycoons of the industry. I will make a final selection next

Thursday night. Oh yea, there were eighteen first-rate stars attending today, hoping to sign on to our newly established talent agency.”

I really don't know how you're going to handle this in the end, are you really going to cooperate with these major companies? On what ability do we have to do this?” Lei Yu asked full of concern.

Cui Ying Ying naughtily extended her delicate fingers and clamped them onto Lei Yu's nose; Lei Yu did not try to avoid it or else would she so easily succeed? Gently squeezing her fingers, Cui Ying Ying then said: “Really, don't you know the powerful effects of a star? You, in the Kou country or maybe even the whole world, have become a well-



known figure now. Not mentioning that you may have to take money out to look for a partner, even if you now took advantage of your reputation and made others finance the whole operation, they would probably agree to it and not complain one bit.” Pausing, Cui Ying Ying then revealed a charming face: “I never thought you would actually already have fans now. I really don’t understand the Kou country girls and how their thought process works, haven’t they seen better looking men than you?”

Although he couldn’t understand what Cui Ying Ying explained, but he did understand her last sentence. Lei Yu smiled slightly and said: “Perhaps because the men of the Kou country are either too short or

too ugly looking.”

“Don’t be so smug.” Cui Ying Ying smiled tenderly at him before taking out several exquisite looking lunch boxes from the white plastic bag. “You and Nami haven’t eaten yet right? I ordered some abalone for you guys from the hotel since I heard it was quite good; quick, have a taste.”

Lei Yu had driven Nami around in a large circle, but since there weren’t any good places for them to check out, they eventually returned to the hotel. They indeed have not eaten yet; when they were actually getting quite hungry, Cui Ying Ying happened to appear with food in a timely manner.

This abalone was the highest quality type; there were a full six of them drenched with a golden soup; the appearance made it look extremely appetizing. Lei Yu picked up a fork and poked one before handing it to Nami. Someone like Nami had never tried this type of food before so was naturally surprised and excited. Even though Kou country was surrounded by the sea, the cost of this abalone was not someone of her status could afford to enjoy. Just smelling it was enough to satisfy her; she never dreamed of actually getting to taste this delicacy, so she carefully ate it savoring every bite.

This was not the case for Lei Yu; he had been too hungry so with just two or three bites, he devoured one

of them. To him, he saw this type of abalone as just a common dry abalone or the imitation kind, so this luxurious delicacy for Lei Yu had become a complete waste on him.

“Can’t you eat a bit slower?” Cui Ying Ying pouted.

Lei Yu who had already cleared out two abalones and almost done with the third laughed, “well, I was really hungry!”

“How come you never asked if I wanted some? Just devouring everything with such ferocity.”

Lei Yu blinked, this was indeed an awkward situation. He hurriedly shoved his half eaten abalone in

front of Cui Ying Ying, “you want a bite?”

“So hateful! Who would want to eat your saliva?!” Although her mouth said that, her heart felt extremely happy. If she were truly to take a bite, wouldn’t that be considered an indirect kiss with Lei Yu?

-----

In the waters near the eastern side of the Kou country, therein lies a small island. Even though this island was small compared to the Kou country which was technically a big island, it was still the size of a small city.

There weren’t a lot of buildings on this island since it was mostly forest

and mountain slopes. Upon the island, many people were actually stationed here, every one of them carrying a weapon on them. And at every one thousand meters there would be a big building with monitoring devices constantly flashing. Everyone was alert and paying 120% attention for intruders.

Near the center of the island, there was a place that was completely different from the rest of the island. This place was simply paradise on earth; an artificial lake directly linking to the surrounding ocean; the lake was crystal blue; and next to the lake was a huge villa with at least three thousand square meters of living space (32,000 sqft); this was basically a vacation mansion.

A dozen or so lounge chairs were setup next to the lake. Getting further away from the lake was a huge round bed, and covering over the bed was a large awning. On top of the bed lay a dozen or so innocent looking beauties that were completely naked and lounging around a short middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man's hair was very long; a black rubber band was used to tie up his hair. The rubber band did not look like anything good; it almost looked like a used condom.

With a dark scar across his face, narrow tiny eyes that were almost just a crack; he was enjoying himself by lying on top of a girl's white stomach. His left hand was

kneading the soft breast of another girl, while his right hand was holding onto a phone talking about something.

“What’s the origin of this young master?”

A voice came over the phone, “I’ve tried investigating but haven’t found any clues. But this young master acquiring Cui Ying Corporation, my people in Tenglong country say the information is reliable.”

“I want another thorough investigation; I want to know why this powerhouse suddenly appeared inside the Kou country.”

“Understood.”



Putting down the phone, a young girl opened her legs. She then slowly sat on top of the middle-aged man's lower portion, and the moans of two people could be heard.

# Chapter 75: A Night Adventure

Trying to improve his mood, Lei Yu decided to take Cui Ying Ying and Nami out and about. Being cooped up inside the hotel all the time wasn't too good.

Although Lei Yu thought the Kou people were extremely vile, but the country's scenery was very beautiful. Just the view of the mountains alone would make one feel refreshed and rejuvenated.

Within the car, the three were driving around the windy roads of the mountains for more than two hours. During this time, the two

beautiful women did not know what Lei Yu was keeping inside his heart; he just kept staring off the eastern coast at a small island. The repressed anger was continuously burning in Lei Yu's heart but now was not the time for it to explode; running over there by himself was like him being a masochist, seeking to be abused. He will wait until his identity reaches a certain degree, then these people will approach him on their own.

When they returned to the city limits, the sky was already getting dark. The neon lights dotted the dark skyline and the multitude of colors caused one to become dizzy. At a distance, a huge neon sign had some words that Lei Yu could not read, but he could see men and

women outside the place rocking their bodies back and forth to rowdy music coming from inside. Lei Yu asked: “Nami, what kind of place is this?”

Nami was sitting at the front passenger seat; she looked at the neon sign before replying: “Young master, that’s a nightclub.”

“Ying Ying, are you interested in visiting a nightclub of the Kou country to hang out for a while? I feel like drinking a bit.” Lei Yu smiled and looked at the rear-view mirror while asking Cui Ying Ying.

“I haven’t drunk any alcohol in a long time, but if you want, I’ll accompany you.”

They parked their car close to the front entrance of the nightclub. Like a gentleman, Lei Yu opened the car door for Cui Ying Ying and the three strode inside.

At the front entrance, several gang affiliated youths saw the two pretty girls enter and immediately gawked at them. In the Kou country, there were many pretty girls, but they rarely saw those with such charm as these two. One had an extremely sexy body while the other possessed a charming aura that was hard to forget, especially her pair of seductive eyes.

Lei Yu and the two were walking inside when they heard some whistling behind them. Lei Yu slightly pursed his lips; looks like

pretty girls are not bound by what country they're from; no matter where Cui Ying Ying went, she would always attract the male race.

The three then entered into the main hall; a scantily clad girl with an exaggerated sized chest bowed and greeted them in the Kou language. Nami approached the scantily dressed girl and exchanged a few words; they were then led to an area of the hall.

It was currently around ten o'clock at night and the atmosphere was quite lively. The explosive bass from the music made the trio's heart feel weird, but Cui Ying Ying who used to frequent places like this quickly adapted to it. As for Lei Yu, he possessed a powerful body so

he was not seriously affected. But when it came to Nami, her face did not look too good but due to the dimly lit room, no one was aware of it.

They sat down at an empty table near the dance floor. The young girl that brought them there left while another pretty girl brought over an alcohol menu. When she saw Lei Yu, she went over to his side and seeming to accidentally brush his arm with her huge soft mounds. Lei Yu deliberately shifted his arm away and did not pay any attention to the girl's gaze.

After receiving the alcohol menu, it was fortunate that there was also English on it. Because the music was too loud, Lei Yu pointed at Cui

Ying Ying implying for the waitress to ask her to select the drinks. Seeming to understand Lei Yu's gesture, the alcohol menu was given to Cui Ying Ying, but the waitress continued standing next to Lei Yu; her scantily clad bare buttocks kept brushing against him.

These types of moves were what most men enjoy receiving, and would welcome it with open arms. But with two beautiful women beside him already, the young girl's behavior actually annoyed him somewhat. He pushed the girl's waist away lightly without using too much force; she should understand the meaning of it.

Quickly selecting some alcoholic drinks, the three stared at the dance



floor where young men and women were dancing like crazy. Everyone here was very open; men and women whom were complete strangers would still embrace and grind each other, some even started intensely kissing.

The three just drank their alcohol feeling slightly out of place. Cui Ying Ying was not surprised with the scene since she has encountered these situations in the past, and Liu Hao also helped her out of bad situations many times before. As for Nami, she kept pressing her hand against her chest as if she was having a hard time dealing with this environment.

Lei Yu finally noticed Nami's strange behavior, and looked over

at her with a puzzled look. Nami gently shook her head implying she was okay, just that she hasn't adapted to this type of environment yet.

Around 10:30PM, the music gradually came to a stop. A handsome and young man went onto the dance floor while the rest of the people returned to their tables.

Even though this young man was good looking, but he could still not escape the dwarf gene, he was only about 1.65 meters in height (5ft 4in). In the Kou country, this was considered the average height.

Lei Yu listened to the young man "ooo ooo lala" for half the night as

if hearing a sermon on the Bible. Once the young man was finished, he heard the musical sound of a female voice and the lights went out. White smoke started spraying out from the dance floor and lights started flashing. Unknown at what time but the young man had disappeared from the dance floor. A human figure came out from a small black door behind the dance floor; the person had wavy long hair, and a tall body figure that was entirely unlike the features of the average Kou person.

The lights suddenly brightened and a spotlight shone on a girl who had appeared. A black leather skirt showed off her slender smooth legs; she was only wearing a bra on her upper body; and she seemed to be

wearing black eyeliner that made her look more seductive. The girl then stuck out her tongue and licked in a circular manner around her lips. The noise she caused was no less than the previous music level.

Lei Yu then frowned, not because the beautiful girl before him was not attractive enough, but because he smelled something familiar. Even though the smell was really faint, and an ordinary person would probably not be able to detect it, but Lei Yu could clearly smell it; this was a disgusting stench that would make someone throw up. Lei Yu immediately thought of when he was on the road and outside of the banquet, there were two people inside a black car; the smell was

almost the same but this time, the smell had a gamey smell to it. Looking at the direction the scent was coming from, it should be coming from the girl that had appeared on the dance floor.

The girl tossed her light wavy hair while she slowly strutted her sexy body to the center of the dance floor. Two chains came down from the ceiling and the girl grabbed onto one with each hand. While midair, she swung herself around the audience in a circle before returning to her original spot. Lei Yu had confirmed his thoughts that this girl was not normal; although she was only an Elementary Ninja, if she did not reveal herself to the eyes of ordinary people, no one would realize she was a ninja.

At this point, the music became more euphoric. Listening to it, Lei Yu could only feel goose bumps forming on his skin, but the surrounding males continued howling in delight, beating on the tables and blowing shrill whistles.

What made Cui Ying Ying happy was that Lei Yu did not have much reaction when this sexy girl appeared on the dance floor. Unlike the hungry look of the men present, Lei Yu even had a slight look of disgust on his face.

She didn't know why Lei Yu was disgusted; only he himself was clear on that reason. If this girl was allowed to continue performing any longer, he was afraid that he would really throw up; he really could not

tolerate this stench.

The girl at the center of the dance floor appeared to be removing the only piece of clothing covering her chest. Two white towering peaks were suddenly exposed to everyone present; the entire audience started getting even more excited. There were even some men that wanted to rush onto the dance floor to have some fun with the girl.

Lei Yu forcefully stood up from his chair which gave Cui Ying Ying and Nami a scare. They thought Lei Yu couldn't handle it anymore and wanted to rush onto the dance floor as well. But when they saw Lei Yu keep making gestures with his hands implying he wanted to leave, the two girls then finally felt

relieved.

Before Cui Ying Ying and Nami could stand up, the half naked girl from the dance floor started moving towards Lei Yu's table. Because she was already performing at the edge of the floor, the young girl only took a few steps before arriving in front of them. She used a seductive gaze that she thought would capture Lei Yu's heart which caused the rest of the men present to start cursing.

Cui Ying Ying and Nami's mouth were already agape in an O shape. The young girl ignored the two and placed one hand on her breast gently rubbing it while she placed her other hand on Lei Yu's chest.

Lei Yu did not show much reaction



before waving his hand, motioning Nami to come over. Recovering from the surprise, Nami went over to Lei Yu's side.

Whispering something in Nami's ear, Nami then said to the half naked girl: "My young master wishes for you to not disturb him."

At this time, Lei Yu went over to Cui Ying Ying's side and grabbed her hand; with his other hand, he grabbed onto Nami's hand. The three then left the nightclub under the watchful eyes of everyone around the dance floor.

Leaving behind the shocked half-naked girl, Lei Yu's face kept flashing through her mind. Firstly because she was moved by Lei Yu's

aura and his profound deep eyes; the second was the statement Lei Yu made. “Could he be a ninja?” A ninja in the Kou country was highly respected and would rarely appear in public. But after recalling Nami’s words, she addressed him with two words “young master” which made it hard for her to believe.

Several pairs of hands were trembling and reaching for the girl’s chest, but she detected them and deftly shifted away with a laugh. She lightly strode back to the center of the dance floor to continue with her performance.

“Lei Yu, what’s going on?” Cui Ying Ying asked with concern when she saw Lei Yu breathing in forceful breaths.

Lei Yu shook his head, "I'm fine, just needed some fresh air."

In Cui Ying Ying's heart, she thought Lei Yu hated those types of women. No wonder when she took the initiative to chase after Lei Yu, she was met with rejection. And of course, Nami was thinking of the same thing as well.

Driving back to the hotel, Lei Yu went into his bedroom deep in thought about something.

"So those two men in the black car and the woman tonight were somehow related, they all had the same smell. But why were their smell not detected by ordinary people?"

Any thoughts of abnormal humans would lead Lei Yu to think of the Yamaguchi-gumi; could it be that these people with the stench were part of the Yamaguchi-gumi?

Lei Yu opened Cui Ying Ying's bedroom door, "can you investigate who or what type of people opened the nightclub for me?"

"No problem, I'll give you a response tomorrow." Looking at Lei Yu, Cui Ying Ying asked: "What's going on? Did something happen?"

"Nothing, there's just something I don't quite understand. Go to sleep early, I'm going back to cultivate." Lei Yu smiled before closing the door and leaving Cui Ying Ying's room.

The Thursday one week later arrived very fast. Today was the time to screen their partners and the signing of artists. Cui Ying Ying left the hotel early, leaving words: "It's still not time for you to reveal yourself yet."

The distributors in the Kou country for Cui Ying Corporation provided an office building for Cui Ying Ying's use. The place was currently very lively; according to Cui Ying Ying's expectations, these prominent businessmen did not care how much capital they had to invest, all they cared about was cooperating with this extremely popular young master.

There was actually a fierce competition going on right now

that involved the changes of a numeric nature.

“I’ll take out \$20 million U.S. dollars to invest in the talent agency!”

“I’ll invest \$35 million.”

“\$40 million!”

The current office building had actually become an auction site. These shouts by the business leaders were like music to Cui Ying Ying’s ears; she then walked to the front of the conference table quietly watching the business tycoons on scene.

Focusing on efficiency was a business’s fundamentals, but having a good reputation and

powerful foundation was the soul of the company. Having a company with a strong foundation that they could rely on as a partner would save them a lot on publicity and strategies.

As the saying goes, “a tall tree catches the wind” proved to be right. Our “tall tree” young master has caught the attention of many people causing a sensation; competing in order to cooperate with him was an inevitable situation.

But for someone to gain such a fast momentum in a few short days, there’s probably not many people in this world capable of doing it.

Lei Yu was fortunate that he had

Cui Ying Ying's help, but he was even more fortunate because Cui Ying Ying was Cui Zhong Hao's only daughter; he doted on her and treated her more important than his business, that's why such a miracle could happen.

More importantly was Cui Ying Ying's mind; looks like her studying economics and management in the United States was not just for show. She was also able to grasp the psyche of a businessman which was very useful in the business world. If we were to compare her business sense to Lei Yu, Lei Yu would simply be a complete idiot.



# Chapter 76: Death At Midnight

Cui Ying Ying's people were bustling with activity. With the information provided by Cui Ying Ying, Lei Yu started combing the vicinity of the nightclub he had previously visited, hoping to find some clues.

Cui Ying Ying used the relationship that Cui Ying Corporation had with people in the Kou country to grasp who controlled the nightclub behind the scenes – it was a small branch belonging to the Yamaguchi-gumi.

Investigating late into the night, Lei

Yu finally found his target. Coming out of an Audi, a scantily clad woman draped her arms around the shoulders of a man before walking off.

Quietly following behind the two, Lei Yu sat down at a table off to a corner at the nightclub. Many young girls came to strike up a conversations with him but were all rejected by Lei Yu's cold facial expression. The main point being Lei Yu did not know what sort of bird language [1] these people were chirping at.

[tl: [1] = Just the author's way of bashing the language. ]

It was then time for the main attraction. Lei Yu endured the

stench and watched the girl's solo performance. Once she was done, the naked girl picked up her clothes from the ground and left the dance floor. Lei Yu also stood up and exited the nightclub. He stood at a corner across from the nightclub and condensed his internal energy, completely hiding his life force. He quietly watched the people entering and exiting and finally found his target again; it was still the same man and woman. Lei Yu then got into his car and tailed behind the Audi.

The dimly lit streets would only have street lights after long intervals, shining down a yellow light. There were only two luxury cars currently on the road.

Lei Yu followed the Audi to a hotel before coming to a stop. Lei Yu waited for the two to get out of the car before he rushed up to follow.

He watched the blinking lights of the elevator before it stopped at the sixth floor. Lei Yu pressed the button for another elevator before heading up to the sixth floor as well.

This floor had at least thirty rooms on it; and to search one room at a time was an impossible matter. Fortunately, this girl left behind that special stench which could not be dispersed.

In front of a room, the smell appeared more intense here. Lei Yu did not actually stop but kept on

walking by. When he first got off the floor, he saw a surveillance camera at the end of the hallway. He made it look unintentional as his hands slightly covered his face while he walked to the camera's blind spot. After waiting for ten minutes, Lei Yu was kind of impatient so he started walking towards the target room. Using his unique lightning ability, he destroyed the magnetic lock on the door and rushed inside the room.

A woman's moaning and gasping could be heard in the room. The sudden appearance of Lei Yu made the woman unable to react. Her sexy bare hips were still constantly moving up and down while her eyes were filled with surprise at the sight of Lei Yu.

As for the man on the bed, he was already unrecognizable. His body was bloody and the fresh blood covered the white bed sheets dying it red; it seems that this man had already died.

“Why are you here?” Surprisingly, this woman actually spoke English to him. Lei Yu definitely felt this was strange, but thinking about it, perhaps when Nami called him young master, this woman came to some sort of conclusion.

“You’ve probably committed many wicked acts in your life huh? I don’t know what your goal is but are all the people in the Kou country this depraved?” Lei Yu softly asked as he frowned and looked at the corpse that had been tortured beyond

recognition.

“Who are you really?” Asked the woman as she removed her lower body from the man’s penis. She then wrapped her naked body with the blood-stained bed sheet.

Seeing how calm this woman was, Lei Yu acted indifferent and said: “I approached you because I wanted some answers to my questions.”

The woman’s expression was also indifferent, not having that previous self-pleasure expression. She slowly sat down on a sofa by the window; lit a woman’s extra slim cigarette, and gently exhaled the smoke. She then asked: “What do you want to know?”

“I want information on Otsuka.” Lei Yu’s eyes narrowed slightly as he replied.

The woman’s hand slightly flicked the cigarette and the ashes scattered onto her chest that was not completely covered by the sheet. Not beating around the bush, she asked: “You are Tenglong country’s Lei Yu?”

It looks like Lei Yu’s name had already become well-known in the Yamaguchi-gumi. Since that was the case, Lei Yu no longer needed to hide anything. He continued to ask: “Where is Otsuka right now?”

“I don’t know.” The woman turned her head away completely ignoring Lei Yu. But in actuality, she was



releasing a scent. The scent of this smell became more intense and strong; it appears that she thought she could silently notify her companions. Little did she know, Lei Yu was the first to notice the smell and the stench of the smell had become really unbearable. If this was the case, he could not give her any opportunities. If someone was really to come, then things might get messy and his identity may be found out.

In this situation where the smell was increasing, Lei Yu stared at the stench-filled woman before arriving in front of her in almost an instant. He raised his hand and grasped her neck, "I'm sorry but you forced me. If you hadn't made that move just now, then you probably wouldn't

have had to die. But it's too late now, you have to die or else my plans would all go down the drain."

Lei Yu's eyes flashed with hatred before he exerted force into his fingers. \*Crack\* The woman's eyes were still wide and round but her neck had already been snapped by Lei Yu.

It's not that the woman didn't want to resist, but in the face of a strong opponent like Lei Yu, even if she wanted to resist there was nothing she could do. Besides, Lei Yu's action were fluid and fast like water so she did not even have a chance to retaliate.

Just as he exited the elevator back down at the hotel lobby, a black car

pulled up to the entrance and stopped. Two men got out of the car so Lei Yu with extreme speeds, picked up a newspaper from a coffee table and obscured his face with it before sitting down on the sofa. The two men only glanced in his direction before getting into the elevator. Indeed, they were heading to the sixth floor.

Lei Yu's memory was pretty good, weren't these two men the ones that he saw on the road right next to him? It was mainly because of their unique smell, a stench that could not be blocked by any means.

Lei Yu had thought about going upstairs to finish off the two, but thinking on it some more, since the woman had already released her

scent, exactly how many of her companions would be responding? It's probably best not to take the risk, so Lei Yu got into his car and rushed back to his hotel.

At least now he had some clues; nightclubs will be his starting point. As long as he focuses his attention there, he will eventually get more clues.

Cui Ying Ying's mood seemed pretty good. As Lei Yu entered the door, he saw her happy smile with a mysterious look.

"What is it? Did today's selection go off without a hitch? I'm beginning to think something knocked you on the head making you lose your marbles." Lei Yu shrugged, looking

at her puzzled.

“This is what I call ‘catching a white wolf while unarmed.’[2]Without spending a penny, I netted lots of money!” Thinking a bit more, Cui Ying Ying shook her head, “that’s not right, we did fully invest in this. The two banquets cost us more than two hundred thousand U.S. dollars, so this investment of ours is no small amount!”

[tl: [2] = A scam artist without doing anything was able to get money. ]

“How come you’ve never brought this up? Why would the banquets require such a large amount of money?” Asked the surprised Lei Yu.

“Of course it’s expensive; this is standard for the luxuriousness of a 5-star hotel. If it wasn’t for this, how could we gain the trust from these cunning foxes of the business world?”

Lei Yu smiled, “what do you plan on doing next?”

Today’s selection is pretty much done; I’ve already selected two investors. One of them is willing to invest \$70 million U.S. dollar to start a talent agency, we’ll call it Meng Yu.” Cui Ying Ying revealed a bright smile as she said this.

“Seventy million!” Lei Yu’s jaw almost dropped to the ground, his mouth was agape in an O shape and his eyes were round and wide.

“That’s right, and the investor said he was willing for each party to hold 50% of the new company’s shares. Basically, we don’t need to fork out a single penny.”

Lei Yu swallowed hard, “there’s still free lunches in this world? Isn’t this money a bit too easy to get?”

“This is called a celebrity’s effect; your reputation in this world has been awakened. From now on, there will be many more people looking to cooperate with you, and that’s just the start.”

“You’re saying...” Lei Yu calmed his inner excitement, and continued listening to Cui Ying Ying’s astonishing plan.

“About investing in real estate, I reached a consensus with two high-ranking Kou officials. They agreed to develop the waters near the eastern side of the country so we could build an overwater maritime city off the coast. But we need to inject a large amount of capital for this, and it’s not something we can pawn onto others. I’ve already discussed this with my father and he’s willing to invest in a small portion. And the other portion will be taken care of by a private owner that mostly deals with light industrial products and services. We only need to provide some “benefits” to these two high-ranking officials and they will take care of all the necessary documents. I am certain this business idea will net us big profits.”



Lei Yu probed a bit and asked: “So how much is that small investment is your father making?”

“One hundred million.” Pausing, Cui Ying Ying then continued, “U.S. dollars.”

“F\*ck! That’s crazy!”

Listening to Cui Ying Ying ramble on about business strategies, Lei Yu just couldn’t comprehend the complexity of it. But one thing he was actually clear on; several A-list celebrities in the Kou country that were also well-known around the world, were actually willing to leave their old company and join the newly formed Meng Yu Corporation. Just this matter alone made Lei Yu marvel at the thought.

In the eyes of ordinary people, celebrities were the object of their pursuit. In no way did he ever think that in less than half a month, these celebrities had become people working for him, the young master; this was indeed incredible.

In fact, the person that was most happy from this situation was Cui Ying Ying. This was her first time going out to sea and looking for gold, she did not expect to find bucket loads of them. And in accordance to the whole budget, their own investments in this did not even reach one percent. For a girl that had just left school, this was simply a fantasy. She never thought she could pull this off so the feeling of accomplishment she felt, words could not describe them.

Making Lei Yu a prominent figure had succeeded beyond expectations. Lei Yu had now become a figure that everyone wanted to know, but unfortunately his whereabouts were too mysterious, up until now, still no one really knew who this young master was. Perhaps there were some people that knew his identity, but they have already been gotten rid of.

As for Nami, from beginning to end she knew nothing; she had never left the side of Lei Yu the entire time. Whatever was going outside, it was certain she had no clue. Whenever Cui Ying Ying spoke with Lei Yu, they would use the Tenglong language so of course she couldn't understand any of it. If Nami were to know of Lei Yu's

current identity, she would definitely rejoice for having chosen to follow by his side.

Sitting on the sofa in a corner, Nami was in a daze. She was thinking back ten plus years ago when her parents had a tragic accident; that scene was something she would never forget. At the same time, she would also never forget her benefactor Lei Yu.

# Chapter 77:

## Abducting A Beauty By The Beach

With the death of the hotel manager previously and now the death of a nightclub dancer, this caused a high degree of concern for the Yamaguchi-gumi. The Yamaguchi-gumi formed three small teams: The first to investigate this mysterious young master because they were really interested who he was exactly; and the other two teams would each investigate the death of their two members. They were hoping to find some clues but little did they know their efforts would be futile, Lei Yu did

not leave anything behind for them to find.

-----

For a pleasant and romantic time, the best choice was the beach. With the smell of the ocean air, experiencing nature's wonder was an enjoyable thing. Cui Ying Ying was wearing a sexy swimwear that exposed a lot of skin; she stood there opening her arms wide and feeling the ocean breeze against her skin.

Someone had mentioned this before: Nowadays, it's so different from the past; it used to be that when one moves the swimsuit out of the way, they would see a butt. Now it was the opposite, if you

move the butt out of the way, you can now see a swimsuit.

But what Cui Ying Ying was wearing wasn't that exaggerated; at most her soft buttocks were half revealed while her curvy waist with long slender white legs could be fully seen.

Cui Ying Ying alone was enough to make any man's soul escape their bodies and go to heaven right away. But the swimsuit Nami was wearing, if a man had even a trace of being a heterosexual, their blood would instantly rise up in their bodies and their nose would spray blood all over the place.

With a curvy slender waist, her rounded hips were simply wrapped

in a white cloth; her large mind blowing round chest; it even made people worry for her safety. Would she tip forward and stumble to the ground from the weight? The size of her big chest was considered only heard about in legends.

The two sexy beauties on the beach attracted all the men's perverted eyes. As for Lei Yu, he was wearing a pair of large sunglasses; his head resting on his crossed palms, and lying on a large towel with a look of enjoyment. Lei Yu's body had a healthy glow and toned sculpted muscles showing off what a perfect man's body looked like.

If those two beauties had the ability to attract all the men's attention here, then Lei Yu had gained all the



women's affectionate glances. One could see many beautiful women had rested their chins on their folded hands with a dazed look while their fantasies ran wild.

"Ying Ying, will you be recognized here?" Asked Lei Yu with some concern.

"Don't worry." Cui Ying Ying smiled and said: "I doubt they can recognize me when I'm not wearing my business attire, and even if they did recognize me, they'll probably be filled with doubt."

"Uhh..."

On the side, while Nami was smearing sunscreen on her white thighs, she asked: "Young master,

are you thirsty? Do you want me to go get you a drink?"

Lei Yu nodded, "sounds good. Oh yeah, could you also get some sushi rolls? I'm a bit hungry."

"Yes, young master." Nami stood up and her chest started bouncing up and down. Lei Yu could not help ogling since it was just too mesmerizing. If Lei Yu did not have a strong tolerance, he may have already stretched out his hand and grabbed them for fun.

As Nami left, Cui Ying Ying stretched and touched her toes. When she straightened up, her upper body also started bouncing up and down. She then approached Lei Yu and asked: "Can you tell me

what exactly you are doing in the Kou country? Aren't you afraid of making Ai Er sad? The way you are lying to her, it's not very appropriate right?"

There was a slight pain in Lei Yu's heart. He thought of Ai Er's innocent appearance; her clean and pure eyes; Lei Yu really didn't want to lie to her. But things have progressed to this point now, it's pretty much impossible to back off from it now; not to mention Lei Yu never thought of stopping his plans. Since he had already planned on doing this, he might as well see it to the end. No matter what, he was a member of Dragon Group; he felt he had a responsibility to find the culprits that brought the contaminated batch of insects into

Tenglong country. Additionally, little Ke could not die in vain; if anyone tried to interfere while he was tracking down Otsuka, Lei Yu will not hesitate to get rid of anything blocking his path.

“I’m sorry; I currently cannot tell you my purpose. But once everything is over, you will naturally know everything.” Lei Yu’s gaze fell upon a small distant island, although not very large, it was still the size of a city.

Seeing that Lei Yu was reluctant to tell her anything, Cui Ying Ying did not continue asking, Lei Yu probably had his reasons. At least Cui Ying Ying knew that Lei Yu would not hurt anyone important in his life. Cui Ying Ying very naturally

put herself in Lei Yu's category of important people.

Picking up the sunscreen that Nami had just used and handing it to Lei Yu, "can you apply this on my back?"

"This..." Lei Yu hesitated, but Cui Ying Ying's request wasn't too out of line. Since Nami wasn't here and there was only Lei Yu, he could only take the small brown bottle from Cui Ying Ying's hand.

As he touched Cui Ying Ying's delicate and smooth back, Lei Yu suddenly felt like he was touching a piece of peerless jade. As for Cui Ying Ying, her body couldn't help shuddering and her heart beating faster. Even though this was a

simple act of putting on sunscreen, but it still made her heart surge endlessly. This was the first time Lei Yu had touched her body, even though it was under such circumstances, she was already very happy with it. His face flushed red while he was looking down, and a fat guy could be seen at a distance staring at the scene dumbfounded to the point where he had even forgotten to chew the food that was inside his mouth.

“That’s strange, what is Nami buying that’s taking her so long?” Lei Yu suddenly realized the two had been here for half an hour and Nami had still not returned.

“Nothing bad should have happened right?” Asked Cui Ying

Ying.

Lei Yu shrugged, "I don't know but I hope nothing happened."

"Should we go take a look? Nami has such pretty looks and a nice body; it's possible that she's being bothered by some men."

Thinking about this point, the two nodded their heads. Simply packing up their belongings, they started walking outwards from the beach.

They arrived at an area with wooden huts where there were many shops that sold fast food and drinks, but they still couldn't find any signs of Nami. Lei Yu frowned, even though he didn't have any good impressions of the Kou

people, yet Nami was the only Kou person that he cared about. Lei Yu felt that Nami was slightly different, and the days that he has spent with her up until now has made him start to value her. Unable to find her after searching for a while, Lei Yu started worrying.

“This is strange, how come we can’t find her?” Cui Ying Ying looked all around; Nami’s body was very special, one could say absolutely stunning so if she was in the vicinity, it was certain their eyes would be drawn to her. Yet even after walking around the place once, there were no signs of her.

“Sushi!” Lei Yu pointed beyond the wooden huts at a black a white object lying on the sand.



The two ran over and sure enough, near the fallen sushi and outside some nearby red and blue tents, two youths were pulling Nami trying to drag her inside. Nami was resisting with all her might, her face covered with tears and her red eyes made one's heart ache for her.

Throwing the sunscreen in his hand like a long-range projectile, it struck one of the youth's head. Lei Yu's grasp of his own strength was near flawless so the throw will not take the youth's life, but it will still knock him out cold.

With the sudden arrival of a brown bottle striking his buddy, the other youth turned his head and looked over. He first noticed Cui Ying Ying and his eyes widened, he then

noticed Lei Yu who had a rather large and tall body compared to himself. He then started cursing but Lei Yu could not understand any of the words and kept walking forward.

The youth seemed to be afraid as he saw these people getting closer to him. He hurriedly screamed out to a distant crowd of young men and women whom were laughing and playing beach volleyball. That group then immediately came over.

There were almost twenty something people that came over and surrounded Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying; such a large movement of people attracted the attention of many people. A lot of people were only looking from a distance, not

daring to get close. These groups of young men were well-known for being scoundrels and troublemakers; relying on the wealth of their family, they would often bother and bully the girls. But everyone usually turned a blind eye to their actions, since as long as they didn't bother them, who were willing to stand out and cause trouble for themselves?

Nami suddenly struggled forcefully and got rid of the youth's grip on her. She then ran behind Lei Yu and pulled on his arm. Inadvertently, her two soft breasts were pushing against Lei Yu's back, giving him a wonderful sensation that was indescribable.

Although they were surrounded by

twenty something people, Lei Yu kept his calm composure. It was natural since these twenty something people were only ordinary people, so Lei Yu would not consider them much in his eyes. But the identity of these people was not yet known to Lei Yu.

The youth that had been knocked out by the sunscreen early on woke up and shook his head, and seeing the current situation at hand, he pointed at Lei Yu and shouted:

“You’re courting death! Do you know who I am?”

# Chapter 78: Some Shock And Awe

This chirping language, inside Lei Yu's group, only Nami understood what the guy was saying. Lei Yu shook his head, intending to ignore them so he turned around and was ready to walk away.

“Stay where you are!”

The youth that had just recovered from being unconscious screamed out while pointing at Lei Yu. Even though he couldn't understand the words, Lei Yu could still understand the tone of his dog mouth so he stopped. Lei Yu slowly turned around, his deep profound eyes

staring at the youth and his inflamed manner. Relying on having a lot of people with him, the youth puffed up his courage and cursed: “Who the f\*ck do you think you are? You actually dare to show off having two hot girls accompanying you?”

Nami didn't know where her courage came from, but she repressed her fear, strode forward and pointed at the youth yelling: “Don't you dare insult the young master!”

“Young master? It's him?” The youth sneered while looking Lei Yu up and down; he wasn't used to seeing such a tall person that looked like a giant compared to himself. The youth then said to

Nami: "Follow me, and you won't have to worry about living expenses for the rest of your life."

"Nami, what is he saying?" Lei Yu frowned, the two of them conversing made him extremely confused.

"Did everyone hear that? This kid is actually trying to use English, hahaha..." The youth looked at his twenty something companions laughing out loud.

Anger appeared in Nami's eyes as she stared at the youth. She turned around and answered Lei Yu: "Young master, he... he's insulting you!"

Nami also spoke in English and the

people's laughter immediately stopped. Within the crowd, a twenty something year old girl with a small cherry-like mouth had a look of surprise. Since both her hands were raised up, the upper piece of her swimsuit slid up about 1 centimeter and made her look even more attractive.

“Isn't that the assistant of the mysterious young master?” The young girl exclaimed out loud.

Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying couldn't understand her words but Nami did. She was surprised to see the young girl pointing straight at Cui Ying Ying.

“It looks like she really is!” People within the crowd started discussing



this subject.

The youths present were all children of either high-ranking government officials or business tycoons. That day when Cui Ying Ying hosted the banquet, there were only a lucky few that had the opportunity to attend with their parents; but most of them weren't qualified to go.

After they bragged about it, all the friends that were unable to attend the banquet were filled with envy. Because these youths practically worshipped this legendary mysterious young master, they wanted to witness the honor of bathing in his presence. But alas, the closest they've ever come near the young master were the texts

about him on the internet or in the newspaper; no one had seen his true face.

Originally, several of these rich girls had sparkling eyes upon seeing Lei Yu. But the companions they were mixed with ruined the chance, so they could only hold back and not say anything. Now that there was such a suspicion, suddenly all the girls could not help looking up and down at Lei Yu, starting to feel a bit embarrassed.

Another youth opened his mouth and said: "Do you guys remember a video online? It's the three of them!"

Everyone started thinking about it; some time ago, the internet

circulated a crazy online video, a man and two women were greeted by sixteen bodyguards in black clothing and then invited into a stretch Hummer. The mere bodyguards were driving in Mercedes-Benz S class cars that were top of the line, then the identity of this young master must really be amazing.

The young men and young girls began to get excited; the two beautiful women in their eyes became even more grand and majestic. And this young master in front of them was getting more and more attractive; his tall figure, broad shoulders and toned body; it was starting to make these girls have a fanatic crazed look.

Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying watched these eyes of ill intent rapidly change, and they were both puzzled by it. But the whole thing about the mysterious young master, Nami did not know anything so when the situation became like this, Nami did not know how to explain it. And of course, Cui Ying Ying and Lei Yu did not know what these people making “gu gu nang nang” sounds were talking about.

“Hey!” The youth that was previously knocked unconscious still had belly full of anger, he did not care about any young master or young mistress. Ever since he was born, no one had dared to hit him before, so when this wealthy youth’s temper came up, not even ten heads of cattle will be able to

bring it back down. He pointed at Lei Yu and said: “Just by her calling him young master, do you guys really think he’s the mysterious young master? Don’t be fooled! Remember that I was just knocked unconscious by a bottle!”

Nami pouted her cheeks as if she had forgotten her previous fear, then retorted: “Weren’t you just about to sexually assault me?”

“You! You shameless sex slave! Your father I,[1] took a liking to you so it should be considered your honor!” The youth cursed through clenched teeth.

The twenty something young men and young women also could not tolerate his actions since they

clearly saw the whole incident from beginning to end. As Nami was buying drinks, the youth grabbed one of his buddies and tried to forcefully pull Nami away, and now he was saying Nami was shameless. If they were dealing with ordinary person, these youths would not care one bit, but the people in front of them were possibly the mysterious young master and his companions. For such a thing to happen to their idol, even if it were their parents, they would still curse them out to defend the idol.

Nami's body was trembling; apparently her anger was at its limit. Lei Yu lightly patted Nami's shoulder and softly asked her: "Nami, what is he talking about?"

“Young master, we should quickly leave this place.” Nami’s eyes started turning red again, and the tears in her eyes were about to drip down.

“Don’t worry and tell me, don’t you remember seeing how powerful I am? Do you think I’m afraid of them?” Lei Yu comforted her by using a low voice that could only be heard by them two.

Nami held back her sobbing for a brief moment, her voice trembling while she repeated the words of the youth. Lei Yu’s temper instantly rose up, he then shouted: “You son of a bitch!”

Everyone blinked, what country’s language was that? Not one of them

in the crowd could understand his words. Cui Ying Ying was immediately aware of Lei Yu's anger or else he would not curse out using Tenglong words; she hurriedly shook her head at Lei Yu.

Lei Yu then sneered, "I'm not that dumb, I learned this move from Liu Hao, it's enough to frighten these sons of bitches!"

After saying this, Lei Yu pointed at the youth and said in fluent English: "You idiot, do you know what type of people are the most respected in the Kou country?"

Removing his sunglasses and shaking away some hair that was blocking his face, Lei Yu's eyes were filled with an elusive look. But this



kind of look had become a deadly weapon against women; the deep profound gaze made them go crazy, the girls all stared at Lei Yu with fanatical eyes.

Lei Yu slightly shifted his foot apart half an inch, slowly raised his right hand, and then started condensing internal energy into his arms.

“Ahh!”

With a loud shout, he punched the sandy ground with his fist. Cui Ying Ying’s reaction was considered not slow and immediately hid behind Nami’s back; she then used her Louis Vuitton bag to cover Nami’s eyes.

“BOOM!”

A loud noise was heard. At this moment, the twenty something people that had surrounded in a ring were covered with sand and dust, the effect was similar to a tornado that had just blown through causing a sandstorm that rushed towards everyone present. Everyone was covered in sand; those with a fast reaction had closed their eyes in the shortest amount of time, while the ones with a slow response naturally felt the sand sting their eyes, followed by tears involuntarily streaming down.

“Waa! Ninja!” Someone within the crowd shouted out.

Suddenly, the twenty plus attractive men and women had their mouths agape, especially the youth that

started this whole thing; he was already so scared that he fell on his ass. And in the middle of his shorts by the crotch area, a wet patch of sand was seen; it's doubtful anyone would believe the wetness was caused by seawater.

Each and everyone that looked at Lei Yu had a sluggish face of fanaticism. This kind of worship on their face was even stronger than them seeing the prime minister of the Kou country; it was like they couldn't wait to kneel at Lei Yu's feet and loudly call him grandpa[2].

After that, Lei Yu pulled the two super beauties away from the surrounding crowd, leaving behind the group of girls in spring fever mode and the boys who seemed to

have just seen superman, all standing there dumbfounded.

As for the youth that caused this, he was already scared silly. Even he had guts and looked down on the legendary mysterious young master; he would still not dare to insult anyone that was identified as a ninja. Even if it were an Elementary Ninja, in the eyes of ordinary people, their existence were already overwhelming.

Lei Yu's simple deterrence was only seen by these twenty plus men and women. Because that punch was performed while they were surrounded, the people on the outside naturally did not know what happened. Seeing Lei Yu's trio coming out, everyone craned their

necks hoping to see what had happened inside the encirclement. Apart from seeing a group of youths with lifeless eyes, they couldn't see anything else.

Towards these ordinary people, he couldn't really fight with them, and even if he cursed them, they wouldn't understand. Lei Yu did not want to lower himself to their levels so as long as Nami was okay, he will let bygones be bygones.

In the evening, the three of them returned to the hotel; whatever happened today was hard for Nami to forget. Cui Ying Ying was taking this a bit better, she already knew somewhat about Lei Yu's strength. His disciple Liu Hao was already quite arrogant with his own

strength, then it goes without saying that this super master lived up to his name.

But Nami remembered that within the crowd, someone shouted out ninja. Was young master really a ninja? Thinking about it, Nami shook her head. She wanted to ask Lei Yu but did not dare; this question would continue to keep bothering her.

Lei Yu actually didn't care about what happened this afternoon; to him, it was just a tiny incident that wasn't something he should bother thinking about anymore.

Nami obediently sat on the sofa off to the side of Lei Yu, her eyes unconsciously staring at Lei Yu who

had turned on the laptop and opened up a website. Suddenly, her face froze.

-----

[1] Chinese people use that when they want to act big/tough/superior to the person they are speaking to

[2] Exaggeration of worship

# Chapter 79: The Boss Of Yamaguchi-gumi

A pop-up advertisement appeared, with a red background and yellow characters, a giant eye-catching headline read: “Young master discovered at the beach and heroically rescues a beauty.”

But this headline was written in the Kou characters so Lei Yu naturally could not read it. Upon seeing Nami’s facial expression, he asked: “What’s wrong with you?”

Nami blushed, and then translated the words on the headline for Lei



Yu. After that, whichever website they went to would have the same series of headlines, but fortunately no photos appeared. It seems that the group of young men and women were simply too surprised and obsessed, they completely forgot to take pictures.

Coincidentally after being surrounded, the people on the outside were unable to record or take pictures of the event either.

“How could it be that quick?”

Cui Ying Ying laughed, “have you forgotten how powerful the internet is? Before you became famous, I also relied on the internet and achieved pretty good results.”

Lei Yu blinked, then picked up an

apple on the table before taking a bite. “Ying Ying, what’s the next step?”

Lei Yu was actually the most concerned about Cui Ying Ying’s real estate plans, the one where they were going to build an overwater city on the east coast of the Kou country. The location of this overwater city was what Lei Yu was looking forward to the most. Since it can be considered as a city, then the surface area would not be small. With what Cui Ying Ying revealed, the size of the city would be around fifteen thousand acres, or the equivalent of ten square kilometers. The size of this area is enough to scare someone to death, and this will become a huge revolutionary project. The funds

that Cui Ying Ying will be injecting into the project was simply a drop in the bucket, but they had the support of the Kou government officials, and their partner was a head of the electronics industry, so there shouldn't be any problems with the start-up capital. They could sell the buildings as they build them so the money will continuously come back, alleviating the danger of lacking funds.

And with the mysterious young master Lei Yu's name attached to it, it would be hard for this luxurious masterpiece of an overwater city to not become the hottest piece of real estate ever. Based on the plan's projection, the real estate prices may surpass the rates of the most expensive downtown area of the

Kou country by at least three times. If you were to put these horrifically profitable numbers in front of an investor, anyone would be filled with doubt. Now it was different, with such a famous reputation backing it up along with the unique allure of an overwater city, this piece of undeveloped real estate has already caused a hype that could reach the skies.

However, based on common sense, we can only say that people of the Kou country have a pig's brain in their head; as stupid and dumb as can be. Their Kou country was naturally surrounded by water; it's already a mega city island. Cui Ying Ying's idea was just to shift a city's limit towards the edge of the water, add some houses to it, and with just

that, it became the current hype.

Now Lei Yu's concern was not centered on building the city, he was focused on the small island off the east coast of his new city.

Establishing a city on a parcel of land the size of ten square kilometers, this was equivalent to shortening the distance from that island. Lei Yu was able to get closer to this Yamaguchi-gumi that was unfathomable to people.

It's not that the project can be completed whenever one wants it. Without three to five years time, pulling a city by the sea out of thin air could only be read in mythical tales. So recently, Cui Ying Ying had become quite busy, and she had also notified Lei Yu: "It's time that

you revealed yourself.”

“When should I do it?”

“You will have to participate in tomorrow night’s groundbreaking ceremony.”

Lei Yu wanted to laugh and cry.

“Damn, we’re building an overwater city off the coast, the f\*ck we need to break ground?” Lei Yu was thinking this and did not say it out loud.

-----

Ever since the duel between Lei Yu and Cai Zhong, Tenglong country had become quiet. Du Zhang Hai of the Ming Sect seems to be keeping a low profile and hasn’t made any big movements lately. It seems that

after the outcome of Lei Yu's duel, it made Ming Sect lose a lot of face. It's hard to blame Du Zhang Hai in wanting to borrow a foreign power to take care of this eyesore.

As for the Lei family, it was even quieter there. The most important fact was the family's master and elder were nowhere to be found inside the household.

Like always, Celestial Court was carefree, anything that happens around the country did not really affect them; they were able to enjoy their reclusive and easygoing lifestyle.

Amongst this temporary tranquility inside the country, Martial Sect was a little different. Shangguan Xi

Hong had arrived at the military camp. Sitting inside the main hall of the villa, his hands playing with a large bead. This bead was exactly the Spiritual Aura bead that Lei Yu had received, but then given it to Nuo Hu and Liu Hao. Relying on this bead, the two had improved their cultivation by leaps and bound.

“What is Lei Yu thinking? He disappeared for such a long time and the gift I gave him, he would so casually give it to others, he’s practically disregarding and looking down on me!” Shangguan Xi Hong’s tone clearly showed his anger.

Nuo Yi Long and the others were standing at the front-end of the main hall. They looked at each



other but didn't know what to say. Before Lei Yu left, he said wanted to leave for a bit to get rid of some stress, so was there really any reason to stop him? Besides, Lei Yu was Dragon Group's Deputy Commander, even if he disappears for three to five months, it wasn't a big deal. This is the freedom one gains when they become a powerful individual; he was even fully justified to claim he was behind closed-door training.

The reason for Lei Yu leaving had already been sent up the chain of command, but Shangguan Xi Hong could not accept this reason, he was afraid this once in a lifetime genius would get up and disappear from the world. And this was why he came here today to lay blame on

someone.

But even if he was in a hurry to find Lei Yu's whereabouts, they had no idea where to start. A living person free to go where he wanted, how are they going to find him? Were they actually going to mobilize their entire military force? Although Lei Yu was an important individual, yet he shouldn't be important enough to that extent.

Shangguan Xi Hong angrily left Dragon Group. While inside the car, he took out his phone.

"Commander Xiao, wasn't your son interested in Commander Nuo's daughter? Let them get close to each other more often."

Putting down the phone, Shangguan

Xi Hong sneered, "I don't believe that you won't show up."

In the future, Shangguan Xi Hong will realize his decision today would become a huge mistake, making it too late for any regrets.

On an island off the eastern coast of the Kou country, this was the headquarters of the Yamaguchi-gumi. No one unauthorized would dare to access this area, including the Kou country's government officials; they would only occasionally pick up a telescope to look over. Even though they wanted to know what was going on at the little island, they didn't have the courage to get close to it.

In an area of the little island, a

young man with a height of about 1.7 meters respectful stood next to a dwarf like little person, pulling out some photos from his jacket's chest pocket.

“Boss, this is the face of the mysterious young master.” The youth said.

The dwarf was surprised like he thought of something. Looking at the person in the photo, he frowned, “he’s a Tenglong citizen?”

“That’s right boss, from the occasional slip of the language he speaks, we can determine he is a Tenglong citizen. But his use of English is very fluent, so perhaps he is a Tenglong citizen that had returned from the United States.”

“What’s his name?”

The youth slightly hesitated, followed by saying: “Sorry boss, there was no way for me to check this. We... due to the person called Lei Yu in Tenglong country, most of our people have returned here. So, our manpower there was insufficient to expand out for a more thorough investigation. But we were able to thoroughly investigate the Cui Ying Corporation, and there were in fact news of it being acquired. This person has become known as the “young master.” As for the United States, with just the name “young master,” there was no way for us to even begin our search.

The dwarf was holding onto the

photo, his eyes glazed over as if he was thinking about something.

Seeing the boss like this, the youth didn't say anything, his eyes were involuntarily glancing over to the side where several naked super beauties showed off their bodies that could make any man's nose bleed. The youth's heart was cursing: "F\*cking hell, such beautiful ladies being used like this, what a waste."

Since he couldn't resist the temptation of these beautiful women, his lower body could not help rising up creating a tent like shape in his pants.

After a while, the dwarf waved his hand, "you did a pretty good job, this woman is your reward, go have

some fun.” Then, from the group of women lying down fully naked to one side, the dwarf picked out a girl and threw her into the youth’s arms. The youth was suddenly overjoyed, “thank you boss, thank you boss!”

His previous hard work had finally paid off, holding onto the flirtatious and seductive beauty, the youth went towards his living quarters. It looks like he will have to play for at least a full day and night in order to vent the pent up heat in his body.

With these photos, wanting to find the location of this young master was not difficult. But the dwarf had a sudden thought so he was not in a hurry to make contact with this young master, the time has not

come, the show was not ready yet. The dwarf hummed to himself, he then pinched the breast of a girl and then started rubbing them. His eyes gave off a ruthless look, “you want to share a piece of the pie in my Kou country, it’s not something anyone can do. I will have to ‘greet’ this nameless brat soon!”

If these photos were seen by his underling, an Advanced Ninja by the name of Otsuka, the underling will certainly be alarmed because the person in the photo was precisely Lei Yu. But he was only a little Advanced Ninja, even though he had a respected identity in the Kou country, but wanting to see the head honcho of the Yamaguchi-gumi? How could it be so easy?



# Chapter 80:

## Somewhat Relieved

Something happened these past two days that made Lei Yu extremely confused. The amount of people guessing about his background increased greatly and this was caused by a unique feature that Lei Yu possessed.

Ever since the appearance of Lei Yu at the beach, it triggered an unprecedented sensation. Not only were they discussing about Lei Yu himself, they were also talking about his unique feature, a bolt of lightning branded on his right arm. The brand caused a lot of discussions between the people;

some said it was just a tattoo that he randomly picked; some said it represented that he was a member of a mysterious organization. In short, there were many different opinions and each of them had their own logical explanation.

Lei Yu wasn't actually afraid of the Kou people finding out his real identity, he was actually looking forward to this. The problem was if the discussion of his brand reached the Tenglong country, then the people closest to him would certainly figure out who the mysterious young master was.

Lei Yu was considered a loyal person, and there was originally nothing wrong with him wanting to get revenge for little Ke. But the

longer he took doing this, the deeper and more complex it will become. Perhaps inside Lei Yu's heart, a part of him had found the origination of the bacterial insects so he wanted to take revenge for that as well. If Ai Er and Nuo Hu knew about this, then there would be no way for him to stop them from coming to the Kou country. If this were to really happen, then he will have to change his plans, at the minimum Lei Yu couldn't act recklessly in his endeavors.

Protecting Cui Ying Ying and Nami had already occupied so much of his time that he couldn't go off and do certain things. If Ai Er was to come as well, then the things he had planned for would become disastrous. At the minimum, Lei Yu

would have to put in more thought into his next steps.

The more one worried about something, the more it was prone to happen. Sure enough, the discussion of the mysterious young master had spread like mad to various forums; some people even replicated the brand on Lei Yu's arm and started posting it all over the internet.

Cui Ying Ying's phone was ringing and the caller ID showed it was Ai Er.

"Ying Ying, don't lie to me, are you with brother Yu right now?" The voice from the other end of the line sounded very anxious.

Cui Ying Ying looked over at Lei Yu; she had no clue what to say.

Breathing out a deep breath, Lei Yu grabbed the phone, “Ai Er, it’s me.”

“Brother Yu, everyone was looking for you all over and you were actually in the Kou country!” Ai Er’s voice was getting more anxious.

“The news of you has already spread all over the internet in major sites and forums in Tenglong country, and the higher-ups of Martial Sect already know about it as well. The current problem is very serious, Shangguan... Shangguan Xi Hong had come to Dragon Group multiple times wanting your return.”

“Ai Er, don’t worry, I can only say

that I have some very important things to deal with so I cannot return just yet." Lei Yu was helpless to say this. If he were to leave now, then all these weeks of hard work Cui Ying Ying had put in would be all for naught.

Going back to Tenglong country would be very simple; from the Kou country's airport to the Tenglong country's airport only takes a short amount of time. But Lei Yu understands that once he shows his face back at Tenglong country, Martial Sect will not let him leave that easily anymore.

But he did overlook one issue; if he did not return, Martial Sect would still send people to bring him back. Even though Martial Sect would not

mobilize their entire troops to look for him, but since they knew Lei Yu was in the Kou country, then finding him would be much easier. Moreover, Lei Yu's name was quite well-known so wanting to find him is not a difficult task.

“Can't you come back first and explain everything to them? My father and my brother are always irritable lately. Brother Yu, you... going to the Kou country, is it... did you go to the Kou country because of little Ke's incident?”

Lei Yu sighed. He being in the Kou country was very obvious already. If he kept trying to hide the truth from Ai Er, then he would really be in the wrong.

“That’s right, I’ve found some clues now just so I can avenge little Ke. The reason why I haven’t told you anything was because I thought you would get worried; worry that I will be in danger. The second thing was that I was afraid you would come look for me and get into a dangerous situation yourself. And finally, I was afraid... afraid that you would be unhappy deep inside your heart.

The other end of the line became quiet. After a long time, Ai Er started speaking again. Hearing the tone of her voice, it appears her mood had gotten better and she was no longer as anxious. “Brother Yu, I know that if I go there, it will only affect you negatively. But you need to be careful yourself, and no



matter what, you need to give me a call once a day, okay?"

Ai Er's words moved Lei Yu greatly. Even though Ai Er couldn't see it, but Lei Yu nodded his head fiercely. He then said: "I'm sorry that I caused you to worry about me."

While the two were having a conversation, Cui Ying Ying who had been present the entire time felt her heart ache. "Lei Yu, you worry about Ai Er's safety, fearing Ai Er would this and that, but have you ever worried about my safety? I spent so much effort and trouble to help you accomplish these things, was it wrong of me?" Of course Cui Ying Ying did not speak these words out loud.

He chatted with Ai Er for almost half an hour and Nuo Hu couldn't wait anymore, he grabbed the phone away and said: "Little Yu, I'm going to the Kou country to find you! I'm worried about you being alone there! Since you are worried about Ai Er coming to you, then there should be no worries if I come. At least I can protect myself and maybe even help you out!"

"Big brother!" Lei Yu's eyes became slightly red as he fought back the tears. In Lei Yu's heart, Nuo Hu was in a high position of importance, he had always considered him an elder brother, he was even closer to him than his own biological brother. Each time Nuo Hu showed concern for him; Lei Yu would silently keep it in his mind and never forget it.

After a short while, Lei Yu calmed his emotions and said: "Big brother, don't worry about it, me being alone here is fine. You should know that I'm already at the rank of a Fifth Order Warrior; it's enough to deal with most situations. No matter how plentiful experts are in the Kou country, do you think there would be streets filled with Sixth Order Warriors running about? Don't worry, I'll be fine."

"But..."

"Seriously, don't worry so much. I need you to stay in Tenglong country so that you could help me during critical times, therefore you can't come over here for now."

"What do you need me to help you

with? Just go ahead and say it!”

“When the time comes, I will give you a call, it’s not the right time yet.”

It was unfortunate that he couldn’t hear his playful disciple Liu Hao’s voice as well, but it doesn’t matter. Lei Yu had already silently made up his mind; he couldn’t keep dilly dallying in the Kou country so everything must speed up its pace.

After hanging up the phone, Lei Yu’s heart felt so much better. The things that have been bothering him for many days have finally be solved. Lei Yu felt fortunate to have such a cultured, thoughtful and well-behaved girlfriend. And to have such a sworn brother so

concerned about his wellbeing, Lei Yu was fully content.

Turning his head around, he saw a slightly angry looking Cui Ying Ying. Lei Yu laughed and said: “Ying Ying, don’t worry, I will take good care of you and will not let any harm befall you. You’ve helped me so much; I really don’t know how to repay you.”

She was interrupted by Lei Yu’s words, so Cui Ying Ying mischievous smiled, “you can repay me with your body?”[1]

“Uh...”

Pausing, Cui Ying Ying with a look of warmth then said: “I’m kidding with you, I think if any girls heard

your words, it will definitely produce an ambiguous feeling, but I like what I heard. I'm already satisfied that I'm in your heart. I know you really love Ai Er, everything you do will have her feelings in consideration, and you are very loyal in regards to your love; I think any woman would love that about you. But don't worry, do you remember that day when you were discharged from the hospital and I spoke with Ai Er? I promised her that I will not compete for your love with her, but I did ask her to let me stay by your side, just being friends is good enough. Fortunately for me, she agreed and we became good sisters."

Lei Yu felt enlightened, "so that's what happened, no wonder that day

Ai Er came back into the car all mysterious and stuff.”

Subsequently, the two discussed their next plan of action. They decided to accelerate the pace of everything, and naturally, Cui Ying Ying was told of Lei Yu’s true purpose of coming to the Kou country. Such a faithful and righteous man made her love him even more. Cui Ying Ying was crazy enough to think: If I was to be killed, I wonder if he will also risk his own life in order to avenge me?

“I’ll send a car to pick you up before the groundbreaking ceremony. At that time, you can use your true face to appear in the Kou country. I believe that the Yamaguchi-gumi would come look for you

afterwards.” Said Cui Ying Ying slightly worried.

“Okay, I will obey Director Cui’s arrangement! However, don’t worry about the things related to the Yamaguchi-gumi, I’ll handle that part.” Lei Yu made a funny salute, prompting a burst of laughter from Cui Ying Ying.

Looked at the time on his cell phone, it’s already in the evening. Nami went to purchase some things, and on the way, she made a reservation at a restaurant that had a very distinctive Kou country style, and was supposed to pick up the two. The time was almost near yet why hasn’t she returned yet?

Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying were a



little anxious. This young girl, originally she wasn't that old yet her looks were outstanding. Add the fact that her body was very attractive so it made people worry when she went out alone by herself.

But Lei Yu was thinking that there shouldn't be anything to worry about. No matter how much of a bastard these Kou people were, not all of them are like that right? After all, there should be a lot of good people around, or else how could Nami survive until such an age? Wouldn't she be dragged off to star in pornographies already?

Sure enough, after ten minutes or so, Nami called and said she had returned to the hotel and would be waiting downstairs. The two went

down and Nami drove Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying; the three of them were chatting and laughing as they drove towards a restaurant.

In front of an ancient building rich in style, Nami slowed down and parked the car on the street. Even though the building was not considered a high-rise and didn't look anything magnificent, it did have a distinctive flair of the Kou country's culture. Lei Yu looked all around and the restaurant's business was booming; the parking lot outside of the restaurant were packed with vehicles; there were at least fifty plus cars there. No wonder Nami had to make reservations in advance.

The appearance of Lei Yu's group

was a bit showy; an attractive man with two beauties, causing passers-bys and other people about to enter the restaurant to pause mid-step and stare, they were all unwilling to withdraw their eyes on this trio.

Not counting the people from other countries, the chances of this happening in the Kou country was too improbable. But the three had already gotten used to it, who told the Kou citizens to be so genetically short? Although there were plenty of beautiful women around, yet the level of Nami's beauty could be regarded as extremely rare; we can't even be bothered to mention Cui Ying Ying's type, which was tall and seductive looking.

Opening the door, the door chimes

hanging atop issued a crisp sound. Two girls dressed in low-cut tops were kneeling in front and said a bunch of “chirps and wah-wah.” Lei Yu couldn’t understand a thing while Nami nodded and said some words. One of the girls stood up and started leading the way while walking in small shuffled steps slightly hunched over like their crotch was in pain. And the other girl continued to receive guests that came in after them.

Lei Yu unintentional looked back; a bearded man grinned while staring at Cui Ying Ying and Nami.

Although his eyes were staring at them off to the side, his big hands had slipped inside of the girl’s shirt that was kneeling in front of him, forcefully kneading her white soft

breasts. The strange thing was that no one cared about this scene.

What made Lei Yu even more speechless was when the kneeling girl provocatively grabbed the guy's crotch area and started gently squeezing it. Even though this scene that played out was very quick, but it still made Lei Yu's disgust of the Kou people a bit more deep.

-----

[1] Could be interpreted as giving ones' body for sexual relations or a pledge of marriage.

# Chapter 81:

## Trapped Old Lady

A Sliding door was opened by the young girl and inside was only a thirty centimeter high small table. Placed on two sides of the table were some thick foam pads. Lei Yu's group went inside and Nami started ordering some food. The three were chatting about some things and the once silent Nami in this period of time had become more cheerful and open. As for the reason why, only she herself would know.

While the three were happily eating, outside came a noise of pounding footsteps. Listening to the

footsteps, it was apparently passing the front of their room which made Lei Yu's eyebrows tightly knit together in a frown.

"Young master, what's going on with you?" Asked Nami as she saw Lei Yu's facial expression change.

"Oh nothing, you two stay here, I'm going to the restroom." Lei Yu stood up, went to the door and put on his shoes, and walked towards where the footsteps had disappeared off to.

This hallway was very narrow; only less than three people standing side by side could get through. But there were indeed many rooms and Lei Yu was uncertain which room the owner of those footsteps entered

into; he could only pretend nothing was out of the ordinary and calmly walked on.

A young girl was standing in the hallway and noticed Lei Yu, so she suddenly clamped her legs, hunched her back and shuffled over, “does this esteemed guest need something?” The girl was speaking the standard Kou language and to Lei Yu, it was like listening to the Bible. The girl’s face looked a bit weird, even though she was not as outstanding as the super beauties in his room, but she could also be considered quite pretty. The most important thing was that she had a flirtatious scent about her, one whiff and men would want to ravage her body.



Lei Yu curled his lips into a sneer, the clothing by the girl's chest was a bit messy and her skin had some redness to it like she had been forcefully grabbed. Without answering her, he continued walking forward.

The girl could not look into the eye of this tall and handsome man, so she awkwardly stood still and did not dare to keep up with him.

Lei Yu approached the outside of one of the rooms and grinned, he found his target. He then turned around and went back to his own private room and hurriedly ate something. Lei Yu sent both of the girls back first while he stayed by himself.

What Lei Yu smelled was a foul stench, and he was very familiar with this stench. Lei Yu was fortunate that his private room was far away from the source of the smell or else he wouldn't be able to eat his dinner.

After silently sitting there for over ten minutes, Lei Yu stuck his head out and noticed there weren't anyone in the hallway. The girl he met previously wasn't there either; it appears that she has gone off to greet the new customers.

Lei Yu arrived outside of the room that gave off the foul stench and suddenly opened the sliding doors. The two people inside were about to put food in their mouths looked over in surprise. Right after that, Lei

Yu used his unimaginably quick speed to enter the room, closed the door, and stood behind one of the occupant's back. He clamped his fingers around the person's throat and forcefully ripped. The person's eyes were round protruding in shock, but his mouth couldn't take in anymore breaths.

The other person felt something was wrong and suddenly shouted; he grabbed a bottle from the table and smashed it towards Lei Yu's head. But Lei Yu was already at the [Integration] stage which was equivalent to Kou country's Shadow Ninjas. And these people in front of him were at most the strength of Advanced Ninjas. In Lei Yu's eyes, these men were simply clowns that didn't know the meaning of death.

He swung a left back hand and gently clasped onto the person's forearm that was holding the bottle, and this person suddenly felt a burst of numbness in his arm. The bottle in his hand fell out of his grasp and Lei Yu quickly caught it with his other hand. No other sounds could be heard from the room except for the initial shout.

Lei Yu gently placed the bottle back on the table and then brought his right index finger to his lips and did a "shh" gesture. His left hand still holding onto the other person's forearm immediately gripped harder, and lifted this person off the ground. With the other free hand, Lei Yu condensed his lightning energy upon his palms and made quick strike to the back of this

person's head, immediately knocking him unconscious.

Lei Yu put the person's arms around his own shoulders, and while suppressing the stench, he opened the sliding doors and walked out. As he walked out of the restaurant's main entrance, he did attract a lot of attention, but people were mostly checking out Lei Yu's tall and handsome features. No one took a second glance at the person he was supporting; they probably thought he was supporting a drunken friend.

He dragged this person to the back seat of his convertible, and then went back inside the restaurant. He used the same method and drag out the person that he had already

killed by crushing his windpipe, then paid the bill at the front desk. Lei Yu was paying the bill for these two people as well. This was the only solution he could come up with in order to avoid any chaos at this restaurant.

Lei Yu didn't really have a place to hide these two people but luckily his memory was quite good. That time when he was driving with Nami and Cui Ying Ying along the eastern coast of the country, he remembered there were some homes up on the mountain; those seem to be an ideal place. But the first thing he needed to do was get the help of Nami, the authentic walking interpreting machine.

Back then, he had let them go

because he was afraid of any unforeseen changes that may attract unnecessary trouble. Now that he had been successful in getting these two people out of the restaurant, then things would be much easier to handle now.

Picking up his phone, he dialed Nami's number. Lei Yu didn't say too much, he just asked her to be ready and wait for him at the hotel lobby.

Picking up Nami, he quickly drove to the area of the mountain homes. Even though Nami was curious about the two people in the backseat, she didn't ask Lei Yu any questions. In her heart, the things the young master did were always right; she just needs to obey his

words because she was not qualified to ask anything.

In accordance with Lei Yu's criteria, Nami entered a somewhat dilapidated house. Inside lived an old woman, but the surprising thing was this old woman was not a Kou person, but a westerner. Lei Yu began to have some hesitation, if he knew this were to happen, then he could've solved the problem himself. But since Nami was already here, then he'll just have her take care of everything to save his breath.

Lei Yu noticed Nami was unable to persuade this old woman to temporarily leave the tattered house. Since it has come to this, then he was forced to take care of it



himself.

“Old lady...” Lei Yu spoke with her in fluent English, “may I ask why you are living alone in this house?”

Looking at her appearance, the old woman’s age should be over seventy years old. Her white hair was somewhat striking to look at in the evening from the dimly lit lights. Lei Yu observed the old woman’s face was covered in deep wrinkles and her hands were fully calloused. Why would this western old woman suffer so much in the Kou country?

“I am waiting for my son.” The old woman’s voice was trembling a bit, she was apprehensive to have strangers disturb her peaceful life.

“Why don’t you go out and look for your son then?” Lei Yu asked. He looked around at the dilapidated house and observed a simple bed; a table; and near the door was a rusty stove and some chipped porcelain bowls. Evidently, life was as poor as it could get for this old woman.

“I don’t have the money to travel. I’ve sought help from the government officials of the Kou country but they didn’t want to help me, they even kicked me out of their office. These Kou people are really horrible!” The old woman’s eyes were slightly red as she said this. It appears her request for aid was rejected by the officials of the Kou country[1].

Lei Yu observed the old woman’s

appearance and it made his heartache; she was so pitiful while living alone in a shabby house, this scene caused Lei Yu to feel unimaginable sadness in his heart.

“So why didn’t you give your son a phone call?” Lei Yu asked again.

\*Sigh\* “I’m old now; I can’t remember his phone number. If I knew it, I will have definitely called already since my family is really very rich!” The old woman kept repeating how rich she was as if she was reminiscing about her past. Now that she had fallen to this state, as for the reason, Lei Yu didn’t want to ask too much. Pulling back the tears that were about to come down, Lei Yu said: “Old lady, I am willing to send you back to see

your son but I'm not sure if you're willing to accept my kindness?"

The old woman's trembling withered hands grabbed onto Lei Yu's hand, her lips trembling constantly and her cloudy eyes seemed to brighten a little. "Is this true? Is this for real? Is everything you've said really the truth?"

"It's the truth old lady." Lei Yu turned around and said to Nami: "Take the car and drive the old lady to the airport, buy her a plane ticket and give her \$5000 U.S. dollars. That should be enough for her to find her son."

"Yes, young master." Nami respectfully nodded, then assisted the old woman. The old woman was

already so excited that she was unable to speak. One could see in her eyes that the happiness she felt was like she regained a new life; this kind of gaze coming from an elderly person was rarely seen.

Lei Yu carried the two people out from the car. When the old woman asked, Lei Yu told her they were his friends that had drank too much, they would be staying here for the night and then leave tomorrow at their leisure.

The old woman went inside a room to the table, opened a drawer and brought out a gray ring. The design of the ring looked like it was from a long time ago, but the style wasn't too bad. On top it was carved with a rotating pattern that made it look

pretty unique.

The old woman was already bitterly weeping, with a trembling voice, she said: “Child, this ring was originally a pair, one is held by my son and the other one is here. I have lived in the Kou country for a full three years now and today, I’m giving this ring to you. I hope that one day you will go to the United States to look for me, but remember, it’s the state of Idaho in the United States. As long as someone sees this ring, they will know you are my benefactor. Child, I really do hope that one day you will come find me in the United States.”

Lei Yu smiled as he walked with the old woman to the car before

running back into the dilapidated house.

He naturally did not have to care about the dead person. Picking up the glass kettle on the table, he poured water all over the unconscious man's head. Having cold water poured over his head, the man immediately woke up.

“Who are you? Where are we? Why do you want to kill us?” The man went “ooo ooo la la” and asked a bunch of questions. Since Lei Yu did not understand a word, he impatiently stepped on the man's stomach, “f\*cker, stop screaming like a pig, speak English!”

The man gave an “aghh” shout; it appears the force Lei Yu was using

wasn't something he could handle. But this man was very confused, he was already at the strength of an Advanced Ninja yet the person in front of him was overwhelming him like he was toying around, how powerful was he? Thinking up to this point, he did not dare to be presumptuous.

“Let me ask you, where is Otsuka?”

Hearing Lei Yu ask him that, the man was suddenly shocked and asked: “You're Lei Yu from the Tenglong country? All our people were killed by you?”

Lei Yu lightly sneered, he couldn't kill this person yet, he will probably be able to get a lot of answers from this guy. Calmly, Lei Yu sat down



and lightly said: “Correct, I’m Lei Yu. And all the people were killed by me, including that show girl.”

-----

[1] In the author’s quest to insult Japan, he forgot or doesn’t know something called the U.S. Embassy.

[ripper: the author is dumb in insulting]

# Chapter 82: Mutant Group

“It was you that killed the Fox?” The man’s gaze suddenly became vicious, but remembering Lei Yu’s strength, he slowly calmed down.

“Fox?” Hearing such a name, Lei Yu finally understood why that woman exuded such a disgusting stench with a hint of gamey smell. But as to why this was so, one needed an in-depth inquiry. Lei Yu then asked: “You haven’t answered my question, where is Otsuka right now?”

“You should give up on fighting against the Yamaguchi-gumi, isn’t

this just over the death of a woman? And you've become like this?" Looking at Lei Yu, he didn't notice him have any reactions to his words, so he continued: "The Yamaguchi-gumi is not something you can handle. Being able to occupy a small island, being involved in all businesses large or small in the Kou country, even government officials have to give them some face, one could say the Yamaguchi-gumi has equally split this country with the government. Based on all of this, do you still think you have the capability to go against us?"

Lei Yu did not get angry. Right, the forces of the Yamaguchi-gumi were definitely not a small matter, he had already heard about the situation

when he was back in the Tenglong country. Since he has no way to eradicate their whole organization all at once, then he'll take them apart one piece a time, he will eventually take these bastards down.

“It's none of your business if I can take on the Yamaguchi-gumi or not, you only need to answer my question – where's Otsuka?”

“It's no big deal if I tell you; Otsuka is currently on the Yamaguchi Island. Do you dare to go there to cause trouble? I'm afraid that before you even reach the shores, you're whole body would be full of holes like a hornet's nest.”

Laughing out loud, this man appeared to not think much of Lei

Yu. It's no wonder since being able to survive in this horrible organization and gain the title of an Advanced Ninja; this can be regarded as the proudness of his achievement. But he seems to have forgotten that Lei Yu wasn't a nobody.

Since the man said it this way, Lei Yu did not believe he was lying. He would not just throw his life away with such an endeavor so he had to wait for an opportunity by first putting this incident aside. "What's the deal with you guys emitting such a disgusting stench?" Asked Lei Yu offhandedly. He was also waving his hand back and forth in front of his nose like he was trying to fan the disgusting stench away.

Hearing Lei Yu's question, this man's emotion seemed in turmoil but looking at his face, it appears he wasn't intending to answer. Even though Lei Yu didn't consider this as an important question, but knowing the answer to it may help a bit with the whole situation.

Standing up and walking in front of the man, Lei Yu grabbed onto his wrist. Facing a strong opponent like Lei Yu, he did not have the strength to resist. Lei Yu gently circulated his internal energy into his palms and immediately, a large electrical current came forth. From Lei Yu's hand, the electrical current could be clearly seen entering the other man's arm. All the hair of this man could be seen standing up on its end, his round eyes popping out, his

teeth tightly clenched. One could see the traces of blood coming from his bleeding gums, and finally, you could see the green veins on his neck popping out each like earthworms densely covering the area.

Withdrawing his internal energy, Lei Yu once again demanded, “answer my question!”

After Lei Yu withdrew his energy, the person felt slightly better but his breathing was still rapid while he stared at Lei Yu with eyes filled with fear. Lei Yu did not say anything but once again condensed his lightning power, this time the purple electric currents could be clearly seen in the dimly lit room.

“Agghh... I... talk... I’ll talk!” His body trembling non-stop, it was even hard for him to speak without stuttering.

Lei Yu lightly sneered and sat back down on the only chair in the room while he waited for the man’s response.

Being electrocuted was definitely not a comfortable feeling, but Lei Yu seemed to enjoy using this method since it looks like it will become a very useful tool for extracting confessions. This type of method would only be used against those that are detrimental to society, so if it were someone else, Lei Yu would probably not use it.

It appears that the person was



slowly recovering. Lei Yu wasn't in a hurry; he had plenty of time so he quietly waited.

After a while, he finally spoke: "Our bodies have been injected with mutagens called Model #H2236. And it's because of this damn smell that the people on the Yamaguchi Island also despise us. We are not allowed to enter the headquarters of the Yamaguchi-gumi; we only function in the city as we complete dangerous missions for the organization. But those ninjas that have practiced ninjutsu since they were young can freely enter or leave the island. In the Kou country, those of us that have been injected with the mutagen Model #H2236 usually just take care of the organization's underground

businesses or go abroad to complete a series of dangerous transactions. Fortunately for us, ordinary people cannot smell this peculiar scent.

“Oh?” Lei Yu’s eyebrow slightly rose, “how many of your type of people are in the Kou country?”

“We have a total of fourteen people.” This person seems very cooperative now, not daring to hide anything. He did not want to suffer the feeling from before that was more painful than death.

Lei Yu nodded, “that’s right; I would like to ask why you did not try to release your scent to attract your fellow comrades? I remember you called this person the Fox, she did

that the other night.”

“Would there be of any use? I believe before my comrades’ even show up, I’d be dead by your hands.”

Lei Y laughed, “you’re very smart, are you willing to work for me?”

“Impossible!” The man suddenly shifted backwards, his eyes with a committed look.

“Oh really?” Lei Yu then softly said: “If you don’t want to work for me, then death is the only thing that awaits you. I’m not afraid you’ll lie to me, and I’m not afraid that if you leave here today, you’d spread the news all over that I’ve arrived at the Kou country. Right now, the

internet has already been in an uproar over the things I'm doing so I don't care what else you will add to it. But you must remember if you don't cooperate with me, as long as I see you, you will suffer a painful death. You shouldn't forget the stench from your body; it's very easy for me to find you. Besides, you aren't qualified to set foot onto the headquarters at the Yamaguchi Island. As long as there's no orders from your superiors, I doubt you would dare to leave the Kou country. As long as you're around here, I will let you taste everlasting fear so I hope you won't force my hand.

The person was pretty much subdued by Lei Yu's words, whichever path he chose lead to his

death. Glancing at Lei Yu in front of him, it's obvious that with the power of one person, there's no way he could challenge the Yamaguchi-gumi. But does this guy really have what it takes? Gamble, he could only bet with his life on the line.

Clenching his teeth, this person then said: "My codename is Black Panther; I'm willing to work for you."

Lei Yu laughed, "that's right, if I really destroyed the Yamaguchi-gumi, I'm definitely going to give you your freedom. At least I won't be like those Yamaguchi-gumi bastards, even if your body is emitting that smell, I would not discriminate or loathe you guys. I, Lei Yu, only look at a person's

inside and not judge their outside. By working for me, your benefits will be naturally not be small, but most importantly is that I will give you self-esteem because unlike the Yamaguchi-gumi, I will respect you. As long as you and I, Lei Yu can breathe in the same air together in this vast world, then we're not enemies.

If the previous words of Lei Yu were considered the worst form of intimidation he could muster, then the words Lei Yu just said made Black Panther really impressed. For people like him who had always been discriminated against by the organization, even if he had reached the Third Rank Mutant, his identity in the Yamaguchi-gumi was still not as prestigious as an

Elementary Ninja. This has made him somewhat mentally distorted and filled with grievances. Hearing Lei Yu's statement really moved him; this had nothing to do with the money but it was his last crucial sentence – what these mutants lacked the most was self-esteem, something they desired the most.

“Amongst my comrades, you have already killed two of them, therefore with me included, there are twelve people left. I was the head of the mutant group and my words in the team usually carried some weight. I believe I can persuade my eleven other comrades to work for you. We don't need any money; we just want to destroy the Yamaguchi-gumi to regain our freedom!”

Lei Yu was overjoyed, “Good! Let’s do that then!” He then helped Back Panther off the floor feeling great about the situation.

“By the way, what’s this mutant group you just mentioned? And what’s up with that mutagen H something something?” Asked Lei Yu.



# Chapter 83: He's A Fraud

“The Yamaguchi-gumi collaborated with a research center in the U.S.; they’ve researched and developed a mutagen that could change a human’s physical body. We were originally ordinary citizens of the Kou country and the Yamaguchi-gumi used a high salary to tempt us to join them. After joining them, they actually started experimenting on us, injecting their first round of newly developed mutagens into us. One would gain the ability of the matching injection type; the mutagen injected into my body contained the DNA of the African

Black Panther[1], my specialty being speed, however compared to you...” Pausing for a bit, Black Panther continued to say: “The rest of my ten plus comrades all possess different abilities, some strong and some weaker. It’s fortunate that this genetically modifying substance can allow our mutations to upgrade; from the injection’s innate properties combined with our own personal efforts, our strength could continue to grow with training.

Lei Yu smiled, “so that’s how it is, looks like the Yamaguchi-gumi’s influence is indeed not weak to be able to form a relationship with people in the U.S.”

“That’s why I originally said that

based on one person's strength, it's impossible to fight against the huge underground force that is Yamaguchi-gumi."

"It doesn't matter; don't I now have you and the additional ten plus people as companions?" Lei Yu's word made them unable to back out, one phrase and he made Black Panther and the rest of the mutants into his own people.

"Don't worry about anything, I'll be leaving now and in the shortest amount of time, I will convince the rest of comrades to our cause." Black Panther respectfully bowed.

Lei Yu nodded his head, "Go ahead, this comrade of yours along with this house will be burned together,

we'll consider to have found a good burial place for him."

Black Panther's speed was really quite fast. During the night, his figure would be gone within a blink of an eye. On the mountain road, several cars would occasionally pass through. At the foot of a mountain, a raging fire was burning down a house. Lei Yu sat atop of a rotten tree stump across from the flames as he waited for Nami's return.

Gently rotating the ring worn on his finger, Lei Yu was wondering how the old lady had gotten herself stuck in the Kou country. Even though he was very emotional when he had helped her, Lei Yu was still able to see past the old woman's

thin and spiritless face and notice a hint of noble elegance about her; this type of noble aura was difficult to erase from her.

Hearing the engine of a car getting closer, Lei Yu got in and the two returned to their hotel.

“Ying Ying, we cannot keep living in this hotel right? Now that my identity has been pretty much exposed, sooner or later we will be found out here.” Lei Yu was lazing on the sofa, just a short distance away from the corner of the sofa where Nami’s white thighs were sitting.

Staring blankly, Cui Ying Ying unintentionally noticed an old black ring on Lei Yu’s finger, but realized

the ring was on his index finger. Not too concerned about it, she smiled. "I've already thought about this point so we're currently looking at a house in the western part of the Kou country with an ocean view. If it fits our taste, then we will buy it."

Lei Yi blinked. He originally wanted to mention something about renting a house that was a bit luxurious, but didn't expect Cui Ying Ying to say that they'll be buying a house with an ocean view; this was too unexpected of her.

"That's going to cost a lot! There's no way I can afford such a house with my money." In actuality, Lei Yu didn't want Cui Ying Ying to spend her own money since being a dignified man, having a woman

spend money on him made his heart feel uncomfortable.

“Don’t worry!” Cui Ying Ying sweetly smiled, “we don’t have to fork out a single penny.”

“Oh? You lassie, is there really such a trade where no capital is required?!”

-----

On the eastern side of the country near the sea, thousands to tens of thousands of people had gathered. Everyone was waiting with excitement, some waiting for the groundbreaking ceremony of this huge project while others were looking forward to seeing this mysterious young master that has

never shown his face to the public before. Rumors abound on the internet say that the young master was a Tenglong citizen, but since it was only hearsay, the authenticity of that rumor remains to be verified.

Currently on-site in an obscure place parked a modest car, and inside the car sat a rather short Kou person. This man was none other than the head of the Kou country's most powerful underground force, the boss of the Yamaguchi-gumi – Hasegawa.

Hasegawa already knew the identity of Lei Yu. Upon seeing the news from the internet, he immediately summoned and met with Otsuka who was previously at the Tenglong



country. Based on the photos, Otsuka instantly recognized this person as Lei Yu. What could their purpose be in attending this groundbreaking ceremony? This was the unknown but one thing we are at least certain of; they would not blatantly kill Lei Yu in front of the public. If they did that, their rival force the government officials would be against it and also drawing the ire from the Tenglong country. The most important fact being Martial Sect; experts were plentiful like floating clouds in Martial Sect and their strength were no less than the Yamaguchi-gumi, the only difference was that they were situated in different geographical locations.

Cars lined up next to each other

taking up all available spaces. The huge crowd at the scene was quite spectacular, it seems like the saying that Asian people were the race that most enjoyed tagging along with large gatherings were not wrong.

Near the edge of the sea in an area of about one hundred and fifty meters, the people there were full of energy. They were dressed in modern suits and just a glance; one could tell they belonged to the upper-class of society.

Everyone kept looking at their watch and kept looking beyond the crowd at the roadway. But from beginning to end, they didn't observe any vehicles that were able to squeeze into this area.

As seconds and minutes went by, the young master had yet to appear and the crowd started getting restless and anxious.

At this time, a harsh sound came from the open sea. All eyes looked towards the direction of the sea and a white speed boat was seen travelling at fast speeds towards them. Upon seeing Cui Ying Ying aboard the boat, a fifty something year old middle-aged man in a black suit broke into a smile.

A total of four people were aboard the speedboat: A man driving the speedboat and the other three were a man and two women. Needless to say, the man was definitely the mysterious young master that everyone wanted to see. As for the

other two women, one was Cui Ying Ying and the other being Nami. Cui Ying Ying had already been seen a few times so many people naturally knew her. As for Nami, many people only glimpsed at her when news and videos of the young master surfaced but it was too blurry. But her sexy attractive figure definitely proved that she was same person as the one in the video.

Lei Yu's boat had just arrived ashore when the crowd of tens of thousands of people suddenly went into a frenzy. The crowd was trying to rush forward to see what was going on, while incessant screams and cries were heard non-stop. Over a hundred police officers were trying to hold back the crowd from rushing forward, but they too kept

looking backwards due to curiosity. What did this mysterious figure that has caused such an uproar look like?

This scene did make Lei Yu a bit taken back; such a large crazy scene was comparable to a superstar like Michael Jackson making an appearance.

While arriving in front of a middle-aged man dressed in a black suit, the middle-aged man and a dozen or so people behind him shouted in unison “young master” while bowing deeply.

Although Lei Yu could not understand the Kou language, but the two words “young master” were often heard by him coming from

Nami's mouth so he naturally understood it. Lei Yu smiled and nodded, his deep and profound eyes that people could not read; his young face revealed a contemplative and implausibly bitter look with a mature temperament.

Shrill screams were constantly heard from the outer ring of the crowd so Lei Yu unconsciously waved his hands at them, the smile on his face made those flirtatious girls go into a frenzy. Men like him were hard to find in the Kou country; a tall figure, a handsome face, and the way that he looked like he was smiling but not really completely melted the hearts of these girls longing for love.

Cui Ying Ying introduced everyone one by one in front of them, especially the one called Yamamoto – he was well-known in the Kou country for being the CEO of a corporation in the Light Industry so his identity was naturally well respected to the maximum. But when he looked at Lei Yu and inadvertently showed a look of worship in his eyes, this type of look coming from a heavyweight business tycoon was really rare, making it a hard to come by moment.

After getting to know some of the important characters, the groundbreaking ceremony officially began. What Lei Yu and Yamamoto had to do was pick up a shovel at the water's edge, then shovel some

dirt into the water and the ceremony would be considered completed. Such a simple action yet it caused such a large reaction from the crowd, Lei Yu thought it was a bit unremarkable. But since he was putting on a show, he might as well perform his best and do it to the end.

“Hold on! He’s a fraud!”

-----

[1] Translation could be black panther or black leopard so I chose panther.



# Chapter 84:

## Exposing The Fraud

On the outer edge of the crowd, four burly men in tight-fitting clothes surrounded a rather short middle-aged man began pushing aside the crowd to come forward.

The crowds were all stunned while Nami became slightly dumbfounded, but then quickly translated those words to Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying. Them two listened and frowned, wondering who this whizbang[1] could be?

Quickly after, Lei Yu's facial expression became somewhat surprised that this dwarf like

middle-aged man actually had a deep internal energy circulating inside his body. If Lei Yu did not fully grasp the control of his lightning power, he wouldn't be able to rely on the lightning's unique magnetic properties to detect that this average looking little man was actually a super-strong expert.

Looking at these ill intentioned five people came through the crowd, Mr. Yamamoto said: "Sir, please do not..."

"You aren't qualified to speak with me!" The dwarf's eyes of disdain did not even look at Yamamoto; he was only glaring at Lei Yu.

"Security! And the police officers on

duty here, kick these people out for me!” Mr. Yamamoto got angry when he felt these people in front of him did not consider him as anyone of importance.

The police and security heard the words of Yamamoto and started walking towards the troublemakers. But the four burly men surrounding the dwarf gently stomped their feet; a loud “BOOM” noise was heard, and the ground that was stomped on showed signs of small cracks around it. Suddenly everyone held their breath, for people to have such an ability in the Kou country would mean they were ninjas. And ninjas to these ordinary people were noble people that they could not offend or mess with.

The security and police on scene were at a loss, each staring at the other; they didn't dare to move forward anymore.

Mr. Yamamoto knew these people before him weren't ordinary so he immediately changed his facial expression to one filled with smiles, "this official, we are currently performing our groundbreaking ceremony, if there's an issue, can we wait until the ceremony is over before we address it?"

The dwarf seemed even more bothered and without even looking at Yamamoto, he directly spoke with Lei Yu in a light tone: "You should have heard of my name before – Hasegawa."

Through Nami's translation, Lei Yu was suddenly shocked and everyone started wondering when they saw his eyes filled with surprise. "So you're the head dog of the Yamaguchi-gumi, Hasegawa?"

Lei Yu's use of English was naturally understood by most of the people here. The name of the Yamaguchi-gumi was able to make everyone's hair stand on end by hearing it, and the word head dog had a certain meaning. Even a fool would know what Lei Yu was implying; therefore, no one was longer surprised why this Hasegawa, the underground boss that could run rampant without fear of repercussions had shown up. The most shocking thing to these people was that he dared to insult

the Yamaguchi-gumi. If it were changed to the perspective of these ordinary people, even if they had an extra ten lives, they would still not dare to insult them.

“It looks like you did your homework in Tenglong country; you have some knowledge about our Yamaguchi-gumi.” Hasegawa barely showed any reactions from Lei Yu’s insult, his goal today was to expose Lei Yu’s fraudulent scheme and to send him packing.

“You pieces of trash that harm society, people will not be able to enjoy their peace unless you guys are exterminated.” Lei Yu’s eyes were narrowed to a crack, he never thought the day the Yamaguchi-gumi came looking for him would

be this fast. But with so many people here, it wasn't the time to make his move. Moreover, Lei Yu was able to detect the four burly men with Hasegawa were all top experts. The weakest one of them was already similar in strength to a late-stage Fourth Order Warrior; and the rest were equivalent to the strength of Fifth Order Warriors. According to the Kou country's rank and levels, there would be three Fire Shadow Ninjas and one Shadow Ninja. This type of combination of experts in the Kou country would scare people to death if spoken out loud.

If Lei Yu suddenly attacked, then instant death would be the most likely outcome.

“Today will be the day I expose your fraudulent face.” Hasegawa revealed a savage expression, his eyes filled with ridicule.

Cui Ying Ying heard Nami’s translation; her heart suddenly filled with anxiety and just wanted to rush forward to dispute the allegations. But she was quickly grabbed by Lei Yu into an embrace where he whispered into her ear: “Don’t panic, we’ll see how everything plays out for now. You definitely cannot fret or make any impulsive moves.”

Cui Ying Ying’s breathing gradually calmed down but suddenly realized she was in Lei Yu’s embrace; her heartbeat accelerated once again. Of course she was not willing to



break away so she quietly stood there with Lei Yu's arms wrapped around her.

"This so-called mysterious young master's name is Lei Yu, in the Tenglong country; he's just a little soldier in the army. Him coming up with a huge amount of money to invest in building an overwater city by the sea would simply be the most ridiculous thing in the world!" Hasegawa looked around and saw the shock on the faces of the crowd; his smile became even more sinister.

A reporter in a yellow t-shirt mustered her courage – you should know how much courage a person needs in order to speak with the Hasegawa, the leader of the

Yamaguchi-gumi. She gingerly asked: “Excuse me Mr. Hasegawa, how do you explain him acquiring Tenglong country’s Cui Ying Corporation?”

Hasegawa intentionally pretended to be very friendly by assuming a smiling face. With a gentle smile, he pointed at Cui Ying Ying before replying: “This is just a dirty plot played out by them; this woman is the daughter of the chairman of Cui Ying Corporation of Tenglong country – Cui Ying Ying. She’s just using some fraudulent sleight of hand tricks on you business tycoons, their purpose is to catch some fat foxes with their bare hands. I’m sure everyone would like to earn a crap load of money without having to do anything

right?”

“Woa!”

“Heavens!”

“It can’t be? How could it turn out like this?”

“This is too unbelievable, I even made him my idol but he turns out to be the biggest fraudster in the world!”

The noise from the crowd became more intense, and some people even started leaving. Seeing that the groundbreaking ceremony had become a complete flop, Mr. Yamamoto’s face just froze. He then stared at Cui Ying Ying and Lei Yu and angrily said: “I never expected you two would play such a

prank! Miss Cui, as an heir to a well-known jewelry company in the Tenglong country, I would have never expected you to be a con artist, this is really ridiculous!"

"Mr. Yamamoto." Lei Yu wasn't in a panic, he has dealt with big scenes like this before. That day where he dueled Cai Zhong, he even dared to argue and rebut the words of the leader of Ming Sect, let alone the people in front of him were only business leaders. "You need to mind your words."

Lei Yu's gaze revealed an aura that could make someone's hair stand on its end; Mr. Yamamoto on the receiving end could not help but shiver while he felt a chill up his spine. Lei Yu was not afraid of

being insulted, but insulting his family and his friends were a big no no. Protecting Cui Ying Ying was also something he promised Ai Er so it was something he would naturally do.

“Really? Mr. Lei Yu is still maintaining his style and elegance, I wonder how many beauties you have surrounding you? I really admire the scene where the hero rescues the maiden!”

After all, a person’s patience is limited. Hasegawa’s remark clearly showed he knew of how little Ke died, but Nami did not know, she thought Hasegawa was talking about how Lei Yu rescued her from the hotel incident. She did not translate that statement, but

directly replied: “You’re not allowed to insult the young master!”

Hasegawa looked up and down Nami’s body, “not bad, you are eligible to become one of my sex slaves, are you interested in going to Yamaguchi Island to serve me? I will guarantee you a lifetime of wealth and status!”

“You...”

Although Lei Yu did not know what the two were talking about, but he did see Nami’s face start to get red with anger. He knew she was speaking on behalf of him so his powerful arm wrapped around Nami to pull her back a bit and inadvertently came into contact with her soft and tender skin, but

now wasn't the time to think about things like this.

On the side, Mr. Yamamoto coldly humphed, "Mr. Lei Yu, Miss Cui, it's impossible for things to continue on today, the agreement between us will be annulled. For the initial start-up capital, please return the total sum of one hundred million U.S. dollars to our company, otherwise I will sue you in court for fraud. Oh right Miss Cui; you're not the only person that has a friend that's versatile in multinational laws.

Yamamoto only wanted to express his feeling a bit. In such a situation now, all the stones were cast towards Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying. Amongst the crowd, the guys that

worshipped Lei Yu and the young girls that were deliriously obsessed over him were now glaring in anger; their mouths constantly swearing and uttering curses about being deceived.

At this time, Hasegawa looked towards the crowd and gave a hidden signal. A big burly guy dressed in black rushed out from the crowd and loudly shouted: "Let me take care of you con artist!"

Lei Yu's identity was exposed that he was just a soldier in the army, not some mysterious young master and he definitely did not have any incredible wealth. Everyone was casting their anger towards him and now someone in the crowd wanted to teach him a lesson, it was natural



that there was lot of other people that had the same thought.

Although Lei Yu did not cause or create any loss for them, but the Kou people were bastards like this, their ways were to cling onto whoever was strong.

Even if Lei Yu had experienced grand scenes like this, but he was at an obvious disadvantage in this situation. If he were to make a move, the thousands to tens of thousands of people here would likely retaliate. This was one of the strong points of the Kou country, their citizens were united.

“What should I do? If I strike out, it would anger the people of the Kou country; if I don’t do anything, aren’t we basically waiting for our

deaths? Cui Ying Ying and Nami are both here... I could easily leave here myself but what about them? What to do? What on earth should I do?"

Lei Yu's brain was running in overtime but no matter how much he thought about it, he couldn't find a solution to the current problem. Watching the big burly guy in black getting closer and closer and the crowd's cheering getting louder; Lei Yu was forced to act. In the shortest amount of time possible to condense the powerful force of lightning throughout his entire body, it seems that this was the only thing he could do.

On the side, Hasegawa had begun to coldly sneer; his goal was exactly

to force Lei Yu to this point. Killing so many of his underlings, if he were to allow such a person to continue living, wouldn't that make the Yamaguchi-gumi lose all their face? If that were to happen, he as the boss would be a bit too useless.

But now that Lei Yu's identity had been exposed, this allowed him to justifiably teach him a lesson, wasn't this the ideal outcome?

At this time, Lei Yu's nose lightly sniffed something. With his peripheral vision, he noticed two people from different directions rush over. Suddenly alarmed, were there additional saboteurs apart from the burly man in black clothing?

---

[1] A small caliber shell that makes a lot of noise, i.e. small dwarf making a lot of noise.

# Chapter 85: Young Master Of The Lei Family

“Something’s wrong!” Lei Yu suddenly turned around and this person was none other than Black Panther who had promised to work for him. Black Panther’s speed was really quick, within an instant; he rushed through the crowd and collided into the big burly guy. Very quickly, another person’s figure had also arrived, and those three people started clashing in front of Lei Yu and Hasegawa.

Lei Yu sighed in relief; he didn’t expect Black Panther to successfully

persuade his brethren. But openly fighting against Hasegawa's underlings' right in front of him would mean that they have come outright betraying the Yamaguchi-gumi. It looks like Black Panther and the others will never be able to return to the Yamaguchi-gumi. At least one thing was certain, with the Yamaguchi-gumi's style of doing things; they will not let them off lightly.

Black Panther and another long-haired man were pinning down the burly guy in black clothing. Even though it was two against one, it was still hard to tell who would come out victorious.

This sudden reversal made the initial people wanting to leave stay

in place. Such a good show was occurring in front of them, this nation of people that enjoyed a lively atmosphere would never miss such an opportunity.

The battle between the three was getting fiercer. Lei Yu wanted to help out but he heard Black Panther cry out: “Young master, you guys leave first!”

“No, it will certainly be dangerous if you guys stayed behind!” Lei Yu shook his head in refusal. It wasn’t that he didn’t want to leave, but he had two weak women next to him. He also did not want to go jump in thoughtlessly since several pairs of eyes with Hasegawa were keeping a close eye on him. Lei Yu believes that there’s no way they wouldn’t

interfere if he tried to leave.

At this very critical moment, a deafening roar made the crowd of tens of thousands of people cover their ears. This deafening roar almost made the people go deaf; anyone without enough strength could not tolerate this sound.

As the roar started to fade, two undetected figures suddenly appeared on scene. From the appearance of these two people, one was a forty something year old middle-aged man, the other had a head full of gray hair and looked like he was about seventy or eighty years old. The emergence of these two made Lei Yu extremely shocked.



“Stay your hands!” The middle-aged man’s loud cry was heard again, but this time his voice was targeted at certain individuals and did not spread towards the crowd; those ordinary people were saved from having their eardrums burst.

The trio that was fighting immediately stopped their actions, their faces revealing a look of doubt – who was this expert that suddenly appeared? They even felt a kind of unbearable pressure affecting their bodies, and this pressure contained some sort of searing power making it difficult for them to breathe.

After stopping the fight, the middle-aged man did not even pay attention to the dwarf and walked towards Lei Yu’s direction. The

middle-aged man did not speak while the elderly man opened his mouth and said: "Young master."

Lei Yu frowned; this was the first time he heard the old man call him that. In the past, he was called "little Yu, little Yu" etc., so being called a young master was the very first time.

Lei Yu was about to say something but Hasegawa who was completely ignored, furiously shouted: "You've already been exposed so why are you still putting on a show? Aren't you afraid of being ridiculed even more?"

"Damn thing!" The thing that shocked Lei Yu even more happened; the middle-aged man

could actually speak the Kou language. Only seeing his face filled with a more disdain look, “your little Yamaguchi-gumi dares to oppose our Lei family household?”

“What?!”

The Lei family’s reputation had a shocking effect, as for the Cui Ying Corporation, in their eyes it was merely a small business in the production of jewelry. Trying to compare them to the extremely strong family that monopolized multiple major industries, they weren’t even on the same page.

Moreover, the mysteriousness of the Lei family was not only well known in the country of Tenglong, their fame of being a mysterious

family was known throughout the world. This ancient and traditional family contained a fearsome power that no one would dare to experience.

The crowd once again became excited and the look in their eyes towards Lei Yu again showed a passionate fire. If the previously mentioned mysterious master returned from the United States already made them almost crazy, then if this person was the young master of the Lei family whose fortune could rival a country's, then it would be hard to imagine the extremes the crowd was currently feeling.

The sudden twist in the situation made it hard for Lei Yu to accept,

but after thinking through, he didn't say anything, he just quietly waited to see what exactly the Lei family was up to.

The appearance of the two people was none other than Lei Yu's father as the middle-aged man – Lei Yun Tian; while the old man was the Elder of the Lei family.

And at this time, a roar of sounds came from the sky. This sound was overwhelming that made all eyes gaze towards the sky. Eight helicopters flying from a distance were slowly approaching; they then hovered about thirty meters (99 feet) from the ground.

The Elder lightly waved his hand and the helicopter doors slid open.

Four people directly jumped out from the inside, and then, the other seven helicopters had the same amount of people jump out of them as well.

At over thirty meters of altitude, their bodies were as light as a feather, not a single sound was heard when they descended onto the ground. For the ordinary people to witness this with their eyes, it was as if these people jumping out had the powers of Superman.

There were a total of thirty-two people; they were all wearing a white vest and black pants. The most prominent thing about them was the striking red flame brand on their arm, which was the mark of the Lei family.

Hasegawa took in a cool breath, by naturally detecting with his strength as an Ultimate Ninja, he knew the situation had been reversed, there's no way he could control it anymore.

“You're saying Lei Yu is a member of the Lei family household?”  
Hasegawa coldly asked.

“Lei Yu is the Lei family's second young master!” The Elder loudly said this while pointing at Lei Yu in front of the tens of thousands of people.

Shouts, cries and screams were heard. The sounds when Lei Yu previously first got off the boat were emitting from the crowd again. It seems that the identity of

being the young master of the Lei family was more attractive than being the mysterious young master. Being able to get together with the young master of the Lei family whose fortune rivaled a country's, they would attain a lifetime of wealth and status. If one were to pile the money of the Lei family into a high platform and jump off, their entire body would definitely be smashed into little pieces; maybe they would even starve to death before they even hit the ground. This showed how much wealth the Lei family had in the eyes of people around the world.

Lei Yu's label of being a huge con artist instantly transformed to the insane identity of being the second young master of the Lei family. And



this piece of news had already been secretly captured by major media companies in the crowd through the form of a live television feed. The entire Kou country was thoroughly excited, but the following words by Lei Yun Tian made people even more of a frenzy.

“If Lei Yu’s partner is unwilling to continue fulfilling their side of the contract, the Lei family will not really mind. But I believe no matter how much reputation your businesses have in the Kou country, or even how popular you are in the world; after today it will become history, forever buried in history unable to rise up ever again.”

If this statement was made by others, people will just treat it as a

joke. But since this statement came from the master of the Lei family – Lei Yun Tian, then no one would doubt his words one bit.

Cold sweat was appearing on Mr. Yamamoto's forehead and his body couldn't stop trembling. He wanted to say something but didn't know exactly what to say. Although his status in the Kou country was not that low, but in front of the Yamaguchi-gumi he already did not have the right to make a noise, let alone in front of the world renowned master of the Lei family.

The reporters in the crowd continued to broadcast this huge reversal of a situation while the entire Kou country started discussing this topic. Based on the

strength of the Lei family members, it was natural that no one knew how powerful they were. But when it came to wealth, they wouldn't have to even bring out their entire fortune to ruin the entire Kou country's economy, and this wasn't an exaggeration.

At this time, even though the main character appearance seemed to be Lei Yun Tian, but everything he mentioned revolved around Lei Yu so it virtually increased the importance of Lei Yu's status several times again.

Lei Yu calmly stood there without saying a thing. Each sentence of the previous dialogue was translated by Nami while she was increasingly being shocked by those very words.

She had never expected that the young master she followed around belonged to the world renowned business family, the Lei family.

The angry Hasegawa rapidly breathed a few times before coldly saying: "Let's go!" His loss today was due to not having investigating Lei Yu's identity thoroughly enough. Only hearing Otsuka mention he was a little Deputy Commander in the army of the Martial Sect, in Hasegawa's eyes it was too insignificant to bother with. But now the situation was different, Lei Yu's identity instantly changed to becoming the moon where all the stars wanted to gather around.

Lei Yun Tian saw their opponent leave and faintly smiled while he

took out a business card from his pocket. On the card, there were a few lines of words showing where Lei Yun Tian's place of residence in the Kou country was. Seeing that Lei Yu did not put forth his hand to take it, he stuffed it into the hands of Nami who was standing timidly to the side before turning around to leave.

This whole situation that happened was beyond everyone's expectations. Waiting until all the heavyweights had left, Mr. Yamamoto gingerly walked towards Lei Yu's side, "young... young master, our cooperation... cooperation..."

At this time, Mr. Yamamoto would no longer think Lei Yu was trying to

catch a white wolf bare handed, he was the real deal. If anyone were to say that at this moment, Lei Yu was unable to take out any money to invest in this overwater maritime city, then they would definitely become the laughing stock of the crowd.

“Mr. Yamamoto.” Cui Ying Ying had finally recovered while she smiled at Yamamoto. “It seems like Mr. Yamamoto just said that we were in breach of contract and wanted to terminate the agreement. It is completely fine; we are willing to give up cooperating with you. But taking the complaints to the court will no longer be you guys, it will be us.”

“Miss Cui, please spare us!”

Yamamoto's look became increasingly tense; he has not forgotten Lei Yun Tian's previous statement. His eyes secretly glanced over to the thirty something people still lined up not too far away.

"Today's groundbreaking ceremony is canceled, we aren't in the mood to discuss anything about working together, so be it." Lei Yu's emotionless face turned around and headed back to the speedboat they had arrived in. Cui Ying Ying and Nami hurriedly followed behind, and the three mightily disappeared in front of everyone.

The crowd did not disperse after Lei Yu left, each and every one of them filled with regret. Some people even started arguments amongst them.

“It’s all your fault saying the young master was some con artist. Now look what happened, the young master angrily left!”

“You people didn’t distinguish what was true or false and immediately laid blame. Now the young master is angry, what should we do?”

Even though the arguments in the crowd were filled with nonsense, but this proved the reversal of the situation had made Lei Yu’s status in their hearts actually increase instead of decreasing, causing their worship of him being more crazier than before.

And there were actually some girls who had greatly criticized Lei Yu begin getting into fights. They



ignored their own self-image and started fighting to the point where their own clothes were torn without any signs of stopping. This made the police and security on scene have a difficult time maintaining order.

# Chapter 86: Storage Ring

Returning to the hotel, Lei Yu did not say a single word while he stood in front of the bedroom window. Nami wanted to go over to him but Cui Ying Ying pulled her back, “leave him alone for now; he’s not in a good mood.”

It was impossible for Nami to know about Lei Yu’s childhood experience, but Cui Ying Ying knew. Today’s appearance of the Lei family was indeed shocking to the outside world, but for Lei Yu, it was like the Lei family gave him a slap to the face while giving him a piece of candy.

Announcing in front of so many people that he was the second young master of the Lei family, especially in front of the various major media outlets, this matter will soon spread all over. This included the people in Tenglong country, for those that treated him quite well like Nuo Yi Long and sibling, how would he explain it to them? And how would he explain this to Shangguan Xi Hong?

All of this was giving Lei Yu a headache. Slightly spitting out some turbid air, Lei Yu sat down and calmed his mind, gradually entering his cultivating state.

Whenever it reached this time, Cui Ying Ying and Nami both knew not to disturb Lei Yu. The two just sat

on the sofa in the living room in a daze.

The internal energy inside Lei Yu's body started circulating in accordance to the methods imprinted in his mind for a full cycle. His mood began to stabilize, but it was at this time that Lei Yu received a shock. The internal energy that had circulated through his fingertips created some irregularity that Lei Yu did not notice at first. But now that he suddenly stopped the circulation yet the strange feeling persisted, making him concentrate on that area. When all his spiritual force was focused in that general area, only then did he realize the old ring he was wearing was releasing a faint black halo that contained a

huge amount of energy.

Lei Yu was suddenly shocked; this won't create the same situation as the jade pendant resting on my chest right? If that was the case, wouldn't I be a little too lucky?

Under careful probing, Lei Yu finally understood, this force did not spread out because of his internal energy, but was maintaining its own power. Expelling Lei Yu's internal energy to the outside, this strange discovery made Lei Yu even more curious. Focusing his energy, he concentrated on his spirit energy to perforate his skin to then enter into the ring.

“How come... how come there's so

much space inside? How could this be?" Lei Yu was suddenly surprised, in front of him was a large area that looked completely empty. But in the corner of this area, a black thing that looked like a stick was resting there. Lei Yu focused his mind and the black stick started rising into the air. Because of Lei Yu's spirit focused on it, the stick gradually exuded a powerful white light. And even though he was only using spiritual force, Lei Yu subconsciously closed his eyes because of the light.

The strong light gradually dissipated and the black stick actually turned into a scroll. Recorded on the scroll of paper were words that Lei Yu could not read, but the look and the

appearance of the text seems to be the Greek language. Why would this mysterious ancient scroll appear in this unexplainable space?

Lei Yu pulled his spiritual force out from the ring and suddenly felt the world brighten before he awoke from his focused state of consciousness. His mind kept replaying the previous scene he observed while he stared at the ring in surprise. Lei Yu muttered: “What’s up with this ring? How could there be such a large space inside it?”

He recalled a time when he had nothing to do and read an online novel. Hoping for a fluke, Lei Yu concentrated his spiritual energy to make contact with the ring, and

then looked at the cup of water on the table. With a slight shudder in his mind... “Oh crap!”

The cup actually disappeared into thin air. And with the trace spiritual contact maintained with the ring, an information feedback was felt that acknowledged the cup had entered into the ring.

“A storage ring?” Lei Yu suppressed the feeling of ecstasy and then carefully looked at the changes inside the ring. The cup inside the space was conspicuous, so according to the ratio of the cup size, Lei Yu made a simple estimate – the size of this region of space was at least a hundred square meters, the equivalent to a three-bedroom house.



“I, Lei Yu am truly one lucky f\*ck!  
Hahaha...”

Lei Yu’s laughter startled Nami and Cui Ying Ying who were zoning out on the living room sofa. The two went to the bedroom door and lightly knocked.

“Come in!”

“Are you okay?” Cui Ying Ying asked with concern.

Lei Yu did not try to hide his smile, making the two girls look at him in confusion. He grabbed the two beauties, “let me show you two some magic!”

Cui Ying Ying placed her hand on Lei Yu’s forehead, “are you feeling okay? Could it be brain damage

from a fever?”

Brushing Cui Ying Ying's hand away, “I'm fine, you two sit.”

Lei Yu pointed to the bed and the two obediently sat down. Although they were still somewhat worried about Lei Yu's sound of mind, they weren't sure how to ask him.

In a serious and earnest manner, Lei Yu pulled up a chair and sat in front of the two. He waved his hands in front of the two, “watch carefully!” Lei Yu closed his eyes and right after that, a white cup appeared out of nowhere. Cui Ying Ying and Nami looked at each other; they both weren't sure why Lei Yu was so leisurely and carefree to perform magic tricks for them to

see.

“Powerful huh?”

Cui Ying Ying stiffly smiled, “hoho, pow... powerful, very powerful. Lei Yu, did you mind go bonkers?”

“What are you talking about?! I’m telling you, I’ve received a treasure!” Lei Yu mysteriously smiled but did not tell the two anything about the ring.

---

The exciting news for the rest of the country did not diminish any less; even more people were discussing the same topic – that Lei Yu’s secret identity had been revealed.

Multitude of girls in love were searching high and low for any

hints of Lei Yu's whereabouts, hoping to find this noble young master that were able to move their lovesick hearts. They also wanted to confess their love to him and criticize the hateful people that doubted his identity. But why would Lei Yu even care about them?

Mr. Yamamoto was rejected more than once when he tried calling Cui Ying Ying; the remorseful Yamamoto wanted to meet up with them and apologize in person. But he soon realized that even though he was considered a famous business leader in the Kou country, in Lei Yu's eyes he was just one of the many business partners that was chosen, he was just an insignificant existence. If those that wanted to cooperate with Lei Yu

knew of where he lived, they would definitely have stampeded through his front door already.

“Ying Ying, just go meet with him. Mr. Yamamoto is already willing to increase his initial investment to \$200 million U.S., and he’s willing to take care of the latter part of the project all by himself; you’re basically sitting at home doing nothing but collecting money. You even saved on having to spend a single penny on the originally intended investment, how come you’re still not satisfied?” Lei Yu was quite impressed with Cui Ying Ying’s manipulative ways, wouldn’t this amount to making him die of anxiety?

Cui Ying Ying drummed her cheeks,

“who told him to be so hateful, actually calling us two big fraudsters. I bet he’s doing this because he’s really afraid this will be the end of him in the business world.”

“What he said wasn’t really wrong; we were originally trying to con them right?” Laughed Lei Yu.

“Why are you siding with them? You’re not even on my side!”

“That’s enough, just listen to me and go take care of this quickly. I still have something to take care of, then we’ll have dinner together. Lei Yu patted Cui Ying Ying’s head. If it were another person doing this, their hands would have been already been cut off, but this was

Lei Yu so it made Cui Ying Ying's  
heart feel indescribably sweet.

# Chapter 87: Where Is My Mother?

Cui Ying Ying left. Lei Yu then smiled at Nami, “you want to come with me to a place?”

Nami politely nodded, then picked up the car keys ready to go down to the parking lot to pick up the car. Lei Yu then said: “Give me that business card.”

Nami then thought of where Lei Yun Tian shoved a business card with his address on it into her hands, she hurriedly went into her handbag and brought it out.

The two drove in a westerly



direction. Lei Yu took out his cell phone, "Black Panther, rest at ease and cultivate at the place I've arranged for you guys, I will immediately contact you if anything comes up. The Yamaguchi-gumi will definitely not let you guys off now. I have dragged you guys into this mess, I, Lei Yu sincerely apologize to you all."

"Young master!" Lei Yu heard a choked voice on the other end of the line, "with these words from you, even if us brothers die, it will be worth it!"

Lei Yu smiled, "you're a really honorable man, it's definitely not easy to meet someone like you in the Kou country."

Hanging up the phone, Lei Yu's heart grew a lot calmer. He had already determined what to say to Lei Yun Tian when he meets him a little later on.

Arriving at a western district filled with independent upscale villas, the scenery of this place could be described as seeing something out of a painting. The whistling of the wind and waves could be heard as the sun settled into the evening. A few hundred meters from the sea, they arrived at the main gates of a luxury villa. Lei Yu and Nami parked their car next to a flower bed and got out.

“Isn't this the area that Ying Ying wanted to purchase an ocean-side villa? How come he's living here as

well?" Lei Yu was somewhat surprised. But for such a high-class location, owners of these houses would definitely not be ordinary, so it shouldn't be strange for the Lei family to have a villa in this area as well.

As they arrived at the front gate, two burly men in black clothing saw Lei Yu approaching. They immediately picked up their walkie talkies and said something into it. The villa's gates opened and two people came out; those two were none other than the Lei family's master Lei Yun Tian, and the other being the Lei family's Elder.

Both their faces looked excited, perhaps it because of the arrival of Lei Yu or maybe some reason only

they knew.

“Little Yu, you’ve finally come!”

“I truly do not know what to call you right now, but you did help me while I was in a sticky situation, therefore I, Lei Yu sincerely thank you.”

“Why are you being so courteous? We’re family. You are my son; a father helping his son is a normal thing so there’s no need to be so polite right?” Lei Yun Tian’s brought Lei Yu into the villa in a very hospitable manner. Le Yu could only smile faintly and not say anything, but in his heart, the hate and rejection he suffered in the Lei family household did not lessen one bit.

Was Lei Yu being too arrogant?  
Nope. What gave Lei Yu the right to  
treat this world renowned ancient  
business clan in such a way?  
Nothing. So why was he doing this?  
Did he really hate every single Lei  
family member to the bones?

The only thing Lei Yu wanted was  
to be not involved in any  
relationship with the Lei family. In  
his heart, there were only two  
things he had to do: First, to avenge  
little Ke, and the second was to find  
his mother and avenge his  
grandfather.

Anything else, Lei Yu did not want  
to think about. A father that  
provided but was not close to him,  
such a father made Lei Yu feel  
distant towards him. And this

father's attitude changed immensely only after knowing a once in a thousand year family brand had appeared, this made Lei Yu feel like his father was too fake. Lei Yu didn't want to become close with someone with such a fake character.

Entering the villa's living room, they encountered an unexpected grandeur of decoration as if they had entered a palace. The amount of space in the living room was really large, it was at least three hundred square meters (3229 sqft). It was furnished with a variety of famous paintings and ancient artifacts. Sitting down on the leather sofa, Lei Yu felt a bit uncomfortable, mainly because he had never spoken together with his

father in such a close manner before.

“Little Yu, after everything is taken care of here, we’ll go back to Tenglong country. We’ve decided to let you manage all the businesses here in the Kou country, what do you think about it?” Lei Yun Tian’s words were basically implying that Lei Yu was a member of the Lei family, like there’s no room to back out of it whatsoever.

Lei Yu smiled but shook his head, “I’m sorry, I can’t agree to that. You’ve helped me out at the groundbreaking ceremony, that’s I’m really grateful for. But the previous problem between us, do you feel we can completely wipe the slate clean just because of that?”

Hearing Lei Yu say this, Lei Yun Tian and the Elder's face instantly froze. The two of them had been patiently waiting for a long time; one could say for the sake of their family's future, they had bowed down their proud heads. But it looks like everything they've done up to this point was in futile.

“Little Yu, have you ever seen the master speak to others this politely? Don't think that just because you have the Lei family's original brand, you can act so arrogant and overbearing!” The Elder couldn't tolerate this anymore and said this in a rage.

Lei Yu stood up, “it doesn't matter, I came here today to especially thank you. If you think I've failed to



appreciate your kindness, it's fine, I'll just leave." After saying this, Lei Yu intended to leave.

"Wait a minute." Lei Yun Tian cried out behind him. Although the voice was soft, but it still gave Lei Yu a sour feeling in his heart.

Lei Yu was a loyal and affectionate person, when it came to friends and lovers, especially the saying where blood is thicker than water[1]. But in his heart, Lei Yu did not hate his father, he was just really disappointed with the things his father did. As the master of the ancient Lei family, dealing with thousands of issues, Lei Yu did not expect his father to treat his own son worst than an outsider. How could he not feel disheartened by it?

If his father did not dote on him before he reached ten years of age, he would not feel like this in the present even if after the baptism ceremony revealed he did not have the Lei family's brand. But back then before he turned ten, he gained the love and affection of his father. But once he did not have the family's brand, not only his clan, but his own father kept away from him at a distance. A full eight years of time, he only saw his father three times, and it was even only the back of his figure. How could Lei Yu handle this?

And now in the present, his potential had been discovered. The Lei family was willing to open their main gate and once again welcome him in, how could he agree to such

a thing? Wouldn't that be such a humiliation to himself?

Lei Yun Tian sighed heavily, reluctantly sitting back down on the sofa. He also knew Lei Yu had an unyielding heart; you can't pull nine heads of cattle back that easily[2]. Without any hope, he still asked: "What do you want in order for you to return to the Lei family?"

Unexpectedly, Lei Yu slowly turned around, "I want to know everything about my mother, and about the people that killed my grandfather. If you can tell me that and as long as I can avenge them, I will return to the Lei family."

Lei Yun Tian and the Elder opened their eyes round and wide. They

stared at Lei Yu speechless for a while. Lei Yu gave an indifferent smile, “goodbye then.”

“What things do you want to know about your mother?!” Lei Yun Tian cried out.

“Where is she? Who are her enemies? Why would anyone want to kill my grandfather? That’s what I want to know.” Lei Yu’s heart had started beating rapidly. A child that has never seen his own mother since he was born, he was actually extremely eager to experience maternal love. His grandfather had already died and the only other person that may know the whereabouts of his mother would be his father. Lei Yu had pinned his hopes on him.

Lei Yun Tian and the Elder glanced at each other, then heavily sighed again. The look on their faces showed they were even more dispirited and helpless. "I will no longer hope for your return to the Lei family because I can't tell you everything about the situation. The only thing I can tell you are two hints: Your mother is in the United States, and the Ming Sect may have some clues." Looking at Lei Yu who was in a daze, Lei Yun Tian said: "Go ahead and leave, I hope you will find your mother one day."  
\*Sigh\*

Lei Yu slowly turned around. Although the real purpose of him coming here could not be fulfilled, but he did gain two clues out of it. Lei Yu knew if he kept on insisting

on an answer from Lei Yun Tian, he still won't say a thing. If that was the case, he could only rely on himself to investigate this.

-----

[1] Family ties bonded by blood is stronger than anything else.

[2] Next to impossible to bring back someone with a change of heart.

# Chapter 88: He Has His Way

Watching Lei Yu's each step putting him closer to the door, Lei Yun Tian's heart had sunk to the bottom of the abyss. Suddenly, Lei Yu turned around and said: "Father!"

"You... you... what did you call me?!" Lei Yun Tian could not believe what he just heard as he asked again with wide eyes.

Lei Yu smiled, "I called you father, which is a hard fact." Pausing for a bit, Lei Yu continued by saying: "I will investigate the clues you gave me. If I can find my mother and avenge my grandfather, then I will

definitely return to the Lei family.”

Lei Yun Tian excitedly ran up to Lei Yu and grabbed his son’s shoulder. Originally, kicking Lei Yu out of the family was not his idea. As a father, it was still his own son. But due to facing the clan’s pressure and the complaints from them, he was unwillingly forced to take action. When he realized his own son possessed the rare family brand that only appeared once every several thousands of years, Lei Yun Tian was possibly the happiest person out of everyone.

“Little Yu, even though I can’t tell you everything about this situation but don’t worry, I will do my best to help you in the shadows.”



“Don’t!” Lei Yu shook his head, “this is something I want to take care of on my own. I want to find out the truth myself; I want to rely on my own ability to avenge grandfather.” Lei Yu’s eyes were filled with determination.

Lei Yun Tian nodded, “you’ve grown up, and you’ve really matured.”

“There’s one thing I want you to do though, that’s let Cui Ying Ying and I handle things in the Kou country ourselves; you should return to Tenglong country.”

“I can’t do that. That day, Hasegawa from the Yamaguchi-gumi is a master on the Sixth Order rank, there’s no way you are a match for him. It’s too worrisome to let you

stay here alone!” Lei Yun Tian immediately refused.

Lei Yu actually wanted to say: Did you ever care about my life and death before? But he wanted to let Lei Yun Tian save some face and instead, lightly said: “With the Lei family clan as a deterrent, he’ll probably won’t dare to do anything to me so don’t worry. If I encounter any problems, I will immediately contact you; is that good enough for you? Moreover, keeping the higher-ups of the Lei family tied up here isn’t too good since there are many business decisions in Tenglong country that require your attention.”

Thinking about it and realizing what Lei Yu said made sense, Lei

Yun Tian could only nod in agreement.

Nami had been standing outside the car next to the villa waiting anxiously for Lei Yu the entire time. The reason being she had received a phone call saying a situation had appeared at Cui Ying Ying's location. The specifics of the problem weren't mentioned, but hearing Cui Ying Ying's tone of voice, she did sound quite anxious.

Upon seeing Lei Yu's return, Nami shouted: "Young master, hurry, the phone!" While she cried out, she was also dialing some numbers on the phone, and the numbers displayed were for Cui Ying Ying.

Getting into the car, Lei Yu took the

phone. Nami quickly started the car and drove in the direction towards Cui Ying Ying's location.

Lei Yu was relieved after seeing Cui Ying Ying in person. As long as the person was fine, any other problem can be solved. He quickly asked what happened and Mr. Yamamoto happened to be here as well. They explained the whole situation while looking in an easterly direction.

Unknown who had been pulling the strings behind the scene, but the relationships they have already built with government officials were intervened by their superiors, resulting in the entire project being shut down. Each and every day the work is stopped, the losses added up were completely unimaginable.

Such a large surface area of the sea, a full ten thousand square kilometers (3861 square miles); wanting to build a city on top of it, they had to build it like they were building a bridge. Solid and load-bearing steel columns were entrenched into the seabed. They chose to use two thousand plus kilogram steel columns that were twelve meters in diameter with poured concrete in the center. Those two thousand plus kilogram steel columns had already been made prior to the groundbreaking ceremony, but now that they were being obstructed by government officials, the financial loss due to this was not small.

Currently on scene were several government officials that had

agreed to terms privately and publicly. And based on what they've said, it seems that someone in the dark had intervened, their powers were not small so the officials had to give them face and reluctantly interfere with this project.

Such a large project had even caused a stir around the world, but facing such a situation just as they were about to start work on it was indeed quite annoying. These higher-up officials most likely did not care about how much bribe they were accepting because of this, they were probably afraid to go against this powerful force, the Yamaguchi-gumi.

“I will take care of this situation as soon as possible; you guys carry on

with your duties. Just be prepared to start work, I will inform you guys very shortly.” Said Lei Yu in a categorical manner.

Yamaguchi-gumi’s purpose was very clear, they didn’t want Lei Yu’s group to start working. During the start of a project, financial liquidity was very important. Now that government officials were obstructing it, it meant selling the future properties would also be delayed, resulting in the inability to cycle their financial resource.

The officials of the Kou government gave a simple reason: Because the project was too large, the risks too big, so the sale of future properties was not approved.

Those officials that had previously committed to Lei Yu were all in a bind. Even though they were directly in charge of the issues at hand, they could not defy the words of a superior official. In a helpless state, they could only stay close to Lei Yu and discuss the arrangements.

Lei Yu left the conference room and took out his phone as he stood in the hallway.

“Black Panther, there’s something I need you to help with.”

“Young master, just tell me what orders you have for me, there’s no need for you to ask for my help!”

“Immediately come to the Sky



Towers, building A; I will be waiting for you on the rooftop.” Hanging up the phone, Lei Yu took the elevator to the top floor, walked around some debris before going up to the rooftop.

Black Panther was really efficient, once he ended the call with Lei Yu, he immediately notified his fellow brothers to get ready. He then got into a car alone and quickly rushed to Lei Yu’s designated location.

If we were to talk about the relationship between Lei Yu and Black Panther, it would be that one of them was completely impressed with the other. One aspect was Lei Yu’s strength; Lei Yu’s lightning ability caused Black Panther deep psychological fear. Another aspect

was Lei Yu's personality, if he considered you a close friend or one of his own, he would abandon all past discretions and treat you like a brother. For an expert level fighter like Lei Yu who would not be disgusted with the weird smell he gave off, what complaints would he have? He was now completely loyal to Lei Yu.

"Young master, what do you need me to take care of?" On the rooftop, Black Panther saw Lei Yu on the edge of the roof holding the handrail and watching the scenery below.

"Where are your fellow brothers? Are they all there as well?"

"That's right, young master."

“Tonight at ten o’clock, room 2688 in the Long Valley Bar, bring them all there; I have something to trouble you guys with. But your personal objective is to protect Ying Ying and Nami. Based on your strength as a Third Rank mutated person, taking on two to three Advanced Ninjas should be fine, let alone Elementary Ninjas. I believe the Yamaguchi-gumi will temporarily not send anyone against me, but it’s highly possible they will make a move against Ying Ying and them. But they would probably not send out anyone that exceeds you in strength, therefore, I’m entrusting you with their safety.”

“Don’t worry young master.”

“Apart from the time they are spending together with me, you cannot let them two out of your sight.”

Once Black Panther left, Lei Yu gave out a long sigh. His objective in coming to the Kou country was to make the Yamaguchi-gumi approach him themselves. But things have appeared to taken the opposite route, and become more passive-aggressive. Although Lei Yu was grateful for the appearance of Lei Yun Tian at the groundbreaking ceremony and helping him out of a sticky situation, but this lead to a hindrance with Cui Ying Ying's initial plans. Even if the Yamaguchi-gumi temporarily does not dare to act overtly, but they will still use this big project as their

means of attack.

Lei Yu smiled as he walked into the conference room, "I have already thought of a solution to deal with the hindrance to our construction, you guys only need to take care of whatever are on your hands right now, I will take care of everything else."

Since the young master made this statement, the others naturally did not ask further questions. After the meeting, Cui Ying Ying asked in a low tone: "Lei Yu, what methods are you planning on using? The government officials are justifiably stopping our work, if we insist on fighting it; the problem may become larger in the future."

“Don’t worry about it, this issue will be solved in the most traditional manner, I will take care of it.”

“You’re hiding the method from me?” Cui Ying Ying pouted with a look of displeasure.

“That’s enough.” Lei Yu patted Cui Ying Ying’s head, “you will know when the time comes, who told you to create such a big project without discussing with me first? Consider us even now.” After saying this, Lei Yu put his hands behind his back and walked away while Nami hurriedly followed him.

Slowly regaining her thoughts, Cui Ying Ying had wanted to say something but since they were at the company workplace, she held

back, not wanting to affect her image here.

Cui Ying Ying was still a very busy person. A high-class office building stood in the middle of the city called the Long Valley Building. A full three levels of office space were bought by the so called young master and his partners. And through a variety of “methods” and “special relations,” these following words were alongside of the original Long Valley Building name: Meng Yu Talent Agency.

There were no shortages of A-list celebrities from different entertainment industries. They’ve all arrived on scene; it’s their first day at the company. They were all hoping to see the young master that

shook the world with his appearance, hoping to just catch a glimpse of his elegant flair.

But many were disappointed because Lei Yu never showed up since he had no intention of making an appearance. The only thing he wanted to fix as soon as possible was the work stoppage at the construction site; he was clear on what was important and what was not.

Around ten o'clock at night, Lei Yu drank the last sip of his bottle of beer. He looked at the time, and then suddenly smiled. "They're here." The smell that Black Panther and his group gave off was something he could never forget, but Lei Yu did slowly get use to the



smell or there's no way he could get along with them in the long-term.

A total of eleven people arrived on scene. According to Lei Yu's request, Black Panther was currently dedicating his utmost effort in protecting the safety of Cui Ying Ying and Nami.

The underhanded tactics of the Kou people still made Lei Yu worried, since taking hostages out of the blue was something Lei Yu had personally experienced before. He didn't want something like that to happen a second time or he would definitely regret it for the rest of his life.

Amongst the eleven people, Lei Yu could easily sense that two of them

had the strength of a Third Order Warrior, also known as a Third Rank Mutant. The rest had the strength of Second and First Order Warriors, but still compared to ordinary people, their strengths were at least ten to one hundred times stronger.

These people were really respectful when they saw Lei Yu. It's possible that when speaking to his fellow brothers, Black Panther may have exaggerated some of Lei Yu's abilities, causing everyone to look upon him with a face of worship.

A big burly man was the first to speak; his voice was very low but it showed how healthy his lungs were; his face had a stubble and his whole appearance gave people a sense

that he was a sturdy fellow. “Young master, what are your orders for us?”

“I need you guys to do me a favor.”

“Just tell us what to do young master, don’t say it’s a favor or something.”

At this point, everyone believed what Black Panther had told them. The young master had a gentle personality that made it easy to get along with him. His speech was so polite to mutants like them that gave off a weird odor, it really made them feel a hint of warmth in their hearts.

“Then I will get straight to the point.” Lei Yu smiled as he looked

at the eleven people sitting in a circle around him. He then said: “You are all citizens of the Kou country, so you should be aware of pretty much of everything that goes on here. I would like to ask you guys for your help, through whatever channels needed and collect a group of punks and ruffians. You can use whatever methods necessary, but they must be obedient and dare to cause trouble and not afraid of the consequences.”

“No problem.” Smiled the burly man.

Lei Yu understood one thing: Black Panther was the group leader amongst these people. And this burly guy should be something like

the vice or deputy leader, that's why he was the only one to speak on the group's behalf the entire time.

“Your code... what is your codename?”

# Chapter 89:

## Revisiting The Pendant

“Gray Bear.”

Lei Yu nodded, the name really suited the person. “Then I’ll trouble you with the task.” From the table, he picked up a black leather bag, “inside is \$100,000 U.S. dollars, as to how to handle this task is all up to you guys. But... I hope tomorrow night you guys will give me update; of course, I hope everything will go smoothly.”

No one else said anything; they had developed a habit of just

acknowledging their orders without asking any questions. Each of them stood up and Gray Bear said:

“Young master, there’s no need for so much money.”

“Pretend I’m treating my fellow brothers to a drink.” Lei Yu said in a generous tone.

His words were indeed quite lavish, which person would go out drinking that required \$100,000 U.S. dollars? Even if it was a marriage reception, they still couldn’t spend that much if they drank themselves to death.

When the group left, Lei Yu also immediately left afterwards. He was not worried the group of mutants would make a mess of things; in order to have useful people by your

side, you must first trust them and not doubt them.

Lei Yu returned to the hotel early and greeted Black Panther. Those two looked like they were switching shifts, one came and the other left.

“Lei Yu, did you know? A lot of celebrities wanted to meet you today, unfortunately you didn’t go.” Smiled Cui Ying Ying.

“What’s the point in me going? I’m not a monkey at the zoo for people’s viewing pleasure.”

“Haha...”

Cui Ying Ying then returned to her room. Lei Yu looked at Nami who had already fallen asleep on the sofa, and suddenly several



questions appeared in his mind.

“Didn’t this girl still have a grandmother at home? How come I haven’t seen her go home and visit?” But seeing how sweet and deep she appeared to be sleeping, Lei Yu didn’t want to disturb her. Quietly watching from the bedroom door, he then went back inside his room and took off his clothes before sitting down cross-legged. The first thing he did was play around with the storage ring on his finger. Lei Yu was still enjoying that freshness one experiences with a new toy so it was inevitable that he would want to play with it.

Now when it came to him cultivating, he has never neglected it. Although his progress was slow,

he had kept up with it, never slacking off his efforts and continuously trying to improve himself.

But today, Lei Yu was planning something different, and this new different plan was borderline crazy. Although it looked like Lei Yu was indifferent to his slow improvement rate, but in reality, he was extremely anxious. If he cannot attain a powerful strength, not even mentioning wanting to destroy the Yamaguchi-gumi, the main issue was not knowing when he could even avenge his grandfather's death. Didn't Nuo Yi Long say it very clearly? Based on Lei Yu's current strength, it was impossible for him to get revenge.

Lei Yu gently touched the pendant hanging against his chest. To this day, Lei Yu still couldn't figure out what's up with this pendant with the "moon" character on it. He only knows that every time he circulates his internal energy to cultivate, he would deliberately avoid it, developing into a habit.

Inhaling a deep breath, Lei Yu silently prayed in his heart: Spiritual Bead of Longevity, you must help me when the time comes!

Forcefully breathing out that deep breath, Lei Yu started slowly circulating his internal energy inside his dantian's Sea of Energy point. With a large gathering of internal energy inside the Sea of

Energy under his control, it started growing at a rapid and alarming rate. Accompanied with a powerful force, Lei Yu's internal energy began to increase and become thicker. When compared to before, it was like comparing the earth to the heavens.

Last time when his consciousness entered into the pendant, he was unable to get out. At the last minute, it was fortunate that the Spiritual Bead of Longevity intervened or he would not have survived a death by self-explosion.

The internal energy slowly approached his chest, "pak pak" sounds of lightning crackled within the energy as it moved closer. It got closer and closer, and at the critical

moment, Lei Yu could not become careless. Using a thin line of internal energy to probe ahead, he found there were no obstacles. Lei Yu successfully immersed his consciousness into the pendant.

Inside the world of darkness, it gave Lei Yu a feeling as if he was deep underground somewhere. Even though it was his second time coming here, it still made Lei Yu feel an inexplicable and unbearable pressure.

Shortly after, a spot of white light gradually appeared in the sky. The white spot of light looked like a star, and it began to expand. But what made Lei Yu surprised; this was completely different from the moon he saw last time.

“What’s going on? Why is the moon in a crescent shape and not in its full form?”

But now was not the time to think about this. The half moon shone down a white light mixed with the lights of sparkling stars creating a beautiful scene, and it all fell upon Lei Yu’s body.

This feeling was wonderful, a feeling that Lei Yu had experienced before. Yet it was this same wonderful and warm feeling that made him feel a bit scared; first comfort then pain later.

One thing Lei Yu guessed was correct, the comfortable feeling he felt continued. The warm white light penetrated into different parts

of Lei Yu's body. Whether it be his cells or his hair roots, his nose or throat; they were all slowly absorbing the light. If this slow absorption continued to enter his body, Lei Yu could easily absorb all this power. But the problem was how long will this calm continue for?

The naked eye cannot see it but in reality, the air surrounding Lei Yu were becoming distorted, especially the crescent moon hanging in the sky above the Kou country. At an extremely slow rate, the moonlight was spilling towards the direction of Lei Yu. Once it got near the window of Lei Yu's bedroom, it did not show signs of stopping, it shone through the glass and scattered upon Lei Yu's body.

After a sudden tremor, Lei Yu felt beads of sweat form on his forehead, sweat that was mixed with black impurities. Lei Yu's consciousness was in a constant struggle, but it hadn't reached his limit yet; the words to describe the current intensity of absorption would be "pure madness." Once the moonlight was absorbed into the body, it would immediately smash into his veins, causing the green energy to start activating. The green energy revolving around Lei Yu's chest rushed out to repair the damaged veins and blood vessels.

Overflowing, overflowing, it's overflowing again. Can't absorb anymore!

Lei Yu tightly clenched his fists, the



veins in his arms visibly popping out. His body was constantly trembling but the Spiritual Bead of Longevity's manifested yellow energy did not appear with Lei Yu's pain, it was just quietly nestled inside his brain like it did not see or care what was going on right now.

Lei Yu was extremely anxious, "Spiritual Bead of Longevity! Stop messing around! This is not the time to play a joke with me!"

Gradually, the crescent moon began to lose its shape and become dim. And because of this, Lei Yu's breathing became more rapid; his chest rising up and down; and bursts of tightness in his chest could be felt in his awareness.

His internal energy under the sway of the moonlight gradually became tyrannical, surging around like crazy. The energy containing lightning within it made “pak pak” sounds as if it wanted to break free from his body. Each path of internal energy was filled with the essence of moonlight, becoming more robust. There was no way for Lei Yu to fully control it, especially when he had to focus a portion of his willpower to deal with jade pendant’s own moonlight scouring.

Seconds and minutes went by, Lei Yu’s breathing started to slow down but handling his current condition was getting more difficult than before.

“I was really asking for trouble! I

shouldn't have even come in! I'm done, I'm done! I can't get out! I can't even control my own thoughts anymore!

It's not that Lei Yu didn't absorb it; it's that he didn't have enough time to absorb it. Every time the energy went inside him, it would scatter throughout his entire body. And his veins filled with internal energy were madly absorbing it, similar to African refugees eating like they've been starving for a long time. This madness was causing his body to nearly collapse.

Lei Yu's sweat had already drenched the area he was sitting on. "Aghh!"

Lei Yu couldn't handle it anymore

and screamed out loud. Waking up Nami who was asleep in the living room, she rubbed her eyes and got up. She gently knocked on Lei Yu's bedroom door and after not getting any response or hearing any movements; she thought she must've been dreaming and returned to the sofa.

“What to do? What to do? What on earth should I do?”

Right. Currently Lei Yu has no way to solve his current crisis, but the situation doesn't give him anymore time to come up with a solution. If only Nami could go inside the room and knock him out, then maybe it could stop his consciousness, but...

His head was suddenly racked with

pain and a yellow light started shimmering. Lei Yu was overjoyed and cursed out: “F\*cker! Should have came earlier!”

If it were ordinary people, the moonlight shining down onto a particular area would not be seen by them, but a pair of eyes in the darkness of night was fully aware of this; a short person lying on top of a round bed by the beach of Yamaguchi-gumi Island, was Hasegawa.

At this time, he stopped the pretty girl next to him sucking on his penis, his eyes staring at the moon. He could understand if the moonlight shone on him and spread out everywhere, but the light was only shining on one location.

He was unable to comprehend this incredible scene, “something strange is definitely going on!”

# Chapter 90: Meng Yu Corporation

Lei Yu's breathing gradually slowed down to normal, the yellow energy was slowly breaking off the contact between Lei Yu and the jade pendant. Slowly, he regained his self-awareness. Lei Yu opened his eyes, wiped the sweat from his brow and breathed out a some turbid air.

"That was way too dangerous! I vow never to engage in such dangerous activity ever again."

Focusing his spiritual power, he activated his inner vision to monitor his body. The internal energy inside his dantian gradually

settled down, the fractured veins and meridians were now being repaired and moisturized by the green energy. The power he just gained had actually increased his recovery time by an unknown multiplicative rate.

Those unexplainable energies inside his body made Lei Yu feel like his body contained two time bombs that may go off at anytime. Although the green energy had the ability to help him repair his internal injuries, and even increased his recovery rate of external wounds at an unknown rate. But once this energy activates, whether what it plans on doing was a complete unknown. Now the yellow energy was Lei Yu's favorite, not only could it clear out the



impurities of the absorbed spiritual energy, it had saved him twice already. But since it was related to the Ink Beast; and remembering his body contained a demonic beast, it made Lei Yu's whole body feel uncomfortable.

The current internal energy seemed more vigorous than the previous, and his five senses were obviously a lot stronger than before. Lei Yu's ears moved slightly and he was able to hear the soft breathing sound of Nami sleeping in the living room.

"This is too incredible!" Lei Yu could not hold down his ecstasy. He was now completely sure, his strength had reached the late-stage of [Discharge], which was equivalent to the rank of a late-

stage Fifth Order Warrior. With this level of strength, they would definitely become national figures that were valued by any country they were a part of.

Lei Yu sighed. "Ugh! The costs are way too high, if it wasn't for the help of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity, my entire body would probably have exploded into a scene of blood and bones!"

Recalling the frightful scene he experienced, Lei Yu could not help swallowing hard, vowing never to do such a dangerous thing again. Even if his strength was not enough to avenge his grandfather or that he couldn't find his mother, he could not take such risks. If he had lost his life, the thought of revenge would not even exist!

Stretching his body; his arms raised up and twisted his waist; the bones gave off a “pak pak” sound, Lei Yu felt his vitality was better than before. He slightly sniffed his nose and a strong disgusting odor was detected. Looking at black ooze covering his body, Lei Yu quickly rushed into the bathroom.

Early morning, Cui Ying Ying had woken up early. She had bought some breakfast at the restaurant of the hotel and was ready to deliver it to Lei Yu and Nami.

On the side of the hotel lobby’s elevator, a middle-aged man in a black windbreaker and sunglasses was holding onto a cell phone, “boss, I see the chick that was with Lei Yu the other day.”

“You can leave; don’t alert them with your presence.”

“Understood!” The middle-aged man clothed in black left the hotel and went towards the direction of an eastern island.

The Yamaguchi-gumi’s island – Hasegawa was holding onto a wine glass, inside was some type of golden yellow wine. Gently sipping, he murmured: “So it was him? Was he able to absorb the moonlight’s essence? But isn’t this ability only capable by the Werewolves in Europe? Could he be a Werewolf?!” Hasegawa was talking to himself, his tone filled with shock. He then rejected this thought, “no, not right, he’s a member of the Lei family right? Plus the moon was only at

the crescent phase and not a full moon. If he was really a Werewolf, this type of incident would only appear during the full moon... then what on earth is going on?”

“You, immediately go investigate to see if the Lei family left the Kou country yet.”

“Understood!”

Inside the hotel where Lei Yu was staying.

“Quickly eat it before it gets cold.” Cui Ying Ying said this to the two of them while pointing to the breakfast on the coffee table.

“You woke up really early.” Lei Yu smiled, “is there something going on today?”

“Today, Mr. Yamamoto wanted to accompany us to look at some houses with ocean views. If the house is right, he wants to buy it and give it to you, the young master.”

“Oh? He sure is generous.” Lei Yu said with a smile. “But today I can’t go with you guys since work on the project is still suspended, I have to quickly find a way to fix it. You and Nami go look, it’s fine if you both feel it’s the right fit, there’s no need to ask for my opinion since I won’t be staying there for long anyway.”

“Then I won’t go either, I’ll accompany you and we’ll figure out a solution.” Cui Ying Ying had a headache once she thought about this situation. Such a large project

and throwing money into each day would accumulate into a number not small.

“No need, today you and Nami will go look at houses. As for the work stoppage, you don’t have to bother with it.”

After being dissuaded by Lei Yu, Cui Ying Ying finally agreed. The two drove off in a westerly direction to the houses with ocean views.

The phone Lei Yu dialed had already connected. “Black Panther, Ying Ying and Nami are currently headed to the western side to look at houses; sorry to bother you but if you could catch up to them and ensure their safety.”

“Don’t worry young master; I will start driving now to catch up with them. It’s not a problem; I will contact you if anything happens.”

“Oh? Good, it’s quite reassuring when I can count on you.”

Lei Yu arrived at the large agency he nominally owned – Meng Yu Talent Agency.

Coming out of the elevator, the elevator doors were facing the front desk, and behind the front desk stood a girl with a nice body but an average looking face. Upon seeing Lei Yu’s appearance, the girl’s eyes were already staring at the man full of charm, her mouth wide open forgetting to close it, even the pen fell out of her hand which she was



unaware of.

She was like this as she watched Lei Yu arrive in front of her. Lei Yu lightly smiled, showing a smile that could capture the hearts of thousands of girls. He softly asked: “Is the person in charge here? I’m Lei Yu.”

“Young... young master! You... you...” The girl’s stuttering was incomprehensible. Lei Yu was indeed mysterious, he only appeared once at a formal event and the young girl had vaguely seen him on the TV. The instant Lei Yu appeared and said his name, the young girl then immediately recognized him. Having Lei Yu push her down onto a bed was something she fantasized countless times, but

now seeing him in person, she couldn't even speak properly.

“Oh? You know who I am? That's good then, I would like to know if the person in charge is available? There's something I need to discuss with him.”

In reality, the question Lei Yu was asking sounded idiotic. Everyone here thought he was the big boss of this place, so now he's coming here to look for the person in charge?

If Lei Yu had notified them prior to his arrival, it's possible that every single person would be downstairs at the building lobby waiting to greet the young master of the Lei family. But the front desk girl's soul had already been taken by Lei Yu so

it took a while before she recovered her senses.

“Young master, please follow me!”

The young girl quickly rushed to the front of Lei Yu to lead the way, occasionally turning back to glance at him.

# Chapter 91:

## Celebrity Effect

Walking through the front entrance with glass doors 2.5 meter tall, the interior design of the office could be considered avant garde.

Everything was stylish to the point where one would realize a lot of money must have been spent on it.

Lei Yu recognized the design was similar to the Mediterranean style.

It seems like the designers were quite good; the light blue theme gave one the feeling they were amongst the ocean. Although not a bold or fierce design, it still gave a person a quiet and tranquil feeling.

Everyone looked extremely busy but

once they laid their eyes on Lei Yu, their reactions were just like the young girl at the front desk, standing there gaping at a loss. Some girls were deliberately fixing their hair, fearing their looks of astonishment were seen by the young master.

Bringing Lei Yu to an office door deep inside the interior office hallway, the young girl gently knocked. "Come in!"

The white door with a Mediterranean style was very easy on the eyes and very comfortable to look at. Lei Yu was constantly looking all over the place and when he saw a group of staff in the surrounding area staring at him without blinking, he embarrassedly

waved his hand and smiled at them.

“Ahhh!”

“The young master was smiling at me!”

“He was smiling at me!”

Many girls were resting their chins on closed fists with their eyes closed, all with an intoxicated look on their face. Lei Yu could not help but wipe the sweat from his forehead, “uh...”

The young girl opened the office door, and made a “please enter” gesture before happily running back to her work area. All the company staff was aware that Lei Yu only spoke English, so the young girl had been conversing in English

the entire time.

When they were recruiting new staff members, they had already made sufficient consideration of this aspect, so the quality and the requirements to be an employee were very high.

“Young master!” Sitting in the office chair belonging to the boss was a shocked balding middle-aged man – his name was Aomi Ueda. He originally ran a distillery but because profits were getting worse each year, he sold the place. He gained a large amount of money from transferring the license which gave him the strength to cooperate with Lei Yu.

“You’re the one in charge here?”

Asked Lei Yu with a smile.

“Yes young master, let me introduce myself – my name is Aomi Ueda, and it’s an honor for me to cooperate with you in establishing this Meng Yu Talent Agency.”

Lei Yu’s eyebrow went up slightly. This guy seems like a person that would do what he promises since his face makes him look like a practical person; but his head was rather reflective of the light since he had lost more than half his hair; there were only some slightly longer hair above his ears that obscured his bright reflective head.

“It’s my pleasure; I’m in your care!” Lei Yu held out his hand, and they both shook hands. Lei Yu was



indifferent but Aomi Ueda almost lost it from being so excited.

The two talked freely about the company's general overview and some basic day to day matters. Lei Yu then began to cut to the chase.

“Can I borrow some of our company's celebrities?”

“Of course you can, I'll arrange it immediately!” Aomi Ueda went back to his desk, picked up the phone and pressed a red button.

“Immediately notify all the celebrities to respond to the conference room, the young master wants to personally meet them.”

“Got it, notifying them right now!”  
The voice from the other end of the

line sounded excited.

Lei Yu's arrival made Meng Yu Corporation thoroughly excited; the young girls were idolizing Lei Yu as the Prince Charming of their dreams. While the male employees were regarding Lei Yu as their idol, and allowing them to witness his presence today made them all excited to the extreme.

The various artists of the company heard the young master had arrived, and started flocking straight to the conference room. Some actors that were working on movies or others doing various tasks immediately dropped what they were doing, just to go see the young master.

All the men and women were

picking up mirrors and touching up their face, all hoping to present their best side to the young master. And those girls that were usually good sisters with one and another did not chat at all, and the way they looked at each other show a hint of animosity.

From an unknown place, a gust of wind blew and then the conference room door was pushed open from the outside to the inside. Following the wind, Lei Yu appeared in front of the crowd.

Accompanying a light wind, it blew on his slightly messy hair. Lei Yu lightly stepped in, his eyes containing a look of elusive mystery that one could not comprehend but wanted to find out. His mouth had a

light smile on it that showed off his attractive and irresistible charm.

The ladies were going crazy; looking at Lei Yu's gaze was similar to looking at a statue of a peerless God, filled with yearning and reverence. It was different for the men; they were forcing themselves to stare, hoping to learn a pointer or two from Lei Yu. But no matter how hard they tried, they could not imitate his deep profoundness or his air of mysteriousness.

“Hello everyone, my name is Lei Yu.”

“Ahh! Young master!”

To ordinary people, everyone present was like the shining stars,

the moonlight that were difficult to touch. In the eyes of ordinary people, those present were all distinguished creatures but not a drop of their esteemed aura were seen today. Rather, they all looked passionate or even fanatical; the appearance of Lei Yu had completely shattered their usual air of elegance.

The purpose of the women was very clear, and that was hoping to win the favor of the young master. They would be fully satisfied as long as they can get close to the young master. As for the men, if they could become friends with the young master, then that would be the ideal situation for them.

In front of the crowd, Lei Yu walked

into the conference room and went to the forefront it. He gently sat down while Aomi Ueda stood to his side. "Everyone, the reason I came today is to ask if anyone is willing to do me a favor." Lei Yu understood that the people in front of him were already well-known celebrities in the Kou country, or even the entire world. They did not have to waste any energy to build up their image or waste their time training new people.

"Young master, just tell us. As long as it's related to you, we will definitely complete it with our utmost efforts." Said a slender and glamorous woman. Although her skin was somewhat tanned, her beauty did not lose out on showing off her healthy enchanting glow.

Any man seeing her would be tempted by her. This woman gently shifted the corner of her skirt, revealing a pair of sexy thighs; her small mouth slightly turned upwards like she had just undetectably given Lei Yu a kiss on the cheeks.

“Ahem.” Lei Yu blinked, then said: “The purpose in me coming today is that I hope you all can pick out a day to help me promote something. Even better if it could create some frenzy. If it is successful...” Lei Yu looked at Aomi Ueda to the side, and the latter immediately said: “What the young master is implying is that if you guys are willing to help with the favor, and cause an enormous commotion, then the company will assist anyone that

helps out with holding their own personal performance relating to your specialty, or select a movie or TV series as the pinnacle of your career. Of course, whether they be male or female co-stars, we'll do our best to match it to your liking."

"Heavens! Is this for real?"

"This is too good!"

"Wow, the young master is really too magnanimous!"

Lei Yu lightly grinned; he had remembered the words Cui Ying Ying said to him before: "A celebrity's effect is extremely powerful." Like himself, didn't he use his own identity in order to get things moving along?



Lei Yu had already planned on what to do; if the request today was made by Cui Ying Ying, the results may not be as good as him saying it himself. Since he was present and his identity was strong enough, then the words he says would naturally have a higher persuasion effect. Even though Cui Ying Ying was the real person in charge behind the scenes, but his name as a brand image was really more effective than hers.

“Young master, just tell us, what do you want us to do? We will definitely put in our utmost effort!” Said a young handsome man with clean looks.

Lei Yu nodded. “I’ve discussed this with Aomi Ueda. Tomorrow

afternoon at three o'clock, we will hold a press conference; I hope that all of you will be there. I want to rely on your popularity and promote to your fans to oppose the work stoppage."

This request was not a trivial matter; one of the things celebrities paid a lot of attention to were their own fans. If they were to force their fans to do certain things, it may cause a portion of the fans to give up if their dedication to them. Perhaps for some other unknown reason, the results may cause the fan to unfollow them so many celebrities were unwilling to go through such risks.

Not even mentioning this matter, even if some were just doing

ordinary promotions of a commercial nature, if they were a bit too explicit in what they wear, they would receive a lot of criticism, let alone saying such a direct thing in front of the media, this was too big of a taboo.

Lei Yu looked at the crowd's reaction and then slightly moved his ears. He heard the celebrities discussing with each other yet he still felt helpless. Even though his ability to hear was much better than before, but in this bird land, wanting to hear human speech was considered a luxury[1].

The crowd of celebrities discussed for a full five minutes while Lei Yu did not say a thing, just quietly waiting for them. Gradually, the

sounds of discussion came to a stop, and the youngest and most beautiful girl amongst them all stood up. “Young master, have you thought about what repercussions it would have on us if we did what you asked of us?”

-----

[1] Typical Chinese elitist view, they are the only humans with human speech on this planet while every other foreign country look weird and speak some weird language.

# Chapter 92:

## Protesting And Rioting

Lei Yu showed a faint smile: “Of course, I will use this chance as a means to create the most brilliant highlight of your entertainment career path. Don’t think about any negative impacts, those aren’t an issue at all. Since you’ve all have signed a contract with my company, I am responsible for all of you, otherwise, wouldn’t I be the one ultimately with the greatest loss?”

The young girl sat down. The thought of a company that didn’t care about its contracted artist was

a bit impossible; add that with Lei Yu's current flourishing popularity, then naturally they have a higher chance to greatly improve their career path.

“Anymore questions?” Lei Yu asked again while he looked at everyone present.

Now it was quieter when no one else spoke out. Lei Yu slowly stood up, and walked to the door of the conference room under the eyes of the crowd. He then turned his head around and said: “Aomi Ueda will give you the full details on how this would happen, if you have any further questions, just ask him.”

With that, Lei Yu pretty much strutted out of Meng Yu

Corporation in style, leaving a crowd of young girls fantasizing as they watched him leave.

After looking at houses, Cui Ying Ying and Nami had made a decision. The area they were looking at was already not bad, add an ocean view to it, then the prices became ridiculously high. They gave Lei Yu a call and briefly explained the situation, the three then agreed to meet back at the hotel.

“Ying Ying, I have something I don’t quite understand, can you explain it to me?” Asked Lei Yu.

“What is it? Tell me.”

“Why did you choose to build a

floating city over the sea? Such a high cost associated with it would scare people to death. Moreover, you chose to use steel columns as support, can you really do it on such a large surface area of the sea? Why not choose to do some type of land reclamation to fill in the sea? Wouldn't this save a lot on costs?"

"There's something you don't know." Cui Ying Ying paused and then said: "What's the difference between land reclamation and engaging in construction on land? We're only expanding the land mass with that method, there's nothing special about it, not to mention it's time-consuming and laborious. Although the use of our load-bearing columns into the seabed method costs a lot of money,



but then it can be truly called a floating city above the waters.”

Lei Yu’s eyebrows went up, “I now understand your thought process.”

Through Black Panther, Lei Yu assembled the ten plus mutants together. On the hotel’s rooftop, the eleven people tasked with assignments reported to Lei Yu of their progress. They went everywhere and gathered some ruffians whom were basically the useless scums of society. Lei Yu then simply explained his plans.

Two days later, everything went according to Lei Yu’s plans. The government’s city hall doors were constantly surrounded by people with banners, posters, loud cries,

and slogans, the whole nine yards; disrupting the usually peaceful and calm city.

A huge demonstration took place; the number of protesters actually reached more than one hundred thousand. Additionally, those ruffians would be causing trouble outside the city hall's entrance or in front of homes of high government officials. Although there weren't any big issues, it still made people rather nervous.

Molotov cocktails were lit and smashed onto the roadways causing "bang bang bang" noises. Noisy screams resounded through large roads and side streets and the police in their cruisers had no way to get through the crowd. The sea of

people here were almost similar to when Lei Yu attended his groundbreaking ceremony, maybe even crazier than that day.

Some of these groups of protesters were actually fans of celebrities under Lei Yu's company. They all regarded their idols as the most important and noble existences in their heart so they would do anything for them. Add that this situation itself was on behalf of Lei Yu's request, pretty much no one objected to it. Amidst the group, there were also people that just joined them spontaneously. They previously heard that the overwater city that Lei Yu wanted to build was shut down, so they came along for the ride.

The people that stood out the most in the protest were the construction workers of the overwater city.

Thousands of construction workers were dressed in their gray uniforms, they stood neatly together in formation that differentiated themselves from the other protesters. Above their heads were banners that clearly read: "Start the construction, give me back my job."

Although such a large riot was going on, there were no casualties because things didn't get too out of hand. But the turnout of this did make the government officials hard to accept the reality of it. In front of the city hall main entrance, beads of cold sweat could be seen on the foreheads of several government officials in charge of the situation,

they never thought this would cause such an uproar. They had secretly agreed to only stop construction work for a short period of time; it was good enough as long as there was some financial loss. And this whole incident wasn't their idea, it was coerced by the Yamaguchi-gumi, yet the results of their actions have made them somewhat dumbfounded.

“What to do? What should we do? Now that things have come to this point, how can we fix this?” Several government officials were gathered together discussing this.

Amongst them were two officials that Cui Ying Ying had specifically invited to attend their banquet and reception, and they were given a lot

of “side” benefits. At first there was no way for them to interfere with the work stoppage, but now that they’ve encountered such problems, they can finally voice their opinion.

They two looked at each other, then one of them said: “Just allow them to start the construction; this whole project never had any violations to begin with. It was our interference that has caused the current situation. The construction workers are causing problems most likely because their source of income has stopped, I’m just afraid something unthinkable may happen in the future if this continues. It doesn’t matter who the other people are out there protesting, we only know that their future interests in the overwater city has been intruded

on. The situation is really getting out of hand, I suggest we allow the construction to start, and end this ridiculous interference already.”

“Not happening!” A thin looking official shook his head. “Once the project starts, they’ll be selling properties before they are finished, it’s too difficult to guarantee the investments of our citizens. If the project stalls in the middle of construction, then who’s going to bear such a huge loss?”

“The young master has asked me to bring a statement to you all.” A middle-aged man’s voice was heard outside the door. This person was none other than Cui Ying Ying’s friend from abroad, the multinational lawyer Bruce Reid. If

it weren't for his identity, perhaps he would not be able to so casually enter into the government building.

Among the officials, some of them recognized his face; that day on the banquet, those that were invited had seen him. "The young master would like to remind everyone, there's no need to consider the Yamaguchi-gumi's influence, the Lei family will take care of this matter." Finishing saying this, Bruce Reid left the eyes of the group in a suave manner.

In reality, the whole work stoppage was orchestrated by the Yamaguchi-gumi behind the scenes. Since things have reached this point and were beyond their control, it was time to consider the



prestige of the Lei family, their name in the world were no less than the Yamaguchi-gumi. The most important fact was the Lei family had money; the amount of money they had was to a horrific extent. If they were to setup some sort of financial trap, perhaps the survivability of the Kou country's entire economy would be in question.

Wiping the cold sweat from his forehead, "Secretary Wang, immediately send the paperwork for starting the construction to Miss Cui, say the Kou country expresses their deep apologies in this matter."

"Understood." A young man with eye glasses was ready to quickly proceed with the things.

Inside a five-star restaurant, in an ultra luxurious VIP room.

“Cheers!”

“Cheers!”

“This is really all thanks to the young master; we were able to stop the continuing financial losses!”  
Mr. Yamamoto said excitedly.

“That’s right, never expected that the young master would cause such a shocking incident. If this was any other person, I doubt they would be able to come up with such a move, even if they thought about it, I doubt they could accomplish it. You have my admiration and respect.”

Cui Ying Ying smiled. “Yeah, the young master indeed thought

ahead. If money couldn't solve the issue with the officials, then we could only rely on this move."

Initially, Cui Ying Ying did not know about Lei Yu's plans were but once the protests and riots started, she finally realized what was going on.

"Oh yeah, where's the young master? How come he still hasn't arrived yet?" Asked Mr. Yamamoto.

Once those words were said, those celebrities that recruited their fans to help with Lei Yu's protest all stared at Cui Ying Ying. She herself was hoping Lei Yu would quickly make his appearance as well, and then praise them for their assistance. Even if there weren't any solo performances or movie role

notifications, as long as they received Lei Yu's recognition, they would still be extremely ecstatic.

"Yeah, the young master said he will definitely come, maybe he's stuck in a traffic jam. Let's not wait for him, come everyone, cheers, cheers!" Cui Ying Ying again raised her glass and toasted the people present.

Lei Yu was actually not going to attend the celebratory dinner, he didn't like those types of atmospheres where a bunch of people will be all focused on him, that's why he and Nami were just driving around.

"Nami, spread your legs apart some more, I... I can't feel it."

“Young master, you still can’t find it? Do you need my help?!”

“Nevermind, got it, I got it.” Lei Yu finally found the ring he accidentally dropped in-between Nami’s leg who was sitting on the passenger seat. This ring was his most treasured object.

Opening the car door, Lei Yu went to the railing’s edge. They were at the sea; the evening sea breeze was somewhat cold but it made Lei Yu feel wide awake. In the distance, the lights on a small island lit up; Lei Yu really wanted to know what exactly were they doing over there.

“Oh yeah Nami, don’t you still have a grandmother? How come I haven’t seen you visit her?”

# Chapter 93: Caught In A Dilemma

“I have spoken on the phone with my grandma. Grandma told me that I don’t need to visit her, and that she’ll take care of herself, and for me to focus on properly serving you.” Said Nami in a low voice.

“How could this be? Let’s go, I’ll drive. We’ll go to your house so I can meet your grandmother.” Lei Yu smiled while patting Nami’s shoulder.

“There’s no need young master, I’ve already given a portion of money that you gave me to my grandma’s bank account, presently she should

be fine.” Nami appeared to be concerned about something, wanting to refuse him yet unsure how to say it.

“Nami, did you know?” Lei Yu looked into the sky and sighed, “I’ve never experienced a complete family. Even if I used to be the Lei family’s second young master, I’ve never known what my own mother looks like. And due to some reasons related to our clan, I was forced to leave the Lei family and start my independent life. Before, I used to really hate my family; I hated their cruelty towards me; I hated their limited secular vision. But now I’m not hateful, even though I won’t return to the Lei family, I won’t hate them, this is my own punishment. Because of some situations, my

grandfather lost his right to live. For this familial tie, I will do whatever it takes to find the murderer. Even though right now I don't have the ability, I will never give up.

Therefore Nami, you must cherish the family members you have. If you ever lose this familial love, even if you regret it later on, it will become the most painful thing in your life.

Nami was in tears. Lei Yu's words had made her think about her parents whom had passed away. Gently nodding her head, the two went to buy some simple gifts and drove in the direction of where Nami's grandmother lived.

After seeing Nami's grandmother, Lei Yu finally understood some



things her grandmother had mentioned. And this also made Lei Yu understand why Nami served him so whole heartedly.

Nami's parents had passed away a long time ago. Back then, the couple worked together in the same hotel. Nami's mother was eventually noticed by a manager who made continued sexual advances. The stress and pressure her mother received eventually lead her to jump off a building to commit suicide. As for her father, he found out the cause and went after the manager. Unfortunately, her father could not take him on because the manager wasn't an ordinary person. Thus, Nami's parents passed away. It was only a few years ago that Nami's

grandmother told her the story regarding her parents. Nami had inherited her mother's beauty, becoming lovely and attractive. She found the hotel including the murderer who killed her parents, but didn't get any chances to make her move. Lei Yu's unintentional appearance killed the murderer that Nami was unable to take on.

“So this was the reason you've been willing to follow me around?” Lei Yu drove the car in the direction of the hotel.

“I'm sorry young master, for keeping this from you.”

“It's not a problem; all bastards should receive their punishment. Although I'm not the jury, but the

least I can do is becoming the executioner. It's pretty much the same purpose on why I'm here in the Kou country.

Cui Ying Ying was sitting in Lei Yu's room, drumming her cheeks. "Where did you two go off to enjoy your time? Leaving me to attend the celebratory dinner while you guys didn't show up."

"Ying Ying, don't be angry, we went to see Nami's grandmother." Smiled Lei Yu.

"Whatever, I'm not saying anything more. I drank a little too much tonight so I'm heading to sleep, construction will re-open tomorrow so I have to go there a bit early. If you have nothing to do tomorrow,

go look at the house. I told them to send two interior designers there tomorrow so go meet with them. Design the house according to your own tastes so it will look better.” Cui Ying Ying yawned, forcefully stretched a bit before going back to her room.

Everything seemed to be going in accordance with the original plan; the construction successfully started; Meng Yu Corporation fulfilled Lei Yu’s commitment, they organized several momentous solo concerts. And some of these concerts even had the sponsorship of government officials. The artists under Lei Yu started creating their most glorious time of their careers; the amount of brands wanting representation and movie roles to

star in were in a simply horrifying degree.

Properties being organized and sold before they were even built were already against the rules. But within this huge project, no one dared to intervene anymore, especially when the people of the Kou country were attaching great importance to its completion. The Yamaguchi-gumi was unable to find any more legitimate ways to interfere with it so they had to start thinking of underhanded methods.

Lei Yu's daily schedule was very disciplined so to find some hole to exploit wasn't that easy.

"Take this; you should know what to do with it." Hasegawa gave a

bottle of transparent liquid to a familiar face. And this familiar face was none other than the bastard that forced Fang Yi Ke to commit suicide – Otsuka.

A few days later, work had started inside the ocean side villa. Lei Yu nodded his head in satisfaction, then, Nami's phone started ringing. Picking up the phone, Nami's face suddenly became serious. But since the carpentry just started and the noise was too loud, Lei Yu did not pay attention to Nami. A few minutes later, Nami put on a calm face and said: "Young master, wait for me here, I'm just heading out for a bit and will be back soon."

Lei Yu nodded his head unconcerned. Nami then rapidly

drove to the location she was directed to over the phone.

In the yard of an abandoned high school, a middle-aged man sat beside a flower bed. Nami parked her car outside the school and went inside.

“Where’s my grandmother? Why did you guys capture her?!” Nami looked very nervous because her grandmother was the only family she had left, how could she not worry about it?

The middle-aged man stood up and looked up and down at Nami’s body. Trying not to drool, “it’s really hard to resist your tempting body... I really don’t understand, is there something wrong with Lei Yu’s

sexual orientation? He's surrounded by beauties and doesn't even sample them; he only then regrets it after they've been raped. I think there's something really wrong with him."

"Shut your mouth! I won't tolerate you insulting him!" Nami clenched her fists. Even if she's not strong, it appears her current emotions were even more heated than before.

"Your heart aches? It will hurt even more soon." The middle-aged man sneered and asked: "Do you want to save your grandmother?"

"What did you do to my grandmother?"

"Take this!" The middle-aged man



took a bottle of transparent liquid from his pocket and handed it to Nami. “Put this inside Lei Yu’s food or his drinks. If you want your grandmother safe and sound, then follow my directions. Or else, you won’t even get to see your grandmother’s intact corpse. I will put her in a snake pit and let the poisonous snakes feast on her until only bones are left.”

Nami’s eyes were filled with fear, so much fear that should not accept this was happening. She grew up with only her grandmother; she never thought that something like this would actually happen today. How could such a fragile girl handle this type of incident?

On one side is her only family

member and the other side was her benefactor. And Nami's heart was already captured and thoroughly subdued by this man. Being put in such a dilemma, there was no way her heart could choose what to do.

"It's time for you to go. If you want your grandmother safe and sound, just follow my directions or you'll regret it for the rest of your life!"

The middle-aged man's voice became soft and eerie. When Nami heard it, it sounded like a demon was extending out his terrible claws about to grab her.

With a lifeless face, Nami returned to the oceanside villa where Lei Yu was. Seeing Nami looking a bit strange, Lei Yu asked with concern: "What's wrong? What happened to

you?”

“Ah, nothing, nothing’s wrong!”  
Replied Nami as if she was in a  
trance.

“Let’s go, you’re probably tired, we’ll  
return to the hotel.”

Nami nodded and the two left.  
These few days, Cui Ying Ying left  
early and came back late. Being  
extremely busy, she rarely had a  
chance to see Lei Yu due to taking  
care of everything since he wouldn’t  
be able to help her much anyway.  
Wanting to become a career  
woman, this was Cui Ying Ying’s  
other goal in life besides from  
finding her true love. And because  
she was extremely busy, little did  
she know that a terrible situation

was about to take center stage.

# Chapter 94: Please Forgive Me

Holding onto some tea she just brewed, Nami's hands were trembling. Her heart was in a constant struggle, "what should I do? Young master... I don't want to harm the young master, but my grandma is in their hands. If I don't comply with their demands, she will definitely become a pile of bones. What should I do? What should I do?"

"Nami!" Lei Yu's voice came from the bedroom, "I'm thirsty, please bring me a cup of tea!"

"Ah! Okay! Coming!" Swallowing

forcefully, Nami focused on holding back the tears that was about to drip down; her footsteps slowly approaching Lei Yu's bedroom.

"Young... young master, your... your tea." Nami's hands were trembling and Lei Yu noticed this. He asked with concern: "Are you okay? Your emotions have been strange the entire day today. Did something happen? Tell me and I might be able to help you. Did something happen to your grandmother?"

"Young master!" Nami left the teacup on the TV stand and pounced into Lei Yu's embrace. She could not hold back the tears anymore before it gushed out.

"Young master, I'm sorry! I'm sorry! Young master, I'm really sorry!"

Being scared by the sudden change, Lei Yu felt somewhat confused. Gently stroking Nami's back, "tell me what happened, don't cry."

"Young master, I'm sorry, I'm really sorry!" I wanted to save grandma, but... but I can't harm you, I can't bring myself to do it! I'd rather die than you or my grandma getting hurt!"

Hearing this, Lei Yu knew something was not right. He forcefully pushed Nami away from his embrace and grabbed onto her shoulders before asking in a hurried manner: "What happened? Tell me immediately!"

"Young master, young master..." Nami tried to hold back her

sobbing. Tears were gathering on her chin and the look she had made ones' heartache.

“Quickly tell me! What on earth happened?”

Once again trying to stop her sobbing, Nami responded in a trembling voice: “Someone captured my grandma. They gave me a vial of something and wanted me to put it into either your drink or your food. If I don't do this, they will kill my grandma, I don't have a choice! I don't have a choice young master, I'm sorry, I'm sorry!”

Lei Yu gasped and pointed at the teacup sitting on the TV stand, “you're talking about that?”



Nami nodded her head, eyes full of guilt. “Young master, what should I do? What on earth should I do?”

Lei Yu took two steps back and breathed out deeply. “Who are those people?”

“There was only one person that approached me, a middle-aged man...”

Listening to Nami’s description of the man, the person was exactly the same as Otsuka. Confirming this point, Lei Yu’s eyes became bloodshot. “Otsuka! You are indeed a f\*cking bastard!”

Forcing little Ke to her death, and now he wanted to kill me. He even captured Nami’s only family, this

type of underhanded move made Lei Yu completely fall apart. “Did he tell you how you would contact him after the deed was done?”

“He wants me to contact him by phone. He said when the deed was done; he will then release my grandma.” Nami took out a piece of paper from her pocket; a series of numbers were written on it that should be a phone number.

“Call that number for me right now and tell them you’ve done what they’ve asked you to. Tell them to immediately release your grandmother.”

Nami took out her phone and dialed the numbers. “I’ve done what you’ve instructed me to do, please

release my grandma!”

“Really?” At the other end of the line, a voice filled with doubt was heard. Nami looked nervously at Lei Yu and saw him nod his head. Nami then said: “It’s true; I’ve done what you’ve instructed me to do. I’m currently outside and the young master is in his bedroom. I’m too afraid to go inside and I’m not sure what’s going on in there!”

“Good, very good. Come alone back to the abandoned school we met earlier at. In the third floor of the school building, the most middle classroom, your grandmother and I will be waiting there.” The phone hung up and Lei Yu naturally heard the voice on the other end of the line. It was definitely Otsuka, there

wasn't any doubt. A deep fire of hatred erupted in Lei Yu's chest; grabbing Nami's hand, they both rushed downstairs.

A lone Mercedes-Benz roadster was driving in the middle of the night with a rather cool and sophisticated look. The good looking guy and the gorgeous girl inside the car was not something people should envy right now; the atmosphere about them was rather tense. Lei Yu heavily exhaled, "Nami, I will help you save your grandmother. But once this ordeal ends, us two will go our separate ways. We will no longer have any type of relationship."

Tears gushed out of Nami's eyes. While crying, "No! Young master, please forgive me! I beg you to

forgive me!”

“I’m not blaming you for poisoning my drink, but I’m blaming you for not trusting me. After this incident happened to you, you never came forth to tell me the truth the first chance you got. You’ve really disappointed me!” Lei Yu’s heart was actually aching. Nami was the first person that Lei Yu got to know when he arrived in the Kou country. She was also the only Kou person he cared about. In Lei Yu’s heart, he had bad impressions of all the Kou people. Even though he has accumulated a lot of reputation here, he was reluctant to get to know anyone. Yet he always kept Nami by his side since he had some feelings for her. But what happened today made him completely lose his

trust in Nami. This trust was supposed to be mutual, but Nami's actions had deeply disappointed him.

“Young master! I was wrong! Young master, please forgive me! Young master, don't...!”

There was no emotion on Lei Yu's face. He tightened his hand on the steering wheel. “There's no need for words anymore! I don't want to hear your excuses!”

Because this was nighttime, one could not see the minute expressions of Lei Yu. As they drove by a street light, one could see a slight glitter in the corner of his eyes, but Nami was unable to see this. In actuality, Lei Yu's heart was

in pain, but he couldn't bring himself to leave a person by his side that did not trust him. This was a time bomb; this bomb may go off at any given time. What would happen in the future? No one can tell. Lei Yu did not dare to risk it. Maybe deep inside him, his racist attitude towards the Kou people was the cause of this. If this were to happen to Ai Er, or even Cui Ying Ying, he may not mind it as much as now. But this happened to Nami whom he just recently met.

Nami's heart was completely shattered. She never thought her hesitation would cause such an outcome. She should have known that young master was not an ordinary person. If she was forthright with everything in the

first place, then this would not have happened. Maybe Lei Yu would have found a solution a long time ago, but everything was too late now. Seeing Lei Yu's resolute expression, Nami squeezed the vial of leftover liquid inside her pocket.



# Chapter 95: Pay With Your Life

The car was going pretty fast and the hair of the two blowing in the wind looked quite elegant. The whistling of the wind rapidly rushing by could be heard, and it happened to dry the teary eyes of them two.

They were getting closer to the so called abandoned school. Lei Yu stopped the car on a side street about 1 kilometer from the school. Sighing softly, “go ahead, I will follow from behind.”

Nami didn't say anything, the only thing she was feeling right now was

endless regret towards Lei Yu. But her grandmother still had to be rescued which was an undeniable fact.

Nami drove off in the car while Lei Yu started moving his body in a rapid manner along the grassy side of the road. He was like a phantom gliding through the darkness, creating a black blur of after images.

Lei Yu's speed was extremely fast; his speed with Nami's car was pretty much comparable. And this running speed wasn't even Lei Yu's top speed.

The third floor classroom in the abandoned school had no lights on, but outside one of the classrooms,

there were two shadows staring intently at a car approaching the school.

“Official Otsuka, that miss is approaching.” Said one of the shadows into the classroom.

“Ask her for the details. If she really did what we’ve instructed, you can let her grandmother go. As for this little girl, you guys can enjoy her however you want to, but don’t take her life.” Otsuka’s fear of Lei Yu had become somewhat of a habit. If Nami did not follow their instructions, it’s likely they’ve brought a reaper of death onto them. But he did make some preparations; several of the super experts that followed Hasegawa around were here as well. They

were all hidden though and did not show themselves, they were only in place for emergency situations.

Nami pushed open the rusty main door and walked in at a heavy pace. Slowly walking in, she went towards the place Otsuka mentioned which was the classroom area.

A girl walking around at night, especially inside a school that had been abandoned for many years, it's inevitable she would be scared. But this was for her grandmother so she could only suck it up.

Walking up the stair one step at a time, Nami felt that someone was behind her watching. She unconsciously tightened her open collar to hide her seductively

exposed area.

Having already passed the fourth [Energy Suppression] stage, Lei Yu was able to detect all living essences at a certain area, but this was limited by distance. A good thing about the [Energy Suppression] stage was that he could hide his own presence. As long as the other people were not too much stronger than Lei Yu, they would be unable to detect him. Quietly, he jumped over the wall of the school and went towards the building Nami was located in.

Nami arrived at the third floor classrooms and two people approached her at a fast pace. Biting the bullet, Nami strode forth to meet them.

“Where’s my grandma? Didn’t you guys say that as long as I did as you instructed, you will release my grandma?” With her red teary eyes, Nami cried out pretending to be bold. In actuality, her two legs were trembling beyond her control. But because it was nighttime and there weren’t any lights around, no one would notice her trembling.

“Miss, did you come alone?” The two looked all over but did not find the presence of another person yet they still asked as a precaution.

Nami was already feeling guilty, so she couldn’t help being startled by being asked that question. She did react quickly and say: “I came alone, where’s my grandma? I want to see her!”

Once again looking around everywhere, they acknowledged Nami's response. The facial expression of the two changed to something savage, "Miss, play with us for a bit and we'll let your grandmother go, how about it?"

"Don't come near me!" Nami started backing away, but her speed was not as fast as the two beasts in front of her. They got closer and closer and at this time, a black shadow was climbing the side of the school building. This black shadow was carefully examining one of the classroom's situation and there were indeed two people inside; one was Nami's grandmother and the other was a person that made Lei Yu crazy with hatred – Otsuka.

Hearing Nami's scream, Lei Yu knew it was time to act. Focusing his power into one hand, his fingers penetrated into the wall. With a flip, Lei Yu beautifully dived through the glass window feet first and entered into the classroom.

Otsuka who was previously enjoying the conversation going on outside was suddenly startled by the loud noise. When he saw who had arrived, he was immediately dumbfounded. There was no time for him to react, Lei Yu used his monstrous speed and had arrived next to him. A palm strike was thrown to Otsuka's left chest area; and this palm strike was surrounded by a purple light. Suddenly, Otsuka's body flew off from the impact; his body had not



even landed yet and intolerable pain was felt. A mouthful of blood sprayed out.

“Smash!”

Otsuka's body landed on an already decaying desk; splinters of wood went flying throughout the room. The two outside had to give up Nami who were already in their clutches, they finally responded to the noise rushing into the classroom.

“Pak pak pak pak!”

The continuous crisp four sounds were heard. The two didn't even have time to react and were both instantly killed by Lei Yu's palm strikes that contained his power of

lightning; they didn't even have time to close their eyes before their death. The two toppled onto the ground. Lei Yu took a look outside the classroom before saying: "Come in, your grandmother is here."

Lei Yu was standing by the doorway watching Otsuka on the ground gasping for air; his eyes filled with chilled emotions. Nami had finally arrived in front of her grandmother. Because of suffering excessive shock, her grandmother was unconscious but there weren't any life threatening issues.

Lei Yu's eyes never left Otsuka. He then said in a cold tone: "Take your grandmother to the hospital, there's something I still need to get rid of."

“Young master, you..!”

“Go!” Lei Yu cried out in a rage. Seeing Otsuka was like seeing his greatest enemy, his emotions became completely out of control.

Lei Yu’s hatred towards Otsuka was probably a bit more than when Nagasaka raped little Ke. The reason being this bastard was present when he saw little Ke commit suicide, so how could Lei Yu not be in a complete rage? Just before her death, little Ke still had to endure the ravages from a couple of assholes; Lei Yu’s heart was almost completely shattered.

If it weren’t for being abducted while under extreme emotional stress, little Ke would not see things

that bleak so the latter things would not have happened. If he were to find the root cause of this, then it would have to be the bastard Otsuka in front of him.

Nami's small body had to support the even skinnier and fragile grandmother, her eyes staring at Lei Yu's face for a long time. She eventually left because she knew that she couldn't help with anything by staying, and she wasn't sure of her grandmother's health status. With multiple reasons, Nami could not help but to leave.

Fortunately, no one had interfered with Nami leaving. This included the four experts in hiding; they had no interest in Nami whatsoever. Their true target was Lei Yu, the

person that was responsible for Yamaguchi-gumi's severe losses in the Tenglong country.

Nami slowly drove away. Lei Yu's bloodshot eyes were staring at Otsuka who was struggling with his pain. Lei Yu started moving, his footsteps slowly going forward. In the eyes of Otsuka, death was slowly approaching him one step at a time, making his heart want to jump out of his throat.

“Pay with your life!”

# Chapter 96: Fire Shadow Ninja

The rage in Lei Yu's voice could be heard, and at this time, the hidden presences started rapidly hurtling themselves towards the building with the classrooms. With Lei Yu's quick reaction, he started circulating his internal energy in his Sea of Energy area, then formed a trace of energy leading towards an unused meridian point. Lei Yu did this because he felt a sense of apprehension. The strength of the four rapidly approaching people weren't weak, if he couldn't handle them; at least escaping was not an issue.

According to the degree of life aura those approaching were giving off, Lei Yu determined that amongst the four of them; three of them had the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior; and one of them had reached the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior – this warrior's strength was equivalent to Nuo Yi Long. Lei Yu could not help gasping in the cool air; three Shadow Ninjas and one Fire Shadow Ninja. What should he do now?

Very quickly, Lei Yu focused his attention on Otsuka. Even if he can't beat the four approaching ninjas, at least he could take this bastard's life to avenge little Ke! Thinking up to this point, Lei Yu rushed towards Otsuka without a trace of hesitation.

Leaping into the air, Lei Yu did a somersault and came down, his actions causing ripples of air twisting around his body. Otsuka's eyes showed that he was watching something like a Grim Reaper swinging his scythe for the kill, his body trembling non-stop. His eyes were filled with terror and looking at Lei Yu was like seeing the Reaper himself.

All the hatred and rage Lei Yu had suppressed in his heart was instantly released. Even though the burst of emotions were at his max, he was not that naive to use all his strength because he will be meeting a tough fight later on.

The ripples of air carried lines of purple lightning as it neared



Otsuka. Watching as the strike was about to land on his body, with only an arm's length away, a black shadow suddenly appeared between the two of them.

“BANG!”

Lei Yu's attack was dispersed into the surrounding area, disappearing without a trace. And the black shadow that had received the attack had instantly disappeared as well.

Lei Yu opened his eyes wide in shock; he never thought that a Fire Shadow Ninja could be this strong. His real body was not even there yet but he was able to use his ninjutsu to create a clone to appear beforehand, this made Lei Yu pay more attention into what he was

doing.

Lei Yu tightened his fists; he was still not strong enough. Seeing the bastard in front of him being saved when he was about to be killed, Lei Yu was unwilling to accept that. If he missed this opportunity, then wanting to find him in the future would be much harder. At least Lei Yu understood that if Otsuka returned to the Yamaguchi Island, he doesn't have faith to successfully infiltrate it. Who knew how many dirty secrets the island held within it?

In a moment's reflection, the four people had already appeared in front of Lei Yu. The group consisted of two tall and two short people; the black ninja uniforms they wore

were slightly different than what Lei Yu was used to. They did not have a black ninja mask on and the four people's hair were all half an inch short. Although the appearance of these four ninjas were not what Lei Yu had imagined, he couldn't ignore that amongst them four, one of them he had to be extra careful of; and that was the short guy standing at the utmost left side whom had already reached the late stage of a Fire Shadow Ninja. If we were to compare their strength, we could say he was on the same level as Lei Yu, but can we really say this was the case in a fight?

Although Lei Yu didn't know how the methods he cultivated in had appeared inside his mind, he did

however gain valuable insights at each new stage and gain different abilities. And it was because of all of this that made Lei Yu understand that those on the same level as him weren't necessary his opponent. An example was that he was only at the early stage of [Discharge] and was able to fight with Nuo Yi Long and only lose at a slight disadvantage with mutual destruction of both parties. This example proved a point that his cultivating method had an advantage, and Lei Yu can't be sure how big of an advantage he possesses.

There is one thing that cannot be changed; if they people that came today only had one Fire Shadow Ninja, then Lei Yu has a high chance of beating them. After all,

he also had reached the Fifth rank, the late stage of [Discharge]. Even if an early stage Sixth Order Warrior came, Lei Yu could probably give them a run for their money. But the current situation was different, four people had arrived. Lei Yu can guarantee that he wouldn't die here, but to kill all four ninjas was an impossible scenario.

Being the strongest person out of them all, they were naturally the person that represented the group. The short Fire Shadow Ninja knew that Lei Yu didn't understand the Kou language, so he changed to his less than fluent Tenglong language to converse with him. With difficulty: "You die here!"

Lei Yu frowned, they haven't even

fought yet and his opponent dared to blurt this out. “You guys believe you have that ability? What? You want to bully me with lots of people? It doesn’t matter; I know that’s the typical turtle move you Kou people are used to.”

The group of ninjas looked at each other. Even though they didn’t quite understand the expression of a turtle, they did understand him saying a lot of people against only him. The short guy looked at the other three and then said: “We Kou people are honorable and righteous, we will not bully you with lots of people, and we only need one of us to take your life.”

“F\*ck you motherf\*ckers, honorable and righteous? If there was even

one good person that came out of the 18 generations of your ancestors, then that would be the greatest blessing for all of mankind! Stop with the bullshit, just all come at once. Whoever approaches me first will die first!" Once Lei Yu heard their words, he was about to explode. He couldn't forget the humiliation his country suffered. Lei Yu remembered in history about the dirty bombs the Kou country had used in the past. Now the Yamaguchi-gumi wanted to use the bacterial agents to start something up again, Lei Yu's blood could not help but begin to boil up in emotions to a higher level.

The short guy didn't bother responding to Lei Yu. He looked at the ninja that was slightly taller

than the rest and nodded his head; the latter took a step forward. Lei Yu knew what his opponent had been decided, his lips slightly curved into a smile. Dealing with a Shadow Ninja with only the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior, his chance of winning just increased greatly – one less opponent means one less threat. Lei Yu lightly twisted his head and the joints around his neck made “pak pak” sounds, his eyes filled with scorn.

Shadow Ninjas relied on their speed, using their extraordinary speed to confuse their opponents as the ace up their sleeves. But wanting to compete with Lei Yu on speed? It’s like someone wielding a Reclining Moon Blade in front of



Guan Yu[1], they were asking for it!

“Perfect timing!”

His opponent's body left an afterimage in its original spot. Although the afterimage was temporary, it did prove his opponent's speed was quite fast. Lei Yu gave a shout[2] to greet the attack; after exchanging a few strikes and blocks, it was clearly seen that Lei Yu held the upper hand.

The constant flickering of figures and afterimage, then Lei Yu's body suddenly stopping surprised the ninja. He understood that if he was moving about at high speeds and to suddenly stop was impossible for him to accomplish, this was also

noticed by the other three ninjas. As for Otsuka, he had already fainted from his injuries. Although he did not get hit by Lei Yu's previous air rippling energy attack, but the lingering kinetic energy from that attack wasn't something a little Advanced Ninja like himself could handle.

Lei Yu's arms spread apart, his elbows slightly bent making it look like he was about to pounce. He then slightly squatted, borrowing the force from the floor, he explosively took off. Both his hands were already covered in a faint purple lightning net that gave people the shivers; one could even hear "chi chi" noises from it. Not given his opponent a way out, it was very obvious that Lei Yu's move was

a finishing kill strike.

-----

[1] Guan Yu is the guy from history, Romance of the Three Kingdoms who was a general under Liu Bei. It is believed that he is the person that invented the Reclining Moon Blade attaching it to a pole as his weapon. So the statement is like, you're trying to show off your basketball skills in front of LeBron James or Kevin Durant.

[2] It's a short yell or shout when performing an attack move, its purpose is to focus, get more oxygen, harmonizing energy etc.

# Chapter 97: Bound By Ninjutsu

Under the effects of his explosive attack, Lei Yu's spiritual power surged. He instantly grasped his opponent's elusive position. Lei Yu's attack was very rapid without any indication whatsoever, even the Fire Shadow Ninja had no clue how Lei Yu accomplished it.

“Ka Pak!”

The sound of bones breaking could be heard in the large classroom that only had a few desks within it. Looking intently, Lei Yu's previously spread out arms were now folded. His previous palm strike had struck

precisely at the temples of the Shadow Ninja he was fighting. There was a faint smell of cooked meat mixed in the air, his opponent's eyes were already round and protruding out of his skull; it seems like he had already lost his right to breathe.

Everything happened too fast, so fast that people weren't able to react. Lei Yu's performance already made the only Fire Shadow Ninja of the group frown. He also saw through Lei Yu's intentions; allow them to come at him one at a time so he could eliminate them one by one.

He also didn't realize Lei Yu would be this strong. A Shadow Ninja did not even have the power to fight

back, and it was a master at the late stage of being a Shadow Ninja.

With bloodshot eyes, Lei Yu had already forgotten he was still in a dangerous situation. Even though his palms were still supporting the head of the ninja who had already died, he was staring daggers at the other three.

The short guy softly muttered some Kou language, and the gazes of the three all fell upon Lei Yu; looks like they'll have to all go at once. If they kept doing a one versus one, it's possible that by the time the Fire Shadow Ninja acts, winning against Lei Yu would only become a dream.

“What? One at a time not working for you guys so you want to gang

up? What a bunch of low lives!" Lei Yu randomly shoved the body to a corner of the room and breathed out a mouthful of turbid air as he said this.

The remaining three people couldn't really understand what Lei Yu was saying, but from the look in his eyes, they could see a sign of arrogance in them. The two that were somewhat weaker couldn't help their heart skipping a beat, afraid they might end up the same as their dead companion. Because of the Yamaguchi-gumi's command, they had to bite the bullet. Fortunately they had a Fire Shadow Ninja with them, and they knew what the status of being a Fire Shadow Ninja meant. Within the Kou country, there were no more

than five people that had attained that strength, and one of them was with them.

The three stepped forward in unison, slowly getting close to Lei Yu. Lei Yu didn't say anything; his actions will speak louder than words. His body flashed and flew forward; Lei Yu, after all, had a strong and unique cultivating technique. The time his body rushed forward showed he was different from other people.

Nets of lightning rapidly condensed around his body. Also at this time, the lightning brand on his right arm started illuminating brightly, yet all of this did not cause his body to slow down one bit. His bloodshot eyes had returned to its original



color, as if he had regained his sanity and his emotions under control again. With a low growl, his body jumped to a height of about 3 meters. Lei Yu's appearance was quite terrifying and his speed had instantly doubled at this point.

His arms and legs contained a large amount of power; a piercing sound and ripples of purple energy came crashing towards the three ninjas. With cold shout, the slightly taller ninja came out ahead of the group. As a member of the Yamaguchi-gumi, he basically had no choice, but he did have a very strong ability that no one could copy – Ninjutsu Bind. Through his own will, he was able to manipulate his body into something extremely soft and flexible. This was a very strong

ability; at least amongst all the people he knew, no one was capable of it. It could be said this was something he inherited in his genes. His body instantly dropped down and then bounced up and met Lei Yu's attack without hesitation. His pair of legs were a blur, and his hands in front of his chest were rapidly forming hand seals.

A white light was formed by the hand seals; it then burst forth into the air. Immediately, the sound like the air was tearing in half was heard, but Lei Yu appeared to have not been affected by it. A piercing howl along with the terrifying purple lightning, there were no signs Lei Yu's attack was being stopped.

As Lei Yu's attack got close to the ninja that rushed ahead, a shocking scene appeared. The arms and leg of that ninja was rapidly extending, as if it was a fully nourished rattan. The extension was really quick, and adding the sudden element of change, Lei Yu's reaction hesitated a bit.

It was during this slight pause, the ninja's extending arms and legs similar to rattan, began to wrap around Lei Yu's body. As the ninja's body came into contact with Lei Yu, he suddenly trembled; it appears he felt the lightning's power. He somewhat relaxed his entrapment of Lei Yu, but then suddenly changed his tactic. All ten of his fingers interlocked together firmly; his legs formed a sickle-shape for

hooking. At this time, his entire body was almost enclosing around Lei Yu while he stared into Lei Yu's eyes. As he saw Lei Yu's lifeless eyes, he could not help looking away to another area.

“Now's the time!” Shouted the short guy. He and the other ninja then approached from the back. Lei Yu did not have a lot of combat experience, adding up everything, he only had a few duels. But his theoretical knowledge of fighting was quite good, and the training he got from Dragon Group was not for naught. Add his daily intense training, all of this combined showed his own unique way of fighting. Although his techniques had too many factors, at least it was his own. Lei Yu was not a boastful

person, but when it came to cultivating, he definitely put in more effort than others. It was this humble attitude of his along with being naturally hard-working, thus made Lei Yu's growth exceed people's expectation.

As if his entire body was bound by wire, the only thing he could move were his hands and feet. His arms and legs were bound so the amount of movement was limited. His wrists were able to move freely, but with just this, how could he resist the incoming attack of the two?

Multiple possible methods were running through Lei Yu's mind as he watched the attack from the two get closer and closer. Cold sweat was already appearing on Lei Yu's

forehead; if he were to use all his strength, he may be able to resist his opponent's attack. But he was currently bound by this guy so he had to use up a portion of his strength to resist it, thus it greatly weakened Lei Yu's defensive capability.

Although his bones have become horrifyingly strong, being able to withstand an unimaginable attack by someone the same rank as him was something Lei Yu did not want to attempt. Clenching his teeth, Lei Yu's sharp eyes fell upon the ninja binding him. Before his opponent notices anything out of the ordinary, Lei Yu focused his power on the back of his neck. Driving his head forward with those enhanced neck muscles, he viciously head

butted the forehead of the ninja  
binding him.

# Chapter 98: Disappearance Of The Young Master

“Donk!”

This move made those two rushing forward stunned for a bit. What sort of battle technique was this? Mutual destruction?

But very quickly, they understood the reasoning. The ninja that was binding Lei Yu had a flexible body so it was hard to damage him directly. But the head that is entirely composed of bones cannot have that flexibility. Lei Yu saw this point, and it indeed was effective.



With this impact, even though Lei Yu felt some pain on his forehead, the ninja facing him screamed out loud. Both his legs no longer had strength to bind Lei Yu and loosened up.

And it was during this sudden break, Lei Yu quickly leaned backwards. With a back flip, his hands supporting his body, he raised this right leg up while the left leg gained speed and strength. A superb bicycle kick struck directly at one of the incoming Shadow Ninja's chest.

“Ugh!”

A big mouthful of blood burst forth, flowing like it didn't cost any money. The blood splashed all over

his chest as he flew off from the impact, making Lei Yu look like he successfully scored a penalty kick. The ninja's body directly flew out the classroom door for at least another 5 meters before sliding down the third floor stairs.

The ninja that was head butted while trying to recover saw this scene and suddenly panicked. He tried to use his legs to hook Lei Yu again but it was too late, Lei Yu sneered while he performed a strong knee strike.

Just like feeling something shattering, Lei Yu's knees slowly withdrew from the ninja's crotch area. At the next moment, without any ability to retaliate, the ninja fell heavily to the ground with his

knees clamped together; eyeballs protruding as his hands trying to rub his crotch. The painful expression the ninja made did make Lei Yu shudder at the thought of what he did.

The Fire Shadow Ninja never imagined from having the upper hand in the situation, it would suddenly all collapse. Out of the three Shadow Ninjas, two died and one was injured. This was not something a Fire Shadow Ninja could take responsibility for; he can't let this person go no matter what! This was his only way out.

His pair of hands rapidly formed ninjutsu seals. Besides him about a meter away, a figure similar to him was rapidly condensing, from see-

through to a hazy form, a hazy form to a solid figure; finally the clone achieved a complete presence.

As Lei Yu turned back to look, he was shocked beyond words! Why was there an extra person now? Taking a closer look, two of the ninjas looked exactly the same; the short guy clearly used his ninjutsu.

“Hey shorty, you think you can beat me with these petty tricks?” Lei Yu said with disdain. In a short time, Lei Yu himself had used seemingly dirty tricks to take on three people. If he didn’t do that, his chances of winning this battle would be close to nil. He pretty much didn’t have a choice but to use this method.

Head butting, groin kicking; these

types of dirty methods wasn't something Lei Yu would dare to be seen using in normal circumstances. But since his life was on the line, as long as he can win, then it's the most optimal method. Lei Yu's mouth unconsciously cringed from this.

The short guy looked at his companion that was rolling around on the ground in pain; it was inevitable that he thought about his own jewels. If he suffered that heavy attack, his jewels will probably have exploded... he couldn't help swallowing hard. Clearing the scene from his mind, he regained his mental status for the fight. "Stop bullshitting, you'll know if I can win after we fight!"

“Ah!”

The real body and the clone both moved at the same time, the speed extremely fast. Lei Yu took one step forward and then pushed off fiercely. Interestingly, his body actually shot off backwards. At the same time, he didn't dare take his eyes off the two figures. One cannot look down on the power of experts at the Fifth Order rank, the main point was Lei Yu couldn't tell which figure was the real body and which was the clone.

Lei Yu had to do some testing. As he was propelling backwards, he passed an old desk. Lei Yu struck the desk, and pieces of broken wood immediately burst apart. Within a brief moment, Lei Yu grabbed onto

a relatively longer piece of wood. Using a bit of hand strength, he broke the piece of wood into two. In a fluid motion, Lei Yu then threw out the two pieces of wood, his target being the two short guys that looked identical to each other.

Sure enough, the short guy on the left quickly deflected the piece of wood coming towards him; while the other piece of wood did not encounter any resistance. The piece of wood completely passed through the figure of the shorty on the right.

Confirming his target, Lei Yu stopped moving backwards. Bending his leg, he reversed his direction and flew forward; the power in his hands had already been condensed to a horrifying

degree.

His target was the short guy on the left. As they got closer and closer, especially when the two were facing each other, their speeds increased more rapidly.

The lightning net had already completely wrapped around Lei Yu's fists. With a purple glint in his eyes, Lei Yu's gaze was trained on the short guy in front of him.

Close enough! Lei Yu's fist struck against the short guy's head, his fist then passing through the head without any resistance!

"What's going on?" Lei Yu was staring wide eyed. He couldn't understand when his fist struck its



target, it didn't have the feeling he imagined but just kept passing through. This... this...!

Too late, Lei Yu took too long to realize what was going on. Lei Yu only felt a chill on his back; the short guy exposed a hideous face and was holding onto a short curved blade that came out of nowhere.

“Puchi!”

“Agghh!” Lei Yu suddenly looked up and screamed. Unbearable pain was invading his back making him almost lose his consciousness. Lei Yu started trembling beyond his control, he stumbled forward a few steps while he turned around. But before his eyes could land on the

short guy, he blacked out and fell onto the ground.

-----

Nami drove her grandmother to the hospital. She was finally relieved when there weren't any life threatening injuries. Once they left the hospital, it was after Nami's repeated persuasion that her grandmother finally agreed not to go home, but to stay at a little inn for the time being. At least there would be some assurance that the ninjas could not cause any more trouble by using her grandmother.

Nami's heart was filled with concern for Lei Yu, afraid something bad may have happened to him. Embracing her courage, she

returned to the abandoned school. She was alone by herself in the cold night, especially at a school that was abandoned with unknown reasons, this type of scene Nami had watched multiple times on the TV. But Lei Yu's safety was unknown right now so no matter what, she had to go take a look.

On the third floor of the school building, the night wind was blowing against the window of a classroom causing "pak pak" sounds. Nami held back her tears as she continued forward. Once she arrived at the previous classroom, there was no one around anymore. Apart from some blood stains on the ground, some tables flipped over and damaged chairs due to a fight; there was no one inside the

room.

After calling out a few times without any responses, Nami could only leave.

Returning to the inn her grandmother was staying at, she explained some things to her before returning to the hotel. Her heart will not rest until she sees Lei Yu.

# Chapter 99:

## Horrifying Eyes

No one was inside Lei Yu's bedroom and Cui Ying Ying wasn't in the hotel either. She called both of them on her phone but it didn't go through. Nami's heart was like a little fish that had been washed ashore onto the beach, filled with helplessness and fear.

Sitting on the corner of the sofa in a daze, she had slept at this area for god knows how long now. At this time, Nami's thoughts were only filled with Lei Yu, how tall and handsome he was, how mysterious his deep profound gaze was that carried a hint of sadness within it.

“Most likely the young master left because he won’t forgive me. Young master, I’m sorry!” The more she thought about it, the more Nami’s heart ached. She was the one that did this, because she didn’t think things through, she actually committed such an absurd act. Nami’s heart felt like it was about to shatter.

Her eyes were like a layer of mist filled with regret, tears involuntarily streamed down, dripping down the white skin of her chest, and then rolling in-between her enticing cleavage. Her delicate hands slowly reached inside her pocket and held onto a vial. Nami’s heart was suddenly in turmoil, forcefully biting her lips, a trace of blood had even appeared which she didn’t

realize. Holding the vial of the leftover transparent liquid, she gently opened the cap. The thousands of thoughts running through her mind were no longer important.

If the young master was currently safe and sound, he'll most likely never forgive her. If the young master doesn't forgive her, then what's the reason to keep on living? Grandma has enough money to live comfortably for the rest of her life so she no longer has any worries.

If something bad happened to the young master, she didn't have the ability to do anything about it. If it was for the young master, even if she was in heaven she will still choose to follow him there. Sighing

deeply, Nami looked up and swallowed the contents in the vial. Tears were forming at this moment but not flowing out. Thus, Nami quietly laid down on the sofa in her usual posture to go to sleep.

It was around morning time right now when “donk donk donk” knocking sounds awakened Nami. Opening her bloodshot eyes, she was hoping everything had been a dream. As she looked around the room, she did not see Lei Yu’s figure. Finally, she realized someone was knocking on the door before she hurriedly went to get it.

“Young...”

“Has Lei Yu finished cultivating?  
Let’s go, the renovation of the



house will be ending today, we're going together to check it out." Outside the door, it was Cui Ying Ying who said this to Nami with a smile.

"The young master, he... he..." Bringing Cui Ying Ying into the room, Nami told her everything about what happened, she didn't dare to leave anything untold. If the young master had a chance and she didn't have abilities herself, then she should be getting assistance from people that do have abilities. But she still concealed the fact that she drank the vial of unknown liquid.

---

The pain on his back made Lei Yu

clench his teeth; he felt he couldn't move his body a single bit.

“Crash!”

Like a torrential rainstorm, Lei Yu's consciousness was suddenly awakened. Opening his extremely sleepy eyes, his hands and feet could not move at all and he couldn't muster any strength.

Lei Yu focused his vision ahead of him, and his emotions immediately went crazy! “F\*cker! B\*tch! Bastard!”

That's right, appearing in front of Lei Yu was the bastard he didn't get to kill earlier on – Otsuka. At this moment, Otsuka had a faint smile that looked like a grin while he stared at Lei Yu, his eyes filled with

playfulness.

“You’re awake? Come on, kill me! Come kill me now! Aren’t you supposed to be very powerful? Let me see how powerful you really are!” Otsuka swayed his head back and forth as he walked towards Lei Yu, as he uttered the words in provocation. But this provocation was completely one-sided because Lei Yu didn’t have any strength to break free with his hands and feet bound.

Carefully looking around, he noticed he was inside a small room. The furnishings inside the room were very simple; the four walls of this structure weren’t even painted, revealing the rough cement it was made out of. He was trapped

against the wall, and next to him were some horrible looking hooks hanging there. Both his hands and legs were hooked by those curved hooks, the hooks pierced into his four limbs and it was unknown how much blood he had lost already. His hands and legs were already too numb to feel any pain; he only felt a throbbing pain from the horrific wound he received on his back.

“What is this place?” Lei Yu coldly asked even though he knew there was no way to break free.

“You sure are fortunate; you get to stay on Yamaguchi Island before your death. This is a place that some people may never get to see their entire life! People that can come here are pretty much all

important personnel of the Yamaguchi-gumi. But today, a useless trash has arrived. Just wait a bit; the boss will personally see you later on!” Otsuka sneered while he lightly flicked the whip he was holding, giving off a “pak pak” sound.

Lei Yu breathed a few cycles of breath with force. He was currently rapidly thinking on what to do since he couldn't just stay trapped here waiting for his death right? But there was no way to contact anyone, wanting to contact Nuo Hu for assistance was already an impossible thing now. Even if he was able to get his hands on a phone, this place that hasn't seen the light of day in god knows how long will probably have no cell

signal. Besides, his hands and legs cannot even move so making a phone call has now become a luxury to him.

“Pak!”

A crisp sound was heard. Lei Yu unblinkingly stared at his own chest; a thin and long trail of blood was oozing out. Lei Yu lifted his head and stared at the vicious looking Otsuka.

“Didn’t you want to kill me? Thinking about this is pissing me off! Your father I, will be teaching you today what pain means so you will know what dying is better than living means!”

“Pak! Pak! Pak!” A series of crisp

sounds could be heard. Lei Yu's anger swelled up higher, he then began to struggle. But no matter how much he struggled, there was no way he could get rid of the hook restraints on his hands and legs. Due to excessive blood loss, his hands and legs no longer had any feeling, but after struggling, the blood in his body started circulating like crazy again which caused him to experience even more pain. Clenching his teeth, his eyes showing a glint of bloodthirstiness. Lei Yu looked like he wanted to peel the skin off Otsuka alive.

“Pak Pak!”

Getting slightly afraid from Lei Yu's stare, Otsuka continued striking with the whip. “Keep staring! Come

on, keep staring!” The whip in his hands had no intention of stopping. Each strike of the whip, a trail of blood would appear on Lei Yu’s body. And at this time, the lines of blood crisscrossed each other so densely that it would make a person’s heart ache from seeing it.

“Kill me! Come and kill me! Why aren’t you trying to kill me? Let me ask you, don’t you feel bad for your girlfriend? Doesn’t it hurt to know she was raped? I’ll let you know, your father I, also mounted her. Tsk tsk, it was wonderful! It was fantastic!” With these words, Otsuka’s eyes narrowed showing a face filled with pleasure. He then said: “I’ve already sent people to capture the two girls that are always following around you. Your



father I, will play with them right in front of you; let's see what you're going to do about it!"

Otsuka's eyes suddenly opened wide. Once he saw Lei Yu's eyes, he couldn't help taking a few steps back. Otsuka's eyes were filled with fear, "what... what... what's going on here?"

# Chapter 100:

## Berserk State Again

Lei Yu's face had become emotionless, and the brand on his right arm had started changing from its original color to another – that would be green. At the same time, the color of his eyes no longer looked like what humans were supposed to have; the green color had completely taken over it. Lei Yu's lips formed a sneer revealing a row of white teeth. If one were to say which part of his body was the most attractive, it would be his set of teeth.

With green eyes and messy hair, his body was filled with wounds and his

arms and legs pierced by metal hooks. Add all that together with his emotionless face; it was if Otsuka was staring at a demon in front of him. Having been back from the brink of death several times, Otsuka suddenly had that same feeling again.

But this time, it felt like he had no chance of surviving. Inside the small room, there was only him and Lei Yu. Lei Yu was no longer in control of his conscious, with such a disciplined mind, this power was able to break past that and control his mind, thus we can see how powerful and terrifying this power was.

Lei Yu gently raised his hand, not caring the steel hook was

restraining his limbs. With such a simple act, he was able to break free of the restraints. One step at a time, he neared Otsuka.

With snot dripping out of his nose, Otsuka had already gone crazy. He just couldn't understand what on earth was going on? How could Lei Yu who was unable to fight back moments ago suddenly become like this?

If he had known the truth, he would definitely be filled with regret; regret for saying those words moments ago. If he were to only whip Lei Yu, then the berserk state may not appear. Unfortunately, he poked at the most painful wound in Lei Yu's heart which was the key that made him lose control of his

consciousness.

Wanting to run away, but he found Lei Yu's body had already blocked the door out of the room. Otsuka panicked, completely panicked; his dog like demeanor once again revealed itself: "I'm sorry sir, please spare my pathetic life! I... I... I'm now releasing you! Is that okay? I beg you to treat me as nothing more than a fart and let it go!"

Not mentioning that Lei Yu couldn't hear him, even if he did, with Lei Yu's personality, what he despised the most were these people that could throw away their pride like this to save themselves. There's no way he would let him go.

The bloodthirsty green eyes were

staring at Otsuka's chest. As Otsuka looked down at his own chest to see what Lei Yu was staring at. Lei Yu's hand moved instantaneously which already penetrated into Otsuka's chest.

“Puchi!”

Fresh blood was spraying out like a fountain. Otsuka's eyes were wide and round, he couldn't believe he was going to die like this. He couldn't believe that he, an Advanced Ninja, was worth less than a piece of dog shit compared to Lei Yu's power. Just like this, the person that Lei Yu hated the most died. It was a pity that Lei Yu killed him under such conditions, since his own conscious would not know something like this happened.

Lei Yu was screaming like crazy from the splitting headache, both his hands were cradling his head, howling into the sky, sorrow contained within his voice. The sadness and resentment in his voice sounded like it had been buried for over a thousand years. The green color in Lei Yu's eyes suddenly swelled up, he spun around and struck the door with a palm strike.

With an explosive sound, the solid wooden door shattered into tiny wood splinters, not a solid piece of wood could be found. Lei Yu then strolled out through the doorway.

Because of that loud howling, people outside naturally heard it. They wanted to rush in to see what had happened. Three Fire Shadow

Ninjas swiftly dashed over, but once they saw Lei Yu, they became dumbfounded. One of them with a slightly quicker reaction immediately took out their walkie talkie, screamed some things into it before taking a fighting stance.

The three of them had rapidly completed a series of hand seals, but these actions to Lei Yu were considered as nothing. Especially since whatever was wearing Lei Yu's skin right now did not have Lei Yu's knowledge and thoughts.

With a hand sweep, his fingers that had inadvertently brushed upon the brick wall immediately pulverized the areas he touched. With the green energy as a supplement, it formed a terrifying beam of light,



and this beam of light also contained Lei Yu's mysterious lightning energy. The three ninjas in front of him did not even have time to react before their charred blackened bodies toppled to the ground.

One step at a time, Lei Yu walked outside. Suddenly looking like he realized something, his mind slightly trembled; the splitting pain in his head once again touched upon his nerves.

“Agghh!”

“Agghh!”

Lei Yu started throwing out punches all around non-stop, causing waves of air ripples

everywhere. Wherever the energy-filled air ripples traveled past, everything was demolished in its path, spreading a scorched smell into the atmosphere.

At a distance away, many wanted to rush forth but stopped their advance. Advancing forward would mean to rush to their own deaths right? This included the head boss of the Yamaguchi-gumi, Hasegawa. He too hesitated from advancing as he saw the powerful energy Lei Yu was releasing; he did not dare to get close. Although he was considered a divine legendary ninja, achieving the peak level of an Ultimate Ninja, but when facing Lei Yu's current state, fear actually manifested in his heart.

“You two, go restrain him!” Once that command was made, two people on the side looked at each other. So the boss was basically telling them to seek their own deaths? Yet do they dare to not follow the command to do so? Cautiously and carefully, the edged closer towards Lei Yu.

The swinging of Lei Yu’s fists did not stop; the waves of air ripples containing a lightning net had an effective attack range. The two timed the attacks, just as the air ripples dissipated, they rushed towards Lei Yu. Thinking they could grab a hold onto him, yet who knew the instant those two Shadow Ninja’s got close to Lei Yu, they only felt their bones go numb. The next moment, they couldn’t see

anything. Little did they know, their thoughts were still lingering but their heads had already exploded like a watermelon from Lei Yu's slap.

Everyone could not help but gasp. Was Lei Yu still human? He was basically a demon! The thirty to forty people gathered here did not dare to take a step forward, afraid that even one step and they would end up like those two, having their heads shattered like a watermelon.

This scene was deadlocked as such, and Hasegawa did not dare to send his other underlings to their deaths. In the Kou country, the number of ninjas was too scarce, yet under Lei Yu's hands, at least ten plus lives of ninjas have been taken.

Hasegawa could tell that Lei Yu seemed to be in a berserk state, completely not conscious of his actions. Releasing such a force from the body, it should eventually deplete itself, thus making a move after would be the best strategy.

In another part of the Kou country, Nami told Cui Ying Ying everything of what happened. The latter immediately contacted people in Tenglong country including Nuo Hu and Liu Hao, and other trustworthy individuals. In order to prevent Ai Er from getting worried, Cui Ying Ying told those people not to spread this information out.

Taking a flight, Liu Hao, Nuo Hu, Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng, Hu Li who had once fought with Lei Yu

in Dragon Team, and finally  
Instructor Fan Hong Chang all  
rushed over.

# Chapter 101: Huge Water Beast

After exchanging simple greetings with Cui Ying Ying, the group of people rushed towards the main government administration building of the Kou country and met with the leader of the Kou country. Once the Prime Minister heard what happened, he was in a state of shock. As a Deputy Commander of an elite army in Tenglong country, as well as being the second young master of the Lei family, if something were to happen to him in the Kou country, the seriousness of this matter would be beyond their imagination. Not

mentioning being the Deputy Commander of Dragon Group was already too much for them to handle, if the Lei Family wanted to initiate a series of attacks on the Kou country, the devastation that would cause was something they could not handle at all.

Quickly gathering his cabinet members for a discussion, they decided on sending people to the Yamaguchi Island for negotiations, seeing if Lei Yu was dead or alive. Of course, they wished Lei Yu was safe and sound; otherwise, the Kou country would suffer an unprecedented catastrophe.

The person they were going to dispatch for negotiations would be of eminent level status. The



Ultimate Ninja that was working on behalf of the government, this strong figure in the Kou country only had to stomp his foot down and tremors would be felt at the seas surrounding the country.

These series of the events rapidly took place but the people from Lei Yu's location couldn't wait that long. Lei Yu was similar to a monster with endless energy, throwing out attacks through the air couldn't satisfy him any longer, he started heading towards the people. And upon this little island, a comedic game of an old eagle try to catch little chickens was underway.

Those that could run, ran; those that could hide, hid. Those that couldn't run away fast enough were

torn to pieces by Lei Yu.

Seeing each of his underlings slowly being killed by Lei Yu, Hasegawa finally made a move from anger. Condensing his unique ability, he rapidly formed a series of hand seals. Already well versed in ninjutsu at an unfathomable deep level, he summoned an unnamed water beast from the sea.

Its height reaching about ten meters, with blue eyes and horrifyingly sharp fanged teeth with dripping ooze on it, that made one want to vomit from its sight. Four limbs of sharp claws grew at its lower abdomen, and on its back were gills that were natural to aquatic creatures.

The emergence of such a large monster comforted many ninjas. They knew their boss raised an unknown creature, and they only knew at times, people would be assigned to drop off raw meat into a certain area of the sea. Each time they would drop off at least one ton of meat, and now they finally knew that they have been feeding such a monster.

At this time, it appears that the unknown creature moved according to Hasegawa's thoughts. With its four claws on the ground, it strode closer to Lei Yu one step at a time. Without understanding the situation, Lei Yu rushed towards the monster.

“Ooowwww!” Howled the monster

into the sky.

This howl that pierced one's heart and lungs made Lei Yu's consciousness hesitate. Right after, the monster's tail swept towards Lei Yu.

“Bang!”

Lei Yu was struck and his body flew off sideways before smashing into the trunk of a large tree. Then, he stood back up as if nothing happened, like he didn't feel any pain at all.

To suffer such punishment, one would wonder how much pain Lei Yu would be in when he recovers his consciousness? These are merely words for later on; the current issue

is whether Lei Yu can get past this obstacle. Taking a closer look, the monster's entire body was covered in fish-like scales, so there's no doubt that these fish scales had some defensive properties to them.

Hasegawa knew that he, himself, could not take on this monster, not to mention Lei Yu whom had only reached the late stage of a Fifth Order Warrior. But was Lei Yu really going to be subdued by this monster? The answer is no.

The green energy inside Lei Yu was continuously circulating. The original purple internal energy inside his body had been completely taken over by the green energy. The only place with Lei Yu's own internal energy was inside his

dantian's Sea of Energy acupoint. And this internal energy was Lei Yu's essence, if even this was missing, Lei Yu would lose his ability to recover his consciousness. But it looks like this green energy is merely trying to protect him at all costs.

Facing the huge monster, Lei Yu dashed forward. With his emotionless green eyes, he stared at the huge monster like he was staring at a dead corpse. The monster was somewhat frightened of Lei Yu, causing it to hesitate. Lei Yu had already reached the monster and grabbed onto one of its claws. No matter what aquatic life form, they all had a certain characteristic: They were afraid of electricity. Of course those marine life that could

give off electricity themselves were exempt, such as the electric eels of the Amazon waters. But it was quite obvious that this monster in front wasn't one of the exemptions.

The green energy mixed with the strong electrical current slowly climbed up through the monster's claw. This powerful shock could be described as horrifying, there's no one that could endure it including this huge monster. The ten meter tall body started quivering and a smell started drifting into the air. If people could smell it, their initial reaction would be summed up in two words: "Smells good!"

Heartache; Hasegawa felt like his heart was bleeding. This was his ten plus years of effort, was it going to

be ruined by this brat? In order to delve into the essence of summoning ninjutsu, Hasegawa lost count of how many methods he had attempted. He could now finally control the thoughts of a living creature, especially when it was a powerful water beast, but now it was being grilled alive by Lei Yu into a delicious dish.

Due to the strong electrical current, the monster was finally unable to bear with it anymore and toppled over. Due to Lei Yu's release of power was too strong, he was completely drained empty of internal energy. The green energy also inconspicuously left a strand of weak energy in his heart. As for Lei Yu, the brand on his right arm was restored to its original color. His



green eyes that terrified people subsided reverting back to its dark brown and white color. At the same time, Lei Yu became conscious.

But the Lei Yu who had recovered his conscious did not have the strength to support his own body anymore. “Bang!” He fell on top of the monster’s body while panting for air.

Hasegawa’s vicious eyes were staring at Lei Yu as if he wanted to swallow Lei Yu alive. “My countless years of effort have been destroyed by you! Go to hell!”

Knowing that Lei Yu’s strength had already dissipated, Hasegawa had no more worries. Stepping off like an arrow, his target being Lei Yu,

this unimaginably strong bastard.

Mixed with a powerful energy, the surface of Hasegawa's body gave off a grayish black light, his fist containing an unimaginably terrifying amount of force.

Lei Yu's eyes were watching as Hasegawa got closer and closer to him. He basically didn't even have the strength to raise his head. "It's over, it's all over. Ai Er, big brother, my good disciple, goodbye. I'm really tired; I don't have the strength to continue fighting."

Lei Yu suddenly felt his will starting to get weaker. Hasegawa's approaching fist was distorting the air, bringing forth a burst of wind that blew his hair back. Lei Yu

smiled, his subconscious mind told him that he personally killed Otsuka. The only anguish in his heart was that he has still not seen his own mother; he wasn't able to avenge his grandfather; he wasn't able to live happily ever after with Ai Er. But Lei Yu did not regret what he had done for these were considered responsibilities; this was the spirit of a hot blooded youngster.

“Hong!”

“Crack!”

With a large combined scream, a piercing cry came from a distance on the island, “DON'T!”

Cui Ying Ying, Nami, Nuo Hu, Liu

Hao, and Nuo Yi Long rushed over like they were crazy. But it was too late already, Lei Yu's eyes closed. One could see a deep wound on his head, deep enough to take his life.

“Lei Yu!”

“Little Yu!”

“No! Master! Noooooo!”

# Chapter 102: He's Not Dead Yet

Hasegawa and used all his strength, he could guarantee Lei Yu's death was certain without any chance of survival. Looking at the surrounding people in sorrow, Hasegawa coldly humphed. Waving his hand, the rest of the ninjas prepared to get rid of these several people.

"Impudence!" A shout resounded through the sky. Everyone's gaze looked off into a distance, and an elderly person was observed vigorously approaching their position.

“Impudent thing! Let’s see how you deal with the consequences!”

“Grand... grandmaster?”

Hasegawa blinked his eyes; he never thought that the person who has secluded himself from the affairs of the world, an eminent level figure would appear here today.

“Lei Yu’s death, do you know what it would do to the Kou country? From all the havoc you have wreaked inside the Kou country, I can still let you go. But the death of Lei Yu will make our Kou country the enemy of the Tenglong country! The financial strength of the Lei family can overwhelm our Kou country’s economy, and the experts

of Martial Sect are sufficient to flatten our Kou country! You've messed up big time!"

Nobody could understand what the two were conversing about, but everyone knew this was the Kou country's issues. Right now, they were only grieving over Lei Yu's body so no one cared what the two were talking about. But there was one thing that was for certain, no matter what, they will not let Hasegawa off.

"But..."

"No matter what, the country will not let you off easily. Even though you're my student, but there's no way I can help you. Go, give up everything here and leave!"

“Grandmaster, are you kidding with me? I’ve only killed a single person while he killed countless of our ninjas!” Hasegawa was showing a rare emotional outburst. The Yamaguchi-gumi was single-handedly built up by him, if it was a single Lei Yu that caused him to give up everything, of course he was unwilling.

“If you wait until the Tenglong people come here to settle the score with you, even if you have a few Hasegawa’s here, your death would still be inevitable! Hasn’t your water beast already died?” The elderly person pointed at the monster lying next to Lei Yu. “Even if the strength you possess now is considered at the peak, but you shouldn’t forget, anyone of the leaders of the



Tenglong country can cut you up into thousands of pieces. Moreover, Lei Yu is connected with two of the strongest forces, so just leave!”

Unwillingly, Hasegawa quietly left through the back of a mountain. The crowd that was crying in grief did not notice this, this included the hot headed and straight-forward Nuo Hu and Lei Yu’s disciple Liu Hao, they hadn’t even recovered their senses to take revenge yet. Hasegawa had already gotten on a speedboat and left the island, yet where was his destination? No one knows, but there was one thing for certain; for an ambitious person like him, he would be unwilling to live a secluded life.

Nuo Yi Long lifted up his head and

gave a long sigh. Lei Yu was someone he most valued, apart from his own son. He already treated Lei Yu as his second son, but something like this happened today which caused his heart to thoroughly pulse with rage. Looking around, he didn't see who he was looking for. He then settled his gaze on a distant elderly person and walked towards him.

“Where's Hasegawa?” Asked Nuo Yi Long as he clenched his fists.

The elderly person lightly smiled, “he already left, as for where, I do not know.”

“That bastard, he wants to leave after killing someone?” Nuo Yi Long coldly humphed. It looks like

he already figured out what to say when he returns to Tenglong country and reports to Martial Sect.

Even though in the past, Lei Yu was not particularly valued in Martial Sect, but ever since winning the duel with Cai Zhong while showcasing his own personal strength, Martial Sect saw him under a different light. A twenty something year old attaining the strength of a peak stage Fourth Order Warrior, how can people not be shocked? But one thing that a lot of people weren't clear on was that Lei Yu was already at the peak of a Fifth Order Warrior, a super expert that even Nuo Yi Long couldn't utterly defeat without suffering serious injuries. Such a strong expert and his life ended like this,

how can people not be upset? How could Martial Sect just let this go?

“Hadn’t Lei Yu also killed countless ninjas? The respect that martial cultivators in Tenglong get, you and I are both clear on. Yet ninjas in the Kou country are also a presence that is fully respected as well.

Countless lives of ninjas have been taken from my country under Lei Yu’s hand, just look at the situation here, is this not the case?” The elderly man pointed all over at the ruins of the surrounding; on top of boulders, inside bushes, and also among tree branches were corpses that had begun to darken.

Nuo Yi Feng heard the two converse and stood up. Although her eyes still had the glimmer of tears and

her eyes puffy red, but people could still not take her piercing gaze as she stared at the elderly man. She finally said: "How can you compare my Tenglong country to your Kou country? The enmity of Tenglong country against your Kou country will officially start now!" The words of Nuo Yi Feng were almost spoken through her clenched teeth, but this showed how bad her feelings were currently.

Fan Hong Chang and Hu Li were standing behind Nuo Yi Feng like they were cheering for her, each of their faces filled with vicious looks. Even if this elderly man in front of them was the Kou country's most powerful expert, but they still didn't have any sense of fear going against him.

Nuo Yi Feng's sudden outburst made the elderly man unable to answer. Frowning, he wanted to kill off everyone here, especially when he could do it effortlessly. But the problem from doing that would mean the Kou country would definitely face the danger of being annihilated. This was definitely something he couldn't be responsible for, especially for a former apprentice, it wasn't worth it to endanger the entire country.

"We should always be reasonable in dealing with things; Deputy Commander Nuo cannot be this unreasonable right?" The elderly man deeply sighed as he gave up the dumb thoughts he just had.

Nuo Yi Feng coldly humphed as she

looked back onto Lei Yu's body. Her fierce gaze had disappeared and was replaced with the unspoken love an elder had for their junior.

Nuo Yi Long was standing in front of the elderly man not saying anything. The two stared at each other for a while without making a sound.

Nuo Hu sobbed hard twice, "little Yu, why didn't you let me come help you? I know I can't help with much, but at least I am willing to die for you! You are my good brother! How could you just leave like that?" Nuo Hu's words were said in a trembling voice, making others extra sad. As he looked upon Lei Yu's body, his eyes were filled with a difficult to describe regret.

“Little Yu, your big brother apologizes to you. It has always been you helping your big brother yet I haven’t taken enough responsibility as your big brother. I’m really sorry, really sorry. Little Yu! Little Yu! What will happen to Ai Er? Ai Er is still waiting for you; you can’t just die like that!” Nuo Hu had almost lost his voice, even Hu Li who was considered a manly man could not hold back the tears from dripping down from his eyes. He could only walk up besides Nuo Hu and gently pat his shoulders.

The two girls Cui Ying Ying and Nami were already holding onto each other, the appearance of the two teary eyed girls was enough to make a God’s heart shatter. Their cries could pierce people’s heart



and lungs, the man they loved had left just like that, how would they not suffer? Even though they could not be together with Lei Yu, but as long as they could see him, as long as they could chat and banter with each other was enough. But now this simple request has become a luxury.

The surprising thing was Liu Hao did not say a single word; his eyes were somewhat awkward as he stared at Lei Yu. Slightly wrinkling his nose, he wanted to say something but seeing everyone around him awashed with tears, he really didn't know how to say it out loud. His voice filled with hesitation: "Ma... master, he's not dead yet."

# Chapter 103: The Spiritual Bead Disappears

Everyone's gaze all centered on Liu Hao, even the elderly man looked at Liu Hao with some shock.

Everyone present apart from the two girls had strength surpassing Liu Hao many times. But such a statement was made by him, even though the believability of his words was close to zero yet everyone present held a glimmer of hope.

The elderly man with the title and strength of an Ultimate Ninja, Nuo

Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng, they all could not detect any life from Lei Yu's body. So why did Liu Hao say something like this?

Cui Ying Ying grabbed onto Liu Hao like she was crazy, "is it true what you've said? Lei Yu's not dead? Quickly tell me the truth! Tell me it's for real!"

Nuo Hu didn't dare say a word, his face looked extremely anxious. He was even trembling while he tried to clear his throat. His hand was holding onto Lei Yu's shoulder, not willing to let go while his eyes filled with hope was staring at Liu Hao.

"Stop fantasizing!" Said the elderly man. "There's no life present in his body, there's no way he can come

back to life!”

The elderly man’s words shattered the sliver of hope in everyone’s heart. Being disappointed again and again, these tumultuous emotions made it difficult for them to bear.

“You’re farting![1]” Liu Hao stood up as he pointed at the elderly man and scolded.

The elderly man suddenly became flabbergasted being insulted like that. In the Kou country, no one has ever dared to talk to him that way. Even the Prime Minister of the Kou country would never dare to say such words to him. Yet right now in front of him, he was being insulted by a Third Order Warrior which was equivalent to an Advanced

Ninja, how could he be not shocked?

“Liu Hao, quickly explain what’s going on!” Hu Li saw that no one was saying anything so he urged Liu Hao.

Lightly exhaling, Liu Hao crouched down. He smiled as he stared at Lei Yu’s stomach. “I am the disciple of master; I can still detect a trace of life inside master’s body. And this trace of life is alive at the cultivation origins. Although the abilities between us two are different, but the cultivation methods I’ve learnt was taught by master. I am completely familiar with the circulation of the life essence and the internal energy’s movement; therefore I believe

master is still alive. As long as that trace of internal energy is not compromised, he will definitely be able to wake up!" Each of Liu Hao's words was said with force, deeply imprinting into everyone's mind. There's no way they won't believe Liu Hao's words now, especially since they were hoping this was for real.

"Then let's not waste any time, quickly send him to the best hospital!" Nuo Yi Long was the first to recover his senses while he hurriedly said this.

-----

Inside the hospital, Liu Hao was arguing with several doctors. The doctors were all saying that Lei Yu

was already dead without any signs of life. But Liu Hao was insisting about his feelings he wasn't dead, making them work on him. No heartbeat and not breathing for such a long time, how was there hope to resuscitate him? This caused a heated argument where eventually Nuo Yi Long came forward and made them assign Lei Yu one of the best equipped hospital units. Even if Lei Yu was dead, they were willing to shell out huge amounts of money to make Lei Yu more comfortable.

“We'll be returning to Tenglong country first. If anything miraculous happens, immediately notify us!” Nuo Yi Long made Nuo Hu promise to do this. “Also, don't let Ai Er know about this incident.

If she were to find out, we really don't know what would happen to her, understand?"

Nuo Hu nodded without saying a word. Nuo Yi Long then said: "Don't worry, once we get back, we will report everything to Martial Sect and make the Kou country explain themselves!"

Nuo Yi Long and his sister, Fan Hong Chang and Hu Li, these four left the Kou country. Liu Hao, Nuo Hu, and the always present Cui Ying Ying and Nami stayed behind.

As the seconds and minutes passed by, looking at the time showed it had reached ten o'clock at night now. Everyone was sitting around Lei Yu's bed, watching Lei Yu's face



which was turning green.

Everyone's heart was in high spirits but at this time, Nami suddenly screamed out loud and fell to the floor, foaming at the mouth.

After being examined by the doctors, they found out that poison was the cause of Nami's symptoms. And currently, there was no way to treat her poison, they could only observe her. Therefore, she was sent to the Intensive Care Unit for special care. The thing was that all the hospital staff was looking at this group of people as fools, surrounding a dead person and hoping this dead corpse would resurrect. They were basically living in a fantasy story, but since they had money, they could only quietly gossip about this amongst

themselves.

“Aghh! My head hurts!” Lei Yu was cradling his head, forcefully trying to wake up. Looking around his surrounding... strange? Why was this place so familiar?

Lei Yu was shocked!

“The place why the sky meets the earth? Why would I appear at this place?”

Although this place appears to only show where the sky meets the earth forming a line, but if one looks more closely, they will find that this place had a wide expanse of area. We can only say that compared to reality, the person in this space appears to be closer to the sky and

the earth. The sky didn't have the sun or the moon, just a haze of red. Being here, Lei Yu felt like he was a pillar of the heavens, standing on earth to support the sky.

In such an environment, it really made Lei Yu not know what to do. Once again looking around, the scenery was exactly the same wherever he looked; there was no clue on what he was supposed to do. Looking up at the sky, then looking down at the ground, Lei Yu didn't know what to say... "What's going on, did I die?"

His sight started to blur a bit so Lei Yu thought there was something wrong with his head. He started shaking his head hard but the blur stayed there. Gradually, Lei Yu had

a splitting headache. Kneeling on the ground, the yellow bead lodged in his brains started spinning rapidly at a horrifyingly extreme speed. This made Lei Yu unable to bear with the friction that was generated by the rotation.

Gradually, the yellow bead's surface started glowing a brilliant yellow light. This light was similar to sunlight shining on every part of Lei Yu's body. The light gradually spread around and the deep wound on Lei Yu's head started restoring to its original state like he had never been hurt. Then the body's meridians and bones that were already fractured began to heal like they had never been damaged before as well.

Lei Yu was ecstatic. He couldn't believe that this yellow energy would have the same ability as the green energy with the repairing effect.

When the spinning rotation of the yellow bead began to slow down, Lei Yu was finally restored to his senses. He then remembered the name of the yellow bead, "wasn't it called the Spiritual Bead of Longevity? Wasn't it supposed to preserve my life? It actually was true!"

Lei Yu excitedly watch as his traumatic injuries rapidly repaired itself before his eyes. Even his dantian region, a mad rush of energy was rushing into his empty Sea of Energy, connecting with that

sliver of internal energy. And this yellow energy was constantly purifying and removing the impurities. Lei Yu felt that his internal energy was gradually recovering, giving him an extremely wonderful feeling.

When all of Lei Yu's energy was recovered, and all the internal and external trauma he had received was fully repaired, Lei Yu was pretty much jumping about in excitement.

But at this time, the spinning rotation of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity suddenly stopped. Carefully looking at it, the bead had lost its luster looking like a plain yellow bead without its previous shiny appearance. Lei Yu could see that there was still a trace of

essence inside the bead, and that trace of essence slowly escaped from it.

“Bang!” The Spiritual Bead of Longevity instantly exploded as granules of a shattered yellow stars fluttered throughout his body. The last bit of essence followed the meridian paths and flowed downwards, towards his abdomen area. Lei Yu could only feel a sudden burst of pain in his lower abdomen, then his little brother involuntarily became erect.

“What the hell?! No way!” Cried Lei Yu in shock.

Inside the hospital patient room, only Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying were inside. Liu Hao was smoking a

cigarette in the hallway, and it's unknown when he started the habit of smoking. Perhaps it was due to him being upset these few days. But coincidentally while he was smoking outside, the only person that could detect the changes in Lei Yu's body was not present. Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying couldn't detect it so they had no reactions whatsoever.

The current time was about 12 o'clock midnight, and it was all quiet at the hospital's patient room ward. Only at the distant end of the hallway, a young girl was leaning against the wall with all her effort. One step at a time, she walked with difficulty towards the room where Lei Yu was. Her eyes were so red and swollen that one's heart would



hurt from looking at it while her messy hair had obscured the white skin of her neckline.

According to the calculated time, Nami consumed the transparent vial of liquid around 1 o'clock in the morning. Another hour later and her body would fester into sores; all seven apertures will start bleeding until her death. But of course she didn't know about this, the only thing she wanted was to see Lei Yu one last time. Deep inside Nami's heart, she knew that she wouldn't live much longer and the only fortunate thing she felt was that she did not give this drug to Lei Yu to consume.

Her figure was getting closer. As Nami arrived at the doorway of Lei

Yu's room, her mouth was panting for breath, her breasts moving up and down was very enticing. Gently opening the door and seeing Lei Yu whom had still not woken up, Nami became teary eyed again as she went inside.

Nami's situation was not too optimistic. According to the doctor, the bacteria was rapidly spreading. What she needed was to minimize her activities to avoid spreading the bacteria faster.

Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying saw that Nami wanted to say something but couldn't bear to continue with her words. Grabbing a chair and placing it next to the bed, Nami lowered her head as she sat down. Her body had weakened to the

point that a gust a wind could have blown her over. She raised her slightly trembling delicate hands and held onto Lei Yu's hand.

“So hot! The young master...” With Nami's face filled with shock, one could not tell she was even poisoned.

Her sentence wasn't even finished when Lei Yu suddenly sat up, his eyes wide and round. He grabbed onto the weak Nami by his side and started ripping off her clothes!

-----

[1] Chinese people use that term to mean they are blabbing nonsense.

# Chapter 104:

## Lustful Atmosphere

Lei Yu suddenly waking up and his sudden movement of ripping Nami's clothes off made people unable to react.

Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying's jaws were on the floor. Nami had no clue what was going on, she only felt the warmth of the young master's hand and was suddenly grabbed and thrown onto Lei Yu's bed.

"RIP, RIP." Nami's clothes were all ripped off by Lei Yu. Just like that, Nami's perfect and seductive body was revealed to Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying. Her white skin with a

touch of pink, her chest and her ass, including the forbidden area were all displayed for everyone to see. Nuo Hu could not help but slurp back the saliva dripping from his mouth.

Lei Yu's eyes were bloodshot as his eyes stared at Nami's curvaceous ass. The current Lei Yu was similar to a beast, stripping Nami without a piece of clothing left. Looking at Lei Yu's position, one could tell he wanted to dive straight into her peach for its nectar. As for Nami, she wasn't resisting at all. Not that she didn't want to resist but Nami understood the young master wasn't this type of person; there should be a good reason for his current actions. Additionally, she had no strength whatsoever left in

her body so even if she wanted to; there would be no way for her to escape from Lei Yu's powerful grasp.

The only person present that could stop Lei Yu was Nuo Hu, yet he honestly wasn't sure what he should do. Cui Ying Ying looked worriedly at Nami from the side. Everyone knew how weak Nami was currently. With the poison inside her body, if that poison was to transfer over to Lei Yu if they did that "act", then the consequences would be disastrous. After all, Lei Yu had just woken up from being in a death-like state, they didn't even have time to celebrate and this scene happened.

Cui Ying Ying anxiously pushed

Nuo Hu, “quickly go stop him! There’s no way Nami can handle such roughness. Besides there’s some sort of poison inside her, if they were to have intercourse, something might happen!”

Even though Nami couldn’t understand what Cui Ying Ying said, but seeing the facial expressions she had on her face, she understood something was wrong. She then suddenly remembered she still had some highly toxic poison inside her; her previous shy and docile nature was shattered. Originally thinking that before she dies, she was able to do this with the young master, she would be satisfied even in death. But if the poison she had were to be transmitted to the young master,

then the consequences would be too terrible to imagine. Nami used the last ounce of strength in her body to resist, continuously swinging her white hips around so that Lei Yu couldn't find his target.

At this time, Nuo Hu flew forward like an arrow wanting to restrain Lei Yu. But when his body hadn't even reached a meter from the bed, with Lei Yu as the center, a powerful aura was released from his body that created an energy barrier blowing Nuo Hu back.

Trying to get near and being pushed back again, Nuo Hu frantically cried out: "It's not working! There's no way for me to get near him!"

"What should we do then? Nami



won't be able to resist any longer!" Cui Ying Ying's face was filled with anxiety; she had no clue on what to do. Seeing Nami's face was getting more pale, with her already frail state, her forceful struggles had caused her white body to be covered with a fragrant gleam of sweat.

Lei Yu appeared to become crazier, Nami's struggle made him even more ramped up. Grabbing onto Nami's hair, his other hand held down Nami's lower body. After that brief struggle, Nami had no more strength left.

At this time, they could only hear the sounds that made people aroused. Nami screamed, her eyes filled with tears. Lei Yu was like a beast that had endured for

thousands of years, thrusting with madness. In this large hospital room, an awkward atmosphere was present. Cui Ying Ying and Nuo Hu whom could not do anything stood to the side, watching Lei Yu venting his rage. As for Nami, the crazy thrusting from Lei Yu had already made her unconscious.

Nuo Hu's eyes were slightly dazed. He has seen many beautiful girls in his life, even ones with Nami's level of beauty he had still seen quite a few. But for such a beauty to be exposed naked in front of his eyes like this, then this was considered a first. Not to mention this beauty was undergoing such an exercise before him.

Nami's bountiful breasts were

rocking back and forth following the rhythm of Lei Yu's thrusts. Although already unconscious, her brows were still tightly frowning.

Cui Ying Ying was firmly clutching onto her clothes. She was imagining in her mind, if she was the actual lead actress for tonight, how wonderful that would be! Forcefully shaking her head, she then started cursing at herself. "How could I think of such a thing?!" But once she saw Lei Yu's rather robust penis, Cui Ying Ying could not help peeking at it a few extra times.

As time went by, Nuo Hu tried several times to get close but was pushed back each time by the energy barrier. The two were really embarrassed, taking glances out the

window. With this scene in front of them, they felt like they were a third wheel by being here. But they were afraid to leave, fearing something bad might happen to either of them. Even if they tried calling the doctor here, this scene was not too appropriate.

The two of them continued with this lust filled environment; ten minutes, twenty minutes, forty minutes, then a full hour!

Nami's eyes suddenly opened and screamed in a heartbreaking manner. The bacterium inside her had already occupied her entire body; the pain she felt made her forget that Lei Yu was still rocking her body back and forth. Sounds from her hysterically crying could

be heard. The cries of pain made Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying immediately turn around. Seeing Lei Yu had no signs of stopping, the two thought the pain was caused by Lei Yu. They were anxiously rubbing their hands yet they couldn't figure out what to do.

It was precisely due to Nami's heart wrenching cry that made Lei Yu even crazier, his thrusting speed literally increased several times. With this rapid humping motion, it made Nami's scream sound even more miserable.

"Ahhhh!" Lei Yu screamed, feeling an extremely powerful air colliding inside his stomach. Inside Lei Yu, a stream of yellow energy followed Lei Yu's ejaculation spraying out.

The sound of his breathing become more intense, Lei Yu's hands firmly grabbed onto Nami's bountiful breasts. Nami's eyes opened wide, her long slender legs suddenly tightened as if she was doing her best to absorb Lei Yu's essence.

Gradually, they both seemed to calm down. What's surprising was that Nami was no longer in pain. Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying thought it was because Lei Yu had stopped his thrusting. But Nami's heart realized even though the pain that came with Lei Yu's thrusting motion was not little, but compared to the pain of the poison spreading throughout her body, it was considered nothing. The strange thing was that once Lei Yu came inside her with his essence, the pain

in her body had disappeared without a trace. As if her muscles were being ripped apart, it had all subsided. The toxin inside her body was rapidly dissipating. To be accurate, Nami was able to clearly feel two inexplicable energies flowing around, as if one thing was chasing the other thing.

With no more strength left, Lei Yu fell on top of Nami's bountiful white body. Nami calmly and gently stroked Lei Yu's back. This scene in front of them almost made Nuo Hu and Cui Ying Ying have a nosebleed.

Nami's cry was really loud. Liu Hao who was outside quickly rushed in. Once he opened the door and saw the scene before his eyes, he was

suddenly dumbfounded. His master was alive, but should he be happy or... what on earth is going on?



# Chapter 105:

## Detachment Stage

Lei Yu once again fell unconscious, but this time it was only for a short time. As a result, Nami held onto Lei Yu, letting his large body lie on top of hers. She was also reluctant to let Lei Yu go, reluctant to let the sensation of Lei Yu's sturdy body leave hers.

Lei Yu's mind was racing around. Although his eyes were closed, his mind was very clear. "I'm finished! I actually did this to Nami... f\*ck, I'm such a f\*cking beast!"

Lei Yu was criticizing himself to no end but his previous actions weren't

under his own control. When the Spiritual Bead of Longevity used up all its energy to repair Lei Yu's body, it had already lost its effect. But the last trace of energy was the bead's original essence, a bead that Qilins possess, a bead that the Ink Beast gained after defeating it. And this last trace of energy was like the essence of the Qilin's power. The nature of the Qilin was strong, this essence seemed unremarkable and bland but once it invaded a man's genitalia, thus it resulted in the previous sex scene.

After releasing the bead's origin essence, releasing it out of his body and into Nami's body, one could say that Nami had become the mothering body that was to nurture the Spiritual Bead of Longevity's

power. We could say that Nami had become a priceless treasure.

However, the apparent effects weren't shown yet. It requires a long period of time before the Spiritual Bead of Longevity can restore its original ability.

Lei Yu's actions were caused by the bead's own desire; he wasn't willing, especially not willing to hurt Nami like this. But the reality had already come to pass. In fact, if he actually had a choice in these matters, then he would definitely choose Ai Er. If he couldn't choose Ai Er, Lei Yu would not do it at all.

Apart from feeling depressed, Lei Yu carefully inspected the situation inside his body. The current Lei Yu

felt that his body had reached its peak, he felt even more wonderful than before. Observing the changes inside his dantian, Lei Yu was now in utter shock!

The last stage! The [Detachment] stage!

“My heavens! I’ve actually reached the [Detachment] stage! This is too incredible!”

This powerful internal energy was like the waves of the sea, mixed with an immeasurable power of lightning. The explosive power of it made Lei Yu unable to believe his eyes, yet there it was in front of him.

After reaching the [Detachment]

stage, Lei Yu finally understood all the benefits he had obtained from advancing through each stage by following the cultivating methods.

The first stage [Lightning Foundation]; helping draw out the power of lightning inside his body. This was an early stage that did not show off its strength. Arriving at the second stage [Refining Body] was when Lei Yu truly started to become strong. The power of lightning was continuously refining Lei Yu's body, all his bones, meridians, his flesh and even his hair had become much stronger.

And when he reached the [Integration] stage, Lei Yu's strength had changed dramatically. From being only able to use his

brute strength to using internal energy as the source of power, he was able to use the powerful properties of lightning to take on his opponents.

Arriving at the [Energy Suppression] stage, Lei Yu could hide his presence. This type of ability could make experts much more powerful than him unable to detect his presence. This type of scene appeared when he was dueling with Cai Zhong. There was also an additional feature, his internal energy seemed relatively calm at the [Energy Suppression] stage, but hidden in this calmness was fury. Through Lei Yu's own refinement, he could absorb his internal energy into a meridian, then he could fight with all his

power and still have that meridian filled with energy as a last ditch effort to escape.

And before reaching this last stage, Lei Yu's [Discharge] stage allowed the power of lightning to condense throughout any part of his body. He could even make this energy appear on his body in the real world, like making him into a being similar to those lightning god statues people worship.

But the Lei Yu now had shed everything of his past. The moment that the Spiritual Bead of Longevity disappeared from his body, his body had undergone tremendous changes. His bones that had metallic properties inside them had once again risen to a new level, the

toughness of it would be unimaginable to people. If the old Lei Yu could merely use his brute strength and physical resistance to punch through a wall, then the current strength of Lei Yu's body had almost reached the hardness of a diamond.

For other people to reach the Sixth Order Warrior, their strength was indeed powerful. But no one could cultivate their outer body to this degree; this was an existence that is considered an anomaly.

The [Discharge] stage allowed the power of lightning to surround his body in order to achieve a powerful attack. And now that Lei Yu was in the [Detachment] stage, he could now freely manipulate the power of



lightning which meant it could leave his body and achieve a long range attack. As for the distance of the attack, it will be closely related to whether he was at the early, mid, or late stage.

Understanding everything about his cultivation, Lei Yu smiled. "This Lei Yu Divine Arts is really not bad, the heavens are helping me. I survived such a huge calamity, and with the Spiritual Bead of Longevity saving my life, looks like I, Lei Yu was not fated to die yet! Your father I, will see to the complete destruction of the Kou country! I will completely make them disappear from this earth!"

At this time, Lei Yu became distressed because he knew that he

would soon regain his consciousness. But how will he face this group of people after he wakes up?

With some reluctance, Lei Yu opened his eyes. He suddenly realized his hands were holding onto something very soft. Gently moving his fingers, this softness was extremely comfortable that had some flexibility to it. And in the middle of his palm, he noticed something pink. This type of stimulation suddenly made Lei Yu's brain short circuit. But all of this was considered nothing, the most important thing was his most precious jewels seemed to be wrapped around in something... something warm and wet, all walls tight together that changed

according to Nami's breathing pattern.

Lei Yu cried out loud and with unimaginably flexible grace, he jumped up.

Lei Yu's sudden departure made Nami feel kind of empty inside, but her face instantly flushed red. She hastily pulled up the blanket to block the view of her alluring white body.

The posture of Lei Yu leaving the bed was too funny, and it was like this that he stood on top of the bed naked. And besides him, three people were staring. These three people had their mouths agape in an O shape, looking at Lei Yu like they were staring at an alien.

Lei Yu finally realized how embarrassing this situation was but the blanket was already taken by Nami. Right now, Lei Yu looked completely and utterly like a fool.

Once Cui Ying Ying told Lei Yu all about Nami's condition and how it came to be, Nami was severely reprimanded by Lei Yu. But at the same time, he understood that Nami's poison was thus removed. The Spiritual Bead of Longevity originally had the ability to repair and now it was also known to detoxify poisons. Through Lei Yu's semen, it went inside Nami's body and began to chase after and kill off all the poison.

After Lei Yu woke up, the people around him got the explanation of

his abnormal behavior which was caused by the Qilin's nature. But coincidentally it was due to this that saved Nami's life. At the last moment where Nami's body was about to break out into festering sores, Lei Yu's release of semen had saved her and saved himself. If this sexual impulse was not released, then Lei Yu would have lost his life from holding that Qilin energy back.

# Chapter 106: Long Distance Attack

Nuo Hu naturally did not blame Lei Yu. After listening to Lei Yu's explanation, no one would else would doubt him. The news of Lei Yu's resurrection was transmitted back to Tenglong country which caused a big sensation. Nuo Yi Long and others wanted to come see him but was refused by Lei Yu. What he wanted was to take care of things here in the Kou country by himself, and he promised them he would be extra careful. On the other hand, Nuo Hu and Liu Hao insisted on staying so Lei Yu had to agree to it.

The next thing Lei Yu had to do was

find Hasegawa, but after hearing them say what happened afterwards, he found out that Hasegawa and fled aboard a speedboat. In earnest that day, Hasegawa wasn't afraid of the people there at all since everyone present weren't strong enough to be his opponent. But since a Deputy Commander whom was a pivotal figure of the Tenglong country was killed, the blame was squarely on his shoulders. That elderly man who happened to be his master, had the right to execute him on the spot. But anyone was susceptible to favoritism, especially for those Kou bastards.

Because of the relationship she had with Lei Yu, Cui Ying Ying did not have any mood to take care of the

company's matters while he was in the hospital. She didn't even bother checking on the huge construction project they had going on.

Fortunately, the two partners they were working with were focused on the project, taking care of every aspect of the company. It seems like not all Kou country people were bastards, but Lei Yu still felt a majority of them were heartless assholes.

From the beginning to the end, not a single word of this was revealed to Ai Er. Hanging up the phone with Ai Er, Lei Yu could only heavily sigh. After Nuo Hu came over, would Ai Er stay in Tenglong country? Her own brother and her lover were both in the Kou country;



of course she was reluctant to stay in her own country.

However, everyone was going to conceal what happened between Lei Yu and Nami. This deception was well-intentioned, a move he could only helplessly make. Lei Yu really didn't want to hide it, but on one side his actions were driven by the Qilin, and the other side it had saved Nami's life. This resulted in both Lei Yu and Nami not owing each other any responsibilities.

Like everything was fine and dandy, Lei Yu took Ai Er around the Kou country to have fun. The first was to compensate Ai Er with the guilt he had in his heart; the second being he was afraid something like that would happen again, so he was

afraid he would never see Ai Er ever again.

As for Nami, Cui Ying Ying, Nuo Hu, and Liu Hao, they were all busy dealing with various things.

Renovations were already completed at the ocean view villa.

The villa was really not bad, especially since well renowned interior designers designed the place. The renovations were something anyone would like; the inside was like a palace, a place that one wouldn't mind dying in if they lived there.

-----

“Black Panther, the situation has been taken care of.”

“Young master, what are your plans now? Hasegawa has already left the Kou country, our guess is that he hasn’t gotten news of your resurrection.”

“One day, I will eventually find him. I will be a coward if I don’t take revenge!” Lei Yu had every right to be pissed off since he was technically killed. If it weren’t for the Spiritual Bead of Longevity, how could he be standing here chatting with Black Panther? “Bring your people, tomorrow we’re going to the Yamaguchi Island. The first thing I want to do is make the organization, the Yamaguchi-gumi, disappear from here on!”

At the seaside, Lei Yu and Ai Er enjoyed an entire day of being

carefree. As for the current situation, Lei Yu already had long-term plans for it. Since the business in the Kou country wasn't really his, then there was no need to look after it in his plans. It was probably best to resolve this as soon as possible, so whatever responsibilities he had were passed to Black Panther and his group to manage. As for businesses that belonged to Cui Ying Ying's family, if he could help then he definitely would, if he couldn't then that's that.

The most important thing for him was to find his mother. Having already reached the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior, Lei Yu had been looking forward to this for a very long time. What filial person would not want to meet their

mother? Once he finds his mother, the truth will be revealed. His mother's enemy and the murderer of his grandfather was the same person, so finding his mother was the key. After that, Lei Yu can then finally lead a quiet and carefree life with his mother and his loved ones. But would Lei Yu really get to have such a life? Everything is an unknown for now.

Little Ke had been technically avenged. Even though when he killed Otsuka, Lei Yu wasn't conscious, yet he still had the impressions of doing it. This is the most he could probably do.

The next day, bringing along Black Panther and his group of ten plus people, along with Nuo Hu and Liu

Hao, they were all heading towards the Yamaguchi Island – the headquarters of the Yamaguchi-gumi where most people were afraid to get close to.

A total of five speed boats were flying through the waters creating trails and big ripples of foam in the sea. Being amongst this wide expanse of water made one truly feel tiny in the scope of things.

Once this group of people neared the Yamaguchi Island, Lei Yu used his extraordinary eyesight and observed a boat by the island. A dozen or so people were busily working carrying some goods onto the boat. What specifically were they carrying was unknown, but noticing this point, Lei Yu cried out:

“Full speed ahead!”

Getting closer and closer. When these men realized Lei Yu and his group of people was approaching, confusion was shown on their faces. Using his ability, Lei Yu could tell that the most powerful out of them all was someone with the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior, a Shadow Ninja; to him they were now simply a group of insignificant beings.

“What are you doing? Do you know what sort of place this is? Quickly turn around and leave!” The Shadow Ninja shouted harshly as he pointed at the arriving five speed boats.

Lei Yu coldly humphed, “what a

joke!”

Once these people saw Lei Yu, they immediately went pale. They were also present that day when Lei Yu committed those horrific acts on the island not too long ago. That shocking scene where even strong experts approached him were instantly burnt to crisp could not be forgotten easily. Even Hasegawa’s summoned Water Beast was eventually killed by this person.

But that day, they clearly witnessed Lei Yu being killed by Hasegawa so why would he appear here now? But this question is probably something they will never be able to ask.

Lei Yu gently raised his right hand,



his index and middle finger clamped together. The surrounding area around his lightning brand started trembling and from the top of his arm, a purple energy starting going down the length of his arm condensing at his fingertips.

“Go!” Lei Yu coldly cried out. A purple beam with the thickness of a finger mixed with lightning energy shot towards the chest of the Shadow Ninja dozens of meters away

Without any warning, everyone could only see a brief flash of light. The next moment, the eyes of this Shadow Ninja had already become lifeless, a thick white smoke rising from the area of his chest. Looking at it carefully, a hole the size of a

finger went directly through his chest and destroyed his heart.

Everyone present could not help but gasp. Lei Yu then cried out: "Black Panther, attack!"

The dozen or so people didn't care about the crashing waves as they jumped into the air and landed directly on the island. Rage; the insults; this group of mutants recalled the shame and ridicule they had suffered in the past. The group in front of them were the proud ninjas while they were merely the mutants that had their dignity trampled all over just to survive. Today, they finally had a chance to vent. With blood red eyes and murderous intent; a horrifying bloody scent started wafting

through air from this small island along with sounds of crashing waves.

The current Lei Yu did not care about how well-respected ninjas were. In his eyes, they were comparable to dog shit and not even worth a cent. Seeing a group of mutants that had endured humiliation for many years going on a killing rampage, Lei Yu did not have a single ounce of sympathy.

# Chapter 107:

## Sudden Mutation

Most of the ninjas here were primarily at the Elementary and Intermediate levels. There were only two or three Advanced Ninjas so how could they be opponents to Black Panther and his group? Running and scattering in all directions, there was no way they could get away from Black Panther – an expert who prided in his speed. With the speed of lightning, his body caught up to them while his fists punched out non-stop; there was no way they could handle that. With a flip and a backward somersault, his body at a slight

angle, he kicked out with force and an Advanced Ninja was struck flying away. Fortunately for that ninja, it wasn't a lethal blow. Knowing that he couldn't escape, the ninja slowly stood back up to fight.

This ninja did not have the battle experiences or the hatred Black Panther had; just from the momentum alone, he had already lost a big part. Sure enough, after exchanging blows for a short time, Black Panther used extreme speeds and stabbed his sharp fingernails into the ninja's chest.

Several others also quickly resolved their battles. Using Gray Bear as an example: Wrapping his arms around a ninja, his explosive

strength squeezed the life out of that guy making his body into a distorted figure.

Lei Yu, Nuo Hu and Liu Hao, these three jump aboard a boat and opened one of the boxes. Inside contained some unknown drugs. And another big box contained a familiar creature, the insects that were filled with bacteria. Looks like the Yamaguchi-gumi are refusing to give up their ways...

If these insects were placed in a city and they started spreading this infection, then the consequences would be disastrous. The Yamaguchi-gumi wanted to sell these antidotes against the infection at high prices to reap insane profits once again, they were

truly a bunch of f\*cking bastards.

Lei Yu felt uncomfortable from seeing these disgusting insects that made one want to throw up. An unbearable and tremendous force started rising up in his body. Under Lei Yu's will, the energy started dispersing, breaking up into specks of purple light that scattered onto the bodies of the insects. One, two, ten, one hundred, then thousands of these insects started struggling. But no matter how much they struggled and fought, they could not escape their fate of being electrocuted to death by the purple lightning.

After Lei Yu took care of things on his side, Black Panther and group had already buried all the ninjas on the beach on their side.

“Let’s take a look further inside!”  
Lei Yu took the lead and went forward. The surface area of this small island was quite large, comparable to the size of an average city. There were countless white buildings on the island, and inside these buildings should be some more ninjas and probably some scientists along with their research equipment. Lei Yu was not someone that was easily recognizable, and these research scientists did not even have time to leave before they met with him head on.

One of the scientists with eye glasses who appeared older than the rest hastily stuffed something into his pocket. But this was discovered by Lei Yu so he walked



towards him.

Lei Yu asked in English: "What are you trying to hide?"

The scientist with glasses on turned his head to the side, clearly not caring what Lei Yu had said to him. On the side, Black Panther narrowed his eyes and then used the Kou language: "You dog bastard! Didn't you hear the young master ask you a question? If you don't answer, I will kill you right now!"

Who wasn't afraid of death? The two dozen or so of gentle and well mannered researchers slightly shivered, but this old man with the glasses only sneered, still not saying a word.

For these hardcore researchers, compared to their life, their research is simply much more important. They've toiled their entire lives away researching inside a laboratory. And having today's achievements and the importance the Yamaguchi-gumi placed on him, this old man was already very satisfied with his life. It was very clear that he did not want to answer any questions; he grabbed a vial of pink liquid on top of a desk and drank the entire contents.

Lei Yu did not make any moves to attempt to block the old man from his actions. If someone wanted to die, why would he try to stop them? Furthermore, Lei Yu couldn't be bothered about the life or death of these Kou people. Looking closely,

the thing inside the old man's pocket should be a hard drive of some sort. What sort of information could be stored inside that hard drive? Lei Yu's interest was certainly piqued by this.

But what surprised everyone was the vial the old man drank was not poison, it was actually something to mutate one's body. This type of mutagen was unsuccessful in changing the genetic makeup of the body during earlier trials. Black Panther and his group were basically the results of these failures. But now that this mutagen has been improved upon, who knows how much stronger it has become.

After placing the vial back on the

desk, the old man smiled coldly. While he was smiling, his body was undergoing constant changes; his skin began to loosen and wrinkle up, but then would rapidly become taut again. The dark spots on the skin of his hands from old age had rapidly disappeared and becoming smooth; then from the back of his hands, something was extending from his joints. Looking closely, they looked like spears made out of his bones!

That's right; the old man's appearance had undergone a bizarre change. His breathing becoming solemn and deep, while his previous look of not caring if he died becoming someone with vicious intent. One could clearly see that his height was constantly

growing; his original 1.65 meter height continued going up.

Two minutes later, a person of 1.9 meters tall with an exaggerated muscular body ripped away his clothes. Almost having no chin, his muscular neck seemed to blend in with his face. On the back of his hands, four sharp bone spears protruded out giving off a chilling white aura.

The scientists present were beyond surprised from seeing these changes. It appears that this drug not only worked on typically strong people, it actually made such drastic changes to an old man that was half a step into his coffin. But the only drawback being how was this old man supposed to go out

and meet the public now? Would he have to become this monster for the rest of his life and be feared by the world?

Black Panther was only somewhat surprised since he's already seen these types of changes before.

When he was injected with the model #H2236 mutagen, the characteristics he received made him look like the African Black Panther. It was only after taking some additional agents before he went back to a human appearance, except the weird smell that came with it would not go away no matter what.

Black Panther flew forward like an arrow, initiating the attack on the old man that had undergone a

transformation. His body disrupting the atmosphere, Black Panther's figure was like a blur. Once his figure arrived in front of the mutated old man, the old man effortlessly lifted his arm with the bone spears and stabbed through Black Panther's right chest. The old man then kneed Black Panther in the abdomen which made him go flying off.

Fortunately, this attack was not fatal. If the bone spears and penetrated into the left-side of the chest, then Black Panther would simply be unable to breathe the breath of life any more. Gray Bear rushed forward to support Black Panther, and only after finding he was okay did he turn his gaze at the mutated monster that they couldn't

handle as an opponent anymore.

The corner of Lei Yu's mouth made a sneer. He could clearly feel that this extremely weak and old research scientist had now become something like a super mutant. He had become something similar to a Shadow Ninja or a Fourth Order Warrior in strength. With this type of strength present, no one else would be his opponent apart from Lei Yu. Even though Nuo Hu could take him on without a chance of losing, but this was simply a waste of time.

Lei Yu walked forward a few steps with disdain on his face. "Let me ask you, do you know where Hasegawa went?"



With a cold “humph,” the old man who underwent mutation became extremely arrogant, wanting to make a move to kill Lei Yu. But with his current strength, was he even capable of making any moves? They both raised their right arms up, and Lei Yu’s fist smashed with the old man’s fist that contained the bone spears.

“Crack, crack, crack, crack!”

The chilling sounds of bones being broken were heard. Looking closely, the old man’s four bone spears were already broken and fallen to the ground. As for Lei Yu, he gently blew on his fists to remove the shattered bone residue, his face showing it was no big deal.

The mutated old man's forehead was filled with sweat. Even though the bone spears had extended outside, yet it still was part of his body so the terrible pain was unbearable. He was also suddenly in fear of Lei Yu. He understood how powerful this mutagen was, yet it was completely useless against this young man that was slightly taller than a typical Kou male. He even started to doubt his own research after this.

# Chapter 108:

## Contribution To The Country

Waving his hand, Lei Yu looked over at the dozen or so mutants. They all understood his meaning; leaving the wounded Black Panther, they rushed over to subdue the rest of the scientists. As for the mutated old man, no one approached him since no one dared to. This old man still had another hand with white chilling bone spears protruding out of it. The all saw the results of Black Panther clashing with him so they clearly didn't want to try their luck.

All the scientists were ushered next

to a wall. Lei Yu once again asked the recently mutated old scientist: “I’m asking you again, did Hasegawa contact you recently? What type of status do you have here?”

He originally did not say anything before but after seeing Lei Yu have a profoundness that he couldn’t see through, fear appeared in his eyes. Opening his mouth with a dull voice: “The boss went to the United States and he’s staying with people he has partnered with before. I am a research scientist that has followed the boss for many years, and I’m in charge of all research here.”

“Dog shit research!” Lei Yu cursed in rage. “You guys are f\*cking

manufacturing biological weapons and harming humanity!”

Thinking about the history of biological warfare, Lei Yu’s emotions were completely enraged. As a hot-blooded youth, Lei Yu’s impulsive nature was natural but he was still able to resist the urges to kill this monster in front of him. Continuing to ask: “Which part of the United States do his partners live at?”

“I’m not too sure; we’ve only ever exchanged scientific data and have never met anyone in person. I have never been involved in any transactions since I’ve only been responsible for research. As for what the intended use of my research was for, that’s not

something I can control.”

“What else would these things be used for apart from harming humanity? You’re trying to defend your actions with illogical and lame excuses!”

“I’ve said what I’ve wanted to say.” Then, his trembling and still bleeding right-hand reached into his pocket and brought out a hard drive. “Inside this thing is my life’s work. With this, you could advance a country’s economy for at least ten years, or you could use this to cripple a country’s economy for ten years!” The old man’s gaze suddenly changed. “I will smash this in front of you!” As his voice said this, his right hand started squeezing with strength and the hard drive started

cracking with fracture lines  
appearing on it.

Lei Yu's reaction could not be considered slow. Under desperate circumstances, a materialized electric beam shot out of his finger that directly hit the old man's wrist. The old man's tendon and bones was then severed by this power of lightning. Even if the old man wanted to continue using strength, it was now impossible. The hard drive slipped from the grip of his hand and no one was capable of seeing the blur of Lei Yu's figure. In an instant, the hard drive was within Lei Yu's hand while he returned to his original location like he had never moved an inch.

The angered old man screamed into

the air. After screaming in pain and grief, he finally gave a long sigh. His left fist that was twisted in the wrong direction had already been pierced into his own chest. A monster that had just underwent mutation toppled onto the ground, unable to stand up ever again.

The majority of the ninjas on the island had already left previously for the United States. As for the others, they were responsible for handling the leftover cargo and equipments. Lei Yu took all these leftover goods and equipments and stored it into his storage ring.

As for those research scientists, Lei Yu didn't want to kill them. If he were to send them to the Tenglong country, it's possible that they could



make some contributions to his own country. Making up his mind, Lei Yu prepared to return to Tenglong.

“Black Panther, your injuries shouldn’t be too serious. I estimate that in a few days, you will make a full recovery. With this, the Yamaguchi-gumi has been wiped out from the Kou country. Your group will therefore build up your own forces on this island. Once I return to my own country, I will look into the hard drive. If a method is found to remove the stench from your bodies, I will immediately contact you.” Lei Yu said with a smile.

“Young master!”

“Young master!”

With a “plop” sound, the group of twelve mutants fell on their knees. It appears that they didn’t know what else to say to express their gratitude and their respect for Lei Yu. Although Lei Yu’s appearance had broken their calm and peaceful lives, but it did allow them to regain the dignity they had lost for many years. This dignity was something humans needed. Even mutants who have exceeded ordinary humans were eager to regain this to show humanity still existed within themselves.

Helping everyone get up, Lei Yu waved his hand. “I believe the Kou country’s ninjas will no longer be enemies to I, Lei Yu. Since you guys

are my people, no one would make your lives difficult. Further develop yourselves here but don't let this place be the root of where bio agents come from. Modify it somewhat and make a large bridge so it can be connected to the newly developed city. I believe the future prospects won't be too shabby here!"

This proposal inspired something in Cui Ying Ying. She was then secretly thinking and planning the future developments of this place. Although the Kou people were downright bastards, their economy was still regarded as quite powerful in the world. There were still a lot of things she needed to learn about in the business field, so Cui Ying Ying will benefit a lot as she

develops her ideas here.

Lei Yu stood at the highest peak of a mountain in the Kou country, surveying every corner of this small country. Even though he couldn't see everything that clearly, it filled him with many emotions. It's not easy for any country to establish itself... Giving them some minor punishments would be enough, there's really no need to cause the complete destruction of a country. Even though he now had the strength to do it, he was, after all, not those conscienceless Kou military back in the last war. Lei Yu was unable to pillage and burn like those actions of pigs and dogs. If he were to do the same things, then he was no different from them.

However, if there's any advantages he can gain out of this, he will take it. This was the minor contribution he wanted to do for his own country. The only people leaving the Kou country would be Lei Yu and the siblings Nuo Hu and Ai Er. Liu Hao will be accompanying Cui Ying Ying in staying here. The main thing being this clown of a Liu Hao wanted to live his dream; he wanted some management level position in Meng Yu Corporation. He would then be completely satisfied if he could hang out and accompany whatever current popular artists or actors were to dinners or out for drinks.

Back at Tenglong country, the first thing Lei Yu did was meet up with Nuo Yi Long and others. Even

though they had already heard the news of Lei Yu's resurrection, they still couldn't help getting emotional from actually seeing him again. And Lei Yu broke out a heart attack inducing piece of news to them.

"I've attained the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior, but it's only the early stage of it."

Lei Yu was practically begging that this information stay amongst the present people, saying there was no need to tell others. If this was known to others, it's possible that it would stir up a major storm amongst the other powers in the country. It's not that Lei Yu would assume that everyone would be fighting over him; it was mainly because of his age. A twenty

something year old Sixth Order Warrior, not to mention the present, even in the history of the country such a thing was never heard of before. Maybe someone like that did exist before and no one knew about it, but Lei Yu would be become the first one ever found so far.

As for the Lei family, Lei Yu wanted to go back to take a look around. But once he thought about the disdainful faces of the clan, he eventually gave up on that idea.

-----

Nuo Yi Long and Shangguan Xi Hong brought Lei Yu to the main city of the country.

The main city of the country was naturally more prosperous than other cities. Elevated overpasses for the cars, pedestrian bridges crowded with people, and the masses of people going along with their daily lives at the business district revealed the prosperity of the country. Lei Yu and others went towards the heart of the city and arrived a magnificently designed building.

Inside was the headquarters of Tenglong country's Supreme Ruler. Wanting to see him was something even harder than becoming an immortal. In the entire country, there were less than a hundred people that had the status to meet with the Supreme Ruler. Shangguan Xi Hong and several of his



important family members naturally had that right.

Additionally, some ancient martial clans and the Commanders of the major military groups were eligible as well. Even if you were a Deputy Commander, your position was still not high enough to have that honor. But today, a twenty something year old Lei Yu was about to meet Supreme Ruler who was respected by everyone, an event that anyone would be proud of.

There was large courtyard with a total of seventy-two gates amongst a thousand acres of land. At each gate, there would be two burly men in suits standing guard. After carefully examining them, Lei Yu found out that they were pretty much all at the strength of a Third

Order Warrior. Inside the Tenglong country, those that can fight against them amounted to less than a hundred people. Furthermore, if these people all combined their strength, then their powers would become much higher.

Driving the car, they encountered multiple checkpoints. Arriving at the final barrier, they stopped the car at the entrance. Lei Yu and them went through a final pat-frisk before they could enter inside.

Inside was a small quiet and peaceful courtyard. Lei Yu's expectation of a magnificent palatial ground was as different as night and day from seeing this courtyard. A variety of plants and flowers were planted inside this

courtyard, it even had species of plants that Lei Yu could not put a name to. And all the plants and flowers looked like they had just been watered and pruned. Lei Yu was certain that the Supreme Ruler really liked gardening.

# Chapter 109:

## Establishing An Army

Going through a long corridor, Nuo Yi Long and Shangguan Xi Hong's looks turned serious; their face was completely different from their previous expressions. It appears that their respect for this Supreme Ruler was extremely high. Able to cause pivotal figures of Tenglong country to become like this, perhaps the only person would be this ruler of the country.

A middle-aged man was standing in the courtyard with his hands clasped behind his back. He

appeared to be attentively looking at a single flower that had just started to bloom.

The three of them stood about ten meters away silently waiting, not making a single sound.

Ten minutes later, the middle-aged man turned around. Lei Yu was instantly surprised; he never imagined that Tenglong country's most noble and respected ruler was a middle-aged man around forty years old. This was a bit too inconceivable. Based on Lei Yu's thoughts, a person with such a high status should be in their fifties or sixties.

Carefully detecting his surroundings, Lei Yu concluded this

person in front of him had the strength of a mid-stage Fourth Order Warrior. In the Tenglong country, he was already considered an expert. But this was nothing, because Lei Yu's perception ability had become monstrous after reaching the [Discharge] stage, he was able to detect that apart from Shangguan Xi Hong with the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior, someone else present also had that strength. And this person was inside a room not too far away, an aura that Lei Yu was not familiar with which meant he has not met this person before.

Lei Yu slightly frowned. It appears that it wasn't only the four major forces of Tenglong country that had super experts that have reached the

peak of strength; the country also had its own.

“You guys have arrived!” The middle-aged man smiled as his gaze fell upon Lei Yu. Lei Yu respectfully bent the upper-half of his body into a bow. A person that had the utmost respect of Shangguan Xi Hong and Nuo Yi Long, how could Lei Yu not act accordingly?

The middle-aged man had a warm look on his face, not the imagined unapproachable looks. But he did possess the dignity and the domineering aura that a normal person would not have, causing people to look at with awe.

The middle-aged man’s given name was Cang Hai, his family name Lin.

He was not a descendant of the ancient martial clans and his current level of strength was purely cultivated on his own. His bone structures and his aptitude for cultivation were considered one in ten thousand, but he paled in comparison with Lei Yu. As for how he managed to attain this position, it may be his superior intellect and his ability to govern.

“Mr. Chairman, this is Lei Yu.” Shangguan Xi Hong pointed to Lei Yu on the side as he respectfully said this. Nuo Yi Long lowered his head without saying a word.

“Very good.” Lin Cang Hai smiled and nodded, his face filled with kindness. He did not reveal any feelings of superiority which made



Lei Yu's first impression of him not bad.

Lei Yu once again respectfully bowed. "Mr. Chairman, it is really a great pleasure to be meeting you today!"

"Ah, don't worry about it. Xi Hong and Yi Long always mention about you, I've heard so many praises they give you that my ears are about to fall off, ha ha..."

Because it was his first time meeting the noble and prominent Chairman Lin, Lei Yu was a bit over excited at first. But as they continued to chat, he gradually loosened up and the anxiety he was feeling gradually disappeared. Yet inside his heart, he was somewhat

unhappy with the expert that was hidden not too far from where they were. Why did this person hide himself? Was there really a need to do that?

But after thinking through; being the country's Supreme Ruler, one has to be certain of their own safety. Concealing a peerless expert nearby was a reasonable thing since they could respond quickly to any emergencies that may emerge.

"Mr. Chairman." As they were chatting, Lei Yu raised a question: "Please excuse my boldness, but could I speak to you alone?"

The faces of the other three slightly changed but it quickly returned to normal. Nuo Yi Long naturally

believed Lei Yu would not cause any problems, but Shangguan Xi Hong was different. He didn't know Lei Yu that well; one could say he barely knew him at all. When Lei Yu left Tenglong country, Shangguan Xi Hong went to Dragon Group to look for him multiple times but not getting any signs of where he went. This had caused him to be extremely angry.

Shangguan Xi Hong was about to say something to deny Lei Yu's requests when Lin Cang Hai waved his hand to stop him from saying anything. With a smile and nodding, "You two can wait outside the door for a bit, I also want to chat with Lei Yu about something."

"This..." Shangguan Xi Hong could

not believe Lin Cang Hai would agree so easily. But seeing Nuo Yi Long having already bowed to leave, he didn't want to say anything more and left as well.

Once the two left, Lei Yu smiled.  
“Thank you for your trust in me.”

“You don't need to be so polite. In fact, the actions you've made have caused a huge wave. A shadowy organization that has existed in the Kou country for many years was actually destroyed by you, a lot of people were shouting out in excitement! I was one of them, ha ha ha...”

Lei Yu blinked a few times. He couldn't believe Lin Cang Hai as a Supreme Ruler was capable of such

humorous words; it was really beyond his expectations.

“Mr. Chairman...” Pausing for a bit, Lei Yu then asked: “I believe that you, specifically asking me to meet you today was definitely not just to have a casual chat. There should be some reason right? But I noticed that with Chief Shangguan and Commander Nuo present, you didn’t want to mention it and was waiting for a chance to send them away... am I right?”

Lin Cang Hai’s eyebrows twitched, Lei Yu’s words hit the mark.

Regarding Shangguan Xi Hong, Lin Cang Hai didn’t really have a good impression of him and it wouldn’t be right to directly order him to leave. But with Lei Yu’s previous

request to speak with him alone, it was a perfect opportunity for him to say something.

“You are very smart. That’s right, there’s an issue that I wish to discuss with you.” Lin Cang Hai’s facial expressions gradually became more serious. Lei Yu stopped smiling and perked up his ears.

“How old are you this year?”

“I’m almost twenty five years old.”

Even though he already knew Lei Yu wasn’t that old, but hearing Lei Yu say it himself, he still couldn’t help feeling some shock.

“The current situation you’re in is very similar to me; we could even say it’s almost the same.” Ling Cang

Hai's words seem to have a deeper meaning causing Lei Yu to be at a loss.

Seeing Lei Yu's confused face, Ling Cang Hai smiled and said: "There's some things you don't understand and it's not the right time yet to explain it to you, therefore it's best that you don't know for now. But there is one thing I would like you to take care of but I'm not sure if you're willing...?"

"What do you want me to do?"

"Do you have any interest in establishing a new army branch? The country will certainly fully support you in many ways."

Lei Yu would never believe in a

million years that Lin Cang Hai would say these words to him. How could setting up a new branch of the army be so easy as saying a few words? The things involved will be extremely complex! Especially in the history of Tenglong country, no army branch was established based on a single person's strength.

“How would this be possible?” Lei Yu asked hesitantly.

Ling Cang Hai smiled. “There's nothing impossible about this. As long as you have a huge financial entity as your backup, what's impossible to accomplish? I believe the Lei family will certainly fund you in establishing the new army branch, and I will be here to assist you with the best aid and guidance



regarding military affairs.”

Since the beginning, Lei Yu felt that there was something a little off with the way Lin Cang Hai was looking at him. He never expected it would be for something like this. “This is impossible; I’m still not ready for any close relationship with the Lei family.” Once again looking at Lin Cang Hai’s gaze, Lei Yu could not help adding: “Mr. Chairman, can you tell me why you want me to establish a new branch of army for our country?”

Turning around and once again looking at the previous flower that had just bloomed, Lin Cang Hai paused for a bit before saying: “Tenglong country is basically split into two main parts; the first part is

supported by our military – in the international community, our strong military is used as a deterrent effect which grants us the peace you enjoy today. The second part is supported by finance – you should know that the Lei family has businesses throughout the world. We could say the wealth of the Lei family could be compared to a country's. A family with such wealth, if they wanted to influence a country would not be something difficult. This is why the Kou government did not intervene too much upon the actions you have made in the Kou country. Additionally, the forces of the Yamaguchi-gumi were getting larger each day making them exceed the power of the government. Taking them out was

beneficial to the Kou government so all of this made them not intervene with you. With this, we can see how both wealth and military power are indispensable to a country.”

Lei Yu perfectly understood these concepts. Lin Cang Hai wanted to explain that in order for a country to maintain its stability, it required two powerful states of existence as a stabilizing factor. If either one of these existences are lacking, then dire consequences may happen.

“You want me to establish another branch of army; can you tell me the reason for this?” Lei Yu asked while puzzled.

“Shangguan Xi Hong believes that

we should be ruling this country using purely military power, while I think the consequences of this would be disastrous. I want you to establish a new army branch because I hope that in the future, it will develop into a formidable force. If it could eventually rival the strength of Martial Sect, then the checks and balance will be equal again creating a stability that doesn't tilt in anyone's favor."

Lei Yu could not help gasp, compete against Martial Sect? Looks like Shangguan Xi Hong wanted to implement some ideas that Lin Cang Hai was against, and the relationship between those two gradually became worse. But even with Lin Cang Hai's authority and power, it still wasn't enough to deal

with this central figure that has been already entrenched himself with the country's military for a long time. Thus, he could only rely on this method. Even though they were to establish a new branch of the army, how long would it take before they can rival Martial Sect? Not to mention that goal may never be achieved.

Lei Yu thought for a bit, "Mr. Chairman, what about the other issue? Aren't you afraid the financial part would become unbalanced?"

"That will never happen." Lin Cang Hai smiled, "Didn't I just say? As long as you have a strong financial foundation, anything is possible, including obtaining all the power

you want.”

Lin Cang Hai's words made Lei Yu slightly annoyed. If he was to really establish a new army branch, he would be like a blind man leading another blind man; he was completely clueless on that topic. Even if he knew how to, this wasn't something he wanted to pursue. Joining Dragon Group was just a passing point of his life. When he left the Lei family without a place to stay, if it weren't for Nuo Hu's assistance, who knows what he'd be doing right now. It was obvious that betraying Martial Sect was the same as betraying Dragon Group, betraying Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng that had treated him like their own child. Making Lei Yu a disloyal and traitorous person was even

harder than killing him.

“You don’t need to respond right away, time is what we have plenty of. You can go back and fully think about it first, I will look for you later for another chat.”

Once he finished saying this, he started walking towards a room in the distance. As he was about to enter the room, he turned around and said: “Tell Xi Hong and Yi Long that I’m tired, you guys may leave and go rest up.”

“Yes, Mr. Chairman.” Lei Yu bowed before leaving.

Even though Shangguan Xi Hong wanted to know what topics those two were talking about, he knew

better to ask. He has previously spoken to other high ranking officials about Lei Yu's status and it was decided the he was no longer under the jurisdiction of any branches of the government. Going with the flow, we can say Lei Yu was now a free man. Wherever Lei Yu wanted to develop himself, we can be sure that place would welcome him with their doors wide open. If he didn't want to go anywhere or anyplace to develop his prospects, no one really had the right to intervene either.



# Chapter 110: The Kou Country Is Finished

Such a unique person could be considered unprecedented in the Tenglong country; it wasn't possible for a second to appear.

Returning to Dragon Group, Lei Yu was enjoying his time with his fellow brothers. After all, these were the team members, his good brothers that he was hanging around day in and day out. Before leaving Dragon Group, Lei Yu handed a hard drive over to Nuo Yi Long. Inside Dragon Group, apart from Nuo Hu, the other people he

trusted the most were Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng. Originally, Lei Yu wanted to hand this hard drive directly to Chairman Lin. But after hearing Chairman's words, Lei Yu changed his mind.

“Uncle Nuo, could you give this to Chairman Lin for me? Inside contains the life's work of a research scientist from the Kou country. According to his words, the data inside could propel a country's economy ahead by at least ten years; it could also cripple a country's economy for ten years. You should discuss this with the Chairman, I personally think a disaster should befall the Kou country, make them suffer and reap what they sowed. This is my wish, to repay the humiliation our

country had once suffered.” Lei Yu solemnly said.

Nuo Yi Long patted Lei Yu’s shoulder with force, his eyes filled with appreciation. Lei Yu, a twenty something year old kid, not only was he highly valued by the country, he was even quite well-known internationally. Hundreds of thousands of families knew his title as the mysterious young master. Not only that but he was a person everyone dreamed of becoming, including himself since Lei Yu had achieved the rank of a Sixth Order Warrior which he desperately wanted. With such achievements, who would not be satisfied with him? As someone that may become the father-in-law of Lei Yu, Nuo Yi Long could not even put into words

how gratified he was. It's possible that he could rely on Lei Yu's strength to avenge the death of his wife.

Tenglong country discovered that the hard drive Lei Yu gave them contained many scientific formulas as well as advanced technologies. A majority of them were based on the foundation of viruses, and from there, it branched into different paths developing a variety of unimaginable viruses and bacterium.

Tenglong country decided to use this information to extort the Kou country in an unprecedented fashion, an eye for an eye was their excuse. The Tenglong government officials announced to the public

that the bacterial infections manufactured by the Kou country had once appeared in the country. Their ploy was to use this horrible bacterium to cause a great plague in Tenglong country. The Kou country would then sell the antidote at high prices to profit from this. With that, we can see how sinister these Kou people were. Using this, Tenglong country proclaimed that the Kou country must compensate for their damages and suffering because it had caused a major panic amongst their citizens.

Once this news got out, it shocked the entire world. All the countries expressed their condolences to the Tenglong country. In reality, Tenglong country did not suffer any losses; the Kou country was the one

that had a huge loss. But when dealing with such a heartless country, there was no need to pity them or give them any sympathy.

Through clenched teeth, the Kou country unwillingly decided to pay Tenglong country one hundred and twenty billion U.S. dollars as compensation. But this was only a small figure between the two countries; the most important issue was trade.

At the same time this was going on, Tenglong and the Kou country signed an agreement. The Kou country agreed to reduce the trade tariffs of importing raw materials while also increasing the amount they were going to purchase; they were going to increase that by thirty

times. The extent of this trade was valued at about sixty trillion U.S. dollars.

The matter was originally considered settled, but what the Kou country never imagined was at the same time when the trade agreement was signed, Tenglong country decreed a new law. This new law prohibited anyone in the country from importing any Kou country made products which included raw materials. Whether they were related to the light industry, heavy industry products, electronic products or automotive industry, all Kou country products were to disappear.

Prohibiting all trade goods related to the Kou country? They were

finished, completely and utterly finished. Tenglong country was one of Kou country's biggest exporter. When we add the total figure of import sales of all their products to the world, at least 70 percent of it was to Tenglong country. Now that all trade was stopped, that huge trade of raw materials had become a wasted effort. Not only did they sign a bad trade agreement, they were now working with a pissed off customer that is making their life miserable.

The original economic powerhouse Kou country had now become one of the world's largest debtor nation. Not only did they have to bear the cost of such a large import trade, they also had to eat all the miscellaneous costs. The Kou



country's economy was in a crisis, or one could say they've become a country akin to begging on the streets in order to survive.

More than once, the Kou country's Prime Minister knelt on the floor kowtowing with tears and snot bubbles towards Lin Cang Hai and others. He even looked for Lei Yu but they were finally able to avenge their humiliation, so who would bother sympathizing with them?

If one was pursue deeper into this, would the debt that the Kou country owed Tenglong country merely be so little?

After much discussion, Lei Yu met with Lin Cang Hai again. But Lei Yu did not meet him to discuss

establishing a new branch of the army; it was for the overwater city in the Kou country.

After the deliberation between Lin Cang Hai and other government officials, they decided to acquire a world-renowned business brand belonging to the Kou country as their entry into the country. They also established a series of agreements to transfer some Tenglong citizens to the overwater city so that they could control the Kou country's economy in the future.

With Lei Yu's strange and accidental circumstances, Cui Ying Ying had profited greatly from this. Not only did she have the opportunity to openly cooperate

with the country, those Kou government officials that had previously stalled their construction project treated her like she was their ancestor born again. Their respectful attitude was indescribable.

We can say that Liu Hao had passed the stage of delving into his pleasures. Many stars and celebrities still flocked to his arms but they were now being shut out. Why? Because he was Lei Yu's disciple, and Cui Ying Ying's god-brother; who cares about the Kou people anymore? Ever since the news got out about the Kou country, Liu Hao reverted back to his character as a patriotic hot blooded Tenglong citizen.

Lei Yu had become an unsung hero hidden along with all of this. He never imagined that his role of handing over a hard drive would produce such a big benefit for his country, and a country was forced to its knees.

After things began to calm down did Lei Yu begin to organize his thoughts. The country's hate towards the Kou was the country's issue; he still had to avenge his own matter. Hasegawa had technically already killed him. If it weren't for the Spiritual Bead of Longevity bringing him back to life, he would probably be ashes inside some urn now. That bastard made him waste a peerless treasure so how could he just let him go like that? Since his power was strong enough now, the

hot blooded nature of Lei Yu would naturally take his revenge.

After asking around, it was determined that Hasegawa indeed went to the United States. Since he was in the U.S., then he wouldn't let him slip through this net; Lei Yu had decided to personally head to the U.S. And this time was the same as the last; he wasn't willing to bring anyone along with him. Having the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior was going to be Lei Yu's best excuse. At least having this strength now would not make his loved ones worry too much.

After making up his mind, Lei Yu still spent a considerable amount of time with Ai Er because he was too reluctant to leave her again. The

main headache he had to deal with was Nami, what should he do with this girl? He couldn't pretend he didn't do the deed with her right? Even though he did that act while his body wasn't in his own control, he was nonetheless a responsible man, at times people just had to assume the responsibility. Lei Yu decided that before he leaves, he will explain everything to Ai Er in detail, he didn't want to hide it anymore. Ever since he came back to Tenglong country with Nami, Ai Er was already somewhat puzzled about it.

Lei Yu didn't really love Nami, he just felt obligated towards her. Additionally, he felt some pity towards this foreign girl.

# Chapter 111:

## Meeting A Beauty In The Air

“What are your plans?” Lei Yu was in his own home, his hands resting on the window sill and looking at the outside scenery while he asked this.

Nami was the same as usual; respectfully standing beside Lei Yu except her facial expressions was slightly different from the past. “If the young master does not wish for me to follow by his side, then I will return to the Kou country and live with my grandmother. Young master did originally say that our

agreement was only for the period of time you were staying in the Kou country. Now that you've returned to the Tenglong country, I..."

As she was saying this, Nami's eyes began to turn red. In reality, she could not bear the thought of leaving Lei Yu's side.

Lei Yu sighed softly. Technically as a man, he should bear some responsibility towards Nami. As a person who already had a girlfriend to do such deeds to her, it indeed made Lei Yu feel ashamed of himself. Every time Lei Yu saw Nami, he didn't know how to face her and he couldn't forget the night of ecstasy at the hospital.

But there was one thing that



couldn't be ignored; inside Nami's body resides the origin strength of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity. If Nami was to find a male partner in the future, then the bead's power may be gifted to that person. Lei Yu was unwilling to have that scenario happen yet he could not be so selfish. There's no way he could keep an unmarried girl besides him for the rest of his life right? That's why Lei Yu was having this major headache.

"It's not that I don't want to keep you by my side, it's because I'm a person that already has a girlfriend. This whole thing was my fault, not to mention I can't give you want you want. If you keep following around my side, how are we supposed to treat each other in the

future?” Asked Lei Yu as he turned around and looked at the beautiful and charming girl that men won’t ever bear to abandon.

“Young master, I am only your servant, your slave, I’ve never dreamed of anything more. As long as I can be by your side, I am willing even if I am alone to the day I die! Your inadvertent love that night has already satisfied me. Moreover, wasn’t it because of that incident that you saved my life?” Unknown where that courage came from, Nami raised her head and replied emotionally.

Hearing Nami say this, Lei Yu felt somewhat pressured but this was a very reasonable explanation. To outsiders, he could tell them that

Nami was his maidservant or a nanny etc. Of course he couldn't say she was a servant or a slave inside Tenglong country because people would not accept that here.

He, himself understood there was a small part of him that was reluctant to part with Nami. And there was also a critical reason, which was the Spiritual Bead of Longevity.

Although he had already thought this through, Lei Yu did not change his decision; he still intended to go to the U.S. alone.

Lei Yu pulled Nami along, he then grabbed Nuo Hu and the three of them approached Ai Er. Through Lei Yu's miraculous spinning of words and Nuo Hu's eyewitness

account, they told Ai Er the whole shameful story. We can say that Ai Er at times was a spoiled little girl that loved to play games, yet at times she was a gentle and loving woman that was sensible and reasonable. Even though her heart was still filled with some reluctance, but after hearing Lei Yu had encountered such a serious event, that passionate night wasn't considered much in the scope of things.

Ai Er cried. She cried not because her own beloved man did such an absurd act, but because such a major event happened to Lei Yu and he didn't mention a single word to her. Everyone knew about it while she was the only one in the dark; of course this made her extremely

angry.

But everyone knew Lei Yu's personality; he just didn't want Ai Er to suffer and not wanting her to be worried to death. So, this crisis eventually came to its end; Nami got the acceptance of Lei Yu and got the recognition of Ai Er. With such a sensible and reasonable girlfriend, could anyone not see how blessed Lei Yu was?

Before leaving, Lei Yu debated with himself for a while and eventually decided not to visit the Lei family. Even though Lei Yun Tian did help him out a lot during the later times, Lei Yu still did not have any good feelings towards the Lei family. He will just go with the flow; if things were to happen then it will happen.

So what if he could predict how certain things would eventually develop into? Like the saying goes, you can't fight fate.

For this outing, Lei Yu could be described as loaded because the country had directly appropriated \$1.3 billion U.S. dollars for Lei Yu. From the entire event, Lei Yu's paltry compensation for his role would be considered a little sardine fish in the scope of an ocean.

Rejecting the country's assignment of a private jet to him, Lei Yu intended to use a commercial airline to leave the Tenglong country. Thus he embarks on a trip to an unfamiliar land, the United States of America.

Handing over his boarding pass, Lei Yu went and found his seat. He didn't bring any carry-on luggage with him since he really didn't need to in the first place. On his finger was the storage ring that contained everything he needed, the space inside was enough for him to move everything he has ever owned.

It's unknown why, but ever since Lei Yu started cultivating the methods in his mind, his body had undergone minute changes that were difficult to explain. The old Lei Yu was considered pretty good looking but it lacked the deep profoundness he possessed now. He now also gave off a sense of assurance and maturity, couple that with a young face and a pair of profound eyes, this made Lei Yu

exude an aura different than ordinary people. All of this was undoubtedly a deadly combination of poison to some girls, a forbidden poison they could not resist.

“Sir...”

The clear and crisp voice made Lei Yu open his eyes. From the voice, it should belong to a young woman. His gaze turned to his side and a beautiful girl dressed in a sky-blue uniform smiled to him while bending down. Upon seeing Lei Yu's eyes, she almost lost her senses but quickly recovered and said: “Sir, the plane is about to take off. Please fasten your seat belt.”

Lei Yu nodded and revealed a smile that could capture the hearts of



thousands of girls. He made a slight grin, "thanks for reminding me."

The girl nodded, her heart already doing somersaults in her chest. She then turned around and proceeded to remind several other passengers. Lei Yu unconsciously checked out this girl; the outline of her front and back had the perfect S curve; her chests were bountiful, her buttocks were firm; and she exuded the aura of what a flight attendant should have. Viewing her from the side profile, she could already be considered top notch compared to all other women.

With her long hair tied into a bun on her head, willow curved eyebrows and large eyes, the oval face that typical beautiful girls had,

this total package even made Lei Yu a bit dazed. Noticing the girl looking back towards him, Lei Yu hurriedly looked the other way and chuckled to himself.

The airplane slowly took off. Lei Yu closed his eye to sleep since there was nothing else better to do. Since there's no way for him to cultivate here, he might as well get some much needed rest.

About an hour into the flight, the airplane was rapidly flying forward at a high altitude. Lei Yu had gradually drifted into the world of dreams, yet even so, he is able to immediately detect the slightest movement around him.

Hearing light footsteps almost like

the steps of a kitten that ordinary people wouldn't be able to detect, they were approaching and stopped at his position. Lei Yu didn't open his eyes but felt that something was moving on top of his legs. Needless to say, it should be the pretty air stewardess draping a blanket over him. Unknown if it was intentional or unintentional, his crotch area received a gentle touch. Then in a quick movement, the hand that touched him suddenly pulled back. The hurried footsteps of someone walking away made Lei Yu open his eyes to take a look; it should be that pretty stewardess that told him to fasten his seatbelt right?

Not caring too much, Lei Yu pulled up the blanket and continued to sleep.

This air stewardess returned to the staff area was patting her chest, her face was flushed red. "Thank god he was asleep; otherwise it would be too embarrassing! Really, how could I be so careless?" Thinking about it, perhaps she was too focused on Lei Yu's face and did not realize the position of her hand.

"Xin Er, what's going on with you?"

A colleague's voice asked from the side. The air stewardess called Xin Er frantically shook her head, "Ah! Oh, nothing, it's nothing."

Lei Yu woke up from the world of dreams, feeling a lot better. As he was about to get up to use the toilets, the airplane suddenly started shaking. Followed after this

was a broadcast over the speakers:  
“Attention all distinguished guests,  
the shaking and tremors were  
caused by turbulence in the air.  
Please do not panic and fasten your  
seatbelts, we will pass this patch of  
turbulence very soon.”

After this, the same announcement  
was made in English. Lei Yu  
shrugged. “What a coincidence...  
just when I need to use the toilet.”  
He could only helplessly sit back  
down. Even though he didn’t really  
care about bumps caused by  
turbulence, what would others  
think when he disobeyed the rules?

An airplane’s speed is really fast, at  
least faster than an auto  
rickshaw[1] many times. The plane  
punctually arrived at an U.S.

airport. Lei Yu stretched his body a bit before preparing to leave the plane.

Once again seeing the air stewardess, Lei Yu lightly smiled without saying anything. The face of this stewardess called Xin Er began to heat up again as she recalled the previous incident.

Arriving in the U.S., Lei Yu was not as restricted like the time he got to the Kou country. His English level was considered not bad, especially since when he learned it, the pronunciation and accent he was taught in was American English. Finding a hotel or pretty much anything here was much easier.

---

[1] Not sure why the author put that comment in unless he believes most of the readers have never flown on an airplane before. But I bet most of the readers have no clue what an auto rickshaw is!

# Chapter 112: A Group Of Competing Beauties

Making his selection the same way as the Kou country, Lei Yu picked a hotel that wasn't too far from the airport. After making arrangements for a room, he then entered inside.

He removed some clothes from the storage ring and hung them up in the closet. Lei Yu turned around and went inside the bathroom to enjoy a hot bath.

New York City was the largest city



in the United States, and it also contained the largest port in the country. Located in the northeast of the Atlantic coast, this place was where the world's most important commercial and financial centers were situated.

Major media companies, politicians, educational institutions, entertainment and fashion behemoths were all gathered here. This was considered one of the three major global international cities.

Lei Yu's current location was the famous New York City. The Meng Yu Agency he established in the Kou country had partnered with a few of companies here, so Lei Yu coming here was not an utterly

clueless undertaking. Lei Yu was considered to have some fame so there weren't many people that didn't know about him in the upper echelon of society. Even the ordinary people have heard about him, it's just that they've never gotten a chance to see him in person.

After washing up, he put on some clean clothes and made a call to one of the hotel's service departments. A short while later, a young man came to Lei Yu's room and took away his dirty clothes.

Night time in New York was considered beautiful. Lei Yu's interest was perked, intending to go out and look around. The most important thing was to fill his

stomach – the saying goes construction requires steel and iron while humans require food. Lei Yu's existence is different from ordinary people; it's not too problematic if he doesn't eat. But as a human being, how would he be willing to give up such an enjoyable process? Lei Yu was very happy to accept such an enjoyment.

Americans are very casual when it comes to food but they've managed to make it interesting; even simple fast food here was quite delicious. New York City can be considered as a world renowned culinary city.

Leaving his hotel room, Lei Yu walked to the end of the hallway to the elevator.

When it comes to coincidences, Lei Yu wasn't a believer yet there are times that even he has to admit it happens. With his superhuman hearing ability, Lei Yu heard a conversation inside a room as he was walking by.

“Xin Er, what's with you today? How come you're so out of it?”

Hearing the people inside were using the Tenglong language to converse, Lei Yu's interest was piqued. Pausing to eavesdrop a bit, little did he know this conversation was going to freak him out.

“Did you know how shameful it was? Today on the plane, there was this really good looking passenger. I originally wanted to be nice and

help cover him up with a blanket, but I wasn't paying attention and touched his... ack! I don't want to say it anymore!"

Lei Yu could not help but blink.  
"What the hell? No way!"

"Quickly tell me, how good looking? You are too lucky, actually being able to touch him there... you are too formidable!"

"You're so hateful, let's stop talking about this. I'm hungry; let's go get something to eat!" As these words were said, the hotel room door opened. Lei Yu was still standing there like a dummy and the two people's eyes met.

The cell phone in Xin Er's hand

dropped out of her hand. Lei Yu's reaction was almost instantaneous, he bent down and grabbed the phone out of the air and handed it back to her. This scene seemed to have frozen for over ten seconds while Xin Er did not even reach for her own cell phone. She suddenly slammed the door shut in Lei Yu's face which made him speechless. "She doesn't want this cell phone anymore?"

With her back against the door, Xin Er's heart was beating like crazy. "What should I do? What should I do? I'm about to die of embarrassment!"

"Xin Er, what's going on? Aren't we going out to eat? Let's hurry up and go!"

Hearing the voices inside the room, Lei Yu gently knocked on the door.

“Who is it?!”

Xin Er didn't say anything; it was the other girl in the room that yelled this out. Lei Yu rubbed his nose, “you don't want the cell phone anymore?”

“Cell phone? What cell phone?”

The door once again opened so Lei Yu smiled while handing the cell phone over. Lei Yu's eyes were casting a gentle look which thoroughly subdued this young girl called Xin Er. All she could do was stare in a daze as Lei Yu's back gradually walked away.

“Wow! He's really good looking! Xin

Er, you... you weren't talking about him right?" The young girl whose appearance was considered not bad patted Xin Er's shoulder while she peeked out watching Lei Yu leave.

Xin Er lightly nodded her head.  
"Woa! This girl is going through spring fever! You're in love with Mr. Anonymous!"

Lei Yu walking away hesitated and almost stumbled over his own feet. The words this girl was using was rather blunt, he never expected this! Lei Yu increased his walking speed and pressed the elevator button.

"Thump thump thump!" The sound of footsteps of someone running could be heard. Lei Yu turned to look and a girl pulling another girl



was running towards him.

“Handsome guy!”

Lei Yu hesitantly put on a smile,  
“you’re talking to me?”

“Of course, is there anyone else here besides you?” Behind the girl that was talking, Xin Er kept her head down in shyness without saying anything.

“Uh... do you need something? Lei Yu was kind of puzzled. Just because she touched his deadly weapon, she’s not going to talk to him about marriage right? It’s not possible right?

“Are you alone? Want to treat us to dinner?” This girl’s blunt and coarse attitude was hard for Lei Yu

to get used to. Isn't she somewhat similar to the old Cui Ying Ying?

\*Cough cough\* "That's... sure, no problem. What do you two want to eat?"

What a joke. Lei Yu was worth \$1.3 billion U.S. dollars, why would he care about treating someone to dinner? No matter if the way to eat abalone or shark fins[1], Lei Yu could afford it plenty.

"No, it can't be just two of us; can we call all our fellow sisters out?" This girl had a grin on her face as she looked at Lei Yu. Behind her, Xin Er was tugging at this girl's clothes while Lei Yu could not help sucking in a breath of air.

“No need to be so ruthless right?”

“You aren’t a stingy person right? Looking at your appearance, you shouldn’t be someone poor. You came alone to the U.S. and staying in such a good hotel while we are only staying here on the company’s arrangement.”

Lei Yu clenched his teeth. “Fine! How many people?” Lei Yu gently rubbed his face while his inner thoughts were screaming out. “Am I really fated to be a ladies’ man? No, this scenario isn’t being a ladies’ man; it looks more like a person fated to be taken advantage of.”

A group of hot girls that could cause nosebleeds were surrounding a Lei Yu that was looking left and

right. Now this scene was awe-inspiring!

Lei Yu was thinking to himself:  
“The victim here appears to be me?  
Are all air stewardesses this open?  
How come I’ve never realized this  
before? \*Sigh\* It would be great if  
Liu Hao was here right now...”

Among the group of sixteen people,  
all the girls were wearing t-shirts;  
some wore denim shorts while  
others wore miniskirts. This  
beautiful scene caused many  
Americans that were unable to  
resist look over at them. When they  
saw Lei Yu, they couldn’t help  
envying him. So many beautiful  
girls surrounding a single guy, he  
should be feeling extremely lucky!  
Who knew that Lei Yu was actually

feeling somewhat bitter right now because he's going to have to dig deep into his wallet soon!

If it were like before, Lei Yu would not have the leisure to do this. Even when he had nothing to do, he would just do something simple. Fortunately these beauties still had some humanity left in them; the place they chose wasn't particularly expensive. Bustling and loud, the group arrived at a western restaurant. The deserted restaurant was suddenly lively and crowded. Following their customary moves in Tenglong country, if there weren't enough space for them to sit altogether, then they'll just push the tables together. Six tables were pushed together, and Lei Yu was pulled by the girls to sit at the head

of the table. To one side, they deliberately arranged for Xin Er to sit next to him. And on his other side, a pretty girl with long wavy hair. This pretty girl had great features; wearing a pink mini skirt that showed off her really white legs, she could easily cause guys to have nosebleeds.

“Pick the dishes, pick the dishes!” Yelled out a girl. “Handsome guy, how much money did you bring? Is it enough to treat us?”

Lei Yu picked up the napkin from the table, gently wiping the imaginary sweat from his forehead. “Why didn’t you ask this before we came here?” Pretending to be reaching into his pocket, he quickly took a stack of bills from his

storage ring; fortunately he had cash ready. Once the wad of cash appeared, all the girls started making noises. The restaurant manager's eyes also opened wide before he ran up to Lei Yu. He politely asked in English:

"Distinguished guest, how can we serve you?"

Lei Yu gently flickered through at least two hundred bills, each and every one of them being \$100's.

"Anything is fine; just pick the best tasting dishes since I'm taking this group of beautiful swans to dinner."

Was this a joke? Twenty thousand U.S. dollars, if this was exchanged for Tenglong currency, it'll be worth about \$140,000 – \$150,000. Eating an entire shark would not cost that

much.

All the beauties once again glanced at Lei Yu. They original watched for his reaction while they get could a good laugh out of it, but their eyes turned into eyes of admiration, surprise, and filled with charm. Wasn't this change too quick?

Lei Yu didn't really care since this was the country's money and not his own. Moreover, he never intended to see these air stewardesses again. So going with the flow of his mood, he might as well treat his fellow laborers to a good meal.

Six tables were filled with delicious food. The restaurant manager could only regret that he lacked



ingredients and unable to take all of this rich and generous young master's money.

During dinner, each of the beauties would take their glass of red wine and go up to Lei Yu and flirt with him, all hoping to win his attention. They even put their own cell phone numbers into Lei Yu's phone that was left on the table. But out of all the girls present, Lei Yu only remembered the name of one girl – Hu Xin Er. She's the beautiful air stewardess that accidentally touched him in that spot.

Throughout the whole dinner, Xin Er never said a word and only keeping her head down. She would occasionally take a sip of the red wine and grab only the food nearest

to her, unlike her fellow colleagues who were loud and boisterous. Her fellow sister colleagues were treating this restaurant as their own playground or something. But from time to time, she will take glances at Lei Yu. Each time her eyes met with Lei Yu's, she would shyly lower her head again afraid to say anything.

This meal took them more than two hours to eat. The group of girls were pleading to go to a bar to have themselves a good time, and since Lei Yu couldn't argue his way out of it, he could only nod in agreement.

Naturally Lei Yu was not willing to go, but he was helpless in this situation. There are times when one is not in control such as today. He's

like the main character today and if he doesn't give them some face by going along, then the whole night's entertainment would probably be over and he will be the cause of it.

Their group were happily enjoying themselves until at least 2AM before thinking of returning to the hotel. Fortunately for the time difference and Lei Yu having slept on the plane, he wasn't a bit sleepy.

Hailing five taxis, everyone returned to the hotel with a ruckus. "Don't you all need to work the return trip tomorrow? How are you going to wake up tomorrow by staying out so late tonight?"

Lei Yu casually asked since he was in a taxi with several of the girls.

One of the beauties was resting her head on his shoulder while she used her thigh to rub Lei Yu's leg. "What? Feeling sorry for us? Don't worry; we don't work the return flight until the day after. By the way, why did you come to the U.S.? Is there something you have to do here?"

-----

[1] Being able to afford abalones and shark fins is similar to a person being able to afford caviar.

# Chapter 113: Buying A Car Again

“Just some personal matters.” Lei Yu replied with a smile at Hu Xin Er who was sitting in the front passenger seat.

“How long will you be staying here? Not sure if we’ll get to see you again in the future.” Said one of the girls somewhat reluctant to part ways.

Lei Yu shrugged. “I’m not sure myself, but it might be a while.”

Returning to the hotel, Lei Yu decided he will change hotels tomorrow. If he continues hanging out with these girls, sooner or later

something might happen. If there were any more “accidents,” Lei Yu wasn’t sure how he was going to explain it to Ai Er.

Taking off his clothes, Lei Yu quietly sat down cross-legged on the floor. He slowly circulated his internal energy through each meridian and veins. The way to circulate it was all according to the last few cultivating methods that were etched into his mind.

Just because Lei Yu had reached the [Detachment] stage, he wasn’t filled with the sense of satisfaction. He wanted to explore deeper into the profoundness of his abilities since there’s no way that cultivators can only achieve the Sixth Order rank right? If a cultivator reaches the

peak of the Sixth Order and breaks through, then what would happen? During the time he spent cultivating, this was the point that Lei Yu was most curious about. A human's potential should be limitless, yet not everyone is able to dig out that potential. Lei Yu was hoping that as he reaches his peak in cultivation, he will be able to dig out that potential and create something unimaginable.

Ever since he came back to life, Lei Yu felt empty inside his body like it was missing a lot of things, and missing something he could rely on. He was only left with his own internal energy circulating around the body. That green energy that once circulated around as protection was hiding somewhere;

it never had an inkling of wanting to come out at all. As for the yellow energy of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity, its power naturally disappeared without a trace.

Suddenly losing two treasures that were crucial in his own cultivation, Lei Yu's progression rate of cultivation had definitely slowed down. He also had to be extra cautious now too.

He couldn't be reckless like before, not caring if his veins were damaged or not. Right now he didn't have anything to help him repair them so if for some reason he caused damaged to his internal body, then it will take a long time for it to recover.

Lei Yu was breathing steadily.



Breathing out the turbid air from his abdominal cavity, and gradually entering into a state of calmness.

After reaching the [Detachment] stage, Lei Yu's internal energy was not circulating around in a tyrannical manner like before, and it was easier to control now. Each time his internal energy finished a full cycle, Lei Yu was able to clearly feel that his own physique was continually being improved on. He was becoming more powerful than before; his meridians and bone structure was also becoming more resilient.

As always, Lei Yu avoided the piece of jade resting against his chest. It was now different from the past; when the Spiritual Bead of

Longevity was still inside his body, he still had to think long and hard before entering it to absorb the moonlight's essence. Now that he didn't even have that bead, someone can threaten to beat him to death and he still won't enter the pendant. Having already reached the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior, if he wasn't careful and failed miserably inside the pendant, his crying will only fall on deaf ears.

From the beginning, it was merely physical strength to load bearing strength, then to attacking power. Now Lei Yu's lightning power allowed him to release it outside of his body into a physical state. Lei Yu's improvement was extraordinary which everyone could obviously see.

After a night of cultivation, Lei Yu slowly opened his eyes. Recently Lei Yu had felt somewhat uncomfortable because after he finished cultivating, it wasn't like before where his whole body would be covered in impurities. We're not saying Lei Yu was a masochist and enjoyed being tortured with stench; it's just that after releasing those impurities would make him feel like he was floating on air. The sudden disappearance of the treasure that could clear impurities made Lei Yu not get accustomed to it. And he suddenly loss two types of abilities, which made Lei Yu hate Hasegawa even more. These were ultimate treasures that benefited Lei Yu's cultivation greatly and having them simply disappear like this, his heart ached painfully.

Out of habit, he went to wash up and put on a set of clean clothes. Lei Yu intended to go out and look around New York City so he could familiarize himself here.

Lei Yu wasn't sure if the target he was searching for was hiding in this city, but every city should have the presence of cultivators or practitioners about. With those people's help, Lei Yu should more or less be able to find some clues.

While in the Kou country, he had already found out that Hasegawa was connected to some research base here in the U.S. Regarding mutants, Black Panther had already given him some information on them. When Black Panther was injected with the H series mutagen,

it was actually co-developed by researchers from the U.S. As long as he can find the American version of mutants here, then everything will be solved eventually.

Lei Yu took a taxi cab and arrived at a busy downtown area, Lower Manhattan – Wall Street. This place had a rich environment for businessmen especially for people in the financial industry who were too numerous to count. But Lei Yu was not too interested in any of this; he was thinking that arriving at a new place without a car was really inconvenient. Even if he could walk until his legs broke, he still won't get used to this place. Therefore...

Having a soft spot for the Mercedes

brand, Lei Yu chose the E series roadster[1]. The included equipment of this car completely satisfied Lei Yu, and using the cash he possessed in the U.S. was more convenient than in Tenglong country. There was no need to go back and forth for currency exchange[2].

Abandoning the thoughts he had while in the Kou country, Lei Yu could not reveal the mysterious young master had arrived in the U.S. or else he would certainly set off some big waves. If this was the case, Hasegawa would probably roll up his pants and run off barefoot.

Within a crowd of people, Lei Yu was eating some delicious cookies while wandering around. Many people passing by him weren't his

target, so it appears wanting to find a breakthrough point was not an easy thing. Getting back into his brand new car and driving off, it was already evening hours by the time Lei Yu returned to his hotel.

“Wow! Such a nice car! Handsome guy, you are way too cool!”

Hearing the compliment in the Tenglong language, Lei Yu turned around. Trying hard to recall who this sexily dressed beauty was, he finally remembered she was one of the air stewardesses he went out with last night. Eyes filled with admiration, this air stewardess had many large and small bags in her hands while she was standing in an empty spot of the parking lot not too far where Lei Yu was parked.

Used to being in such a situation, Lei Yu didn't really mind. With a slight smile, "pretty girl, want me to help you carry some bags? You're going back to the hotel right?" Lei Yu really couldn't remember her name so he could only use the pretty girl greeting that was popular and the "in" thing nowadays.

This girl did not hold back, "thanks then!"

Holding her things, Lei Yu then asked: "How come you're alone? Where did all your colleagues go?"

The girl pretended to be angry and pouted: "With such a big beauty like me is not enough? You are way too greedy, wanting my fellow sister colleagues to accompany you as



well?

“Uh...”

Arriving at the hotel entrance, they happened to meet Hu Xin Er and the girl she was rooming with. The girls were surprised as they looked at all the bags Lei Yu was holding onto before they looked at their colleague beside him.

“You two went out together to buy things?” Asked the girl who was holding onto Xin Er’s arm.

Lei Yu smiled. “We just happened to meet in the parking lot. What’s going on? You two are going out right now?”

“Yea, we’re going out for a bit. Handsome guy, do you want to

come with us?" Asked the girl bluntly, ignoring Xin Er shoving her.

Lei Yu shrugged, "it doesn't matter, I don't really have anything to do so hanging out with you guys sounds good. If you two could wait a bit, I'm going to help bring her stuff upstairs before I take you two."

Without waiting for their response, Lei Yu and the former girl went into the elevator. Xin Er and her roommate didn't understand what Lei Yu meant when he said he was going to take them? But with a hot guy accompanying them, they didn't really care and just felt how wonderful it would be.

---

[1] There's no Mercedes Benz dealership anywhere near Wall Street in our world but there is one in the author's world.

[2] If a reader is confused, Lei Yu was given \$1.3 billion U.S. dollars by the country that were still in U.S. denominations and not the Tenglong currency.

# Chapter 114:

## Brother In A Foreign Land

Waiting for Lei Yu to return to the lobby, the girls finally understood what he his words meant.

“Handsome guy, exactly how much money do you have? You’ve just arrived and you bought such a cool car, it must have cost a lot right?”

“Ha ha, I just bought this... weren’t you two going somewhere? How do we get there? I’m still new to the roads in the U.S.” Said Lei Yu with a smile.

“Xin Er, want to go look for your older brother?” Asked the girl as she nudged Xin Er.

“Eh? Oh! I don’t know the specific name of the place, but it’s straight ahead, I only know the general direction.” Xin Er just recovered from her fantasizing before replying.

Lei Yu smiled. “This tour guide is not bad, she only knows the location but doesn’t know the name of it... rarely seen, really a sight rarely seen[1].”

Lei Yu drove his car inside the city and made many turns before finally arriving at Xin Er’s so called destination. This place was considered a historic street and the

pedestrians on this street were obviously much less than other places.

There are big differences between Western and Eastern architecture but they each have their own characteristic and flair. Lei Yu and group arrived at a building that used to be white but due to the age of time, it had long become yellow in color. They walked to the side of the building and went through a small gate.

Going up to the fourth floor, Lei Yu slightly wrinkled his eyebrows but did not say anything. Knocking on a dark red wooden door, a guy about twenty something years of age with a weird appearance opened the door. One look and you can tell he

was a Tenglong person because he had features that made one proud.

“Brother!” Xin Er jumped forward and hugged this person.

“You silly girl, now you visit your brother? Have you been well-behaved lately?” Smiled the guy while looking at Lei Yu’s direction without any unusual expressions. Perhaps he thought that Lei Yu was a colleague of Xin Er’s. As for the other girl, he apparently knew her since he didn’t show any signs of being a stranger towards.

Lei Yu also showed a smile on his face when he was actually a little surprised, but he didn’t show that on his face and did not say anything either.

They were politely welcomed into the apartment. Carefully observing, Lei Yu felt even more curious. The furnishings inside the apartment were rather simple, only a few chairs and a dining table, and they were all covered in dust. With Lei Yu's amazing eyesight, he found that the cups on top of the table also had a thin layer of dust on them. It appears the reason was due to not being used for a long time.

Xin Er's brother went to a plastic bag on a chair near the kitchen. "Have a drink, I just bought these."

Lei Yu looked very casual but in reality, he had already analyzed the whole situation inside the apartment. There originally was no reason for him to do so but once he



saw a cow's skull hanging on the wall as a decorative piece, he felt that Xin Er's brother was not simple. He was absolutely not your average person.

Putting down his drink, Lei Yu said with a smile: "I'm sorry but I still have things to do and will be leaving first, you two siblings have a nice chat. If there's a need, Xin Er can just call me and I will pick her up."

"Ah? Okay, that's fine then." The two girls were kind of reluctant but Lei Yu really had nothing to do here so they couldn't just force him to stay around right?

"I'm sorry, it's my neglect. My name is Hu Jiong and it's really nice to

have met you.” Hu Jiong reached out and shook hands with Lei Yu.

“Lei Yu.”

After Lei Yu left, Hu Jiong was slightly dazed. “Brother, what’s going on with you?”

“Is he a colleague of your company?”

“Nope, he’s a passenger we met on the plane. But he’s a really nice person and even treated all of us to dinner.” As Xin Er was saying this, her face started becoming red. The girl on the side giggled but didn’t say anything.

He wasn’t too concerned about the situation. Since his sister had come, the older brother naturally had to

do the honors of being the host and treat them at a nearby restaurant for a meal.

Lei Yu drove his car down the street to an inconspicuous place and sat quietly inside, waiting for something. The moon gradually rose up. With the moonlight, Lei Yu saw the trio emerge from a restaurant.

“Honk! Honk!”

Lei Yu pressed the car's horn a few times making the trio turn around. Lei Yu stylishly got out of the car and saw the two beauties with their eyes wide in surprise.

“How come you didn't leave?” Xin Er asked in surprise.

“I just happened to come back after finishing my errands so I can drive you two. What, you don’t want me to?”

“Of course we do. Brother, then we’re gonna...”

“Then hurry back, don’t you have to go on the return flight tomorrow?” Hu Jiong said nonchalantly.

Bidding farewell to her brother and promising she will see him next time; the three drove off from Hu Jiong’s place.

“Xin Er, what does your brother do for a living?” Lei Yu seemingly asked in a casual way.

“I don’t know, my brother never mentioned it. But he does go to

work somewhere around here.”

“How long has he been in the U.S.?”

“For several years now. He has returned home twice but usually rushes back to the U.S. I really don’t know why he’s always so busy every day.” Xin Er was somewhat complaining how she rarely sees her brother. Even if she sometimes flies to the U.S. for work, it’s not definite that she would be able to see him because he’s usually disappeared off somewhere.

“Okay, you two go up and rest up, I still have some things to do and will be going out.” Without realizing it, Lei Yu had already driven them to the front of the hotel. The two girls reluctantly walked into the hotel

but would keep looking back at Lei Yu. They knew they would be leaving tomorrow so they wanted some extra looks at the rich, considerate and handsome guy. Looks like they don't have such good fortune to land him in their arms.

Watching the two enter the hotel, Lei Yu turned the car around. His goal was the residence of Hu Jiong who he had just left from.

“Bzzt, bzzt!”

The doorbell gave off a weird sound. Opening the door, Hu Jiong was somewhat surprised. “Lei Yu? Why are you...?”

Lei Yu smiled. “Can I chat with you

for a bit?”

Thinking for a short time, he fully opened the door and Lei Yu went inside.

“I’m very curious about your real identity. Oh, don’t worry; I don’t have any malicious intent. When it comes to dealing with my fellow Tenglong citizens, I’m usually very polite.” Lei Yu said this while playing with the ring on his finger while smiling at Hu Jiong.

“Who are you? Why are you curious about my identity? Did you intentionally come with Xin Er today?” Hu Jiong was highly vigilant while he watched Lei Yu with a frown.

“No, this whole thing was a coincidence. But my curiosity was piqued after meeting you so I came back. I am looking for a person and he’s really important to me. I heard from Xin Er that you’ve been in the U.S. for a long time so I was hoping I’d find some clues through you.” Lei Yu said so openly without any nonsense since this was his style of doing things.

“What do you want to know about?”

“I want to know any information related to mutants.” Lei Yu’s eyes were staring at Hu Jiong in front of him, his deep profound eyes not giving anything away. The atmosphere in the room seemed to have frozen as the two did not say anything while staring at each



other.

A short while later, Hu Jiong smiled. "I don't understand what you're talking about."

"Oh, really? As a bounty hunter, would they not have any information on mutants? That's just too much of a joke." Lei Yu wasn't looking at Hu Jiong anymore. He stood up and walked towards the wall with a cow skull hanging on it, carefully observing it in detail. "I don't think this is a cow's skull, this should be a human skull after it transformed right?"

When Lei Yu arrived in this apartment with Xin Er, he already felt this skull didn't really belong to the cattle species; this was due to

the residual essence that was detected by Lei Yu. He also knew about a habit about bounty hunters. They were similar to ordinary people who went hunting in the mountains; they liked to hang their prize on the wall as a show of glory. But bounty hunters could not be so reckless as to start hanging human-like heads on the walls, so Hu Jiong chose to hang mutants that changed with cow features as his decoration.

Hu Jiong breathed in a cool breath of air. With his extraordinary strength, he quickly recovered from the surprise. "It's my turn to be curious towards your identity... You're right, I'm a bounty hunter. And I'm the only bounty hunter here with a Tenglong country

nationality. So can you tell me who you are?”

“I’ll get straight to the point, we don’t fight amongst fellow citizens and we were never enemies to begin with.” Pausing a bit, Lei Yu then continued: “You should know who I am... many people call me the young master.”

Hu Jiong looked like he turned into a stone statue as he stared at Lei Yu in a daze, not saying a single word.

-----

[1] Lei Yu’s sarcastic remark, to rarely meet a person like this.

# Chapter 115: Bounty Hunter

“You are the Lei family’s second young master?” Hu Jiong asked with wide round eyes.

Inside Lei Yu’s heart, there were still some things he rejected. “You can call me Lei Yu or you can call me young master, but please don’t add the Lei family along with it.”

Knowing everything Lei Yu did in the Kou country, a sense of reverence could not help but rise from Hu Jiong’s heart towards this person who was younger than him.

“Young master, how did you know

the skull on the wall was not of the cattle species and actually from mutants?” Hu Jiong was extremely puzzled; it has already become bones yet was it that obvious?

Lei Yu slightly grinned before putting on his signature smile. “Upon looking at this skull, it’s relatively small. If someone looked at it, they would assume it was a calf’s head. But remaining in the skull is a trace of essence that I could detect. And not only that, I also know you are a Fourth Order Warrior, is that correct?”

“Yes, that’s right!” Hu Jiong could not help but admire this young master.

“I would really like to know what’s

going on with mutants here because in the Kou country, one of them escaped. You could say that he and I have a blood feud, and I came to the U.S. solely to look for him. Therefore I hope you can give me some information.” Lei Yu proceeded back to his seat and sat down.

Hu Jiong nodded his head. Facing Lei Yu, there was no more need to hide anything. For someone like Lei Yu, any Tenglong citizen would revere and respect him, let alone being face to face with him. Hu Jiong actually felt somewhat uncomfortable since he never thought that he would actually be so close to his idol.

“I receive rewards by performing

services for a guild. They are responsible for intelligence gathering while I am directly responsible for capturing or killing them. Afterwards, I would then go back to the guild and receive the reward money. As for how the guild specifically operates, that I'm not too clear on. I've also never overstep my boundaries and asked further questions on mutants or any other transformed species because there's no benefit in knowing too much. But if the young master needs to understand the current situation here, how about I take you along to the guild tomorrow when I accept my new mission? What do you think?" Hu Jiong tentatively asked. As a high-profile young master above many, Hu Jiong's question was somewhat redundant

and silly but why would Lei Yu care? As long as he can find the clues needed as soon as possible, there's nothing Lei Yu wasn't willing to try. Not to mention Lei Yu was unfamiliar with the occupation of being a bounty hunter, he too was interested in how things worked.

“Then it's decided, I'll pick you up tomorrow morning. Oh yeah, don't tell your sister about my identity, it's best to keep this confidential.” Thinking about it, Lei Yu was afraid of any misunderstanding so he then said: “But it's most likely that I will never see your sister after this so it doesn't really matter I guess.”

Hu Jiong appeared to understand and nodded, “I understand.”



Lei Yu left and returned to his hotel. He never thought that only coming to the U.S. for two days and he would already find some clues. This was thanks to Xin Er bringing him along to see Hu Jiong. If it weren't for Hu Jiong, wanting to find a mutant in this large city would definitely be a huge headache.

As to why Hu Jiong would leave home and go to the U.S. to become a bounty hunter, Lei Yu had no interest to know. Especially since this was someone's private matter and there's no reason for him to find out. But the way he was living here didn't seem to make him look too well off. If Hu Jiong was to return to Tenglong country with his strength, then the country would surely be treating him with

importance. Someone with the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior would be regarded as one of the top experts already.

When Lei Yu returned, he was scared out of his wits. He never thought that he would be so incredibly popular... As he took his first step out of the elevator, he could already feel there was something wrong with the atmosphere. Poking his head out from the elevator, a full sixteen pairs of eyes, a total of thirty-two eyeballs were staring at him. Lei Yu swallowed hard before forcing out a smile and idiotically saying: "All you pretty girls... still haven't gone to bed?"

"Isn't it because we're all waiting

for you? Sheesh, we're all leaving tomorrow and you didn't come back early to spend time with us." While only wearing a white low-cut nightgown that showed off her bare thighs, the girl said this in displeasure as she grabbed Lei Yu's arm.

Lei Yu didn't know what else to say. "... I'll treat everyone to drinks?"

"Bang, bang, bang, bang!"

The sound of doors closing could be heard while Lei Yu confusingly stood there. With just a little over two minutes, all the doors opened again. Each of the pretty girls was dressed to the nines. Regardless of which country the guy is from, seeing this scene will give them a

nosebleed. All the girls were dressed in an extremely sexy manner, and there were two of them that came out wearing only tube tops. Lei Yu scratched his head, “who said girls take a long time to get ready? Looks like that saying should be thrown out!”

New York City was very pretty at night. There was plenty of drinking places amongst the multitude of lights so who would bother to enjoy the night scenery? All these pretty girls had the same thought, and that was if they would be able to see Lei Yu, this rich and good looking guy again.

Everyone enjoyed themselves the whole night while Lei Yu was worried for them. If the airline

knew that he was the cause of all these air stewardess with two black eyes and yawning during work, wouldn't they be pissed off?

Forgetting about them, Lei Yu was anxious to get with Hu Jiong to take a look at the so called Bounty Hunters Guild. According to Hu Jiong, wanting to become a bounty hunter wasn't something difficult. As long as he gave them a codename, the guild would give him a card. On the card would be a number on it, and he would input that number every time he took a mission. Once the mission was completed and confirmed by the guild, the bounty reward would be transferred to their bank account the next day.

And the reason why Hu Jiong was the only bounty hunter with the Tenglong nationality was very simple, he had the strength. With the generous treatment by the Tenglong government, who would bother to come all the way here to endanger their lives? And it's only in foreign countries would these extraordinary existences do this. They did not want people to know about their differences because it made them feel uncomfortable.

-----

With Hu Jiong giving directions, their car arrived in a busy downtown area. There was heavy vehicular traffic and throngs of people walking about. Lei Yu was skeptical, would such a unique

guild be established here? Lei Yu would understand everyone very soon.

Hu Jiong and he arrived on a floor of the building and it was actually a gym. Lei Yu spread out his awareness and detected most of them were ordinary people. A lot of them were running on treadmills sweating like they were drenched by the rain. There were also a few unordinary existences here, but Lei Yu no longer cared about them. If he had never met Hu Jiong then he would definitely be interested in them. Now Lei Yu's entire interest was place on this Bounty Hunters Guild.

The strange thing was Hu Jiong brought out a so called identity card

that looked exactly like a gym membership card. The only difference was the beginning few letters on the card, which denoted a different status. A blonde beauty brought them two towards a door at the far end of the gym. She then punched in some codes on the door before it opened for them.



# Chapter 116:

## Undertaking A Mission

The blonde beauty made a “please” gesture before leaving. The two entered inside and a long hallway appeared that was a distance of about thirty meters. A youth came forward and took the card in Hu Jiong’s hand. The youth slid the card into a machine and a photo Hu Jiong appeared on the screen.

\*Click click\* “Identification confirmed, Fourth Rank Hunter Ancient Moon!”

Lei Yu looked at Hu Jiong with some surprise. It appears his code

name came about from breaking his surname apart[1], not a bad choice.

The youth looked at Lei Yu, “this person is...?”

Hu Jiong’s voice was deep, and with a blank face he replied: “He is my friend who wishes to join the Bounty Hunters Guild.”

“Please come with me.” Following the youth, the two came to a door to the fourth room. Gently knocking, the youth invited Lei Yu to enter. The room was simply furnished but the place was very clean. A middle-aged man in his forties asked a series of questions while Lei Yu briefly answered. After confirming his code name and password, Lei

had chosen “Lightning” as his bounty hunter code name. But if he wanted to make a name for himself in the line of being a bounty hunter, then he had to show some results. It was necessary for him to complete a series of missions successfully in order for that to happen or else he will be stuck at the first rank of a bounty hunter.

Finishing the paperwork, Lei Yu received a card. The card was golden yellow with the name of the gym printed on it with some extra letters preceding some numbers that only bounty hunters had. Lei Yu asked: “Where can I get missions?”

The middle-aged man did not bother looking up at him. To people

that had just joined their Bounty Hunters Guild; he had no interest in cozying up with them. He halfheartedly responded: “Room #8.”

Lei Yu left the room and Hu Jiong was outside waiting. They both went to room #8 and inside had a dozen or so machines. There happen to be three people inside standing in front of machines, each selecting something but they didn’t say a thing to each other.

Imitating Hu Jiong, Lei Yu inserted his card into a slot at the lower portion of the machine. The card was automatically swallowed and a line of English words appeared on the machine: “Welcome, First Rank Bounty Hunter Lightning.”

Right after that were some options. According to the text prompts, Lei Yu found the area for accepting missions. Since he was only a First Rank Bounty Hunter, the only missions he could pick were ranked one. As Lei Yu was going through the selections, he was surprised to find that dealing with mutants weren't the only missions for bounty hunters.

Selections included other supernatural beings belonging to other races such as the extraordinary Werewolf bloodlines of Europe. They were a very strange race that was naturally tyrannical. Just like in legends, werewolves were aligned with evil who had suffered a millennial curse. Whenever they encountered a full

moon or some type of emotional stress, they will transform to their werewolf's true form. At other times, they would be no different from regular people but their physical fitness and strength would exceed the limits of ordinary people and even some more.

There was another race that was targets of bounty hunters and they were those with bloodlines that have existed for thousands of years or longer – Vampires. As for the specifics, it may be due to the lack of data but not a lot of information was available. Lei Yu also only briefly glanced at it since he couldn't be bothered with them.

His purpose was very clear which was to start with the mutants to see

if clues will reveal itself; therefore Lei Yu had no interest regarding the other two races. After browsing, he found a mutant called Charles Reese. Lei Yu tapped the folder for his data and the photo of Charles Reese was revealed along with some basic information – a First Rank Mutant with a genetic base of a Wasp and nothing else.

Lei Yu thought for a bit before accepting his target. Maybe he can get some information out of this... Lei Yu's hopes were actually all placed on Hu Jiong's mission. As he withdrew his card and wanted to approach Hu Jiong, he was stopped by the eyes of the latter. Shortly after, the three other people inside the room appeared to have also selected their mission. As they were

passing Lei Yu to leave, they glanced at his screen to see what bounty hunter rank he was. They all then looked at Lei Yu with eyes of disdain for a bit before leaving the room. Still not a single person said a thing.

When the three left, Hu Jiong softly said: “Young master, this room forbids bounty hunters from chatting with each other. If you have something to say, wait until we are outside.”

Lei Yu slightly raised his eyebrows before nodding and leaving the room. Once Hu Jiong finished selecting his target, he then followed and left the room.

The two returned to Lei Yu’s hotel.



Lei Yu then decided to look around the city later on to see if he'll get a chance encounter with other mutants. He'll wait until night falls before helping Hu Jiong complete his mission.

With Hu Jiong's help, Lei Yu made up his mind and logged into a website behind a firewall. The site required a login and password which of course was given to him when he processed his paperwork. After quickly logging in, an alert showed he had some unread messages. Opening the message, it showed specific information on the mutant Charles Reese; his current position was in a private residence and it appears he was a bodyguard working for the owners.

“You can rest here for a bit, I’ll be back soon.” Lei Yu smiled before grabbing his car keys and leaving the hotel.

He quickly located the private residence of his target and it appears this family was quite wealthy. Lei Yu lightly leapt off the ground and landed inside the walls. After activating his extreme speed, there was no way anyone was able to notice Lei Yu’s movements. He quickly arrived behind a white column that was near the door to the living room.

With his skills and speed, it’s possible that Lei Yu was the only one in the entire world that could move like that. It’s because he’s the only that relies on the speed of his

lightning power, a cultivation ability that no one else can copy.

Lei Yu then focused his spirit. After exploring the residence, he found his target. According to Tenglong country's classification, his target had the strength of a First Order Warrior. Perhaps it was his bad timing on finding the target because the target was in the same room with an ordinary person.

Lei Yu moved to the back of the huge residence. From below a window, he carefully peeked in to take a look. Lei Yu frowned, "why is there a woman here?"

Looking at the clothes strewn around the floor, Lei Yu concluded this mutant Charles Reese was

engaged in some secretive relationship with a maid. This was because the clothes strewn on the floor were typical clothes a maid would wear.

Now didn't seem to be the right time to make a move. Even though encountering this situation seemed like bad timing, but Lei Yu thought through this a bit more. These two people dared to recklessly engage in such behaviors at their boss's residence, it must mean the owner wasn't home. This can be considered a perfect opportunity to make a move since if the owner was home, there's a possibility of some small issues arising.

Lei Yu's mouth became a sneer. He knocked on the glass panel of the

window making a loud sound, and then immediately hid to the side as if he was waiting for something to happen.

The two engaging in an intimate relationship was suddenly shocked by the loud noise. The male quietly walked over to the window and looked outside, not seeing anything, he then opened the window.

A dark shadow suddenly sprung up from the side that was too fast for the male to react. A pair of strong hands clasped around his neck and directly pulled him out of the window and threw him to the ground, the sunlight exposing his naked body.

Lei Yu scratched his head before

crouching down. “Your name is Charles Reese right?”

-----

[1] Hu Jiong, Hu is the family name, Chinese character is 胡. His code name was 古月 and 古 meant Ancient, 月 meant Moon.

# Chapter 117: No Clues Found

The bare young man on the ground was considered pretty good looking. He had golden blonde hair with blue eyes, an aquiline nose with slightly protruding cheekbones, making him look quite dashing. Being yanked out through the window without any strength to fight back, this male understood he could not take on his opponent. He gingerly asked: “Sir, I am indeed Charles Reese, who might you...?”

Lei Yu laughed. Directing his voice at the maid inside that was hurriedly putting on her somewhat sexy underwear, “throw his clothes

out here.” The maid didn’t dare to be slow. Being caught red handed, she was naturally feeling timid to the extreme. She hurriedly grabs Charles Reese’s clothes on the bed and threw them out the window.

“Put on your clothes and follow me.”

With a carefree manner, Lei Yu grabbed Charles Reese’s collar and dragged him out through the main gate. Because Charles Reese was a bodyguard in the residence, no one would stop him. While Lei Yu looked like he came to teach him a lesson, so who would dare to intervene? But one thing they thought was strange – how did this person get into the compound?



Getting into the car, Charles Reese started forming his thoughts: This roadster was a convertible so if he were to jump out while on the road and roll in the opposite direction; he should be able to escape. Who knows where this guy will be taking him? What if this guy wanted to take his life?

But Lei Yu seemed to have read his mind. Placing his palm against the back of Charles Reese, internal energy was poured inside and the latter started trembling before losing conscious. It appears Lei Yu had shocked him until he became unconscious. This was fine too since it saves a lot of trouble.

Who would have thought that Lei Yu's way of undertaking missions

were this unique and so blatant? Bounty hunters usually operated during the night yet Lei Yu can be regarded as breaking a precedent, and he even directly taking the target away from the scene in broad daylight. This entire scenario was definitely considered unprecedented.

Lei Yu carried the unconscious Charles Reese into the hotel in a carefree manner, causing a lot of people to stare in astonishment. But Lei Yu didn't care and didn't show any signs of being nervous. At times people's suspicion would be aroused when you act secretively, but when you openly do something like this, it becomes the best protective measure.

“What... what the...” Hu Jiong’s jaws dropped to the ground when Lei Yu brought back this person, exactly the look everyone was giving him in the lobby.

“He’s my target but I wanted to ask him some questions first. As for afterwards, I hope you would offer your assistance in helping me complete the mission.” Lei Yu said very casually.

Hu Jiong swallowed hard before nodding. “Catching him alive, the guild would double the bounty but to this day, no one has been able to do that. It’s not that bounty hunters aren’t capable of it; it’s just that high ranking bounty hunters aren’t allowed to pick low ranking missions. But thinking back on it,

with the young master's strength, this is just a walk in the park for you. Formidable, too formidable!" Said Hu Jiong as he gave a thumbs up.

It appears Charles Reese still needed some time before he wakes up. Lei Yu wasn't in a hurry, what he had plenty of was time. He picked up a cup of instant coffee before slowly sipping it.

Almost an hour later, Charles Reese finally woke up regaining his conscious. He looked around to see his surroundings before his gaze landed on the two people in front of him. He immediately scrambled to get up from the ground.

"What do you guys want from me?"

Asked Charles Reese as he swallowed hard.

“Nothing much, we just want to have a chat with you.” Replied Lei Yu with a smile.

“A chat? What’s there to talk about?” Only someone strong would be capable of capturing him and bringing him here. Charles Reese could only readily admit this fact... As long as they don’t kill him, he’s not afraid to chat for a bit.

“I would like to know everything about you mutants, like how the whole system works. Also, I want to know how you became a mutant.” Lei Yu asked.

With his eyebrows slightly raised,

Charles Reese began by saying: “I only did this to make a living; I don’t know what system you’re talking about. As long as you have money, you can go out and buy some mutagen agent. I only know where they sell it and don’t know any so called systems.”

His words managed to shock Hu Jiong and Lei Yu. Lei Yu not knowing about this situation was considered normal, but Hu Jiong who had been a bounty hunter for a long time actually didn’t know about this?

“Ancient Moon, you didn’t know about this?” Lei Yu was very careful. A bounty hunter was a very unique job so it’s best not to mention their real names in front of others.

Hu Jiong shook his head, “I really didn’t know. We only had to complete the missions and as for anything else, we never asked about it.”

“Tell me where they sell these mutagens?” Said Lei Yu in a cold tone at Charles Reese.

Not daring to conceal anything, Charles Reese replied: “As long as it’s some large pharmaceutical company, they’ll have it. But you still need some connections in order to purchase this drug.”

Lei Yu slammed his hand on the table and cursed: “F\*ck, there goes my trail of clues. If all large pharmaceutical companies sell them, then it looks like the

situation is not as simple as it looks. The extent of what they control in the palm of their hands is indeed quite large, so could there be some sort of huge secret existence behind the scenes?”

Since he couldn't find any clues from this First Rank Mutant Charles Reese, Lei Yu could only give up on this end. He could only hope for some harvest from Hu Jiong's target once they undertake the mission at night.

“So what should we do with him?” Hu Jiong asked while pointing at Charles Reese.

Lei Yu shrugged, “I don't know, how should we deal with this? Do we really need to get rid of him?”



Hu Jiong shook his head, “there’s no need for that. You can deliver him directly to the guild and the guild would dispose of him.”

Hearing the conversation of them two, Charles Reese was suddenly bathed in cold sweat; his lower body could not help trembling. When he was about to beg for mercy, Lei Yu’s mouth twitched before standing up. He hadn’t even grabbed onto Charles Reese yet and felt something wasn’t right.

His originally deep blue eyes instantly turned yellow and one could not see his pupils, they had actually combined together with the eyeball. His yellow hair gradually became longer as it started flowing down his back. Unknown when but

a pair of transparent wings emerged from his back. The most hard to believe thing was his tailbone that actually grew out a sharp bone spike. The spike was black while a crystal clear drop of liquid was dripping off the pointed end. Lei Yu concluded that the spike was definitely poisonous.

Lei Yu recovered his palm incredibly fast and watched with great interest in the mutation process.

“You guys forced me!” Charles Reese didn’t want to die and didn’t want to be brought back to the whatever guild since his life would probably be over there. He clearly knows what he has done in the past so he’s probably suffering the

consequences now. If that was the case, he might as well fight to the end.

As he finished saying this, Lei Yu still didn't really care. The amazing transformation was now over so it was probably time for him to make a move. In the eyes of Lei Yu, a mere First Rank Mutant was nothing more than a flea to him.

A slap flew towards Charles Reese while he only saw a blur; this was followed by a "pak!" After hearing this sound, a five finger palm print with the smell of grilled meats was found on Charles Reese's face.

Both of their noses twitched before looking at each other and laughing out loud. Poor Charles Reese had

already fainted from the slap.

Among the bounty hunters, there were of course some bastards mixed in with them. Fortunately, the majority of them were decent people. They were only there to make a living and didn't bother with the complicated stuff. And the missions that the Bounty Hunters Guild issued were usually against scums that were detrimental to society. So, there was no need to be merciful to these scums or else they'd just end up hurting more people in the future.

Lei Yu delivered the unconscious Charles Reese to the guild and earned double the bounty. Of course he didn't care about the reward since it was only a few

thousand U.S. dollars; it was considered nothing in his eyes with his wealth right now.

# Chapter 118:

## Attending The Yearly Reunion

That day, there were also other bounty hunters that had completed their missions but just not as fast as Lei Yu. Even though he was only a First Rank Bounty Hunter, but how many people actually knew his true strength? Since Lei Yu had just applied to become a bounty hunter, then it was natural that he was assigned to the lowest rank.

Lei Yu didn't go off to accept another mission, he just returned to his hotel. His purpose was to wait until the evening because Hu

Jiong's mission had to be handled at night. The guild was simply unable to find out where the target was during the day.

Since there was nothing to do but wait, Lei Yu started cultivating. Hu Jiong also followed and sat down cross-legged. Because Lei Yu no longer had the Spiritual Bead of Longevity to help him purify the spiritual energy he absorbs, there was no longer any need for him to take his clothes off. Not to mention there was someone with him here so Lei Yu definitely couldn't do that.

But it wasn't even a few minutes before Lei Yu's cell phone started ringing. Looking at the caller ID, Lei Yu stood up and went inside the bedroom and over to the window

before he answered it with a smile.

“My dear beloved, did you miss me?” After saying that, Lei Yu felt some goose bumps rise up; he had actually never said those words to Ai Er before.

“Did you do something against your conscience? To actually say such sweet words to me that is making me nauseous!” Said Ai Er jokingly in her beautiful voice.

“So that’s how it is, then I won’t call you that in the future.”

“No! I like being nauseous!”

“Uhh...”

“Okay, enough with the joking, I have some good news for you.”



Lei Yu scratched his head, “what sort of good news?”

“I’ll be attending my school’s reunion, are you going to meet with me? Where are you right now? You’re not together with some other girl right?” Asked Ai Er with a laugh.

“A girl?” Lei Yu looked over at the rough looking Hu Jiong whose face was filled with stubbles. He then lightly coughed, “if he was a girl, then the earth would probably stop moving.” Pausing for a bit, he then said: “Why didn’t you tell me in advance? I could have picked you up at the airport!”

“I was just waiting for those words; I’ll be waiting at the airport!”

Hanging up the call, Lei Yu shook his head helplessly.

Ai Er said she came to attend her school's reunion but in fact was using this as an excuse to see Lei Yu. Ever since Lei Yu encountered "that" situation in the Kou country, Ai Er's heart was fearful of a repeat. She felt that staying by Lei Yu's side would be a better move.

Putting on his coat in a hurry, Lei Yu gave Hu Jiong a brief explanation before leaving the hotel. The two agreed to contact each other during the evening.

Surprisingly, there weren't a lot of people at the airport. Lei Yu had just arrived at the airport and observed Ai Er's figure. The first

thing they did was give each other a big hug before Lei Yu immediately drove Ai Er to her school.

When Ai Er went to school abroad, it was actually a famous New York University in the U.S. She had received the school's invitation to attend their annual reunion in the past, but because Lei Yu was still in Tenglong country for the past two years, Ai Er did not fly back to attend. And since Lei Yu was coincidentally in the U.S. this time, Ai Er had found her ideal excuse.

The university campus in New York City was very pretty. The buildings were nice and the green grounds were beautiful. The school had a large number of wealthy students so when Lei Yu and Ai Er arrived,

their car didn't attract too much attention; some students only took an extra glance and whatnot.

"Are there any themes to the reunion?" Asked Lei Yu.

"There's none, just a simple reception. But before going in, there are some fellow students I want to meet up with first, can we wait for them?" Said Ai Er as she looked around looking for them.

Lei Yu nodded before relaxing his hands on the steering wheel. Tapping the wheel in boredom, he casually checked out the surrounding landscape of the school.

"Hey! We're over here!" Ai Er

shouted loudly in English. Lei Yu didn't not turn to look and already concluded the fellow student Ai Er was waiting for, was a westerner.

Two beautiful young Caucasian girls who gave off an exotic aura came over. The clothes they had on was a stark contrast to what Ai Er was wearing; Ai Er was only in a t-shirt and jeans.

As for the two pretty girls, they were both wearing mini-skirts. Their shirts were extra short which revealed their seductive navels. It seems they had prepared beforehand; apart from the difference in colors, their styles were exactly the same.

Lei Yu checked out the two exotic

beauties; one had long brown wavy hair with healthy skin tone that showed off her wild nature. The other girl had blonde hair and blue eyes, and her snow white skin was the lethal killer which was the preference of Tenglong people. The two girls ran forth and gave Ai Er a passionate hug.

“This is my boyfriend.” Ai Er casually pointed at Lei Yu as an introduction.

Lei Yu dashingly jumped out of the car before smiling and shaking the hands of the two girls. But it appears the girls were more direct and enthusiastic; they gave Lei Yu a close contact hug and touched their smooth cheeks against his.

“Your boyfriend is really good looking!” The two girls smiled as they praised Ai Er.

In reality, it wasn't that Lei Yu's looks were outstanding; it's just that when one was observing him up close, Lei Yu's charming eyes gave off an aura that made many girls infatuated. Add his tall and chiseled body, and the toned muscular outlines of his arms, this total package was the key that seduced the girls.

Lei Yu gently curved his lips and gave his signature smile, “Hello, my name is Lei Yu.”

“Kelly.”

“Mona.”

“It’s nice to meet you.” The two girls said in unison.

Towards those two girls, Lei Yu wasn’t particularly friendly or cold. Following behind the three, Lei Yu watched them laughing and joking about while they reminisced. He was kind of ignored but Lei Yu didn’t care, he actually didn’t want anyone’s attention. Being in the spotlight of attention was what some people desired, but Lei Yu belonged to the type that was opposite of that and preferred to be low profile.

Fortunately, no one recognized the name “Lei Yu” as the young master that had caused a sensation online and throughout the world. If he were to be recognized, there’s a



chance something sensational might happen.

The three walked under the shade of a tree. "If we only had a camera, we haven't taken a group picture in a long time." Ai Er said this somewhat disappointedly as she looked at the school scenery that hadn't changed one bit.

Lei Yu scratched his head and then closed his eyes without anyone realizing it. A small black bag suddenly appeared in his hand which he passed it to Ai Er, "here's a camera for you."

Ai Er had a distracted look while a camera was suddenly thrust in front of her. She didn't think too much and thought Lei Yu had the camera

the whole time and she didn't notice it. Not surprised, she took the camera and the three girls began to go crazy with selfies. They put up a whole bunch of different sexy poses that gave Lei Yu the goose bumps.

Sometimes following several girls around was kind of boring. Being alone with their girlfriends was the atmosphere guys preferred.

Time seemed to be going by very slowly. Lei Yu said in a bored tone: "Do you want me to get you girls a drink?"

Ai Er pointed to a convenience store in the distance so Lei Yu started walking towards it.

When he was about a dozen or so meters from the convenience store, Lei Yu slightly frowned. A young girl passed him which caused Lei Yu to suddenly wonder, “such a young age and she already has the strength of a Third Order Warrior?”

Looking at her hair and skin color, Lei Yu assumed this girl was an American girl. This was because the girl’s demeanor and attitude was of a typical American.

Lei Yu wanted to investigate this because the young girl did not have the spiritual aura of a mutant. But he couldn’t just follow along behind the girl’s ass right now right? Moreover, Ai Er and the two girls were still waiting for him back there so what should he do?

# Chapter 119:

## Unwilling To Give Up

Thickening his skin, Lei Yu walked up to the girl and asked: "Can I get to know you sometime?"

Lei Yu was used to using his Tenglong language to greet and make friends, and not English. Hearing this, the young girl seemed to be not interested in him because she lightly smiled and was about to step to aside and leave.

"If you have time, I can teach you some advanced techniques!" Lei Yu didn't know how he came up with

those words, but it worked. The young girl stopped walking and turned around to look at Lei Yu with surprise. Yet it was only a brief moment before the girl turned around to leave again.

After making contact in this short period of time, Lei Yu felt there was something different with the girl's body; a type of heat force. If she was able to somehow release that heat from her body, then the strength of it would be incredible. It was because of this that made Lei Yu even more interested. But it looks like the girl didn't really care for Lei Yu's statement since she didn't even look back again and left. Lei Yu could only helplessly turn around and continue walking towards the convenience store.

After buying Ai Er's favorite juice and several other beverages, Lei Yu returned to the three girls. But he was still thinking of the girl he encountered not too long ago.

It's not that Lei Yu wanted play around with other girls; it's just that being in a foreign country, meeting an existence that exceeds ordinary people was not an easy thing.

The reception was held at one of the school's auditorium. The graduating school alumni's and the school had an agreement to use their grounds for reunions. Ai Er began to introduce the boyfriend she was proud of to all her old classmates. Lei Yu also kept a smile on his face as he entertained each and every one of them. But this type

of occasion really wasn't suited for him; he only wanted to find a corner somewhere to get some peace and quiet.

Looking at the time, it was around 9PM already and it was about time to call Hu Jiong. Lei Yu stood up and left the huge hall as he took out his cell phone.

Inside the auditorium however, a pair of cold eyes were staring at Lei Yu without blinking. It wasn't the girl that Lei Yu and met outside the convenience store, but someone else.

Once Lei Yu left, this person walked up to Ai Er. He gently patted Ai Er's shoulder, "Ai Er, how come you didn't tell me you were returning to

the school?”

Ai Er turned around and started frowning. “Why would I have to tell you that?”

On the side, Kelly was snickering while Mona openly asked: “Oh, hey Xiao Fei. Ai Er already has a boyfriend so you should really stop pestering her incessantly!”

That’s right; the person who approached Ai Er also attended the same school as her. He was the guy that loved following Ai Er around wherever she went, the Eagle Group Commander’s son: Xiao Fei. Xiao Fei had never given up hope on Ai Er, especially since that time when Shangguan Xi Hong made a call to his father. This made Xiao Fei



pursue her even more aggressively.

But Shangguan Xi Hong would have never thought that after Lei Yu's accident, he would completely annihilate the Kou country's Yamaguchi-gumi. The nation currently attaches great importance to Lei Yu, and the Lei family is even beginning to compete with Martial Sect for Lei Yu, this valuable character. He originally did this intending to force Lei Yu to leave the Kou country and return to Tenglong country, but didn't expect Ai Er to be so strong and resilient who treated Xiao Fei as a side dish. As the daughter of Nuo Yi Long, Shangguan Xi Hong did not want to make any forceful moves so this matter was eventually shelved. He never expected that to this point,

Xiao Fei was still unwilling to give up.

“They’re not married yet so I still have a chance, right Ms. Mona?” Xiao Fei put on an attitude he thought was rather chic, but actually made him look like a smiling asshole that people would want to punch out.

“Ai Er, let’s not bother with him and leave!” Kelly grabbed Ai Er and Mona and pulled them towards a crowd of people.

“You want to be together with Ai Er? You will soon pay the price!” Mumbled Xiao Fei as he coldly eyed Lei Yu who was outside the auditorium on the phone.

Lei Yu and Hu Jiong were discussing the time, and they decided to meet up at the entrance of a nightclub at 11PM.

The reception organized by the school was for the reunion of their graduates. Included in the event were some performances by current students which were worth seeing. Lei Yu was quite interested in the performance as he sat in a deserted area of the auditorium, quietly enjoying the graceful dance of a girl with an alluring figure. Ai Er noticed Lei Yu in the corner and pulled Mona and Kelly towards where he was sitting.

“The nasty guy Xiao Fei also came back to the school!” Ai Er pouted in front of Lei Yu.

“Oh?” Lei Yu’s eyebrows went up.  
“What’s he here for?”

“Isn’t that obvious? He still hasn’t given up. He doesn’t even know how much I love my brother Yu!” Ai Er said sweetly as she put her arms around Lei Yu’s waist. Because her chests were fully developed now, the two plump meatballs were tightly pressed against Lei Yu making his body tremble slightly as he closed his eyes to enjoy that feeling.

Ai Er’s words made Lei Yu’s heart ooze out sweetness so he didn’t bother to think of Xiao Fei any longer. Because Lei Yu believed in the feelings Ai Er had for him, and even though those two have not experienced any large hurdles, but

being together for a long time made it that neither one could leave each other. Their love was like a sticky substance firmly bonding them together.

At this time, a girl appeared on the stage that was in front of the auditorium. With long blonde hair; long slender legs exposed from wearing denim short shorts; a slender waist that made any man hard to resist their temptation of want to go wrap their arms around; add this with her charming looks and a pair of deep blue eyes and this became the total lethal package.

Lei Yu looked intently. Isn't this the girl he met in front of the convenience store? What's she up

to?

Seeing Lei Yu stare at the stage, Ai Er and the two also looked over.

“It’s her?” Said Mona as she blinked. “Why would she come to the reunion? This is really strange.”

“Who is she?” Lei Yu asked.

“Hey! You already have Ai Er, how can you be interested in other girls? This is not right!” Said Kelly jokingly.

Lei Yu shook his head and whispered into the ear of Ai Er: “She’s not someone simple. I came across her this afternoon and wanted to figure what’s it all about.”

Ai Er nodded. “Her name is Bianca, born in the U.S. and used to be one of our school’s beauty. A lot of guys wanted to get close to her but were all rejected. She’s also a very private person and doesn’t like to mingle with fellow students. She’s always alone by herself and even her dormitory was a special request so she would be by herself. I can never figure out what she’s up to all day long.”

Ai Er was saying this in the Tenglong language. But since her two best friends had been with Ai Er for quite a long time, even though they couldn’t speak the Tenglong language, they could still more or less understand some of it.

Lei Yu nodded and didn’t say

anything further. He was looking attentively at the stage where Bianca was dancing in a seductive manner. She appeared to be using jazz dance movements modified with her own dance elements. The combination gave her movements a special feeling which attracted the attention of many males in the room, and the jealousy of the females.

A girl with such an angelic face and a devilish figure, how could she not be the center of attention?

There were even some guys that jumped onto the stage wanting to embrace her, but were all rejected.

“Not mentioning dancing on the stage, even chatting with other



people used to be an impossible thing for her. Yet what's going on with her today? Did she become crazy?" Mona jokingly said on the side. "Could it be that she couldn't stand the loneliness anymore and decided to show off a bit to find a suitable partner? Hey Lei Yu, you need to be careful in case she sets her sights on you!"

Lei Yu only smiled without saying anything. As Mona finished saying that, Bianca's dance had just come to its end to a deafening thundering applause. Bianca lightly got off the stage and went past the wall of men, heading in the direction of Lei Yu. It appears her gaze had never left Lei Yu's figure.

Seeming to understanding

something, Lei Yu lightly patted Ai Er's back before they both started walking forward.

# Chapter 120: The Burly Bald Guy

“This pretty girl is your girlfriend?” Under the watchful eyes of everyone, Bianca actually took the initiative to speak to a guy. This was something no one could believe was happening, and she was even talking to a guy who already had a girlfriend. This caused all the guys with dubious intentions to be filled with envy, jealousy, and hatred!

Lei Yu smile and said: “Your dancing was quite good and very unique.”

Bianca gave a slight bow. “Thank you. Can I treat you and your

girlfriend to coffee later on?”

Lei Yu responded politely with an apologetic smile. “It should be my treat, but we can’t do it today because I still have some things to take care of. How about tomorrow?”

“That’s fine then.” Bianca seemed disappointed but then said: “I am very interested in the words you’ve said today. Tomorrow we can have a good chat about it.”

Bianca gave a sweet smile. Her smile had never been exposed to the public before and the guys that saw it became completely dazed and captivated by it.

Lei Yu nodded in agreement but his face didn’t seem particularly

interested in Bianca. As Bianca walked by Lei Yu at a really close range, her body emitted a faint fragrance that could make a man tremble. Lei Yu deliberately shifted away since his girlfriend was next to him, there's no way he wouldn't take into account Ai Er's feelings.

Ai Er pouted and revealed a really cute but strange expression. "What did you say to her to pique her interest?"

"You're jealous? There's no need to be Ai Er. My immunity to beauties has always been high, but of course I have no resistance when it comes to you." Lei Yu gently touched Ai Er's hair as he said this.

For the rest of the night, Ai Er

would be catching up with her two friends and other classmates. They haven't seen each other for two years so naturally there will be many things to talk about. As for Lei Yu, he had something to do at night and Ai Er didn't want to bother him. One of the great qualities about Ai Er was that she was trusting and considerate of Lei Yu.

Leaving the school in a hurry, the time he agreed to meet Hu Jiong was less than half an hour away. If he drove a bit faster, he may be able to make it on time. After all, Lei Yu wasn't someone that likes to be late. To him, being punctual was a way to earn someone's trust.

As his car just left the main gates of

the school, a person's figure he was familiar with was standing out there. Lei Yu thought for a bit before slowing the car down to a stop.

“If you want to follow and leave with me, then you better hurry up. I have something very important I need to take care of.” Lei Yu bluntly said.

Bianca jumped into Lei Yu's car without hesitation, thus these two disappeared into the night without anyone realizing it.

According to Hu Jiong's mission objectives and the profile information, his target had no specific residential address. There were only names of places he

frequented but he didn't go there every day. But there was a nightclub that the target will go there every night at a fixed time, and also leave at a certain time. Lei Yu and Hu Jiong only had half an hour of time so they didn't dare delay at all.

Lei Yu's car was like a runaway horse, driving crazily through the streets of New York City. Bianca who was sitting on the side did not bother Lei Yu at all because from his facial expression, she could tell that he indeed had something important to do.

With Lei Yu leaving, Xiao Fei went into action. He drove his own car and started following behind Lei Yu at high speeds.



Hu Jiong was already waiting in front of the nightclub early on, but he was behind a flower bed trying to be incognito. Once he saw Lei Yu's car arrive, he quickly jumped out of the shadows.

“What's going on? Did he go in yet?” Asked Lei Yu as he was closing the car door.

Hu Jiong shook his head, “not yet, we'll wait a bit more.”

Lei Yu sighed in relief as he luckily made it on time.

Hu Jiong looked at the passenger seat and saw a blonde girl. He then asked in surprise: “This is your girlfriend?”

“Stop messing around.” Lei Yu

pointed at Bianca and introduced her to Hu Jiong. He also clearly mentioned how the two met.

This Bianca appears to only be passionate towards Lei Yu. She simply had on a different expression when meeting Hu Jiong as she nodded her head in an icy manner. But when she was facing Lei Yu, she had another expression which was one of tenderness. Why? It's unknown for now.

The three of them were chatting behind the flower bed while their eyes occasionally glanced towards the front entrance of the nightclub. They still haven't seen their target appear as seconds and minutes passed by, causing Lei Yu to be somewhat disappointed.

“He shouldn’t have received any tips that bounty hunters have targeted him and doesn’t dare to show up, right?” Asked Lei Yu.

“It shouldn’t be, our system is very strict so no one would dare to leak this information...” Pausing a bit, Hu Jiong continued: “But with strength like yours would be the exception since no one is capable of being your opponent!”

After Hu Jiong heard from Lei Yu about his current level of strength, he was shocked beyond belief. But he also accepted the fact since someone capable of causing the Kou country to encounter such turmoil, it would be impossible to accomplish without sufficient strength to back it up. What he

didn't know was that Lei Yu accomplished this by chance and coincidences.

As their conversation just ended, a black Mercedes S500 sedan slowly drew near the nightclub entrance. Two security guards in black suits hurriedly rushed forward to open the car door. A burly and bald middle-aged man in a white tank top and black pants got out of the car and looked around. When he didn't find anything unusual, he then entered through the front door of the nightclub.

“That's him!” Said Hu Jiong as he pointed to the front.

Lei Yu waved for Hu Jiong and Bianca to follow as the three walked

towards the nightclub.

Since they were behind the flower bed and no one saw them, it was natural that no one was suspicious of their intent. Walking into a magnificent looking establishment, Lei Yu brought his group to an empty table and sat down. Under the dimly lit area, he started looking around for the target.

After all, a bald head was a bald head. Even if the place was dimly lit, it should still reflect light off of its baldness. Their mission's target went through a door to a private room so Lei Yu cut through the crowd and followed. Looking through a window of the room, "oh boy, that's a lot of people!"

The huge private room had over ten plus people and the bald guy seemed to have a high status amongst these people. The people inside made room so he could sit at the most central area of the sofa, and everyone kept try to toast him.

The bald guy simply ignored everyone and didn't even touch the mugs of beer on the table. His hands went towards his waist where a black fanny pack was hanging, and brought a transparent bag containing a white powdery substance. From the look of it, the weight of this bag of powder was not light at all!

Lei Yu frowned; it seems that this guy came here every day to deliver goods. But as Lei Yu was deep in

thought, the bald guy noticed Lei Yu standing outside staring in. The bald guy looked to some people on the side and made some eye movements, so two burly guys stood up and went towards the door. Lei Yu did not intend to run away and just stood there waiting for them.

The two burly guys suddenly opened the door and yanked Lei Yu into the room. Everyone inside appeared to be unshaven with brown hair in cornrows and didn't look like drug addicts. Lei Yu quickly realized that these guys were small time drug dealers, responsible for receiving the goods and peddling them on the streets. And the burly bald guy was the supplier, so no wonder he was held in such high esteem.

# Chapter 121: Xiao Fei's Sneak Attack

If it were an ordinary person, this scene in front of them would scare them witless or cause them to wet their pants. But who was Lei Yu? The ten plus people were all just ordinary people while the bald guy was a Fourth Rank Mutant. With the strength of these people here, even there were more of them; they would still be not worth a dog's fart. In Lei Yu's eyes, he did not even acknowledge them.

Lei Yu shook his shoulder with force and the two pairs of hands holding onto him were thrown off. He stamped onto the ground firmly



with his foot causing a loud sound. The ground suddenly exploded with Lei Yu's foot entrenched inside. With Lei Yu's position as the center, cracks started extending outwards until reaching the lower parts of the wall. Because the nightclub's music was playing really loudly, no one on the outside heard the loud commotion inside the private room.

Lei Yu's move was very straightforward; he wasn't someone an ordinary person could provoke. Everyone had cold sweat on their foreheads and obediently sat still on the sofa, afraid to say a word. The bald guy squinted his eyes before getting up from the sofa. He understood that the reason for this person appearing was most likely due to him.

“My friend, is there anything you need us to do for you?” The bald guy knew Lei Yu’s strength was extraordinary so he politely but cautiously asked.

“Everyone unrelated to this, get out. Remember, don’t mention anything unnecessary!” Lei Yu did not bother with the bald guy’s question and only swept his gaze at the other ten plus people in the room. After that, all you can hear is the rustling and rumbling of people cautiously filing out the door. No one dared to meddle in this and went out like they were busy with their own business.

Lei Yu sat down in a carefree attitude. “I have a few questions for you and I hope you can answer

them.”

“What kind of questions?”

“For instance, do you know where mutagens that mutants use come from? Those large pharmaceutical companies must get it from some type of source.”

The bald guy was shocked; he never thought this youth would ask such questions. And naturally, he wouldn't make a statement on this subject. “I don't know.”

“Refusing to talk? Just don't regret your decision after you suffer the consequences!” Lei Yu's gaze instantly turned sharp as he stared daggers at the bald guy.

“Humph, what a joke!” The bald guy

frowned as he walked around the table. He was ready to leave and didn't want to get involved with Lei Yu anymore.

How would Lei Yu agree to let him leave? Suddenly standing up and blocking the bald guy's path, Lei Yu's hands were formed into a claw shape before sending it forth intending to grasp his shoulders. Even though the bald guy had a large and wide body, his speed wasn't slow at all. He quickly reacted by taking a step backward avoiding Lei Yu's attack. The bald guy then pushed off forward with a reverse momentum, intending to rely on his strong muscles to tackle Lei Yu and knock him aside.

In the eyes of ordinary people, Lei

Yu's attack was probably terrifying. But the bald guy with the strength of a Fourth Rank Mutant could do the same thing, so he naturally thought Lei Yu's strength was evenly matched with his.

How would he know that Lei Yu's previous move was just to get rid of the ordinary people that were peering in from the outside, to avoid their future meddlesome behavior.

Condensing his internal energy, Lei Yu's hands were already wrapped with a lightning net. When the bald guy didn't have the time to react, Lei Yu changed his palms to fists: "You came at the right time!" With a shout, he smashed his fist towards the bald guy's chest area.

Being blown backwards a few steps, the bald guy could only feel his entrails and internal organs trembling. Although Lei Yu did not use a lot of strength in his punch, the lightning force combined with it caused the bald guy to feel a paralysis spreading through his body which caused him to be unable to fight back. Having experienced a lot in his life, he didn't bother holding back and clenched his teeth. The genes in his body started changing and a short stubby horn emerged on top of his head.

“A rhinoceros?” Lei Yu smiled. “No wonder he could ignore my attack. You rough skinned and thick fleshed thing, I refuse to believe you won't open your mouth and talk!”

Jumping to the side wall and used it as leverage to jump off, Lei Yu's body flew forward at a rapid speed towards the bald guy.

“Break for me!” What attributes did Lei Yu's bone structure contain? It contained metallic properties in it. No matter how strong the defensive properties a rhinoceros had, it was impossible to compare it with metals. The instant the bald guy raised his arms to block, a “crack” sound of bones breaking could be heard. The bald guy started screaming in pain as he clutched his arm squatting on the ground. The once high and mighty bald guy now had a forehead drenched with sweat, and the horn on top of his head also started receding.

“Have you suffered enough? Can you answer my questions now?”  
Not caring for the bald guy’s pain, Lei Yu stepped forward and patted the guy’s shoulder as he asked.

“You really want to know?  
Impossible!”

Who would have thought the bald guy still had strength to resist. Fighting the pain in his broken arm and clenching his teeth to get up, he smashed his head against the nearest wall. After a loud crash, a large hole was made in the wall. Outside the wall, a random guy was walking by was suddenly crushed to death by the rubbles.

The bald guy quickly squirmed through the hole. The sounds of



screams and cries suddenly created chaos inside the nightclub. Pushing through the crowd, the bald guy wanted to get away as soon as possible. Seeing that he was about to reach the main entrance, he was suddenly pushed back a few steps by a strong energy aura. Surprised, he recovered and stood there looking at a burly youth with a short haircut blocking his path.

“You want to leave? Don’t even dream about it!” The one blocking the path was none other than Hu Jiong who had been sitting near the entrance the entire time.

“Step aside!” The bald guy hysterically screamed.

“Step aside? You’re my mission

objective so why would I do that?” Hu Jiong coldly sneered as he stared at the bald guy.

“You’re a bounty hunter?” The bald guy was shocked. Cold sweat started dripping down the bald guy’s back, it seems like he will be buried here today! And amongst the chaotic crowd, Lei Yu leisurely walked towards the two.

With both sides blocked, the bald guy suddenly had an idea. He reached into the crowd and grabbed a girl, wrapping his arms around her. It was possible that he was losing his mind; taking a hostage would most likely work when dealing with the police but would this work when dealing with a bounty hunter?

But what he couldn't believe was the girl in his arms started getting hotter and hotter, and his clothes were instantly burnt to ashes.

Immediately releasing his arms, he noticed his body was already burnt at several places as well.

“Bianca, you're pretty powerful!” Lei Yu grinned as he arrived next to them.

First of all, we must mention that Bianca indeed possessed a great strength. Even though she was at the rank of a Third Order Warrior, she was able to face a Fourth Rank Mutant and cause him to back off. With a justified smile: “That's of course!”

The bald guy couldn't help but

clutch his ears and face, he was really unlucky. “What to do? What to do?”

Impatient for this to last longer, Lei Yu made his move. His body like a ghost, he instantly reached the side of the bald guy. Lei Yu raised his palm and a purple electric light gave off a buzzing sound. Hearing this gave the bald guy the chills.

Was Lei Yu’s speed something the bald guy could comprehend? With no time to react, his only good left hand was then destroyed by Lei Yu.

At the same time without any warning, Lei Yu felt a blast of cold aura behind him. Immediately turning around, a familiar yet annoying face appeared in front of

him as a hand like eagle claws approached Lei Yu.

“Imperial Eagle Break!” Cried Xiao Fei as he rushed at Lei Yu.

Lei Yu wasn't able to always have his spiritual awareness spread about looking for people with special abilities. He never thought that Xiao Fei would exploit this situation to attack him.

# Chapter 122: Doctor Tony

Lightly stepping aside, Lei Yu barely escaped the full force of Xiao Fei's attack. Xiao Fei's sharp claws still managed to inflict a slight wound on Lei Yu's arm. Because Xiao Fei's attack was too fierce, he couldn't stop himself in time when he brushed by Lei Yu. The attack ended up striking towards the head of the bald guy. Due to having both arms broken, there was no way for bald guy to block. The sudden strike out of nowhere did cause some hesitation in Lei Yu but he quickly recovered and directly grabbed onto Xiao Fei's arm. He then forcefully

broke Xiao Fei's arm, bending it in an unimaginable degree.

Unfortunately, it was too late. Xiao Fei's sharp claws were already embedded into the skull of the bald guy by the time Lei Yu broke his arm. The bald guy had died with his eyes still wide open.

"You f\*cking bastard!" Lei Yu cursed. It was only then did he discover Xiao Fei was already crying out with piercing screams as his arm looked like they were about to fall off.

It was obvious that Bianca knew who Xiao Fei was. Not only were they in the same University, they all studied the same concentration. Even though she had no contact with Xiao Fei, he was still a fellow

student of hers. Seeing her fellow student injured, it was inevitable that she felt somewhat uncomfortable. She could only frown while looking at Lei Yu.

“What are you looking at me like that for?!” Lei Yu turned his head, “If I didn’t dodge that, I’m afraid the person to die would have been me!”

As the two recalled the scene, Xiao Fei’s sneak attack was quite fast and sudden. If Lei Yu had not dodged sideways at the last minute, then the consequences would be unimaginable.

In actuality, who could really take Lei Yu’s life? This was just Lei Yu’s rhetoric.



Lei Yu was now dispirited. For something like this to happen especially in a public area, the U.S. government will definitely intervene. How was he going to explain this?

“Bianca, call for an ambulance.”

Bianca wasn't being evasive about this; she dialed a phone number and told the operator their exact location. Lei Yu pulled the other two and quickly left the scene, leaving the depressed Xiao Fei there with large drops of sweat.

Gently sighing, Lei Yu was somewhat gloomy. Not only was he unable to explain to the U.S. government, how was he going to explain this to Tenglong country's

Eagle Group? How was he going to explain this to Martial Sect?

But this whole situation was not really Lei Yu's fault, he was actually afraid of some scoundrel behind the scene would exaggerate certain things. After Xiao Fei suffered such a serious injury, it's possible his entire arm would become disabled. So of course Xiao Fei would describe Lei Yu as being as wicked and heinous as possible.

Directly driving Bianca back to the school, they two exchanged phone numbers and called it a day. Lei Yu was in no mood to ask her questions about things anymore. Hu Jiong and he then returned to the hotel after that.

“Young master, are you still worried about what happened tonight?”  
Asked Hu Jiong.

“That’s of course. Do you know the identity of the person who sneak attacked me? He’s the son of Eagle Group’s commander. For something like this to happen was really unexpected. Our country’s Eagle Group I can still kind of explain to, but we killed someone in public in front of a large crowd, how are we going to explain that to the U.S. government?” Replied Lei Yu full of dejection.

“You don’t have to worry.” Hu Jiong smiled. “The information the Guild provided was on this nightclub, and apart from this place, there weren’t any other places for us to make the

move. Therefore, the Guild will explain themselves to the government so there's no need for us to worry about it. Once the government realizes the deceased was a mutant, they will naturally confirm this with the Guild. And once our identity's been confirmed as well, then no one will question us about this incident ever again."

"That's how it works?" Asked Lei Yu with raised eyebrows.

"That's right. The good thing about us bounty hunters is that as long as the people we kill aren't ordinary people, then we aren't bound by the laws of the court so don't worry about a thing." Hu Jiong smiled.

Lei Yu thought for a bit before

realizing the validity of this. Not everyone is capable of posing as a bounty hunter. Even though becoming a bounty hunter was a very simple procedure, but who would have nothing better to do than to go kill mutants for fun? Wouldn't that be throwing their lives away?

Xiao Fei's side was indeed problematic and Lei Yu didn't have any solutions to deal with it just yet. He could only wait and see what type of news will come out of Tenglong country.

Lei Yu stretched his body; he wanted to lie down on the sofa to rest for a bit but his cell phone suddenly rang. Looking at the caller ID, "that's way too quick!" Said Lei

Yu with a frown.

“Who’s calling?” Asked Hu Jiong.

“Who else could it be?” Pressing the accept button, Lei Yu said into the phone: “I am Lei Yu, nope, listen to my explanation! Hey! Hey!”

Hanging up the phone, Lei Yu threw his phone on the table. “F\*cking hell, Eagle Group is seeking to punish me!”

Hu Jiong didn’t know what to say or what words to comfort Lei Yu. But he was clear that if it wasn’t for Lei Yu, today’s mission would be very difficult for him to complete. Not mentioning how strong the bald guy’s ability was, with how crowded the nightclub was, Hu Jiong would

have a difficult time in stopping the bald guy from escaping.

Sure enough, Lei Yu wasn't willing to return to Tenglong country so they sent in a small investigative team to look for him. Eagle Group commander's son was injured so it wasn't a small matter, yet if we flipped it around and the injured person was just an ordinary person, then even if he died would not cause much of an issue.

Xiao Fei being crippled was quickly spread to even Ai Er's ears. The sun wasn't even up yet and she called over to ask: "Brother Yu, what's going on? How could Xiao Fei be...?"

"How did you find out?"

“One of my fellow students told Mona and Mona told me.”

“This whole situation isn’t something I can explain easily. Once morning comes, stay where you are and don’t go anywhere!”

“I understand.”

Coincidentally at dawn, Lei Yu’s phone rang again. He wasn’t usually this busy so what on earth was going on?

“Oh, it’s you Bianca. Is something the matter?” Asked Lei Yu.

“I’ll be waiting for you at the base of the Statue of Liberty on the mouth of Hudson River.”

Lei Yu changed his clothes which



perhaps was a habit of his.

Regardless if his clothes were clean or not, he would always change into new ones at the start of the day[1].

“Ancient Moon, you’ll have to go to the guild alone today to complete your mission because I have something to do. If anything comes up, just give me a call.”

Driving his car, Lei Yu drove towards the location Bianca mentioned. The distance wasn’t too far and with the height of the Statue of Liberty, Lei Yu was able to see it from far away.

A blue Lamborghini sports car was parked on the roadside. From far away, Lei Yu could already see a blonde beauty wearing a short skirt. Her perky butt was sitting on the

hood of the car while a cell phone in her hands was constantly being twirled around. It looked like she was anxiously waiting for something, attracting the eyes of many men passing by[2].

Lei Yu parked behind this luxury sports car which made his own car seem kind of bland.

“What’s up with making me meet you here so early?” Asked Lei Yu as he got out of the car.

“I received some news about Dr. Tony; they are currently investigating you and want to kill you. You have to quickly escape and leave the U.S.! Don’t stay here any longer!” Seeing Lei Yu, Bianca rushed up to Lei Yu and said this

anxiously.

-----

[1] Maybe the author is very poor and wears the same thing to bed and to work every day?

[2] I verified the words and the author did say meet at the base of the Statue of Liberty. Either the author didn't do his research properly or this imaginary world he created has the statue attached to the mainland instead of on an island.

# Chapter 123: Easy Gains

Chapter “Dr. Tony? Who is he?” Lei Yu asked in confusion.

“Aren’t you a bounty hunter?”

“Uh... I guess I’m considered one.”  
Lei Yu nodded.

“Code name Lightning right?”

Lei Yu was shocked. “How did you know?” Lei Yu clearly remembered that Hu Jiong had always respectfully called him young master and never used his code name, so how did Bianca know? Also, who was this Dr. Tony and

why did he want to kill him?

Pausing for a bit, Bianca then said:  
“Ever since you came to the U.S.  
and joined the Bounty Hunters  
Guild, people already had their eyes  
on you.”

“Why? How could this be?” Lei Yu  
asked confused.

“There’s someone you’ll definitely  
recognize – Hasegawa.”

“Where is he!?” Lei Yu’s mood  
suddenly changed as he asked with  
hatred.

“In reality, there are many things  
you don’t know about and there’s  
no way to investigate this. I can tell  
you but you have to promise me to  
leave the U.S. You can return to

your country or go somewhere else, just don't stay here anymore!" Said Bianca filled with concern, she didn't want anything to happen to Lei Yu. As to why she's so concerned about him, even she didn't know why.

"No way!" Lei Yu firmly shook his head. "I came to the U.S. just to look for Hasegawa. Do you know what he's done? His underlings developed a bacterium, and this bacterium was extremely harmful to society especially by threatening the lives of ordinary people. Would you allow this type of person to keep on living in this world?"

"But you aren't his match! Hasegawa is an Ultimate Ninja, and Dr. Tony is even more formidable!"

Hearing Bianca's words, it appears that she was familiar with Hasegawa and Dr. Tony and knew a lot about what was going on.

The day that Hasegawa killed Lei Yu, he escaped to the U.S. and reached out to Dr. Tony. The two originally had a close relationship, so Hasegawa and Dr. Tony got together and began plotting their next sinister plans.

"Do you know them?" Lei Yu asked with a frown.

Bianca frowned while clenching her teeth and nodded helplessly. "Yes, I do know them."

"You seem to know about everything going on... are you

perhaps a mutant as well?!” Lei Yu warily looked at Bianca, his eyes filled with doubt.

But as he said this, Lei Yu felt something wasn't right. The spiritual essence of mutants compared with cultivators was completely different. Bianca clearly did not have any unique characteristics that a mutant would have. Since she could release a scorching hot energy, it should be some type of cultivation method and not something that would manifest itself with a mutagen injection. So what on earth was going on?

“No, I'm not. And I can't be put in the same category as a mutant. I can't tell you anything for now but



please believe me. Lei Yu, I know all about you. You were once the popular figure that everyone in the world paid attention to – the young master. I also know that with your powers alone, you were able to destroy the Yamaguchi-gumi and cause the Kou country to enter an abyss of misery. You are a hero so your life shouldn't end here. There are too little heroes in this world... Nowadays, no one cares about a savior stepping forward to accomplish something and no one will remember you in the future. Believe me, leave, just leave the U.S okay?" Bianca was extremely emotional. No one knows why she was so concerned about Lei Yu and his safety.

Heavily sighing, Lei Yu then smiled.

“I don’t know why you are so concerned about me but I have to thank you for that. I don’t need people to remember me and I don’t need them to treat me as some heroic savior. The only thing I know is that I have the strength and I will do things that my ability allows me to take on. If I had the strength but still shirked my responsibility, then what rights do I have to deserve this power?”

Bianca was shocked. Was this tall and handsome youth in front of her a fool? No, he wasn’t! Then why was he like this? There’s always a story behind every person; Lei Yu had one, Bianca also had one. But no one wanted to touch that scab because hiding it was an easier way for them to stay strong.

Bianca submitted to Lei Yu's manner, she was thoroughly subdued. There were billions of men in this world but there's probably only one or two of them that was truly able to move a woman's heart. And Lei Yu happened to be one of the few men that could move the heart of this exotic foreign beauty.

The unhinged Bianca didn't know what else to say. Lei Yu smiled, "I'm grateful to you for chatting with me here today. I would be even more grateful if you could tell me the details of this situation. But if you aren't willing to tell, it doesn't matter because I will refuse to give up!" Lei Yu's eyes were firm. "And I will investigate this myself. No matter how difficult it will become,

I will see it to the end!”

Lei Yu turned around and intending to go back into his car. Gently clearing his throat and silently admiring himself – shit, I am so manly, so f\*cken cool!

“Wait a minute!”

Lei Yu turned around and made his signature smile. “Please don’t say anymore if you still intend on stopping me.”

“I’ll help you!” Bianca’s reply was truly unexpected for Lei Yu. She knew so much about Hasegawa and this so called Dr. Tony; this meant she must have some sort of relationship with them. Lei Yu was unwilling to resort to any means to

interrogate her so he decided to leave. But never would he have thought that Bianca was willing to help him, which was like a godsend right now.

“How are you going to help me?”  
Asked Lei Yu.

“You and your friend Ancient Moon must immediately leave the Bounty Hunters Guild. You can’t enter that place anymore or else something bad might happen.” Said Bianca.

“Oh? What type of bad thing? It shouldn’t be...” Lei Yu’s heart had a faint bad feeling but didn’t say it out loud.

Bianca paused a bit before saying:  
“This whole thing is too

complicated and isn't something I can explain so easily. But the simplest way I can explain to you is that the mutagen was developed by Dr. Tony. And the Bounty Hunter's Guild was founded by him as well. His goal was to use people like Ancient Moon to eradicate his failed products!"

Lei Yu gasped, "What's their ultimate goal?"

"A successfully developed mutagen after being injected into a human body will cause tremendous changes, and Dr. Tony is able to control these transformed mutants. The failures are those that have been absorbed by the human body making him unable to control them, that's when he would have the

bounty hunters go out and destroy them. His ultimate goal is to gain control of all the mutants to fulfill his ambitions!”

Lei Yu was stunned, but then suddenly thought of something. “That doesn’t make sense; I clearly remember seeing on the mission lists showing bounties on the European werewolves and vampires. What’s up with that?”

“The forces of Dr. Tony are way too vast. Although in name he is simply a Doctorate of Science, but the fields he dabbles in are very broad. Not only does he have a strong influence in the U.S., he even has a strong relationship with the Vatican in Europe. By using the outside resources, he can help the

Vatican eradicate these demonic existences. Of course they would develop an enmity with the werewolves and vampires, but in return they gain the favor of the Vatican.”



# Chapter 124: The Huge Estate

“Then he is someone really fearsome!” Cold sweat started appearing on Lei Yu’s forehead.  
“Oh crap!”

Hurriedly taking out his cell phone, he called Hu Jiong. “Ancient Moon! Where are you right now?”

“I’ve just entered the hallway of the guild, what’s up?”

“Quick! Quickly get out of there!”

“Ahhh...!”

“Hello? Hello? Ancient Moon! Hu

Jiong! Hu Jiong!” Lei Yu was screaming like crazy into the phone but no one answered at the end of the line.

“What happened?” Bianca urgently asked.

“Shit! He’s not responding and the call was suddenly cut off! Something shouldn’t have happened right?” Lei Yu was somewhat frantic.

“Don’t worry; I don’t think they’ll hurt him.”

“Why would you say that?” Lei Yu asked.

“Their main purpose was to find you so before you show your face; Ancient Moon should still be safe.”

Lei Yu tightly closed his eyes, calming his impatience and restlessness. As he gradually calmed down, his thoughts were constantly thinking on what steps he should take next.

“I have to leave for a bit but I’ll be in contact with you by phone. From about six to seven meters away, Lei Yu leaped and landed directly inside his car. Bianca didn’t ask anything further because she knew where Lei Yu was off to. But her heart could not help but ache slightly.

The Mercedes-Benz convertible roadster parked inside the New York University’s campus. Since it was still early, there weren’t too many people walking about on campus. Lei Yu dialed Ai Er’s

number and only after hearing her voice did his heart finally calm down.

When the two met, Lei Yu and Ai Er both left together. As to where they would go, Lei Yu hadn't thought about that yet. But since Ai Er was safe, then the next thing he should do was quickly contact Bianca. No matter how she knew so much, having someone with them who knew the ins and outs of the situation was more beneficial than harmful.

Meeting up at the coffee shop with Bianca, Ai Er had the right to know about everything. And then trouble seems to follow one after another. Lei Yu had just sat down when his phone rang and a voice he didn't

want to hear at this time appeared at the other end.

“Do you know where my brother his? My calls can’t seem to get through to his phone[1].”

“He’s dealing with something important right now and can’t answer your call. If you have something important, you can tell me and I will tell him.” Said Lei Yu as he gently rubbed his forehead trying to dull the ache.

“Oh, it’s nothing important. Tomorrow I will arrive in New York on my work flight. Once you see him, if you could let him know that I brought something for him. Also... I brought something for you too!” After she said that, Hu Xin Er hung

up the phone. Lei Yu could not help letting out a long sigh.

“What should I do? How do I rescue Ancient Moon?” Lei Yu asked Bianca who was sitting across from him.

“What? Was that his sister that called?” Having the ability that exceeded ordinary people, it was natural her hearing was better than them. Bianca was able to hear the voice on the other end of the line as well.

Lei Yu nodded. “Right, I really don’t know how to explain this to her.”

“Since you can’t really expose your face around town, I’ll go out for a bit. When I find out anything, I’ll

contact you.”

Lei Yu knew that Bianca had to figure out the situation so he didn't say anything unnecessary and just nodded his head. With Ai Er, the two of them quietly sat in the coffee shop drinking coffee except that they weren't in the mood to enjoy it.

“Brother Yu, the people in Tenglong country gave me a call and said the investigative team will be arriving in the U.S. this afternoon. What should we do?”

Lei Yu slammed his cup onto the table; troubling things did indeed all come at once. “Who cares about the investigative team. Dr. Tony's side currently wants my life and Hu Jiong is under their control. I really

don't have time to care about the team. Isn't it just some little bitch's arm that's broken? What's the big deal about that?"

"But I heard that the people in Martial Sect were really pissed off. Uncle Shangguan... Shangguan Xi Hong said this was equivalent to their own people fighting against each other." Ai Er knew Lei Yu was in a bad mood but there were things that Lei Yu had to hear about since this wasn't considered something trivial.

"Okay, I understand." Lei Yu lowered his head and tenderly said: "You want to come with me to a place?"

"To where?" Ai Er asked.



Lei Yu smiled. “Since we don’t have anywhere else to go, let’s go look for... an old friend.”

The state of Idaho was a beautiful place surrounded by rivers and forests. It was a good place for a vacation and Lei Yu’s destination was that.

With a distance that was pretty far away, they enjoyed the scenery as they drove across the country. Since Ai Er didn’t get any sleep the previous night, she was covered with a jacket that Lei Yu took out from his storage ring and sweetly fell asleep.

The small towns in the U.S. were different from the Tenglong country’s. Each of them had their

own distinct uniqueness and embraced their ancient heritage. Some of their residences crossed the barrier of modern time and made one feel they had returned to the early colonic era.

According to the GPS display, Lei Yu had arrived at one of the largest cities in Idaho. Just to be safe, Lei Yu stopped at the side of the road and took off his ring. He then went looking for people that were more elderly in age.

“Excuse me, do you recognize this ring?”

The elderly person was stunned, “how come you have this?”

It looks like this person recognizes

it which made Lei Yu silently ecstatic. It appears the old woman didn't exaggerate herself. "Well, an old woman gave this to me and told me to look for her with this."

Hearing this, the elderly person enthusiastically gave some directions to Lei Yu. The car came to a stop outside a huge estate, "Wow, it's so big!" Lei Yu could not help praising.

The estate was surrounded by an iron fence that wasn't very tall, and encompassing it was soft and delicate green grass that swayed with the breeze. On top of the grass were a variety of dogs from all over the world running around. A path that wasn't too wide but was able to fit a car was connected from the

front gate to a nearby villa that was at least 10,000 square meters (107639 sqft). No, we should really call this a castle because it was too big, too extravagant and beautiful.

“Excuse me sir, how can I help you?” Outside the main gate, a soft spoken middle-aged man with brown hair asked.

“Oh, I’m looking for an old woman; she’s the owner of this ring.” Lei Yu then showed the ring in his hand. The middle-aged man then hurriedly picked up the phone inside a small hut beside the main gate, “Mr. Hawes! Someone came with the ring! Yes...! Yes!”

The middle-aged man’s voice sounded very excited, he was so

excited that he could barely speak and hurriedly opened the main gate. “Quickly come in, come in! The madam has been waiting for you for a long time!”

Lei Yu nodded and blinked a few times before getting back into his car. He then drove into the estate while people he passed were discussing something enthusiastically. “Oh my god! A car was allowed to drive into the estate? Who on earth are they?”

“They look like two young people!”

“This is really too shocking, there has never been an outsider’s vehicle allowed into the estate before!”

-----

[1] Plot hole, she shouldn't know that Lei Yu was working with Hu Jiong so why would she call Lei Yu?

# Chapter 125: Finally Came

Unknown how they could've prepared so fast, but a red carpet was rolled out from the main door of the castle onto the edge of the roadway for cars. On the left side of the carpet, ten plus maids dressed in black and white were respectfully standing there in a line. And on the right side were a line of men dressed in white suits with a black shirts showing underneath. Lei Yu was beyond surprised from seeing this, he had never expected to be received and greeted with such big fanfare. He was definitely shocked beyond words, but fortunately he

had experienced a scene similar to this already in the Kou country.

But it was different for Ai Er. She was surprised and curiously looking at Lei Yu since she couldn't understand why this scene would occur.

The old madam then came out from the castle. She was an old woman that was supported by a beautiful young girl that was followed behind by two female servants. Lei Yu instantly recognized the old woman. She was exactly the old lady he had assisted when she told him she was trapped in the Kou country.

Right after that came a woman about forty five years old being



accompanied by a middle-aged man around fifty years old.

Lei Yu and Ai Er got out of the car and seemed somewhat at a loss. Lei Yu was secretly saying in his heart: Oh crap, I would have never thought this family would be this rich. Could they be some ancient clan or family?

“You’ve finally come to see me!” The old woman was the first to say something as she started walking down the steps. This was her savior so how could she not be excited?

Lei Yu recovered his senses and closely inspected the elderly person. Perhaps it was due to her returning home, but her once thin malnourished face was now rosy

and plump making her become a healthy looking elderly woman. Even though her skin was still a bit loose, when compared to the agonized look their first time meeting, they were almost like two different people.

“Old madam, I never expected that...” Lei Yu pointed all around him and didn’t know what to say.

“Quick, come on in!”

Going in the castle entrance with the rest of the people, a golden floral carpet had covered the entire ground floor. With the old castle-like structure accompanied with modern amenities, it gave this magnificent palace a fresh and unique spin.

Lei Yu, Ai Er, and everyone were seated in a bright and spacious hall for receiving guests. Although Lei Yu has experienced the grandeurs and aspects of society, this was his first time seeing such a magnificently constructed private residence.

The previous middle-aged man stood up and walked towards Lei Yu. "My name is Hawes, the successor of the Burlinder family. Having heard your name from my mother plenty of times, it's really an honor to finally meet you!"

Lei Yu politely stood up and shook hands with Hawes. The latter seemed to be using a lot of strength and looked like he was just overly happy. Seeing his own mother's

savior, how could this dutiful son not be excited?

“I’m Lei Yu; it’s really nice to meet you.” Lei Yu slightly bowed showing his courteous manner.

The still attractive forty something year old woman also stood up and Hawes introduced her: “This is my wife.”

“Hello to you, Mrs. Hawes.”

The attractive woman came forward and gave Lei Yu a polite hug before touching her cheeks to his. Lei Yu was a bit surprised, how could a forty something year old woman have such smooth skin? Of course he didn’t reveal his surprised expression in the slightest and

pretended that thought never occurred to him.

The young girl who was supporting the old woman and never said a word suddenly stood up and shook Lei Yu's hand. "Hello, my name is Lafayette."

"Oh! Nice to meet you." The greeting was quite abrupt and Lei Yu didn't know who the girl was, but he could somewhat guess who she was.

"I'm sorry for her rudeness, this is my daughter." Hawes said with an apologetic face.

Such a polite and aristocratic family caused Lei Yu to feel a bit uncomfortable. Pointing to Ai Er

who was standing behind him, “this is Ai Er, she’s my... fiancée.”

Lei Yu’s introduction made Ai Er’s heart feel very sweet. She quickly bowed slightly and said: “How do you do.”

When the old woman returned home, she told her son everything about her situation and how she encountered Lei Yu. Not only was he going to appropriately avenge those that had harmed his mother, he also was extremely grateful towards Lei Yu. Hawes’s mother was the soul of the entire family and with Lei Yu’s assistance; the whole family naturally treated Lei Yu as a benefactor.

Lei Yu’s arrival had suddenly

caused a huge commotion in the Burlinder family. A large banquet was held in his honor which Lei Yu was not too used to. But as a guest, he should comply with the wishes of the host and just play along with their customs.

“Benefactor, is there something you need to deal with from your trip to the U.S.?” Asked Hawes.

Lei Yu smiled and said: “Mr. Hawes, you are too polite, please just call me Lei Yu. There is indeed something I have to deal with and I’ll be staying in the U.S. for a while before I can leave.”

“If there’s anything I can do for you, please don’t hesitate to tell me.”

Lei Yu gratefully smiled. How could he mention the situation he was dealing with to him? If he was to accidentally bring disaster to this family that just experienced a family reunion, then wouldn't Lei Yu's decision for them to return a favor turn into a calamity?

“I appreciate your kind offer, I will.”

The feast was indeed very luxurious. Lei Yu and Ai Er ate their fill to the point that they couldn't stop burping.

Agreeing to the host's request, Lei Yu and Ai Er spent the night in Mr. Hawes' home. But in his heart, he was still worrying about Hu Jiong's safety. Bianca still had not contacted him which made him feel



uneasy.

“Brother Yu, what’s wrong with you? Are you worried for your friend?” Ai Er asked as she saw Lei Yu’s facial expression.

\*Sigh\* “That’s right; there’s still no news from Bianca so I don’t know how Hu Jiong is doing right now.”

Since there weren’t any news, worrying was of no use. Lei Yu held onto Ai Er’s hand while they strolled along the huge estate. Staring up into the sky and seeing the stars, the scene looked like a peaceful and serene painting.

“There are really a lot of coincidences in this world. Who would have thought the old woman

you saved in the Kou country would actually be a member of a wealthy aristocratic family! But I wonder what they do to have so much money.” Mumbled Ai Er as she playfully strolled around.

“I didn’t expect this either. Anyway, it’s not safe out there and I believe no one should know our destination here. I really don’t want to bring any trouble to this family... Okay, shall we head back in and rest early?” Lei Yu gently touched Ai Er’s head and the latter nodded in agreement.

Complying with Ai Er’s request, Lei Yu and her had separate rooms. Ai Er returned to her room first while Lei Yu sat down at the receiving hall. Mr. Hawes then handed Lei Yu

a glass of red wine.

“Mr. Hawes, this ring that you and I possess, is there a story behind it?” Lei Yu was really interested in this matter since the ring was capable for storing things inside it.

Hawes replied: “The ring does in fact have a story behind it but I’m not too clear on the details. Perhaps the only person that knows about it would be my mother.”

Lei Yu’s brow went up, “Mr. Hawes, can I take a look at your ring?”

# Chapter 126: Greek Prophet

Without any thought, Hawes directly took off the ring from his finger and handed it to Lei Yu.

Slightly concentrating his spiritual awareness, Lei Yu inserted a trace of spiritual energy into the ring. He suddenly experienced the same feeling when he was first exposed to his ring. And in the corner of the storage space, Lei Yu discovered an item. This item that looked like a black wooden stick gave off a mysterious atmosphere. This scroll that was recorded with Greek texts was the same as what Lei Yu had in his ring, so what was this thing?

Lei Yu was indeed really curious about the ring. But since Hawes didn't know the back-story of it, it seems that he will need to find an opportunity to ask his mother.

Returning to his room, Lei Yu sat down on the floor ready to cultivate. It was at this time a knocking sound came from his door. When Lei Yu opened the door, the old woman was standing outside.

“Child, I apologize for bothering you at your time of rest.”

“Oh, old madam, is something the matter?” Lei Yu fully opened the door and respectfully invited the homeowner to enter his room.

After sitting down, the old woman

then said: "I do know about your situation. I didn't look for you because I didn't want to intrude into your daily life so I hope you'll forgive me for not seeking you out earlier."

Lei Yu hurriedly waved his hand in front of him, "Old madam, you are too polite. I've never had those thoughts so please don't say things like that."

"I am very happy that you've visited me today. But when I look at your face, I can tell there's something bothering you. Whatever it is, can you tell me about it?"

"Well..."

"Believe me; I might be able to help

you out.” The old woman looked kindly at Lei Yu making him feel something he had never felt before. Perhaps this was the power of motherly love, so Lei Yu finally relented.

“I left Tenglong country for the Kou country...”

-----

“From what you’ve said, you must be in a very dangerous situation right now?”

Lei Yu stood up and nervously said: “Rest assured, I was very careful before coming here. And I’m pretty sure no one was following me. Ah, if this has caused any inconveniences, I can immediately

leave now so don't worry about it."

"Sit down child." The old woman waved her hand, making Lei Yu sit down somewhat uncomfortably.

The old woman then said: "I can try to help you out with this situation but you also need to help me with one thing."

Even though he doesn't know how the old woman could help him, but Lei Yu still nodded and smiled in thanks. "What do you need me to help you with?"

"Can you help me take out the two scrolls inside the rings?"

Lei Yu was shocked, so the old woman already knew there was something inside those rings! But



then again, why was this so strange? Didn't Hawes say that only his mother knew the story behind these rings?

"Of course I can." Lei Yu nodded. "But since you knew how precious these rings were, why did you give me one?"

The old woman's reply was simple but made Lei Yu's heart tremble. "Because you're a good person and trustworthy! At first I only hoped that you would look for me in the U.S. but then find out your background was a bit special. Now that you've come, I trust you even more so I'm willing to divulge the secret to you."

Lei Yu exhaled heavily, looks like

the real highlight of the movie was about to start. What on earth did the scrolls inside the rings really represent?

“Thank you for your trust in me.”

The old woman took out a gray colored ring from her pocket and on it was also carved with a rotating pattern. If one was to look closely at the inside edge of the ring, you could see some text on it. The text on the ring was the same as the Greek text on the scrolls and Lei Yu couldn't understand any of it.

“I retrieved this ring from my son beforehand. I've never revealed the secret before because I've never met a reliable and trustworthy person. Today I will borrow your power to

look at the secret of our heritage from thousands of years ago!”

Lei Yu activated his awareness and condensed his spiritual energy into the ring. The black wooden stick quivered as it floated and dropped into Lei Yu’s hands out of thin air. After doing that for both rings, two similar sized black scrolls appeared that gave off a mysterious aura.

Lei Yu solemnly handed the two scrolls over to the old woman like he was handing over some sacred treasure. The old woman received it with a rather serious and respectful expression.

As the scroll was unfurled, Lei Yu was carefully waiting for the old woman’s words.

After a long time... “I see, I finally understand now. Serve the Prophet for the predestined outcome!”

Lei Yu scratched his head since he couldn't understand what the old woman was saying, and didn't want to open his mouth to ask.

“Thank you child. I implore you to continue keeping the other scroll safe.” Lei Yu took one of the scrolls and the old woman then said: “You should be able to see that the texts in the scrolls are from the Greek language.”

Lei Yu nodded. It was precisely this reason that he couldn't read what it was about. It wasn't because Lei Yu didn't go search for a Greek dictionary or something, but the

reason being modern Greek words seemed to be very different from the ones on the scroll.

“This is not only Greek text, but text from ancient Greece, that’s why regular people cannot understand what is written. I was entrusted by the Prophet to preserve these. In actuality, the Burlinder family is an ancient aristocratic family and it was due to coincidence that I personally gained the trust of the Prophet. That story of how that happened isn’t important; the important part is what the scroll has to say.” Said the old woman pleasantly.

“Ancient Greece? Prophet?” Lei Yu couldn’t make heads or tails over this; he clearly couldn’t understand

what the old woman was going on about.

“Wait until you resolve your matters in the U.S., then I will trouble you to take me on a trip to Athens so I can fetch a holy object. This holy object is very important and I wish to have an opportunity to lay eyes on it at least once within my lifetime.”

The more she spoke, the more bizarre this became but Lei Yu didn't doubt a single word. With such a magical thing like this storage ring, then behind it must be something even more amazing. What Lei Yu couldn't understand; if the old woman was so special, why would she be trapped in the Kou country? Since he was still an

outsider, there were things that weren't polite for him to ask.

Curling the scroll back up, the old woman left the room. It took a long time yet Lei Yu still couldn't enter his cultivating state. His mind kept thinking about the things that have happened to these past two days. He never expected that everything he came into contact with was so strange and bizarre. He could still accept the ninjas of the Kou country and the mutants of the U.S. since they were somewhat related to cultivators. Tenglong country itself weren't short of people with special abilities. But ancient Greece was a whole 'nother deal since he's never encountered that subject before. Could the Burlinder family's lineage be traced back to ancient

Greece? He could just wait until he goes with the old woman to Athens, then everything should reveal itself.

Furthermore, there was still Hu Xin Er to deal with. Her flight to the U.S. will be arriving tomorrow, should he see her or not? What should he say if he does meet up with her? If Hu Jiong was to really encounter some misfortune, Lei Yu would probably die of guilt. If it wasn't for him showing up, the Bounty Hunters Guild would perhaps function like normal and not the situation it was now where they were using Hu Jiong to threaten him.

Even though he was only recently acquainted with this friend, Hu Jiong did treat him with great



respect and called him young master; this made Lei Yu have a good impression on him. And since Lei Yu was a real man and hot blooded in nature, he will naturally not stand aside without doing a thing. Ultimately, this whole outcome happened because of him.

# Chapter 127:

## Powerful Influence

With much difficulty, Lei Yu finally calmed down and entered a calm state. He then started circulating his internal energy throughout his meridians.

Lei Yu found a very strange phenomenon; whenever his internal energy circulated to his heart vessels, he felt an inexplicably warm feeling vibrating in his chest area. The feeling was really comfortable but Lei Yu couldn't figure out what was the cause of it.

The odd thing was that his heart vessels were much stronger than

his other meridians. Whether it be its tenacity or its absorption capability, it was far more superior to other places.

“Something not right.” Lei Yu was in deep thought. Cultivators stressed that their energy protected the heart since the heart was like their spring of life. Regardless of any person’s heart, it was an extremely fragile organ that couldn’t protect itself, that’s why it relied on a person’s internal energy to protect it. So why had Lei Yu’s heart vessels become tougher than any of the meridians in his body?

This phenomenon caused Lei Yu to have many questions without answers. But this wasn’t anything bad after all, with such a tough and

strong heart vessel would definitely help Lei Yu in the long run. He then calmed himself down again and began to cultivate according to the methods imprinted into his mind.

His internal energy went through two cycles before Lei Yu spit out some turbid air. Compared to before with the Spiritual Bead of Longevity's help of expelling impurities, relying on himself wasn't any fun at all. But there's no other way, he could only acknowledge his fate. Lei Yu also understood that his so called genius destiny had come to an end. Without the help of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity, cultivating now will have many added cumbersome processes.

But of course Lei Yu was determined not to give up. Although he had reached the Sixth Order Warrior rank, it was still in the early stages. Comparing this to Shangguan Xi Hong and Celestial Court's two Sixth Grade Celestials, he was still too far behind. Moreover, Lei Yu had to find the killer who murdered his grandfather so this made him continue to put more effort into cultivating. Even if the process was slow, he couldn't slack off one bit.

Changing into a set of clean clothes, Lei Yu opened the door and happened to leave the room the same time as Lafayette. They both smiled at each other and Lafayette gracefully walked next to Lei Yu. Gently holding on his right arm, she

then said: "Let's go downstairs to eat breakfast."

Lei Yu's smile became somewhat awkward. Perhaps for Lafayette, her actions didn't mean much but for Lei Yu, he wasn't too used to things like this. "Ah, I'm grateful to Miss Lafayette for accompanying me, but I need to look for my fiancée since there's some things I need to tell her; if you don't mind going down to breakfast first."

"That's fine then, I'll see you later."

"See you in a bit." Lei Yu sighed in relief and walked towards Ai Er's room. As he was about to knock on the door, with his amazing hearing ability, he heard Ai Er's voice from the inside.

“Where is the investigative team now? Brother, what should we do then? Brother Yu is still in danger so he can’t go out. Okay, right, the people in the investigative team may not be their opponents. These past two days, I heard the strength of this group is really strong, even brother Yu is kind of worried. Also, his friend was captured by these people. Okay, I understand. I will call you if anything new comes up.”

Lei Yu shook his head; this investigative team is really a pain in the ass making a big deal out of nothing. Coming to the U.S. to investigate this, why don’t they think about comparing the medical costs to the travelling expenses; which one was more expensive?

Then again, there's no other way.  
He is after all the son of Eagle  
Group's commander.

Sometimes avoiding isn't the way.  
Lei Yu had been wondering about  
one thing – what if he appeared out  
of his own initiative? No matter  
how strong Dr. Tony's influence  
was, would he actually send out a  
dozen or so Ultimate Mutants out  
to a public area? There are probably  
not that many mutants in the U.S.  
under his control, but if there were,  
wouldn't he be able to disrupt the  
world's order? One or two of them  
could already cause a lot of chaos.

Lei Yu currently had the strength of  
a Sixth Order Warrior and was  
considered evenly matched with the  
Ultimate Mutants. Even if an



Ultimate Mutant joined forces with Hasegawa, an Ultimate Ninja, Lei Yu still has the ability to escape. He had absolute trust in his own speed. Not to mention that green energy had disappeared, so the situation where he goes berserk and out of control should no longer occur.

Lei Yu made up his mind and decided to show up amongst a large public crowd and see what they wanted. But the only problem that's giving him a headache was what to do with Ai Er?

“Brother Yu, you haven't gone down yet?”

“Ah! Oh, I was just about to meet with you and go down to breakfast together.”

Ai Er clasped her hands in front of her chest and narrowed her eyes, revealing a face of enjoyment. “This place is really nice, even my house isn’t even as good as this. It’s really great here.”

Lei Yu suddenly had a thought. “Ai Er, you really like this place that much?”

“Of course I do. Mr. Hawes and his family treats us so well, and Lafayette and I are really compatible with each other. Last night we chatted until really late before we went to sleep!”

“That’s good then, really good.” Lei Yu nodded his head. With one hand holding onto Ai Er’s hand, they both went downstairs.

Breakfast was so lavish that made people hard to comprehend; it was like they were treated as royalty! Lei Yu was actually kind of overwhelmed by this.

After the meal, Lei Yu pulled Ai Er aside and told her his thoughts. Ai Er's eyes were full of reluctance and unwillingness to let Lei Yu go out by himself; she was going to be too worried. But Ai Er was a reasonable girl and knew she would be a hindrance if she came along. If something was to happen, Lei Yu would be distracted by having to protect her so she could only obediently nod in acceptance.

“Mr. Hawes, old madam, I... I have some things to take care of which requires me to leave for two days. I

don't know if it's possible if my fiancée can stay with your family for the next two days?" Lei Yu politely asked with a smile.

"Lei Yu, there's no need to be so polite. Just go ahead and take care of whatever you need to do. Mother and I will help you in anyway so don't worry. Oh yeah, Miss Ai Er and Lafayette are quite compatible with each other so with these two like sisters together, you should be rest assured." Mr. Hawes obviously knew Lei Yu had things to take care of. It appears the old woman had already told him about Lei Yu's situation.

"I'm really grateful for this."

Lei Yu then drove away. The

distance to New York was still quite a ways so he was driving pretty fast. Halfway there, he received Bianca's call and found out some news about Hu Jiong. Hu Jiong was fine which made Lei Yu sigh in relief as his heart was somewhat eased.

Lei Yu was actually very curious about how Bianca could know so much, but it was obviously clear that she was helping him so he shouldn't think too much.

-----

Within Tenglong country, a middle-aged man with a thin face, phoenix like eyes, and a hook nose was holding a cell phone and pacing back and forth inside a house. His thick eyebrows furrowed together

as he had been waiting for news from the U.S. side. But after a full day and night, no news came which made him extremely anxious.

“Commander Xiao, the investigative team that went to the U.S. says they couldn’t find the person called Lei Yu.”

“Humph!” With one hand like a claw, he completely crushed the cell phone into pieces and letting it scatter onto the ground. “Is the Eagle Commander’s son so easily bullied by some bastard offspring? He is not putting me in his eyes!”

“Please calm yourself sir, I will go check out the situation again. If there’s any news, I will immediately contact you.” This person hurriedly

left not daring to stay for too long.

-----

After arriving at the U.S., Lei Yu had changed his phone and only gave his number to the people he wanted to have it. It was no wonder the investigative team was having a hard time finding him. But since Lei Yu already had a plan, he would naturally have his own way of doing things. Getting the contact information of the investigative team from Ai Er, Lei Yu initiated the call to them and gave the group a meeting time and location.

The investigative team was made up of four people, each with their own roles. One was responsible for interrogation, two were responsible

for recording statements, and one was in charge of investigating. “Lei Yu, why did you seriously hurt Xiao Fei to the point of crippling him?”

“He attacked me first, and it was him that killed an American.” Lei Yu said in a reasonable manner.

“According to our understanding, the person that killed the American was you and not Xiao Fei. And when Xiao Fei was trying to stop you, he suffered from your attack, is that right?” The interrogator coldly asked.

Lei Yu first smiled in disdain before standing up. The interrogator shouted: “What are you trying to do?”



“Haven’t you guys already fabricated the whole story? Is there any need for my statement?”

“Watch your attitude!” The interrogator pounded the table and stood up.

Lei Yu angrily grabbed his chair and smashed it against the wall causing the four chair legs suddenly split from the frame. His eyes full of anger, “watch my attitude? What’s with YOUR attitude?! What right do you have to interrogate me? Is this the right the Eagle Group gave you? Before I give in my official papers, I am still the Deputy Commander of Dragon Group. Is it that you don’t know the orders issued by the Chairman himself? I, Lei Yu am not someone you can command, and

you don't have the ability to command me either. If you really want to investigate the truth of the matter, then stop fabricating shit up! Otherwise I, Lei Yu, will not let you guys off easily!"

The several people were suddenly startled. Them coming to the U.S. were arranged by Eagle Group. And it was after Eagle Group applying for the paperwork to Martial Sect before they agreed to allow them here. But it seems this group of people had completely forgotten Lei Yu's identity. After Lei Yu said his words, cold sweat suddenly appeared on the members of this group.

Seeing this group of people with stunned looks, Lei Yu scoffed.

Acting all high and mighty after they were given a little bit of power? They were less than a dog fart! Lei Yu coldly “humphed” before walking away. The investigative group did not even dare fart at this point.

What were these fellows considered? Lei Yu was a person that Chairman Lin ordered that he was under the command of no one. And he was still the Deputy Commander of Dragon Group, which was still slightly more prestigious than Eagle Group.

In fact, everyone was already clear that the American that died was a mutant. They wanted to use this point as a point to hold him responsible. But what they screwed

up on was that Lei Yu simply didn't care, and they didn't have the qualifications to demand anything of him.

Originally, Martial Sect agreed to let Eagle Group send out an investigative team was only a show to placate the commander. Lei Yu's current position in Martial Sect could be said to be near the same level as the Shangguan family, so would Shangguan Xi Hong help Eagle Group in turn offending Lei Yu? This seems a bit unrealistic. Shangguan Xi Hong himself wanted to have Lei Yu firmly within his hands since he will be of great assistance in his future plans. After all, Lei Yu was a rare talent that could be referred to as a genius.

Coincidentally around this time, that day at the nightclub was all recorded by surveillance cameras and the recording was handed over to the responsible government departments of New York City. Everything was very clear; Lei Yu did not attempt to kill the bald guy and was only trying to capture him. Even though the video wasn't too clear, you can still see the disgusting face of Xiao Fei behind Lei Yu when he quietly made a sneak attack. The truth had been revealed and the video recording made its way to Tenglong country but not to the public.

“Nonsense!” Shangguan Xi Hong shouted angrily with his hands clasped behind his back. “Chairman Lin is extremely pissed off!

Commander Xiao, if you want to keep firmly sitting in your position, then you better properly discipline your son!”

Holding back his anger, he had brought his son back from the U.S and found the best doctors in the country for treatment. But even after treating him, there will still be lingering issues. Wanting to maintain his outstanding performance in Eagle Group? It looks like Xiao Fei will no longer have that opportunity. As the commander of Eagle Group, he will naturally harbor this hatred and will one day seek out his vengeance.

These few days in the U.S., it was actually peaceful and quiet for Lei Yu. No one came after him, not

even mutants. This was definitely very strange for Lei Yu.

Little did he know, Mr. Hawes had secretly done some things so that Lei Yu would temporarily not be in any danger.

Lei Yu wasn't in any in danger but he was extremely worried about Hu Jiong. Two days ago, Hu Xin Er came to the U.S. and Lei Yu came up with some excuses to not see her. But this wasn't a solution so what should he do?

But coincidentally at this time, Hu Jiong gave Lei Yu a call and said that had been released. Lei Yu was overjoyed but couldn't figure why this was the case. Asking Hu Jiong was of no use since he was clueless

himself. As for Bianca, she shook her head and said she didn't know either; she only knew that a very powerful influence requested Dr. Tony to do this. As for whom it was, she had no clue.



# Chapter 128:

## Direction of Development

Lei Yu was thinking, could it be Mr. Hawes? No, impossible. Mr. Hawes and his family is so nice and polite, there's no way he could be affiliated with these dirty scoundrels of the underworld. Lei Yu didn't how he should ask them so he simply didn't bother asking.

They aren't going after him but it doesn't mean Lei Yu will just let this go. What was the reason for coming to the U.S.? Wasn't it about that bastard Hasegawa? Wanting to start a plague in Tenglong country

and had actually killed Lei Yu once, was he going to let him off that easily?

After making inquiries from multiple sources, plus the information provided by Bianca, Lei Yu found out that behind Dr. Tony was a large squad of mutants. Wanting to destroy him and his organization was harder than ascending to an immortal. Add the ninjas that had migrated from the Kou country to the U.S., Lei Yu realized this was not an easy task for him.

Wanting to single-handedly deal with this was impossible so Lei Yu decided to stay in the U.S. long-term to develop his prospects. As for the suggestion proposed by Tenglong's

Chairman Lin Cang Hai? Lei Yu had absolutely no interest at all.

Although the amount of wealth Lei Yu possessed was not considered an amount that can rival a country's, but it was still not a small number. With \$1.3 billion U.S. dollars, wanting to use this to establish a foundation for future developments wasn't a difficult thing.

Lei Yu decided to have Black Panther come to the U.S. to be his right-hand man. Even though he hasn't known him for a long time, but the things he has experienced with him made Lei Yu completely satisfied with his performance. He may seem cold and unapproachable on the outside, but Black Panther was in fact a rarely seen loyal

person.

That day when Lei Yu used his fearsome lightning ability to force Black Panther to reveal things about Yamaguchi-gumi, he was able to tolerate it for a long time even when he hated the organization. When Lei Yu first used threats, and then incentives of treating him like a fellow brother, even if he commanded Black Panther to die now, it's possible he wouldn't even twitch his eyebrow and do it.

Black Panther brought Gray Bear along with him and they both arrived in the U.S. As for their other brothers, they stayed in the Kou country. On one hand, they could still protect Cui Ying Ying's safety, and on the other hand, there were

still matters they had to take care of. After the destruction of the Yamaguchi-gumi, the island had become their exclusive territory and they started a massive recruitment effort. Due to Lei Yu's incident, the Kou country's economy went into a recession and became one of the world's largest debtor country. They simply couldn't afford to keep paying their ninjas so a bunch of them had defected to Black Panther and his group.

Black Panther had the sole support of Cui Ying Ying; and with signed agreements from the Kou country, the two sides agreed to not interfere with each other. However the government treated the Yamaguchi-gumi in the past was how they will treat the new organization now.

The only difference was that they wouldn't create viruses or bacteria to endanger the world.

So how did Cui Ying Ying afford to employ these ninjas that were in the thousands? As a recently debuted shrewd and clever businesswoman, of course that won't stop Cui Ying Ying from finding her own way[1].

Once he saw these two men who were considered quite competent underlings to him, a feeling of joy came from deep inside Lei Yu's heart. When it came to dealings with the underground world, their expertise would be the best. After all, they were pretty much the go to guys that were in charge of public dealings while in the Yamaguchi-

gumi, and had a lot of experience in this area.

Everyone gathered inside Lei Yu's hotel room. There were no outsiders present with only Hu Jiong, Black Panther, Gray Bear, and Ai Er. Even Bianca had not been invited by Lei Yu since she was too mysterious. Even though she had helped him out, Lei Yu was still somewhat worried about her background.

“Young master, what are your plans?” Asked Black Panther

Lei Yu gathered his thoughts and asked: “So how should we recruit and expand our forces? We don't have any roots inside the U.S., just like how we originally were in the

Kou country.”

“Young master, have you forgotten? As long as you have money in this world, there’s no problems that can’t be solved.” Black Panther smiled before continuing: “Once those people with strength and abilities discover gold, they will desperately rush forward. As long as your pile of gold is big and tall enough, then there won’t be any problems at all!”

Lei Yu nodded. “Ah, what you’ve said makes sense. You know when it comes to things like this; I’m pretty much clueless about it. I’m sure you guys understand the reason why I’m doing this. Even though the U.S. is not my country, but according to the situation



described by Bianca, this person called Dr. Tony will one day become a threat to the U.S. In order to terminate the threat from spreading to Tenglong country, we will have to destroy their organization for good.”

Lei Yu wasn't some almighty savior or some sort of hero. But there was one thing that other people could not be compared to him, and that's Lei Yu truly believed when a person had the strength, they had to carry on burdens and responsibilities correlated to it. If they weren't capable of it, then they had no right to possess that strength.

“Recruiting soldiers is fundamental in expanding our forces but it's rather difficult to recruit people

dedicated to our cause. Anyway young master, how much capital do you have? If there isn't enough, can we see if Miss. Cui can do something about it? I believe she will fully support you at all costs." Black Panther asked.

Lei Yu shook his head and smiled, "My guess is the cash on hand she has isn't as much when compared to mine. The initial capital of our plans isn't a problem so you don't have to worry, just do what you must. But you need to remember that we're not going the underworld route. We only need to expand our powers to a certain extent that's good enough to rival Dr. Tony and Hasegawa's forces."

Everyone nodded. Lei Yu then

continued: “First of all, not only do we need some common ordinary people, but we need those with special abilities. We will have a lot of work cut out for us in recruiting both sides.”

Lei Yu clearly spoke his thoughts in detail to everyone present. After a few days of familiarizing themselves, Black Panther and Gray Bear started to know the ins and out of New York City. After these two were injected with a formula that Lei Yu found in the hard drive, their bodies were greatly improved. And the sickening stench that had once weighed down their hearts had disappeared. How can this kindness they've been shown be put into words?

Because Black Panther and his group had bodies combined with the genetic makeup of animals, Lei Yu only used a single component of the upgraded mutagen H series injection. With an extracted single component, it wouldn't cause any negatives effects of a double dose of mutagen. Back then, the Yamaguchi-gumi felt the component was too expensive so that's why they didn't give it to Black Panther and his group of mutants.

A few days later, they didn't have that much progress but Hu Jiong's side had a small breakthrough.

While he was in the Bounty Hunters Guild, Hu Jiong was familiar with some of the bounty

hunters. Even though they couldn't chat with each other while they were in the premise of the guild, but privately and on occasion, they would meet up to chat and drink together. And this pastime happened to be how lonely people would meet up.

After conversing with them, Hu Jiong revealed what his thoughts were. These bounty hunters expressed their willingness to leave the guild but their condition was of course related to money.

This wasn't a problem for Lei Yu. What he was worried about was how to stay operational. Start a business? He wasn't the material for things like that. And he couldn't grab Cui Ying Ying from the Kou

country and bring her here. And he couldn't just let the money in his pocket keep on depleting. There's an old saying where sitting idle will one day empty a mountain of gold, so what methods can he use to maintain a stable income?

"Young master, I have a method but I'm just not too sure on how to implement it." Hu Jiong said after thinking awhile.

"Quickly tell us." Lei Yu had no ideas at all.

"Underground fights are very popular in the U.S., and you should know how they work. We could also start one and become the banker and open up bets. There will naturally be lots of people

interested in it.”

Lei Yu thought for a bit and shook his head. “It’s a good idea but isn’t gambling something considered a vice? I mentioned before that I didn’t want to develop our organization through the underworld route.”

-----

[1] And that’s how the author avoids coming up with a way to fund them.

# Chapter 129:

## Trapped In A Labyrinth

“Young master, this is merely an underground business. It’s not only the people of the underworld that conduct in underground businesses, even some government officials will participate in it from time to time.” Black Panther interjected.

Lei Yu couldn’t make up his mind at this point. Hu Jiong once again spoke up and Lei Yu agreed to his approach.

“Think about it young master, those that will be participating in the



fighters all have extraordinary strength. We could go through this route and attract a portion of these people to expand our own group, right?”

“Okay, it’s decided then!” Lei Yu slapped his thighs as he said this.

In regards on how to run this, then Black Panther and Gray Bear would be more familiar with it. Taking a large sum of cash allocated to them by Lei Yu, they quickly began working on the matter.

Now the next thing he had to do was keep his promise. That day he promised the old woman when things were calmed down, he would accompany her to Greece.

Since there weren't particularly anything going on for now, and Lei Yu didn't understand how to setup the fight matches, he gave Black Panther full authority to do whatever was needed. He then brought Ai Er back to the Burlinder family's castle.

"My dear child, you're back!" The old woman was clearly very happy at Lei Yu's return. People will always respect others with integrity and Lei Yu was clearly was someone with strong moral principles.

As for the subject of going to Athens, Greece to retrieve a holy object, the old woman didn't tell her son Hawes at all. It seems like Lei Yu was the only person aware of it. Even if he leaves Ai Er at this place

while he leaves the U.S., Lei Yu's heart will still not be at ease so they brought Ai Er along as if they were going on a vacation.

Without stopping for breaks, they left for the airport. Lei Yu and group left New York towards Athens, Greece – a city filled with many myths and legends[1].

According to the enlightenment the old woman received, they arrived at a mysterious location. It's already been half a month by the time they've arrived here.

This place was surrounded by cliffs, and below the cliff was a rapid stream. Against a cliff wall was a huge rock around ten meters tall and with a diameter of about fifteen

meters.

There were no signs of vegetation around here giving it a desolate feel and Lei Yu had felt uncomfortable ever since arriving at this location. Looking at Ai Er, she also had a frown and appears to not like the feel of this place either.

The old woman slowly walked towards the huge rock and waved her hands for Lei Yu to follow her over.

“Will there be a holy object inside?” Asked Lei Yu filled with doubt. He refuses to believe this huge rock itself was the holy object the old woman was talking about.

The old woman suddenly closed her

eyes without answering Lei Yu. You can see her hands were trembling non-stop and Lei Yu didn't know what was causing that.

A long time later, the old woman opened her eyes. "Almighty God! Please forgive my sinful deeds today!"

Lei Yu was extremely confused and didn't know what the old woman was going on about.

"Child, I will have to trouble you to take the scrolls out."

Lei Yu nodded and placed the two rings onto his palm. Activating his spiritual awareness, the two black scrolls with a mysterious aura appeared in Lei Yu's hands. The

instant these scrolls appeared, they could feel a slight tremor from the ground that only lasted a moment. Lei Yu was standing close to Ai Er and unconsciously put one of his arms around her waist and the other hand grabbing onto her hands.

The old woman excitedly unfurled the two scrolls, then moved backwards a few steps before standing still again. She then began reading the ancient Greek texts on the scrolls.

Gradually, the previous ground tremors recurred again. Lei Yu followed the tremors with his spirit and found the cause of it, and it was the huge rock in front of them. The shaking of the huge rock starting

becoming more intense and more frequent. The loose gravel on top of the rock continued falling down causing “sha sha” sounds as it hit the ground.

A loud “BOOM” noise sounded out. Lei Yu looked intently and was shocked. In the center of the huge rock, a large cave-like hole had opened up. The edges of the hole looked neat and didn’t look like something caused by an explosion. Lei Yu looked at the old woman and paused before asking: “Old madam, this...”

“Child, are you willing to go in together with me?”

The huge cave entrance had a height of about three meters and

inside was pitch black. Even with Lei Yu's amazing eyesight, he still couldn't see what was inside the cave.

Lei Yu looked at Ai Er; and perhaps out of curiosity's sake, Ai Er nodded her head in agreement. The three cautiously walked forward into the mysterious large cave that had suddenly appeared.

There were steps inside the cave that appeared to be manmade. But who built these stairs? Lei Yu could not figure it out and had no one to ask. And this feeling like they were going on a quest made him feel somewhat excited.

Slowly going down the steps, the old woman knocked on the walls a few



times. \*Fu Fu\* A sudden brightness flared up. Torches on the wall lit up one by one in an orderly fashion, revealing the scene inside the cave.

Lei Yu carefully looked around and noticed this place was pretty much an underground labyrinth. As you look along the walls, you couldn't see what was around the corners. The labyrinth was made up of countless intricate paths, and on each wall had carvings of pictures. There were carvings of humans, monsters, scenic rivers and mountains. The three of them could only continue walking cautiously deeper inside.

The old woman has naturally not been here before; she only relied on the mysterious revelations in her

mind that allowed her to find this location and the method of opening the cave.

All three of their hearts were in suspense. Even someone like Lei Yu with such a powerful strength could not help feeling excited to the extreme; he was too filled with desire to find out what was inside.

Following the path, Lei Yu was keeping Ai Er close to him as they followed behind the old woman. The three of them were moving very slowly since each step they took was filled with caution. They walked in a straight line and did not make any turns when they encountered a junction.

The light given off by the torches in

the labyrinth were quite dim, and add that with the flames dancing around, this place gave off a very mysterious atmosphere. It was so quiet inside here, so quiet that they could hear each other's heart beat. Lei Yu released his perception ability to his maximum so he could be ready for anything thrown at them.

They had gone past approximately a dozen path junctions. "We're actually at a dead end!" Lei Yu stared at the wall in front of them with a drawing of a knight on a horse in full armor. The drawing was vivid and extremely mighty, making the knight in the drawing look like it was alive!

"This is not good; I'm not getting

any inspiration or guidance. I'm afraid that we might become trapped here!" The old woman said as she frowned.

"Then what should we do?" Lei Yu suddenly became anxious. "If we were to be really trapped here, I might as well break down all the walls here!"

"No!" The old woman was alarmed and hurriedly said: "Please don't break anything in here!"

Lei Yu looked around. "Things? There are objects in here? Are you talking about the pictures drawn on the walls?"

In fact, Lei Yu did not pay attention that when the old woman was

looking at the pictures drawn on the walls, her eyes were filled with respect and devotion as if the ancient gods did exist.

“This is a sacred place and all the holy items are amongst this maze. Child, you cannot forget that this is within a cliff. If you destroyed the walls, not only will the holy objects be destroyed, we could be buried within this place as well so leaving will be impossible by then! Not to mention part of that huge rock may start rolling down the stairs and completely crush us to oblivion!” The old woman’s voice echoed throughout the labyrinth as she said this.

Lei Yu gasped and tightened his hands that were clutching onto Ai

Er's. "I'm sorry old madam, what should we do then?"

-----

[1] In the author's world, there doesn't seem to be any airports in Boise, Idaho and the 6 other states they will be driving through.

# Chapter 130: Divine Revelation

“It looks like we’ll need to split up. As long as we find the holy object, all the junctions will close off by itself leaving only the path to the exit. Then, we can easily leave this place.” Said the old woman.

“That sounds like a plan, but what does the holy object look like?”  
Asked Lei Yu.

“It’s a piece of memory, a revelation. To be precise, it’s a divine revelation.”

The old woman’s words made Lei Yu at a loss; it looks like she doesn’t

know exactly what it was either. At least how Lei Yu understands the situation, as long as it's not the walls or the torches, then it has to be the holy object.

The old woman separated with Lei Yu and Ai Er at the nearest junction; there's no way Lei Yu will allow Ai Er to separate from him. With their ten fingers intertwined and grasping firmly to each other, they cautiously followed the path in front of them.

-----

In another part of the country, just three days after Lei Yu left, Black Panther located the home of a New York government official. In the middle of the night, he and Gray



Bear gave him a “visit” and discussed in detail about their “cooperation.”

Black Panther learned these tactics during the time when he was with the Yamaguchi-gumi. As long as the government officials didn’t interfere, then many things will be carried out in a smooth manner.

Things were progressing very well. With the temptation and coercion of money, this senior government official could only agree with Black Panther’s requests. And everything will be in accordance to proper paperwork and procedures.

In the meantime, Hu Jiong and Bianca bought a nightclub. The nightclub had two levels, and each

level was about two thousand five hundred square meters (27,000 sqft). The cost was huge; they spent a full \$30 million U.S. dollars on it.

There was no need to remodel the first level so it will maintain its original look. As for the second level, they knocked down everything except for the load-bearing walls so they could completely remodel it.

Once everyone completed their tasks, work commenced on the nightclub. Hu Jiong recruited five bounty hunters who also helped out. The nightclub was renamed to “RAY”, which had the similar sound of Lei.

The stairs in the corner leading to the second floor was slightly

altered. The original staircase was sealed off and the private room at the end of the corridor had the ceiling opened up as the staircase. And in front of the new staircase was privacy barrier so that in the dimly lit room, you couldn't really notice the stairs.

Everything else on the second floor was ready and just waiting for Lei Yu to return. As for the nightclub on the first floor, the business and its employees remained the same and functioned like before.

-----

Inside the labyrinth by the cliff's edge, no one could tell whether it was day or night. One could only look at the watch on their wrists to

figure out the time.

“Brother Yu, I’m really tired. It’s been three days now, how come will still can’t find it? We can’t even find an exit so what should we do?” Ai Er and Lei Yu had been trying out different paths non-stop, but whichever way they went, they couldn’t get out of this bizarre labyrinth.

“We can’t give up; we have to keep looking until we find it.” Lei Yu looked at Ai Er with heart ache. “I’m sorry; I shouldn’t have brought you here.”

“Don’t say things like that!” Ai Er forcefully shook her head and even tried to force a smile. “It doesn’t matter where we are, I’m content as

long as I can be together with brother Yu!”

Sweetness oozed out of Lei Yu’s heart, he then held Ai Er in a fierce embrace. At this moment, Lei Yu caught a glimpse of something and was suddenly overjoyed. “Ai Er, look over there!”

At the end of the passage they were in, Lei Yu saw something flashing. Even though it was far away and the light was so faint that could easily be missed, but them two still noticed it and ran excitedly forward with their hands still clasped together.

As they got near, Lei Yu suddenly felt a powerful force emitting at the end of the passage that created a

resistant pressure and required tremendous effort if one wanted to continue forward.

“Ai Er, wait for me here!”

Lei Yu clenched his teeth as he moved his feet forward step by step. The feeling of this powerful force was like a pressure that came from all directions, making Lei Yu feel like back then when he first went through Dragon Group’s testing with the gravity machine. This pressure caused Lei Yu to use all the muscles in his body to resist, and even his bones were making “crack crack” sounds. Even in this situation, Lei Yu was still able to have his thoughts stray. “Did the old woman say anything about how to get this object?”

Lei Yu's body was shaking as sweat was constantly dripping down his body. Ai Er could only watch this with heartache since she couldn't help with anything.

Walking one step at a time, the distance was now at five meters, four meters, three meters...

Each and every step was unbearable for Lei Yu, but he insisted on moving forward as he clenched his teeth. Whether it was all for the so called holy object, or for Ai Er to safely leave this place, Lei Yu had to persist. He couldn't allow his most beloved to be stuck in here.

The enemy of pressure was driving force, and driving force was born from faith. Faith was always in Lei

Yu's heart which allowed him to survive to this day.

But where did this powerful force come from? It was capable of making Lei Yu, a Sixth Order Warrior suffer this much pressure? Lei Yu can confidently say: He could use his fists and punch a big hole into these stone walls, but Lei Yu couldn't understand how these walls were able to withstand such pressure.

Sweat had soaked through all his clothes, and even his shoes were filled with it. Each step he took would leave a shoe print due to his sweat.

Getting closer and closer, Lei Yu was finally able to see what the



thing was – a golden bowl that contained some type of liquid. The liquid was transparent but exuded white light that looked like stars. What on earth was this?

When Lei Yu with his teeth clenched had arrived at the final last meter, all the pressure suddenly disappeared. Inertia caused him to suddenly fly forward and almost knocking over the bowl of liquid.

After gasping for air and somewhat recuperated, Lei Yu carefully got near the golden bowl. The strange thing was the small bowl was suspended in the air with nothing supporting it underneath. Lei Yu even swept his hands underneath the bowl a few times and confirmed there was nothing there.

Gently touching the golden bowl with his hand, nothing happened. Lei Yu then directly held onto the bowl and brought it up to his nose for a sniff.

There weren't any smells either. It was at this moment a white gas like air with little white stars rushed into Lei Yu's nostrils like crazy. There was no way to stop it from happening and even when Lei Yu tried to stop breathing, it didn't work.

While panicking, Lei Yu even threw down the golden bowl but it was of no use. The liquid in the bowl did not pour out but had completely turned into a gas stream connecting to Lei Yu's nostrils.

Standing at a distance, Ai Er couldn't help stamp her feet in anxiety as she watched Lei Yu trying to get rid of the gas stream. But no matter what he did, all the gas eventually entered into his body.

"I don't feel any discomfort! What's going on? Could this be the holy object the old woman was talking about? Some sort of divine revelation? But what does it mean?" Lei Yu sat down cross-legged and examined his internals but didn't find anything wrong.

Right at this moment, Lei Yu felt his mind possess an extra memory. This memory was very noisy and some type of footage had quickly flashed by. Different sounds

appeared in Lei Yu's mind; there were sounds of horses, the sound of metals colliding together, painful screams and laughter, and even women moaning along with the cries of a baby.

# Chapter 131: Greek Warriors

All the memory footage was playing at once in Lei Yu's mind causing chaos. But the main thing was he couldn't understand why his eyes wouldn't open.

Like watching something on a projector, once the footage was over, four objects with golden lights around them made Lei Yu surprised. These were four different objects, or one could say it was a complete article that was split into four pieces.

A huge golden axe, a golden crown, a golden armor and a pair of golden

boots.

“What are these things?”

A revelation appeared in his mind telling him that these were divine holy equipments. A loud, eerie sound surrounded the four pieces of holy equipment before they flew off into four different directions (east, south, west and north) and disappeared without a trace.

Lei Yu stood up and realized there were some changes behind Ai Er.  
“How...?”

The originally complex maze had now become a single passageway that lead directly to the outside. Lei Yu moved two steps forward and realized that, strangely enough, the

previous pressure had also disappeared. Lei Yu picked up the golden bowl off the floor and directly stored it into his storage ring. He believed the bowl might have some use in the future.

Pulling Ai Er along with him towards the exit, a glimpse of sunshine could be seen ahead. The whole place felt like the unknown pressure had never happened at all. As they exited the cave, Lei Yu looked all over and even looked back inside and called out, “Old madam!”

After looking all over and not finding the old woman, Lei Yu was alarmed. “How could this be?”

“All the previous passageways had

been closed off leaving only one path. Could it be..." Lei Yu thought back to what the old woman previously said. "Not good, the old madam might still be in one of those passageways. And since those passages have been closed off, there's no way for her to get out!"

"What should we do?!" Ai Er was so anxious that she was about to cry.

After thinking for a while, he still couldn't figure out a way to rescue the old woman from the maze. "Ai Er, wait for me out here while I go back inside to take a look." Lei Yu went back inside the cave and called out to the old woman. He didn't hear any responses and only heard the echoes of his voice bouncing around the passageway.



“It must be because the holy objects had left its place that caused this scene!” Lei Yu concluded this was the reason and returned to the end of the passage.

Once he neared the wall at the end of the passage, a change started happening inside the cave. It started trembling violently as if the ceiling was about to fall down. Lei Yu urgently tried to exit the place but it was too late, a sudden white beam of light shot out from the wall behind his back. This light shone directly on Lei Yu’s back and everything began to blur before his eyes. Lei Yu could only feel a splitting headache as he clutched his head and squatted onto the ground, struggling with the pain.

When he heard the sound of horse hooves pounding on the ground, Lei Yu suddenly raised his head and looked about. Lei Yu was dumbfounded, “Where is this place?”

Three tall horses were galloping with warriors in gray leather sitting atop of them. Two of them had spears in their hands while one of them with a sword was quickly approaching Lei Yu.

What was most surprising to Lei Yu was that he couldn't detect their strength! While in shock, he stepped back a bit and tried to circulate the internal energy inside his body.

Lucky! There were no changes to

his internal energy; he was still at the early stages of [Detachment]. So why wasn't he able to rely on his spiritual energy to probe his opponent's strength? Could they be much stronger than him?

Lei Yu sucked in a breath of cool air. If that was the case, then he was pretty much screwed. With the ill intent on their faces, Lei Yu couldn't be careless. Raising his hands, he readied himself for a fight.

As the three men on horses got closer, they stopped and got off when they were around five meters away and approached Lei Yu on foot.

Carefully looking, Lei Yu noticed

that these three had a Westerner's facial features. They had high bridged noses, deep eye sockets, and blue eyes. And according to some of Lei Yu's knowledge, these three men were dressed in clothes similar to a Greek warrior. Of course, this so-called knowledge was from seeing many movies and shows on television.

The three warriors were very curious about Lei Yu since they have never seen these types of features on a person before. One of the middle-aged man with a mustache asked, "Who are you?"

(Author's Note: How could Lei Yu arrive at this place and understand their language? There will be an explanation when we return to the

labyrinth.)

“I would first like to ask what place is this?” Seeing that his opponents didn’t make any aggressive moves, Lei Yu was relieved.

The three were obviously somewhat surprised, but the one middle-aged man with the mustache still replied, “We are in the territory of Queen Telephassa.”

“What?!” Lei Yu’s eyes were wide open. He had once leafed through some random books and inside mentioned a Queen Telephassa in it but it was over a thousand years ago! “What the hell?! No way! What’s going on?!” Lei Yu shouted. The three warriors looked at each other and couldn’t understand what

Lei Yu was talking about. That was not strange since the words Lei Yu lamented in were in the Tenglong language.

“You haven’t answered my question, who are you? Why are you here? Are you a spy sent by the country of our enemies?” Asked the mustache guy while staring.

Lei Yu shrugged. “I don’t even know who I am and I don’t belong here. I don’t know what you want but as long as you don’t kill me, I’m pretty much at your mercy.” Lei Yu simply gave up resisting. As long as he could keep his life, everything else doesn’t matter.

The three warriors muttered amongst themselves for a long time

before finally deciding to bring Lei Yu back with them for further interrogation.

They used some rope to tie Lei Yu's hands tightly and then tied the rope onto some type of lock on the horseback. The three climbed onto their horses ignoring Lei Yu's surprise and nudged the horse's side as they started galloping forward.

Lei Yu couldn't laugh or cry. "You don't really have to treat me like this, right?"

As for Lei Yu's complaint, it honestly didn't really matter much to him. The pace they set seemed quite leisurely. Maintaining a certain distance behind the horse

made the rope taut, so by borrowing the horse's strength, Lei Yu had a pretty easy time.

As the trio looked back, they were extremely surprised to see Lei Yu's nonchalant look. Lei Yu was calmly enjoying the scenery around him, which was something they had never encountered in their entire lives.

According to their thoughts, the current Lei Yu should be dragging on the ground kicking up dust while screaming constantly in pain.

Running for about four to five kilometers, they started going down a slope allowing Lei Yu to see a spectacular sight in front of him.



At the base of the hill, a huge city could be seen. Surrounding the city was a wall around twenty meters tall that were made from pieces of large rock piled on top of each other. On top of the city walls were innumerable soldiers patrolling and the flag flying above the city had a monster drawn on it. It had the body of a human but the head of a cow, which had the same charm as the cow monsters depicted in the Tenglong people's view of the Netherworld. But Lei Yu understood that the picture on the flag wasn't the same as Tenglong superstitions. The book he glanced through before had explained the meaning of the picture; the monster in Greek Mythology was known as a Minotaur. It enjoyed eating human flesh, especially when it came to

young boys or girls. Lei Yu kept thinking over and over in his mind that there must be some connection to the labyrinth he was in earlier. But as to what the connection was, he couldn't figure it out.

The trio led Lei Yu down the hill and into the huge city gates. After a brief inquiry, they entered into the city. Most of the city's buildings and structures were made out of rocks and the styles were ancient looking. The people in the city were all busy with their own livelihood that showed an affluent scene. When the people saw Lei Yu, they were all surprised. Humans with his hair color and his skin color were rarely seen in this part of the world. The strangest thing about Lei Yu was the style of his clothing attire which

made them extremely curious.

# Chapter 132: The Beautiful Queen

They arrived in front of a huge heavily guarded castle. Warriors in armor were standing at both sides of the main entrance while the long spears in their hand were reflecting the sunlight shining on them. The three warriors dragging Lei Yu dismounted as they arrived at the front entrance. They then untied the rope from the horse and started dragging him inside the castle.

They were walking down a long corridor and off towards the right side at a distance was a large wall, and below that wall there were iron cages at least four meters tall could

be seen. As for what they were for, Lei Yu had no idea.

Standing outside in front of a majestic looking door, the three warriors pushed Lei Yu through the doors. The three stayed outside the door and did not dare to enter as well. Lei Yu looked all around him and saw six huge pillars in this room with a variety of monsters carved on each pillar. Facing the door was a luxurious looking throne which was inlaid with many different precious stones. Atop of the throne hung a banner with the same picture which he saw earlier on the flag; the same Minotaur with a cow's head and a human's body.

The large hall wasn't particularly lit well, but you could still see

everything clearly. And “ding ding dong dong” sounds which were coming from the rear of the hall could be heard.

Gradually, the sounds got closer and Lei Yu couldn't help but to be amazed. “She's too beautiful! Is this a face that humans are capable of having?”

Even Lei Yu, a man with a strong will could not help as his heart slightly moved with this woman appearing before him; she was just too beautiful.

A white veil which was decorated with gold accessories revealed a slender jade like neck; partially covering creamy white breasts; a slender waist that you could easily

wrap your arms around; and a pair of bare smooth and sleek legs that were barely covered that looked just as pretty as a white jade. Her eyes contained the charm of a seductress, but they also had a hint of noble charm in them – seductive yet not inappropriate. Her small lips had a petite curve as they slightly opened suddenly making Lei Yu have the impulse of wanting to rush forward and kiss them. This woman was a demonic seductress who exuded elegance and nobility deep within her bones. She looked like she was seducing men at all times; affecting their hearts and making them marvel at her aura.

The “ding ding dong dong” sounds were coming from the accessories she was wearing on her head. It

took Lei Yu a lot of effort to tear his eyes away from her charming body and when he looked up, he could see that on top of her black hair there was a golden crown. He was surprised to find that he has seen the golden crown somewhere before.

“It’s one of the four objects that appeared in my mind!” Lei Yu was shocked but did not say this out loud.

The beautiful goddess was elegantly sitting on top of the throne. Gently moving her beautiful long hair, she then clamped her bare and slightly exposed legs together to avoid any embarrassment.

“Are you the spy that my country’s



warriors brought back?” Her sweet voice had a noble tone which could make a person’s heart shatter.

Lei Yu shook his head, “Nope.”

“Then why did you come to my territory?” Her dignified manner along with her commanding inquiry made her look even more noble and domineering. Lei Yu felt like it shouldn’t be present in this frail looking goddess of beauty yet this queen, she still had it.

“My revered Queen Telephassa, I’m really not some sort of spy from another country. I just don’t know how I have arrived here and I can honestly tell you that I don’t want to be here. If you insist that I answer your question, then I can

only say I have no clue.” Lei Yu understood if he tried explaining things clearly, this beautiful queen would not understand anything so it was best to stay silent.

“We are in times of war , since you can’t clearly identify yourself, then you can only blame this period of turmoil for your body’s harm. My warriors, send him to the mouth of Silo!”

As the Queen decreed this, the previous three warriors came into the hall but they didn’t dare raising their heads to look at the queen’s beauty that was similar to a goddess. They pulled the rope that Lei Yu was still bound by, intending to pull him out of the palace. However when Lei Yu used a tiny

bit of strength, these people couldn't budge him at all. Lei Yu smiled; he smiled because it seems like he only lost his perception ability to probe the strength of others, and it wasn't because these people here were so strong that it was beyond his imagination.

“Your honorable majesty Queen Telephassa, can you please tell me what is this Silo?”

Telephassa had no intention of answering Lei Yu as she slowly stood up ready to leave. The warrior guy with the mustache said: “Hurry and leave! Don't bother her majesty the Queen! You will know what Silo is once you get there.”

Lei Yu raised an eyebrow. He gave a

few more glances at this intoxicating queen who could drive people to obsession before reluctantly leaving with the trio. Obviously, if Lei Yu insisted on staying, even if all three warriors combined their strength, they could only dream of moving Lei Yu half a step.

A series of neat steps lead them to a huge fighting arena. The center of the arena was currently empty. Lei Yu went into the arena through an iron gate at the side. here were quite a lot of people spectating from the benches as all their eyes were focused on him, watching him intently.

“What the hell is this place?” Lei Yu looked all around, he could tell

from the eyes of the spectators which were filled with excitement. Perhaps it's been too long since they've seen a fight or something? But most of the spectators were warriors in light armor, and only some girls and women looked like housewives.

“Oooooooooohh~”

A loud cry of resentment was heard and the entire audience began boiling with excitement. All eyes were focused on an iron gate that Lei Yu was facing. The “bang bang” sounds of something smashing against the iron gate could be heard.

A “crack” sound was heard as the iron gate slowly opened. Lei Yu

instantly stared with big round eyes. “What is that thing? Is this the Silo the Queen was talking about?”

Some sort of monster was rapidly running towards Lei Yu. To accurately describe it, the monster had two heads which made it look humanoid; a pair of legs supporting it that was covered with thick muscles like the patterns on a slab of granite; two pairs of sharp claws were swinging around in front of its chest as if it wanted to shred Lei Yu to pieces; the two heads looked somewhat like a snake’s head but each head had two ears and a horn; from the fangs inside its mouth some type of viscous liquid was dripping, and finally, the bald headed monster was covered in gray colored skin that made it look

pretty fearsome.

Lei Yu instantly took a few steps back since he couldn't feel the degree of strength this monster possessed. Looking at its ferocious attitude and its sharp fang-like teeth, Lei Yu was a bit worried whether he could handle this thing or not.

Although this giant three meter tall two-headed monster looked very heavy and robust, its speed was not lacking at all. The monster had covered a hundred or so meters distance in less than ten seconds and it was already in front of Lei Yu.

Seeing the two-headed monster's aggressiveness, immediately the spectators surrounding the arena

were excited and started screaming:

“Eat him!”

“Rip him to pieces!”

“Silo, Silo, Silo!”

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and started to rapidly condense his internal energy, getting ready to fight with this unknown two-headed monster. Was he going to become food for this thing?

In reality, whether it was in ancient Rome, ancient Egypt, or ancient Greece where we are in right now; the same thing will always happen. The goal was to allow their citizens or their warriors to know that their country possessed a fierce and bloodthirsty beast so there's no



need to fear the other countries.

# Chapter 133: Two-headed Silo

Lei Yu heavily exhaled. With his speed, escaping from Silo's grasp was easier than eating pie, but Lei Yu wasn't intending to do this. Silo's fighting spirit was aroused and it wanted to have a good fight with this opponent after seeing Lei Yu's determination.

“Ahh!”

With a loud shout, Lei Yu wasn't going to retreat anymore but instead he moved forward. He kicked off the ground and flew forward, intending to confront Silo head on.

“Pak!”

Lei Yu raised his hand and blocked a tyrannical attack by Silo. Catching Silo by surprise, Lei Yu’s other hand smashed into Silo’s sternum area.

“Bang!”

Lei Yu then dodged backwards with eyes filled with surprise. Silo staggered backwards a few steps without suffering much damage. His eyes were full of anger as he bellowed into the sky, rushing towards Lei Yu again.

Even though he didn’t use his full strength in that attack, Lei Yu still used about 60% of his power. Silo actually didn’t suffer any damage which meant that his defense was

not weak at all.

Lei Yu threw a heavy fist and smashed it into the ground, giving off a purple lightning energy that blasted a trench in front of Silo that was at least one meter in length. His purpose of doing that was to deter Silo. Lei Yu wasn't sure if Silo could understand human words but he still shouted: "I don't want to kill you so you better not force my hand!"

Actuality, Lei Yu couldn't help but say this. According to records pertaining to about ancient Greece, no matter which country, it always had a monstrous beast that they've domesticated. The kings or queens would use this beast as a tool to punish criminals or spies. You

could also call this beast a plaything with a high rank which was several times higher than ordinary warriors. According to the current ancient Greece Lei Yu was in, the caste system was very strict. If he was to really kill this Silo in front of him, then he and Queen Telephassa were going to have a big fall out. Lei Yu didn't want this to happen since he wanted to understand this place and maybe find a way to leave.

Somewhat scared by Lei Yu's sudden ground attack that gave off lightning energy, Silo paused for a bit. Silo then whipped both his heads together and slowly opened his large fierce looking mouth, either not taking Lei Yu's words seriously or not understanding what

Lei Yu had said. Silo assumed a posture like he was going to rush forward again. Lei Yu's body quickly flashed backwards appearing five meters away while thinking: Looks like he can't understand human words since he's still insufferably arrogant. So what should I do? Do I really have to kill it? Silo started attacking faster without any intent on stopping, not letting Lei Yu think things through since he had to dodge attacks really quickly.

“Fuu!”

“Pak!”

A large claw smashed towards Lei Yu but he quickly withstood it by blocking the attack with his elbow, but Silo's sharp claws managed to

penetrate into Lei Yu's muscles. Since Lei Yu's skeletal structure contained metallic properties, it was impossible for him to suffer any further damage yet the pain he was feeling right now angered him to his limit.

Up in the seats, the spectators were all screaming. Although Lei Yu's performance somewhat surprised them, but once they saw Silo regaining his wild and bloodthirsty nature, their moods were fired up once again.

Lei Yu rapidly rotated his body to dislodge the sharp claw embedded into his arm, ripping out a few pieces of muscles in the process.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth to tolerate

the pain and shouted in rage:  
“Break!”

His right fist had then condensed a strong lightning power with a purple net surrounding it giving off “pak pak” sounds. Silo’s four blood-red eyes were suddenly opened up wide but Lei Yu’s attack speed was too fast so he had no time to reflect on how to resist.

“Crack!”

Hearing that sound would make people’s heart tremble in fear. The right-side of Silo’s chest had been deeply penetrated by Lei Yu’s arm. Lei Yu had chosen not to attack the location of his heart or else this monster would immediately die. This wasn’t the outcome that Lei Yu



wanted so he could only try to subdue him.

“Oooooowwww!”

Silo's pair of claws kept slashing around forcing Lei Yu to withdraw his fist and retreat backwards a few steps to escape from the random attacks.

The deafening roar by Silo even overwhelmed the sounds of the crowd on the stands. Lei Yu stood his ground silently as he gently massaged his injured arm. The gut wrenching pain made him angry but it had also stimulated him allowing him to retain his rationality. This was the only reason why he could make an instantaneous decision of not

taking Silo's life.

The previous three warriors that had brought Lei Yu to the arena were staring towards the arena with eyes wide and their jaws on the ground; their faces were completely filled with shock. Silo was a living fiendgod; no matter which battle he was in, Silo could even fight one against a hundred. Yet somehow he was seriously injured by this ordinary looking human so how could they not be shocked? Not mentioning those three, even the crowd of spectators who watching the fight could not close their mouths. They were so shocked that they couldn't speak and they even forgot to scream. They also forget their former disdain and scorn of Lei Yu.

Lei Yu was gasping for breath as his eyes were afraid of looking away from Silo. He had suddenly felt there was something different with Silo in front of his eyes. Once he carefully observed, he realized that one of Silo's two heads had slowly closed its eyes; half its body starting to droop like it was going to die. Lei Yu carefully pondered, "Shit! It can't be that it had two hearts, one for each head right?"

Lei Yu's guess was correct. Silo was in the beast category so how could his anatomy be the same as human's? Within Silo's left and right chest each contained a heart, and one of them was shattered by Lei Yu's fist causing the death of a life. Only the heart on the left side was still alive and his head was still

looking proud and wouldn't back away.

"I'm going to kill you!" Suddenly everyone was in shock; this two-headed monster Silo could actually speak human words. With the eyes on his remaining head, he stared daggers at Lei Yu.

"You... you can... you can actually speak!" Lei Yu was extremely shocked, this was something he would never have imagined possible.

"You killed my brother so I'm going to rip you into pieces!" Growled Silo as he rushed towards Lei Yu in a crazy manner. His legs was making "thump thump" noises as they struck the ground. Not giving Lei

Yu any chances to react, he raised his pair of claws and pounced towards him.

Lei Yu spun his body and jump up off the ground. Reaching the height of about five meters into the air, Lei Yu jumped past Silo's head. "Since you can talk, why didn't you listen to my previous words?"

Being asked like this, the enraged Silo actually hesitated a bit. Lei Yu saw that his words were effective so he continued speaking: "I killed your brother so you're going to risk your life to kill me? Let me ask you then, if you ripped me into pieces, who's going to risk their life to avenge me?"

"Humph! How can you compare

your lowly human life to my noble lineage? Enough spouting crap, go to hell!” Silo once again pounced over. Perhaps it was due to the death of his brother but his control of his body was a bit awkward since his current speed was significantly less than before.

Lei Yu easily dodged left and right, there was no way for Silo to even get close to him. Lei Yu reminded him again: “I’m warning you, don’t piss me off or else you will never stand up ever again!”

It was useless, no matter what Lei Yu said, it was of no use. Silo’s attacks were like before as if he reverted back to his old self which couldn’t understand human words; his eyes only saw Lei Yu as a prey.

# Chapter 134: Sparks Of Collision

“F\*ck, I’m going to end you!” Lei Yu was pissed. Repeated persuasion didn’t work and continually being chased around by this monster; whoever was in his place would also be pissed like hell. Lei Yu decided to use a finishing move or else if both of them used up their stamina, there won’t be telling who would remain standing.

While he was in the process of dodging, Lei Yu’s right index and middle fingers clamped together. He slid those two fingers along his arm from the top to the bottom, causing the lightning brand on his

arm to lightly shimmer. Right after that, a clearly visible purple light could be seen travelling down from a vein in his arm straight towards Lei Yu's finger. Seeing that a powerful attack was about to rush out of Lei Yu's body, a hysterical shout coming from a distance was heard: "Don't hurt him!"

Lei Yu was surprised for a moment and then saw the previous goddess of beauty – Telephassa. Seeing sadness appear on her beautiful face that caused her willow-like eyebrows tighten up, her anxious look make Lei Yu once again infatuated.

"Whoosh, pak!"

Feeling his face heat up, Lei Yu's



head was feeling dazed and started seeing stars twinkling in front of his eyes.

“F\*ck your uncle! Your father I, already stayed his hand yet you still attacked!” Lei Yu was finally and completely enraged by Silo. Again and again he had tolerated Silo’s actions by dodging them yet Silo kept attacking over and over again.

Forcefully wiping off the bloodstains on his face, Lei Yu wasn’t going to hold back anymore. He completely released the lightning energy he had been condensing previously. A beam of purple light burst forth from Lei Yu’s finger directly into Silo’s eye.

“Oooowwww!”

While gasping for breath and steadying himself, Lei Yu looked at Silo who was rolling around on the ground. Lei Yu lightly breathed out, “I will leave you with your life. I want to see how noble you are now... you f\*cking dared to say my life is lowly!”

Lei Yu’s attack had completely shocked everyone. Was that something humans were capable of doing? Was this person a God who had come down to the lower realm? Some even wanted to start worshipping Lei Yu right then and there.

Lei Yu started a slow jog yet his body quickly rushed towards the raised platform. He then leapt and landed amongst the crowd before

directly rushing towards where Telephassa was sitting. The warrior guards surrounding her even forgot to protect their goddess while they were staring at Lei Yu.

Lei Yu stood in front of Telephassa the seductress, ignoring the injuries he had sustained. "What's going on? Is he a relative of yours? I gave you face and didn't kill him."

With Lei Yu's sudden appearance like a ghost in front of her eyes, this graceful and noble queen who was admired by millions suddenly didn't know what to do. She retreated a few steps back but who knew there were some sharp stones behind her, making her stumble. Lei Yu's eyes detected it and immediately reacted, quickly catching her as she was

falling back. With one hand around her neck while his other arm was around her slender waist; touching the silky smooth skin of this elegant queen completely shocked Lei Yu.

“Woaaa!”

Shouts erupted from the entire crowd. In that instance, Telephassa’s shimmering and heart-moving eyes met the gaze of Lei Yu’s profound eyes which carried a hint of sadness and mysteriousness; only to find that she had absolutely no power to resist him. Lei Yu was still releasing a powerful aura from fighting Silo along with his profound and mysterious gaze; his strong and powerful arms together with a slightly curved lips formed a smile;

there's no way for this queen's heart not to skip a beat.

Exquisite and white – her pair of white jade-like thighs were exposed to the crowd making many men fiercely slurp back their saliva which was starting to drip from their mouths. But for some reason, no one dared to stare for more than one second.

The warriors on the side finally regained their senses. They clenched onto their spears and immediately surrounded Lei Yu.

“Let go of our esteemed Majesty!” One of the burly warriors coldly shouted.

Lei Yu blinked a few times, “fine

then.”

He let go of his hands. Telephassa who suddenly didn't have any support began to fall.

“Ahh!”

Seeing her body was only a few centimeters from the ground, the warriors could only feel regret. But a pair of strong hands suddenly supported her body once again making Telephassa completely infatuated. Her eyes were not willing to leave the face of this unknown warrior who made Silo eat his own words.

With Lei Yu holding up her body, Telephassa lightly closed her eyes. The image of these two looked like

a movie poster from France about a romantic story that made people obsessed and infatuated.

As he leaned forward brushing past Telephassa's face, Lei Yu whispered: "You should really thank me or else your feet would be cut open by the stones on the ground; I really don't understand why you people don't wear shoes."

Straightening her body back into the correct position, Lei Yu let go of his hands. For some unknown reason, he felt that it was hard to part with her. He then started severely cursing himself since this was not fair to Ai Er.

The elegant and beautiful queen was slightly overwhelmed before

regaining her senses. Her face was flushing red as she quickly turned around and left the arena.

The current scene was indeed very strange. Silo was still screaming in pain in the middle of the arena while Lei Yu was watching Telephassa leave; and a group of warriors were surrounding him with their spears out. As for the crowd who were there for some slaughterhouse excitement, they were looking at each other wondering what was going on.

The warriors had no idea what to do since the queen didn't give any orders. They weren't sure how to deal with this Lei Yu in front of them.



In fact, those warriors were completely unnecessary. Was there someone in that group who could handle Lei Yu as an opponent? The chance that one of them could take him on was close to zero.

Lei Yu used his fingers to push the spears which were pointing at him away. He then sat down on one of the seats at the side and pulled out some bandages and ointment from his storage ring. While applying ointments on his wounds, one could hear him muttering: "Who knows if that monster had rabies, I am so unlucky!"

After ten minutes or so, two girls with pretty good looks came towards the arena seats. The clothes they were dressed in were

pretty simple, a one piece cloth wrapped around their bodies which exposed a lot of skin. But its simplicity still made the girls quite attractive to the eyes.

“Please follow us, her majesty the queen has invited you over.” Said one of the girls to Lei Yu in a respectful tone.

Lei Yu nodded. “That’s more like it. No matter what, I did save your queen’s pure white legs so thanking me is the natural thing.” Before leaving, Lei Yu stared at Silo who was still in the arena. Silo’s remaining head and eye returned the stare at Lei Yu filled with hatred and resentment. While clutching his damaged eye, Silo returned back into the iron gate he came from.

The palace here was indeed not small. Following the two girls, Lei Yu arrived at a place filled with cloths draped all over which resembled a bed chamber. One side of the room had a huge bed, and on the bed there were a few pieces of clothing that looked rather strange to Lei Yu. But it looked like they were considered normal clothing of nobles in this ancient Greece era.

The bed chambers' walls were painted with a gold powder which made it look exceptionally magnificent. Near the corner of the chambers was a translucent curtain, and one could see that water steam was rising behind that curtain.

“Your honor, let us serve you while you bathe.” With these words, the

two girls pulled Lei Yu behind the curtains where steam was coming from. A huge wooden barrel was placed there filled with flower petals that smelled very fragrant.

Lei Yu didn't have time to say anything before the two girls gently pulled a cord on their waist. The white clothes they were wearing slid onto the ground revealing heart palpitating and seductive figures.

# Chapter 135:

## Forming A Union

Lei Yu frantically waved his hands, “No need! I’ll do this myself! You two can with... uh.. withdraw first!”

The two girls looked at each other, then bent down to pick up their clothing. The sight of them naked and bowing at Lei Yu made him have a hard time holding back a crazy nosebleed.

“If you need us for anything, just call out. We will be outside the door.” After saying this, the two girls left together.

Lei Yu rubbed his nose. “Isn’t this

kind of treatment way too good? It's even more wild than the Kou country!" While shaking his head, Lei Yu realized that the clothes he was wearing weren't suited for this era. He bathed quickly and then tried on all the clothes on the large bed until he figured out how to wear them correctly.

It was normal to bathe before meeting the Queen since this was considered as paying respects to her. At least that's what Lei Yu was thinking. After he took care of everything, he walked outside. "Can I see her Majesty the Queen now?"

"Your honor, her Majesty the Queen is currently dealing with the country's affairs. Please wait a moment."

Lei Yu nodded in a bored manner, then he started looking all over the bed chamber but his heart was still thinking about Ai Er and the old woman. Since he's been here for at least half a day already, Ai Er wouldn't be stupid enough to wait outside the cave entrance the entire time right? And he still didn't know if the old woman was dead or alive, this made Lei Yu extremely worried. The more he thought about it, the more anxious he got. Finally he was unable to bear it, he decided to ask Queen Telephassa if she knew how to leave this time period and return to the modern ages.

At this time, a waft of fragrant smell blew over from the entrance. At first Lei Yu was worried that it might be some type of poison trap,

but after seeing the two girl outside the door were fine, he ignored it.

Outside of the room, sounds of footsteps were coming from the corridor. Lei Yu took a peek outside, “What the hell?!”

The person outside was none other than Queen Telephassa, except that her previous clothes had been changed. She was currently wearing a near transparent veil, and the veil revealed her attractive face that gave off both a charming and majestic aura. All the accessories and ornaments on her head were gone, and she was now only wearing a thin veil like clothing. Her bountiful round chests were even more seductive, seeing two clearly recognizable small perky



pink mounds made Lei Yu swallow unconsciously. As his gaze travelled down her body past towards her sexy slender waist, Lei Yu was even able to see her mysterious private area which can make anyone dizzy and crazy for.

After taking in a deep breath, Lei Yu hid his body back inside the bed chamber. “This can’t be right... I had only pulled her to safety. There’s no need for her to give herself to me right? Isn’t this queen a bit too casual?”

Telephassa waved her hand and the two girls bowed and left before she came into the bed chambers. When she saw Lei Yu, she didn’t know what to say and only pulled him with a blush on her face.

Lei Yu kept swallowing his saliva like mad man. “Resist it, resist it Lei Yu, you already have a girlfriend so don’t let this demoness steal your soul! He slightly squinted his eyes before forcing himself to close them, “Oh heavens, she’s too f\*cking tempting!””

Telephassa was different from any ordinary women, she was made from variety of powers that were irresistible to men. She wasn’t something that Cui Ying Ying, Ai Er, or even Nami could compare against. In the eyes of ordinary people, seeing her was like seeing a pure and holy goddess. Although he was captured by her seduction, Lei Yu didn’t dare to have any dirty thoughts. While struggling, he stamped his feet and moved a few

steps to the side. Lei Yu didn't dare raise his head and said: "My revered Queen Telephassa, my name... my name is Lightning."

"Lightning? Such a strange name but it sounds nice." The tone of Telephassa's voice had changed from what Lei Yu had heard previously. It wasn't like the sound of her voice had any special properties, it just lost the unique and majestic sound which could only come from a Queen. Her voice now sounded like a simple and innocent young girl.

Lei Yu blinked a few times. "Uhh... your majesty, may I ask you some questions?"

"Ask away." While gently fanning

her flushed face with her hand, she breathed out a mouthful of hot air.

“Shit, even my bones are about to melt!” Deep inside Lei Yu’s heart, he began to doubt whether he was a beast or not. By clenching his teeth, he was able to ask: “Your majesty, what are you planning... this... uhh... planning on doing with me?”

“I want to mate with you!” After saying this, Telephassa’s face became red again. But she still continued: “You are the only human in this world who can beat Silo. I really admire you and really like you, so I was hoping that you could become my man.”

Lei Yu’s eyeballs was about to jump out of his eye sockets. With his

lower teeth against his upper lip similar to what comedic actor Stephen Chow would do, “No way? Are you kidding? I’m a person who already has a girlfriend!”

Without even thinking about it, Telephassa replied: “I can allow you to have countless sex slaves, but your heart can only belong to me.”

Sweat was dripping down the back of Lei Yu’s head, following along his spine towards his ass. For such a situation to happen, even if you beat him to death he still wouldn’t believe that he would ever encounter such a thing. If some random single woman said this then it wasn’t a big deal. But she was a Queen, a majestic Queen of a country! Also she was at least a

thousand years older than him so even if she had the face of an angel, Lei Yu didn't dare to imagine a relationship with her.

Lei Yu wanted to blurt out that he was just passing by to get some soy sauce [1], but there's no way for him to avoid his current situation. What to do? What to do? Lei Yu's brain was on overdrive trying to think of a solution. When he saw the goddess was moving her hands towards her clothing like she was going to do something, suddenly Lei Yu shouted out: "Your majesty!"

"What is it?" Asked Telephassa as she blinked her pretty eyes.

"Well... I... I think it's not the right time."

“Not the right time? How could men have... not the right time of the month?”

“Uh... ah... the... Oh, so... even if you want... want us to mate.” Lei Yu shuddered. “Shouldn’t it be done after we get married? According to customs of my family we can only do it after we get married.” Lei Yu didn’t bother saying he already had a girlfriend again because he knew it would be useless.

“Is that how it works?” Asked Telephassa.

“That’s right! It’s definitely true!” Replied Lei Yu.

“Fine then, tomorrow we will get married!” Telephassa decided.

Lei Yu was sighing in relief until he heard Telephassa's words which made him almost spit up blood. "I'll just deal with things as they come. My dearly beloved Ai Er, I don't know if I can return to the future. If I really do screw up big time here, I just hope that you will forgive me. If that's not possible, then I can only leave you so that you can find another person to love!"

One would think that he would take that route but Lei Yu wasn't that type of person. How could a mere palace trap him? At worst case, he'll just have to ask someone else on how to leave this time period. After he made up his mind, Lei Yu was determined to secretly escape tonight.



It took a lot of effort to get Telephassa to leave. Lei Yu then sat on the huge bed with a gigantic headache.

While Telephassa made a decree, the palace was being decorated began its decorations and everyone was bustling about working on one thing or another. The Queen had announced an official proclamation: Her Majesty the Queen will be wedded tomorrow and the wedding is to be celebrated with the citizens. All slaves will also participate in the celebration and there will be a three day holiday.

---

1 – When a person in Guangzhou was asked to give his opinion of the

sex scandal involving Hong Kong star Edison Chen, the man answered, “It is none of my business. I am just out to get some soy sauce.” So Chinese people have since begun using the words to mean “it’s none of my business.”

# Chapter 136: The Prophet Appears

Once this news came out, the entire country was in jubilation. A lot of people were discussing this mystery man who was going to marry the Queen. Since he was able to defeat the fearsome Silo, he must be an Immortal who has descended to this realm.

Lei Yu was still sitting in the palace bed chambers in a daze. A whole bunch of people carrying large and small trays started to enter the chambers while the rest started decorating the place. The previous two girls that wanted to serve Lei Yu when he had a bath brought a

dignified and mighty looking armor to him.

“Respectfully greeting your Majesty the King. Could you please try on this armor to see if it fits?”

Lei Yu was shocked. “The King? When did I become the King?”

“Once you get married to her Majesty the Queen, this country will become yours. The Queen had proclaimed that she will abdicate to become the mother of the country. You will ascend the throne and become the King who will rule the entire country.” The girl replied.

Lei Yu just lost his senses, wasn't this Telephassa being a bit too hasty? Today was their first meeting

and this Queen was going to abdicate her throne and pass it to him? If this happened to someone ordinary, they would probably jump thirty feet high in joy. But how could Lei Yu accept this? Wasn't she afraid of Lei Yu ruining the country and its citizens?

Since he had already made up his mind about secretly escaping tonight, he might as well temporarily accept whatever conditions were laid out to him.

Lei Yu was now dressed in a golden sacred armor with a golden sacred helm; and armed with a sharp blade; he had the look of a great General. The girls that saw him couldn't help but to exclaim: "Wow! The King looks so mighty in it!"

Lei Yu wrinkled his nose; he was of course super happy after hearing the compliments. He thought to himself: “I do feel like some sort of great General... Oh no, I’m going to be freakin King!”

Lei Yu was different from typical people. He didn’t desire neither fame nor money, he only wanted everything to be taken care of and handled properly so that he could live his life in peace and quiet. How much money would be enough? For him, as long as he could afford a simple living would be considered enough. Not to mention he already had \$1.3 billion dollars, even if he only had \$130 million dollars, that amount was enough for several generations of a family to live comfortably.

Moreover, Lei Yu wanted to return to the modern world. Although the conditions of this period had a lot of good things that was unimaginable to people from modern era, but he was still a person from the modern era that was over a thousand years in the future. Getting married to a woman who was a thousand years older than himself, wasn't that a pretty scary thought? Even though she was a mouth-watering super beauty, Lei Yu couldn't afford to handle such blessing. Imagine if the two did do their deed in bed, and Lei Yu somehow returns to the modern era...

And one day some major news suddenly shows the headlines – people have dug out the body of a

Queen from ancient Greece, and her name was Telephassa. We believe Lei Yu would think back to how beautiful she used to be and then want to vomit from nausea. [1]

While Lei Yu was trying to figure out the details on how he was going to escape from the palace, Telephassa was in the throne room. Suddenly a mysterious person wrapped in a black cloak had appeared in the center of the hall. “Prophet Kalchas, did you know that I’m about to get married? The man is very heroic, even the invincible Silo wasn’t his opponent and was defeated by him.”

The head inside the cloak looked up. Inside the hood was just darkness and you could only see a



pair of yellow eyes shimmering in a certain position. A hoarse voice was heard from within the hood: “My revered majestic Queen, you cannot marry him.”

“Why not?!” Telephassa suddenly stood up from the throne. The two protrusions on her chest also started shaking from her sudden action.

“He does not belong here. The only reason for his appearance is to unlock the Cretan Labyrinth’s Seal!” The person identified as Prophet Kalchas replied.

“No! It’s impossible! How could it turn out like this?!” It was very clear that Telephassa was unwilling to believe this fact.

“Your Majesty, have you thought about this carefully? In this world, how can there be anyone stronger than Silo? He clearly isn’t a normal person but someone who has received the divine revelation. He is a messenger who was sent to rescue us common people, so you don’t have the right to form a union with him!”

Telephassa’s body was startled before heavily sitting back onto the throne. If Lei Yu was here, he would definitely feel painful for her butt.

“Is there no other way? I really like him... And with his ability, he can definitely bring our country to the pinnacle of its glory!” Telephassa was unwilling to give up as she once again looked at this fearsome

prophet with eyes full of hope.

“Your majesty...” Kalchas sighed. “If we can enter the Cretan Labyrinth, he can release Minotaur Linos from the evil enchantment. After completing that objective, he may even stay here, then you can marry him and I will definitely not object to it. But for now, marriage cannot happen.”

“I also believe he will stay after that. But I want... I want to mate with him now, I want to marry him!”

“Absolutely not!” Kalchas anxiously walked forward. “Your majesty, if you mate with him now and if he suddenly disappears, you will also disappear without a trace. You must be patient; perhaps the Gods will

see your piety and allow him to stay here! You must be patient!”

“Ughh...”

Inside the bed chambers, Lei Yu was still in his golden armor strutting around like a peacock. Once the servants finished decorating, they finally left. Lei Yu slipped out of the armor and looked up towards the sky, seeing that it was gradually getting dark. After some preparations, he was planning to leave when it was completely dark outside.

At this time, the sounds of footsteps could be heard outside. Lei Yu peeked out and saw Telephassa who was still as beautiful and charming as ever; she was filled

with an aura that captivated men and incited their temptations. Lei Yu looked at her and noticed that her eyes were a bit red, her eyes looked like she had just been crying.

And following behind her was a mysterious looking man in a huge cloak. Lei Yu was unable to see his face because of the hood.

“Your majesty.” Lei Yu slightly bowed and then glanced at the mysterious man behind her.

“Lightning, the Prophet Kalchas wants to speak with you.” After saying this, she left without looking back leaving the two men inside the bed chambers.

Hearing the word “prophet,” Lei Yu’s heart was immediately shocked since the old woman had also mentioned a prophet previously. What kind of person was this prophet? Did he really have to be this mysterious looking?

“Mr. Lei Yu... Oh, you should be called that in your time period right?” A hoarse sounding voice came out from the hood.

Hearing that, Lei Yu was ecstatic. “You know what time period I’m from? Then you should know how I can leave this place right? I really want to return to the modern times!”

“You... do you not have any feelings towards her Majesty the Queen?”

At this time outside the bed chambers, light footsteps that even Lei Yu couldn't hear neared a window. White delicate and beautiful bare feet were standing on the cold floor; Telephassa also wanted to know how Lei Yu was going to answer that question.

Lei Yu stared out blankly while his mind replayed all scenes of him meeting with the queen. Although it was only a short period of time, yet it was definitely something that was hard for him to forget. Lei Yu gently sighed before saying in a heavy tone: "Her majesty is very attractive, and she's the most beautiful woman I've ever seen; you can say that she has a perfect appearance. Perhaps it's due to this era that she looks somewhat

ruthless in front of others, but in fact she's just an innocent girl. If you want me to say the truth, I can only say... I am unwilling to let her leave my side. But after all, I'm not from this time period. If I was to really marry her majesty, then I feel like it will be unfair to me and to her.

-----

1 – I believe the author is trying to paint Lei Yu as a stubborn person that can only keep seeing Telephassa as a thousand years old and not the young girl she is during that time period.



# Chapter 137: My Destiny?

Telephassa was in tears. The beads of crystal-like tears were dripping down her half exposed delicate white breasts. With this type of reply, even if they could not be together, she was still satisfied. Even though there were tear stains on her face, she still left the window area with a smile.

“That’s right. This warring period has brought her majesty nothing but endless suffering. Being able to realize this and making the right choice is proof that the Gods did not choose wrongly. Mr. Lei Yu, I hope you can fulfill your destiny.

Only by completing it will you be able to leave ancient Greece and return to your time period.”

“Destiny? What sort of destiny do I have to fulfill?” Lei Yu asked while scratching his head.

“You should know about the Minotaur Linos, right?”

“I do, it’s a...”

“A monster, right?” said the prophet.

“I’m sorry, I’ve only seen a picture of it on the flag here, so I didn’t know how to put it politely.”

“Don’t worry about it. He is in fact a monster because young virgin boys and girls are its food. But even after

thousands of years, none of the populace has come to hate it, because there's a story behind all of this. Over a thousand years ago, Minotaur Linos wasn't like how he is rumored to be now. Although he has a fearsome appearance, a bull's head and a human's body, he was in fact a brave warrior. If it weren't for him, then this kingdom would have never survived until now. However, because of our enemies sealing him in the Cretan Labyrinth, he had to consume the blood and flesh of young virgin boys and girls in order to withstand the labyrinth's seal.

“Are you saying that the rumor of annual tributes of a young virgin boy and girl is actually true?” Lei Yu was shocked, he had never thought that the legendary myth was

actually true.

“That’s right, and to this date the populace has had no complaints or regrets. If it weren’t for Minotaur Linos using his powers to protect this place, it wouldn’t have survived to now, with many generations of offsprings to show for. Therefore he... is guiltless.”

“Then, what do you want me to do?”  
Lei Yu asked.

“Before Minotaur Linos was sealed, Silo was actually his messenger placed here. The purpose was to make Silo protect this country. During times of war, Silo had a powerful physique, which caused our enemies to shake in fear and not dare to fight with us. That’s

how we've come to attain this level of prosperity. It was also because of all the killings that Silo's blood thirst has become stronger and stronger. But in recent years, there haven't been many wars, so his blood thirst could not be satisfied and so it's only worsened, requiring him to eat human flesh in order to suppress the blood thirst. And today, your arrival is perhaps a test by the Gods. Defeating Silo means you have powers beyond those of a human, showing that only you are able to undo the seal. Rescue Minotaur Linos; and then enlighten it."

Lei Yu finally understood why when fighting Silo, Telephassa spoke out and stopped him from dealing the killing blow. It turns out Silo was

more or less the country's guardian.

“Then, that Cretan Labyrinth you've been talking about wouldn't be that...?!”

“That's right, the way you came to this time period would be the means you leave this place as well – solve the labyrinth and find the Water of the Gods. Then you can use the golden bowl to break the seal and free Minotaur Linos.

Lei Yu's heart was feeling like luck was on his side, since he had been fortunate enough to have the golden bowl already stored inside his storage ring, or else there would have been no way for him to fulfill what Prophet Kalchas considered to be this so-called destiny.

“So how long will this take? I really don’t want to make my family and friends in the modern times to worry about me,” Lei Yu said with concern.

“Please don’t worry about that. The fact that you’ve arrived in this era doesn’t actually affect your return to your own time period. Imagine that by your own will, you can completely choose whatever arrival point in time you want.”

“That sounds great!” Lei Yu was extremely happy. “Doesn’t that mean I could choose to be sent back one minute after I was transported to this era?”

“Right, but undoing the seal is not a simple feat. You need to make

adequate preparations for it.”

“That’s true.” Lei Yu nodded. “We were running around in circles inside the labyrinth for three days before we accidentally found the exit. Looks like this time I will have to be fully prepared, at least bring some bedding so that I can rest more comfortably when I’m tired.”

“No, that’s not what I meant!” Kalchas interrupted. “Inside the labyrinth are four fiendgod warriors that you have to defeat!”

“No way! How strong are they?” Lei Yu asked.

“They are very strong and not something humans can overcome. But you may be an exception;



otherwise the Gods would not have chosen you to come here.”

Lei Yu took in a huge breath of air, originally thinking that strolling around the labyrinth would suffice. He hadn’t expected that he would have to defeat monsters in order to beat the level. This was getting troublesome!

“There’s also one other point you need to make note of,” Kalchas then said. “We originally had four sacred vessels in Athens; a golden crown, a golden axe, a golden armor and a pair of golden boots. The crown was the main piece, as it contained the power of wisdom, owned by the ruler. It’s the crown you see her Majesty wear on top of her head. The other three pieces are worn by

the guardian warriors of the ruler. The golden armor, golden boots, and the golden axe were all owned by Minotaur Linos. But prior to Minotaur Linos being sealed up, his three sacred vessels were taken by those four fiendgods. Each of the three possesses one piece, while the last one, although he doesn't own a sacred vessel, is actually the strongest one. It is that strongest fiendgod that managed to seal Minotaur Linos up, and his name was Crete.

Lei Yu nodded in a helpless fashion. Even though he knew that this was dangerous beyond measure, and that there was no task as difficult as this, was Lei Yu someone that would easily give up? Ai Er was probably still waiting outside the

cave, and there was no way Lei Yu would stay here to become some dog fart King. If he was really that cowardly, then we doubt Telephassa would have fallen in love with him in such a short timeframe.

After understanding all the circumstances, Lei Yu had to carefully think and plan his next steps. And it was at this point that he understood why Telephassa had come by with red eyes; she had gotten the news that she couldn't be married with Lei Yu. Even though Lei Yu felt as if a big weight was lifted off his shoulders, he more or less still felt a tiny bit depressed.

When he would see Queen Telephassa again, Lei Yu had a

feeling that he wouldn't know how to face her. She still gave off such a noble feeling, that made it difficult for people to get close to her.

"Your Majesty." Lei Yu had actually come to say farewell, but didn't know how to say it.

"Has the Prophet Kalchas told you everything?" Perhaps it was because of where they were now, but the previous bashful young girl had resumed her icy demeanor.

"That's correct. I've already prepared everything and will go complete... fulfill my destiny." Lei Yu lightly said this followed by a sigh.

Telephassa's beautiful eyes gently

sparkled as she suppressed a tear that was about to drip down. “The great Gods will bless you and protect you so that you can fulfill your destiny.”

# Chapter 138: Titan

## The Troll

“Thank you, your majesty.” Lei Yu dashingly flipped his hair. His deep, profound eyes glanced up and down the beautiful goddess a few more times before eventually zeroing in on her eyes. From her eyes, Lei Yu could see dismay and heartache in them. With some reluctance, he turned around and left the throne room. Telephassa suddenly stood up and rushed down from her throne. Inside the throne room, filled with warriors and ministers, she ignored her noble image and tightly hugged Lei Yu from behind. The tears in her eyes gushed out,

making Lei Yu's body tremble.

Once they parted, it meant they would never see each other ever again. The first man ever to move the heart of this noble and beautiful queen was about to leave. All her pain and dismay had become mournful tears, wholly drenching Lei Yu's back.

Feeling Telephassa's soft and almost boneless shape of her body, gave Lei Yu an unexplainably wonderful feeling, and his body started trembling. He unwrapped those two arms around him and turned around. He then wrapped his own arms around her, cuddling this elegant body that had never been touched by another man, reluctant to ever let go of her.

Outside the throne room, Prophet Kalchas sighed. He didn't know what else he could say.

After a while, under everyone's view, Lei Yu gently pushed himself away from the embrace of this charming and attractive Telephassa. Leaving her fragrant hair, Lei Yu gave Telephassa a kiss on the forehead before turning to leave once again.

Tears fell off Telephassa's cheeks. At this moment, her heart felt as if nothing mattered anymore, and as if the back of this figure was the only thing she wanted to capture. "Farewell, forever..."

The two men, Lei Yu and Prophet Kalchas, rode on horses and quickly



advanced in a westernly direction. Wherever they passed, the common citizens would kowtow in respect. In their minds, the Prophet's status was almost the same as that of a God, to them.

They were getting closer and closer to their destination. Lei Yu once again started seeing a familiar environment; the same cliffs and the same huge rock. Once they arrived in front of the huge rock, Kalchas started mumbling a type of mantra. The rock started trembling, which caused the loose gravel to fall off, and a dark cave to be revealed.

The two didn't say much; Kalchas had already explained the specifics to Lei Yu so there wasn't any reason

to say it again. Lei Yu went into the cave and descended the stairs. He gently knocked on the walls, lighting up the torches and illuminating the dark labyrinth.

The familiar scenes made Lei Yu feel somewhat intimate towards this place. If everything went smoothly and he was able to defeat the guardians, then he could finally return to the modern era. Lei Yu didn't want to die here. It's not that he was afraid of death, he was just unwilling to let go of the things he had attained with his own two hands. He was unwilling to part with his family, friends, and brothers; therefore he had to succeed!

Lei Yu cautiously walked forward.

Although the scene was just like the first time he had come here, now the labyrinth had the addition of an eerie atmosphere. Inside this place, one could see a pile of white bones on the ground every other couple of steps. Lei Yu knew that these bones had once belonged to warriors that were hoping to undo the labyrinth's seal, but their lives were still buried here.

Groping the walls and walking forward, after going a certain distance Lei Yu's hand would rotate a few times, as if he had something in his hand. He was indeed holding something, but one couldn't tell what it was. As he got deeper into the labyrinth, Lei Yu became even more cautious. The passageway had become more complex, confusing

and it made it extremely difficult for him to find the right way. However, Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless a single moment. Who knew where the guardians would suddenly appear from?

On each side of the walls, there were carvings, with lifelike paintings. Images of Gods, demons, and beasts all looked as if they were real. But with Lei Yu's amazing vision, he suddenly perceived a hint of a difference. Lei Yu gently sneered, and proceeded towards the carving that was slightly different. When he was about two meters away from that area, Lei Yu ferociously roared and smashed his fist towards the wall.

“Bang!”

Shards of rock flew everywhere, kicking up a huge dust storm. Lei Yu flashed backwards a few steps before standing still, coldly staring at a statue of a fiendgod jumping out of the wall.

A horn was sticking out from its head; a pair of fangs protruding outside his mouth; the whites of his eyes were the same color as his pupils, making it look as if it were blind, but of course it wasn't. This fiendgod looked similar to a human, except for the horn and the two protruding fangs. Its body was a lot taller than a human though, at least 2.2 meters tall (7.2 Ft). Lei Yu's gaze was focused on the fiendgod's feet, where a pair of golden boots starkly contrasted with the dimly lit labyrinth.

“You’ve disturbed my wonderful dream! What a detestable human you are!” This extremely tall half-human half-beast yawned in a lazy manner.

“You are the guardian troll Titan?” Lei Yu asked in a cold tone as he crossed his arms and stared at the huge, much taller than him monster with disdain.

“You know who I am? Was it your generation’s Prophet that told you? How did you know I was in the wall?” asked the monster who Lei Yu had addressed as the troll Titan.

“No wonder the Prophet said you were as dumb as a pig, you can’t even figure this out? Your shoes betrayed you. Although all the

images carved here are lifelike, none of them have a golden color on them, so wouldn't that expose your whereabouts?" Lei Yu laughed.

"You actually dare to insult me by saying I'm a dumb pig? You're courting death!" The troll called Titan was furious. Like a phantom, he disappeared from his position forcing, Lei Yu to concentrate in order to search for him.

"Bang, bang, bang, crack!" Several sounds of punches were heard in a row before the two separated from each other.

"The fighting ability of those boots isn't too shabby, even allowing a tall dumb pig such as yourself to be this fast," Lei Yu said in a carefree

manner.

With the ability given by the boots, the troll called Titan was very confident in his own speed. But, somehow, this human in front of him was easily able to take his fast attacks on. He couldn't help feeling surprised, which also made him start to pay more attention to his actions.

“Human, why did you come to this place?”

“Is there even a need to ask? Of course it's to lift the seal and rescue Minotaur Linos!”

After saying this, Lei Yu made his move. From the previous probing exchange, Lei Yu realized that this



guardian only had speed. As for his attack and defense, they weren't particularly strong. Lei Yu could easily win by making quick and decisive attacks.

When comparing his speed to Titan's, Lei Yu was slightly slower. But when it came to speed of reaction, this could be the deciding factor. Lei Yu made his move, causing the troll Titan to immediately dodge in a flash, as the two once again collided with one another.

“Whoosh!”

“Bang!” The shockwave from their attacks shattered the surrounding walls, but didn't affect the rest of the labyrinth.

On the receiving end of Lei Yu's continuous rain of attacks, the troll Titan was somewhat overwhelmed, and gradually started having difficulty.

"The crotch!" Seeing an undefended area, Lei Yu condensed his internal energy into his right leg, while his left leg kicked off the ground for a groin kick.

"Bang!"

"Agghh!" Eyes bulging out, the over-two-meter-tall troll Titan shrieked in pain while both his hands were clutching his crotch area, all the time jumping up and down.

Lei Yu chuckled, "You are no longer the troll Titan. As the saying from

Tenglong country goes, you should now be addressed as the eunuch[1] troll!””

Without mercy, Lei Yu condensed a lightning net on his right fist. A terrifying power immediately burst forth and rushed towards the troll Titan in his unguarded state. Moments later, Lei Yu's hand was covered in blood.

The Prophet Kalchas had said before to not be merciful to any of the guardians, otherwise the consequences would be disastrous.

Still in the same comical position of holding his crotch area, the troll Titan had now fallen to the ground, no longer able to stand up. His mission that had lasted a

millennium thus ended.

Lei Yu pulled the golden battle boots off the Titan. According to the method given by the Prophet Kalchas, Lei Yu chanted a spell that he couldn't understand. With a flash, the boots disappeared and reappeared on Lei Yu's feet.

Standing back up and jumping around a few times, Lei Yu's heart was shocked. "My current speed is actually three times my original! This is too terrifying! No wonder such a large hulking body of his could be so fast! These battle boots really deserved their reputation!"

-----

[1] For the minority of you that

don't know what a eunuch is, it's a man that has been castrated / entire penis removed. Eunuchs were used in the old Chinese dynasties as servants of the emperor's family.

# Chapter 139: The Second Guardian

After attaining the golden boots, Lei Yu did not stay put for too long, since he hadn't used up too much of his internal energy in the previous battle. From his point of view, he hadn't even used up ten percent of his energy.

It's not that the troll Titan hadn't been strong enough; it was just that the troll's strength was rather average in general. Whether it was his defensive or his offensive powers, they couldn't match up to Lei Yu's. Titan had to rely on the golden boots in order to exceed Lei Yu in speed, but that was simply

not enough. The speed of his leg movements had been increased, but the strength of his attacks hadn't been changed. If he had encountered an ordinary person or someone with the strength a level lower than Lei Yu, then Titan would have easily won. But unfortunately...

After wearing the battle boots, Lei Yu felt that his body was as light as a swallow. Walking was now a lot easier, making him feel that there were indeed a lot of bizarre things in the world.

Even so, he did not dare to be careless, because there were still three guardians left. And there was also some kind of super expert that was able to create such a labyrinth,

and to even seal someone in it.

Within the dimly lit labyrinth, Lei Yu's feet kept moving forward. He went down plenty of dead ends, and he'd had to change paths. Lei Yu had lost track of how many times this had happened already.

In another area.

In the throne hall, Telephassa's originally clear eyes, which had been brimming with vigor before, had now become lifeless. From time to time, she would look distracted. Or, at times, she would look like as if she'd remembered something, and would start giggling. And there were times when she would start sighing out of the blue. It appeared that her mind was completely filled



with thoughts of Lei Yu, unable to forget his haunting and dreamy smile. Especially that kiss before he left! It had made her unable to forget!

“Your majesty!”

There was no response from Telephassa. She was sitting upon her throne, staring in one place as if she hadn’t heard anyone call out to her.

The warrior that had rushed into the throne room once again raised his voice: “Your majesty! We’ve received an urgent message!”

“Oh?” After recovering her senses, she replied, “Report.”

“Your majesty, there’s an enemy

invasion coming from the West, which isn't far from our territory." Cold sweat was already breaking out on the warrior's forehead. During this time of prosperity, they hadn't experienced any wars for quite a while now. The sudden appearance of a large-scale enemy seemed to be caused by a rumor that had been spreading around.

A serious look now appeared on Telephassa's charming face. "Investigate their intentions thoroughly before reporting to me again!"

"Understood."

A middle-aged man with yellow hair and dressed in a gray robe stepped forward. "Your majesty, the

enemy must have received news about Silo's injury, or else they wouldn't have dared to act so rashly. What should we do now? With Silo's present condition, there's no way he can go out to battle."

"How are Silo's injuries looking?" Telephassa asked.

An elderly man wearing a white robe stepped away from a side pillar and into the middle of the hall. "Your majesty, although Silo's injuries weren't life threatening, in the short run, there was no way he could participate on the battlefield. And since one of his two lives had already died, his current body's power could not be compared to before any longer."

The previous middle-aged man in gray coldly harrumphed. “It’s all the fault of that guy called Lightning! He dared to injure our guardian, he deserves to die!”

“You shut your mouth!” Telephassa suddenly stood up from the throne, her eyes staring at the minister who had made the impertinent remark. “If I ever hear those words from you ever again, Silo is still capable of ripping you into shreds!”

This minister shivered, and then replied while trembling: “Yes... Yes! Understood!”

The enemy’s army got closer one step at a time, but they didn’t dare to attack. Although they knew about Silo’s condition, after all, Silo

was still a terrifying fiendgod entity. There was no way the ordinary people could take him on, even if he was injured.

In the barren wilderness, about a hundred thousand troops were surging forward. In front were the war horses, opening up the path for the eighty thousand infantry soldiers; their magnificent combined aura was enough to overwhelm everything.

At the forefront of the army, there was a 3 meter tall horse, 4.2 meters in length, entirely covered in armor. On the back of the horse was a warrior clad in a heavy golden armor carrying a sword which gave him an extremely mighty look.

An elderly man on the side, wearing a long light cloth robe, looked at this mighty warrior, eyes filled with respect. "General Williams, we're about three days from the empire right now, so should we stop to rest?"

"We will annihilate the enemy all in one go!" The majestic aura had all the warriors on the sides fill with passion. The eighty thousand soldiers in the rear started shouting out slogans in a heroic spirit. This actually frightened all the birds and beasts within a ten mile, radius making them run away in fear.

Back in the Cretan Labyrinth, Lei Yu was wiping the sweat from his body with a towel. If he hadn't taken a bath before, then he would

have been in a more sorry shape now. Lei Yu could not help but frown as he sniffed the smell of sweat from his own body. It wasn't like he was obsessed with cleanliness or anything, he was just used to bathing at least once per day.

“Crack! Crack!” \*Rumbling sounds\*

These strange noises came to Lei Yu's ears. Knowing that something was about to happen, Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless. He advanced cautiously and as he neared a corner of the path, Lei Yu saw a golden light flash by.

Heading to the other wall, Lei Yu inched forward to take a peek. A sudden dull voice sounded out: “My

brother was killed by you!”

Lei Yu frowned. What appeared before his eyes was a monster with a wide body, and who looked very strong. It had green skin, a single eye and a single horn. The most prominent thing about it was a golden armor on its body that didn't really fit.

“You are the guardian giant Talos?”

“You recognize me?” the giant Talos asked.

Lei Yu smiled and shook his head. “I don't know you but I know that you and your brother Titan are the same – you're both dumb pigs that don't know how to use your brains. Weren't you guys enjoying life as



guardians of the country? Why would you believe some mere slander and come to this labyrinth to be a guardian? Is this the type of life you actually like?

“I don’t like it.” Talos shook his head. “But you’ve killed my brother, so no matter what, you must die so I can avenge him!”

The two brothers had similar features, and their abilities were rather balanced. Whether it be attack, defense, or speed, Lei Yu would not think much of either of them. Titan had those battle boots on, which had previously made his speed quite fast. Because this Talos had the sacred armor on, his defense would naturally be tough to the extreme.

You could say that Lei Yu only needed to utilize the speed one would usually jog at in order to dodge Talos's series of attacks. Watching Talos's large body stumble, Lei Yu felt like wanting to laugh out loud. But in the midst of battle, Lei Yu still wouldn't act carelessly, even though his opponent was weak.

Talos attempted to clash head-on with Lei Yu, but no matter how hard he tried, he wasn't able to succeed which made him scream in anger. Lei Yu couldn't be bothered to waste his energy and stamina. With the battle boots, he only needed to spend a negligible amount of strength to easily avoid all the attacks, which made him feel pretty good.

Talos had used up quite a bit of effort. After ten or so minutes, he still hadn't even managed to touch a piece of Lei Yu's clothing. Even though the space inside the labyrinth wasn't that wide, Lei Yu's movements were extremely quick. And Lei Yu would occasionally throw out attacks that drove Talos completely insane.

"If you have the guts, stop dodging and fight me head on like a man! You have the battle boots so your speed is very fast, and it's making this unfair!" screamed Talos, since he had no other way to handle the situation.

"Hey lug head, have you even thought for a bit to use your brain? What's unfair? Could it be that you

wearing an armor is being fair? If you are willing to take off the armor, then I'll take off the boots, how about that?" Lei Yu was clearly trying to trick him. But Talos's thinking ability was a bit slow, thinking that the reason Lei Yu was so fast was all due to the boots, so he didn't even think too long before agreeing to it.

Lei Yu covered up his snicker; now things would be easier. Seeing Talos take off his armor, Lei Yu started chanting a spell and the boots came off, floating to the ground behind him.

The two assumed their fighting stances. Talos gave a shout before rushing ahead, while Lei Yu's light body dodged even faster than

before. Even though Lei Yu was able to easily take this type of attack on, his goal was to make Talos understand and regret. He wanted Talos to know that even without the battle boots, he could still not touch a piece of clothing on his body.

Like a ghostly apparition, Lei Yu's speed completely shocked Talos. He looked at the ground and confirmed that the battle boots were quietly lying there, and then rubbed his eyes to look at Lei Yu's feet. His brain couldn't understand why Lei Yu's speed was still so fast.

With the boots, Lei Yu could effortlessly increase his speed to unimaginable proportions. Without the boots, Lei Yu's speed still wasn't something anyone could exceed.

His lips forming a sneer, Lei Yu walked towards Talos one step at a time. “Big lug head, your brains aren’t working well enough, right? Let me assist you in improving your thinking!” Lei Yu’s speed was really fast. He bent his middle and index fingers before forcefully knocking on Talos’s forehead. “Bang!” A loud sound was heard, making Talos grimace in pain.

“I’m gonna kill you!” Both his arms spread out while he rushed towards Lei Yu. Lei Yu’s foot gently tapped the ground in front which pushed his whole body backwards. Landing two meters backwards, Lei Yu used that energy like a spring, and bounced forward forcefully. This combination of retreat and a sudden attack made Talos unable to

respond. Both of Lei Yu's fists had internal energy condensed in them, making it surge explosively and coating his fists with a purple lightning net. Without the protection of the golden armor, Lei Yu's fists were comparable to a steel drill that could directly penetrate through Talos's chest.

On this subject, Lei Yu was still a bit worried. Perhaps it was only after fighting with Silo that he started having these thoughts; just to play it safe, he actually used both fists in this attack, because he thought Talos might have two hearts as well.

Talos's eyes looked like they were going to pop out of their eye sockets. He looked incredulously at

the two fists penetrating deep inside his chest, and then died with a confused look on his face.

Lei Yu pulled his fists out from the body, then flung his arms around to get rid of the blood. Lei Yu wasn't someone who liked killing, but when it came to his own safety, it was safer to finish them off than to give them a surviving chance.

Taking out some water from his storage ring, Lei Yu first rinsed his arms and hands before picking up the golden armor which Talos was wearing. Lei Yu was a bit confused, because he didn't feel an ounce of weight from the armor. Such a large armor didn't actually weigh anything. It was just too incredible! Lei Yu then started walking towards



the battle boots he had previously taken off.

When his hand was about to reach the boots, “Crack!”

Lei Yu suddenly dodged backwards a few steps, as a golden-edged axe blade smashed directly on the ground, only two centimeters away from the boots. The ground, which could have been his hand, split open, causing cold sweat to drip off Lei Yu’s forehead.

# Chapter 140: A Generation's Emperor

He rotated his body as fast as lightning in a backflip, jumping with both hands off the ground. Lei Yu couldn't see who his opponent was, but he had used a strong leg attack. He could only see that a short distance away from him, he noticed a pair of blood-red eyes staring at him from the shadows.

“Peng!”

Lei Yu's threw a spin-kick, and his right leg smashed into the body of the unknown monster.

“What?!” Lei Yu’s face suddenly paled. A horrific aura had started spreading out from the target. Not only did it easily withstood Lei Yu’s attack, it was even able to launch a counterattack. Lei Yu’s body started explosively doing flips backwards in order to escape the counterattack.

“You’re courting death!”

The monster shouted as he jumped out of the shadows, his leg chopping down like a large knife. Lei Yu used both arms to brace himself as the leg smashed down on his cross-arm block. He was then forced to do another back flip to escape further back.

It was only then that Lei Yu was able to see his opponent’s

appearance. Blood-red eyes, a height of at least two meters, blonde hair covering his head that connected down to his beard, making him look like a lion standing on two legs. Underneath his gray leather armor were huge muscles that showed off his powerful potential.

“Damn, Prophet Kalchas was right. Compared to his other two brothers, this guardian Pelagon is really strong!” Lei Yu’s heart was shocked, his countenance becoming grave.

Lei Yu didn’t want to think too much about this. With his body as soft and flexible as a willow tree, and his speed as fast as lightning, he quickly condensed his internal

energy and rushed towards Pelagon. Lei Yu's body perfectly portrayed his strength and flexibility as he looked for openings to attack through.

Pelagon didn't waste any time, but focused; Wherever Lei Yu's body flickered to, Pelagon's eyes locked onto it and followed.

"This guy is too fearsome; his eyes are able to follow my every move! He's way too strong! I can't find any openings to attack." Lei Yu was truly shocked. "I can't let it go on like this..."

An opportunity!

Lei Yu suddenly spun his body, at the same time condensing internal

energy in his leg. His right foot was covered in a lightning net as he whipped his leg towards Pelagon's left shoulder.

“Bang!”

Both their bodies shook; Lei Yu spun backwards a few times, landing on all fours. Pelagon had a look of surprise on his face, never having expected that Lei Yu's attack would turn out to be this strong.

At first, Lei Yu had been worth nothing in his eyes; being able to kill the brother trolls Titan and Talos wouldn't count as much since he could easily do it as well. He had never expected Lei Yu's previous attack to contain an energy that was difficult to put up with, even

causing him to lose feeling in his arm.

“Kiddo, you’ve got some skills.”  
Pelagon said in a cold tone.

“Pelagon, you too are quite powerful. Before you came to this labyrinth, you were once the Commander-in-chief of a country. According to rumors, you have no flaws, so I’m curious if that’s true or not.” Lei Yu stretched his body, making it look as if he were ready to clash with the enemy.

Pelagon lightly stroked his golden eyebrows, “You’ve heard about me?”

“Who doesn’t know about the prowess of Emperor Pelagon? But

it's such a pity." Lei Yu said, hinting at something.

"What's there to pity?" asked Pelagon as he raised his eyebrows.

"It's a pity that you were used by Crete. You came to the Cretan Labyrinth to become a guardian and gave up your country in the process. Do you know the current situation of your country? It's at the point of perishing!"

"Nonsense! Your life is mine!" Roaring this, Pelagon's body exuded a strong pressure that forced Lei Yu back two steps. And it was at this time when Lei Yu was retreating that Pelagon's fingers slightly moved. The golden axe that was originally embedded in the ground



started shaking, then suddenly flew back into his hands. The unbearable and overwhelming presence of a fiendgod appeared in front of Lei Yu's eyes.

Furious, Pelagon rushed forth. Fortunately for Lei Yu, his agility was slightly better, so during the short period of time when his opponent was charging, Pelagon had no way of defeating him. He could see Lei Yu in front of his eyes, but the next moment his body would appear off to the side, several meters away.

“Ahhhhhhh!”

The furious Pelagon roared mournfully, and his head suddenly started shaking. Lei Yu was shocked

to see Pelagon transform. His previous height of two meters was actually to grow even more now, reaching a full three meters. His originally human-looking hand was covered with golden hair, which had gradually started covering his entire body. His body having become bigger, the leather armor he was wearing started bursting at the seams before splitting into pieces and fluttering to the ground. His blood-red eyes started shining, now making Pelagon look pretty much like a terrifyingly enraged lion.

“Phew!” The axe flew out of Pelagon’s hand towards Lei Yu, its speed no different than a bolt of lightning. Fortunately, Lei Yu had been fully prepared for this. The

moment the axe had left Pelagon's hand, Lei Yu had already stomped the ground and had flown past the axe, rushing straight ahead.

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

The two collided. A contest of strength was Lei Yu's favorite, since it gave him an exciting feeling of his blood boiling. Each and every attack Lei Yu launched was extremely cautious, not daring to neglect the slightest chance of blocking or dodging. He still had to preserve some strength and ensure that he wouldn't suffer any injuries.

Lightly tapping the ground with his foot, Lei Yu's body once again flew

off into the air. He had condensed all his strength into his right fist, which he instantly exploded outwards. The right sleeve of his shirt actually burst into strips of rags, fluttering all over the place. With his lightning brand as the center point, one could see the lines of energy surrounding it with the naked eye. The muscles in his arm looked like bulging rocks lined with random patterns which appeared to be slightly vibrating. It seemed that this overwhelming amount of lightning power was unbearable to handle even for Lei Yu.

Lei Yu could only rely on his cultivation and the melee combat moves he had developed on his own. His body was like a Roc rushing down from the air towards

Pelagon.

“A kid that doesn’t know the meaning of death, go die!” Pelagon frenziedly yelled, his eyes emitting a threatening red light. His body shook, and a huge claw-shaped palm smashed at Lei Yu’s fist. Pelagon’s body looked like an arrow just released off a bow string, flying to clash head-on with Lei Yu.

“Bang, bang!”

“Whoosh!”

The collision of fist and palm created a violent sound, both attacks containing a fearsome amount of power. At that moment, Lei Yu finally understood why Kalchas had said that Pelagon had

no flaws. His strikes were almost perfect, there wasn't the slightest opening to take advantage of. The two of them had maintained their best condition so far, without allowing any attack to land on them.

Breaking away from the battle, Lei Yu lowered his hand to his chest in order to block Pelagon's palm strike. His body immediately moved like a flea and bounced backwards, and by using the wall to his side, he flipped off it and landed perfectly on the ground.

"As if I'd let you escape!" Pelagon immediately rushed over, making Lei Yu sneer coldly. "The dignified emperor of a country won't even listen to a good piece of advice.

Looks like even if you were still on the throne, your country would have eventually perished!" Whilst saying this, Lei Yu had already retreated ten meters backwards. The spot he was originally at had already turned into a large crater under Pelagon's palm strike.

"Tell me, how is my country right now? How are my subjects?" Pelagon had actually stopped attacking to ask this.

Lei Yu lightly sighed. "You have already been away for over a thousand years, more than a dozen emperors have succeeded each other. And each was worse than the one before. With that, you can imagine what your once strong and wealthy country looks like now.

Moreover, the current emperor is merely a puppet controlled by the one at his side called General William – he pretty much runs everything. These emperors are your descendants but they have become this useless. Are you sure that you don't want to go back and take a look at the situation?"

"You're spewing nonsense!" Pelagon did not dare or want to believe Lei Yu's words. He had agreed to Crete's request to guard this labyrinth and watch over Minotaur Linos solely because he wanted to bring peace to the generations to come. He had never imagined that there would be a day when his country would actually be controlled by an outsider. This was considered the greatest insult; to



him as well as to all the successive generations of his family.

“My words aren’t nonsense!” Lei Yu snapped. “Minotaur Linos only attacked because when you were in power, you kept trying to invade his country. Think carefully, if it weren’t for your invasion, why would he appear to fight you? Minotaur Linos did not have any ambition on his own, he only wanted to protect his country and make it safe and sound for the times to come as well. It was all because of you that he continuously killed, and that resulted in Crete sealing him. Was that not the case?!”

Pelagon stayed silent. After a while, the redness in his eyes seemed to

dim. He raised his head slightly and said, “Could it be that I was really at fault back then?”

“No! Not only back then, you’re still at fault now, you’re in the wrong!”

A sharp and chilling voice floated from a far off distance, “Bullshit!”

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and looked all over but did not see anyone. The voice continued saying: “You dare come in here to make false claims and manipulate people? My honorable guardian Pelagon, don’t listen to his words. Fulfill your duty and kill him! Kill this intruder!”

“You f\*cking son of a b\*tch! Come out if you have the guts!” Lei Yu

angrily screamed, but no one appeared.

At this time, Pelagon's eyes turned blood red again. "Die, intruder!"

"Pelagon! Listen to me!" Lei Yu anxiously shouted, but it was of no use. It looked like the former emperor was being controlled by the voice, and had once again lost his mind.

He could only feel a strong chilly air rushing towards his back, making Lei Yu immediately dodge sideways. A beam of golden light flew past his original spot, making Lei Yu drench in cold sweat. The golden axe once again returned to Pelagon's hands. Lei Yu's body started swaying as if he were a gentle breeze moving

about.

Lei Yu wrinkled his nose. If he formed a bond with the golden boots, then he could probably wiggle his toes and summon them towards him. Unfortunately, he did not possess such skills. Even if he did, the thought of wiggling his toes to summon something was a bit too comedic.

Lei Yu relied on his own abilities and activated his speed to the extreme. Each time Pelagon swung his axe, a substantial golden afterimage similar to a curved blade, shone in the attack. Lei Yu could only focus on dodging; he had no opportunities for counterattacks. For the time being, Pelagon was in the dominant position.

“This cannot go on! My internal energy is gradually being depleted!” Lei Yu was extremely anxious in his heart. Even though dodging didn’t use up too much internal energy, sooner or later it would still be exhausting.

It was probably different for Pelagon. Since Lei Yu had previously tested the weight of his armor, he could assume that the golden axe was alike, and did not weigh anything. This meant that there was a high possibility that Pelagon was freely swinging the axe around, barely using his energy. Sooner or later, Lei Yu would be defeated.

“What should I do? What should I do?” Beads of sweat were forming

on Lei Yu's forehead. After dodging another beam of golden light, Lei Yu jumped into the air. He used the wall behind him as leverage, pushing off it with both his legs, which propelled him forward for an attack. Midair, a golden flash came slicing down. In the last second, Lei Yu flipped his body in midair in order to dodge, and landed sideways on the ground. Without the time to even catch his breath, his body once again flipped to the side. The next moment, a deep slash mark could be seen on the ground where he had landed.

“F\*ck it, time to fight!” If he kept dodging, sooner or later he'd meet his death, so he might as well put his life on the line and fight to the end!

Lei Yu clenched his teeth and dodged another attack with a margin of less than two centimeters from his body. He then maximized his body's speed to the point where he himself could barely see the surrounding carvings on the wall.

There was an oncoming golden beam, but Lei Yu could only see it as a flash of light. His toes tapped the ground and his whole body leapt into the air. The golden light aiming for his head had instead cut into his chest, slashing a horrendous wound. Enduring the severe pain, Lei Yu continued to pounce forward while condensing all his power into his fist.

# Chapter 141: Bull-Headed Fiendgod

Pelagon was slightly surprised. He hadn't expected Lei Yu to disregard everything and launch a desperate attack. Holding his golden axe in front of himself in a defensive posture, he was preparing to receive Lei Yu's powerful frontal attack.

“Bam!”

A loud sound of clashing metallic items resounded. Lei Yu's fist had directly smashed straight into the flat side of the blade. The next moment, the golden axe actually flew out of Pelagon's hand, landing over ten meters away, on the



ground.

The look of surprise on Pelagon's face was more obvious now. Lei Yu did not give him any opportunities. His body still hadn't landed on the ground yet, but he already kicked out his foot and used Pelagon's body as leverage. He twisted his body and made a half-spin in midair, landing a perfect roundhouse kick directly on the side of Pelagon's neck.

Both their bodies flew off in opposite directions, crashing against the walls.

“Crack!”

The two simultaneously smashed against the the thick labyrinth

walls, leaving a body-shaped crater, fearsome cracks spreading outwards from it. The loose gravel showered onto the ground as the two slid down the wall, both breathing heavily.

One of Lei Yu's hands was pressing against his own chest, exerting pressure over a wound in order to stop the blood from gushing out. The sweat on his forehead had been dripping off his face, leaving a small puddle on the ground.

Pelagon wasn't any better off. The instant Lei Yu knocked the golden axe out of his hand, and since he couldn't react in time, he had yet to regain any control or feelings of his body from Lei Yu's sudden furious kick. Starting from his neck, down

to his chest area and his arms, they all felt like they were paralyzed. Perhaps Pelagon should be thankful for being so comfortable for now. Once the paralysis effect wore out, the severe pain would arrive, giving him a taste of unbearable agony.

Straining to use the wall as support, Lei Yu took the lead in standing up first. His chest was heaving up and down, yet between gasping breaths, he still managed to say, "You still want to continue fighting?"

"My duty is to guard this place; to stop and kill any intruders!" Pelagon replied stubbornly.

Lei Yu's unfaltering steps drew closer and closer to Pelagon; the latter's entire arm still being

paralyzed, he could not even move a finger. This was to say that, even if he would have wanted to wiggle his fingers in order to recall his golden axe, it was now an impossible task.

Lei Yu stopped when he was about a meter away from him. “Previously, I was already being merciful to you, but you wouldn’t listen to my advice and still wanted to fight me. There’s no other way, because I can’t continue being kind-hearted. As a former emperor, you don’t even have a bit of willpower. A mere sentence said by that bastard and he was able to control your mind... there’s no point for you to keep living anymore!”

Lei Yu raised his hand, but in reality

he didn't have much internal energy left; he still had to put up a front though. Extracting the limited energy he still had in his Sea of Energy, Lei Yu controlled a current of internal energy the thickness of a thread, which linked to one of his meridians. Even though this last bit of internal energy was thin, it still contained a fearsome amount of power. The internal energy slowly condensed in Lei Yu's right arm, actually making the lightning brand start to shimmer.

Clasping his left index and middle fingers together, he stroked his right arm from top to bottom. A clearly visible line of internal energy could be seen moving towards the fingers of his right hand. One could see that an attack

impossible to resist for Pelagon was about to burst forth.

At this moment, a ghostly shadow started floating down from the air, heading straight for Lei Yu.

“Now’s the time!” Lei Yu shouted, and suddenly turned around, his internal energy at the tipping point before erupting. The instant Lei Yu turned around, a purple energy with the power of lightning and the thickness of a finger flew out, its target being the emerging shadow.

“Whoosh!”

“Puff!”

The shadow did not have its guard up at all, its attacking posture had not even changed, and its body had

already been blown away. On its chest, a finger-sized hole allowed one to see all the way through and behind it.

“You...!”

With a “plop,” Lei Yu fell next to Pelagon’s body, completely out of strength. Being able to stay conscious was only owing to the trace of internal energy he had just absorbed.

“Blurgh!” A mouthful of black and red blood sprayed out of the shadow’s mouth. The power of the surprise attack wasn’t actually capable of taking a life, but it had come too suddenly, so it hadn’t had its guard up.

Lei Yu carefully looked at the features of this shadow. The thin face looked as if a skeleton had slapped on a piece of skin. Its already pale look had become even more horrible-looking after Lei Yu's attack, capable of giving those who laid eyes upon it chills in their heart. Deep inside its eye sockets, was a yellow eyeball with black pupils, that no matter how you looked at, it wasn't something a human would have. The shape of its pupils looked like a lizard's or a snake's.

Lei Yu sucked in a cool breath. Was this still considered the look of a human? It was too scary looking! This person was none other than the master of the labyrinth – Crete.



“You dare to actually hurt me?! I want your life!” Crete ignored his heavy injuries, his body suddenly rushing over to him. Lei Yu went ahead and closed his eyes, as he didn’t have any strength left to resist him. It looked like he wouldn’t be able to fulfill the so called destiny that had been laid out by the Prophet Kalchas and Telephassa.

At this moment, Lei Yu’s entire mind was filled with the images of Ai Er; the way she frowned and smiled, the words and actions she made; the little sweet words of love they whispered into each other’s ears, all of these making Lei Yu unwilling to leave.

“I’m sorry, Ai Er. This time I really

have no way of getting out alive.” Lei Yu had given up. It was the first time he had truly given up on living. It wasn’t his choice to give up, but he had truly used up all his internal energy. The Spiritual Bead of Longevity he’d once had was no more, and because of that incident in the Kou country, that green energy had been completely used up as well. Adding the fact that Lei Yu didn’t even have the strength to run away, one could say that if an ordinary person appeared in front of him, one could effortlessly kill him on the spot.

Lei Yu tightened his fists, but found that he didn’t even have the strength to keep doing that. Thus, he awaited the arrival of his death, sprawled on the ground.

“Argh!”

“Crack!”

Two strange sounds echoed, then Lei Yu felt something warm hit his face. Using his last ounce of strength, Lei Yu opened his eyes, and was suddenly completely shocked at what he saw.

Crete's attack which had been meant for him had actually penetrated deeply into Pelagon's stomach. The latter was supporting his body with his two hands on the ground, as he protected Lei Yu's. The blood flowing out onto Lei Yu's face had come from Pelagon's stomach. Lei Yu could clearly see that, although he'd been dealt a lethal blow, his face still held a

smile. The red that shrouded his eyes had disappeared. It gave Lei Yu the feeling that the Pelagon now was his true self; his dignified face gave one an impression of kindness and friendliness – this was the face a benevolent emperor should have.

Lei Yu looked up, his mind becoming even more shocked. The half squatting Crete had his eyes open wide and round in surprise. His slit-like pupils strangely became round as well, and his thin pale face was continuously trembling. A huge shiny golden axe was deeply embedded into the back of his head. One could say that pretty much the whole axe was inside his skull. Yellow blood had been continuously flowing down his back, and dripping onto the ground.

“Bang!”

They both fell to the ground simultaneously. Pelagon’s huge body fell on top of Lei Yu, robbing him of the ability to breathe and almost killing him.

Crete was more or less as dead as a doornail. Lei Yu could somehow guess why Pelagon had helped him. Perhaps the previous attack had made him recover his senses, or perhaps in his mind, he hadn’t been able to let go of his descendants and subjects.

Lei Yu could clearly detect that Pelagon’s heart was still beating, except it was becoming slower and slower.

“I... I request... that you help me!  
Help me save... save my... save my  
people!”

The voice that came out of  
Pelagon’s mouth was barely audible  
while he gasped for air, but Lei Yu  
could still clearly hear everything.  
With great difficulty, Lei Yu replied,  
“I will!”

At this point, even though Lei Yu  
couldn’t see it, a bright smile was  
on Pelagon’s mouth. This was  
probably the happiest moment of  
his life, because he had finally made  
a decision that he felt was the right  
thing. He had saved Lei Yu, and in  
return, Lei Yu promised to help him  
save his people; now he could rest  
assured, and leave this world in  
peace.

No one would remember the mistake he'd previously made; no one would remember Pelagon in his armor, attacking Greece. However, from this day onwards, Lei Yu would forever remember his actions and he would forever be grateful towards him.

A few minutes later, the labyrinth started shaking, and all the walls started moving all of a sudden. Lei Yu could only stare with wide eyes, unable to move. In this moment, Pelagon's body crushing Lei Yu, and Crete lying by their side both started becoming illusory under his horrified look . Lei Yu clearly felt the weight on top of him disappear, and the next instant both bodies vanished. The labyrinth then started undergoing astonishing

changes.

This was exactly like last time when Lei Yu had finally found the sacred object, and all the walls had closed off the junctions, only leaving one path. This current path was much wider than previously, when Lei Yu hadn't been the only one here.

Clenching his teeth, Lei Yu used all his strength to get off the floor by using the wall as support.

The labyrinth had once again restored its calm, but it had become a single-lane tunnel. Lei Yu looked at the three golden items, but didn't have the strength to pick them up because he was currently in too much pain.

Noticing that to his right there was



some sort of distortion, Lei Yu slowly turned to face it.

“Minotaur Linos!”

Covered in a golden color, a monster appeared in front of Lei Yu. With a bull’s head and two sharp horns, terrifying blood-red eyes, and his body not much different than an ordinary person’s, except for it being much more muscular.

One could see that thick chains were restraining his arms and legs, restricting his movements. The most horrific thing about him were two gleaming sharp hooks which penetrated through his shoulders, and locked onto his shoulder blades. Behind the hooks were

chains, extending all the way back until the place where they were attached to the top of the walls.

It looked as if any slight movement would bring him unbearable pain. At this time, Minotaur Linos's pair of huge bull eyes, strangely, were looking at Lei Yu. It seemed like Lei Yu was more of a monster than him. Being able to defeat Crete and the three guardians, was he a human or a ghost?

“Hey, what are you looking at? I’ve suffered a lot because of you!” Lei Yu had a funny expression on his face. Because, no matter how he looked at Minotaur Linos, this bull was actually quite cute looking, and not as fearsome as depicted on the flag.

“Who are you?” Minotaur Linos asked as he blinked his eyes.

“Shit! Hold up, let me recover a bit before we talk more!” Lei Yu simply closed his eyes and began to replenish his internal energy.

HOwever, the spiritual essence around him was too pitiful, so time seemed to pass in slow motion.

After about an hour, Lei Yu finally opened up his eyes and stood up. Although he was unsteady on his feet, the little bit of internal energy inside him still helped him to walk, albeit grudgingly.

This Minotaur Linos was indeed a virtuous person, he actually hadn't uttered a single word during that hour. He had just stared at Lei Yu

until he regained his consciousness.

“You... you’re here to rescue me?”

“No shit, Sherlock!” Lei Yu went up close to Minotaur Linos and looked around. “I’m really doubting whether you’re really the fiendgod Minotaur Linos. No matter how I stare, you don’t look like a monster that likes to devour little boys and girls.”

He gently poked the two chains pierced through his shoulders, and Minotaur Linos cried out in pain. “Who told you I liked devouring little boys and girls?!”

“Then why do you require yearly sacrifices of little boys and girls?” Lei Yu asked.

“That’s what Crete needed, so he could use those little boys and girls to increase his strength. It has nothing to do with me. Since I’ve been locked up here, I haven’t dared to move a single inch! Hey! Stop poking the chains! It hurts a lot!” the big bull-headed fiendgod shouted hysterically. Lei Yu didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, he had never expected to suffer through such hardship in order to rescue such a wimpy bull-head.

Walking towards the golden axe, which was shimmering with a golden light, Lei Yu picked it up. Surprised, he actually felt some type of connection with the axe. Merely testing it on a whim, he put the axe back down and wiggled his fingers. The golden axe slightly shook

before flying into Lei Yu's hand.

“Oh shit! It's actually this simple to control!”

Walking up to Minotaur Linos, Lei Yu raised the axe, and a golden beam of light flew out and sliced the chain apart. In actuality, the big bull-head's power wasn't weak. It was because of the hooks locking his shoulder bones, which made him unable to utilize his strength. After the heart-wrenching pain had passed, Minotaur Linos stood there like a dummy. He didn't dare to believe that he had gained his freedom so easily. It was simply too incredible to describe.

“Hey, why aren't you leaving?” Lei Yu patted his bloody shoulders as he asked this.

“What about you?”

“Me?” Right now, Pelagon’s dying request was replaying in Lei Yu’s mind. Since he had promised him that, he would not go back on his words. Since Lei Yu could freely choose to return in any point of time, then he wasn’t in a rush to put the spring water into the golden bowl. Turning his head and looking back to the area where Minotaur Linos had been locked by chains, a spring water vortex was slowly rotating in the middle of the wall, filled with star-lights which made it look very pretty. “I will go back with you. My guess is that Prophet Kalchas is still waiting outside for us. Let’s go!”

# Chapter 142:

## Golden Bull God

The two went straight out to the other end of the path. As they neared the exit, Lei Yu used the incantation that Prophet Kalchas had previously taught him. This incantation was exactly the same as the ancient Greek scrolls he had inside his storage ring, which he had originally used to open the big boulder.

In the beginning, Lei Yu couldn't understand how he was able to communicate with the people here. Lei Yu was pretty sure that he had never come into contact with learning the Greek language before,



but compared to him transcending time and space, this language mystery wasn't such a big deal.

After Prophet Kalchas's explanation, Lei Yu had realized that the day he'd come into contact with the spring water, the moment the multitude of images in his mind had appeared, he'd happened to form some type of connection with the ancient Greek language.

Perhaps this was a foundation that was laid to assist his arrival to this place.

The sunlight outside shining on the labyrinth made Minotaur Linos and Lei Yu have some difficulty opening their eyes. At the edge of the cliff, a person wearing a large black cloak was trembling non-stop, as he walked one step at a time towards

the two.

“Kalchas, the mission you have entrusted to me has been completed. But I temporarily can’t leave yet, I’ve promised a friend to help him accomplish a task,” Said Lei Yu with a smile.

Although there was a smile on his face, it wasn’t hard to see that Lei Yu was holding back a lot of pain. The clothes on his body were all shredded; his whole body covered in blood, even his face had traces of blood on it! On his chest was a horrendous wound that people seeing it would feel worried about.

“Thank... thank you! Thank you so much!” As Kalchas neared the two, Minotaur Linos looked at this

person with uncertainty. This person looked somewhat familiar, but because of the hood, he couldn't really see the person's face.

Kalchas's voice was quivering as he excitedly walked up to Minotaur Linos. "Plop!" His knees landed on the ground. "Master! Master! You've finally come out! Kalchas can finally see you again!"

"Kalchas! You're Kalchas?!" The big bull-head who already had big eyes opened them even wider, scaring the daylights out of Lei Yu. It was apparent these two knew each other.

"I knew something was up," Lei Yu thought as he coughed a bit, the pain in his chest bothering him

immensely. It was obvious these two knew each other, but Lei Yu didn't feel like waiting for them to reminisce. "Can't you guys chat after we go back? At least talk after I'm healed up or something."

"Uh..., sorry, sorry!" Minotaur Linos helped Kalchas off the ground. The big bull-head then walked up to Lei Yu, "Let's go, I'll carry you!"

Lei Yu frantically waved his arms, "It's okay, it's better that I ride a horse!"

Lei Yu had some trouble understanding how Minotaur Linos, a once mighty and fearsome fiendgod, had turned out to be such a nice character.

“Benefactor, no need to be so courteous. Have you forgotten that I’m much faster than a horse? I still have these boots given by the God of War – Ares.”

“Ares boots?” This was the first time Lei Yu had heard of this term. But, when it came to the legends of the God of War, he too had heard a bit about them. It appeared that he had originally been calling them golden this and golden that, when they actually had their own name.

Kalchas’s jaws had already dropped on the floor from incredulity, but because he was covered by the cloak, no one else could see his expression. He had never imagined that the great Minotaur Linos would be willing to carry someone

on his back. If this was back then, he still wouldn't have believed it, even if you would have beat him to death. Perhaps, over the course of the millennia, time could mellow out a person. No, we should accurately say that it had mellowed out the blood of a half-human, half-beast entity.

“No need to be so courteous, just wait a bit!” Minotaur Linos walked forward a few steps and, once he was about five meters from Lei Yu, his hands started rubbing the horns on his head.

“What the hell, what's he trying to do?” Lei Yu blinked in confusion.

“Moo~!” The unique sound of cattle's was heard as Minotaur

Linos cried out to the sky. The sound was so high pitched that it made people somewhat uncomfortable. And at the same time a golden glow surrounded him, as his entire body started undergoing changes. He was now standing on all four limbs, golden hair had started sprouting, covering his body, and his body also started getting larger. Being wrapped in that golden light, Minotaur Linos's original human body gradually became like a bovine's. He was now humongous; over six meters wide and around four meters tall. The sudden appearance of a huge golden bull shocked Lei Yu beyond words. And, the oddest thing was, a saddle had appeared on the back of this bull, from who knew where. This huge golden saddle that had

mysteriously appeared was quite dominant looking.

On the ox's four hooves, there were U-shaped horseshoes that should not have belonged to the bovidae family. These were horseshoes, but they did add a bit to his divinity look. The most striking feature was his head; wrapped around his two horns were a type of particularly eye-catching glittering covers.

Lei Yu was pretty sure that these were actually the transformed three pieces of Ares's war equipment. The saddle on the back of the bull was the Ares armor; the horseshoes on its hooves – Ares boots, and the covers on the horns were most likely the Ares axe.



The huge golden bull turned around, its nostrils constantly discharging white steam. “Today’s weather isn’t that cold, right?” Lei Yu thought to himself as he was furiously blinking at the sight. Lei Yu had finally noticed that the previous bull-head had become a cool-looking golden bull, with quite the domineering presence.

Whoever rode on his back would probably gain a great amount of face.

“Please,” said the golden bull in human words. Lei Yu didn’t bother holding back, and walked up to Minotaur Linos. He then lightly jumped onto the saddle on his back.

“Moo~!”

Once again he cried out. “Boom! Boom!” The two huge hooves trampled on the ground, emitting an earth-shattering sound. Kalchas had finally woken up from his shock. Pulling one horse, and jumping on top of another, he followed far behind the bull’s behind, with Lei Yu on top of it, unable to catch up.

Lei Yu was extremely shocked, because he was simply unable to see his environment clearly; the scene in front of him would disappear behind him in an instant. Lei Yu was sure that if he was to wear the Ares boots, his speed would most likely be only half of this. But, if one really thought about this, Lei Yu only had two legs, while Minotaur Linos had four right now.

If he reverted back to his human form, who knew which of them would be faster.

Riding as swift as the wind had satisfied Lei Yu's need for speed. The long distance had been traversed by the super-fast golden bull in less than one-third of the original time. They had arrived in front of the city's main gates.

“Wow!”

“Oh heavens! You guys, quickly! Come look!”

The common people and soldiers by the city gate all had startled expressions on their faces. They were all just too shocked from staring at a majestic-looking shiny

golden bull rushing towards them. With the current speed of the golden bull, most likely no one would dare to stop them.

Lei Yu firmly smacked the big head, “Slow down! Don’t go smashing into anything!”

Minotaur Linos gradually decreased his speed, eventually coming to a standstill in front of the city gates. His red eyes were staring at the soldiers guarding the gates, scaring them to the point that their legs were shaking non-stop. But, once they saw the person riding atop of the bull, one of the soldiers cried out: “Isn’t that the warrior that defeated Silo? Oh, god! He is actually riding such a fearsome-looking golden bull!”

“That’s right, it is him!”

Only after seeing Lei Yu did they finally feel somewhat relieved. At least they knew Lei Yu wouldn’t commit anything terrible, or else the great Queen Telephassa wouldn’t have recruited him to become the King.

With Lei Yu’s presence, naturally, no one dared to stop them from entering. The golden bull then carried Lei Yu valiantly towards the center of the city.

“They actually don’t recognize me? Then, why would they still have my portrait on the flags?” The golden bull’s voice was so soft that only Lei Yu could hear it.

“I say, Mr. Bull-Head, you are really quite dumb. You’ve changed your form into a golden bull’s right now! Who on earth would recognize you as such a huge thing? Maybe a thousand years ago people knew your other form, but this is a thousand years later! These common people and soldiers only know your bull’s head and human body form!” said Lei Yu.

“Oh! Right, right, right!”

The lofty fiendgod Minotaur Linos was reprimanded by Lei Yu this way. If it was back then, Lei Yu’s words would have caused these two to battle it out fiercely. But the way things looked right now, it was doubtful that anything of the sort would happen.

Arriving in front of the huge palace, Lei Yu used his internal energy and cried out in an ear-deafening manner: “Would Queen Telephassa please come out and receive the mighty fiendgod – Minotaur Linos!”

At this time, Lei Yu jumped off from the bull’s back. When in front of the Queen, he still had to give the bull-head some face.

Lei Yu and the bull-head both cried out: “Moo~!” [1]

Right after that, Minotaur Linos’s body started transforming. In full view of everyone, the huge golden bull’s body instantly became smaller. From having four limbs on the ground, he gradually stood up on only two; the long golden hair

gradually disappeared, and his body gradually became a human's. An armor was adorned on his body, battle boots on his feet, and his hands wielding a huge golden axe. If people couldn't see his head, then this impressive scene would have probably captured the hearts of millions of girls. Except, once you saw his head, then it was kind of...

Telephassa was currently in the throne room, anxious about the enemy's incoming attack. Hearing the familiar voice, she was immediately shocked! Wasn't this the person she had been longing for day and night?

Hurriedly standing up from the throne, she hastily led the crowd of officials towards the front gates of



the palace. The speed of her light body made some of these old officials feel that they were unable to catch up to her.

Once she saw Lei Yu, Telephassa started getting teary-eyed, her red swollen eyes giving anyone who saw her a heartache. Since there were too many people around, she had to fight back her impulse of running towards Lei Yu and giving him a hug. She shifted her gaze towards the entity next to him, a tall and strong existence with the head of a bull and a human's body.

The warriors and officials following the queen all looked at Minotaur Linos with big, wide eyes. He was exactly the same as the portrait on their flag, so there was no way he

could be a fake. They couldn't believe that the foreign guy had actually managed to rescue their mighty fiendgod!

All those officials on the side had even forgotten their duty, their eyes staring at the mighty bull-god in a daze. Their legs were trembling non-stop as they seemed to have forgotten how to speak.

“Kneel!”

It was the queen's clear voice that cried out. All the warriors and the common people on the scene instantly kowtowed. The scene was too impressive and Minotaur Linos could not help sighing. “A thousand years of humiliation! Today I have finally restored my glory.

Benefactor, this is all due to you!”

Lei Yu’s lips curved into a slight smile as he chided the bull-head: “Nice, ain’t it? You’ve been given so much face today.”

Perhaps it was his previous injury that made Lei Yu difficult to tolerate the pain, making him start coughing.

“Why aren’t you guys getting someone to heal our benefactor?” the bull-head bluntly shouted, causing even the ground to shake. Scared to the point of having sweat beading on his forehead, a medical official immediately rushed forward to support Lei Yu. The bull-head started following behind. Telephassa didn’t bother with

etiquette either, and also followed in a hurry. It appeared that she was only worried about Lei Yu. Even the fiendgod Minotaur Linos's return was not as important. And it looked like she had completely forgotten about the enemy invasion at this point.

---

[1] Yes, the raws really say: Lei Yu cried out and the bull-head also cried out.

# Chapter 143: You Cannot Leave!

In reality, Lei Yu's injury was quite serious but it was not a life threatening one. The biggest problem was that he barely had any internal energy left. It would take him a long time before he can recover fully.

Lei Yu was now inside a different luxurious bedchamber. This was the chambers of Queen Telephassa which was emitting a strong fragrance that could make someone go crazy for. Lei Yu was enjoying himself lying atop of the soft bed while looking all over the room.

There were only several people in the chambers; the beautiful queen, Minotaur Linos and a medical official. The medical official's forehead was full of sweat as he examined Lei Yu's wounds. He could only heal the external wounds but when it came to the internal ones, those were beyond the scope of his capabilities.

After applying medicine, they wrapped Lei Yu's chest with white bandages. Two maids then helped Lei Yu by wiping away the stains on his body. Even though Lei Yu's body was emitting a bad odor, no one said a thing since he suffered these wounds for the kingdom. They couldn't even repay his kindness so who would dare despise his odor?

After experiencing these events, Lei Yu could not help thinking about the time when he got injured in the hospital and how Fang Yi Ke (little Ke) took care of him. He felt the warmth in his heart, but these maids weren't her, little Ke's death was a fact which could never be changed.

Lei Yu woke up from his comfortable sleep. When he opened his eyes, the first thing he saw was one beautiful face and one funny looking face. Telephassa was sitting besides his pillow as she gently stroked his hair. Even though Lei Yu enjoyed this feeling, this seductress wasn't the Ai Er whom he wanted. Feeling slightly awkward, he shifted away a bit.

“You’re awake? Did you sleep okay?” Telephassa tenderly asked, looking like she didn’t mind Lei Yu’s previous actions.

“Pretty good, I want to go out for a walk.” Lei Yu sat up with support of his hands. He could feel waves of pain on his chest but it wasn’t considered much for Lei Yu since he could easily tolerate it by clenching his teeth.

The queen’s previous majestic appearance had disappeared without a trace; Telephassa was now the representation of a warm and kind-hearted girl. Her hands were gently supporting her beloved husband since she was afraid of him suffering any further discomfort. Seeing this, the bull-



head's eyes could not help but swarm with dizziness.

“Hey bull-head, you looked way cooler back then when you were in the bull form.” Lei Yu jokingly grinned as he showed his signature smile.

Minotaur Linos's bull lips opened up with a laughter. “Of course! Since that's my real form!”

“Reporting!”

A voice was heard in the distance as a warrior hurriedly rushed over. Looking at his face, you could see that the warrior was extremely anxious.

During the time when Lei Yu was recovering, Telephassa gave an

order that no one was allowed to disturb them. Putting the imminent war temporarily aside and placing personal relationship affairs first was a big taboo for an emperor. No matter what, the country's problems and its citizens should be the most important things. But Lei Yu was not just anyone; relying on his own strength, he was about to rescue the mighty fiendgod Minotaur Linos. Now that a fiendgod was present, how could they be afraid of an enemy invasion?

When Minotaur Linos's messenger - Silo was present, no enemy states dared to invade them. Now that the true embodiment of power had returned, would Telephassa still be afraid of an invasion? The worst

case scenario was that their enemies could arrive at the city gates. Perhaps with a mere stomp of Minotaur Linos, the invading enemy would be scared out of their wits.

“What’s the current location of the invading army?” Telephassa asked calmly.

“Reporting to your majesty, the invading army is right outside our walls, preparing for a large-scale attack on the city! What should we do?” Cold sweat was dripping off this warrior’s forehead. After many years without a war, the sudden appearance of an enemy invasion had made him somewhat fearful.

“There’s no need to panic.”

Telephassa glanced over at Minotaur Linos, “Lord Fiendgod, how do you think we should deal with this?”

“Don’t ask me.” His huge bull head shook, “I haven’t fought in over a thousand years, so I too don’t know how to respond to this.” In reality, since he was trapped and tortured in the labyrinth for so long, he had forgotten that he alone could fight ten thousand soldiers.

“Bull-head, why don’t you go out and deal with them? You are still the legendary fiendgod so let them experience your might. You cannot forget that just a messenger of yours alone can deter them, not to mention you who is the master!”

At this time, another warrior rushed over. “Reporting to your majesty, Prophet Kalchas has been captured by the enemy army and they’re currently showing off outside the main gates!”

“That so called William is such a sinister bastard!” One of the things Lei Yu hated the most was when someone threatened him with the use of a hostage. He then angrily said: “Bull-head, if you’re not going then I’ll go!”

“I’ll go! I’ll go!” The huge head of Minotaur Linos was startled before he started running outside. Lei Yu gently patted Telephassa’s hand, “Don’t worry, everything will be fine. Since that bull-head has been rumored to be super strong, he

must have something backing it up.”

Telephassa gently nodded, her eyes seem to only have thoughts about Lei Yu.

“Moo~!” This distinct cry made Lei Yu look towards the direction of the battlefield that he couldn’t see.

Below the city walls, about one hundred thousand troops were neatly lined up which created a spectacular scene. While twenty thousand cavalry and eighty thousand infantry soldiers were shouting, the city gates suddenly opened. A bull..., no! A human body with a bull’s head came out from the city.

“What sort of monster are you? You look way too funny!” Sitting atop a huge horse, General William looked up and his face was filled with disdain as he insulted the unknown creature.

“Impudent thing!” Minotaur Linos wasn’t someone that you could insult whenever you want. At least for him, apart from Lei Yu, whoever disrespected him shall die! “Open up your dog eyes and memorize my appearance! Then look at the portrait of the flag that is flying atop of the city walls behind me!”

Minotaur Linos’s voice shook the heavens and the earth. Without an exception, all one hundred thousand troops heard his words. They all looked up at the flag with

an unimpressed manner, but then suddenly a majority of them became restless as they started to create a clamor.

William's brain suddenly felt like it had short circuited. The legendary fiendgod Minotaur Linos was something real? Impossible! Even if the legends were true, he should be trapped inside the labyrinth. Additionally, their country's Emperor Pelagon from a thousand years ago was a guardian of the labyrinth so there's no way he could escape right? It must be fake! It must be fake!

"Humph!" William pretended to be calm. "Randomly grabbing a monster with a bull's head to pose as a fiendgod? You don't know the



meaning of death! Even if you are really the fiendgod Minotaur Linos, what can you do against my one hundred thousand strong army?”

“What can I do to you?” Perhaps General William’s words had stirred up Minotaur Linos’s anger, but a mere one hundred thousand troops were nothing but a bunch of insects in his eyes!

Stomping a single foot on the ground, Minotaur Linos roared angrily. With the Ares axe in his hands, the Ares boots on his feet, that stomp made him fly forth while unleashing an overwhelming momentum!

With such a furious momentum, the horses in the forefront began to

shuffle uneasily as they started to retreat backwards. No matter how much the riders whipped them; they refused to take a single step forward.

For the time being, the situation was difficult for William to control where he probably wouldn't be able to fix for a while. Minotaur Linos's eyes were bloodshot as he rushed towards William who wasn't far off from him.

Up in the sky, a black cloud was following the mighty fiendgod as if it was a protective umbrella. The huge bull-head then roared into the sky again, "Moo~!"

All the horses started fleeing and scattered from the area, even

trampling some of the infantry soldiers at the rear! The aura of Minotaur Linos was too ferocious; it wasn't something these ordinary livestock could tolerate.

On the battlefield, the only remaining calm animal was the huge war horse that General William was riding. Even though it didn't dare to move forward, at least it didn't flee. But General William who was atop the horse could clearly feel that his war horse was trembling from top to bottom. Perhaps it's not that it didn't want to run away, it's because it simply was frozen in fear.

William's eyes were filled with fear as he stupidly stared at the fearsome fiendgod who was getting

closer and closer. The next moment, the legs of the huge war horse couldn't handle the pressure anymore. With a "thump" sound, it fell over on the ground frothing from its mouth.

William fell on the ground hard and didn't even have time to get up when at this time...! Minotaur Linos rotated the Ares axe in his hands until it was above his head and swung down diagonally. A huge golden semicircle of light which was least ten meters in length could be seen. With the Ares axe as the starting point, the beam of light flew straight for the one hundred thousand troops.

"Slash slash!"

“Aghhh!”

The noisy battlefield instantly became a river of blood as soldiers were crying out in pain from all over the place. The huge golden semicircle light flew dozens of meter into the midst of soldiers before gradually coming to a stop before killing no less than five thousand enemy invaders!

The soldiers guarding the city walls were originally fretting for their Lord Fiendgod who had returned with serious injuries to his shoulders. But now that they witnessed this event, their eyes were about to pop out of their sockets. The former Silo had already gained an unspeakable admiration from those soldiers on

the battlefield, but to think that Lord Fiendgod's power was extreme to this extent, it simply makes people go crazy in disbelief!

At this point, not only the huge war horse on the ground was still trembling; there was also William whose forehead was covered in cold sweat and his eyes filled with fear.

After Minotaur Linos's first attack came to an end, his heart finally regained a similar sense of his boiling blood from a thousand years ago. The him now was filled with an endless surging of desire to battle. After suffering countless tortures in the labyrinth, his bloodthirstiness had been wiped away. But today, the delightful feeling of sweeping a battlefield had returned! The

almighty fiendgod was back, and will certainly make all invaders lose hope and make a hasty retreat!

Resting the huge golden axe on his shoulder he slightly raised his head towards the sky, his large bull eyes were filled with disdain. The one hundred thousand troops in front of him were no different than a bunch of defenseless ants.

But soldiers were soldiers after all. In their minds, obeying orders was more important than their own lives. Twenty thousand war horses were already frightened so the warriors on horseback all jumped off and returned to their former positions. Although their eyes were filled with fear, no one retreated. Even though their fellow comrades

whom split into pieces were beneath their feet, they didn't bother with the pieces and tightened their grip on the weapons they were holding in their hands. They were now waiting for orders from General William who had just gotten up from the ground.

"You're really the fiendgod Minotaur Linos?!" William's shaky voice had already exposed his fearful heart. If the commander was already like this, one could imagine the current mindset of the soldiers.

"Your one hundred thousand troops can't even handle my Thirty-six Lunar Star Axe, what qualifications do you have to cause a ruckus here?" Minotaur Linos lightly stated.



As the name implied, the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique had a total of thirty-six axe forms. Each form has invincible powers; the previous first form had already caused thousands of invaders to lose their lives. If Minotaur Linos continued, then perhaps the grounds would really be covered in flesh and bones!

“We... we... we will immediately withdraw! From now on we will be on good terms with your noble kingdom and a new war will never break out between our countries! We beg the Lord Fiendgod to have mercy on us!” William was basically using a pleading tone when speaking to Minotaur Linos. Life or death of him and his soldiers was within the hands of this fiendgod; if he didn’t do this, then who knows if

he could leave this place alive.

“Humph! I doubt you will dare to continue being enemies with my kingdom! Scram back and tell your emperor that: If he dares to provoke me again, I will personally lead a demonic army and flatten your kingdom!” Minotaur Linos’s tone was extremely tyrannical, causing some mentally weaker soldiers to wet their pants.

“Understood! Understood!” William’s heart felt like it was blossoming as he was about to order his troops to retreat. But at this moment, Lei Yu suddenly appeared behind Minotaur Linos. Although he was still injured, it wasn’t to the point of making him immobile.

“Your men and horses can go, but you cannot leave!” The words of Lei Yu made William turn around as he was about to leave.

Seeing that the fiendgod in front of him having no reaction, this strengthened his courage and made him shout out: “From where did a rude kid like you come from? Can you not see that Lord Fiendgod is present? What makes you think you can interrupt us and cause a scene here? Hurry up and scram!”

Lei Yu was somewhat startled by William’s words. Minotaur Linos couldn’t help but swallow forcefully with a gulp as he secretly glanced at Lei Yu. Since Lei Yu didn’t respond right away, he didn’t dare to say anything either. After all, this

person was capable of rescuing him from the labyrinth. Minotaur Linos himself couldn't defeat the three guardians, let alone the creator of the labyrinth. In Minotaur Linos's heart, Lei Yu was comparable to an immortal who had descended to the earthly realm.

“What the f\*ck?!” Lei Yu scratched his cheek. He never thought that William would poke at him in order to regain some of his dignity. Now he had become the butt of a joke!

# Chapter 144:

## Leaving Quietly

Lei Yu walked forward a few steps towards William. The latter carefully raised his large sword until its tip was pointing directly at Lei Yu.

One could see Lei Yu grasp the sword blade gently with his thumb and index fingers while displaying his signature smile. Right after that, an irrepressible power burst forth through the blade and into William's hand. William's body suddenly started to shake; the hair all over his body was standing on its end; the veins on his neck started to bulge out; and his eyes looked like

they wanted to pop out and land on Minotaur Linos.

The warriors behind William had no idea what was happening so they had no clue why their General was acting this way. But Minotaur Linos was very clear on what was happening, this was Lei Yu's special ability - the power of lightning.

About half a minute passed by before Lei Yu withdrew his fingers and rested his arms by his side. He lightly smiled while looking at William, while the latter's hair looked like he was struck by lightning. With an extremely embarrassed look, William did not look like a general who was commanding a hundred thousand troops; his mouth was wide open

with white smoke coming out of it. When he glanced at Lei Yu again, the word “fear” wasn’t enough to describe the look in his eyes.

“Let me say it again, you have to stay while the others can leave. Perhaps you didn’t hear me clearly when I spoke for the first time?” Lei Yu once again repeated his previous words.

Although he feared that he would meet with a tragedy if he stayed however if he didn’t do what this youngster demanded, it’s most likely that he would lose his life at this spot. Not to mention that he didn’t want to experience the living hell which he had just encountered.

“Withdraw the troops!”

“Acknowledged!” The Vice General behind nodded. Two soldiers lifted up their two-colored flags and started waving it in a certain pattern. All the soldiers then started moving away in an orderly manner. Thus, a hundred thousand troops all withdrew cleanly leaving behind a cloud of dust in the air.

“Benefactor, why are you making him stay?” Minotaur Linos moved his huge head towards Lei Yu’s face before asking in a whisper.

“What the hell?!” Lei Yu suddenly jumped to the side. “You freakin bull-head, you scared the crap out of me!”

William blinked a few times. Who would dare to speak with a fiendgod



in such a rude manner? When he thought about it some more, could this person in front of him be...

William then finally realized what Minotaur Linos called this youngster and suddenly became pale in fright. Could it be that the fiendgod Minotaur Linos was able to leave the labyrinth because he was rescued by this person? Then how powerful was this person?

“Do you know the reason why I wanted you to stay?” Lei Yu looked at William and asked.

“No... no idea!”

“You should know who Pelagon is right?” Lei Yu asked again.

William sucked in a breath of cold

air, everything was very clear now. It looks like this person in front of him really rescued Minotaur Linos from the labyrinth. Now that he mentioned Pelagon, that means he must have met the Emperor from long ago right? If all of his guesses were accurate, that meant Pelagon was still alive all these years. An army general like him dared to seize the command of the entire kingdom... If Pelagon was still alive, then even if he died ten thousand times, it still wouldn't be enough.

With a “plop” sound, William's butt fell on the ground in a daze as he stared at nothing in particular. He understood that his days were numbered.

“Pelagon has already died after his

fight with me.” Lei Yu continued saying.

William suddenly looked up, a hint of joy instantly lit up in his eyes before it quickly disappeared without a trace. But he wasn't sure what Lei Yu was planning or what he meant by those words.

“That's great! You are really too powerful, you should know that Emperor Pelagon was once the strongest warrior in my country. I would have never thought that you sir, would be this powerful! You were able to kill him, I really admire you! I admire you from the bottom of my heart!” William started to flatter Lei Yu. With so many complex thoughts and calculations, William came to a

conclusion: This youngster who could fight with Pelagon and kill him, that meant that those two shouldn't be on the same side. But William would have never imagined that his conclusion was completely wrong.

“You are truly a real bastard. Pelagon and I are friends, and you actually dare to insult my friend?” Lei Yu coldly humphed as he glared at William.

Pelagon and Lei Yu merely encountered each other by fate, and the two formed a bond thanks to their fight. Because of Lei Yu's statement, Pelagon was able to restore his sanity and get rid of the mind control. And if it wasn't for Pelagon, Lei Yu's death would be

certain. Therefore Lei Yu had no hatred for Pelagon, only gratitude.

William's brain short-circuited as his mind simply became paste. His face immediately became gloomy since he was unsure of what to do. His eyes instantly became red, the tears in his eyes were like a waterfall gushing out like it didn't cost any money. "Emperor Pelagon! How could you leave this world just like that? Did you know? All your subjects have been waiting for your return! You can't just die like that!"

Lei Yu couldn't help but be filled with loathing as he looked at William's face. If this guy worked in his company and starred in a movie, there probably wouldn't be many actors who could be compared with

him in terms of acting. He could cry or laugh on cue; he was even faster than the stock market rebounding on certain news.

“Shut up!” Lei Yu shouted. “Wipe your snot you loathsome thing!”

Lei Yu frowned, he was too lazy to use his own hands on this type of person. After waving his hand, two soldiers on top of the city walls could see that Lei Yu was calling for them. They rushed down and out of the city gates. Since the enemy army had already retreated, they could see they weren't in danger anymore. Because the invasion and retreat happened too quickly, these soldiers and citizens weren't sure if this was the time to cheer or not.

“Your lordship!” The two soldiers respectfully stood in front of Lei Yu and the bull head.

Lei Yu pointed to William who was still crouching on the ground blowing his nose. “Take him to the arena so we can see a good show!”

William had no clue what Lei Yu was referring to, and he definitely didn’t know that when Minotaur Linos’s returned, he had helped Silo recover a portion of his injuries. He was going to be food for Silo very soon.

“Understood!” Grabbing onto William, these two soldiers felt like they had so much face now. Being able to capture the enemy’s commander, this was the perfect

time for them to show off... even though they didn't personally subdue him. And knowing their country had two powerful figures, who would dare invade them now?

Telephassa smiled while looking at her beloved. Unfortunately, this man will be leaving soon and he could never come back. She seems to be the only one who didn't know about this, thinking Lei Yu's return meant that he will never leave here again.

On a high platform of the arena, Lei Yu, Minotaur Linos, and Telephassa all stood together as they watched a perplexed William on the field.

“Your majesty...”



“Call me Telephassa.”

“Uh... Telephassa.” Lei Yu pointed at William who was in the field and said: “Please do me a favor. When I was in the labyrinth, I promised Pelagon that I would save his subjects. I hope that you will send them a Peace Treaty and form an alliance with them. That way, my friend will be able to rest in peace.”

After thinking for a while, Telephassa said: “But their country’s emperor is too weak and incompetent. Forming an alliance with them will not benefit us at all.”

Lei Yu lightly sighed. Folding his hands behind his back, “Are you not aware that having a weak ally is better than having a strong enemy?”

I will do what I've promised to Pelagon. As for whether his country will continue to exist in the future or not will all depend on the current Emperor, and it's all up to him if he will strive to become a better person or not. At least I have kept my part of the promise."

"Fine then."

At this time, a metal gate on the side of the arena opened up slowly. The fearsome Silo came out one step at a time but did not forget to bow deeply to where Minotaur Linos was standing. Everyone could see how much he respected the fiendgod. Even Telephassa had never received such a treatment from Silo before. But when Silo looked at Lei Yu, his eyes were

conflicted. Lei Yu had injured him yet rescued the fiendgod, which made him unsure how to treat such a person.

Meanwhile in the the arena, William had gone bat shit crazy. “Ahh! Silo! Silo! It’s actually Silo!” His heavy armor was no longer something that could protect his life, it was nothing but a burden that hindered him from running away.

“OOOooowwww~!”

Silo roared before rushing towards William. Although the arena looked like a duel between a person and a monster, but it was really a one-sided attack. The other was like a grasshopper trapped in a cage with

a rooster chasing after it. No matter how hard he tried, he was unable to escape his fate.

No one looked at Silo as a form of entertainment. Even now they wouldn't because of the merits he had achieved for the country were too much. He had saved this country more than once already. But because of his overly tyrannical nature, Telephassa could not help but to have him locked up.

But if we think about this for a while, could anyone truly lock up Silo? No, it was not possible. It's only because of the order given by Minotaur Linos that he was this kingdom's guardian and that's why he acted accordingly.

A bloody scene appeared in the arena. All the citizens and soldiers spectating became excited to the extreme as they roared out and cheered.

-----

Late in the night, Lei Yu quietly entered into Telephassa's chambers. Standing beside her bed, he observed her coquettish looks and her hot near-naked body. Her smooth tempting skin that revealed a sexy look in the evening made it even more difficult for a person to resist. Lei Yu swallowed hard. Even though he was unwilling to part with her, he still had to leave. Cautiously moving closer, Lei Yu gently kissed her forehead and then kissed her lips. His hands were

trembling as he gently wrapped his arms around her body and embraced her. The touch of her soft body caused an explosion of temptation in Lei Yu, making him unable to resist and a tent shape was popping out in his pants.

Shifting her back onto the bed, Lei Yu retreated out one step at a time. While leaving the room, Lei Yu was reluctant to look away from this unforgettable goddess of beauty, yet he still had to go.

Sighing heavily, Lei Yu turned to leave as he parted ways with the sexy sleeping goddess.

“Bull-head, everything will be your responsibility in the future. I have to leave now.” Lei Yu patted the

shoulders of Minotaur Linos.

“Rest assured, this is my country. Since she has the crown of Ares, I will to protect her.” Minotaur Linos nodded.

“Prophet Kalchas, how long will the stuff you gave her last?” Lei Yu asked.

“It should last until sunrise at least.”

“That’s good.” Even though there was nothing to see, Lei Yu still looked at Telephassa’s direction in deep thought.

“Shall we leave now?” The bull head cried into the sky. His body underwent a dramatic change and once again became the golden bull

god.

Lei Yu then jumped onto the saddle and just like a meteor shower at night, they disappeared into the endless horizon.



# Chapter 145:

## Returning to Modern Times

In front of the huge rock, Lei Yu jumped off the back of the golden bull. “Thank you, it’s time for me to leave.”

“Benefactor, I don’t really have anything to give you as a parting gift but I will always remember the fact that you’ve rescued me from the labyrinth. From this day on, Greece will never forget you!”

Minotaur Linos had already transformed back to the bull’s head and human body appearance with a touch of sadness on his face.

Lei Yu's heart was filled with sadness as well since this journey was simply too wondrous!

“Benefactor, since I don't have anything to give you, how about this... If you don't mind, I will give you the cultivating method which Ares gave me, the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique.”

Lei Yu was overjoyed. “Is that the move you used during the battle?” Lei Yu clearly witness the great power of that attack.

“That was only one of the moves, there's a total of thirty-six forms (styles).

“That's great then! But I don't have any axe type weapons, can I still use

it?” Lei Yu asked.

“No matter what weapon you use, you can still display its power. I believe with your strength, you can still release a horrifying degree of power with your bare hands!”

Lei Yu was extremely shocked. If he could successfully learn such a powerful cultivating method, then it would be very useful for him in the future. There’s no such thing as too much knowledge so Lei Yu wasn’t afraid of learning more.

Both of them sat down cross-legged. A crack could be seen in-between Minotaur Linos’s eyebrows, then a golden light rushed out. The golden light was as thick as a finger which flew straight for Lei Yu.

Suddenly there was tremor in his mind and Lei Yu entered a trance-like state. His mind was constantly filled with countless martial moves and pathways to circulate his internal energy.

When everything had finally settled down, Lei Yu felt like he was in the middle of the universe. The cultivating method the bull-head transferred to him appeared before him in the vast starry space.

The Thirty-six Lunar Stars combined into a perfect picture, each Lunar Star represented a certain point. Lei Yu carefully noted that every line connecting the thirty-six Lunar Stars together was a path for his internal energy to circulate. Every connection point

had its own marvelous use as they were linked to each other. This made Lei Yu feel nothing but shock. He had never seen such a powerful cultivating method in his entire life.

Lei Yu was deeply fascinated with the magical effects of the Lunar Stars and the vastness of this universe. He then attempted to circulate his internal energy according to the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique.

Although he only reached the preliminary stage of understanding the technique, Lei Yu was still overjoyed. This was equal to adding a new set of attacks to his arsenal. In the past, he only relied on his own training and actual combat

experience in order to come up with attack methods. Now that he had a complete set of a cultivating method, how could he not be excited?

Minotaur Linos withdrew the golden light in-between his eyebrows. He slowly stood up and looked towards the horizon which was getting lighter. “Benefactor, take care of yourself. I will create a barrier here so that no one can bother you! The queen will soon wake up so I have to get back.”

Minotaur Linos’s transformation was really fast; from a bull’s head and a human’s body into a huge golden bull was almost instantaneous. As if striding forth on a bed of flames, he disappeared

without a trace.

Lei Yu was in the midst of a profound state and he could not get out of it. Wanting to grasp all thirty-six forms in one try was simply a fool's dream. Even if it was Lei Yu who was talented and had potential beyond ordinary people, it still wasn't possible.

One point to pierce, pierce the heavens to grasp the moon, contain and seize the group, convey the Lunar Star's intent!

Lei Yu silently recited the mnemonics as he felt an additional warm energy was growing inside him. This energy was completely different from what he original had since it exudes a milky white glow.

Even though it was combined with his energy, Lei Yu could easily separate the two without using too much effort.

White light was mixed with the starlight making it look exceptionally bright. Lei Yu took a deep breath before slowly opening his eyes. When he awoke from his profound trance like state, the sun was already above his head which meant it was noon already.

Lei Yu gratefully smiled as he felt a powerful force in the surrounding area that seemed to wrap around him. He knew that this was a barrier that Minotaur Linos set up since Minotaur Linos was afraid that someone or something would bother his cultivation. Both of his



arms filled with a powerful might, he forced the barrier to burst apart leaving deep grooves on the ground. Lei Yu left the area and arrived in front of the huge boulder. He then started to chant a spell which he couldn't understand himself. The loose gravel on the boulder started falling off onto the ground and an opening was revealed. Lei Yu then went inside.

This place was no longer a labyrinth but a long tunnel. Lei Yu walked all the way to the end where spring water was whirling around on the wall which made it quite an attractive sight.

After gently taking a deep breath, Lei Yu took out a golden bowl from his storage ring. Using his powerful

internal energy to wrap around the spring water, he forced it to pour itself into the bowl.

At this time, Lei Yu suddenly saw that a series of lights were rapidly firing towards him from the wall. Then, he finally understood how he came to this era.

A clock was portrayed on the wall, a clock which shouldn't belong to this time period yet here it was.

A light coming from inside the clock wrapped around Lei Yu and a prompt appeared in his mind. Lei Yu chose the time to return to, then a blinding light suddenly flashed which lighted up the entire tunnel. Lei Yu's body instantly turned into a star and disappeared without a

trace.

Lei Yu made a lot of effort in order to open his eyes, and his surrounding suddenly became dark. When his sight was back, Lei Yu was once again back in the tunnel. But in his heart, it was clear that once he leave this place, there will no longer be the existence of Telephassa and Minotaur Linos, the bull headed fiendgod. Although he's not sure why Minotaur Linos, a fiendgod who could live thousands of years was not present in his current time period; but at least he got to know him. It could be considered that Lei Yu experienced a soul-stirring unique vacation.

Inside his heart, he still felt a tiny yearning for the beautiful Queen

Telephassa. But since Ai Er was outside patiently waiting for him all this time, Lei Yu couldn't wait to accelerate his pace to get out of here.

When he was about to exit this place, Lei Yu turned around to take one last look. The labyrinth should have been collapsed by him a thousand years ago, so why would it reform itself back when he first entered it? After blinking his eyes... he decided why should he continue thinking about it if he had no clue? Lei Yu quickly ran up the steps and the modern day's air drilled into his nostrils. He then took a deep breath.

“Child, you’ve finally come out!”

Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes since they were closed when he was taking a deep breath.. “Old madam! How... how... how come you are...” Lei Yu felt his brain wasn’t functioning properly. What he couldn’t understand was he thought that the old woman was trapped inside the labyrinth, so how could she appear outside now?

According to Lei Yu’s calculation, only five minutes passed after he went back into the labyrinth to look for her. The time he calculated should be absolutely correct.

“Brother Yu, how come it took you so long to come out? I was so anxious, if it wasn’t for the old madam stopping me, I would have gone in to find you.” Ai Er ran up

and hugged Lei Yu.

“Ai Er, how long have I been inside?” Lei Yu asked while blinking his eyes.

“A whole day and night! You told me that I shouldn’t go in to stay here and wait for you. How could you make us worry so much?!” Ai Er pouted, showing a super cute face.

Lei Yu held Ai Er in his arms tightly, he was not able to further repress his feelings. Two hot lips tightly affixed together as he fiercely kissed Ai Er. Naturally slipping his tongue inside her mouth and playing around a bit, Ai Er suddenly opened her eyes wide. But she went with the flow and was moaning shortly after.

The old woman smiled as she turned away. She silently said in her mind: “Looks like he experienced something unimaginable inside!”

-----

It's been more than ten days since the three of them have left Greece and returned to the United States. And it has been more than a month since they left the United States.. Right now Lei Yu was rushing towards the newly opened nightclub.

“Young master, you're finally back! I tried calling your phone but every time I tried it wasn't in service, but we've basically settled everything here and we are just waiting for you to make some final decisions.” Gray

Bear brought Lei Yu towards the end of the corridor into a private room. Inside the private room, there was a young man who was wearing a leather vest that revealed his bulky muscles sitting down. A cigarette was dangling from his mouth as he narrowed his eyes at the newcomer. Because Lei Yu went in first, he didn't see Gray Bear following behind so he asked in an indifferent tone: "What are you here for?"

"You impudent thing! Why aren't you greeting the young master?!" Gray Bear screamed out from behind, scaring the young man so much that he almost pissed his own pants. He had heard about the deeds of the young master countless times and was already



regarding Lei Yu as his idol. He never thought that the first time meeting his idol would make him leave behind a bad impression. He hurriedly stood up from the sofa but he was not quite sure on what to do next.

Lei Yu merely smiled: "Don't worry about it; your attitude is already quite decent for guarding the door so just do your best. If you continue to follow me, I, Lei Yu will guarantee that you won't suffer any losses!

"Thank you young master!" The young man bowed. Very few westerners would perform such a posture but the young man pulled it off quite smoothly.

According to Lei Yu, when Americans meet someone who was more superior than them, they would only slightly nod their head. Only sometimes when they were to ask a woman for a formal dance would the guy bow. So the gesture of bowing was rarely seen here.

Lei Yu smiled as he walked further into the room with Gray Bear behind him. The young man hurriedly pressed a button and without making any sound, a section of the wall, opened up revealing a doorway. Lei Yu then used the stairs to go to the second floor.

The place had been completely set up already. They went with a simple decorations yet the room still gave

off a feeling of wildness to it. On the four separate walls, mythical beasts were drawn: a black dragon, a white tiger, a phoenix, and a black tortoise. They looked so lifelike that it was as if these mythical beasts transformed into a painting.

At the highest point of the ceiling, several steel chains crisscrossed each other as a decoration piece. And in the center of the floor was the arena stage. The arena was not small; it was at least 100 square meters and it was surrounded by a metal cage. The arena gave a feeling like it was a place to tame fierce animals.

The second floor was like an indoor stadium, the step-like seating area had at least ten thousand seats.

Who knows if there will be that many spectators but at least there will not be any shortage of seats for them.

At the four corners of the arena stage, there were four thick steel columns which acted as support. On top of these steel columns there was something that looked like a small house with floor to ceiling windows and sofas inside. These were the VIP rooms where occupants would have the best view of arena.

# Chapter 146: Traffic Jam

Lei Yu nodded with satisfaction.

“Black Panther did a well thought out job. Oh, that’s right, where’s Black Panther? Where did he go?”

“Black Panther, he...”

“Young master!” Black Panther rushed over like an arrow. His speed was so quick that it caused a cleaning lady to fall on her ass with fright.

“Can you not mess around so much?” Lei Yu gave Black Panther a light punch in the chest as he jokingly lectured him.

“Young master, when did you return?”

“I’ve just arrived. You’ve managed to make this place look not too shabby. I see that there’s at least ten thousand seats in here... will there even be that many spectators? Having said that, have you realized that the entrance to this place is too small? Isn’t that a bit counterproductive?” Lei Yu asked as he scratched his head and looked around.

“Young master, did you know that Gray Bear and I ‘greeted’ some government officials? Per their agreement, no one will bother us and the police will only have one eye open and the other closed. The entrance you came through was

only for employees and not the actual entrance. The real entrance for our guests will be on the roof. I've also built a huge parking lot on the roof, enough for thousands of cars so there won't be any problems." Black Panther replied with a smile.

"No way?! Haven't you guys gone overboard with this?" Lei Yu was somewhat surprised.

Costs were one thing, but the most important factor was the income. Setting up a gambling ring had always been lucrative, so now there was even an admission surcharge on top of it. The soundproofing of this place was extremely good; even if more than ten thousand people were screaming at once, no one

outside would hear a thing. With all this combined, as long as there were people dreaming of getting rich, they would come to this place.

“There are so many private rooms on the first floor, isn’t it too much? Didn’t we talk about not changing the first floor at all? Besides, in a short one month period, you guys were able to completely transform this place! Too impressive!” Lei Yu could not help but exclaim from surprise.

“Young master, the first floor was originally a dance floor for over ten thousand people, but the guests don’t need that much space. It’s good enough to give those youths a portion of the space to jump around already. Now the roles of the



private rooms have to do with the televisions inside. It's a direct live stream of the fights going on on the second floor. Occupants can even participate in betting, which would help us utilize the efficiency of the rooms. I've calculated that we've spent about \$500 million U.S. dollars. If the business isn't too bad, the capital expenditure will be returned in under half a year and our business will continue raking in money from then on!"

Lei Yu was completely shocked. The figures calculated would make anyone shocked. Able to earn \$500 million U.S. dollars in half a year?! What kind business of would be able to do that? Needless to say, the gambling industry was too profitable.

Lei Yu wasn't too clear on the whole scope of the business. Since he gave them full authority to take care of this, Lei Yu could just dust his hands off and walk away without asking further questions. He wasn't worried that Black Panther would manipulate the financials since it wasn't good to suspect the people you work closely with. The only thing he was worried about was the participating fighters.

"Were you able to find any fighters to participate?" Lei Yu asked.

Black Panther nodded and said: "During the early stages of our business, we can't have fighters that exceed ordinary people fight because it'll cause the audience to

go insane. We will slowly add them to the lineup to attract more spectators. Within fifty kilometers of us, I've contacted several Wardens and expended many 'benefits' to them. They've agreed to give us death row inmates (not caring about their life or death) as regular fighters participating in the competition. As for the special fighter category, Hu Jiong was responsible for that so I'm not too clear on how that's working out."

Lei Yu smiled, "You've done a pretty good job! You've only just arrived in the U.S. for a short time and yet you've accomplished so much... not bad at all!"

Being praised by Lei Yu made Black Panther's heart burst with delight.

You could say he felt happier being praised than if he were to earn a few hundred million dollars.

Bringing Ai Er along, they opened up a private room in the nightclub. Lei Yu normally didn't drink, but tonight he made an exception and had a couple of extra shots. There was quite a crowd tonight including: Black Panther, Gray Bear, Hu Jiong, and Hu Xin Er that had just flown over from Tenglong country. There was also Bianca and Ai Er's two close friends Mona and Kelly.

"Wow! Ai Er, I didn't expect your boyfriend to have so much money and open such a super-sized nightclub. With such a simple and cool name like 'Ray', I like it!" Mona

seemed quite happy as she swayed her body to the rhythm of the music playing. Ai Er, Kelly, and Hu Xin Er, who had been silent the whole time, were all currently sitting together.

Lei Yu and a few others were sitting on the other side of the sofa, including Bianca. They were all discussing something of great importance.

“Bianca, what’s going on with Dr. Tony’s side? Have they made any movements?” Lei Yu asked.

Bianca shook her head. “Nothing’s going on right now. I really don’t know who interfered, but Dr. Tony and his people did not mention anything about you anymore. I believe that some hidden powerful

organization said something, or else with Dr. Tony's personality, he would certainly not let you off so easily."

Lei Yu has been trying to figure out this matter for a long time now, but still couldn't think of who would help him like this. Before going to Greece, he had a slight feeling that it could be Mr. Hawes from the Burlinder family, but gave up on that thought because he thought Mr. Hawes's family should only be involved in regular businesses. After being together with the old woman and the things she knew, Lei Yu once again changed his thoughts and believed the Burlinder family may actually have the necessary influence!

Of course Lei Yu would not say this out loud and merely smiled and shook his head like he had no clue. “Ancient Moon, how are things going on your end?”

“With my original contacts and some of the bounty hunters, we have a total of eight people willing to join us and participate in the competitions. The thing is, there’s only two that are willing to cooperate with us full-time, while the other six will remain working for the Bounty Hunter’s Guild and will only join us at night. In regards to the two joining full-time, one is called Tony and the other is called Bruce. It will cost us \$30,000 U.S. dollars for each competition they participate in while for the other six, it will cost us \$10,000 U.S.

dollars.” Replied Hu Jiong.

“Ok. You guys will be taking care of the whole operation. If it gets too tiring, just hire more people. I’m not too business savvy, but one thing I do know is that money makes the world go round. As long as we have money, anything is possible.”

Everyone nodded in agreement and showed they would be able to take care of everything for now.

-----

On the night of a full moon, a shadow of a human was seen on a mound by the east river of New York City. His body gradually transformed...



“Ooowwww!”

A wolf’s miserable howl that could chill the depths of one’s heart, rang out throughout the heavens and the earth.

The next morning, everyone went about with their own busy schedule. Lei Yu looked over the list of participants for the matches that Black Panther had submitted to him. Their first match was scheduled for this evening, so the long-awaited crowds were notified through various means and channels.

With nothing else to do during the day, Lei Yu took Ai Er shopping in his car. On a street named J Road, the encountered a traffic jam. Since

they weren't doing anything important, Lei Yu naturally didn't worry too much and waited patiently.

Opening the car windows, Lei Yu heard the crowd chatting with each other and found out that there had been a murder up front. Not caring too much, they only had to wait for police to finish dealing with it, but who knew when they would finally open up the street.

After about half an hour later, you could hear the sound of cars honking left and right, but the front was still blocked.

“Ai Er, wait for me while I go see what's going on.” Lei Yu opened the car door and walked towards the

crowd.

Squeezing through the crowd, Lei Yu was completely shocked when he arrived at the scene. In the middle of two intersecting roads, a black Toyota was stopped there. The windshield in front of the driver's seat had a hole the diameter of an arm. In the driver's position sat an Asian man, whose heart was completely gone. All you could see was a bloody hole that had dyed the surrounding ground in red.

Naturally, the mere scene of a murder was not possible to make Lei Yu shocked. The fact that the victim inside the car was Asian would only make him slightly surprised. The main reason was

because Lei Yu recognized the person inside the car; this was the person he had been chasing from the Kou country all the way to New York City – Hasegawa!

# Chapter 147:

## Seeking Vengeance

Several police officers were seen photographing the murder scene. Hasegawa was then lifted out of the car and placed inside a white body bag. Yellow caution tape was being used to cordon off certain areas and the crowd was dispersed by police.

Lei Yu turned around and returned to his car. Ai Er could tell that something was wrong from Lei Yu's expression so she asked: "What's going on? What happened up front?"

Lei Yu gently exhaled, "A murder took place up front, let's head back

first.”

Using the sidewalk to help make a U-turn, the two returned to their hotel.

“Hey Bianca? If you’re free, come by the hotel later because something important happened.”

After hanging up, Lei Yu lay back down on the sofa and let out a long sigh. Hasegawa was actually dead... with his strength of an Ultimate Ninja, who would have the ability to kill him?

Lei Yu thought back to what he had just witnessed. From the signs of the windshield, Lei Yu was certain the killer was a super expert. It was pretty clear that a direct punch was

used to kill Hasegawa. Apart from the hole in the glass, there weren't even signs of cracks around it. From that, he could see how fast the punch was, probably even faster than a bullet.

After tracking his whereabouts for so long and thinking how hard it would be to get rid of Hasegawa, he had started developing his own force in the U.S. Who would expect in one night, the person he hated the most would mysteriously die like that? Lei Yu was very curious who this killer was.

Lei Yu hugged Ai Er as he waited for Bianca to arrive.

Half an hour later, someone knocked on their hotel room door.

Lei Yu personally went to get it.

“You should know what happened, right?”

“Hasegawa is dead.” Bianca apparently already knew about this.

“Right, do you know who the killer is?” Lei Yu asked.

Bianca shook her head. “This was something even Dr. Tony couldn’t figure out. I also received news from other sources that at least seven other mutants died yesterday.”

Lei Yu then asked in surprise: “What’s going on? Could it be bounty hunters? They wouldn’t be capable of killing Hasegawa as well right?”



“Nope, this was definitely not perpetrated by bounty hunters because last night’s mission list didn’t contain the names of any of the mutants that were killed. Those mutants were directly controlled by Dr. Tony, so there’s no way they would be targets.”

“Then what on earth is going on?”

“According to my analysis, I believe it should be the deed of a...  
Werewolf!”

“A Werewolf?! How...”

“Last night, there was a full moon, which to Werewolves means that their blood would revert them to their original forms. If my guess is correct, last night was the time the

Werewolves initiated a large scale assassination. Because Dr. Tony has been linked with the Vatican; and he acquired the assistance of bounty hunters to help the Vatican hunt down Werewolves and Vampires; I believe this was their counterattack.” Bianca analyzed.

“Then why didn’t the Werewolves directly kill the bounty hunters that attacked their brethren instead of killing those mutants? There’s no need to kill Hasegawa right?” It’s not that Lei Yu didn’t want these people to die; he just felt that this situation was too strange.

“My analysis is not definitive, but the way Hasegawa died is similar to the modus operandi (M.O) of a Werewolf; a quick strike and the

heart is dug out of the victim,  
resulting in their immediate death.”

Lei Yu nodded. It appeared that the seriousness of this matter had gone beyond the scope of his imagination. This was fine as well since he could watch them fight each other. This saved him a lot of trouble and he could just watch from the sidelines.

Night time. The first night of the competition truly made Lei Yu shocked. The hundred or so private rooms on the first floor had been fully booked without a single vacant room. Since the occupants were equivalent to watching the fights live, Black Panther had made some changes where the lowest cost of one of the rooms was \$500 U.S.

dollars, but that was still nothing compared to the second floor.

Around half of the ten thousand plus seats on the second floor were occupied, each seat costing \$100 U.S. dollars.

The competition was extremely fierce. Everyone involved in the stakes were screaming like crazy. Looking at the two participants in the arena covered in blood somehow aroused the excitement and evils of the human heart.

After the competition, Lei Yu and Black Panther approached the staff that handled the financial calculations. Deducting all their expenses, and merely counting the alcohol and admission tickets, they made a net profit of \$1.3 million

U.S. dollars tonight.

To wealthy people, this kind of money was probably nothing much, but if they were to know that this money was the net profit of one night, in a nightclub with merely 2500 square meters, then they would certainly be hysterical.

But this was still petty cash. The real big fish was with Gray Bear, who was responsible for the gambling aspect. From the odds, the favorite guy had a payout of 1:3, while the unsuspecting underdog had a payout of 1:7. With this kind of probability, they didn't have to fix the fight and Gray Bear's side took in \$14 million U.S. dollars.

Lei Yu suddenly felt that the money

in this world was really made out of paper.

Perhaps this was like the saying that when you're determined to grow some flowers, they won't bud, but when you casually plant them, they will grow in abundance. Lei Yu had never thought about how much he could earn because money was never important to him, satisfying his needs was good enough. Yet he never thought that he would actually make so much.

"You two are too capable!" Lei Yu patted their shoulders and the two were so happy that they didn't know what to say.

This was hardest on the little staff members who dealt with the

money, each of them were beyond busy. They had to separate the cash according to their denominations, then put them in stacks and finally pack them into metal boxes.

The next morning, an armored truck arrived at the front door of the nightclub. Under the protection of Black Panther and the others, they loaded the cash into the armored vehicle. The drivers of the truck didn't dare to ask the origin of the money. Even when it arrived at the bank, no one would ask because their superiors had already instructed them that this wasn't something they were qualified to interfere with.

Black Panther then went to the bank and made a series of

transactions. Six million U.S. dollars was withdrawn to create six separate bank accounts. Six bank cards were then issued, each having access to a million dollars.

When someone does something for you, then you would need money to seal their mouths. This, of course, was a necessary requirement, but only a day's income and they could seal the mouths of these greedy government officials for a whole year, definitely worth it!

The competitions did not occur every day, but once a week. If there were daily competitions, then Lei Yu would become tired of earning so much money. After discussing with Black Panther, they decided to have matches between those that



had abilities beyond an ordinary person's a month later. For the time being, having death row inmates fighting each other was good enough.

But there was one thing that didn't stop, there had been deaths every single night for the past few days, and the way these victims died was truly horrific, to the point where Lei Yu started paying attention to them.

Bianca and Lei Yu were discussing something inside one of the private rooms of the nightclub.

"These past few days, several mutants had become murder victims. Even a priest was killed, so these events are catching the attention of the public. According

to my observations; Werewolves aren't the only ones making a move now. The Vampires seem to be seeking their vengeance as well!" Bianca's voice sounded somewhat excited.

"Isn't this whole situation a bit weird? Then again, this isn't something I'm going to involve myself in. Since they want to kill each other, what does that have to do with me?" Lei Yu showed a face that this had nothing to do with him, but deep inside he was actually quite shocked. Bianca said that most of the mutants that died had the strength of a Third Rank Mutant. Then how strong are the murderers that killed them?

# Chapter 148:

## Uninvited Guests

During the time when no one noticed, a few uninvited guests arrived at the nightclub. There was nothing unusual with their seemingly ordinary attire, but the eyes of these people showed their arrogant attitude. This arrogance wasn't forced, but it seemed like they were born with it.

Lei Yu chatted with Bianca for about an hour before the two came out of the private room. At this time, the nightclub was already full of people. Just one night of the first floor's business and their income had already exceed a million

dollars. Lei Yu was almost to the point of being numb when it came to money and was now indifferent to making it. The most important thing that he was looking to was retaining some experts in the latter part of the competitions.

Hasegawa's death didn't mean much, only that some super strong people have entered New York City, a place that had originally been peaceful and quiet. On the other hand, Dr. Tony's forces couldn't be overlooked. Even though the number of mutants killed wasn't small in number, it still wouldn't damage his foundation. Also, Lei Yu never believed that Dr. Tony would stop creating trouble for himself. In addition to this, Mr. Hawes and the old woman that helped him behind

the scenes, what their true identities were was still a mystery. He couldn't rely on others, but only himself at this point.

After returning to the modern era, Lei Yu's detection ability that had disappeared in ancient Greece, had returned. Relying on his own body's lightning ability and the magnetic resonance field, he could easily detect the strength of people, even if they were a level higher than him. So when he encountered dangerous situations, it would be extremely useful since he would at least know whether or not he could handle his opponent.

Heading towards him were five people dressed all in black. Each of their faces gave off a dark

atmosphere. Lei Yu couldn't help paying attention to them and thinking to himself: "What are these people here for?"

Lei Yu sent out a probe and realized that of the people across from him, three had the strength of a Third Order Warrior, one of them was a Fourth Order Warrior, and the last one a Fifth Order Warrior. But there was no life essence emanating from their bodies, as if they were something cloaked in human skin walking around at night. From this, Lei Yu concluded these people in front of him were the so-called Vampires from Europe. According to their ranks, there were three Marquis, a Duke, and a Lord. What were these non-human monsters planning to do here?

Lei Yu pretended as if he didn't notice anything out of the ordinary and walked past them. He was planning to observe what these people were up to.

Pulling Bianca to a corner by the front entrance, he said: "You should go back first, there's something I have to deal with inside."

After Bianca left, Lei Yu went up to the bar and grabbed a drink. He then calmly followed the five Vampires down the corridor and towards where the private rooms were located. The five then stopped in front of a particular room. Lei Yu extended his senses and realized Gray Bear was inside that private room, currently chatting and drinking with some regular

customers. Lei Yu's brow wrinkled up, "What are these guys planning to do?"

Opening the door, the five went inside. "Are you the one in charge here?" Asked the Vampire Lord looking at Gray Bear, who was in the process of downing some alcohol.

"Is there something you guys need?" Gray Bear asked. All the others who were happily drinking also stopped and looked up.

"I want to meet with your boss."

Gray Bear's eyebrow twitched, "Do you think our boss is someone you can meet with so easily?"

"You piece of shit!" A young looking



Marquis behind the Lord cursed.  
“Do you know who you’re talking to? Mere mutant trash like you dares to speak to our Lord with such a tone? You must have a death wish!”

Outside the room, Lei Yu’s mouth formed into a sneer. It looks like his deduction was correct; these guys were indeed Vampires. Based on various sources, Lei Yu learned of the various ranks of these vampires. Starting from low to high, they were: Viscount, Count, Marquis, Duke, Lord, and Prince, but amongst the Vampires, there was a supreme existence that was extremely mysterious and never showed him or herself. This existence had already surpassed the Prince rank in strength, becoming a super-

strong expert known as a Blood Emperor.

Gray Bear suddenly stood up from the sofa and then pointed at the young guy and cursed: “You dog bastard! You dare to run wild in our young master’s territory?! I’d really like to know who doesn’t know the meaning of death!” Slamming the wine bottle onto the ground, Gray Bear’s temper was originally quite violent. Apart from Lei Yu and his fellow teammates, he looked down on pretty much everyone else.

The young Marquis was restless, ready to give Gray Bear a little lesson. Those sitting around Gray Bear were ordinary people, so after seeing the Marquis’s aggressive posture, they didn’t say anything

and started shuffling aside to the corner of the sofa.

“We’re here to discuss something and not to cause trouble!” The Vampire Lord coldly scolded the Marquis behind him. He then forced a smile, “Can you help us out a bit? We really do have something important to discuss with your boss.”

Gray Bear coldly humphed, but since the others had lowered their tone and acted courteously, Gray Bear couldn’t keep pushing it. “I will mention this to the young master, but I can’t guarantee that he will see you guys. You should come back tomorrow.”

“Excuse us while we take our leave.”

The Vampire Lord turned around and left first. Those behind him all gave Gray Bear an evil look, but due to the presence of their Lord, they didn't dare to say anything and followed in leaving.

Lei Yu's body was extremely quick. Just as the Vampires opened the door to leave, he was already ten meters away from the door. Coincidentally, there was a drunken girl there, so Lei Yu grabbed her waist and pretended to be concerned about her condition.

The Vampires didn't notice anything out of place as they left in a hurry.

Right at that moment, the door of the private room where Lei Yu and

the girl stood, opened. A big heavy set guy came out wearing a doo-rag. His unbuttoned shirt revealed his fat body, his blonde chest hair sparsely filling his chest, and his unhappy facial expression stared at Lei Yu.

“Get your filthy hands off her! Don’t you know that you’re touching the girl of I, your father?”

Lei Yu blinked a few times before loosening his arms around the girl. Since the girl was too drunk, once Lei Yu let go, she immediately fell to the ground.

Her four limbs spread eagle, the miniskirt she was wearing suddenly revealed her spring of happiness. Lei Yu took one glance and

immediately turned away, intending to leave.

“Stop right there!” The burly guy shouted. “You want to leave after taking advantage of her? Pay up, or else my brothers inside will teach you a lesson!”

Lei Yu was somewhat helpless.

“Money? I don’t care about the money, but if I do give it to you, that would mean I admit to taking advantage of your girl.”

“Do you know who I, your father, am? Do you know who opened this place? You dare to act wildly in the young master’s territory? You really think that I, your father am someone to be messed with?” The burly guy cursed.

Lei Yu frowned before instantly appearing next to the burly guy. With a roundhouse slap, a crisp “pak” sound was heard. The burly guy could only feel his world spinning before Lei Yu coldly said: “Stop saying your father this and you father that. You can’t even handle the meaning behind those words!”

About ten seconds later, the burly guy finally recovered from his dizziness and was about to let out a string of curses. At this time, Gray Bear happened to come out of his private room and noticed the disturbance. He hurriedly rushed over to Lei Yu and gave a respectful bow before asking: “Young master, what’s going on? Did something happen?”

“Brother Bear, this punk dared to...” Before the burly guy finished his sentence, he finally realized how Gray Bear had greeted the person in front of him. His eyes bulged out of his head as he cautiously asked: “He... he... he’s the young master?!”

“What did you just say?!” Gray Bear glared at the burly guy. “You dare to call the young master a punk? Do you want to die or something?”

“Ahh! Ahh, I’m so sorry, oh, young master! I really didn’t know! A big person has a magnanimous heart! You shouldn’t bother yourself with a lowly person like myself!” The large guy was now shaking with fear. With a “plop,” he kneeled on the ground. “It was entirely my fault; I really didn’t know you were



the young master!”

“I already told you that you can’t handle the meaning behind your words.” Lei Yu helplessly shook his head, as if he was going to bother with an ignorant fellow like him.

The burly guy let out a long sigh of relief. Seeing that his girl was still on the ground in a rather compromising position, he raised his head with a perverted smile on his face. “Young master, if you like this girl, would you like her to serve you tonight? This girl’s methods in bed are first class!”

“F\*ck off!” Lei Yu blurted out in Tenglong language before changing back to English and shouting:  
“Don’t f\*cken ruin I, your father’s,

reputation!”

Gray Bear’s mouth was agape on the side and it took a while before he then said: “Young master, do you know how many girls in this place want to sleep with you? Why bother with this one? Let’s go to the private room in the back; you can have as many as you want.”

Lei Yu formed a fist and rapped it on Gray Bear’s head. “You bastard, stop spouting nonsense!”

“Ouch young master!” If someone were to hit him, it wouldn’t hurt at all because his skin was rough and his muscles were thick, but Lei Yu was different since what sort of level figure was he? With a toothy grin, “Young master, I was wrong! It

was all my fault!”

“Tell this guy to take his girl and get out of here, I don’t want to see him again!” Lei Yu then turned around and said: “After that, come to the back room by the arena stairs entrance. I have something to talk about with you.”

Lei Yu left right away towards the room by the stairs to the second floor arena. Gray Bear was still rubbing his head and glared at the large guy, “Hurry up and get lost! Do you really think that the young master is that kind of person? Don’t let the young master see you again or else you’ll get a beating each time!” After saying that, he quickly chased after Lei Yu’s departing figure.

A youth noticed Lei Yu and Gray Bear enter and after seeing Gray Bear's eye movement, the youth left so the two could speak alone.

"I already know what happened, so if they come tomorrow; just tell them I will meet with them. But not here in case something happens or else wouldn't we wreck this place?" Lei Yu straightforwardly said.

"Young master, you already know?" He then realized why Lei Yu was nearby and encountered that situation. Gray Bear then asked: "But who were those people? And what's up with that so called Lord?"

"You should know that these past few days, mutants have been murdered right?"

Gray Bear nodded, "I've heard about it from Black Panther."

"They're the ones involved, but it was perpetrated by a separate group. I know they are quite strong because the person behind them was able to kill Hasegawa. Since they want to chat with me, I believe they won't cause too much of a disturbance and just want to cooperate with me. Tell them to come to 36 Broadway tomorrow night and I'll wait for them there. I will make arrangements after tomorrow night so don't mention this to anyone else, understand?"

"Understood, young master."

Lei Yu nodded and left, driving back to his hotel.

# Chapter 149: Don't Keep Me Guessing

Ai Er wasn't able to handle it anymore and fell asleep. Lei Yu carried her to the bed before returning to the living room. This had now become a habit as he started taking off his clothes.

Breathing in and out a few times, Lei Yu focused his will. According to the cultivation methods imprinted into his mind, he circulated his internal energy through the predetermined paths of his meridians.

After circulating his internal energy for one cycle, Lei Yu opened his

eyes. “Wanting to improve is really not an easy thing.”

Shaking his head, Lei Yu re-entered his trance. This time, he was going to experience the vastness of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique. Half an hour later, Lei Yu was able to grasp something. Flashing stars started to appear in his mind, and each star had different degrees of darkness that covered the vast universe.

With breakneck speed, Lei Yu was able to find the position of the Thirty-six Lunar Stars. Based on his understanding, the connecting paths of the Thirty-six Lunar Stars would be how his internal energy was to circulate inside his body from now on. After returning to the

modern era, this was the first time Lei Yu was going to experience cultivating this technique. Inside his Sea of Energy, he unraveled the energy with starry lights from his own purple energy.

Gathering energy was very important when releasing attacks, and the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique happened to be designed to concentrate one's power at a single point. Lei Yu could clearly feel that the power unleashed would be extremely strong.

Although he had just touched the surface of the technique, Lei Yu's strong foundation would allow him to master all the moves in a very short time. With this technique, it would greatly help him when dealing with future enemies.



Within the Thirty-six Lunar Star mantra, Lei Yu could only understand a portion of it. A single Lunar Star was able to release a single attack at its limit. While every six stars was considered a group. These six stars could be combined together to release a set of combination attacks. It was only after that would it release something unimaginably strong and unblockable.

However, this still was not the most powerful attack... The first set of six stars was naturally inferior to the second set, pretty much by a full grade of difference. The second set of stars were then inferior to the third set and so on. Once you've mastered the essentials of the six sets of the six Lunar Stars, this

meant you had now fully mastered the Thirty-six Lunar Star Technique and are capable of unleashing its maximum power. Combining the full collection of the thirty-six Lunar Stars would result in a powerful attack of armageddon proportions! Of course, this took time to gradually master and required someone capable enough to even comprehend its mystery. Even though Minotaur Linos had taught Lei Yu the entire thirty-six forms of the technique, he himself had only mastered a little bit more than half of it and was unable to unleash its full power. When Minotaur Linos was on the battlefield against General William, the move he executed was merely the tip of the iceberg.

Lei Yu was only capable of grasping three stars for now. Lei Yu understood one principle after cultivating this long: haste does not always bring success. Wanting to have a solid foundation in a martial technique requires one to move gradually one step at a time. There are no shortcuts in life unless you encountered some miraculous stroke of luck, such as an extraordinary encounter or some precious treasure. Otherwise, working hard at cultivating would be the key.

Nearing noon, Lei Yu stretched his body. Since he was cultivating a martial technique, he had to use at least 50% more time than usual. It looked like he would have to spend more time on this in the future

since it's only natural if one wanted to be an expert, they would have to expend more effort than others.

Ai Er had already went out and brought back some delicious smelling pizza. The two just stayed indoors to eat their casual meal.

Recently, Gray Bear had been the manager of the nightclub. Black Panther rarely showed up there because he was dealing with a more important issue – Ai Er's safety. Lei Yu would not necessarily leave her side, but when he did have to, bringing Ai Er along would not be realistic. That's why Black Panther continued playing his role as a bodyguard like he used to be, back in the Kou country.

Unless Ai Er was together with Lei Yu, Black Panther would be protecting her from not too far away. In Lei Yu's eyes, Ai Er's safety was more important than his own life. He didn't want to lose anyone close to him ever again.

Sure enough, that evening, five people once again came to the nightclub. According to Lei Yu's instructions, Gray Bear passed on the address to those guys. The five then left the nightclub and drove to 36 Broadway. The address location was a small and inconspicuous bar. There were very few people inside and apart from the waiter, and a dozen or so guests drinking and chatting. The bar was playing some mellow music, and Lei Yu was sitting alone at the bar on a high

stool, sipping a glass of red wine.

Seeing the five people enter, Lei Yu turned around and smiled. "I've been anticipating your arrival for quite a while."

"You are Mr. Lei Yu? Your reputation precedes you! I've been hearing your big name quite a lot recently!" The Vampire, who was identified as the Lord from last night, came over with a smile and extended his right hand. The four behind him hurriedly rushed forward to catch up to their Lord.

Lei Yu didn't make any move to shake his hand and merely lightly smiled. "I'm curious to know why you guys are looking for me."

The Lord suddenly felt a bit awkward, but did not say anything. He directly sat down next to Lei Yu and spoke to the barkeeper: “Tonight I’m reserving the entire premise so kick everyone else out!”

The barkeeper was slightly surprised. The business in this place had only been so-so and could barely maintain itself. There had never been a time that someone would reserve the entire premise. Today the sun must have risen from the west! If the boss knew about this, he would certainly gain some rewards from this. The barkeeper quickly came out from the bar and said: “Sir, just wait a moment and I will clear this place out for you.”

The dozen or so guests grumbled as

they left the bar. For someone that could reserve the whole place, they either had a ton of money, or had some type of authority so they didn't dare say anything out loud.

The Lord dumped a stack of hundred dollar bills on the bar counter, a full \$20,000 U.S. dollars. This tiny bar couldn't even earn this amount in a whole month, causing the barkeeper to beam with happiness. He quickly ushered the rest of the staff towards the back for employees use so these guests could speak privately.

“Mr. Lei Yu, I am Lucas from the Kamenno family. You can directly call me by my name.”

Lei Yu nodded with a lukewarm



expression, making Lucas once again feel slightly awkward. The arrogant Marquis from last night then opened his mouth and said: “Don’t fail to appreciate our kindness!” [1]

Lei Yu slightly frowned. “Is this how you teach your men?”

“I’m sorry Mr. Lei Yu. My men are inexperienced, so I hope you won’t mind their manners.” Lucas smiled.

Lei Yu sneered. “I don’t mind... but while you, a Lord is speaking and your men dares to interrupt you, that means your status means nothing much to them. Why don’t you have someone with more weight come talk to me? If you want my cooperation, you should at

least bring out some sincerity. Otherwise, there's no use for us to continue!"

After leaving these words, Lei Yu got up from the stool and was about to leave. Lucas did not have enough time to respond when the young Marquis directly placed his hand on Lei Yu's shoulder. "Aren't you thinking too highly of yourself?"

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes, "Get your hands off me!"

"I don't feel like it, what are you going to do about it?" The young Marquis arrogantly replied, wholly believing how noble and powerful his Kamenno family was.

Lei Yu shook his head, "Then I

apologize in advance for doing this.”

Quickly circulating his internal energy to his shoulder area, and a powerful and irresistible suction force firmly adhered the young Marquis’s hand to Lei Yu. Shortly after that, the horrifying power of lightning then crazily struck out at him.

The Marquis didn’t even have the strength to cry out and could only feel his body become weak before falling over onto the ground twitching. The Vampires around were all stunned beyond belief. They’d heard from their upper ranks that Lei Yu was a formidable character, but they never thought that without even moving a hand,

he was able to easily render a Marquis incapable of retaliating. What kind of strength was needed to accomplish this? A Prince rank?

At this point, Lucas realized that he really did not carry enough weight to deal with this matter, but there was one thing he couldn't figure out; how did Lei Yu know he was here to gain his cooperation? Ignoring his underling that was still twitching on the ground, he politely stood up. "Mr. Lei Yu, how did you know that we were looking to cooperate with you?"

"Do I even need to answer that? Since you know my name, that means you've investigated my background. Would it be possible that you didn't know about the

affairs between Hasegawa and myself? I know that even though it wasn't your clansmen that killed him, you guys and the Werewolves are on the same side. Your group killed Hasegawa and are so polite towards me, then isn't it for the sake of my assistance?"

Lucas clapped and said: "Mr. Lei Yu is truly formidable to be able to deduce everything. You have my admiration!"

"As I've said before, show some sincerity or else there's nothing further for us to talk about!" Lei Yu was about to leave when Lucas's next words stopped him in his tracks.

"Mr. Lei Yu, I'm pretty sure you

would like to know what hidden identity the Burlinder family possesses right?”

Lei Yu suddenly turned around,  
“You know the truth?”

“Of course I know!” Seeing that Lei Yu was interested, Lucas once again sat back down.

“Don’t you guys want me to stay? So don’t keep me guessing! I can get rid of you five with the slightest of effort, so you aren’t qualified to put up such a face in front of me!” Lei Yu coldly said.

-----

[1] The context of this idiom is similar to: “You should know what’s good for you so don’t screw with us

while we are still treating you  
nicely.”

# Chapter 150: Put On A Show

Hearing this, the Marquis on the floor and the rest of them turned their gazes towards Lucas. They didn't doubt Lei Yu's words since he previously defeated the Marquis without even moving his hands. Even combining the strength of the other Counts and the Lord, they suspected Lei Yu was fully capable of easily disposing of them all.

Lucas never thought Lei Yu would be such a tough nail. He swallowed hard before getting up in a hurry. "I apologize profusely Mr. Lei Yu. Mr. Hawes from the Burlinder family has the rank of a Bishop in the



Vatican. His mother is someone that serves the Prophet of the Vatican. At first, our Dark Council used various methods to trap his mother in the Kou country, but our plans were foiled when you sent her back to the U.S. Originally our Dark Council saw you as the enemy, but since you've eradicated the Yamaguchi-gumi, you are now viewed as more of an ally."

Lei Yu's heart was beyond shocked. He had never expected that Mr. Hawes would be a person of the Vatican while the old woman served their Prophet. No wonder they knew so much about everything.

"Who is the Prophet of the Vatican?" Lei Yu asked.

“Kalchas.”

“What?!” Lei Yu was shocked. How could Kalchas still be alive? Was he some sort of old evil spirit? Then... then... what about Telephassa?

“But Kalchas has already died.”

Lei Yu finally sighed in relief, thinking he might be a bit too sensitive over this, but what’s so special about a person that serves a Prophet that’s already dead? Perhaps Lei Yu had to ask about this himself.

Lei Yu now understood why Dr. Tony would suddenly abandon his attempts at killing him. Mr. Hawes had intervened in this matter and his rank was that of a Bishop. A

Parish Priest or a Pastor may be in charge of a large church, but a Bishop would be in charge of a certain district of Churches. Dr. Tony and the Vatican had a close working relationship and since they made a statement on it, it was natural that he wouldn't dare to ignore it. One must know that no matter how big and strong Dr. Tony's organization was, they were only seeking their own death if they went against the Vatican.

"I want to know what you'd like my assistance with." Lei Yu asked.

"You only need to help us find Dr. Tony's hideout and we will find a way to get rid of him." Lucas replied.

“You guys can find the mutants that Dr. Tony has spread all over the city, but cannot find him? Isn’t he a mutant as well? Also you guys were able to pinpoint Hasegawa’s location while he was driving... yet you can’t find Dr. Tony. Don’t you feel this is a bit too ironic...?”

“I will consider the possibility of our cooperation. After I think things through, that will be the time for us to discuss the conditions. I will give you guys an answer in a month’s time, farewell for now.” Lei Yu turned and left. At least he had now gained knowledge of Mr. Hawes’s true identity.

Lei Yu didn’t want to immediately agree with cooperating with Lucas in haste. In his heart, he essentially

didn't want to associate with the people of the Dark Council. Once he made an agreement, he would probably be linked to them from then on and wouldn't be able to extricate himself in the future. Lei Yu definitely wanted to gain some advantages out of this situation, but he didn't really want to get too close to either opposing group.

Lei Yu didn't know what matters the Dark Council was involved in, but one thing he was certain of was that this group of people, who lurked in the darkness, didn't care for human beings. He considered these Dark Council members beneath even mutants so how could he cooperate with them?

As for the Vatican, Lei Yu wasn't

too interested in this huge organization that had followers throughout the entire world. He was already disgusted with them since they worked together with Dr. Tony. If the Vatican were to show up and discuss terms of cooperation, Lei Yu would also not agree with them. He had to maintain an attitude of not declaring himself attached to any powerful organization or offending anyone of them. Since he has just established himself in the U.S., it would do him no good to offend either one, so it was best for him to take the stance of wait and see.

Inside the hotel. Black Panther, Gray Bear, and Hu Jiong had been gathered by Lei Yu. Ai Er was also here but she sat to the side, not

participating. Lei Yu looked at those gathered and said: "We have to speed up our plans because a show is about to start in the U.S., and those that remain will be considered the truly strong. We don't have to participate, but we must survive it!"

Black Panther nodded. "There will be a match tomorrow night. After that, how about we advance our original plans?"

"That sounds good. Go ahead and arrange for the bounty hunters to step onto the stage. From now on, our matches will allow mutants to participate as well. As long as they aren't being controlled by Dr. Tony, we will accept them all."

“Understood.”

That night. Lei Yu saw a familiar face arriving at the nightclub – Mr. Hawes. Inside a black car was also an old woman, who was precisely Mr. Hawes’s mother. Lei Yu gently exhaled before smiling and greeting them: “Welcome Mr. Hawes and old madam!”

“Lei Yu, you’ve really surprised me. You are actually capable of owning such a nightclub in New York City? It’s really too shocking!” Mr. Hawes’s face was filled with praise as he looked at the huge building in front of him.

“You flatter me too much Mr. Hawes, please come in!”



The receptionist in the lobby was smart enough to organize a special private room. As Lei Yu and them went inside, the room didn't have any loud music playing or any sexy ladies standing by to serve them. There was only Lei Yu, Mr. Hawes, and the old woman.

Ever since he found out Mr. Hawes and the old woman belonged to the Vatican, Lei Yu had felt awkward dealing with them. At first, the family treated him quite well, so he didn't think this was all just a trap that he fell into. It looked like only after experiencing the labyrinth did all the pieces of the puzzles reveal itself.

“What's the reason that Mr. Hawes and the old madam would come to

visit me? It isn't just for us to reminisce right?" Lei Yu faintly asked as he poured some of their finest red wine their club had.

Those two never thought Lei Yu would treat them so cold and distant, completely catching them off guard. It looks like things had progressed to a point where just a few words would not be able to explain their story clearly.

"Lei Yu, the reason why we're here is to talk about the things that happened when you went to Greece with my mother." Hawes politely smiled as he received the glass of wine.

Lei Yu silently said to himself: "I knew you guys were here for that."

Lei Yu understood in his heart that even if Mr. Hawes didn't care about what transpired in the labyrinth, what about the old woman? Could she not want to know what he had experienced inside there? Or what he attained? This would be illogical; therefore it's time that things came to light.

Lei Yu casual took a sip of his red wine. "I want to know your true identities first."

Hawes and the old woman looked at each other. They could truly feel that Lei Yu's attitude towards them was completely different from before. Could it be that he found out something about them? The old woman hurriedly said: "Child, you need to understand that we do not

have any malice towards you. Otherwise, why would I trust you to the point of bringing you along to Greece and revealing one of our deepest secrets?”

“Oh really?” Lei Yu’s eyebrow was slightly raised. “Perhaps the great Bishop was being cautious since he knew nothing about the labyrinth. Or else with his enormous strength, he could easily go inside the labyrinth and discover everything he wanted to know. Instead, why use me as cannon fodder?”

“This...” The old woman was suddenly speechless. Lei Yu had realized what was going on once he found out the true identities of Mr. Hawes and his family. Hawes and the old woman were well aware that

Lei Yu's appearance was merely a chess piece under their control. The Bishop was worried there would be unexpected accidents inside the labyrinth, so they put on a show and led Lei Yu inside it first.

# Chapter 151: The Good And Bad News

Lei Yu had indeed rescued the old woman, yet this show was staged after she returned to the U.S.

Although she did not have a lot of power in the Vatican, she was still valued by them due to her special identity. She was a follower of the Prophet, one that served him and happened to be the only one in existence.

When they knew Lei Yu had abilities that exceeded ordinary people; and the fact he caused a media storm in the Kou country and

even obliterated the Yamaguchi-gumi; Lei Yu quickly gained the attention of the Vatican, which caused them to set this trap to win his trust. They originally thought it would be easy for them to get Lei Yu to spill the secrets of the labyrinth, but they didn't expect this unforeseen circumstance.

There was one thing they could not deny – this old woman was truly grateful towards Lei Yu or else she wouldn't have given him such a precious gift. Perhaps she was able to look at a person and know their character, and that's why she knew Lei Yu would honor his commitment and promises.

There would only be two outcomes from Lei Yu entering the labyrinth:

either he would never come out, or if he did come out, then he would tell them everything that went on inside. But no matter which result happened, it wouldn't have too much of an impact for the Vatican. The contents of the scrolls were already memorized by the old woman, so she knew how to open the entrance to the labyrinth. This was merely a play staged within their family.

“What? You don't understand what I'm saying?” Lei Yu lightly smiled. “As a Bishop of the Vatican and a follower of the Prophet, you two should be extremely clear on what I'm talking about right?”

“Lei Yu, listen to our explanation!” Hawes suddenly stood up while Lei



Yu just waved his hand. "There's no need to explain. Some things get more complicated the more you try to explain it. There are two reasons why you've come tonight right? First, you want to learn about what's inside the labyrinth; the second, you're representing the Vatican to talk about cooperating with me."

Lei Yu's guess hit the mark. Not that he was overestimating himself, but those with the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior were beyond rare in this world. Any large and strong organization would not have more than two people with such strength. Of course, Tenglong country's Celestial Court was the an exception.

“Child, we truly considered you as a friend.” The old woman’s face was trembling because she knew that she had lost her benefactor’s friendship and trust.

“So you actually watched me go off while my safety was in danger? Old madam, you are willing to enter the labyrinth and sacrifice yourself for the Vatican, but I’m not a member of the Vatican. Since you have considered me as a friend, have you ever thought about the consequences if I was unable to get out? What about my family and my friends?” Lei Yu was slightly emotional because this family had disappointed him.

Silence. One could hear the loud music through their door, but inside

this private room, no one said a word creating a weird atmosphere.

What Lei Yu couldn't understand to this day was how the old woman entered the labyrinth yet would be standing outside when he returned at a predetermined time? (Shortly after looking for the old woman inside.) This mystery may be related to how he had changed history by creating a divergence in the future. This however, was a problem that would be too hard to explain, so it wasn't worth looking into.

After a while, Lei Yu heavily sighed. "I found your so called holy object when I went back in time a thousand years ago to ancient Greece. I've experienced a huge war and then returned to the modern

times and that's it."

The old woman became excited,  
"Then did you meet the great  
Prophet Kalchas? Also did you see  
the holy objects?"

"I did meet Kalchas, but as for the  
holy objects, I'm not sure what  
exactly you're referring to." Said Lei  
Yu.

The old woman was so excited that  
she started rubbing her hands  
anxiously. "The holy objects... the  
holy objects are comprised of four  
items. One of them is a golden  
crown, which is currently being  
worn on the head of our great Pope.  
The other three items were an axe,  
battle armor, and battle boots."

Lei Yu was somewhat surprised; weren't these items supposed to belong to Minotaur Linos and Telephassa? When did these things become the holy objects of the Vatican? And the golden crown was actually in the possession of the Pope? Who passed it on to him?

Would there be some relation to Telephassa? Since the Vatican's prophet was Kalchas... Wait, according to the old woman, Kalchas had died not too long ago, probably around a hundred years. So how did the old woman become a follower and serve him?

Perhaps in his heart, he was yearning for this goddess that he couldn't let go of. Lei Yu knew that having these thoughts were wrong,

(the chance of Telephassa still being alive) they were people of two different worlds and different eras. Additionally, Lei Yu already had Ai Er so he shouldn't be having these absurd thoughts. But the human mind couldn't always constrain what they thought about, so it's inevitable for him to have these thoughts of the heart.

Although this wasn't considered any earth shattering love story, a flame was still lit between them. And according to Telephassa's view, Lei Yu was the only man she had ever fallen in love with. Probably to this day, her thoughts of him had never changed. Perhaps Lei Yu may see her again in the future, but it's more likely that they would never see each other again.

“Would I ever have the pleasure of in meeting the honorable Pope in person?” Lei Yu then continued saying: “I have something to say to him directly and it’s more convenient in person. It would also make it easier on the messenger to go back and forth between us constantly.”

“The honorable Pope also had this intention!” Mr. Hawes smiled while continuing to say: “Now that I know this idea is acceptable to you, I will relay this message to the Pope and you two will meet very soon.”

Lei Yu nodded. “It would be best if it’s one month from now since during this time, I have a lot of things I need to resolve and don’t have time to deal with issues such

as cooperation. Regarding the holy objects, I will speak in length about them once I meet up with the Pope.”

The two of them didn’t say anything more and could only agree with Lei Yu’s conditions. Within Lei Yu’s heart, he didn’t really want to make enemies out of Mr. Hawes and his family. As for the cooperation with the Vatican, Lei Yu had new plans for that but it was still too early and he wasn’t in a rush to set it in motion.

Since things had been settled, the two of them would only feel more awkward if they stayed. Mr. Hawes and the old woman got up to leave and Lei Yu didn’t try to persuade them to stay any longer.



It was rare for a whole month to be so peaceful. Each day, Lei Yu would either spend time with Ai Er or cultivate inside the hotel. It was now only a few more days until the agreed time between the Dark Council and the Vatican.

It had also been over half a month since he last visited his nightclub. Bringing Ai Er along, she had a sudden desire to go sing some karaoke. Lei Yu only agreed because there wasn't anything else to do. They also called up some of Ai Er's friends and when they met up; their group of about a dozen people was pretty much all girls. Lei Yu never expected that all this time Ai Er had spent in the U.S.; she barely had any male friends.

Once a private room was arranged for them, Lei Yu finally sighed in relief. The craziness when a group of girls were together had overwhelmed him somewhat. Lei Yu was never in fear when dealing with enemies, but when it came to girls, this super expert became helpless. The girls kept making him do shots with them, but luckily his phone rang so he had an excuse to rush out of the room to answer it.

“You brat, you’ve finally decided to give me a call?” Lei Yu jokingly cursed.

“Don’t blame me master, I’ve been helping sister Ying Ying all this time.” His clown-like disciple Liu Hao’s voice was heard over the phone.

“So what’s going on? Everything working out well?” Lei Yu asked.

“I have some good news and some bad news, which one do you want hear first?” Liu Hao asked, pretending to be mysterious.

# Chapter 152: A Group Of Troublemakers

Without hesitating, Lei Yu said:  
“Let’s hear the good news first.”

“Construction is going well, since those Kou bastards don’t dare to be arrogant with us. When they see us, it’s like they’re treating us like their own honorable parents! It’s so refreshing! We’ve also just signed several big contracts and sister Ying Ying has been in contact with our country. They’re going to send a number of people to settle in the Kou country. It also seems that before long, the Kou country will be

within the grasp of Tenglong country.”

“What dog fart country? Isn’t it just a small island? Since it worked out well, this will allow us to vent our hatred. Who told these dog bastards to perform those wicked deeds to our country over half a century ago?! So what’s the bad news?” Lei Yu asked.

“The bad news is... that there’s nothing else for me to do in the Kou country. I want to go to the U.S. to eat your food, stay at your place, and play around on your dime!”

“You scoundrel, are you really planning to come? When?”

“I heard you opened up a big

nightclub in New York City, so I took a taxi directly from the airport to the club entrance. But some snooty guys looked down on me since I was carrying a bunch of luggage and denied me entry. What should I do?”

“What the hell?! Just wait a bit, I’ll be right there.” Lei Yu hung up the phone and rushed out.

When it came to Liu Hao, Lei Yu treated him like a good brother, but Liu Hao liked to joke around a lot, a personality trait that could not be changed. Yet he still treated Lei Yu with utmost respect since he was filled with gratitude from being bestowed a cultivation method.

Liu Hao’s familiar face appeared in

front of Lei Yu's eyes. After not seeing each other for such a long time, his disciple did look a bit different from before; his previous carefree face had become somewhat more mature now.

Upon seeing Lei Yu, he wanted to run up and give him a warm hug. But after seeing the two big black bouncers eyeing him with disdain, Liu Hao sneered instead. "It shouldn't be good for you guys that the boss is doing your job now, right? He is personally coming to the entrance to greet me!" Liu Hao then shook his head, "I really have too much face here."

Seeing Lei Yu come out from inside, the two big black guys were surprised as cold sweat started

forming on their forehead. People that came here usually had some status or some special identity. They never thought this plain looking guy that looked like a refugee carrying multiple bags, would be a friend of the boss. Looking at the boss's face, the relationship between them shouldn't be simple.

Lei Yu didn't say anything and just rubbed Liu Hao's head showing a caring face. The difference between their ages wasn't that great, but the difference in their statuses was very distinct. One could say that as the master, Lei Yu's words were even more important than Liu Hao's own father.

“Come on; let me help you carry



those.” Lei Yu grabbed a backpack, about to go back inside the nightclub.

“Young master, let us help you!”  
The two big black guys quick rushed forth, hoping to help.

“There’s no need, just stay here and do your job.” Lei Yu strode inside while Liu Hao bounced his head side to side with a funny face at the two bouncers before walking in after Lei Yu.

Opening the door to the private room, Lei Yu first went inside. Right after that, Liu Hao walked in and exclaimed: “Wow, there are so many western babes here!”

“Ah! Liu Hao!” Ai Er rushed over in

surprise.

“Master’s wife! I’ve travelled thousands of miles to meet with you, but I was stopped by the two bouncers at the entrance.”

“You’re so hateful, who on earth is your master’s wife?!” But Ai Er’s face was blushing and her heart was so happy from being greeted like that. Firstly being greeted with that title felt very fresh to her, making her happy. Secondly, she was surprised and happy that Liu Hao had actually come to the U.S.

But at this time, something truly serious was happening. While Lei Yu and friends were inside the private room drinking and singing, a gang of people outside the club

were causing a commotion.

Leading the people was a middle-aged man with long blonde hair. Even though it was currently night time, he was still trying to be cool and wore a pair of sunglasses. As he was chewing some gum, he cursed out: "Ever since you guys opened this shitty place, our business has been getting worse and worse. Get your boss out here so he can see who the real deal around here is!"

The two big bouncers looked at each other; ever since they started working here, no one had dared to cause any trouble here. Being able to be employed here as security meant they weren't your average Joes. But seeing the hundred or so people here, it was definitely a

difficult situation.

“If you know what’s good for you, you better leave quickly. If boss Bear sees this, he will cripple you all!” Said one of the bouncers.

They’ve personally witnessed Gray Bear’s overbearing personality. When they were in the process of being selected as security, Gray Bear was in charge of the ordeal and it was an eye-opener for them to witness his powerful strength. Gray Bear had a bad temper to start with, so apart from the young master and Black Panther, he would never submit to anyone.

“Brother Bear? More like loser right? [1] The boss of yours inside is a useless loser? Ha ha ha...”

The hundred or so people started laughing out loud. Pedestrians on the sidewalk glanced over and quickened their pace away, fearing that they would get involved in this conflict.

The two bouncers clenched their fists. Gray Bear happened to be their idol; at least he was qualified to be it when it came to melee fights. If someone were to insult their idol, how were they supposed to tolerate that?

One of the black bouncers stepped forward and pointed at the long blonde haired guy: "I'll repeat it one last time: Leave if you know what's good for you, or else it will be too late to regret it when shit goes down!"

The long haired guy disregarded those words and sneered. Standing next to him was a muscular white guy with white hair that flashed forward and initiated a high speed attack.

“Ugh! Aghh!” One of the black bouncers staggered backwards as his chest was already punched by the muscular white hair guy. With blood spraying from his mouth, the other bouncer immediately went over to support him. It looked like there was an expert in the midst of this gang of people!

The hundred or so people became even more unrestrained as they screamed in commotion. The first being they had a lot of people with them, and secondly, they had the

white haired guy called Shura with them. Shura had never met anyone that could take him on. Perhaps the strong experts never bothered to fight him, which made him think that he had a sufficient status to cause a ruckus here.

With such an unruly atmosphere, this made some customers who wanted to enter the nightclub, leave the area. Some stood across the street watching, while others simply drove away from the place.

“What happened? What’s with his large group of people?” A charismatic voice came from behind the two bouncers. When the two looked behind them, they were instantly overjoyed and exclaimed: “Young master, this bunch of guys

are here to cause trouble!”

When the female receptionist at the lobby noticed the disturbance, she hurriedly went to the private room where Lei Yu was to inform him of the matter. She knew exactly which room Lei Yu was in because she was the one that arranged the room in the beginning when Ai Er and friends came in. Knowing there was a ruckus; Lei Yu hurriedly came out with Liu Hao trailing behind him.

Baring his teeth, the guy with the long blond haired asked: “So you’re the one in charge here?”

Lei Yu did not even bother glancing at the group. These were your typical thugs that were unqualified for Lei Yu to even look at. Slightly



closing his eyes and extending his senses, everyone in front of him was just lowly rabble. The only one worth some attention was the white haired clown that had the strength of a Third Order Warrior. Lei Yu grinned, he could sense that Black Panther was also coming out of the nightclub at high speed. "Okay, you two go back inside." Lei Yu said this to the two bouncers, so they started walking back into the lobby area while Liu Hao stepped forward.

At the same time, Black Panther came out of the nightclub. Lei Yu simply faced him and said: "Don't dirty the front entrance too much, keep it pristine."

"Understood, young master." Said Black Panther as he bowed. When

he noticed Liu Hao was here as well, he was somewhat surprised because he didn't get word of his arrival yet. But this wasn't the time for them two to reminisce as Black Panther noticed the hundred or so people gathered here. With a glance, the situation was clear – the guy with the white hair standing in front was the strongest out of all them. But for someone like Black Panther, who had just attained the strength of a Fifth Rank Mutant, this gang of scoundrels was even less than a dog's fart.

Casually cracking the joints of his fingers, Black Panther suddenly stomped on the ground. A black shadow that was undetectable to others had already arrived in front of the white haired guy. The white

haired guy called Shura was only able to see Black Panther's eyes that didn't belong to a human appear in front of him; those eyes stared at him with coldness and disdain. Shura's eyes popped out with fear as he didn't even have the chance of raising his hands to defend himself.

-----

[1] A play on Chinese words. A hero in Chinese is written in two characters: 英雄. The last word is pronounced "Xiong" which is the same pronunciation of bear as well. If one removes the 英 of the word hero and changes it to a dog, 狗, then the meaning become a loser/useless person. So the author wrote "dog bear" but when said out loud,

it means loser/useless person.

# Chapter 153:

## Dumbass Disciple

The next moment, Black Panther waved a single hand. In the eyes of the hundred or so people, the most powerful guy that they knew as Shura, fell to the ground unable to get up anymore. Blood was pouring out of a gruesome wound on Shura's head.

Black Panther then turned around and ignored the shocked expressions of the gang of thugs. "Clean this place up. Young master said not to dirty the entrance."

Regarding these ordinary people, Black Panther didn't bother to get

involved with them. He had carefully selected the two black bouncers, so even though they weren't the white hair guy's opponent, they were more than enough to deal with ordinary people. Not to mention the goal was merely deterrence, so there wasn't any need for him to act personally.

The two black bouncers grinned, revealing their teeth that were the only white part of their body. Clenching their arms to reveal their muscular biceps, one of them then said: "Why aren't you taking your dog shit Shura and fleeing? Do you want us to do it for you?"

The whole situation came up so fast and transpired so quickly, barely

taking up any time. The spectators on the sides of the street were left with their mouths hanging. One thing they were sure of was none of them were able to figure out how that person suddenly appeared in front of the white haired guy. It looked like the person behind the scenes, who was capable of opening such a large nightclub, wasn't an ordinary person.

For Lei Yu, Liu Hao, and Black Panther, alcohol was no longer able to affect them. In a positive tone, they were considered drinkers with high tolerance. In a negative tone, drinking alcohol was similar to not drinking anything at all for them.

Liu Hao was introduced to Hu Jiong and the two of them hit it off

instantly. Thus everyone had an enjoyable time and partied to about 2AM in the morning.

Back at the hotel, Ai Er was already at her limit and passed out in the bedroom while Lei Yu and Liu Hao stayed in the living room.

“Master, my strength is currently at the rank of a Fourth Order Warrior!” As he was saying this, he lifted up his shirt. “Take a look, you used to say I was a bit fat but now all my muscles are toned and solid. You won’t believe how many hot girls are obsessed with me, including major and minor female celebrities.”

Lei Yu’s mouth twitched, “Stop being so smug. Are you planning on



staying in the U.S. for a long time? This works out well since you can help me out with things here.”

“Master, you’re somewhat different from before...”

“Oh? Really?”

“Before you preferred to do everything yourself and didn’t want us to encounter anything dangerous. Now you’re different, it looks like your thoughts have cleared up and your horizons have been broadened.”

Lei Yu stretched a bit before saying: “You could say I’ve changed a little. I used to think that I had to handle everything personally, but then I gradually realized that I wasn’t all

knowing and there's some things that I'm not good at. My previous practices allowed my family and friends to live in peace, but I never considered the consequences that if something happened to me, you guys would be the ones suffering. Sometimes the power of solidarity is stronger, so even if someone is powerful, they need to be part of a community at times for assistance. I've only now realized why this world has so little lone rangers since pretty much any decent organization would have a team stronger than themselves. I need to increase our power right now, since this is the only way to survive. I don't have the ability to destroy the Vampires and Werewolves right now, but I believe they will eventually use humans as an

essential good for survival. I can't just watch this from the sidelines and not do anything about it. I understand the fact that you and I, and the rest of us aren't some sort of saviors of the world, but since we have this power, we have to use it responsibly. This is what it means to be a Tenglong citizen.

After hearing Lei Yu's speech, Liu Hao became lost in his own thoughts. He recalled the actions Lei Yu took in avenging the country's vendetta that happened over half a century ago. Even though his actions didn't cause any large-scale massacres, Liu Hao understood that Lei Yu was showing people the difference between a Kou person and a Tenglong person. We, the sons of

Tenglong, need to be compassionate and not rely on overwhelming force to take away someone's right to survive. Causing economic damage is the most powerful weapon we can use during this peaceful era.

“Master, when you're free, can you tell me everything that's been happening in the U.S?”

Lei Yu smiled and nodded. “No problem, but first I have something good to share with you.”

“Something good?” Liu Hao's spirit perked up. “What's this good thing? Hurry up and take it out!”

Lei Yu took a piece of blank paper from the desk and started drawing

on it with a pen. Liu Hao was completely confused as he watched from the side. He just couldn't understand what Lei Yu was trying to draw.

Half an hour later, Lei Yu smiled. "Take this and I will give you a mantra to accompany it. This is a martial technique for attacking; it's a method inspired by the thirty-six Lunar Stars of the universe. Since I'm unable to transfer this image directly into your mind, I can only try to draw it out for you."

Liu Hao took the piece of paper and looked at all the intricate lines connected all over the place. He simply couldn't understand what he was looking at, but he wasn't worried since Lei Yu was by his

side.

Throughout the night, Lei Yu imparted the mantra and the meridian's circulation path to Liu Hao.

Lei Yu had nothing to hide. Some masters may hold back a little, but Lei Yu had no need. Every set of martial technique relied on a person's insight to achieve a certain level. Teaching some of the intricacies was necessary, but their future accomplishment still relied on a person's own insights.

Moreover, Lei Yu understood that even though Liu Hao and himself were cultivating the same set of martial technique, Liu Hao still wouldn't possess Lei Yu's

uniqueness – the brand on his right arm that gave him the power of lightning. Just this alone would result in Liu Hao never being able to surpass his master's rank in power.

“Good. Now we will aim for the final breakthrough.” Lei Yu stood in front of Liu Hao with his hands clasped behind his back. “With your current rank of a Fourth Order Warrior, you’ll only be able to grasp the attacks of two Lunar Stars. There’s no need to for you to rush things so just take your time. First of all, condense and then suspend your breathing in the upper and lower body.”

When Liu Hao heard this, he then held his breath, but was soon

confused about something. “Master, I understand holding my breath for the upper body, but what does holding your breath in the lower part mean...?”

“Dumbass, it’s your anus!”

“The anus? How... how am I supposed to do that?” Liu Hao blinked in a clueless manner as he asked this.

Lei Yu slapped himself in the face with a look of frustration. “How did I ever accept such a dumb disciple? Do I really need to describe something so disgusting? Your anus! It’s the action where you’re taking a shit and you squeeze it off halfway!”



“I understand! I understand!” Liu Hao grinned in a cheeky manner.

After several days, Liu Hao still hadn't improved much. He still couldn't even grasp the most basic power concept behind the technique. However, he wasn't in a rush since he understood that he wasn't some type of talented person anyway. He just took it one step at a time and wasn't looking for a quick success.

Inside the nightclub, Lei Yu was quietly waiting for something.

Then, four strange looking people entered the nightclub. Standing in the lobby, Lei Yu glanced at them and said to himself: Although these people of the Dark Council do

unethical things, at least they're punctual.

"Ah! My dear Mr. Lei Yu, how have you been recently?" Lucas went up to Lei Yu and wanted to give him a hug.

Lei Yu avoided by taking one step to the side. "Not too good, I'm very troubled these days."

"What happened?" Lucas pretended to have concern on his face.

Lei Yu's lips curled contemptuously. "Ever since you approached me about cooperating in the future, the Vatican also sent people to ask me to work with them. I'm now in a quandary and don't know what I should do."

After hearing Lei Yu's words, Lucas knew something like this would happen. But before he came here, he already came up with a rhetoric. He then accompanied Lei Yu into a private room while the other three stood outside, not daring to go in as well. The previous Marquis that was taught a lesson by Lei Yu also did not even dare to show his face today.

“Mr. Lei Yu, don't worry bout a thing. There's no need to listen to those hypocritical Vatican scums.”

# Chapter 154:

## Displaying My Prowess

Lei Yu shook his head. “Mr... Mr. Lucas, you don’t understand. If I insist on cooperating with you guys against the Vatican’s words, then it would definitely be not good for my little self. I don’t want to encounter some unfortunate accident, therefore...”

“Those crafty gang of scum, they actually threatened Mr. Lei Yu! They are too much!” Lucas slammed the table as he said this. “Rest assured, we will ensure your safety so there won’t be any so

called accidents! Our Prince is also a very powerful existence watching over us.”

Lei Yu continued to shake his head. “You should know the Vatican has the Pope. After hundreds of years of conflict between the Dark Council and the Vatican, neither of you have disappeared from the world. Are you sure you can definitely protect me if they attempt to hurt me? Besides, I doubt the entire Dark Council would be used to solely to protect my safety right? Otherwise, why would you guys seek me out to cooperate? Mr. Lucas, whether you gain or lose the help of myself, who is only one person, it shouldn’t make much of a difference right?”

“This...”

“I will trouble you to return to the Dark Council and the Prince to tell them that I, Lei Yu, will not help anyone; I won’t be helping the Vatican nor you guys. I don’t want to create any unwanted problems for either side.” Lei Yu stopped talking after putting it bluntly to Lucas.

Lucas was in deep thought after hearing this. He didn’t expect Lei Yu’s mouth would be so sharp, making him speechless and unable to come up with any rebuttal. Indeed, the Dark Council would never put all their effort into protecting a single person. When he mentioned Lei Yu would be under their protection, those were just words out of courtesy and they wouldn’t really be making an effort.

So all he could do now was return and let his superiors know Lei Yu was reluctant to join them.

Lei Yu had considered this thoroughly. Knowing how the Dark Council did things, Lei Yu's refusal would most likely make them furious. Creating trouble for him in the future was also a likely scenario. But Lei Yu wasn't afraid of this since he had Black Panther and Gray Bear, both of them being Fifth Rank Mutants. He also had Liu Hao and Hu Jiong, who were Fourth Order Warriors, and within the past month, several new bounty hunters and mutants had joined up. So if they really did come looking for him, it's still wasn't clear who would come out the winner or loser.

In addition to this, Lei Yu didn't want to make this matter worst to the point of breaking out into a fight. The Dark Council would eventually be dealt with, but now wasn't the time. Their current group's strength was enough to protect themselves, but not strong enough to fight them head on.

Both his opponents had more than his current dozen of underlings right? That's why Lei Yu had to be careful; he wouldn't fight if he didn't have to. The most important thing was to preserve his strength for now.

Seeing Lucas's facial expression, Lei Yu made a slightly playful grin. "There's one point I need to make clear – the Vatican gave the same



speech as you guys. If the Dark Council made a move against me, they would do everything they can to help me.”

After sending off Lucas, Mr. Hawes side quickly arranged a chance for Lei Yu to meet the Pope. Since the Vatican had a long, ancient history, Lei Yu promised to visit as soon as possible in order to show his respect for them.

Just as Lei Yu figured, the Vatican’s base was established in Athens, Greece. The roads to their base were quite complex, so Lei Yu never imagined that they would actually build such a large church-like structure near a mountain.

Lei Yu was shocked as he stared at

this large building with the gold and white as its primary colors. How many resources and how much manpower was invested to complete this building? Thinking back, this was still a small construction job when comparing it to the overwater city that he was building in the Kou country.

Inside the main hall of the church, Lei Yu looked upon the Pope's appearance. Just as he imagined, the Pope was wearing a long and simple white robe. The robe had golden lace embroidered at its edges and, although simple looking, it didn't take away the elegance of it. On top of his short brown hair was a feminine looking crown. One could see Lei Yu's eyes looked complicated since he felt the crown

looked much better on Telephassa.

The Pope appeared to be in his fifties. Although his looks were ordinary, he had a pair of long slender eyes that were often tightly squinting, which made it difficult for people to know what he was thinking. It was surprising to see someone dressed like this in modern society, but the Pope probably changed into something different when he went out in public.

“Most holy father, this person is Lei Yu.” A middle-aged man to the side of Lei Yu introduced him. He was also dressed in clothes similar to the Pope, minus the golden embroidery. It looked like he might be a White Cardinal of the Church.

Even though Mr. Hawes's mother was seen as important to the Vatican because of being a servant of the Prophet, she was merely a minor Bishop and wasn't qualified to see the Pope. If she had information to give, she could only pass it along through a messenger and wait for a reply.

This Pope in front of him, with hundreds of millions of believers, did not look like anything special. Lei Yu couldn't figure out why so many people would treat him with their utmost devotion.

"Mr. Lei Yu, I have heard a lot about your big name!" The Pope was sitting atop a large throne, giving off a majestic aura. It looked like he had no intention of getting up upon

seeing Lei Yu.

Lei Yu half-heartedly waved as he carefully scanned the hall with his eyes. It was built similar to the palace in ancient Greece, where several pillars were erected as support, and the two sides of the hall were filled with people.

The hierarchy of the Vatican was very strict, so from the lower to the high ranks, they were: Monk, Bishop, Archbishop, White Cardinal, Red Cardinal, and the god-like Pope.

Each and every one of them had their own responsibilities. Even though they possessed a force known as the Knight Corps, these gentle-looking priests usually relied

on their so called high status to deal with things.

The Pope's majestic aura of divinity couldn't be violated by anyone. No one had ever dared to ignore the Pope's words, yet Lei Yu today was looking down on him with insolent eyes. This made the Pope's heart seethe in anger.

"Didn't you hear his holiness greet you?" A middle-aged person with a red cloak said this in a cold voice.

"I did in fact hear it, but I am the guest, while you guys are the host. You were the ones that invited me here, but I don't feel like I'm being treated like an honorable guest. So why should I try to curry favor from you guys?" Lei Yu faintly replied.

“Don’t think that just because you have a little ability, you can do whatever you want here!” A Red Bishop with thick eyebrows stood out like he was going to start a physical fight.

Lei Yu smiled in scorn. “The Vatican’s way of hospitality is really quite flattering. I’ve come to see the Pope and not the Emperor! Also, I hope you remember that I’m not a Westerner and I’m not a follower of the Church. I’m a Tenglong person from the East, so there’s no reason for me to bow or grovel to anyone. Unless you want to force me to follow your etiquette? Ridiculous!” Lei Yu enunciated every word to show off his own country’s greatness.

Everyone present thought the Pope was going to explode in rage, but surprisingly, he stood up and coldly said: "Maude, step down. Unless this is how you would normally treat our esteemed guests?"

The Pope was very clear that he met with Lei Yu to discuss their terms of cooperation. Since he realized that this person that came was indeed very strong, his original thought of wanting to show off the prowess of the Vatican was shattered. Since it turned out like this, he might as well be more polite to Lei Yu. If they both started fighting with each other this early, then there would be no longer need to discuss the latter things



# Chapter 155: It's Not That I'm Afraid

It wasn't that the Vatican was afraid of Lei Yu, but rather it was because Lei Yu knew the secrets of the labyrinth. The secrets involved were something even Prophet Kalchas couldn't understand completely, but these were only the thoughts of the Vatican. The fact was the labyrinth didn't really have many secrets at all. Lei Yu only got rid of some guardians and nothing more, but then again, Lei Yu was indeed a powerful expert. After angering him, they could definitely subdue him, but then the Vatican would suffer heavy losses. That was

basically the formidable effect of a Sixth Order Warrior, so the Pope wasn't stupid enough to risk it.

After sending everyone in the hall away, it was now easier for the Pope and Lei Yu to discuss things.

"I'm not sure how your holiness wants to cooperate with a small character like me? Could it be that you want me to join the Vatican and become one of your faithful followers? If that's the case, then that's considered a pretty lousy trade off for me." Lei Yu jokingly said.

Being able to attain the position of a Pope meant he wasn't a petty person, but someone extremely shrewd. When dealing with Lei Yu

or anyone for the fact, he would always step around cautiously. “Mr. Lei Yu, you are too fond of joking around.”

“Let’s get to the point. You want to know the secrets of the labyrinth, right? Your holiness, I can tell you outright that there’s no other secrets, except for a passageway that transports you back a thousand years to ancient Greece.” Lei Yu directly cut to the chase since he despised it when two people danced around a subject.

“Mr. Lei Yu, can you swear by what you’ve said to the almighty God? Prophet Kalchas once said that the labyrinth held an earth shattering secret, so could it really be as you’ve mentioned?” It was obvious the

Pope didn't believe Lei Yu.

"I really don't know how Kalchas could live for over a thousand years, and I definitely don't know why he suddenly died a decade ago. But I did see him a thousand years ago and he must have known something was going to happen to arrange our meeting. I'm not going to say anything else unnecessary, so if your holiness wants to take back the old ring, here you go. We'll just pretend that I never entered the labyrinth." Lei Yu directly took off the storage ring while waiting for the Pope's answer.

The Pope wasn't a fool. Perhaps there was a reason that Lei Yu didn't want to reveal the secret, but even if there weren't any secrets

after all, he still wouldn't take back the ring from Lei Yu. Doing that would definitely cause problems with their relationship, so it was more cost-effective to win over a friend with the ring than to gain an extra powerful enemy.

“Ha ha! Mr. Lei Yu, as I've said before, you really are too fond of joking around.”

Lei Yu slightly smiled, his heart was definitely unwilling to return the storage ring. “About our cooperation, I'm wondering what his holiness has in mind?”

“Mr. Lei Yu is really a direct person. The terms of our cooperation is very simple, you merely have to help the Vatican eradicate the Dark

Council, so that we can accomplish the task set forth by our almighty God.” Said the Pope as he closed his eyes in sincerity.

Lei Yu waved his hand in haste.

“Your holiness is overestimating me; I don’t have the good fortune of being blessed by God. As I’ve said before, I’m merely a little side character and can’t achieve anything big. There’s also one thing you should have already thought of – the Dark Council has visited me. They’ve also discussed cooperating with me but I, Lei Yu, still have a bit of intelligence and didn’t agree to their offer. I know how powerful the Vatican is, so I didn’t want to be saddled with such troubles. You can see my plight right?”

The Pope narrowed his eyes slightly. “Mr. Lei Yu, you should know the matters regarding the Dark Council. They are a group made up of Vampires and Werewolves with an ultimate expert from each race. While the Vatican only has me that has reached top step in strength. According to the ranks of your country, you are also an expert that has reached the top level. If you and I were able to team up together, we could definitely destroy them completely. This also saves a lot of innocent lives since their race requires using the innocents in order for them to continue living. Do you have the heart to let these atrocious things continue to occur?”

Wasn't this guy using others to

make himself look weak? Lei Yu lightly smiled. “Your holiness, the Vatican has been in conflict with the Dark Council for hundreds of years, yet you both still exist. The reason for this is most likely the strength of you two are balanced. The strength behind the Vatican can completely suppress the development of the Dark Council. And you seemed to have forgotten to mention Dr. Tony, who happens to have the strength of an Ultimate Rank Mutant. Isn’t he someone completely loyal and faithful to you? How else could Dr. Tony so easily give up on killing me?”

“This...” The Pope didn’t expect Lei Yu to mention Dr. Tony, but he was able to respond quickly: “Tony and Hasegawa had a deep relationship



but we, the Vatican, don't want to forge any enmity with you Mr. Lei Yu. That's why we immediately consulted Dr. Tony and stopped him from committing a stupid mistake. In fact, all of this was incited by Hasegawa, so I hope you are clear on the rights and the wrongs."

"Oh really?" Lei Yu sneered, anyone with half a brain knew exactly what was going on. Pushing all the blame on a dead person was a move he didn't expect the Pope to come up with. If it wasn't for setting the stage to lure Lei Yu into the labyrinth, no one would believe the Vatican would step forward and help him out.

But Lei Yu wasn't stupid. There

were some things they both knew in their hearts, but didn't need to be said out loud because it would make the situation awkward and difficult. "There's plenty of time to speak about this again in the future. Currently, the Dark Council gave me some 'advice,' which was not to join the ranks of the Vatican. Otherwise, I'd be inviting trouble to myself when they act against me."

Lei Yu directly passed the buck onto the Dark Council, a move he copied from the Pope.

"What qualifications do these evil existences have to threaten Mr. Lei Yu? This is completely ridiculous, unless you are really afraid of their threat?" The Pope tried to goad Lei Yu but it didn't seem to be working.

“It’s not that I’m afraid. Could I, a dignified Deputy Commander of Dragon Group and the second young master of the Lei family, be afraid of a mere Dark Council?”

Lei Yu’s statement not only warned the Pope, he was telling the Pope that he considered the Dark Council beneath his eyes. He wanted the Pope to clearly hear that he, Lei Yu, wasn’t someone easily bullied. If something actually happened to him, even though far apart, Tenglong country would spare no effort. Multiple super experts would be sent out to seek justice so by then, the Dark Council would probably cease to exist! But Lei Yu would not allow that to happen since he didn’t want to rely on anyone’s power as his stepping

stone. He only wanted to rely on himself and especially not borrow the strength of the Lei family.

The Pope seemed to be in deep thought for a while before saying: “The words you’ve spoken make a lot of sense. Don’t worry about anything for now. The Vatican will always treat you as a good friend and we welcome you to visit anytime. May the almighty God bless you abundantly.”

“Thank you.”

One thing Lei Yu wasn’t expecting was that his words made the Pope form new plans in his heart. But these plans shouldn’t appear in the thoughts of so called people of justice, yet it had already started to

sprout inside the Pope... frame  
them!

# Chapter 156: Descent Of A Heavenly Treasure

Creating the illusion that the Dark Council murdered Lei Yu! If things really happened according to Lei Yu's words, the two powerhouses of Tenglong country would both go to the United States and spare no effort in crushing the Dark Council. When the snipe and the clam grapple, wouldn't the fisherman be the one to reap the benefits?

Lei Yu didn't want to stay in the Vatican headquarters for too long, so he immediately returned to New York.

The distribution of power between the Dark Council and the Vatican were very interesting to observe. As long as one of the forces appeared in a city, the other party would also appear. This was to balance out each other's power and neither of them were willing to compromise.

After Lei Yu returned to the U.S., a year had now passed by. Nothing troubling occurred during the year, giving Lei Yu lots of peace and quiet. Everything went according to plan and Lei Yu's funds currently reached a staggering \$2 billion U.S. dollars. But Lei Yu didn't really care about this monetary number, what he was excited and happy about was gaining talents over the past year.

In addition to Black Panther and Gray Bear, Lei Yu now had eight underlings with the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior, twenty Fourth Order Warriors, over a hundred Third Order Warriors, and numerous underlings below that. Exactly as they said before: As long as you had the money, recruiting talents would not be a problem.

Among them were some that were completely loyal to Lei Yu, but the majority of them followed Lei Yu because he was strong. He was someone that could possibly lead them towards newer heights and at least wasn't a weakling that could be taken down in one night.

Lei Yu could now be described as rich and powerful, enough that the



government didn't dare to intervene in his affairs. But it was mainly Black Panther and Gray Bear that had given them a gift in the beginning that shocked them too much.

This past year, Lei Yu also had some minor improvement in his strength. For someone at the same level as him, having a bit of improvement was already something not easy to accomplish – Lei Yu was now at the mid-stage of the [Detachment] level. As for the Thirty-Six Lunar Stars technique, he had mastered five of the stars and was missing only one before he could release his first combination attack. This attack would probably be something so powerful that no one could handle, therefore Lei Yu felt

highly confident in himself. Of course one couldn't feel too pleased about themselves since Lei Yu had also experienced sadness after great pleasures.

Sitting in front of a bedroom window of his newly bought villa, Lei Yu was gently stroking the half-piece of jade pendant that had accompanied him for these few years. Based on his current strength, he should be qualified to get revenge for his grandfather now right? Lei Yu also really wanted to see his mother, but where could she be?

While letting out a long sigh, Ai Er came in at this time wearing a long white dress. This past year, Ai Er also changed a lot – from a cute girl

to a charming young woman that looked reserved and quiet. The two didn't say anything while Ai Er just nestled herself against Lei Yu's chest. An indescribably warm atmosphere spread through the bedroom as neither of the two wanted to leave the other's embrace.

At this moment, a golden light was seen rapidly flying through the air off into a distance. Out the window, Lei Yu was sure the light wasn't anything like an airplane or a bird. This golden light somehow gave Lei Yu a very familiar feeling.

"Ai Er, I'm going to head out and take a look, you stay at home and wait for me." Ai Er nodded. Lei Yu directly opened the window and

jumped out from the third floor before driving off in his car to catch up with the light. At the same time, several organizations were making their own moves.

Near a swampy land, Lei Yu used nearly a full day to catch up with that light. He clearly saw the golden light had disappeared somewhere into the swamp. Lei Yu got out of his car and started walking on foot through the swamp.

He wasn't the only one that had detected the golden light. When the golden light first appeared, the people of the Vatican had already contacted the Pope who was far away in Greece. The Dark Council was also getting ready themselves, hoping it was some descent of

heavenly treasures. Something like this had happened in a few hundred years ago and the person who gained this was none other than the Vatican's Pope. The Dark Council wasn't willing to be outdone, so of course, they had to find out the origin of this light.

The golden light had landed in the center of the swamp, a place where ordinary people couldn't easily access. Lei Yu relied on the superior control he had over his body to easily enter the swamps.

"It's over there!"

Lei Yu found his target and started heading to the center at breakneck speeds. As he got closer, Lei Yu felt the emitting force becoming more

familiar. Also at this time, a black figure flew out from another direction and managed to reach the golden light first.

“Who is it? They have amazing skills!” Lei Yu said to himself. Being able to use the soft mud of the swamp to leverage a jump, this was definitely not something an ordinary person was capable of.

It appeared the other person had seen Lei Yu as well. “I’m really sorry Mr. Lei Yu, but this treasure will belong to me.”

As Lei Yu got closer, “You know who I am?”

“Mr. Lei Yu’s big name is naturally known far and wide. Let me

introduce myself: I am one of the Senators of the Dark Council, a Vampire Prince of the Kamenno family named Bel. Mr. Lei Yu may have heard of it before?”

It was now that Lei Yu carefully looked at this person’s appearance. A pale thin face without a trace of color, as if the blood was completely drained; an elegant tuxedo was worn over a shapely body made a good fit; inside was a flower collared white shirt that looked like it was tailored specifically for him; and black hair that partially covered his left eye. As a gust of wind blew by, Lei Yu noticed that his left eye was completely blood red.

“I have heard of you.” Lei Yu

replied.

“I’m truly sorry. Since I was the first one to arrive here, then the treasure belongs to me.” Bel smiled with elegance as he pointed to the item buried in the swamp, yet still shone with golden light.

Lei Yu shook his head. “Prince Bel, it seems like there’s no such thing in this world as a rule of first come first served. Everything depends on your strength... Now I wonder if you possess that strength to lay down your claims?”

After hearing Lei Yu’s words, Bel couldn’t help but frown. “Could it be that no matter what, Mr. Lei Yu has to fight with me over this?”



Lei Yu's lips arced into his signature smile. "Nope, I don't intend to. Except you seemed to have forgotten that the news of this will travel fast within the Vatican. I doubt the Pope would sit at home without doing anything and wait for the treasure to be delivered into his own arms!"

Lei Yu said this because he could feel the Pope's aura approaching. "Mr. Lei Yu is indeed correct. How could our Vatican miss this opportunity?"

The Pope's voice was heard at a distance not too far away. They both turned and noticed a white figure rapidly floating towards them. That's right, it was floating because one could clearly see the

Pope's feet unmoving, yet his body approached at high speeds.

"It's so lively today." Lei Yu was in the mood to watch a great show play out. Mainly Lei Yu understood that he would not be in any danger today – it was impossible for the Vatican and the Dark Council to join forces against him. Plus Lei Yu wasn't afraid of either of them. In another sense, if Lei Yu became slightly closer to any of the parties here, the other would definitely meet their demise. Those two were looking at Lei Yu like he was holding a balance scale; wherever he tilted it would cause a completely different outcome.

# Chapter 157:

## Snatching The Battle Boots

“Lei Yu, my dearest friend. Being able to see you today has really made me surprised and extremely happy at the same time!” The Pope greeted Lei Yu with an expression as if he was seeing an old buddy. “Has everything been going well this past year?”

“Thank you for asking, your holiness. Everything has been good.” Lei Yu also responded with a fake smile.

Seeing that the two didn't pay

attention to Bel, his heart erupted in anger. “The Vatican has always been hypocrites pretending to be virtuous, so stop acting in front of me! Mr. Lei Yu, we, the Dark Council were the first ones to express our wishes to be on good terms with you. Could it be that you’ve fallen for this guy’s duplicitous words?”

Bel wasn’t expecting Lei Yu to help him today, but as long as he stayed out of this and did not help anyone, then today he would still stand a chance.

Lei Yu shrugged. “His holiness and I are just friends. Of course, I’ve never refused your friendship either Prince Bel.” His mouth was saying this, but his heart wasn’t thinking

it.

Although the Vatican was a smiling tiger (outwardly kind, but inwardly cruel), at least they were benevolent and caring towards their followers. In the eyes of the world, they were on the side of justice, which was undeniable. However, the Dark Council was different – they would do whatever it took to achieve their goals. Whether they were martial cultivators or ordinary people, as long as they had any impact on them, the Dark Council would mercilessly and without compassion step on their dead corpse. Based on this, Lei Yu's heart leaned towards the Vatican, but of course, he couldn't show it.

“Bel, this item might be one of our

Vatican's long lost holy objects. You people of the Dark Council do not have the right to possess it!" The Pope said through clenched teeth, his eyes becoming red from seeing his enemy.

"I can still try!" Bel wasn't afraid. As one of the two super experts from the Dark Council, he had never backed down from anything. He even felt the leader of the Werewolf clan, who was at the same rank as him, was beneath his eyes. Not to mention a Pope that was on the same rank as him.

Lei Yu crossed his arms and took two steps back. Since these two wanted to fight, he might as well give them room for a good one.

Right at this moment, Bel's figure became illusory. Amidst the eerie atmosphere of the swamp, his agility was still impressive. The soft sludge appeared to not have any effect in prohibiting his movement. With that, Bel sped towards the Pope's direction with a mere step.

The latter retreated backwards, but his feet from start to finish were still white and clean from never having to step on the mud. How did he make his body float in the air this entire time? Lei Yu was extremely curious as to what method was being used.

Under the rain of attacks by Bel, the Pope continued to dodge while his mouth was chanting something. A white light began to emanate on the

surface of the Pope's body. Then suddenly, with the Pope as the center, a column of white light surrounded his body and shot off into the sky. His robe started fluttering around like crazy, even though there wasn't any wind in the vicinity. His elongated eyes narrowed to mere slits and the surrounding white light started condensing rapidly, converging to a single point. "Holy Light's Punishment!"

"Whoosh~!" A white light, with the thickness of an arm, flew directly at Bel at lightning speeds. Bel, who had accumulated a lot of fighting experience had a pretty quick reaction. A sudden mass of energy billowed out from his body and a pair of wings miraculously emerged



from his back. The look of the wings was definitely something only bats would have. Originally only having one eye that was blood red, both of his eyes had become red now. Fangs started to lengthen from both sides of his teeth as they protruded out from his mouth, and Bel was now cloaked in an eerily cold white light.

Bel's speed was extremely fast. Lei Yu felt that it was most likely faster than his own. Perhaps the wings on Bel's back played a big role in the speed increase. Watching these two super experts duel was actually quite pleasurable in Lei Yu's eyes.

Each person's attacks had their own characteristics. Raining blows on his opponent, Bel's attack wasn't

overpowering, but still made the Pope feel overwhelmed. Each attack seized an opportunity for an opening before it struck out. Each of the Pope's attack was like a flash flood, extremely oppressive and tyrannical. In the short term, it was difficult to predict who had the upper hand.

On Bel's fingernail tip and fangs, it contained a secretion unique to his clan. Once a person's body was contaminated with that secretion, that person's life would be subject to their control. With every attack, Bel was hoping to release that effect, but his stamina was continuously depleting as he was unable to land a critical attack.

“Mr. Lei Yu! Help me kill the Pope

and I will give you the treasure that I found today!” Gradually, the fight was becoming unfavorable for Bel. The Pope seized the moment Bel was distracted and suddenly, a huge white light enveloped the entire surrounding area.

“Bang!”

The ground was destroyed by the enormous energy released by the Pope and the stench-filled mud started flying all over the place.

“Plop plop” sounds of mud hitting the ground caused Lei Yu to dodge left and right to avoid them. Bel was somewhat in pain, but due to his experience gained through countless fights, how could he be knocked down so quickly by this attack? No matter what, he was still

a Prince of the Vampire clan.

The moment the Pope released his powerful attack, Bel's body had already soundlessly retreated by tens of meters backward.

Lying amidst the mud, the three were able to see the treasure exuding a golden light, silently sitting there.

Lei Yu's eyes were staring in shock. "Ares' battle boots! How could this be?!"

Lei Yu wasn't the only person to recognize this object, the Pope had also recognized it. Recorded in the ancient books, he too had seen these boots depicted, so he of course knew its secrets. But

unfortunately for him, he didn't know the battle boots required a spell to activate. Kalchas never told him of this because the item technically belonged to his owner, Minotaur Linos. If it weren't for rescuing the bull head, he also wouldn't have told Lei Yu the spell.

"It's really a holy object! It's really a holy object!" The Pope appeared extremely excited. Perhaps it was due to the relationship between his golden crown and the boots, both objects emitted a bright light at the same time.

Lei Yu couldn't hold back his own emotional heart and took a few steps forward towards the boots. Both the Pope and Bel noticed this movement. "Mr. Lei Yu, could it be

that you wish to intervene as well?”

Lei Yu didn't bother answering and walked closer towards the large pit created by the Pope's last attack. His lips started moving, chanting something that no one could hear or understand what he was saying. Bel and the Pope only saw the boots suddenly shine brightly before slowly floating up out of the pit.

The Pope and Bel, who were ten plus meters away, stared with big round eyes unblinkingly at the floating battle boots. They looked like they were waiting for an opportunity to make the killing blow. They would both be merciless when grabbing the boots because this item was just too tempting. According to the records, this

treasure was something that could double one's speed. Within this world, even if it were an ordinary person who possessed this treasure, they could probably repeatedly break world records. So what would happen to someone that was already extremely strong upon wearing those boots?

As for Bel, even though he didn't know what abilities the battle boots possessed, but something that could make the Pope's eyes go red with desire would definitely not be something ordinary. He naturally would not give up on it.

However, it was at this time, the internal calculations of those two seemed to have erred. The floating boots, as if prejudiced, dropped next

to Lei Yu's feet. A bright light flashed again and the boots suddenly disappeared. Then another flash appeared on Lei Yu's feet and the pair of shiny golden boots was currently being worn by him.

“What the hell just happened?!”  
Asked the Pope with his eyes round and wide.



# Chapter 158:

## Werewolf King

### Jonathan

Lei Yu pretended he didn't know what was going on and shrugged. "Who knows... could it be that the battle boots were capable of seeking out its true owner?"

"No! Impossible, impossible!" The Pope was shaking his head as he refused to believe what he saw.

Bel started floating over. "It looks like this item doesn't really belong to the Vatican!"

"Nonsense!" The Pope's eyes were

filled with bloods vessels and they looked like they were about to burst. He had tried many methods to obtain other holy objects but he never succeeded. He never thought today a holy object would appear before his eyes but was now it was taken by Lei Yu. How could he be willing to just let that happen?

Lei Yu and Bel both frowned at the same time. They could feel a murderous aura was condensing on the Pope's body. They never expected the aura of resentment coming from his body would be this strong.

Was Lei Yu scared? No he wasn't. Originally these boots did not belong to the Vatican. The founder of the Vatican wasn't Kalchas and it

wasn't Telephassa either. Lei Yu didn't have to continue pretending to look pleased with this sudden bestowment. Not to mention that, these boots originally belonged to Minotaur Linos. If Lei Yu really wanted it, the bull-head might even give him the full set. Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and coldly said: "Your holiness, it seems you intend to do something about this huh?"

"Take off those battle boots!" The Pope's voice was emotionless. From his eyes one could see that nothing else mattered apart from the battle boots. His previous friendly pretense was completely thrown out the door. Bel was accurate before; people of the Vatican were hypocrites who pretended to be virtuous.

“What if I say no?” Lei Yu lightly moved backwards, getting ready for a sudden attack.

“Humph! How could I allow you to possess the Vatican’s holy objects?” The Pope’s body suddenly lunged forward. Lei Yu wasn’t frantic and casually dodged to the side.

The attacks made by the Pope were entirely supported by his own internal energy, they were completely different from Lei Yu. He and Bel were the same; they relied on their own body’s physical power and agility. Of course, their speed would be their biggest advantage. Initially, Lei Yu realized his own speed was not as fast as Bel’s, but he did have his own unique methods of attacking and

now that he had the battle boots as well, now Lei Yu could display his advantage.

“Whoosh!” Lei Yu wasn’t going to tolerate the Pope’s attack. His body like a ghost, he rushed towards the Pope. Since he was borrowing the magical power of Ares’ boots, Lei Yu’s speed had reached an unimaginable level. Watching from the side, Bel’s mouth was agape in shock. Since he had always been proud of his own speed, he was now overawed by Lei Yu and his desire to possess the treasure increased even more. Lei Yu wasn’t the same as the Pope who had powerful magical attacks. But the internal energy inside Lei Yu had barely been used while the Pope and Bel fought with each other previously.

With the addition of Lei Yu's newly added battle boots, the gap in strength between the two had shrunk. After dodging several of the Pope's attack, he relied on his powerful physique to quickly condense the forces of lightning within himself.

Suddenly, Lei Yu jumped into the air. Before the Pope could even react, Lei Yu was already behind him. With a shout, "Lunar Star's First Form!"

Purple lightning was flickering on Lei Yu's arm with little white dots mixed amidst it. His original lightning energy was now mixed with the power of the moon and stars!

One could only see Lei Yu's eyes focused on the back of the Pope. Using his powerful right arm, Lei Yu swung his arm drawing a perfect arc and a powerful light in the shape of a semicircle rapidly shot out.

“Agghh!” Blood gradually spread out from a line on the back of the Pope's white robe. Fresh blood was now gushing out from a large stained area on his clothes. Lei Yu's attack wasn't very powerful but the attack was the result of him using a generalized attack. Not to mention that he was merely using his fist to release the first form of the Lunar Star Martial technique, it couldn't be compared to the sharpness of releasing it through a weapon. You couldn't even compare it to

Minotaur Linos when he was using it while holding onto the Ares axe.

How long has it been now? Based on the Pope's noble status, when was he ever seriously injured by another person? Perhaps this could be considered being smacked awake by Lei Yu. While breathing heavily, "Your strength is indeed really strong!"

Seeing that the Pope had stopped his attacks, Lei Yu also stood still but not relaxing his vigilance at the slightest. The increase in speed the Ares boots had given to him had not reached its limit yet. If he did push the speed to the limit, it's quite possible the Pope would be receiving over a thousand strikes by Lei Yu already. Lei Yu was able to



feel the horrifying degree of speed the boots was capable of increasing.

“If your holiness didn’t fight against Prince Bel previously, maybe I would be the one who would be hurt instead?” Even though Lei Yu fought against the Pope, it wasn’t his intention and he only acted like that as his last resort. He still had thoughts of living in peace with the Pope. Even if two sides couldn’t be friends, at least they wouldn’t become enemies. This would definitely be better than living with a pair of predatory eyes on him at all times. “As for the holy object...” \*Cough cough!\* The Pope coughed hard a few times which showed that the injuries caused by Lei Yu were not light at all. It’s no wonder since Lei Yu’s current strength was at the

mid-stage of [Detachment], he was already a one man tyrannical force. Not to mention that during the previous fight, Lei Yu used the first form of the Lunar Star Martial technique and only utilized half of its strength. With this attack alone, he was able to heavily injure the Pope. Needless to say, Lei Yu was capable to continuously using the first four forms; the damage that those would deal to the Pope would most likely be disastrous.

Lei Yu lightly exhaled. It looked like the Pope didn't really want him as an enemy but his desire for the boots which technically didn't belong to the Vatican was too strong. "I shouldn't be staying the U.S. for too long, no longer than three years. For the next three

years, I will hold onto this item temporarily. Once I leave the U.S., I will give it to you.”

“Really?!” The Pope suddenly stood up straight. It looked like his previous injuries weren’t serious. Lei Yu never expected that the dignified Pope who was admired by millions of people would be so concerned over external worldly possessions. This had made Lei Yu somewhat disappointed in him.

Lei Yu also really liked these cool looking boots but after all, they didn’t really belong to him. Even though the Vatican and Minotaur Linos were unrelated, Kalchas was still a prophet for the Vatican. Since more or less there was a slight connection based on that, giving it

to the Pope shouldn't be a bad thing.

“Rest assured, the boots are yours once I resolve some of my issues.”

One could clearly see the Pope's mood was extremely happy even though blood was still constantly dripping down off his back. It looked like he didn't care about his injuries at all since Lei Yu had made him a promise. To super experts, committing to a promise was an important thing.

The two of them were chatting with each and it looked like they were ignoring Bel. “Brilliant!” Bel was clapping his hands as he approached Lei Yu and the Pope. “You two somehow concluded the

situation all by yourselves?” It’s just too brilliant... that means you guys aren’t putting our Dark Council in your eyes right?”

“It appears Prince Bel also wants a piece of this?” Lei Yu turned around with a smile on his face.

“Mr. Lei Yu, I’ve always treated you with the utmost respect. Your behavior really makes me confused. Since you’ve already attacked, why would you reach a consensus with the Pope who deserves death?”  
Asked Bel.

The Pope glowered angrily, “I deserve death? When did the Dark Council become so arrogant? You disgusting creature that hides in cold and wet places, what makes

you qualified to discredit the followers of God?”

Bel coldly sneered: “Do you think you can still fight against me? You are seriously injured right now so killing you will be a piece of cake!” As a Senator of the Dark Council, Bel wanted to kill the Pope because he would gain great merit on the outstanding contribution.

“You...!” The Pope couldn’t help but cough out a mouthful of blood.

“What? Getting angry? Did you believe Mr. Lei Yu would help you fight against me?”

“Actually, I will!” Lei Yu nodded with a cold look on his face. If the Pope was to really die, the waves of

calamity would be bound to start. This could turn out to be something that no one would be able to suppress. The rough estimate of Vatican followers were over ten million. If they all rose up to cause a disturbance, then the consequences would be inconceivable. Lei Yu would never allow this type of situation to occur.

Bel's mind had actually blanked out as he exploded with anger. The speed he was so proud of was now inferior to Lei Yu's, and now Lei Yu was assisting the Pope. He had to get the Ares boots no matter what! Bel suddenly attacked while Lei Yu was completely unprepared.

“Whoosh~!”

The blur of Bel's figure still remained in his original spot but his body had already arrived in front of Lei Yu. All you could see was Bel's hideous face glaring at the two. The Pope was no longer a concern to Bel; as long as he got rid of Lei Yu, the item would naturally belong to him.

"This is too funny!" How fast was Lei Yu's reaction speed? Although his body couldn't float in the air like the Pope, and it was impossible for him to have a pair of wings to fly like Bel, his ground techniques were solid and stable. Even if he was currently amidst a swamp, it still wouldn't effect Lei Yu's speed that much.

"You may be fast but I'm faster!" Lei



Yu utilized his speed to the maximum and a golden light suddenly shot out from the Ares boots. Like a cannonball, Lei Yu's body shot out to clash head on with Bel.

“Crack!”

“Ahhhh~!”

The scene was like two bullets striking each other in midair. Bel hissed in anger as his body abruptly bounced up into the air. He then howled towards a certain direction. At this time, Lei Yu's senses clearly alerted him that during his steady probe of the surrounding area, there was someone dashing towards them at breakneck speeds. Lei Yu was shocked, “There's actually

another Sixth Order expert approaching us?!”

Since Bel was up in the air, Lei Yu could have jumped up in attempts to attack him but this would cause Lei Yu to be in a defenseless state. And the figure who was travelling at breakneck speed suddenly emerged from edge of the dark woods around the swamp lands.

“Haha! I thought you could take care of everything so I didn’t expect that you would call me out to help you!”

“Stop your bullshit and quickly transform!”

The person that just arrived had a muscular body with a head full of brown hair. He started chanting

some strange spell and his large body started to become even larger. In mere seconds, his 1.8 meter tall body became a giant who was 3 meters tall. We can't even call him a human anymore because the muscles on his body enlarged to a point where they ripped all his clothes off. Shreds of cloth started fluttering onto the ground while gray hair started extending out of his skin. The hair on his back became a lot longer than the rest of his body as his mouth and nose started stretching forward. Fangs with a flickering cold light was now exposed from his mouth. His hands and feet also underwent a big transformation – thick pads were formed on them while sharp claws started growing outwards.

“A Werewolf!” Lei Yu exclaimed in shock.

“No, not just a Werewolf.” The Pope in the back narrowed his eyes before continuing: “He is the same as Bel, a Senator of the Dark Council. He’s the leader of the Werewolf clan, Werewolf King Jonathan! Two people who usually don’t reveal themselves had actually appeared here today. It looks like their purpose of coming out here together was to make sure they gained the treasure they don’t know anything about!”

“Werewolf King? He’s the King of the Werewolves? No wonder he has the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior.”

“Cut the bullshit!” Shouted Bel who was still flying in the air. “Aren’t you very strong? So let’s fight! Let me see what exactly do you Asians have to be so proud of yourselves!”

# Chapter 159:

## Teleportation

Bel and Jonathan both rushed at Lei Yu at the same time. They didn't even bother to deal with the Pope, who had no more strength to attack.

Even though the speed of Werewolves could not compare to the ghostly dexterity of Vampires, the moment their strength exploded forth was still extremely strong. But for them to choose to clash with Lei Yu head on was a mistake – Lei Yu's reinforced skeletal structure had metallic properties to them and an all out melee fight was what he truly preferred.

“Boom~!”

Jonathan and Lei Yu were the first to clash, their bodies unable to separate for a brief amount of time. spurts of blood were constantly seen flying from Jonathan's body because Lei Yu's attack was simply too fast. Although the two's momentum did not diminish, Jonathan's body had started accumulating injuries that weren't light at all.

For the Dark Council to be capable of competing with the Vatican for so many of these years was due to their bloodthirstiness and their lack of fear towards death. With blood red eyes, Jonathan had no intention of retreating at all. As for Bel, he pulled back and started undergoing

a transformation. While Jonathan and Lei Yu were fighting each other, he had finally completed the final stages of his transformation. Every bone joint on the black wings behind his back had actually grown a sharp thorn, like the point of a spear. His original fangs had also started growing longer, sharper, and even more sinister looking. A dark red glow now surrounded his entire body, as it caused the air around him to fluctuate.

Both Vampire Prince Bel and Werewolf King Jonathan had appeared together. These two pillars of the Dark Council showing up together were epic proportions not seen in a thousand years. The Pope could only sweat as Lei Yu engaged in battle with them. There



was no way he could fight right now because the injuries Lei Yu gave him weren't something that could be healed in a short time. There was only one thing he could help Lei Yu with, but now wasn't the right time.

Jonathan roared out: "Asian man! You dare to harm my noble body?! I am going to rip you into thousands of pieces! Complete and utter shreds!" After roaring again, Jonathan rushed forward head on.

"Do you have the ability? You dark creatures of night are able to survive in this world due to the blessings of the heavens. If I were God, I would definitely not bless you bloodthirsty villains!" Lei Yu's tall figure suddenly exploded backwards. The next moment, the

spot where he was originally at had become a large pit of mud. This was an attack that Bel initiated while he had been flying in the air all this time, but fortunately Lei Yu escaped just in time.

Having undergone transformation, Jonathan was someone who won't bother to stop attacking. Without hesitation, he rushed forward again. Lei Yu coldly humphed before shouting: "Lunar Star's first form!"

A purple light mixed with white starry dots, brightened up on his arm. Lei Yu rotated his arm and swung out a semicircular light that completely stopped Jonathan's advance.

Lei Yu didn't stop what he was

doing and focused his stare on Bel's body. "The second form!"

Compared to the first form, the second form was like a meteor with much more lethality and speed. Bel flapped his wings trying to sidestep, but how could Lei Yu's attack be so easy to dodge?

"Agghh~!"

The meteor-like power cut through one of Bel's wing. At this moment, not only was he in pain, but he also lost his balance and was on the verge of falling.

Lei Yu saw his opportunity. The two colors purple and white, started making "pak pak" sounds on his arm. The domineering purple light

with white dots in the background soared into the sky.

At this time, it was night time already. With Lei Yu's arm emitting a bright light, the clothes on his upper body instantaneously turned into confetti. With his exposed tanned skin, the lightning brand on his right arm looked particularly clear and striking due to the internal energy pulsating through it.

"I knew the Dark Council wasn't something good. Since you are both here, it makes things easier for me. I doubt the Dark Council will have anymore existences of ultimate experts? I will take care of both of you here and now!" Lei Yu coldly shouted. His loose hair started

fluttering in the wind, making him look like a grim reaper that had experienced countless kills on the battlefield. Lei Yu was now filled with the domineering aura of an emperor, and it even made the injured Pope on the side feel humbled by that sight.

Even though Werewolves and Vampires were creatures of darkness in Europe, they still borrowed their strength from beasts. Whether they were Werewolves or Vampires, facing Lei Yu who was emitting a bright light, made them feel a bit uncomfortable. This was undoubtedly a psychological deterrence that interrupted their previous momentum. Bel, who was struggling to stay afloat inches

above the ground, subconsciously felt an impending danger. Was this the power a Sixth Order Warrior was supposed to have? No! It's not! The strength Lei Yu exhibited was something beyond the Sixth Order, a strength on the same level as the Devil Lord! The two became hysterical because it was now useless whatever they tried to say to Lei Yu. They were the ones that struck first and not Lei Yu. They didn't even have time to think things through because Lei Yu had already completed condensing his power. "Lunar Star's third form!"

The dazzling bright light made everyone in the area unable to fully open their eyes. Lei Yu had spent a lot of internal energy for this move so if the attack missed, the chances

of winning this fight would become very difficult. That's why no matter what, Lei Yu had to completely lock onto his target!

“Now's the chance!” His left index finger and middle finger clamped together. He then slid those fingers along his right arm from top to bottom, guiding his energy down his arm. The fully condensed energy, at a terrifying level, instantly burst forth. It appeared that Jonathan and Bel were in an overlapping straight line (one behind the other). This was exactly the condition that Lei Yu wanted!

“Oowwww~!”

“Ahh!”

Jonathan, Bel, and the Pope, who wasn't that far away to the side, all stared with big round eyes.

“Impossible!”

This was Jonathan's first thought. Someone on the same level as him was actually capable of releasing such a powerful attack. This was something too unbelievable, yet the reality was in front of his eyes. The attack Lei Yu released was purple electricity filled with white starry dots, like a moonlit poisonous snake in the dark night. Its smooth scales of shining light rushed forth giving everyone who laid eyes on it the chills.

The speed of the attack wasn't something the naked eye could see



clearly. Merely a brief moment and the attack had penetrated through Jonathan's strong body. It went in through his stomach, but did not stop there. Behind Jonathan was Bel who was completely shocked, but we have to say his reaction speed was extremely quick. In the microseconds of time, he saw Lei Yu's attack arriving near his chest and at the last moment, his body suddenly disappeared from the spot!

"Shit!" Lei Yu said to himself. "It looks like this damn Vampire is not only very fast; he also has some powerful ability up his sleeves. I underestimated my enemy, damnit!"

Jonathan's bloody red eyes were round and wide as his body slowly

toppled to the ground. Because he was seriously injured, the mud around his feet was like the demons of hell that started swallowing him slowly. Watching his own body gradually sinking down, Jonathan didn't even have an ounce of strength to resist it.

Bel's sudden disappearance wasn't accidental. This ability he activated in the nick of time was something unique to Vampires – teleportation!

# Chapter 160:

## Forging Great Hatred

This ability was something he wouldn't activate unless it was a last resort. This was because the consumption of energy required to activate it was simply too large. He would only use it if it was a life or death situation, and he had to be pretty sure his life would be forfeit if not used.

When Bel reappeared again, he was already next to the Pope. Since he couldn't take on Lei Yu, then he might as well do something that was beneficial to the Dark Council

– kill the Pope!

“You f\*cking bastard!” Lei Yu glared at Bel. The sudden change in the situation made him unable to react.

Bel’s hand was clamped around the Pope’s neck. He only had to use a bit of force and the Vatican would suffer their biggest loss in history.

“Ahhh~!”

As the situation became tense, a heart chilling howl was heard – this was the howl of a wolf. The first to react was Bel. When he looked over at Jonathan, who was about to be submerged into the swamp suddenly dig himself out of the mud, he could not help rejoicing in his heart. At the same time, he

noticed that there was a full moon up in the sky.

“You guys are dead! Jonathan has achieved his ultimate form!” Bel faintly smiled, showing a pale face that was even more hideous under the moonlight.

An extra layer of golden hair grew on Jonathan’s back. His face that was not much different from a dog’s, was obscured by a golden light. His limbs became several times sturdier than before and the muscles on his body became more toned. His originally sharp claws and fangs started growing longer, and his previous height of 3 meters had now become about 5 meters tall. Red hair started growing from his head that was twice as long as

before. With his enlarged and robust shoulders, combined with a gigantic body exuding a dark red light, Jonathan now displayed an aura that was completely breathtaking. With a body that was filled with power, even Lei Yu's previous momentum was squashed down. The blood red eyes of the Werewolf King had never left the full moon. We could say that Lei Yu was quite unlucky to have encountered Jonathan on the night of the full moon. This was the time where a Werewolf released the full power of their nature, a time when people would fear them the most!

Jonathan didn't say a word; perhaps it wasn't even necessary for him to say anything. His actions would speak for him. His figure

disappeared in a flash as he directly burst forward. After all, the Werewolf King was different from other werewolves. The moment he charged forward, one could see that his enlarged body did not diminish his speed in the slightest. In fact, you could say he became more agile and faster. With a muffled roar, his speed somehow doubled in an instant. His two huge front paws with sharp claws made a swiping motion, creating a loud “swishing” sound. Ten piercing white streaks of light flew straight at Lei Yu’s location.

Lei Yu wasn’t dumb enough to just stand there and wait for the attack to arrive. He leaned back forming an arch-like bridge on the ground as he beautifully dodged the attack.

Lei Yu watched the ten streams of white light continue flying past him. It appeared the white light wasn't targeting Lei Yu anymore, but started heading towards the Pope and Bel's location.

"You freaking moron! Your violent true form truly doesn't distinguish friend or foes!" As a last resort, Bel reluctantly released his grip on the Pope's neck to dodge to the side.

"Not good!" Lei Yu shouted out. At a critical moment, the Ares boots shone brightly as his body charged forth like a shell being shot out of a cannon. Lei Yu's goal was to block the ten streaks of lights heading for the Pope.

The white streaks of light were fast,



but Lei Yu was even faster. He had utilized his own speed, along with the Ares boots to its maximum, making his speed almost comparable to teleporting!

“Ahh!”

“Whoosh~whoosh~” Lei Yu’s body shook a few times before standing firmly again. Fresh blood was seen dripping down his back and onto the mud.

“You... are you okay?”

Lei Yu shook a few more times before spitting out a mouthful of blood. Even he didn’t know why he would wage his life on the line to save the Pope.

Maybe Lei Yu saw the crown on top

of his head, making him remember Queen Telephassa from thousands of years ago. Or maybe Lei Yu was doing this for world peace. Lei Yu didn't consider himself as anything great; rather than let the dark forces win; he might as well protect the forces of light. To him, this was a mentality every normal person should have.

Lei Yu was heavily gasping for air. "I haven't died yet!"

The friendship shown today, the Pope would silently remember in his heart. In the past, the Pope could be considered strictly as using Lei Yu to achieve his purposes. But now, he was truly grateful to him. That previous attack was simply too fast and its destructive powers too

great. As someone that was already injured, once the attack landed on the Pope, he would definitely have died. What Lei Yu did basically saved his life, so how could the Pope not be grateful towards him?

At this time, two pairs of dark red light in a distance became brighter. A pair belonged to Werewolf King Jonathan who had already gone mad, while the other belonged to Vampire Prince Bel. The two were very close and all you could see were two red lights colliding in midair. Suddenly, a burst of sound like the air being torn apart was heard. Without hesitation, Jonathan once again rushed forth while Bel relied on his fighting characteristics and opted for long-range attacks. Bel wasn't as ambitious as

Jonathan, so he naturally would not want to fight head on with Lei Yu who possessed insane melee capabilities. Even if Lei Yu was already injured, he still preferred to act with caution. With large strides, Jonathan rushed forth like a meteor while howling in an imposing manner. His body was like a mountain as it pounced forth onto Lei Yu.

Although one wouldn't call Lei Yu's combat experience rich, he at least still had the ability to resist while being injured. With a shout, he grabbed the Pope's collar and they both flew backwards creating some distance from Jonathan. The spot they were originally at, a bottomless pit with elongated marks was seen in the mud – this was made by Bel's

attack from a distance.

Lightly exhaling, Lei Yu calmed himself down. Looking at the fast approaching Jonathan, Lei Yu started condensing what was left of his meager amount of internal energy into his hand, the purple light looked especially remarkable at night. Combined with the dots of starry light belonging to the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, Lei Yu focused his attention on Jonathan who was his target.

Even though Jonathan had underwent transformation to his violent true form, the spot below his chest still had traces of the wound caused by Lei Yu's previous attack. It wasn't considered much when compared to his huge body,

but the wound did go directly through and out his body, so there were still traces of blood spilling out.

Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless. The energy that was ready to burst forth was giving off a "hissing" sound on the palm of his hand, creating an extremely heart-chilling effect. This was Lei Yu's last chance at an attack!

Lei Yu's ability with theoretical thought was not too bad now. Ever since he received the cultivation method of the Thirty-six Lunar Stars, in a short time he was able to fuse his strongest original powers with the new technique into the best compatibility. Because of the fusion of two different powers, it

turned out to be at least twice as strong as either power alone . Using the Lunar Stars as the point of attack with his own power of lightning as the base; with those two mixed together; as long as Lei Yu willed it, then he could easily release an explosive power.

But doing so would quickly use up his internal energy. Even if he could defeat Jonathan quickly, behind him was still Bel. Lei Yu couldn't care too much about that anymore since gaining a bit more time equals giving him a greater chance to survive!

Watching as Jonathan's distance became closer and closer, Lei Yu shouted: "Now's the time!" The lightning net on his palm instantly

struck out as he flew forward to greet Jonathan.

Lei Yu's speed was too fast, making Jonathan unable to brake in time. Since the mud was simply too slippery here, Jonathan had stopped his feet but his body still slid forward about half a meter. The key was this half a meter since this was what took his life!

Lei Yu's hand had already penetrated into Jonathan's previous wound. The terrifying force of lightning first paralyzed Jonathan, rendering him unable to move. Then, the huge power of Lunar Stars instantly burst forth. Jonathan didn't even have time to feel any pain before the area where Lei Yu's hand had penetrated instantly



exploded. The scattered remains of flesh and blood had completely stained the surrounding mud!

In the middle of Jonathan's huge body, a large hole the size of person was seen. From the perspective behind the huge body, Lei Yu was still in his attack posture while Bel's wide and round eyes stared in disbelief.

Based on Jonathan's extremely powerful defensive body, an artillery shell may not even harm him in the slightest. But Lei Yu happened to rely on his personal strength to kill the Werewolf King, who had already transformed to his violent true form!

Sometimes when power was too

spread out, it would actually lower the defensive nature of it, but when it's concentrated into a single point, unexpected results may arise. For example, if a door was slammed onto an elephant, it may not sustain too much injury. But if we used a small knife, even if we use less power than using the door, then it could lead to serious injury or even death for the elephant. This is the scariness of concentrating one's power at a single point, and Lei Yu apparently did this quite well.

He utilized his own power to break Jonathan's defense open at a single weak point. He then used the explosive power of the Lunar Stars to instantly destroy the area surrounding his hand.

It was also at this moment that the Pope started murmuring something in the distance. A white light that wasn't very noticeable, appeared around the Pope before beaming towards Lei Yu's back. The latter's body trembled slightly but he didn't turn around to look. A warm energy started slowly spreading out through his entire body making Lei Yu feel very comfortable. Perhaps this was the true power that the Pope possessed. Still floating in the air behind Jonathan, Bel was only focused on Jonathan's dead body and wasn't paying attention on what the Pope was doing.

Lei Yu suddenly lifted his leg up and performed a side kick, kicking Jonathan's almost five meter tall body off into the distance of at least

ten meters. Whether his body would sink into the swamp or not, it didn't matter anymore since he was no longer alive. Even if there was a full moon hanging in the sky, it no longer played any role for Jonathan.

Bel's body was trembling as he floated to the ground. Enunciating his words one at a time: "Lei Yu, you actually dared to kill Jonathan. Not only have you forged a great hatred with the Dark Council, you have also become enemy number one of the Werewolf clan... you have killed their most noble and most powerful Werewolf King!"

"Are you f\*cking stupid?! So I shouldn't kill him and just let him kill me?" Lei Yu cursed.

“Jonathan was the noblest descendant of their bloodline, you will pay for this!”

“I find that you scums enjoy putting the blame on other people. Think about all the people you’ve killed so far, have you ever thought that one day retribution would fall upon yourselves? Would I just stand here and do nothing while waiting for you guys to kill me? Simply ridiculous!” The logical reasons Lei Yu spoke made Bel unable to respond at all.

“You just wait...!” Bel started flapping his wings and flying into the air. “You will regret your actions today! We will show you the consequences of going against the Dark Council!” The voice of Bel

started getting softer as he flew off into the distance.

# Chapter 161: You And I Will Join Forces

“Bleghh!” Once Bel left, Lei Yu immediately coughed a mouthful of blood out as he clutched his chest gasping for air. If it wasn’t for the previous light heal by the Pope, Lei Yu would probably have fainted already. It would have been impossible for him to keep standing and converse with Bel since Lei Yu had completely lost all ability to fight any further. Fortunately, Bel didn’t realize this or the consequences would have been disastrous.

“May God be with you, the Vatican will forever be your most loyal friend. My dear Mr. Lei Yu, are you okay?” The Pope may have recovered a bit of strength now since he was able to stumble over to Lei Yu and help support him.

“You are truly blabbing nonsense; do I look okay to you? \*Cough cough\* Did you bring a cell phone with you?” Lei Yu asked while coughing.

“Cell phone? I’ve never owned a cell phone before.” Said the Pope.

Lei Yu felt helpless, “How can such an old person not even have a cell phone? I left in a hurry so I also didn’t bring one with me... ”



“Uhh... ”

“Let’s stop dawdling and get out of here, none of us can escape if Bel returns!”

Lei Yu and the Pope both hobbled to where Lei Yu parked his car. They then drove to a nearby city and found a random hotel to temporarily stay at. After Lei Yu’s rather strong demand, the Pope finally agreed to put on a new set of clothes which Lei Yu took out of his storage ring.

The two then began to recover their strength and their internal energy. Through the help of the Pope, Lei Yu’s injuries rapidly healed. Although the effects weren’t as fast as the green energy, it still wasn’t

too bad under the circumstances.

Lei Yu and the Pope did not have much to say to each other since the two had already reached a consensus. The day Lei Yu leaves the U.S. would be the day he hands over the Ares boots to him. If the Pope were to say anything more about that subject, it would most likely annoy Lei Yu. It was after a full three days before Lei Yu was able to fully recover from his injuries. Since he was extremely worried about his people in New York City, the two parted ways.

Fortunately, everything was calm and nothing major had happened. It seems that Jonathan's death had a great impact on the Dark Council. The passing away of a member that

was a super expert would definitely be quite a loss to any organization. In addition, Bel was seriously injured as well since Lei Yu drilled a hole in one of his wings. He probably needs some time to heal himself.

However, from this day on, Lei Yu had made a powerful enemy – the Dark Council!

Lei Yu wasn't sure if saving the Pope was the correct choice, but at least he averted a worldwide chaos.

Lei Yu was going to hide the information about the Ares boots from everyone temporarily since it would be his secret weapon. Bel would naturally notify the Dark Council about the whole situation,

but he would definitely not tell Dr. Tony since they were originally enemies. The Bounty Hunters Guild belonged to Dr. Tony, and who knows how many Vampires of the Kameno family and the Werewolves clan his bounty hunters have killed. They will definitely settle matters with Dr. Tony, but this is also where contradictions arise.

Lei Yu saved the Pope. No matter how much Lei Yu refuses, the Pope would certainly treat him as a friend. The problem occurs when it comes to Dr. Tony, since Lei Yu would definitely not be on the same side as that asshole. That guy used ordinary people as experimental subjects to make them become his own slave. Lei Yu will sooner or later remove that type of evil from

the world. He also has to step up the speed in taking care of his business because the longer he stays in the U.S., the more dangerous it will become for him. In other words, he has to remove the scourge of society as soon as possible so that he can return to Tenglong country in peace.

Making up his mind, he ordered Black Panther to carry out a series of tasks while a major plan was taking place in secret.

As a priority, Lei Yu had to find the headquarters of the Dark Council and eliminate them while they were unprepared.

After going through multiple channels and even thickening his

face to ask the Pope, Lei Yu still came up empty. When he actually thought about it, if the Pope knew where the headquarters of the Dark Council was, he would have most likely attacked it a long time ago. There's no way that the Pope would allow such an evil organization to co-exist with them for hundreds of years.

Outside the Vatican's Hall of Light, Lei Yu and the Pope were standing side by side. "My friend, let me know if you have any requests. The Vatican will spare no effort to support you!"

"Requests?" Lei Yu thought for a bit... The current most pressing problem was his forces were weak. Although he has a few experts, the

majority of his subordinates were merely regular people. If he had a few more people with the strength at the Fourth Order Warrior or above at his disposal, the later things would be easier for him to accomplish. Lei Yu then said: “The first problem I have to solve is in regards to manpower – my subordinates at the strength of a Fifth Order are too little. If the people of the Dark Council seek me out, it will be extremely difficult for me to handle them.”

“That’s an easy matter to solve. Wouldn’t it be best if you joined forces with the Vatican and together, we can destroy all remnants of the Dark Council?”

If it was like back then, Lei Yu

might have hesitated, but now he had no choice anymore. With an enemy aircraft aiming for his head, the pressure did make one feel suffocated. Lei Yu nodded, "It's doable, but I have a condition!"

"Please tell me."

Lei Yu looked at the Pope before saying: "I hope your holiness will break off your relationship with Dr. Tony, or else, it would be difficult for us to work together."

The Pope didn't dare to hesitate, "Not a problem. Compared to someone like you that possesses a holy object, Dr. Tony is not even worth mentioning. I agree to your condition."



“There is one thing I’m curious about... it can’t be possible that within the Vatican, you’re the only one that has reached this degree of strength, right?”

The Pope’s expression had a slight change before he thought for a bit. Since Lei Yu was willing to sacrifice himself to save him, that feeling should be reciprocated. Nodding his head, “Correct. There’s another super expert within the Vatican but he only takes orders from Prophet Kalchas. Since the Prophet has already passed away, it can be considered that he’s no longer controlled by our Vatican. Unless the Vatican is about to be destroyed, this person will not appear.”

“Oh? Such a person exists?” Lei Yu was surprised. He wasn’t surprised with the hermit-like hidden expert, he was surprised that someone would be that devoted to another. This extremely interested Lei Yu.

“That’s right, his identity is truly mysterious to the point that we can use the word ‘elusive’ to describe it. Since the creation of the Vatican, he and Prophet Kalchas had always been together.”

“How long has it been since the Vatican was founded?” Lei Yu asked.

“We already have five hundred years of history.”

“Another old evil spirit!” Lei Yu

didn't say this out loud. Sighing in his heart, it looks like this world has a few unusual existences. "Then his strength should be very strong right?"

Mentioning this person caused the Pope to have an expression of worship on his face. In order to make the Vatican's top level figure, who was respected by millions, to have such a face, how powerful was this elusive person?

"That's right! He is an ascetic cultivator, and his name is Lycomedes Romon. Lord Romon is the most powerful existence I have ever encountered. The Vatican had experienced two crises, one of them almost destroyed us. But his appearance completely changed the

situation of the war, he single-handedly reversed a hopeless situation by repelling our enemies and saving the Vatican!”

-----

1 – Lycomedes is the family name, Romon is the first name.

# Chapter 162: Some Movement

“He sounds really powerful!” Lei Yu couldn’t help lament in his heart.

What extent of power has someone like this achieved? Could it be that he had already surpassed the strength of a Sixth Order? “Ascetic cultivator? What is that? Also, you said that he appeared together with Prophet Kalchas, right? So what type of relationship did those two have?” Lei Yu asked.

“An ascetic cultivator could be considered as one that practices bitterness. His cultivation method is very unique, where one inflicts

various means of torture on their own bodies. Tolerating the pain that normal people aren't able to handle to achieve an unimaginable willpower is also a way of cultivating. As for the appearance of Prophet Kalchas and him... When the Vatican was first established, no one dared to ask what relationship they had since they were the ones that assisted the Vatican on its path to glory. A few decades ago, when the previous Pope had pushed the Vatican to its peak of glory, Prophet Kalchas and Lord Romon had left the Vatican. Tens of years later, when I took over the position as Pope, Lord Romon suddenly returned to the Vatican and informed us of the passing of Prophet Kalchas. This piece of news caused a huge commotion. After

the death of Prophet Kalchas, who rose up with the Vatican, his previous followers guarded his memorial tomb for a full ten years.”

“When you refer to his followers, that’s the Burlinder family, Bishop Hawes’ mother, right?” Lei Yu asked.

“That’s correct. And the sudden reappearance of Lord Romon was followed by him leaving again without a trace.” As the Pope was saying this, he seemed really emotional, showing how regrettable it was that Prophet Kalchas died.

“I really want to meet this ascetic cultivator.” Lei Yu faintly said.

“That’s impossible.” The Pope

repeatedly shook his head. “Even I wanting to see Lord Romon is an impossible matter. Unless he appears on his own accord, no one knows his whereabouts. Besides, Lord Romon has never met with anyone not belonging to the Vatican. There’s only one person and one issue he cares about in his entire life.”

“One person and one issue? What are they?” Lei Yu asked out of curiosity.

“One person represents Prophet Kalchas, since Lord Romon has followed him ever since the beginning. The one issue is very strange to describe... Lord Romon has a habit that no one has figured out. Whenever there’s thunder and



lightning, he would go outside to the Vatican's ritual platform and sincerely worship the skies while Prophet Kalchas stands behind him. No one has ever dared to ask why they do that."

"Worshipping the lightning?!" Lei Yu repeated in surprise.

When Lei Yu was in ancient Greece and hadn't come back to the modern times, he used the pseudonym Lightning. Since this Roman person was inseparable from Prophet Kalchas, it looked like there was a certain relationship to ancient Greece. But the validity of his was hard to determine. Perhaps, this was purely a coincidence but Lei Yu still felt surprised about the situation.

But there's one thing that Lei Yu had doubts about – did Prophet Kalchas really die? When Lei Yu travelled back thousands of years ago to ancient Greece, Kalchas had already existed for at least a thousand years. There's no doubt that there was a connection between Minotaur Linos being his owner and his longevity. But now that Lei Yu once again heard of Kalchas's name, since he can live for at least three thousand years, how could he die so easily? Maybe his death was for real, but there's a chance it may not be.

Despite these questions; since the Pope said that even if he wanted to see the ascetic cultivator would be near impossible, there's no need for Lei Yu to keep bringing this matter

up. Returning to the main topic:  
“You holiness, when do you think  
the Dark Council will make their  
move?”

Without hesitating, the Pope  
replied: “There are two possibilities:  
Vampire Prince Bel is currently  
seriously injured and the Werewolf  
clan’s Werewolf King Jonathan has  
been killed by you. The strength of  
the Dark Council has been greatly  
reduced, so I believe that even if  
they want vengeance, it shouldn’t  
happen in the near future. The  
second possibility is that they  
simply do not dare to act. The  
Vatican and the Dark Council have  
always been irreconcilable, since we  
could never find the location of  
their headquarters, wanting to  
destroy them in one go is

impossible. But them want to overturn our Vatican is wishful thinking as well. With the blessing of God and the protection of Lord Romon, they aren't capable of it. One thing I am sure of is they won't take any actions for now."

Lei Yu nodded since he felt the words of the Pope were reasonable.

That day when Bel left, he should understand that Lei Yu had saved the Pope's life. Even if one thinks with their butt, they should realize that Lei Yu and the Vatican were now standing together. The Vatican now had two Sixth Order experts while the Dark Council only had one left. Moreover, there was a problem the Dark Council didn't know about and they could only

take a guess – and that’s Dr. Tony. Cutting off the relationship with Dr. Tony was something Lei Yu and the Pope had just agreed on, so even Tony himself didn’t know about, not to mention the Dark Council.

Taking the airplane prepared by the Pope, Lei Yu returned to New York City.

That night, something terrible happened in New York City. Lei Yu was unaware of this because he was in a deep trance while cultivating. Once Black Panther fully grasped the situation, he arrived at Lei Yu’s place early in the morning.

“Young master, something bad has happened!”

“Tell me.” Said Lei Yu as he dried his wet hair.

“Last night, the streets of New York City were covered in Vampire shadows. Around three o’clock in the morning, over a hundred bodies were found!”

“What?!” The color of Lei Yu’s face paled. “How could something like this happen?”

Lei Yu couldn’t believe something like this would happen. Ordinary people were also the target of their attacks?

“This indeed happened. Last night, our nightclub was also attacked, but there were only a dozen or so Fourth Rank Dukes and a dozen or

so Third Rank Marquis. Gray Bear and I, including some of our people were able to kill some and scare some away, so there weren't any casualties on our side."

Lei Yu frowned. "It looks like we're their target and the ordinary people on the streets were attacked to cover-up their scheme. This won't work... tonight, we'll stop our business for the night. I want to see what they're capable of!"

Lei Yu didn't expect that the previous speculation he and the Pope discussed would be completely wrong. The Dark Council actually dared to attack in such a short period of time which meant that the seriousness of the situation was bigger than anticipated. What Lei

Yu had to do now was to bring his people together so that those that needed protection would be protected, and the rest will all be on stand-by for a fight!

Even though Lei Yu felt that he wasn't able to accomplish much while alone in the U.S., things in life were at times contradictory. If there were a large amount of people under him, that meant a lot of people would need to be protected which may drag down his efficiency. But as a man, if he couldn't even protect his own woman and friends, then he might as well admit that he was a little b\*tch and call it a day!

Escaping wasn't a sign of cowardice, they were merely



preparing for an explosive attack later on.

After Lei Yu contacted the Vatican, those two forces both headed towards Mr. Hawes' huge estate to group up.

# Chapter 163:

## Arrival Of The Pope

On the Vatican's side, the Pope personally went into action. He brought three Red Cardinals and eighteen Holy Knights. Only people who had attained the strength of a Fifth Order were eligible to enter the ranks of the Holy Knights, and these eighteen people only listened to the orders of the Pope. Even though they were on the same level as the Red Cardinals, in a different sense, their status was more distinguished than the Red Cardinals. The Holy Knights weren't something that ordinary people got to see or meet on a daily

basis.

Today was different from the past since the Dark Council had now made their move. Since the Vatican and Lei Yu had forged an alliance, they had to spare no effort in supporting him. Lei Yu had saved the Pope's life after all. So as the supreme ruler of an organization, he didn't want to owe someone such a large favor. There's a saying that at times, the favor eclipses the heavens and it is very difficult to pay off.

The Burlinder family was extremely busy. Everyone used their fastest speed to clean and furnish the rooms. There were two master bedrooms, one for Mr. Hawes and his wife and the other one for his

mother. Now, the original furniture of those two rooms have disappeared and have been changed for their new owners, the Pope and Lei Yu. There's no doubt about the Pope's distinguished status since the family originally took orders from the Vatican. Since Lei Yu was his mother's benefactor, in addition to having a deep relationship with the Pope, Lei Yu naturally received the most favorable treatment. As for the other people, such as the Red Cardinals and Holy Knights that the Pope brought along, they had to share the guest rooms with 2 – 3 people to a room.

Mr. Hawes and his family were standing outside the large manor waiting. This place was suddenly bustling with activity, so it was

natural for outsiders to ask what was happening. Once they found out that the Pope was coming, these believers devotedly stood on the lawn outside the manor and around the estate to await his arrival.

But at this time, everyone looking at the roads and the air didn't see any oncoming cars or aircrafts.

“Lafayette.” Mr. Hawes faintly called his daughter.

“What is it father?”

“What do you think of Lei Yu?” Mr. Hawes voice was very soft, soft to the point that only Lafayette could hear it.

Being asked about Lei Yu, Lafayette shyly blushed suddenly. “Why are

you bringing his name up?”

Mr. Hawes smiled, “I can see that ever since Lei Yu left our house, you’ve been a bit gloomy and you are completely different to before.”

“You’re so hateful, I’m not going to talk to you.” Lafayette pouted and she couldn’t hide her shyness.

“If you like him, why not pursue him? You need to know that it’s difficult to find such a young man with that much strength and status in any country. Do you really want to miss out on this opportunity?”

“But... but he already has Ai Er. How could I...?” Realizing her slip of the tongue, she abruptly stopped talking further.

Mr. Hawes wasn't too concerned, how could he not know what his own daughter was thinking? Still with a smile, "In this world, apart from family, your personal love will be the next most precious thing. If for certain reasons, you give up on your own personal happiness, you might regret it for the rest of your life. In other words, there's no shortage of women behind the figure of a strong man. Not to mention how beautiful my daughter is, there's no need to fear some competition!"

"This..."

"It's a deal then. I will create a chance for you this evening so that you and Lei Yu will be alone together. You must grasp this

opportunity!”

Lafayette nodded shyly, her face already buried in her collar making her look quite cute.

But who knew that Mr. Hawes’s move right now would make him beyond regretful in the future...

A lot of people were crowded around the property of the huge estate. Everyone was extremely excited, hoping to glance at the Pope’s figure. We don’t even need to mention the aspects of order here because the people had nothing but respect for the Pope. Everyone watched their manners and they stood in place with their heads lowered.



Just then, the sound of a helicopter was heard from a distance. “The Pope, his holiness is arriving!” Someone shouted in the crowd. All eyes turned to the sky and sure enough, they saw a helicopter arrive and land in a clearing. The Pope was dressed in his usual attire, white robes embroidered with golden threads. Following behind him were the three Red Cardinals.

“May God bless you all, my children!” The Pope had a benevolent face while saying this.

All the believers were excited to the extreme. Many of them were clutching onto the Bible while reciting the verses. The Pope didn’t want to stay outside for too long in fear of causing a commotion. It was

best to head inside and talk about matters later.

The Pope directly walked towards the castle-like manor and went inside. The Burlinder family also hurriedly went inside while several bodyguards stood by the door as if fearing people would rush inside. If unwelcomed visitors did manage to get past them, they would suffer the consequences of dereliction of duty.

Entering the castle-like manor, the non-essential people were denied entry, only the old woman and Mr. Hawes were allowed entry. Even Mr. Hawes's wife and his daughter Lafayette weren't eligible to enter.

The Pope's entourage quickly settled the necessary tasks before

leaving in a hurry. The rooms inside the castle were specifically prepared for the Pope and his high-ranking followers.

“Follower of the Prophet, has Mr. Lei Yu arrived yet?” Asked the Pope.

Hawes stood silently to the side, not daring to say a single word. It looked like he was even afraid to lift his head up. Hawes had never been qualified to see the Pope, which meant he had no qualifications to speak to him today as well. One could see the tension on his body was immeasurable as he was now face to face with the Pope.

The old woman replied: “Most holy father, Mr. Lei Yu has not arrived yet. You should first rest for a bit

and I believe he should be here soon.”

The Pope nodded. “All of you leave first. Bishop Hawes, you stay.”

“Understood!”

The old woman and the three Red Cardinals left the room, leaving a nervous Mr. Hawes. Having attained the rank of a Bishop was all due to his mother’s connection. In fact, the Burlinder family was a noble family originally. Back then, Hawes’s father was the original follower of the prophet, but he had passed away due to certain reasons and the old woman succeeded him. The old woman did her job well and gained the appreciation of Kalchas. It was because of this that the

Vatican favored the old woman, which allowed her to know a lot of their secrets.

“Bishop Hawes, please remove the ring on your finger.”

Hawes quickly presented the ring in a very respectful manner. The Pope lightly nodded and said: “I have clearly seen your loyalty towards the Vatican. The merciful God will definitely bless you.”

“Thank you, your holiness.” Hawes respectfully said.

“Okay, you may withdraw now. Once Mr. Lei Yu arrives, do not hinder him regardless of the circumstances and allow him to see me directly.”

“Understood!” Hawes left the room, his heart still palpitating. Now, he was even more concerned by his own plans. It looks like the Pope sees Lei Yu in a very favorable light and their relationship wasn’t that simple. Just a single person was able to form an alliance with the Vatican meant that his future was limitless. His heart had become more urgent for his daughter to pursue Lei Yu now.

Playing with the old storage ring in his hands, the Pope mumbled: “I wonder if the old demon of the Dark Council will appear or not. If he does appear, I can only rely on the scroll inside the ring to deal with him!”

The two old rings must be together

in order to summon the ultimate  
arcane secret. No one knew about  
this, it was only told to each  
generation of Popes by Prophet  
Kalchas.

# Chapter 164: The True Location Of Their Headquarters

The crowd did not disperse around the estate. There was now over ten thousand people standing there, all around the lawns of the manor and out into the roadway.

At this time, a convertible Mercedes-Benz E-class was coming from a distance. In the driver's sat a youth, his eyes were filled with a deep and profound look. His looks couldn't be considered as handsome, but he gave people a feel of maturity as if he had been through a lot; which was something



women tended to like. Especially when it came to his uninhibited smile, it was a temptation that was irresistible for women.

A young beauty was sitting beside him in the passenger seat and in the back seat was another youth with a short hairstyle and a resolute face. Compared to a few years ago when he was just a fatty, he was now like a completely different person.

These three were none other than Lei Yu, Ai Er, and Liu Hao. And following closely behind them were a dozen or so cars. Inside these cars were experts of various ranks that Lei Yu had brought along with him. There were some bounty hunters, some mutants, and even some

people who came from Tenglong country.

Since they couldn't get through the sea of people blocking them, they simply decided to park their cars about a kilometer away from the estate and walk there.

Lei Yu and his group attracted the attention of many people who looked at them with strange glances. Today the Pope was visiting so what was this group of newly arrived people doing here?

But soon after, a youth clothed in the white robes of the church quickly ran over. He looked at Lei Yu politely and said:

“Distinguished Mr. Lei Yu, his

holiness has been waiting for you for a while now.”

“I understand.” Lei Yu lightly smiled.

Upon entering through the gates of the estate, Lei Yu couldn't help but be shocked by the Vatican's power and influence. This was just a small turnout of citizens at a local town, so he didn't expect to see so many followers of the Church. How many followers did the Vatican have around the world? It looks like he made the correct choice in saving the Pope that day. If the Pope really suffered an unfortunate accident, then an uprising would be inevitable and would be extremely difficult to quell.

Before entering the castle, Lei Yu bowed slightly to the Burlinder family. Hawes and his family wanted to go forward to greet Lei Yu but a Red Cardinal intercepted them. "Mr. Lei Yu and the Pope have some serious matters to discuss, no one else is allowed to interfere or enter!"

Lei Yu shook his head helplessly. He then said to Ai Er: "You and everyone else wait for me here, I will be back shortly."

Out of hundreds of people, only one person was eligible to enter. Lei Yu strode forth into the castle and on the first floor main hall, he noticed two girls in white dresses standing there.

“Mr. Lei Yu, his holiness is waiting for you upstairs. Please follow me.” One of the beautiful girls with a delicate face started guiding Lei Yu towards the second floor.

Lei Yu could be considered quite familiar with this place, but since someone wanted to lead the way, he might as well let her do her job.

Lei Yu could immediately feel the Pope’s location. The girl was about to announce Lei Yu and ask if he had permission to enter when the latter unscrupulously opened the door. “Your holiness, you’ve created such an impressive atmosphere with your arrival! I couldn’t even drive my car near here, which forced me to walk the rest of the way!”

Lei Yu's abruptness almost scared the girl out of her wits. Her face paled and she didn't dare to look up. If the Pope started laying blame, there's no way that she could handle the consequences.

But unexpectedly, the Pope hurried over to Lei Yu. "They are all the followers of the Church so there's really nothing I can do. Mr. Lei Yu, please don't mind it or take it to heart."

Even though she knew that Lei Yu's noble status was special, she didn't expect him to have such a close relationship with the Pope. The girl couldn't help but to secretly sigh in relief.

After the girl withdrew, the two

entered the room and closed the door behind them. After chatting about some pleasantries, Lei Yu said: “Your holiness, I do feel like we’re very secure at this current place. With such a powerful force gathered here, do you think that the Dark Council is stupid enough to come and attack us?”

“Naturally they would not dare to come here. Gathering here means that there’s no need to worry about our security. At least it guarantees the safety of the family and friends you’ve brought along.” Although the Pope’s remark was offhanded, Lei Yu could understand his meaning. It was obvious that since the Vatican was assisting in protecting his people, he had to support the Pope in return!

“Then I’ve really taken advantage of the Vatican. All the people I’ve brought are mostly Fifth Order Warriors who are indeed inferior to the Pope who has reached the powerful stage of the Sixth Order. They will all have to rely on being under your umbrella in order to guarantee their own safety!” With his words Lei Yu was trying to exaggerate his own stance and to zing the Pope at the same time. The people that Lei Yu brought with him were mostly Fourth Order Warriors which included Liu Hao. However, Liu Hao was very persistent and was able to master some mysteries pertaining to the Thirty-six Lunar Stars technique. If he fought against someone in the early stages of the Fifth Order, Liu Hao may not lose. As for the other



people including Black Panther, Gray Bear, Hu Jiong, the newly joined mutants, and some other Tenglong people who were living in New York City; the amount of Fifth Order Warriors Lei Yu brought along with him may not match up to the eighteen Holy Knights, but they weren't that far off. If a fight was to break out amongst them, there would be no telling who would come out on top. Then again, the Holy Knights still haven't arrived yet and a fight breaking out amongst themselves was something that definitely would not happen.

Finding Lei Yu's words were barbed, the Pope immediately avoided the conflict by saying: "The Dark Council and their forces and are not simple, I believe Mr. Lei Yu

understands that point.”

Lei Yu nodded. “Through various channels, I was also able to figure out some things. The Dark Council has a total of ten Senators, but only the Werewolf clan’s Werewolf King Jonathan and the Vampire clan’s Bel has the strength comparable to you and me. Now that Jonathan is dead, the only expert they have left is Bel. But in actuality, just like the Vatican, they also have a terrifying existence lurking behind the Dark Council. The Vatican has the ascetic cultivator Romon, but the Dark Council also has someone super strong with the strength beyond the Sixth Order rank.”

“That’s right!” The Pope nodded.  
“Even when you and I join hands, I

estimate that we still can't be an opponent of that super strong expert."

"It looks like the situation is quite difficult to handle. The Dark Council lost a Werewolf King so they will definitely make a move. If they were to really wantonly attack us, even though they aren't capable of destroying us, there would still be many casualties. This is definitely something I don't want happening." Lei Yu said this heavy heartedly.

As if not worried, the Pop then said: "It doesn't matter... as long as you and I work together, we can rely on the rings powerful ability the moment a critical situation arises. Dealing with them then shouldn't be a difficult task." The Pope played

around with the ring in his palms with a faint smile.

Lei Yu's eyebrow slightly rose up; it seems these old rings were definitely not simple. Although Lei Yu didn't know what secrets these rings exactly held, since the Pope said so in such a fashion, then their powers shouldn't be weak.

That day when the Pope delivered the ring to Mr. Hawes's mother who was the follower of Prophet Kalchas, his intention was to ensure the safety of the ring. His idea was to bring less attention to these two old rings and not to mention, these rings were something Kalchas wanted to leave to the old woman anyway. But since they were in a dangerous situation, and in order to

ensure his own safety, the Pope will no longer let other people hold onto the rings.

In another place, the Dark Council was getting ready to make their move. In a northern area in the middle of nowhere was a place filled with the aura of death. This was a place that ordinary people didn't want to enter since it was filled with a variety of dark and horrific creatures.

In the center of this area was a hill that wasn't very steep. On top of the hill, there was an old European looking castle in a dilapidated condition. This was the true location of the Dark Council headquarters.

“It looks like our small-scale actions aren’t having any effect, and they are actually weakening our strength.” Bel coldly said this as he was sitting at a huge conference table with a frown on his face.

# Chapter 165:

## Primus Hogue

Sitting at the end of the table was an honest looking burly middle-aged man who said: “They’ve already gone to Idaho and in that place, experts are like clouds (experts everywhere). I don’t think we will have any advantages if we were to perform a large-scale attack on them right now. Not to mention that our Werewolf clans’ Jonathan had already been killed by Lei Yu, so shouldn’t we first come up with a plan that will guarantee our success?”

“Experts are like clouds? They are looking down at our Dark Council!

Why should we allow them to bully us like we don't have experts of our own?" Bel slammed his fist on the conference table. It looked like the quality of the table was quite good since there were not any cracks on the table.

"Isn't this whole situation a mess that your Kamenno family created in the first place? If it wasn't for your family's incompetence of failing to create an alliance with Lei Yu, would today's situation emerge in front of us?" A person sitting at the corner with a cloak on that covered his face said with a cold voice.

"That day, you acted like you were better than others and only sent a Lord from your pool of subordinates to settle this matter. Now negotiations have failed and



you also failed to get the treasure that Chairman Primus Hogue wanted, you're still daring to show your anger in front of us? Absolutely ridiculous!"

"What did you just say?!" Bel suddenly stood up and pointed his finger towards that person before saying: "Moka! If you think that you had the ability, why didn't you go yourself? With what qualifications do you, a little Counselor have to dare speak like that to me, a Senator?!"

"Humph!" This person called Moka also stood up. "Are you disrespecting our Chairman Primus Hogue? I am his follower, could it be that I don't even have the right to speak here? You should mind

your own status!”

“You...!” Bel was suddenly speechless. Out of everyone present, he and Jonathan were indeed the most powerful. Since now he was the only one left with the Prince level strength, it still wasn’t the case where he could say whatever he wanted in the Dark Council and the orders would be carried out. There was still the Chairman of the Dark Council – Primus Hogue. He was a supreme expert who exceeded the Sixth Order, a character who everyone was afraid of. But during these recent years, he didn’t show his face to them at all and it wasn’t until recently when they saw him again. It was when the golden light appeared in the sky, Primus Hogue

told Jonathan and him to retrieve that object.

But now Bel had messed up everything to this point. Not only did he fail to get the object, the Werewolf clan's most noble existence the Werewolf King had also lost his life. Afterwards, he didn't make any comprehensive plans and even started immorally attacking ordinary people. If Primus Hogue were to find out about these, Bel would be subjected to a severe punishment.

For the time being, the atmosphere of the conference room was particularly intense as if a fight could break out any moment. Everyone started to persuade and calm down the two who were at

each other's throats. It looked like the Dark Council's unity needed an existence who could exert enough pressure for all of them to submit willingly. And it was clear that Bel wasn't that person.

They kept on debating about the situation but no solution or conclusion could be found, so they just shelved the whole thing for another day.

On the other side in a huge estate in Idaho, Lei Yu and Ai Er were walking on a lawn that seemed endless. They were romantically holding hands and looking up into the sky where the myriad of stars were glittering.

"Lei Yu!" Someone from behind

called his name. Lei Yu turned around and realized it was Mrs. Hawes.

“Madam, do you need me for something?” Lei Yu asked with a smile. Since when he first saw her, Lei Yu was wondering, how could a woman 30 – 40 years old maintain her skin that well. However, due to reasons of courtesy, he didn’t ask her. Furthermore, it was hard for a manly man like himself to be asking skin care questions.

“Yes, there is something. Right now, I can’t find the whereabouts of Lafayette. Since there are simply too many guests for these past few days, the servants are overwhelmed. I was hoping that Miss Ai Er can help me to manage the female

servants while I go out to take care of some errands.” Mrs. Hawes said.

“If that’s the case...” Lei Yu looked at Ai Er uncomfortably, in his heart he was somewhat reluctant. Even though they were quite close with the family, they still shouldn’t be having their guests perform tasks right?

But Ai Er didn’t seem to particularly care about this and nodded with a smile. “No problem. You go take care of your errands and I’ll keep an eye on the servants.”

Lei Yu had originally wanted to go with Ai Er but since she went to a servant’s room filled with females, it wasn’t proper for Lei Yu to enter. He could only walk around the

estate by himself to kill time.

Watching Mrs. Hawes drive away from the estate, Lei Yu turned around and a familiar figure gradually approached him.

“Lafayette? Your mother was just looking for you.”

“I know...” Lafayette nodded.

“You knew? Then...” Lei Yu felt that something was a bit off.

Lafayette blushed. “I... I have something to tell you.”

“Go ahead and tell me what’s on your mind.” Lei Yu looked very natural compared to Lafayette who was fidgeting all over the place.

“Actually... actually... I actually

really like you. I was hoping you would give me a chance to get to know each other. I can guarantee I'll do even better than Ai Er!"

"Ah?!" Although Lei Yu showed a surprised face, this wasn't that unexpected since he had been in these kinds of situation multiple times. What he couldn't figure out was that he and Lafayette never really interacted or spoke with each other that much, so when did she start developing feelings towards him? No matter what he thought, Lei Yu felt this whole situation was a little strange.

"I know you already have Ai Er by your side and won't accept another person, but it doesn't matter. As long as I can stay by your side, I am



willing to do anything and I'm also willing to wait for you."

Lafayette's words were actually against her own desires. In fact, her feelings towards Lei Yu were just an attraction. If the two were to be separated, her feelings towards him would most likely gradually fade away over time. But since Mr. and Mrs. Hawes gave her this script, she couldn't go against their words and could only say this to Lei Yu.

Lei Yu shook his head helplessly. "I'm not this great person that you think I am. Moreover, you're very beautiful and your family's status is very high, so there's no need for you to walk down this path. You shouldn't be wasting your time on me, okay?"

“But I really...!”

“I’m sorry but I still have to go cultivate. If there’s anything else, let’s talk about it tomorrow okay? Be good and go to bed early and stop over thinking things.” Lei Yu smiled as he said this. He wasn’t expecting Lafayette to go and replace Ai Er in managing the servants since he knew she definitely wasn’t in the mood for that right now.

Looking at Lei Yu’s expression, Lafayette didn’t know what else to say and could only turn around and leave.

Meanwhile, the situation came to a terrifying crossroad. But this wasn’t happening to the Vatican or Lei Yu,

and it wasn't happening to the Dark Council either. Something was going on with a fearsome person who had been hiding in the shadows all along – Doctor Tony.

In some ways, we could say that his research achievements had reached the highest peak. However his studies would not be recognized by any country since the Yamaguchi-gumi, which was an originally an organization with a big influence, was exterminated by Lei Yu. That's why no country was willing to take the risk in supporting his work anymore. And two days prior, he received a notice from the Vatican entailing the breakup of their partnership. This piece of news had made him completely explode.

“It looks like the Vatican and the Dark Council are truly treating me like I’m nothing!” Dr. Tony coldly said. “In order to cooperate with Lei Yu, the Vatican actually gave up our many years of partnership. And the Dark Council has been massacring my mutants’ non-stop, this is too outrageous!”

“Doctor, I think we should create some problems so the two will start killing each other. That way, we can clean up the mess and reap all the benefits.” Said a weird looking person standing next to Tony.

“What methods do you have?”

“Your daughter...”

# Chapter 166: I Love You A Lot

Dr. Tony thought for a long time before finally nodding his head.  
“This is indeed a good idea.”

Inside a manor in Idaho, involved personnel were living on the first floor amongst dozens of rooms. While Lei Yu, the Pope, and some other important people were living on the second floor in the VIP rooms. Even the owner of this castle-like manor had been placed in a small room on the first floor.

There were even some people who were living in tents outside on the lawn since the manor had already

reached its limit inside.

At this moment outside the manor, there were still a large number of devout followers silently reciting the contents of the Bible. While still walking around the estate, Lei Yu couldn't help but to sigh. "The Vatican hadn't really helped humans with any actual foundation, but they have indeed helped them spiritually to their best effort. Having so many loyal followers was definitely an intangible wealth. It looks like anyone wanting this force to disappear from earth would not be something easy."

Stretching his upper body, "I should really go back and cultivate now..."

Downstairs inside Hawes's room –

“You fool, you idiot! I created such a good opportunity and you still couldn’t grasp it!”

After hearing the shouts of Mr. Hawes, a weak female voice replied: “He already has a girlfriend. Why do you still want me to get involved? Aren’t you forcing me to become that hateful third-wheel?”

When he heard this, Lei Yu stopped mid-stride. Frowning outside the door, he was listening to the ongoing conversation inside the room.

“Can do something that will help our family for once? As a descendant of the Burlinder family, have you ever considered making some contributions to the family?”

Can you not see that one day Lei Yu will have amazing achievements? His achievements will definitely bring a lot of glory to our family!" Hawes sighed and continued saying: "I don't care what methods you use but you have to capture Lei Yu's heart. As for his girlfriend Ai Er, I will find someone to get rid of her so that he can completely forget about her. His girlfriend is an ordinary person and she is living in our castle, so finding an opportunity to take care of her will be a piece of cake!"

"You are crazy!" Lafayette was shocked; she never expected that her own father would make such a decision. Was this still the polite and friendly father who was the Vatican's Bishop?



“I’m not crazy. If we can smoothly resolve this situation with the Dark Council, then Lei Yu will become someone that is recognized by everyone in the world. Don’t forget the heavy-handed actions he used in the Kou country had already caused many people to pay attention to him. So for now, just get close to him and seize the opportunity when it appears. Do you really want him to slip through your fingers?” Said Hawes in a hysterical manner.

“No! I will not do what you’ve just said! You are nuts, are you still even my father?” Lafayette shook her head as she shouted. “Ai Er is so gentle and her feelings with Lei Yu are on such deep levels, why would you treat her like that? This isn’t

fair. Just because of your ambitions, you're willing to erase someone's life. This is something I, absolutely will not be a part of!"

"Pak!" A loud slap was heard. After that, one could only hear Lafayette's sobbing and Hawes's loud breathing.

Lei Yu heavily exhaled as his heavy footsteps went up to the second floor.

Coincidentally, Ai Er had just finished taking care of Mrs. Hawes tasks and was returning to her room.

"Ai Er."

"Brother Yu, what's going on?"  
Asked Ai Er when she saw that Lei

Yu's expression was a bit weird.

"Nothing much, I just feel like I do not really like this place anymore."

"What happened?" Ai Er gently held onto Lei Yu's arm and asked in a soft voice.

After he gently stroked Ai Er's hair, they both entered the room. "I don't really want to hurt others but there are times when it can't be avoided. I have to protect the ones who are close to me, so sometimes it's necessary to target them without prejudice to deal with the issue."

Ai Er couldn't really understand what Lei Yu was trying to say, but she still nodded in confusion. Gently kissing Ai Er's lips, "Go to

bed soon, I will head back to my room and cultivate.”

Everything seemed to be concentrated in one area now. On the other side, a Lamborghini sports car was being driven on the open road. Its destination was the other side of the U.S., a small town in the State of Idaho.

Although with his eyes closed, Lei Yu still couldn't concentrate enough to enter a cultivating state. He simply lay on the ground so that he could completely relax. The direct contact with the cool floorboards under his bare back made him sober up, as he carefully considered how to deal with this family.

Lei Yu wasn't too concerned when this family concealed their identity and tried to set him up because in a manner of speaking, it had benefited him. But now it was different, right now Hawes had harmful intentions against the closest person to him which made lei Yu reconsider everything.

“Should I give up the cooperation with the Vatican? No! This isn't a wise path; I can't screw up all my plans just because of one person's (Hawes) ulterior motives. Doing this is no different than something that a naive child would do. But I will always worry about Ai Er's safety if we stay here so what can I do?” Lei Yu was rolling back and forth, his mind coming up with numerous countermeasures but he

would then reject them one at a time.

“Donk, donk, donk!” Lei Yu heard knocking on the door. He quickly put on a shirt before opening the door.

“Lafayette?” Lei Yu was surprised when he looked at her face, it was clear she had just recently cried.

“Lei Yu, can I say a few words to you?”

“It’s... it’s too late right now, how about we talk about this tomorrow? Moreover, Ai Er is right next door so wouldn’t it be a bit inappropriate if she finds out?” Lei Yu didn’t want to point out what he had just overheard. After all, Lafayette stood

firm in front of her father and displayed her virtuous side. She was now the only person in the Burlinder family that Lei Yu had a favorable impression of.

“I’m begging you, just let me come in okay? I really have something important to tell you.”

After he saw Lafayette’s pleading look, Lei Yu nodded helplessly.  
“Fine then...”

After entering the room, Lei Yu deliberately left a gap in the door so that it wouldn’t fully close. Standing in front of Lei Yu, Lafayette was looking at Lei Yu’s disheveled clothes before she lightly bit her lips. “I’m sorry Lei Yu; I really do like you a lot.” After saying that, she

immediately wrapped her arms tightly around Lei Yu.

“I don’t want to hurt you so I advise that you to let go of your arms.” Lei Yu appeared very calm and didn’t show any abnormal behaviors due to her actions.

“No! I’m not letting go! I only want to be by your side. Whatever Ai Er can do for you, I can also do it as well. I only hope that you will accept my love for you!” Lafayette’s voice was slightly trembling. One thing Lei Yu understood was that Mr. Hawes made her do this. But what method did he actually use to coerce Lafayette into doing it? This was the unknown.



# Chapter 167: Shedding All Pretense of Cordiality

Lei Yu's arms lightly shook and Lafayette's arms naturally released themselves. She suddenly took a few steps back before she could stabilize herself, a layer of mist was already forming in her eyes. She was still clenching her teeth as she started undoing her clothes revealing her pale white skin and tempting body.

These actions of Lafayette were making Lei Yu feel somewhat

bored. Even though it couldn't be considered a lot, but this was already the fourth time experiencing something like this. First with Cui Ying Ying, then Nami, then Telephassa in ancient Greece, and now counting Lafayette was the fourth time. This trick the girls kept using was beginning to make Lei Yu uninterested in them.

[1]

Lei Yu just left his room and went next door to Ai Er's room.

"I'm in hiding – let me borrow your room so I can hide." Lei Yu said as he grinned cheekily.

"What? What's going on now?" Ai Er asked as she peeked out into the hallway.

Lei Yu immediately pulled Ai Er in for a hug. As Ai Er's face was against Lei Yu's well-developed chest, her body couldn't help but to start trembling. Even though these two have had some intimate times together, they still haven't done "that" act yet so Ai Er was still feeling a bit shy at times.[2]

"You're so hateful, the door's not even fully shut yet!" Ai Er lightly smacked Lei Yu with her blushing face; her rosy cheeks were already buried inside Lei Yu's embrace.

In the next room over, Lafayette's eyes were empty without any emotions. She looked like a dead person who could only eat and walk. She put on her own messy clothes and smoothed them out

before going back down the stairs.

At this time, Lei Yu silently followed her.

Lafayette had returned to her father's room without saying a word. Whatever Hawes asked, she just nodded or shook her head without saying anything.

“Say something! What exactly happened? Did you not undress in front of him?”

Lafayette suddenly raised her head. She was already disgusted at her father because of his previous words and deeds. However, she never expected that her own father would actually say these immoral words in front of her. She couldn't

stop her tears as they started to drip down her face again.

“You’re crying?! What’s the use in crying? Tell me, did you try to seduce him?”

Lafayette cried while saying: “I stripped! I stripped completely naked, are you happy now?”

“Then what did he do? What reactions did he have?” Hawes continued asking, not caring about her daughter’s indignity at all.

Lei Yu was standing outside the door while holding his cell phone; even he was thinking that Hawes should die at least a thousand times right now. A father who was even lower than an animal really sent

chills to a person's heart.

“He just left me in the room and walked out, he didn't even say anything to me!”

Not wanting to continue this conversation any further, Lafayette directly went for the door. Once she saw Lei Yu standing outside, she completely lost her thoughts but quickly lowered her head and left. No one would understand the turmoil she was experiencing in her heart right now. Everything seemed to be premeditated, which made her want to find a hole and just hide inside it forever.

Lei Yu put away his cell phone and went back upstairs.

That night, nothing else happened. Lei Yu successfully completed a cycle of cultivation and woke up early feeling in good spirits. After washing up, he went downstairs and noticed that a sumptuous breakfast was already prepared.

“Lei Yu, come try this. I had this beef dish specially prepared for you, it’s really tasty!” Mrs. Hawes’s face was full of smiles like she was expecting something. Lei Yu knew that she was involved with her husband’s plot, that’s why she sent Ai Er away and had Lafayette make her move. Lei Yu didn’t want to expose his knowledge about this situation. Unless the situation was at its last resort, then he didn’t want to make the atmosphere too awkward. With a slight smile, he

said: "Thank you Mrs. Hawes."

The Pope's breakfast had already been sent to him upstairs by his personal staff, so that's why he didn't dine with Lei Yu this time.

At this moment, Mr. Hawes appeared while stretching with a yawn. After seeing Lei Yu, he glanced around and did not see Ai Er with him, so he excitedly went over. "Lei Yu, did you sleep well last night?"

Lei Yu nodded but didn't even look at him. "Not bad, how about you Mr. Hawes?"

"Very good." Hawes's face was covered with a smile as he leaned towards Lei Yu's ears and



whispered: "Lafayette already told me everything about last night. It's not a big deal; I am more than willing to accept you into our big family. I won't tell anyone what you did to Lafayette, as long as you promise me to join the Burlinder family so everything will take its course."

Hawes's voice was very low, to the point that even Lei Yu had difficulty hearing what he said. But he did eventually hear every single word clearly. Hawes was trying to frame him, this made Lei Yu's brows tightly knit together.

Pushing Hawes away, Lei Yu conspicuously said out loud: "Tell me Mr. Hawes, what did I do to your precious daughter Lafayette

last night that other people shouldn't know about?"

Hawes never imagined that Lei Yu would dare to openly say this out loud without any shame. His face slightly changed but it quickly reverted back to his smiling face.

"Since you already know what I'm talking about, is it really necessary to say anything more? I hope that you will consider my proposal since this could be considered as taking responsibility for Lafayette, am I right?"

"Father!" Just at this time, it is unknown when but Lafayette was standing at the entrance to the dining room. "Don't you think you've gone too far with this?"

Last night, Lafayette clearly saw that Lei Yu was holding his cell phone as if he was recording something and she didn't bother telling that to her father. She never expected such a scene would appear before her early in the morning.

“Shut your mouth, your father is seeking justice for you!” Hawes had now shed all pretense of cordiality. Since Lei Yu had publicly asked for clarification, then he could only adapt his scheme and use it against him. “You should be clear on what you did to my daughter. I have a simple advice for you: Your girlfriend is still upstairs right? I'm sure there's no benefit to you if she were to find out about this.”

Among the people present, there were the eighteen Holy Knights, Black Panther, Gray Bear, Hu Jiong and a few Fifth Order experts. The Holy Knights didn't really care about this matter while people who were familiar with Lei Yu thought it was too funny and ridiculous. They've clearly seen how many beauties were around Lei Yu. Based on her attractiveness, Lafayette could not compete with Cui Ying Ying; her body couldn't compete with Nami's voluptuous body; yet Lei Yu still only loved a single person – Ai Er. Now that someone was saying Lei Yu did the deed with Hawes's daughter, not even ghosts would believe such an obvious lie.

Furthermore, why would Lei Yu even bother to eye the Burlinder

family's inheritance? That was even more laughable. Based on his identity, Lei Yu was the Lei family's noble second young master who possessed a wealth that could rival a country's. Based on status, he was a heavyweight that his own country gave special attention to. When we put all of this on the table, one could see how miniscule the Burlinder family was and how ridiculous Hawes's words were.

Lei Yu didn't even bother with saying anything and simply took out his cell phone and placed it on the table. The screen on the cell phone was showing an opened audio player application, and he only had to press the play button and the truth would reveal itself.

Liu Hao picked up the cell phone and pressed the round Play button. The sound of a conversation then started...

-----

[1] T/N: I'm not sure about other people but I consider myself a normal guy and I wouldn't be bored of girls constantly undoing their clothes and trying to attach their naked bodies to me!

[2] E/N: I don't know if I pity the MC or salute him for his resolve :)

# Chapter 168: The Family Falls Apart

“Say something!” What exactly happened? Did you not undress...”

There was no need for an explanation anymore. Everyone present was staring at Hawes with disdain, hoping he could explain himself.

“Bishop Hawes, you have insulted your identity and you have also insulted the Vatican!” The voice of the Pope could be heard from the second floor. His tone was cold and his face majestic as he stood there holding onto the stair’s railing.

“Your... your holiness! Let me explain! I... I only did this for the future of the Vatican!”

“Nonsense!” The Pope angrily yelled. “Holy Knights, execute the laws of the Vatican!”

“Yes, your holiness!” The eighteen Holy Knights neatly stood up in salute. Two of them went forth and picked Hawes up by his arms and dragged him outside. No matter how much Hawes screamed, it was of no use, his destiny had been determined.

The Vatican didn't really want to take the life of Hawes but his behavior had completely disgraced the Pope. Lying in front of so many people was a small matter, but he



actually dared to say in front of everyone that he was doing this for the Vatican's future; this was the point that was inexcusable.

Although the Vatican was a benevolent-oriented organization, the punishments they give out must still match the crimes – this was the authority the Pope had. Since Hawes blantly lied, then his punishment will be having his tongue cut out and no one could help him. No matter how much Lafayette begged and pleaded, it was of no use. Lei Yu also didn't want to get involved further because Hawes had the intention of harming Ai Er. Lei Yu had zero intention of stopping his punishment.

As for the mother of Hawes, Prophet Kalchas's follower, she did not dare to say a word. She could only watch in pain as her son kept screaming. She couldn't even blame Lei Yu since he wasn't at fault for this situation. If it weren't for her son being too ambitious, he wouldn't be suffering this misery. And there was no way out of this punishment because no one dared to go against the words of the Pope, or else it would lead to an even greater disaster.

Hawes was completely enraged after having his tongue cut off. He was in a lot of pain and they also had his status as a Bishop taken away. Since the old woman was the follower of Prophet Kalchas, she was still responsible for providing

this estate for the Vatican as a gathering place. And with or without Hawes, her words were the ones still that mattered the most inside the family. In a helpless manner, Mrs. Hawes took her husband and left towards a building that was over a dozen kilometers away from the main manor.

As for Lafayette, Lei Yu never blamed her. Her actions were coerced by her father so there wasn't really anything she could do. However, Lei Yu still felt sorry for the family since his presence caused this once glorious family to completely change. This did make him feel a bit guilty since a harmonious family had ended up like this. This wasn't the outcome he wanted to see but sometimes

that's how things turn out. If one had intentions to harm others, then one day they would eventually taste their karma.

Resolving this matter had caused a huge stir in this little town. But with the Pope's presence, any chance of a commotion was already suppressed by his people. Even though Mr. Hawes was well respected here, with the Pope around whose status was close to a God, how insignificant were everyone else's status compared to his?

A Lamborghini sports car elegantly arrived in front of the main gates of the estate. In full view of everyone, a beautiful girl with a hot body dressed in sexy clothes got out of

the car. The two guards stationed there by the Vatican asked her:  
“What do you want?”

“I am here to look for Mr. Lei Yu.  
My name is Bianca.”

After confirmation from inside, this super hot beauty got back inside her car and drove into the estate.

Lei Yu, Ai Er, and the rest of their group were already standing outside the castle waiting. From a place that was hidden out of sight, Lafayette was hiding behind a huge pillar while examining Lei Yu. She truly liked Lei Yu in her heart, but the consequences of how she was forced to approach him damaged their relationship as they distanced themselves instead. Her father's

actions had caused her to distance herself from Lei Yu, which made her heart ache. The pain she was feeling was worse than death but what else could she do about it?

“This place is really beautiful!”

Bianca could not help but to sigh and praise as she got out of the car. She then ran forward to give Lei Yu a big hug. Even though Lei Yu tried to push her away, Bianca was still an expert of the Third Order so it wasn't that easy unless he summoned his powers. He could only awkwardly smile as Ai Er on the side gave him a flat stare.

Lei Yu smiled as he led Bianca into the lobby of the castle. As they passed Lafayette hiding behind the pillar, her face was frozen. Seeing

how hot Bianca was made her realize how laughable her actions were last night.

Ai Er's refined beauty had already made her submit in admiration. Now another hot beauty showed up and it looked like the relationship between her and Lei Yu was quite close, which made her almost go crazy. How could she even compare herself to this Bianca?

With a heavy heart, she walked towards her car and left, completely leaving the area. Perhaps she may never return, but one thing was for certain, she wouldn't be looking for her father who had hit rock bottom.

No one cared about Lafayette's

departure since no one knew, everything looked and functioned as normal.

“Lei Yu, how have you been lately? After seeing you live in such a luxurious mansion and being accompanied but such a beautiful girl like Ai Er, your life is pretty much the envy of everyone!” Teased Bianca.

“You can still make jokes like that huh? If you were in my place, I doubt that those thoughts would even cross your mind. I’ve killed Jonathan who was a Senator of the Dark Council, so do you think I’m having a good time here?” Lei Yu didn’t plan on hiding anything in front of Bianca because the things she knew were far more than what



he knew.

“I have something very important that I want to tell you alone, so I’m not sure...” Bianca deliberately looked at Ai Er who was next to Lei Yu. The latter gently smiled and said: “You two chat, I’m going upstairs to take care of some things.”

Once Ai Er Left, Lei Yu waved his hand and Black Panther and others immediately left the area.

“Say it, what’s this important matter?” Making Ai Er leave made Lei Yu a bit uncomfortable but he still asked Bianca what was going on.

“Something dangerous will happen

to you soon.”

Lei Yu smiled, “I know, but I’m still safe while I’m in this area right?”

“Nope.” Bianca shook her head.

“From what I understand about Lei Yu’s personality, if his friends or relatives were in trouble, he will disregard personal danger and go rescue them right?”

“That’s right!” Lei Yu nodded in affirmation. “My friends and family are really important to me so I will ignore everything to help them! Wait...!” Lei Yu suddenly came back to his senses. “What do you mean by those words?”

Bianca sighed. “I can only say that you were brilliant in your life but

still screwed up a single moment! In Tenglong country, your friends and family have enormous forces protecting them so they are fine. As far as I know, you should still have someone who is very important to you in the Kou country right? You've brought Black Panther and Gray Bear to the U.S. with you and didn't leave any experts at the Fifth Order or higher to protect her. Do you really think she can protect herself?"

Lei Yu bounced out of his seat with eyes wide and round. "What do you mean? Are you saying that Cui Ying Ying is in danger?"

"No, she's not in any danger since it's already arrived. The Dark Council has already made their

move, moving her from the Kou country to the U.S. That's also why I'm saying you will soon be in danger because I know you won't stay still without doing anything about it."

"F\*ck their uncles, those sons of b\*tches!" The thing Lei Yu hated the most was people using hostages to threaten him. But as of now, it looked like this situation couldn't be avoided.

# Chapter 169: What To Do?

Lei Yu was extremely anxious but he had to maintain a clear head. If what Bianca said was true, then he had to quickly figure out a way to save her.

Although Lei Yu had some unspoken feelings for Cui Ying Ying, it wasn't love as one would think. Lei Yu had drawn a very clear line of separation when it came to his feelings. Inside Lei Yu's heart, Ai Er's position was something no one could replace. But when it came to Cui Ying Ying and others, or even the most casual friends, Lei Yu still cherished them from the bottom of

his heart.

“Lei Yu, don’t worry too much for now.” Bianca tried comforting him.

Lei Yu gently shook his head and slowly sat back down. This situation wasn’t something he could handle alone, he had to find the Pope and discuss this with him. Since the two had formed an alliance, then whoever had difficulties would assist the other. This was also an opportunity to see the Vatican’s attitude.

“Since I know the situation now, the next thing I have to do is to find a surefire plan. Do you have any good suggestions?” Lei Yu tried not to worry because worrying right now was useless.

Bianca thought for a bit, “I actually have many solutions but their degree of success is very low.”

After a while, Lei Yu said: “I’ll arrange a room for you so go get some rest first.”

Bianca knew that now wasn’t the time to disturb Lei Yu so she silently nodded and left. But when she saw Lei Yu sitting there by himself anxious about another woman, it made her heart felt somewhat sour. She was originally apologetic to be the bearer of bad news, but now it seems her jealousy had overpowered all other feelings.

Before she came here, Bianca’s course of actions was completely known by Dr. Tony and his people

because it was him who repeatedly told her what to say and do. Bianca was unwilling to do this at first but after all, it was her father making her so she had to comply. Inside her heart, Bianca was still very fond of Lei Yu or else she wouldn't have ignored all dangers just to notify him of her father's previous kill order.

Cui Ying Ying was not abducted by the Dark Council but instead was taken prisoner by Dr. Tony. His purpose was to stir up trouble between the allied Lei Yu and Vatican against the Dark Council.

Lei Yu made a ruckus as he rushed towards the Pope's room. He had never believed in God and was never a follower of the Church. In



Lei Yu's mind, the Pope was just an existence that cultivated to exceed ordinary people, he was no different from anyone else.

“Mr. Lei Yu, your facial expression doesn't look good. Did something happen?” The Pope got off a huge sofa and asked in a puzzled manner.

Lei Yu nodded as he went towards a window and sighed as he stared out at the green lawn. “Yes, something indeed happened. The Dark Council has started using their underhanded methods. A good friend of mine has been captured in the Kou country so I'll have to make a move earlier than planned.”

“You should know that the Dark

Council will not hesitate to use any extremely sinister means. I'm afraid if you rashly make a move, you will be the one in the disadvantage!"

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and locked them onto the Pope's figure. "Could it be that the Vatican that allied with I, Lei Yu, wants to standby and not do anything about this?"

Noticing Lei Yu's mood swing, the Pope hurriedly shook his head. "No, I was just thinking that we need to discuss this in detail and make an accurate deployments. Also, there's something I don't understand about this. Why didn't the Dark Council release the news that they have captured your friend, but it was another friend that had come to

inform you?”

Lei Yu seemed to have sensed something since he didn't think about this previously, but he soon ignored those doubts. Ever since he had known Bianca, she gave off a feeling that she was someone that knew everything. And every information she had provided to him so far was highly accurate. Although Lei Yu had maintained a degree of wariness towards Bianca, because of the urgency of the situation made Lei Yu choose to completely believe her words this time. This was how Dr. Tony was exploiting a human's weakness; he was able to manipulate Lei Yu who had abnormally strong feelings to those he cares for.

“Even if this information is false, I still have to try.” With these words, Lei Yu picked up his cell phone and dialed the number for Cui Ying Ying.

Sure enough, the phone started ringing but no one picked up on the other end. Holding onto a slight glimmer of hope, Lei Yu’s heart once again dropped to the ground. If Cui Ying Ying was in the hands of the Dark Council, how was he to find her? Even the Pope, who had been struggling for hundreds of years against the Dark Council didn’t know the location of their headquarters, so how could Lei Yu figure it out?

How difficult was it to find a sesame seed in a pile of sand?

Trying to find the headquarters of the Dark Council couldn't be easier than someone that's been searching for all these years. Lei Yu fell into distress as he had these thoughts.

“Does your holiness have any solution to this?” Asked Lei Yu.

The Pope was thoroughly thinking about this. From his past experiences, there were only two possibilities for something like this to happen so he said: “Pertaining your friend, her life should be safe for the time being. You have to understand that if the Dark Council really did this, that's because they can't subdue you which resulted in them making such a move. That's why I think we have to remain calm during this time.”

Lei Yu nodded since he came to the same conclusion as well, but the anxiety he was feeling didn't diminish since he was blaming himself very being negligent.

Taking Black Panther and Gray Bear out of the Kou country resulted in the mutants protecting Cui Ying Ying to be no stronger than the Fourth Order rank. It looked like those that took action were stronger than the Fourth rank. If Black Panther and Gray Bear were still around, it was possible this situation would not have happened. Even if they still took a shot at it, the Dark Council would not have succeeded so easily.

Lei Yu was lost in his own thoughts as countless scenarios were playing through his mind. He was hoping

that he could find the most suitable solution to this situation.

In another part of the estate, Black Panther had received a phone call from the Kou country so he rushed to the area where the Pope was staying at. However, four Holy Knights were blocking his way. When Lei Yu came by, the knights didn't dare to stop him because the Pope had already passed them a message. More importantly, it was due to Lei Yu's strength. Even if they wanted to stop him, how could their measly Fifth Order strength stop such an expert?

But it was different when it came to Black Panther; the knights had enough power and reason to uphold their duty.

“Move aside! I have something important to tell the young master!” Black Panther urgently yelled.

“This is where the Pope is residing so it’s not a place you can come and go as you want. Mr. Lei Yu will come out sooner or later so just wait out here.”

“Don’t piss me off!” Black Panther coldly said as he narrowed his eyes. “An important friend of the young master is in trouble. If I don’t notify him immediately, I bet you guys will have to suffer the consequences!”

It was more than once that Lei Yu had Black Panther protecting Cui Ying Ying. Even though he knew Lei Yu only loved Ai Er, Cui Ying Ying had an important status in Lei Yu’s



heart. Black Panther had received a call from his previous mutant group saying Cui Ying Ying mysteriously disappeared. This had caused a great commotion in Kou country so why wouldn't he be anxious to let Lei Yu know?

"It doesn't matter what you say, this is the Pope's residence so you cannot enter – this is our duty!" Replied a burly Holy Knight in a cold voice.

"Motherf\*cker, you're forcing me to make a move!" Black Panther pulled up his shirt sleeves as he was about to take action.

# Chapter 170 - Without A Trace

“Stay your hand!” Lei Yu’s voice could be heard. They all looked back and saw Lei Yu who was standing outside the doorway with a melancholic look.

“Young master, something very important happened!” Black Panther hurriedly said.

Lei Yu half-heartedly waved his hand and said: “I already know what happened to Ying Ying. There’s no need for further words, just follow me.”

Lei Yu hurriedly went back to his

own room while Black Panther was trying to keep up with him. The burly Holy Knight who had previously blocked Black Panther sneered: "What's so special about him? Compared to our holiness, I bet he's still a ways off."

"I think so as well. He's relying on possessing our Vatican's holy object to be this arrogant and overbearing. If it wasn't for our Vatican, it's likely he would already be exterminated by the Dark Council."

"You damn bastards!"

These knights suddenly turned around, "Ahh! Your holiness...!"

The Pope angrily said: "From this day onwards, I don't want to hear

these types of discussion, got it?”

“Understood!” The several knights were shaking and they didn’t dare to lift their heads. To them, the Pope was like the heavens!

The Pope sighed heavily and smoothed out the sleeves on his robe before heading back into his room. Every time the Pope thought back to when Lei Yu took the Ares boots, his chest would tighten because this was considered a shame to the Vatican. The Pope couldn’t get it with his own strength while Lei Yu obtained it. And his life was also saved by Lei Yu. This was a great shame for the Vatican’s great Pope, not to mention it being brought up by his underlings behind his back.

“Young master!” Black Panther lowered his head as he stood by the doorway.

With his hands behind his back, Lei Yu was standing by the window and said: “Black Panther, I need you and Gray Bear to both protect Ai Er and not let her encounter any danger. Are you capable of that?”

“Young master! You’re not thinking of doing...”

“Answer my question!” Lei Yu suddenly turned around, his eyes did not look like he was commanding Black Panther but instead they looked like he was pleading with him. Black Panther was startled and started nodding furiously. “Please be rest assured

young master! Even if we lose our lives, Miss Ai Er will be safe, so please set your mind at ease.”

Lei Yu nodded with satisfaction. “Thank you. I think I need to do something because I can’t just wait around here.”

“But it is too dangerous. And you don’t even know where the Dark Council’s headquarters are so aren’t you basically undergoing a difficult task akin to finding a needle in a haystack?” Asked Black Panther.

“I think I’ll come up with something. But what you guys need to do is to stay here, and tell Ai Er to wait for my return. Do not go anywhere else!”

Black Panther nodded. Lei Yu then said: "Invite Bianca here, I have something to say to her."

Within a cigarette worth of time, Bianca knocked on the door before entering.

"You've come up with a plan?" Bianca immediately asked.

Lei Yu lightly sighed. "No, I haven't but I have something I need your help with."

"Say it. No matter what it is, I don't think I'll refuse you." Bianca's eyes were filled with sincerity. It looked like she would agree without hesitation even if Lei Yu asked her to do that "act" with him.

"Thank you." Lei Yu lightly nodded.

“I just want to know one thing... how did you find out the news about Ying Ying being captured by the Dark Council?”

Lei Yu’s question did not make Bianca show any abnormalities in her facial expression. It looked like before she came here, everything was already choreographed.

She nodded her head and said: “My father was the one who received this information.”

“Your father? He is...?” Asked Lei Yu who was a bit surprised.

“Dr. Tony.”

“What?!” Lei Yu was shocked. He knew early on that Bianca and Dr. Tony had an unusual relationship



or else how would she know so many things? What he never expected was that they were father and daughter.

“That’s right, he is actually my father. I’m sorry for concealing this information from you for so long, but I was forced to do this. Please believe me, I have absolutely no malicious intentions against you. Or else that time next to the Statue of Liberty, I wouldn’t have told you those things and wouldn’t have helped you all during all that time.” Bianca’s eyes were filled with sincerity.

Lei Yu lightly nodded. Lei Yu had felt Bianca was very mysterious and to think that she had also concealed her identity for so long, but those

things weren't important now - the important thing was that she had never tried to hurt him. Even if she had thought of hurting him, Lei Yu never detected it. It looked like Lei Yu had completely lost his ability to judge things because he didn't continue asking further questions on this subject. Bianca grasped this point and knew disclosing her identity would make Lei Yu beyond shocked. She was betting on Lei Yu not asking too many questions about how she knew that Cui Ying Ying was captured because even if he asked, she would just push everything on her father. If Lei Yu continued to have some doubts, he would only suspect things and not find out the truth.

“I know you've never tried to harm

me.” Lei Yu was now contemplating the words he previously said about Bianca helping him out. Bianca’s current identity made Lei Yu feel more or less a bit awkward. After all, Dr. Tony used to be on the same side as his nemesis Hasegawa. Since Bianca was Dr. Tony’s daughter, Lei Yu had to be more cautious now.

“By the way, you had previously asked me to help you with something right?” Bianca purposely changed the subject.

“Eh? Oh yeah!” Lei Yu’s mind went into overdrive and remembered what he was about to say. “I was originally thinking how difficult this situation was, but now that I know you are Dr. Tony’s daughter, then everything will be easier. I

would like you to go back and talk to Dr. Tony about cooperating with me.”

“This...” Bianca was deep in her thoughts because the probability of Lei Yu making that statement to her was almost zero. The scenario her father wanted to see was the Vatican teaming up with Lei Yu to battle it out with the Dark Council. Even though Bianca had an unexplainable feeling towards Lei Yu, when facing her own father, there would be an unavoidable conflict in the heart of a daughter. She couldn’t help but make a choice that benefited her father in the end.

“If this is something too difficult then forget about it, I’ll think of something else.” Said Lei Yu.

Bianca replied: "I will discuss this with my father and see what his decision is."

Lei Yu nodded. "Thank you. How long do you plan on staying here?"

"I will start preparing to leave now."

"Aren't you tired after driving so long? Why don't you stay for the night and see how things are tomorrow?" Lei Yu was pretending to care about her because he wasn't in the mood to be concerned by his rival's daughter.

"How could cultivators be tired from minor things like this? Don't worry about me and start planning how you're going to rescue your intimate gal pal." Smiling, Bianca

left the room and entered the place Lei Yu had prepared for her to gather her belongings to leave.

Lei Yu didn't want to make any excuses to refute Bianca's words, an intimate gal pal it was. Who told him to owe Cui Ying Ying so much?

After saying her farewells to Lei Yu's group, Bianca drove off in her sports car into the distance.

At the same time, Lei Yu had disappeared without a trace. No one knew where he went and maybe Black Panther was the only one who did know.

# Chapter 171:

## Actually Lied To Me

“Where’s the young master? He was here just a second ago and now I can’t find him.” Gray Bear said in confusion as he looked all over and didn’t find Lei Yu.

Black Panther watched a black shadow rapidly disappear off into the distance before saying: “The young master is taking care of something and has already left.”

Ai Er was inside her room since she didn’t go out to send Bianca off. She wasn’t a narrow-minded person or anything like that but she coincidentally received a phone call

from home. The one on the other end of the line was her father Nuo Yi Long.

“How could something like this happen? Does Brother Yu know about this?” Ai Er asked in disbelief.

Nuo Yi Long sighed, “Since something like this happened, those in the Kou country would definitely notify him as their first priority. I believe that he is currently making his own move now. For such a man, he is carrying too much burden on his shoulders. Sometimes I wonder if allowing you to be with him is something good or not.”

“How can you say such things like this right now? Brother Yu and I absolutely won't be separated. Ying



Ying is currently in danger so I believe he will not just sit idly. And Ying Ying is my friend so I hope she will safely get past this crisis.”

“Just think things through yourself, and let me know if anything new comes up. That’s it then.” Nuo Yi Long hung up the phone. Ai Er couldn’t sit still and left to search for Lei Yu. When Bianca left, Lei Yu also disappeared. Ai Er suddenly felt some kind of foreboding and wanted to ask around, but both Black Panther and Gray Bear didn’t know anything. Liu Hao was also asking around before he found out that Cui Ying Ying had been captured. Even though he was anxious, he couldn’t do anything about it and could only wait for Lei Yu to bring back some news.

Bianca was driving quite fast, but about a hundred meters or so away from her was a black shadow dashing through the forest next to the highway. The shadow's speed was extremely fast to the point that it reached an unimaginable speed. That's right, that black shadow was Lei Yu who had disappeared from the estate.

Lei Yu wasn't dumb; he of course had some doubts with what Bianca told him. Since he didn't know where the Dark Council's headquarters was, he was actually quite interested to see the location of Bianca's father, Dr. Tony. Maybe he even had some new information about Cui Ying Ying?

Although Lei Yu was constantly

consuming his strength to keep up his speed, the amount of energy consumed was very little. It was because he was wearing the golden Ares boots without him even realizing it. The energy he was using right now was almost proportional to the energy that he was recovering naturally. Lei Yu had absolutely no problems with maintaining his current speed for a long time.

Over the course of the night, Lei Yu was beginning to have some doubts on where he was going. This route was not heading towards New York but towards another location that was a basin, similar to a large crater. Trees and wild weeds were growing everywhere as they created an intricate environment. Someone

without a sense of direction would certainly lose their bearings here. But since Lei Yu had already locked onto Bianca's presence, he wasn't affected one bit.

The distance between Lei Yu and Bianca was just enough for him to sense her presence. Having the ability to detect someone's presence was a unique talent that maybe only Lei Yu had in the entire world.

As they got closer the basin, the roadway became narrower for Bianca. The trees in the woods also became denser which caused Lei Yu to constantly dodge left and right in order to not crash into a tree.

A ramp leading down to the lowest part of the basin was seen so Lei Yu

stopped in his tracks. “So Dr. Tony’s true hideout is at this location, no wonder no one was able to find it!”

At the lowest part of the basin was a small mound of soil. The basin was like a dish and the mound looked like there was a meatball in middle of it, which blended inconspicuously with the environment. Lei Yu peeked out to look and noticed that once Bianca’s car got closer to the mound, clanking noises started as a passage leading underground opened up. Observing what was going on, Lei Yu realized that entering this place wouldn’t be an easy task.

The reason why Lei Yu stopped and didn’t continue following Bianca’s car wasn’t because he was tired, but

he had detected the presences of mutants all over the area and the weakest of them had the strength of a Third Rank Mutant. With these mutants guarding the place, even if the U.S. sent in troops to clear this place, it was doubtful they would have an easy time clearing this place. But this scenario wouldn't happen since they thought that Dr. Tony wouldn't have such ambitious plans. Once he acted on those ambitions of his, it would definitely be a large-scale operation.

Mutants didn't have any positive contribution to society and they only caused unimaginable destruction. Especially when these mutants were under the control of Dr. Tony. Who knew what terrifying plans he had for the future? There

was no way Lei Yu would show any mercy to these mutants since he was planning to kill all of them one by one to successfully enter into the compound. If he was exposed with them still alive, he would definitely be under attack by all of them at the same time.

Darting through the woods, Lei Yu carefully took a detour to another area. He was heading towards the nearest pair of mutant guards, a Third Rank and a Fourth Rank.

The two mutants were sitting on the ground. One was using his binoculars to look off into the distance while the other one was sitting on the ground looking bored with a cigarette dangling from his mouth.

“The young miss has returned. It seems like everything is going well.”

“That’s right; it looks like Dr. Tony’s plan is flawless. I thought this so called Lei Yu was extremely smart but it turns out he is just your average Joe.”

Their conversation was completely heard by Lei Yu. He tightened his fists as he quietly got closer to them.

When Lei Yu was about twenty meters from them, he hid behind a large tree. When those two mutants started to chat again, listening their conversation made Lei Yu go completely crazy as his killing intent rose to the heavens.



“Are you talking about Dr. Tony kidnaping Lei Yu’s friend and then framing it on the Dark Council? What do you think Lei Yu will do when he can’t find her inside their base?”

“You’re such an idiot! If Lei Yu goes to the Dark Council to settle things, do you think he will believe them even if they say such a thing never happened? This isn’t something you or I can discuss so forget about it. Just properly guard our sector or else if someone finds out that we’re idly sitting and chatting here, we’ll be in big trouble!”

The other mutant squished his cigarette butt on the ground and stood up. He looked around and suddenly turned before freezing in

place.

“Monkey head, what’s up with you?”

Asked the person with the binoculars as he noticed his partner’s odd behavior. But no matter how much he spoke, his partner didn’t reply. His vigilance was immediately increased before carefully walking up to his partner and tapping his shoulder.

“Plop.” His partner suddenly fell to the ground. Once the body crumpled to the ground, a person suddenly appeared in front of him and stared at him with a terrifying glare. Even though the guard wanted to scream out, it was already too late.

Lei Yu's attack speed was too fast, he did not give the guard a chance to shout. A horrific looking hole could be seen on the guard's chest that gave off a slightly burnt smell.

"Bianca, you actually lied to me. It looks like this is the end of our friendship!" Said Lei Yu in a cold voice before setting off to find his next target.

# Chapter 172: Does Your Heart Ache?

There were a total of twelve teams in the perimeter. And it took Lei Yu about two hours to completely annihilate them all.

After adjusting his clothes, Lei Yu crawled out to the edge of the basin in order to carefully analyze the situation and wait for a good opportunity to make his move.

Around evening , there was a slight change in front of the mound of dirt. Lei Yu immediately focused his spirit as the golden Ares boots started to shine. Once the passageway opened to a certain

extent, Lei Yu rushed forth with his lightning-like speed. Since he was already running down slope, plus the fact that his original speed was quite fast, and he was even wearing the Ares boots, Lei Yu sprinted distance of 1000 meters in under 5 seconds.

A black Mercedes car was coming up from the passageway. Lei Yu made a quick judgment based after detecting that a Fifth Rank Mutant was driving it. Before the driver even noticed him, Lei Yu instantly used one of the abilities he grasped in the [Detachment Stage] and released the power of lightning from his right finger. It was an instant kill. A hole had appeared on the driver's head and he died without even realizing what

happened.

Lei Yu's action was quickly found out by the people inside. Around the basin and inside the mound were numerous surveillance cameras which were mounted in inconspicuous places. Even if Lei Yu's was very fast, he would still be found out. Since Lei Yu had used less than 10 seconds from running down the slope to killing the driver, the guards couldn't react fast enough even though they wanted to close the passageway.

“An expert has come, immediately notify Dr. Tony to make preparations!” Two mutants inside the control room panicked and shouted at their associates outside the door.

The passageway leading down was smooth and brightly lit. Lei Yu increased his vigilance to 120% as he carefully walked further down.

Knowing that Cui Ying Ying was captured by Dr. Tony had thoroughly enraged Lei Yu. He wasn't worried if he would encounter danger or not, but was more worried about Cui Ying Ying's safety as time went on. Lei Yu was never stingy with his emotions when it came to someone who helped him before, especially when that person was a close friend. Undoubtedly, friends and family was the most important things to Lei Yu!

With his perception ability, Lei Yu could feel that some people were

quickly approaching him. And the strength of these approaching people was all revealed before Lei Yu's ability.

Heading towards him were eight Third Rank Mutants. Lei Yu stood motionless with his hands behind his back. A surge of power was released from his body with a faint purple aura flowing out. The current him looked exceptionally calm with his emotionless face, making these eight mutants not daring to take another step forward.

The ground below Lei Yu's foot suddenly pulsated, and suddenly a pit had appeared on the flat ground when Lei Yu shifted his foot. The purple energy he was exuding made a "buzzing" sound that chilled one's



heart. The condensed energy transformed into multiple purple lightnings which were spreading out like an energy net with Lei Yu as the center. Each and every lightning easily sliced into the walls and the ground around him. Lei Yu was very similar to a fiendgod, which gave everyone present an extreme pressure. These eight Third Rank Mutants instantly felt that a powerful force was locking them in place, and the horrifying pressure suddenly made them want to back away from Lei Yu as their slow footsteps came to a stop.

The harsh “buzzing” sound became louder as it entered into everyone’s ears. The fluctuating energy around Lei Yu stabilized as if it became something similar to a chain. It was

firmly tied to his body forming an impenetrable mesh.

The space around then Lei Yu started to twist and distort.

“Boom!”

A purple lightning suddenly appeared as if it came from the heavens. Lei Yu's body disappeared from his original position as he hurtled forward like a drill. He was already in front of this group of mutants by the time they saw the purple lightning. With his horrifying gaze, Lei Yu's lightning net sliced through these eight mutants who were blocking his way and got rid of them in the shortest amount of time imaginable.

But things did not end there because four muscular and burly guys whom were clearly mutants rushed out from another passage. Lei Yu's perception ability told him these four men were at the peak strength of a Fifth Rank Mutant, so getting rid of them quickly wasn't an easy thing to do. If there was only one of them, then it would be easy as pie. But since there were four of them, Lei Yu had to come up with a good strategy.

These four mutants didn't slow down at all as one particular muscular mutant with blonde hair rushed forth with a grin. One could tell how heavy his body was when the ground shook as he stomped down for a burst of speed.

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and withdrew the lightning net to surround himself.

At this moment, the ground trembled once more as two more mutants burst forth towards Lei Yu. The last one leaped into the air and dropped down right behind him. With their actions, Lei Yu was now surrounded on all four sides by mutants who were only 2 meters away from him. If these four Fifth Rank Mutants were part of an organization, there would be no end of respect and attention they would receive. But since they were all at Dr. Tony's place now, one would wonder how many mutants was he actually controlling?

When the four rushed towards Lei

Yu, their fists were raised and they were ready to strike but couldn't. Of course they knew that there was a gap between themselves and an expert of the Sixth Order. They struggled to free themselves from the pressure which was exerted by Lei Yu before jumping backwards. Now they were preparing themselves for a second chance to attack.

Lei Yu was like the reaper of death who only wanted to find Cui Ying Ying as soon as possible to ensure her safety. A quick battle for a quick conclusion was the essence of a fight. There wasn't any benefits in delaying the outcome and would actually give his opponents more opportunities to take him down.

Lei Yu suddenly looked like he went crazy as he revealed his intense killing intent. His deep and profound eyes were now showing a terrifying gaze. Even a mutant who was being controlled could not avoid the pressure Lei Yu was exerting now. This was the gap a Fifth Order felt when facing someone of the Sixth Order, the pressure caused by their momentum could not be imitated.

Seeing Lei Yu's hands that were shimmering with a purple light was similar to seeing the Devil himself. A Cold look flashed in Lei Yu's eyes - his upper body didn't move but his left leg kicked out like a whip that was filled with lightning power. The previous blonde haired burly guy who was the closest, subconsciously

blocked it with both hands. He wasn't able to resist the incredible power transmitting through his hands which caused his large body to be blown into the air and land about 10 meters away. His whole body was trembling and he was unable to stand. It looked like Lei Yu's lightning power had penetrated into every part of his body. The other three knew that a Sixth Order expert was very strong, but they never thought it would only take a single strike for him to defeat one of them. This was under the setting where their companion was fully guarding himself, yet he was still forced into a situation where he could no longer stand up. How overbearingly powerful was this?!

Inside the control room and staring at the monitor screens, Bianca's mouth was agape as she witnessed what happened. She then mumbled: "No... I was wrong, I shouldn't have done it. I'm sorry Lei Yu but I had to do this since I'm his daughter." Deep inside, Bianca really liked Lei Yu. Even though she didn't know when this started, the feeling was undoubtedly there. But things have progressed to this point where it cannot be reversed. A crystal-like tear dripped out of the corner of Bianca's eye.

"Does your heart ache?"

A familiar voice came from behind Bianca. After wiping the tears from her eyes, she then turned around.



# Chapter 173: Your Father I, Will Hunt Some Birds

“Did you really have to take the matter to this extent?” There was no point in Bianca hiding her reluctance. She was already unwilling the day her father explained to her what he wanted. But there were times when one is helpless to act, and there were times when it is too late for regrets.

“He is a large obstacle for our future. Within Europe, the Vatican and the Dark Council already repressed us to the point that we can barely breathe. Since now a Lei

Yu character appeared before us, he'll have to become the sacrifice. Bianca, you will eventually forget these emotions over time. Don't become overly concerned about it or else you will push yourself into a deep pit of pain. You understand me right?" Dr. Tony lightly patted Bianca's shoulder as he said this to her.

"Sigh~" Bianca didn't know how to respond and didn't want to say anything more. She turned around and continued to stare at the monitors once again.

Lei Yu suddenly stepped backwards and avoided one of the three mutant's full-on attack. The instant when his opponent didn't have any time to recover his posture , Lei Yu

reversed his footsteps and bombarded the guy's head with his fist that was mixed with a strong power of lightning.

“Snap!” A crisp and clear sound could be heard and everyone knew what caused it. One could see that the burly guy who received Lei Yu's heavy blow crashed to the ground. The skin on his head was still intact but the interior of his skull and his brain were now a puddle of mush. The distorted shape of the head was quite a horrifying sight to behold.

Lei Yu withdrew his fist and coldly stared at the remaining two. These two mutants glanced at each other and didn't dare to rush forth anymore. The destructive power Lei Yu had was too great; it wasn't

something they could handle. Just when they were hesitating, a voice sounded in their mind. Suddenly, the eyes on the two become cold and their faces became emotionless.

At the same time, their bodies started to change. Their personal aura started rising off the surface of their body - one was black and one was red.

Lei Yu vigilantly took two steps back. The two mutants were clearly being manipulated and they were undergoing some type of genetic changes unique to themselves.

The two colors black and red started to combine with each other in the air as if they were fusing into

one.[1] Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless and he wasn't going to sit still while this was happening. If he allowed these two to complete their change, who knows what would happen. Acting decisively, Lei Yu burst forth like an arrow. He had made the right choice - once he threw out a vicious attack at one of them, he didn't get to complete the transformation. In an instant, his entire skeletal structure was shattered by Lei Yu and his body started to emit a burnt smell.

But when he wanted to attack to disrupt the remaining one, it was impossible now since he was already exuding a red colored light aura. The last mutant had already completed his unique transformation.

His mouth protruded outwards that appeared like a hard object, and the corners of his mouth slightly bent downward. Wasn't this the form of a bird species?

Sure enough, suddenly his back grew out two wings. Although the color of his feathers were brown, the red colored light aura backdrop gave him a shadow of the divine bird known as the Phoenix. Lei Yu knew that this mutant wasn't a real Phoenix, it was just an effect brought on by the formula of the mutagen.

Lei Yu gathered strength at his back leg and suddenly struck out. he moment before contact, Lei Yu's facial expression suddenly changed.

“Rip~” Lei Yu was forced backwards. A fireball had been spewed out of the mutant’s mouth which directly struck Lei Yu’s chest. The hot energy made Lei Yu think of one person - Bianca!

Lei Yu ignored the heat on his chest since it didn’t create any fatal wounds. After quickly charging his internal energy, Lei Yu’s body looked like it was covered in a spider web of shimmering purple lightning.

Without hesitating, Lei Yu once again performed a series of continuous attacks. The second time contact landed on his body; Lei Yu was even more surprised. With his current speed, how was it possible that he was unable to

avoid the mutant's attack? Could it be that it had a homing or a tracking effect? That wasn't right. Lei Yu couldn't feel any presence of the fireball, it was as if it didn't exist.

Lei Yu quickly understood something and made up his mind. He couldn't rely on his instincts in this fight, he had to rely on his eyes. He was going to use his eyes to determine trajectory of the mutants attack and then avoid its path.

With this decision, Lei Yu concentrated all his energy into one area. Even if he was struck by his opponent this time, his reciprocal attack would still take the mutant's life.



Of course, Lei Yu omitted one thing, which happened to be the most crucial one!

Lei Yu's figure was like a ghost while dodging around left and right. He did that in order to distract his opponent and prevent him from locking down his position. At this moment, the mutant didn't make a single move as if he knew his fireball attack would no longer be able to hit its target. The mutant just quietly stood still waiting for Lei Yu's arrival.

Cracking the ground below his feet, Lei Yu burst forth towards his opponent. His hand had already condensed a frightening amount of energy and any object he collided with would only have one outcome

- getting completely crushed.

The mutant still hadn't moved yet and Lei Yu's pace didn't slow at all. But once Lei Yu's fist that was filled with lightning energy was about to land on the mutant, he only saw the mutant's mouth curving into a strange smile before he shot up into the air.

Lei Yu overlooked this point, he completely forgot about the wings behind the mutant's back which allowed him to fly! Maybe there was still a slight trauma from the time he fought against the Vampire Prince, but Lei Yu really hated those who could fly. His attacks were greatly restricted against those with the flying abilities. Lei Yu could only rely on his internal

energy to perform long-distance attacks, but those consumed an enormous amount of energy.

Lei Yu's ordinary attacks allowed him to recycle the unused power. But when he used abilities that left his body, the power would fly out and his energy source would be continuously depleted.

Lei Yu's brows were tightly knitted together. Wanting to beat this mutant was actually quite easy, but who knew how many more mutants would appear afterwards? Ten? One hundred? Or maybe even a thousand?! If he consumed too much energy here, then the consequences would be disastrous for him later on.

Moreover, there was still the fearsome existence of Dr. Tony who was an Ultimate Rank Mutant. A single mistake and his life would end here, so what should he do? It wasn't wrong of him to impulsively rush to this underground base, but failure would be inevitable if he didn't quickly come up with something right now.

Lei Yu simply no longer attacked and was retreating a few steps backward. He then struck a heavy blow to the ground creating jagged cracks everywhere, causing uneven pieces of concrete to rise up into the air and scatter about. Lei Yu picked up one of these pieces of concrete; "Shit, since you can fly, then your father I will hunt some birds!"

As he finished saying that, Lei Yu suddenly threw out the concrete he was holding. It flew off similar to the speed of a meteor, but it also had a bit of internal energy mixed in. Lei Yu could still tolerate the small output of energy here so he wasn't too worried about this.

The mutant flying in the air didn't expect Lei Yu to do this and couldn't dodge in time; his left shoulder was hit by the piece of concrete. The concrete shattered while the mutant felt a burst of numbness at his shoulder. His left wing couldn't even flap for a bit causing him to almost fall down. But after a short period, his body adjusted itself before he regained his balance in the air.

-----

[1] - (E/N: GATTAI! xD)

# Chapter 174:

## Surrounded By

## Wolves

Lei Yu didn't stop and kept attacking several more times. This made the bird man in the air confused which caused him to rush at Lei Yu in desperation. Seeing that the mutant drew a dagger from his waist and diving at extreme speed, the opportunity Lei Yu was waiting for had finally arrived. Once the mutant bird man approached a certain distance and reached the optimum attack range, Lei Yu suddenly opened up his arms. He then jumped forth with his hands charged with lightning power,

watching the energy drill into the mutant bird's body without any resistance.

“Agghh!” After the miserable cry, this Fifth Rank Mutant's life thus came to an end with no chance of ever standing up again. As for his wings with brown feathers on his back, they were all charred black emitting a burnt smell in the air. Lei Yu gently waved his hand past his nose to get rid of this smell. Even though he didn't use up too much internal energy, who knew what else he would encounter later? It won't be easy when dealing with Dr. Tony!

Lei Yu carefully walked towards a door where those previous four Fifth Rank Mutants came from.



After strengthening his right arm, a powerful punch landed on the door creating a large hole. Lei Yu put his arm through the hole to unlock the door from the inside and went in.

Inside was a huge open space, its square footage was similar to the second floor arena of his nightclub. But this space was completely dark and empty, and some sort of ghastly aura was coming from an unknown direction. Lei Yu increased his vigilance and released his perception ability hoping to probe the surrounding area to figure out what was going on.

“Living entities have appeared!” This was the first thing that alerted Lei Yu, and there wasn’t just one or two of them. There were over a

hundred of them and they were all slowly coming towards him in the darkness.

Being surrounded by enemies was something Lei Yu had faced before, but having so many opponents who weren't ordinary people was something completely different. Even though most of them were at the Third Order level, there was still one with the strength of a Fourth Order. Facing such an imposing momentum still oppressed Lei Yu somewhat.

“Might as well attack first instead of waiting for them to make their move.” Lei Yu thought to himself. After detecting a gap in a certain direction with fewer mobs, Lei Yu figured that was as good as any

place to weather the coming storm. Making up his mind, Lei Yu quickly sprinted towards that direction.

What Lei Yu didn't expect was when he got closer to his opponents; they actually weren't mutants but were a pack of wolves. With their gray fur and green eyes, these wolves looked especially terrifying in this dimly lit place. Lei Yu sucked in a deep breath as a dozen or so hungry looking wolves charged at him. Saliva was dripping from their white fangs as if they had been starved for a very long time. The way they stared at Lei Yu showed the wolves were considering him as their meal.

Lei Yu wasn't going to give these animals an opening chance.

Quickly appearing next to a wolf and with his fingers like an eagle's claw, Lei Yu gripped the wolf's throat. Lei Yu looked around and noticed that there was still some distance between him and other wolves. He turned back to look at the wolf in his grip and felt that it had some human intelligence - this wolf actually had fear and panic in its eyes.

Without mercy, Lei Yu put strength in his fingers and a "crack" sound was heard. The wolf just took its last breath. Meanwhile, Lei Yu's figure rapidly dashed towards another direction like lightning and arrived next to another wolf.

After charging his fist with lightning, he raised it and let it fly

forth. His punch even produced some tremors in the air as it landed heavily onto the wolf's head. A "boom" sound was heard as it's head shattered; another wolf had died. "You bunch of animals, come at me!" Roared Lei Yu. After watching their own brethren being killed, the pack of wolves revealed their bloodthirsty eyes. The solidarity of wolves was common knowledge no matter what the situation was. A wolf's howl with resentment was heard from a distance and all the other wolves immediately rushed at Lei Yu. Lei Yu's speed was absolute and just shifting his feet; his figure disappeared and reappeared off far from where he was. "Bang!" Lei Yu's heavy kick caused a wolf to fly off into the air somewhere. Lei Yu then

flipped backwards and beautifully somersaulted in the air to land on the back of another wolf. The wolf panicked and frantically struggled but how could it escape from the grasp of Lei Yu? A heavy palm strike slapped down and completely shattered the wolf's skull.

A wolf's head was similar to a dog's and was extremely hard. And this wolf had the same strength as a Third Order Warrior. Being able to shatter the wolf's skull with a palm strike showed how tyrannical Lei Yu's attack was!

"Die!" Lei Yu shouted. A punch with a penetrative strength landed on a wolf with slightly yellow fur that had lunged at him. His fist accurately landed on a part of its

spine. With its eyes round and wide, it had already died because all the spinal bones it had were broken. Surviving this was impossible. “You still dare to come?!” Lei Yu turned around while kicking out, his toes directly landing on the wolf’s abdomen which was still in midair. The kick struck a vital area and the wolf’s dead body landed on the ground like a piece of sludge. The speed of a wolf wasn’t slow compared to other animals, but it still couldn’t be compared to Lei Yu’s agility that was more than enough to take care of them. In a mere five minutes, Lei Yu had gotten rid of half of this pack of wolves who originally numbered over a hundred, clearly showing his powerful strength.

From a distance, the wolf with the strength of a Fourth Order was staring at Lei Yu with eyes of resentment. Lei Yu concluded that this was the leader of the wolves with a highly respected status. Four wolves were standing in front of it as if they would fight to the death in order to protect their leader.

Lei Yu didn't know why this pack of wolves appeared here, but when it came to Dr. Tony, anything was possible. Since Dr. Tony was able to transfer animal and beast genes into humans in order to make them undergo a mutation, then transferring something inside the bodies of these wolves wasn't something difficult.

When facing these wolves, Lei Yu



only needed one strike to take them out, and at most two. Lei Yu's grasp of fighting was to directly attack the vital points because this was the fastest way in getting rid of an opponent. Even when your opponent wasn't human, they still had their own weak points.

A particular behavior of wolves was that they like to use their large numbers and surround their opponents. And this was the method they were using against Lei Yu. But this method wasn't achieving any results since Lei Yu was simply too fast. With the additional help of the Ares boots, Lei Yu didn't have to spend too much effort in maintaining his speed.

This steady stream of attacks did however make Lei Yu feel a bit tired so he turned his sight onto the leader of the pack of wolves.

Capture the ringleader first in order to subdue the followers!

Stepping through the crowd with a flash, Lei Yu no longer cared about the attacks that landed on his body by the other wolves while rushing towards their leader. In a perfect arc, the beautifully executed midair crescent kick fell on those four wolves protecting their leader.

One could only hear the miserable howls of these four wolves. After their bodies twitched a bit more on the ground, they could no longer stand up.

Lei Yu lightly landed on his feet and without stopping, he condensed his internal energy in the shortest time possible. Once a lightning net of energy successfully appeared on his hand, Lei Yu launched a frontal strike. This leader of the wolves wasn't slow at all, the moment Lei Yu's attack was about to land, it suddenly prostrated on the ground. A fist filled with lightning energy narrowly flew past the wolf's head making Lei Yu hit nothing but air.

It looks like the leader of the wolves wasn't a simple beast! That was Lei Yu's immediate thought, and it looked like the pack of wolves behind him weren't going to give him another chance. Lei Yu was attempting to attack the soul of this pack of wolves - their leader!

Lei Yu now realized he may have made a mistake. Capturing the ringleader first in order to capture the followers was a tactic used on battlefields. But when facing against these animals, it was counterproductive. The more he attacked their leader, the more violent the attacks he would receive from the other wolves. Lei Yu was now surrounded; in front of him was the wolf leader and behind him were a bunch of angry wolves.

# Chapter 175:

## Beyond Ugly

The shadow of his body was quickly dodging back and forth. Fortunately Lei Yu was wearing the Ares boots since speed was the most important thing for him right now, and he could effortlessly utilize it as long as he needed.

Although the previous dodge of the wolf leader showed its quick reaction rate, the gap between it and Lei Yu was impossible to make up for. A mere Fourth Order beast had a gap of over two levels when compared to Lei Yu. However, the two level difference didn't amount to three times more power; it was

possible the power difference was beyond ten times or even one hundred times!

Lei Yu's original plan had failed so he could only wait to find another moment of weakness to exploit.

One thing for certain was that once the wolf leader was killed, the pack of wolves would fall into chaos. At that time, he could easily take out the remaining few dozens of wolves in one swoop..

Lei Yu's level of agility could be described as having ghostly speed, as if air resistance didn't hinder him at all. Combined with his naturally explosive powers, his speed wasn't something these wolves were capable of matching. In front of other experts of the Sixth

Order, even if they wanted to gain any advantages over Lei Yu based on speed would also have a difficult time. Not to mention Lei Yu was currently wearing the Ares boots, his speed may have doubled or maybe even more. One could only describe his speed as terrifyingly fast.

Lei Yu's next attack was too sudden without any warning, and the extreme speed of that attack didn't give the wolf leader any time to counter it. Apart from trying to dodge, it had no other options.

One could hear a crisp "click" sound. The attack that Lei Yu used was half an inch from its body and struck one of its front legs. It was precisely this half inch that saved it

from death, but the outcome was that its foreleg being fractured. Wanting to stand steady on all four was no longer possible for this wolf leader.

At this time, the pack of wolves behind Lei Yu momentarily paused while glaring at him with their green eyes. They were looking at Lei Yu as if he was their greatest enemy under the heavens, and they had to shred him to pieces no matter what.

Lei Yu didn't care when he saw the terrifying gazes of the wolves. Slightly narrowing his eyes, he wasn't going to give these animals an opportunity to retaliate!

“Hoo~!” Roaring furiously, Lei Yu's body moved like a ghost at



terrifying speeds!

Fast as lightning and fists as heavy as a mountain! With such speeds and such power, how could the leader of the wolves continue to avoid these attacks? Those thoughts of the wolf were simply a mythical fantasy that would never happen!

“Owww~!” The howling sound was filled with sadness, and it made the rest of the wolves close their eyes. They didn’t have the ability to stop Lei Yu and they couldn’t protect their leader from his attacks.

Lei Yu threw out a punch which was combined with his lightning power. Like a kite with its strings cut, the wolf leader flew off into a

distance as it howled in resentment.

Without stopping, Lei Yu grabbed the opportunity while the rest of the wolves were still in shock. He increased his speed and dashed towards the remaining wolves, and every wolf Lei Yu passed by would be killed instantly. In just two minutes, only thirty-five wolves were left gasping for breath out of the previous sixty plus.

If this pack of wolves were released into society, then they would definitely cause a lot of chaos. Having at least the strength of a Third Order and their leader having the strength of a Fourth Order was something ordinary people couldn't handle. Even if they dispatched the police, they would be of no use

against these wolves. It looks like Dr. Tony's ambitions and plans were extremely terrifying, and he was going to use this fear to achieve whatever his ultimate goal was.

Lei Yu gently rubbed his arm that had been accidentally clawed by one of the wolves. This minor wound was considered nothing to him so after adjusting himself a bit, he continued walking forward amongst the sea of corpses. At this time, a voice could be heard from an unknown direction.

"I knew you were strong, but didn't expect you to be this strong. Three Third Rank Mutants; four Fifth Rank Mutants; and over a hundred wolves with the strength of a Third Rank Mutant attacked you. I never

imagined that you would basically come out of this without any injuries. No wonder the Vatican gave up their cooperation with me so that you would to join them!"

"Dr. Tony..." Lei Yu frowned as he looked around. Even after carefully probing the area, he couldn't find any presence. Lei Yu quickly understood what was going on - there were definitely surveillance cameras all over this place. It looked like that Dr. Tony was fully observing all his fights now up until now, his purpose was to study Lei Yu's fighting methods in order to find a weakness. As the saying goes: Understand thy enemy before engaging them, thus knowing yourself and the enemy was the best tactic.

But Dr. Tony had made a grave mistake. Although Lei Yu's attacks were visually stunning and effective, he never used any martial techniques. His ace attack, the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique wasn't used at all. It looks like Dr. Tony will suffer a big loss in the near future.

"You've guessed correctly, I'm indeed Dr. Tony. I never imagined that you would find out that I've captured your little lover this quickly."

Lei Yu coldly cursed out: "You filthy half-human half-beast, you actually dare to use such despicable means?!"

"Despicable? Filthy? There's only

the strong and the weak in this world, there's no such thing as being despicable or not! If you want to achieve a satisfying conclusion in my place, it will have to depend on your capability!" After Dr. Tony's cold reply, the next thing Lei Yu heard was the sound of an iron gate being opened. Dr. Tony's voice once again was heard: "Defeat them if you have the ability!"

Lei Yu spread out his perception ability and then frowned. "Ultimate Rank Mutants? An expert of the Sixth Order!"

That's right; Lei Yu's detection was spot on. From behind an iron gate, an Ultimate Rank Mutant with the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior entered the room. If Lei Yu still

continued to hold back his powers, then his death would be certain in this place.

When it came to Third, Fourth, and Fifth Order experts; Lei Yu could still get rid of them without any issues. But when it came to an expert who was at the same level as him, he would have to use everything he had.

Dr. Tony was too fearsome; it looks like he wasn't the only person with the strength of an Ultimate Rank Mutant here. Lei Yu may suffer some losses as a result of this.

“Lei Yu, quickly run away!”

When he suddenly heard Bianca's voice, it made Lei Yu slightly

surprised. “Run?” Lei Yu coldly humphed. “Do you think I’m you? Someone who can easily betray their friend? Someone who can ignore a friend’s life or death? This is truly too laughable!”

Bianca was instantly speechless and didn’t know what else to say. This situation was something that shouldn’t have happened, but it’s fine anyway since their plan didn’t follow the expected course and this new situation developed.

“Humph! Even if you want to leave, there’s no way for you to do that!” From a distance, the Ultimate Rank Mutant gradually got closer revealing his face. Lei Yu intently looked over and noticed it was a male with only one eye, and his



body looked exceptionally muscular. If someone like him appeared in society, it would certainly cause the population to panic. His face was something no one would flatter, and the word ugly couldn't even begin to describe him.

His upper body was naked that revealed all his veins, and he was covered in muscles that looked like the patterns on a slab of granite which made it hard for people to conceive. With this type of super-strong body, his foundation for defense must be extremely firm.

# Chapter 176: One Eyed Gorilla

This Ultimate Rank Mutant that looked like a devil gave Lei Yu some pressure. But when experts on the same level fought, it wasn't just one party that was capable of creating pressure - Lei Yu could do the same thing as well.

“Go to hell!”

Lei Yu didn't move as he heard the shout and watched the mutant rushing at him. The mutant's body actually changed from something physical to a black light as it rushed at Lei Yu.

“Not good!” Lei Yu was shocked; this Ultimate Rank Mutant was immediately using his strongest attack? If Lei Yu wanted to avoid getting injured, he had to use all his power to resist or the consequences would be disastrous.

With these thoughts, Lei Yu didn’t hesitate anymore. “Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!” Several loud sounds could be heard. Lei Yu and this fellow went head-to-head and neither of them got the upper hand. After the consecutive collisions, they were separated and stared at each other with shock in their eyes.

“A Sixth Order Warrior is indeed very strong and actually able to withstand my attacks. Looks like I’ll have to be serious while I’m dealing

with you!” Said the cyclops-like mutant in a cold manner. Even though this place was dimly lit, Lei Yu could still see the mutant’s lips forming an arc to grin at him.

“What?!” Lei Yu was stunned. He had already previously condensed quite a bit of internal energy on his arms. With the power of lightning in each of his own attacks, any other Sixth Order expert would have to adjust themselves before they could continue fighting. But it looked like this cyclops in front of him wasn’t affected in any way. And after hearing his words, their previous exchange of blows was just him testing the waters. This mutant didn’t use his full strength yet!

Lei Yu quickly adjusted his shocked emotions to his best state of mind. Even though the mutant didn't use his strongest move, Lei Yu didn't use his either. Lei Yu wanted to see what else would this slab of meat cyclops do after daring to show off like this.

The two collided with each other again, crazily attacking each other like rain drops. The aftershocks of their blows spread everywhere and destroyed the ground they were on, causing bits of concrete to fly everywhere. The two were wildly attacking each other as if death was the only solution here.

But shortly after, Lei Yu was gaining the advantage because he found an important weakness. Although this

cyclops had a tyrannical attack power and very fast attack speed, yet due to his huge body, his running and dodging speeds were restricted. There were several of Lei Yu's attacks that the cyclops couldn't avoid and could only rely on his powerful body to take on the blows.

Lei Yu suddenly stopped mid-step as his left leg swiveled on the ground and his right leg flew out like a whip, viciously kicking at the cyclops's waist. When the cyclops recovered and wanted to retaliate, Lei Yu had already retreated back five meters away with a sneer on his face while his eyes were reflecting his playfulness.

"You...!" The cyclops was shocked.

He had been standing at the same spot without moving. Could it be his opponent found out about his flaw?

"You what? You damn cyclops, you're already blind in one eye, you can't also be crippled in one leg as well right?" Lei Yu crossed his arms and sneered.

"You damn arrogant bastard, go to hell!" Shouted the enraged cyclops as he rushed at Lei Yu. Lei Yu's judgment was indeed correct; this mutant's movement speed was quite slow. As long as he kept his distance, this guy would probably tire himself to death.

But in order to get rid of his target faster, Lei Yu didn't choose this

method. He quickly made up his mind; since he couldn't go in for a close-quarter battle, then all he could do was to find the perfect opportunity in order to land a fatal blow. The results would be much better this way.

Lei Yu continued moving around. Despite how the cyclops pursued him, he couldn't even touch the corners of Lei Yu's clothing. This made the cyclops scream in rage but it wasn't any use at all.

While condensing his strength in his legs, Lei Yu's right foot heavily stomped on the ground while his left leg kicked out. While rushing around, the approaching cyclops lowered both arms to protect his crotch area. It was very fortunate



that he blocked Lei Yu's attack or else he wouldn't be able to stand up even if he wanted to.[1] This was a weakness, a weakness that all men had. Even if they were very strong, if someone aimed a heavy attack in that area, all you will hear is the sound of a broken voice crying for their mommy.

Since Lei Yu missed, he quickly dodged to the side and didn't give the cyclops any chance to counterattack.

At this time, the cyclops was like a human sandbag as he was getting attacked by Lei Yu's continuous hit and run tactic. The cyclops had no chance to fight back and if this continued, he was afraid he would eventually be tortured to death by

Lei Yu.

“Ahhh!”

The cyclops suddenly roared into the air making Lei Yu not dare to approach him. After the cyclops roared, the only eye it had started to turn blood-red in color. His whole body was instantly covered by brown fur and his body swelled to an even larger size. His current height reached almost five meters tall! This time, his huge muscles were definitely like slabs of granites. Even though his body was covered in long fur, it couldn't mask the explosive potential those muscles exuded.

Even though the cyclops went through a big transformation, it

didn't grew any fur on his face. There was also no change on the palm of his hands. But the back of his hands were furry which made him look like a huge gorilla.

Lei Yu finally understood that this cyclops had been injected with a gorilla's genes and the fusion made him become like this. But wasn't this still a bit too inconceivable?

Not giving Lei Yu an opportunity to gather his thoughts, the cyclops once again roared while pounding his own chest. Right after that, a strange scene appeared which made Lei Yu somewhat surprised - the cyclops was actually vomiting large mouthfuls of blood.

"Self-mutilation?" Lei Yu said aloud

with a frown.

He was right, a gorilla's nature was tyrannical but they needed a stimulation in order for it to appear. This was very similar to when Lei Yu went berserk; for him to go in that state without any stimulation was impossible. But once something stimulated that force hidden deep inside him, then the horrifying berserk Lei Yu would emerge once again.

It was obvious that the cyclops was using this method to stimulate his tyrannical nature, and this was the way it could immerse itself in an enraged state. One should know how terrifying an enraged gorilla could be, especially one that was five meters tall.

“Go to hell!”

The cyclops once again roared out. Even though it transformed to a gorilla, he was still capable of using human language. What shocked Lei Yu even more was that after the cyclops evolved, its original size almost doubled but its movement speed didn't reduce but was also doubled. This completely caught Lei Yu off guard.

The cyclop's hands were like hammers as it suddenly started to smash towards Lei Yu's head.

“Boom!”

Lei Yu raised his arms in attempt to protect his head, but the impact of the smash made his arms go numb.

This power was simply like smashing apart rotten wood. If it was someone else who took that blow, their bones would surely shatter. Fortunately, there were metallic properties that were infused in Lei Yu's skeletal structure so he could still barely tolerate it.

“Motherf\*cker! I can't keep hiding it or else I'll be dead by the time I see Dr. Tony!” Lei Yu said to himself as he raised his trembling arms.

-----

[1] - E/N: Lei Yu is playing dirty!

# Chapter 177:

## Blocked By A Stone Slab

One needs to become stronger against a strong opponent!

The highest form of the Thirty-Six Lunar Star technique Lei Yu comprehended had never been used in public. Only the lower forms of this technique had been used in front of the Pope, and the Pope shouldn't be idle to the point of having nothing better to do than visiting Dr. Tony and mentioning techniques of Lei Yu. Other than his disciple Liu Hao, there was only the Vampire Prince Bel and the

Werewolf King Jonathan who had passed away that knew those techniques.

The Dark Council had an implacable hatred with Dr. Tony, so Lei Yu wasn't worried these two would be in contact with each other. As for now, Lei Yu intended to use the first form of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique against this powerful enemy - the one-eyed gorilla. Thus, Lei Yu still had a hidden card up his sleeves and wasn't too worried.

After thinking about this, Lei Yu quickly adjusted his mentality. His internal energy started circulating as it started running through his meridians. His arms that were numb from the previous attack by



the one-eyed gorilla gradually started to recover, and the Ares boots on his feet started to shine brightly. What Lei Yu was planning on doing was to finish this battle quickly, so he was going to defeat his opponent in the shortest time possible.

The next attack by the one-eyed gorilla struck nothing but air. Even if he had more than doubled his movement speed from before, comparing it to Lei Yu's speed would be similar to comparing a tortoise with a hare. Not to mention that Lei Yu had the support of the Ares boots. So in conclusion, this slab of meat still couldn't catch a corner of Lei Yu's clothing.

The condensed internal energy was beginning to take shape. Lei Yu didn't have a weapon, but he did once have the sharp spike which belonged to the Ink Beast.

Unfortunately during the duel with the Ming Sect's Cai Zhong, it was destroyed. Now he was only relying on his own pair of fists as weapons.

The purple internal energy was shining brightly in the palm of Lei Yu. And the white dots that were sparkling like stars made his internal energy look extraordinarily beautiful. But there was no one to appreciate this sight because behind this brilliance was a destructive and deadly force.

Lei Yu then shouted: "Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, first form!" At

the same time, his arm made a rotating gesture above his head.

A purple light in the shape of a crescent moon started expanding until it was 5 meter long. With Lei Yu as the launching point, it rapidly flew off like a thunderbolt. With its swiftness and violent speed, there was no way for the one-eyed gorilla to avoid it. The only thing he could do now was to block it with all he had.

The moment the crescent shaped purple light was about to reach its target, the one-eyed gorilla became enraged. At first he never thought that this attack would be so powerful, but when it was less than three meters away from him did he start to feel remorse. At this critical

moment, even if he wanted to bend down and stoop to the ground to avoid the attack was an impossible thing.

Seeing Lei Yu's perfect first technique was about to land on the oversized gorilla...

The ground suddenly vibrated and a large slab of stone fell down in front of the one-eyed gorilla just in time . The first form of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique's crescent moon technique neatly sliced the slab of stone in two, while the remaining power of the attack hit the body of the one-eyed gorilla.

The one-eyed gorilla roared as his bones could be seen from the deep wound of his chest.

Because the wound was so deep on its chest, it exposed the revolting sight of white bones, yet it still wasn't enough to kill him.

The sudden appearance of a slab of stone dropping down saved the one-eyed gorilla, but it still suffered a serious injury.

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes as he looked up. There was a huge gap where a piece of the ceiling was missing, which was where the slab of stone fell from. Lei Yu wasn't surprised at the missing piece of ceiling but was surprised when he sent out his spirit to probe the area; he detected a presence of an expert up there, a true super expert!

“Dr. Tony?” Said Lei Yu in a cold

tone as he didn't bother paying attention to the seriously injured one-eyed gorilla anymore.

"You're very smart and you almost ruined my plans!" At this time, a person jumped down from the ceiling. The strange thing about this person was that he was almost bald with some white hair remaining on his head that hung naturally on the sides. He was wearing a white lab coat and wearing gold rimmed eye glasses. No matter how you looked at him, he didn't look like the most powerful existence amongst all the mutants.

Once Dr. Tony appeared, the one-eyed gorilla became very respectful. Ignoring his own wounds, the gorilla stood behind Dr. Tony with

his head lowered as if he was ashamed of his defeat against Lei Yu.

“You’ve finally showed your face!” Lei Yu unconsciously took two steps back since being cautious was the most important thing right now. Especially when you were at someone else’s territory, you had to be careful every step you took.

“You are indeed very smart, you actually followed Bianca here. This was outside of my expectations.” Dr. Tony’s facial expression suddenly became serious and his eyes became wide and round. “But since you’ve managed to come here, don’t even think about leaving this place alive!”

“I never intended on leaving this place alive!” Lei Yu didn’t show any fear and actually showed an awe-inspiring momentum. “If I can’t save my friend today, even if I die I will bring all of you to hell with me!”

“Oh really? Do you have the ability do that? According to my analysis, you only have a few simple attacking techniques. And after fighting those Third and Fourth Rank Mutants, along with the pack of wolves, you must have consumed a large portion of energy. After fighting Henry, your energy should have been depleted even further. You actually dare to shamelessly boast that you will bring us down with you? You’re practically indulging in your own fantasy!”



From the looks of it, Lei Yu was indeed in a bad situation. He had consumed quite a lot of energy but it was an amount he could still handle. With the sudden appearance of Dr. Tony and the one-eyed gorilla that Dr. Tony called Henry, the situation became very complicated. Henry was seriously injured but his situation wasn't life threatening. And the damage to his chest area was akin to a skin trauma due to his size. Henry could just clench his teeth to bare the pain and continue fighting if he wanted.

Under these circumstances, Lei Yu had to face two Ultimate Rank Mutants. And this wasn't his only problem, he also didn't know many more underlings Dr. Tony had. How

many more mutants did he control? Lei Yu refused to believe that he only had those previous dozen or so mutants and the pack of wolves. Therefore Lei Yu was thinking about the worst case scenario - even if he can't save Cui Ying Ying, they will all die together!

“If you really think I only possess these tiny abilities, then you are wrong. Dr. Tony, you could always give it a try and see if I'm merely indulging myself in my own fantasies!” Lei Yu took his fighting stance, but thoughts of dying together wasn't something he could easily accomplish.

Dr. Tony waved his hand, “It's not the time for me to make a move, especially when you aren't qualified

enough for me to make a move!”

“What?!” Lei Yu was shocked, could it be that Dr. Tony still had some killers up his sleeves he hadn’t revealed yet? It looked like the scenario is even worse than he had expected.

“If you think I only have Henry as an Ultimate Rank Mutant, then you are completely mistaken! You three, come out!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

“Bang!”

Tremors came from the surrounding three walls followed by it collapsing. This time Lei Yu was

completely and utterly shocked,  
another three Ultimate Rank  
Mutants had appeared!

# Chapter 178: Lunar Star's Second Form

No one would believe that not only has Dr. Tony reached the strength of a Sixth Order equivalent Ultimate Rank Mutant, he also had four underlings that had the same rank as well. With so many experts, even in Tenglong country, one would be considered as one of the strongest forces let alone the United States. But why has he never revealed his powers and actually allied himself with the Pope? This question was something Lei Yu couldn't understand at all.

With the strength Dr. Tony possessed, he could easily take over

all the different forces and organizations in the entire U.S.!

“Are you shocked?” Dr. Tony sneered. Those previous three Ultimate Rank Mutants that had burst out from the walls went over to Henry and were also standing behind Dr. Tony.

“Unexpected... I truly did not expect this.” Lei Yu knew that today was probably the day he would be buried here. Wanting to escape this scenario was just a dream now.

“Then prepare for your death!” Dr. Tony suddenly exerted strength into his feet before jumping into the air and through the large hole in the ceiling.

Lei Yu took a deep breath. Four experts... four super experts... what should he do? There was no way he could take them all on!

Lei Yu's fears were confirmed. Amongst these four mutants, the weakest one was actually the one-eyed gorilla Henry. This was because his attack power was the weakest amongst the four, however his defense wasn't too bad. When it came to speed, he was also the slowest one and could only be considered as a meat shield.

As for the remaining three mutants, their appearance looked like a bear; a panther; and a rhinoceros.

Black Panther, Gray Bear, and the rest of their mutant team under Lei

Yu were all considered faulty goods. Only after finding the solution at the Yamaguchi-gumi headquarters and after getting injected with a new batch of mutagen did it upgrade them. It was very clear that these mutants present have achieved their ultimate and best mutation effects possible based on their tough appearances. Based on Lei Yu's observation, the bear and panther in front of him were much stronger than Black Panther and Gray Bear.

With the addition of the original one-eyed gorilla, these four Ultimate Rank Mutants all loosely lined up in front. Lei Yu frowned, it was useless to say any crap and it would be much easier just to just duke it out!



Lei Yu shot forward like an arrow, he planned to test the waters with these new mutants. Even if he couldn't gain any advantage, he could at least understand the abilities of his opponents.

Before Lei Yu's attack had even arrived yet, Bear's body flashed forward as well; his speed and the size of his body didn't match at all. A powerful force was condensed in his fist before smashing down into the ground. Lei Yu abruptly stopped before dodging backwards. In his previous position, there was now a large hole which was created due to the smash of the Bear. No matter how strong Lei Yu's defense was, he didn't dare to take that punch head on because the power behind it was just too terrifying.

Lei Yu gasped. Even though the surface area of the damage wasn't particularly large, he was able to feel that the power was all concentrated into one point. Its explosive power wasn't something that someone could easily withstand.

What were Lei Yu's special abilities? They were speed and the power of lightning. Right now his brain was over working itself while trying to come up with a plan. Even if his probability of winning was little to possibly none, he still wasn't going to give up!

Since the one-eyed gorilla was already injured, then Lei Yu's first target will start with him!

Lei Yu once again started dodging left and right around the area. Panther's speed was quite fast, twice Lei Yu was almost hit by him but he managed to avoid it.

Lei Yu was currently trapped in the middle while the mutants surrounded him in triangular shape. Panther was at one corner, Bear at another, and Rhinoceros along with the one-eyed gorilla was guarding the last corner. If Lei Yu wanted to attack a single opponent, the other mutants at the other two corners would definitely attack him from the rear within a blink of an eye.

“Let me see how you're going to survive this day!” Dr. Tony coldly laughed as he stood at the top of

the hole in the ceiling.

Without the power of the green energy and because he no longer had the Spiritual Bead of Longevity, the current Lei Yu was way more cautious than before. He didn't want to take unnecessary risks but that was clearly impossible now, he had no other choice when stuck in this situation.

The powerful internal energy started to fluctuate and wrap around Lei Yu's hands. He decided to use the second form of the Thirty-six Lunar Stars technique, and chose to use both hands in order to carry out a two-way attack. Although this method would weaken the attack, at least it would change his current situation of

being surrounded.

After making up his mind, Lei Yu firmly clenched his fists, about to release the second form's attack. But it looked like the Panther understood what Lei Yu wanted to do and immediately made a move the moment before Lei Yu was about to form his attack. Panther rushed towards the middle at Lei Yu, who was in a similar situation to a caged beast. The other three mutants were coordinating with Panther's movement and shrunk the triangular shape by rushing towards the center together.

Even though Lei Yu was agile, but even so, his extraordinary dexterity didn't allow him to fly into the air to escape. He didn't have wings, nor

did he have the Pope's ability to float in midair. Could it be that he was going to get cornered just like that?

"You're indeed fast but I'm faster!"

The biggest advantage Lei Yu had was his speed, so he upped it to the maximum of his ability. With the supporting effects of the Ares boots, a golden light suddenly started to shine from his feet. Lei Yu's body was like a cannonball as it shot forth and collided head-on with Panther.

On the matter of speed, there was no one present who could match Lei Yu's. Regarding defense, it was obvious that the one-eyed gorilla and Rhinoceros were the most

powerful ones. And when it came to attack power, Bear's strength was the most shocking one out of everyone. Since Panther's speed couldn't be compared to Lei Yu; his attack power wasn't as good as Bear; and his defense wasn't as strong as the one-eyed gorilla nor Rhinoceros; Lei Yu abandoned his previous thoughts and decided to make Panther his target.

“Crack!”

“Boom!”

“Agh~!”

After several collisions, one could see the attack speed of those two were extremely quick as if they were barraging each other with

bullets. Each collision would cause a bright burst of light. Panther angrily screamed before suddenly retreating backwards. Since all of Lei Yu's attacks contained the power of lightning, it gave Panther a type of pressure that was very difficult for him to resist, which caused him to retreat. This gave Lei Yu the ideal opportunity, so with a flash step, he rushed off to the side and stomped on the ground. With a jump, Lei Yu flew over three meters before doing a somersault in the air and landing over ten meters away from three other mutants.

After creating an advantage of distance, Lei Yu quickly displayed the second form's technique that he didn't use previously. Everyone present could only hear him shout:



“Lunar Star’s second form!”

With Lei Yu as the center, a meteor-like light burst out through the air with a hissing noise - its target was the one-eyed gorilla standing off in a distance. To say it more accurately, the target was the horrifying chest wound the one-eyed gorilla had already been injured with.

The distance of over ten meters was traversed by Lei Yu’s attack in an instant. One didn’t even have time to blink before the attack arrived at its goal. At this time, no one could save him. Previously the one-eyed gorilla didn’t die, but that didn’t mean his fate would be permanently changed.

“Agghhh!”

“Crack!”

—

(T/N: Yes, the author actually went lazy mode and just named the mutants Bear, Panther, and Rhinoceros.)

# Chapter 179: Killing Another One

The sound of bones being shattered was clearly heard by everyone present. The next moment, a large body similar to a mountain heavily dropped to the ground. Even though fresh blood did not flow out of his chest, there was indeed a large and terrifying looking hole on his chest. All the meat and intestines around the edge of the hole had been fully cooked.

Lei Yu had created a positive turning point after he caused this strong existence to permanently close his eyes forever. This happened too fast, so fast that Dr.

Tony and the other three mutants couldn't even react.

“Lei Yu! You actually dared to kill my men! I’m going to smash you into pieces!” Dr. Tony angrily roared from up top.

Lei Yu replied: “What a joke, as if you were going to let me leave if I didn’t kill him? Did you grow up eating shit? Your brain seems to be filled with flour paste!”

“You...!” Dr. Tony’s eyes were filled with anger. “Kill him for me! Shred him to pieces!”

The other three mutants finally recovered and began approaching Lei Yu.

Lei Yu’s arm suddenly trembled as

he released his energy pressure against his opponents. The three mutants slightly exerted some of their strength and was able to eliminate Lei Yu's energy pressure. At this very moment, Lei Yu attacked. It was a crescent moon-like attack; the first form of the Thirty-six Lunar Star's technique had appeared once again.

The reason Lei Yu used this again was because this was the only ability he had which effected a large area. There really wasn't anything else he could do in this situation.

Sure enough, out of the three of them, Panther quickly dodged to the side before the fierce attack landed on him. As if they were comparing their powers, Bear used his

powerful attack and smashed forth to resist the incoming attack.

As for the rhinoceros with a strong body and powerful defense, he just wanted to block the attack head on. Unfortunately for him, he had messed up big time. Previously when Lei Yu used this on the one-eyed gorilla, the rhinoceros mutant wasn't around so he didn't know how powerful the first form was.

Among the three mutants, only Panther was standing off to the side without an injury. As for Bear and Rhinoceros, one was heavily injured while one was slightly injured. Bear's injuries weren't serious because his own attack was able to block a portion of Lei Yu's attack. The portion he couldn't block only

caused slight damage to the fur on its body which was considered nothing in his eyes. But the situation was completely different for the Rhinoceros because he merely used his body's natural defense, which resulted in a wound that was similar to the one on the one-eyed gorilla.

Even so, one could see that his defense was on another level compared to the one-eyed gorilla because even though he got hit, he was still alive. The one-eyed gorilla had a slab of stone block off a portion of the power before the attack struck its body, and the wound he had looked similar on the rhinoceros who took the brunt of it.

Lei Yu had exhausted quite a bit of his internal energy, at least over half of it. Even though his heart was completely frantic, he still couldn't show any of that on his face.

Facing three experts and a Dr. Tony who hadn't made a move yet, Lei Yu was under an unbearable pressure. But someone like him who experienced plenty of fights still showed an expression without any fear. For Lei Yu to kill one Ultimate Rank Mutant while under these conditions, a large portion was due to luck because of his opponents' carelessness.

But this kind of luck probably wouldn't happen again. Lei Yu had no intentions of hiding any other moves. Although he wasn't capable



of releasing his first group of Lunar Star combination offensive skill, he still could easily release the first four forms of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique. And even though Lei Yu wasn't very proficient with the fifth form, he could still use it when needed.

It looked like Lei Yu had to use the third form which he had never used in a fight before. One could only see Lei Yu's hands clasp together as if he was the Minotaur Linos who was holding a golden axe. With an exceptionally mighty aura, Lei Yu's eyes landed on the fastest panther mutant and targeted him.

Unfortunately for Panther, his speed wasn't even worth mentioning when compared to Lei Yu's upcoming attack.

One could only see Lei Yu's mouth chant: "Lunar Star's third form, break!"

As Lei Yu swung his arms down, an explosive force erupted with a bright light. A purple lightning energy combined with little specks of starry light bursted forth like an enraged beast. Even though there was a certain distance between Lei Yu and his target, escaping from Lei Yu's almost instantaneous attack was simply a fool's dream.

Panther's eyes were flashing a purple light which was the reflection of Lei Yu's attack. With a face filled with horror, it was unfortunate that it was already too late..

Lei Yu's hands were supported by his knees as he was gasping for breath. It was no longer possible for him to release another attack with this kind of power anymore.

Escaping was still possible, but bringing Cui Ying Ying along as well was as difficult as ascending the heavens.

This attack on Panther could be considered a concentrated attack filled with an explosive force. The instant it landed on Panther, the force immediately spread out as if it had blasted apart.[1] Even if one managed to dodge this attack, the burst would cause shockwaves resulting in serious injuries.

Unfortunately for Panther, he didn't have any time to dodge so his upper body fully disappeared after leaving

only a pair of legs and a male's genitalia. He now looked like a tree branch which was stabbed into the ground.

Lei Yu had depleted most of his internal energy to kill two super experts which was his limit. Even if he died now, he doesn't believe he has suffered any losses.

Lei Yu sneered, "What now? You still haven't killed me yet!"

"You... you...! You're a demon!" Dr. Tony was too shocked. Between experts, their power levels are usually similar. Some maybe a bit stronger in certain aspects but a bit weaker in others. If one has a strong aspect in a certain area, another person would have a strong

aspect somewhere else. Either way, all the experts are metaphorically speaking standing at the same line. But Lei Yu revealed a shocking side to everyone. The first being speed; even without the support of the Ares boots, Lei Yu's speed was a lot faster when compared to his fastest underling Panther. The second was power; the power behind Lei Yu's attack was obvious to all. Even the one-eyed gorilla who had quite a powerful attack lost its life, let alone Panther whose defense wasn't even close to the gorilla. After observing the previous battles, Dr. Tony noticed Lei Yu had a very strong defense as well. With these three aspects rolled into one, Lei Yu was just too fearsome!

“I'm a demon? What a load of

crap... you guys who are half-human and half-monsters are the real demons right?" Lei Yu had already killed two of Dr. Tony's hidden cards and he had no intention of leaving this place. Moreover, Lei Yu would never leave Cui Ying Ying behind and escape by himself.

At first, Dr. Tony and company could use Cui Ying Ying as a pawn to threaten Lei Yu. But now, they were most likely going to just kill them both.

"I refuse to believe that you have any more abilities, unless your energy is inexhaustible! Kill him!" Dr. Tony once again roared out.

"Ha ha..." Lei Yu simply laughed out

loud. Right after that, a terrifying glint appeared in his eyes. "You can try! And see if I have the ability to kill another one of you guys or not!"

When Rhinoceros and Bear heard what Lei Yu said, one could see their original intention of rushing forth became hesitation that showed in their steps. The first thought of those two was: "Can he really still do it?"

Nope, Lei Yu couldn't use another attack with similar power. He had absolutely no way of killing any of them in his present condition. If a Fifth Order expert or a Fifth Rank Mutant suddenly appeared, he still had no way to beat them.

Lei Yu was just like an empty vessel  
standing who could no longer  
release any fearsome attacks.

—

[1] - (E/N: RASEN SHURIKEN! xD)



# Chapter 180: The Mutant Tony

Dr. Tony, the Rhinoceros, and the Bear actually believed Lei Yu's words. Dr. Tony was unwilling to sacrifice his men. He had toiled for over four decades in order to create these four super-strong experts, and now two of them were already killed. He was extremely angry but still wasn't willing to take the risks. And both Rhinoceros and the Bear didn't dare to go forth to verify whether Lei Yu was speaking the truth or not.

Up to this point, Dr. Tony had no other choice other than coldly laughing out loud. He turned

around to leave and quickly came back with someone else - Cui Ying Ying.

“Despicable!” Lei Yu angrily cursed. Because her eyes were closed, Cui Ying Ying was assumed to be unconscious . She was being supported by Dr. Tony and pushed to the front as he clenched his hands around her white neck.

“Humph, as I’ve said it already, there’s no such thing as despicable or not in this world. Only the strong gets to decide it! If you don’t want to see your little lover die in front of you, obediently give up without fighting!”

Lei Yu frowned. He knew that even if he surrendered without a fight,

there was no way that Dr. Tony would let Cui Ying Ying go. But he couldn't bear to see this girl who helped him so much to just die in front of him. "What to do? What should I do?"

Multiple thoughts were flashing through Lei Yu's mind, but he couldn't find a feasible method. Without a doubt, any of his methods would only shorten the time Cui Ying Ying would meet her doom.

"Who is going to die first, you or her?" Dr. Tony's strong momentum had already reached its peak. And Lei Yu's strong will was constantly being battered down by Dr. Tony.

"Do not threaten me. One thing

that I hate the most in life is being threatened by others! You will pay the price of threatening me with blood!” Lei Yu ferociously said as his eyes turned red.

“I would really like to see how you will accomplish that!” Dr. Tony then spoke to the bear and rhinoceros mutants: “You two go kill him. If he dares to resist even a little, I will immediately kill his little lover!”

“Understood!” These two mutants were finally assured as they started rubbing their fists, about to release a series of attacks on Lei Yu.

Lei Yu couldn't retaliate because he had no doubt Dr. Tony would be true to his words. Even if he wanted

to retaliate, it wasn't possible since he truly didn't have any more strength to resist them.

The bear mutant's attack was tyrannical and filled with an explosive force. A heavy punch landed squarely on Lei Yu's stomach.

"Boom!"

"Aghh!" Lei Yu cried out as his body flew off and fell to the ground five meters away.

"Poof!" A mouthful of blood sprayed out. Lei Yu's eyes were filled with rage as he clutched his painful stomach.

"What? You still refuse to give up? I will take your life with my next hit!"

Walking slowly, the bear mutant was getting closer one step at a time while the rhinoceros was laughing coldly. Two of his companions had already died which enraged him deep down. Since now there was an opportunity to exact their revenge, how could he not feel excited?

Bear raised his huge foot and aimed at Lei Yu's head, wanting to heavily stomp down on it. At this time, Lei Yu used up all his strength and slammed his arms on the ground. His whole body bounced up with a speed so fast that others didn't have time to react to it.

There wasn't much internal energy left inside Lei Yu but his own strength was still there. When he

was training with Dragon Group, he was able to handle a heavy pressure inside the gravity machine. Didn't he rely on only his own flesh and blood to bear it? The current Lei Yu had given up on using attacks which contained internal energy and had chosen to use his body's strength. Even though the power behind it couldn't be compared to before, the damage caused by Lei Yu's reinforced skeletal frame was still quite fearsome.

The instant Lei Yu's body bounced up, he grabbed the bear mutant's pulse meridian (wrist area). Within a microsecond, Lei Yu's other hand then retrieved a short knife from the storage ring and stabbed Bear's throat without the intention of taking his life. If Lei Yu had not

tilted the knife outwards a bit, Bear's windpipe would be instantly cut, this was a point no one would doubt.

Even though this short knife wasn't some sort of godly weapon, nor was it created by a genius weaponsmith, its sharpness wasn't too bad. It may not be able to break past the defense of the rhinoceros or one-eyed gorilla, but an animal's characteristics were similar to a human where their throat was a weakness. Lei Yu grasped this concept and was able to accurately catching the timing of his attack.

“Okay, you can go ahead and kill her. I will make you lose another follower!” Since the situation had already reached this point, Lei Yu



had no fear and decided to fight to the end!

“You bastard!” Dr. Tony yelled with rage.

“I’m a bastard? It looks like you’re more of a bastard and I can’t be compared to you! F\*ck this, hurry up and let her go or else this Ultimate Rank Mutant will meet with his end!” Lei Yu’s eyes were bloodshot since this move was the only thing he could come up with.

Dr. Tony narrowed his eyes as two of his men were already killed by Lei Yu. One should know that the strength of an Ultimate Rank Mutant was as powerful as a Sixth Order Warrior; they both possessed a terrifying combat ability. If Lei Yu

hadn't use his petty tricks, with his overbearing strong presence here, how could Bear be captured so easily by Lei Yu?

Tony was unwilling to see more of his men lose their lives so he tossed Cui Ying Ying in the direction where Lei Yu was. The distance between Dr. Tony and Lei Yu was around thirty something meters.

Lei Yu was shocked. One hand let go of Bear's wrist while the other hand holding the short knife reversed its direction. "Click!"

A fountain of blood sprayed out from Bear's throat while his eyes were wide and round. Fresh blood drenched his whole face while Lei Yu quickly disappeared from his

original spot. The next instant, his figure appeared at the place where Cui Ying Ying's was about land. With a slight jump, Lei Yu caught her soft body.

"She's still alive!" Lei Yu quickly made some observations. Cui Ying Ying was indeed still alive, taking a heavy load off his mind.

"You actually killed him?! You f\*cking bastard!" Dr. Tony was completely enraged. A Sixth Order Warrior actually killed so many of his men in such a short period of time, especially when each and every one of them were extremely resilient fighters.

Bear, Panther and one-eyed gorilla - if they were part of an organization,

their existence would give them a status of a leader or similar. They were all existences strong enough for people to respect them.

They were characters who could have the same standing as the Pope or the Vampire Prince!

Dr. Tony went completely crazy. With a “boom,” he jumped down from the hole in the ceiling and landed heavily on the ground. As for his body, it had started to transform.

Whatever sparse hair left on his head started falling off as it became bright and shiny. His skin color was also changing - it changed from the flesh tone to a brown color. His mouth started protruding out until

it reached 30 centimeters before before stopping. A row of razor sharp teeth then appeared inside his mouth. The pupils in his eyes became vertical slits which definitely did not belong to the human species. From the characteristics of his head, it definitely belonged to a crocodile!

The rest of Tony's body also began to change. From the base of his spine, a large tail started growing out. All his clothes burst at the seams as shreds of cloth fluttered around before settling on the ground.

Both his hands and feet grew long sharp nails as if they were claws of a dragon. The rest of his body was now covered in a grayish brown soft

scales. Lei Yu was sure that Dr. Tony had definitely transformed into a crocodile! The only difference he had with a crocodile was the fact that he was standing on two legs in an upright position!

With his arched back, Dr Tony looked similar to a mountain cliff. His terrifying gaze was locked on Lei Yu as if he was staring at a dead corpse. Dr. Tony's transformation was too great; no one could guess that the transformation of a human could reach a state like this.

# Chapter 181: The Death Of Bianca

“Ahh!”

A sudden scream came from the hole in the ceiling and all three of them looked up at the same time...

“Bianca?!”

“Are you really my father?” Bianca’s eyes were filled with tears. She didn’t dare to believe what she was witnessing, her own father had transformed into such a thing.

“Bianca, you should know that I’ve injected myself with a mutagen!”

“Yes, I know. But... but there’s no

way I can accept this!” One could see the the fear in Bianca’s eyes. If that mutant was someone else, she would not care. But this pair of father and daughter had always depended on each other for twenty something years, so how could she accept this so easily?

Dr. Tony didn’t want to explain himself anymore. The only thing he wanted to do right now was to kill Lei Yu who had made him lose his pack of wolves, and a lot of super experts.

Even though Lei Yu had exhausted all of his internal energy, there was still a very tiny amount left as a habit from the early years of training. With that tiny amount, he was able to detect how powerful Dr.



Tony had become after transforming. The degree of power he gained was almost unimaginable.

The current Dr. Tony could be considered as super strong peak Sixth Order Warrior. With just one more step, he would be able to exceed the Sixth Order and enter a new terrifying realm.

Against such a powerful presence, Lei Yu had no more thoughts of resisting. He knew that the previous lucky chance when he was fighting against Bear would not happen again.

Dr. Tony no longer bothered with his crying daughter as he approached Lei Yu and Cui Ying

Ying one step at a time.

Rhinoceros was following behind as he clutched his chest with blood still flowing out. It looked like even if Lei Yu had wings, it was impossible for him to escape this situation any longer.

“Go!” After hearing the order and despite the pain he was in, Rhinoceros pointed the huge horn on his forehead at Lei Yu and then charged. Because of his weight, every time Rhinoceros stepped forward, the ground would shake. No matter how weak this attack was, Rhinoceros was still an Ultimate Rank Mutant. Against someone like Lei Yu who had depleted his internal energy, Rhinoceros’s horn was a similar to

a Daoist seal which hastened one's death.

Lei Yu didn't bother trying to escape and just coldly stared at the large monster that was charging at him.

Eight meters, five meters, three meters, two meters, one meter!

Lei Yu closed his eyes, he wasn't going to dodge this attack or felt the need to dodge. Even if he wanted to, with Cui Ying Ying unconscious in his arms, trying to dodge was impossible.

At this time, a "crack" sound could be heard and a female's cry of pain followed right after.

"Aghh!"

Lei Yu who was still alive opened his eyes. Only then did he realize in front of him were a pair of slender legs. After he raised his head to look, he stuttered: “Bi... Bianca?!”

Lei Yu’s mind went blank. Standing in front of him was Dr. Tony’s own daughter Bianca, who was previously at the edge of the hole in the ceiling.

Her back was directly pierced by Rhinoceros’s sharp horn, and Lei Yu could clearly see how sharp the horn was from his angle.

Fresh blood was dripping, and dripping and dripping... Lei Yu was staring at Bianca with big round eyes while Dr. Tony was just standing there. Rhinoceros was so

shocked that he forgot that his horn was inside Bianca's stomach.

After a short silence, Dr. Tony cried out: "Bianca! My daughter!"

Pushing Rhinoceros aside, the horn was also removed from the body. Lei Yu who was behind Bianca could now see through the hole in her stomach at everything happening in front.

Bianca's body trembled as the horn was being removed and cried out in pain once again. As she fell backwards, Lei Yu unconsciously stretched out his free arm to catch her.

"Why? Why did you do that?" Lei Yu shook Bianca. He couldn't

understand how could something like this happen; he should be the one who was dying right now and not her.

Bianca frowned; her expressions showed that she was suffering due to extreme pain. A wave of flame then rose from her slender palm before she clenched her teeth and clutched her stomach with it. This move temporary coagulated the wound and stopped her bleeding. Although this would prolong her life for a short amount of time, it still wouldn't change the eventual outcome.

Only after she completely coagulated her wound did her lips tremble as she tried to speak. "I... I've already... done some..."

something that has hurt you. I don't want you to hate me... hate me for the rest of your life!"

"Poof!" A mouthful of blood sprayed out which stained the white skin on her chest and the skirt she was wearing. She then continued: "In fact... in fact you should know that I have... have always loved you, but... but I couldn't be together with you. Lei... Lei Yu! I'm sorry, I hope... I hope that you can forgive me!"

When someone was about to die, they would usually want to forget their suffering and all the evil they've done. This way, they could look for a sense of purity in the afterworld. Lei Yu had always been a kind-hearted person. He furiously nodded his head, "I forgive you, I

forgive you!”

Bianca was struggling as she forced herself to smile. She then looked at Dr. Tony who didn't look like her father anymore. “Even though... even though I don't like... what... you've become right now, but you... are still my fa... father. Before... before I die... I have a final request... my request for you is to not harm ... harm Lei Yu. I really... love... him!”

“No! No way! No way! I have to kill him! I have to kill him!” Dr. Tony's vertical pupils suddenly grew round as he shook his crocodile head.

“Why?! You... you were the one who always schemed against him!”  
Bianca was struggling to talk.



For a brief moment, Tony didn't know how to respond. Lei Yu then interrupted: "Don't think about this anymore, you should stop talking!" Lei Yu tightened his grip on Bianca while the latter closed her eyes to enjoy this feeling. This was her first time at being in direct close contact with Lei Yu. Even though it was under such circumstances, Bianca still felt quite content.

Lei Yu didn't want Bianca to die with regrets so he stopped her from conversing with Dr. Tony. He then heard a weak whisper: "To be able to die... in your arms... I am very content!" Bianca's arm that was resting on Lei Yu's shoulder fell down slowly. Her body stiffened up and after she exhaled her last breath, she didn't breathe anymore.

“Bianca! Bianca!” Lei Yu cried out twice before he realized that she had passed away. Lei Yu didn’t know why but when he looked at this girl who had deceived him before, her death caused a sharp feeling of pain in his heart.

“It’s you! It’s you who caused the death of my daughter! She betrayed me because you stole her heart! That’s good! That’s good that she is dead! That traitor!” Dr. Tony started screaming like he was crazy.

Lei Yu gently laid Bianca on the ground as he struggled to stand up. “I never imagined your ambition would be more important to you than your own daughter!”

“It’s all your fault, you caused all of

this!" Dr. Tony had become a bit hysterical; his years of effort had been destroyed by Lei Yu. Wanting to achieve his ambitions had all been for naught. The death of his daughter was too great of a stimulus making Dr. Tony completely lose his mind. Somehow his current psychotic mind frame matched perfectly with his current appearance.

"You still refuse to see your errors!" Even though Lei Yu said this, there wasn't anything he could do against Dr. Tony.

"Kill him for me!" Dr. Tony pointed at Lei Yu as he commanded Rhinoceros.

Rhinoceros thought that Dr. Tony

would blame him but instead, he heard that command so he pointed his horns at Lei Yu and rushed at him like crazy once again.

The current Lei Yu had no more strength to dodge. After he finished off Bear and then rushed up to catch Cui Ying Ying, he no longer had any ability to do anything else. After he reached out his arms to catch Bianca as an unconscious reflex, he now could barely control his own body.

“Crack~!”

# Chapter 182: The Ink Beast Appears Again

“Cough, cough!”

Even though Lei Yu managed to hold onto Rhinoceros’s horn at the last second, the impact still caused him to fly off into the air before smashing into a wall not too far away. “Boom!” The wall was shattered and debris were flying everywhere. Lei Yu coughed twice before he lost his consciousness and fell to the ground.

Lei Yu was unconscious but not dead. Dr. Tony slowly approached

him while yelling: "I'm going to rip you into pieces!"

With his snarling jaws and his menacing claws waving about, Dr. Tony slowly approached Lei Yu with an intent on tearing him from limb to limb.

As he grabbed Lei Yu by the head, Dr. Tony's claws were embedded into his skull. Dr. Tony stared at the blood dripping down as he watched Lei Yu's life coming to an end. At this moment, an unexpected scene occurred - the surrounding area started to shake. Since he didn't know what was happening, Dr. Tony started looking all around yet still couldn't find anything. He then once again focused his attention on Lei Yu's body.

Dr. Tony was immediately shocked from what he saw. The originally unconscious Lei Yu's eyes were now wide open and staring blankly at him.

“You...!” Before Dr. Tony could finish speaking, Lei Yu raised his hand and smashed the arm that Dr. Tony used to clutch his head before dropping to the ground.

Lei Yu's eyes had completely turned red and a black mist started seeping out of his mouth. Lei Yu's mouth then said: “The wickedness of humans are even more terrifying than us!”

The voice he heard didn't belong to Lei Yu so Dr. Tony immediately asked in shock: “Who are you?!”

“The Ink Beast!” Lei Yu’s voice and another overlapped. The black mist turned into a black shadow and landed on the ground while Lei Yu’s body fell over.

“The Ink Beast?” It was obvious that Dr. Tony didn’t know what an Ink Beast was but after seeing Lei Yu’s change, he immediately prepared for a fight. It was simply too shocking for him to see a black shadow leaving Lei Yu’s body.

It had shiny black fur, a single blood colored red eye, several spikes protruding from the back shimmering with a white glow, and four large claws. Wasn’t this the demonic beast Lei Yu had killed once and saved another time called an Ink Beast?



It's unfortunate that Lei Yu couldn't see what was happening right now or else he would certainly turn pale from shock.

The Ink Beast told Lei Yu back then that he had to absorb a portion of his powers in order to prepare for his resurrection. And this process would take a long time so why did it suddenly appear now?

The Ink Beast shook its head and started speaking in the human language. But strangely, the English coming out of its mouth was rather awkward to hear and understand.

“Did you really think you were Lei Yu's opponent? What an ignorant human. If it wasn't for me constantly absorbing a portion of

his internal energy, by now he would have already reached the Immortal stages!”

“What nonsense are you blabbing about? What are you exactly?” The shock the Ink Beast gave Dr. Tony wasn’t a minor one. Little did he know that his own appearance would probably scare the public to death.

“Foolish human, did you think that by changing into an animal, you could actually possess the true power of a beast? This is just too laughable!” Said the Ink Beast once again.

Since he didn’t know if this opponent was the real deal or a fake, Dr. Tony waved his claws to

have Rhinoceros test the waters. Despite his hesitation, Rhinoceros still took a few steps forward.

When Rhinoceros got close to the Ink Beast, he only saw it pounce at him before he was knocked to the ground. A snarling jaw then went straight for Rhinoceros's throat and a "crack" sound was heard. Blood then started spraying out everywhere from Rhinoceros's neck. The Ink Beast then licked its blood drenched lips and said: "It's been awhile since I've enjoyed such delicious food!"

"My God!" Dr. Tony was completely and utterly shocked. This was an Ultimate Rank Mutant whose defense had reached unimaginably high level, yet this monster with

just a pounce and a bite was able to end Rhinoceros's life in such a quick fashion. Terrifying, it was too terrifying!

With the Spiritual Bead of Longevity leaving Lei Yu's body, this was similar to the Ink Beast shedding off its shackles. Absorbing Lei Yu's internal energy had allowed him to restore a portion of its previous power. Even though it was just starting to regain its power and far from its peak, killing an expert of the Sixth Order was no different than playing around, it was similar to how a predator played with its meal.

It was fortunate for Lei Yu that when he met the Ink Beast, it was at its weakest moment. Or else, how

could Lei Yu who was at the strength of a Second Order be its opponent?

“It’s your turn now!” The Ink Beast’s single eye stared at Dr. Tony with disdain.

“No! You... you... what exactly are you?”

“I have no interest in talking with a soon to be dead creature, nor do I feel like explaining myself to you. You are also not qualified to know! If you had let Lei Yu leave earlier on, perhaps I would have considered letting you go as well. But ever since you, a puny human existence transformed into a beast, you’ve become too vicious. If you had actually killed Lei Yu, then my

chances at resurrection would have ended... therefore you must die!”

The Ink Beast knew that it couldn't stay around in the physical world for too long, he may only had a few minutes left. In this short period of time, he had to help Lei Yu leave this dangerous situation. It was fine before when Lei Yu still had the Spiritual Bead of Longevity but now since it was gone, there would be no more resurrections if he died. It would still be more cost-effective for the Ink Beast to lose all of its power and start again than dying with Lei Yu.

Dr. Tony knew the inevitable was coming so he suddenly jumped backwards and shouted: “Do it now!”

From all over, a dense stream of creatures belonging to various species started pouring out and surrounding the Ink Beast. One could say this room was packed with creatures as they began frantically pouncing on and biting the Ink Beast. But no matter how these creatures bit and scratched, they weren't able to penetrate the fur of the Ink Beast.

“Roar!” The Ink Beast angrily roared before swiping out with its front paw and using its tail to sweep them out from behind. These creatures were either killed on the spot or they were still twitching after being split into two; the scene was too horrific to look at.

In just two minutes, the creatures

that rushed out were all killed by the Ink Beast's attack. It was if a tyrannical wave had swept through them leaving behind their corpses that could be piled up into a small mountain.

The Ink Beast slowly climbed out from under a layer of bodies before it stared at the crocodile Tony who had gone slightly bonkers with a terrifying gaze. "Are there anymore? These were only enough for one meal!" While speaking, its jaws bit onto a corpse and raised his head before swallowing the entire body in one gulp, then licking its lips.

"Run!" This was the only idea Dr. Tony could think of but it was already too late.



“Roar!” The Ink Beast roared again. Similar to a ghost, it suddenly disappeared and instantly reappeared in front of Dr. Tony.

“Didn’t you just want to rip Lei Yu into pieces? I think that type of ending is more appropriate for your body instead!” The Ink Beast could feel its energy was slowly being depleted, so it looked like it would have to quickly take care of this crocodile before him.

“Spare me! Don’t kill me!”

The Ink Beast didn’t bother with these nonsensical cries for mercy. His claws tore, his jaws bit and the crocodile was no longer a crocodile. Dr. Tony had been completely ripped and torn into small pieces; his corpse littered the floor where

no one could make out which part was which.

The Ink Beast's body began to slowly blur, and then turned into a black light before rapidly flying into Lei Yu's head. It had once again disappeared as fast as it came out.

# Chapter 183: The Tomb Of A Friend

Dr. Tony's ambitions were destroyed by Lei Yu, his daughter was killed by his own men, and now even his own life had been ripped into pieces by the Ink Beast. Everything was like a nightmare, which did not even leave him a chance to regret.

Lei Yu spit out a mouthful of blood before he slowly recovered his senses.

"Cough!" Another mouthful of blood came out. Lei Yu opened his eyes and looked around. "I... I am still alive?" He suddenly sat up

screaming: “Ying Ying!”

He looked at the position where Cui Ying Ying was supposed to be according to his memory. He slowly crawled towards there and started pulling away some bodies that almost made him throw up. Lei Yu placed his fingers on the pulse of her neck and felt that it was still beating. Only then did he sighed heavily and lied down on his back to take a rest.

“Why am I not dead?” While looking at all the corpses on the ground, Lei Yu was surprised to find that there were an extra one hundred plus bodies in the room. It was without a doubt that he was unconscious so what on earth happened during that time?

Nothing was adding up to Lei Yu right now so he continued looking around. Before he lost his consciousness, Rhinoceros was still alive but it was obvious his throat had now been ripped out. Since he was dead, then how come he still couldn't find the whereabouts of Dr. Tony?

After a long recovery period, Lei Yu finally regained some of his strength. While he was holding Cui Ying Ying with one hand, his other hand was holding the corpse of Bianca. As he struggled one step at a time, he walked towards the exit using the tiny amount of strength he had recovered. Finally when he reached the door of the exit, he smashed it open.

He was completely out of strength again, Lei Yu was now inhaling the fresh outdoor air. The previous battle was still vivid in his mind and his was overcome by a feeling like he just crawled back out from the depths of hell. Recollecting these events caused cold sweats to form on him.

He pulled out his cell phone; it was turned off so he turned it back on. Fortunately for Lei Yu, there was actually reception here so he started dialing Liu Hao's number.

“Hey, come... come pick me up.”

Lei Yu gave Liu Hao his specific location. Liu Hao didn't dare delay and immediately started driving there.

A full day and night passed by. Lei Yu was quietly lying there while to his left was Cui Ying Ying. Looking at her weak appearance, it would be a life-threatening situation if he didn't hurry and send her to a hospital. To Lei Yu's right, looking at Bianca's pale corpse made his heart ache with pain. He didn't even dare to look at the terrifying wound on her stomach.

After sighing heavily, Lei Yu began to work on recovering his strength. Lei Yu sat cross-legged as his strength gradually recovered. He condensed his internal energy and started moving it through his meridians. Although the recovery speed of his damaged meridians and injured body wasn't as fast as it had been with the green energy

from before, the maturation of his lightning ability would still assist Lei Yu's body to gradually recover. His rate of recovery was definitely faster than an ordinary cultivator by multiple times.

Inside the basin, a strong wind gusted through filling the air with sand and dust. Lei Yu and the two girls lying on the ground were now covered in a thick layer of dust.

Another night has passed when Lei Yu's eyebrow twitched. "Liu Hao, over here!"

"Master!"

Hearing the sound of Liu Hao's hurried movements, his figure quickly approached. Surprise



showed on Liu Hao's face when he saw Bianca on the ground with a horrible wound. After sending out his probing senses did Liu Hao feel relieved when he found out Cui Ying Ying was still alive.

"You've arrived quite fast, how's everything back at the estate? Did anything happen?" Lei Yu asked.

"Everything's the same, nothing special happened. Master, you are too awesome. You actually saved sister Ying Ying alone!" Liu Hao's face was filled with admiration as he gave a thumbs up.

Lei Yu weakly knocked Liu Hao's head. "I almost died! Even I don't know the reason why I'm still alive, it's fortunate that someone came by

and helped me. By the time I woke up, there was no one around me except a ground covered with corpses.”

“No way?!”

Since he couldn't figure out what happened, Lei Yu didn't want to bother spending too much effort in thinking about it. It's great if someone saved him or if no one did anything, it didn't matter. Either way, being alive can be considered the heaven's blessings. “Help me out a bit. Go over there and dig a hole, and then we'll put... bury Bianca's body.”

“Master, how did she die?” Liu Hao asked with surprise.

Even though the horrendous wound on Bianca surprised Liu Hao, he didn't show any emotional anguish because he barely knew her.

“Her father was Dr. Tony and she died trying to protect me. Although she had deceived me, it was still excusable so I have to do something for her.” Thinking back to when Bianca suddenly showed up when he was about to be killed by Rhinoceros, deep down inside Lei Yu no longer hated her. How could Lei Yu hate someone who was willing to give up their life for his?

After nodding, Liu Hao no longer asked anymore questions. He did what he was instructed since he could tell his master wasn't in a good mood. With his bare hands, he

punched the ground a few times and created a huge crater. Lei Yu carefully laid Bianca into the crater while Liu Hao started pushing the mound of soil back to cover her. Thus Bianca's tomb was created.

Lei Yu then grabbed a huge slab of rock and started using his finger to write in the Tenglong language: "My good friend Bianca's tomb."

After a moment of silence, Lei Yu once again exhaled heavily. "Let's go, Ying Ying is currently very weak so we need to take her to the hospital for treatment."

Liu Hao carried Cui Ying Ying while Lei Yu followed behind. As these three started to leave, Lei Yu looked back and decided that once

everything was over, he would come back here. After all, this place contained Dr. Tony's entire life's work so there would certainly be a lot of benefits. Simply offering this to the country would mean he had contributed quite a bit to the Tenglong country.

Lei Yu and Liu Hao found a hospital at the nearest town. It was fortunate that Cui Ying Ying's semi-comatose state was merely due to severe fright, so she only had to stay in the hospital to recuperate. After leaving some instructions, Lei Yu continued his recovery. Liu Hao now had to take care of both of them.

As the days went by, a week later Lei Yu's cell phone started ringing.

Looking at the caller ID, it was Black Panther.

“Young master, something happened!” The frantic voice on the other end of the line made Lei Yu’s heart skip a beat before asking: “What? What happened?”

“Dark Council! It’s the Dark Council! A lot of people came and the Pope along with the eighteen Holy Knights are currently trying to defend against their attacks!”

“What?! How... how could this happen?” Lei Yu was shocked.

“With the Pope’s analysis, he believes the Dark Council knew you left so that’s why they made their move. Currently, there are a lot of

dark creatures surrounding the estate. Everyone in the town has already been killed by them, and some have even been infected with the Vampire virus!”

Hearing this, Lei Yu slapped the table top with his hand and the thick table was shattered into pieces.

Hanging up the phone, “Liu Hao, take care of Ying Ying. I have to go back right away!” Lei Yu tightened his fists; everything was happening all at once like a storm which did not leave him any room to breathe. What he was most worried about was his beloved Ai Er and his fellow brothers who were in danger. As for the Vatican, Lei Yu didn’t really care about them that much.

# Chapter 184: Town Of The Dead

“Master, what happened?” Liu Hao didn’t hear what Black Panther just said but he realized something must be wrong after seeing Lei Yu’s expression and tone of voice.

“The Dark Council found out I was not in the estate so they’ve surrounded it with a lot of people. Ai Er, Black Panther, Hu Jiong and others are all still inside so I have to rush back immediately. My injuries are mostly healed so I can’t delay this any longer. I’m afraid the Vatican can’t resist for too long since the Pope is the only one there who has the strength of a Sixth



Order Warrior.” Lei Yu quickly explained to Liu Hao a short summary of the situation.

“Do you need my help as well?” Liu Hao asked.

Lei Yu waved his hand, “Their main assault force should be comprised of Vampire and Werewolf Lords, all of them with the strength of a Fifth Order, so even if you were with me, you won’t be able to help much. Cui Ying Ying is skill unconscious and no one knows you guys are here, so protecting her safety is your responsibility. If anything new comes up at the estate, I will let you know right away. Okay, time’s running out so I am leaving immediately.”

Liu Hao didn't raise any other questions and silently prayed for his master's safety. His only wish was for his master to emerge safely from this crisis.

Lei Yu didn't bother driving a car because his maximum running speed was a lot faster. Without caring about energy consumption, he increased his speed to his limit. The support function of the Ares boots also played a crucial role. The only way to describe Lei Yu's current speed was "lightning fast."

While Lei Yu was running, he was wondering whether the super strong expert who was hidden in the shadows of the Dark Council would appear or not. If that super expert appeared, the Pope said the

secret hidden inside the storage ring required two people to be present in order for it to execute its strongest attack. The extremely anxious Lei Yu somehow increased his speed once again.

Five hours. If he drove a car, it would originally take him about twelve hours to reach there but Lei Yu only used five hours. After briefly absorbing energy to recover, Lei Yu carefully observed the town's surrounding as he hid himself. He had to observe what was going on in the town before advancing further.

It was exactly as Black Panther had said, Lei Yu couldn't detect any signs of life from a human being. There were barely some animals

which were still alive in the town. Lei Yu suddenly felt that he was the biggest sinner under the heavens. He felt like he was the one who brought this disaster onto the town by coming here. But thinking these thoughts right now wasn't helping him, so it was best to figure how to deal with the situation.

Lei Yu detected a lot of humans who had been contaminated after their blood was sucked out by the Vampires, had transformed into Vampires themselves. Even though they only had the strength of a Viscount which was similar to a First Order Warrior, however, they were still considered a force to be reckoned with. After all, their numbers cannot be overlooked or ignored.

In addition, the way these Werewolves killed was reflected in the town looking like a city of death. The whole place was filled with the smell of death while the blood on the ground flowed like a river. Bodies were piled up like small mountains and a lot of them showed signs of being partially devoured, showing this was indeed the act of a Werewolf.

If he rashly rushed into the town, he would definitely be discovered. Lei Yu went around in a big circle before nearing the grounds of the estate from another direction. At lightning speeds, Lei Yu successfully escaped the attention of the eyes and ears of several Vampires and jumped over the wall.

But the estate grounds were considered fully guarded and alert. Near every portion of the estate walls would be at least two people standing guard, most likely arranged by the Pope. A group was about to attack Lei Yu but one of them recognized him and was immediately overjoyed. With Lei Yu's return, it looks like this battle would soon be over.

Lei Yu followed behind the guard and went towards the castle manor. He started frowning as he saw bodies all over the ground. Lei Yu saw some of their own people but also bodies belonging to Vampires and Werewolves. The number of bodies were countless so it was clear that a massive battle and recently happened.

The estate once lively and filled with vitality now looked like a large cemetery. This gave Lei Yu an inexplicable sense of depression.

As he got closer to the front door of the castle manor, the Holy Knights guarding immediately discovered Lei Yu. One of them swiftly went in to notify the Pope and the latter rushed out before Lei Yu even reached the steps. The previous calm and steady aura of the Pope no longer appeared.

“Lei Yu! You’re finally back!” After seeing Lei Yu, the Pope looked like he just saw his own parents with extreme affection. But Lei Yu merely asked a few things about the situation before hurrying around him. He was searching for the

person he was most concerned about so he wasn't in the mood to bother with any in-depth questions.

After seeing his men and Ai Er, Lei Yu finally sighed in relief. "Ai Er, I'm back!"

Although they weren't separated for a long time, Ai Er's eyes still turned red. She sprinted forth like an arrow and tightly hugged Lei Yu's strong body. After stroking Ai Er's back, Lei Yu knew that if it wasn't for the unknown occurrence at Dr. Tony's headquarters, he wouldn't be able to come back here. Lei Yu's heart was filled with many emotions as he thought about not being able to see his most beloved person ever again.



“Young master, you’re back!” Black Panther, Gray Bear, Hu Jiong and the others all stood up and bowed respectfully.

The Pope was the backbone of the Vatican but for these men, only after seeing Lei Yu present did they feel like they’ve found their pillar of strength. Since their pillar of strength was back, anything was possible now because in their eyes, Lei Yu was person who could create miracles.

After chatting a bit with his friends and fellow brothers, he finally sat down across the Pope and began discussing what had happened these past few days.

“I don’t know how and where the

Dark Council received the information about you leaving the estate, but once you did, they initiated a large-scale invasion. If it weren't for the eighteen Holy Knights I had brought with me, most likely this place would have been already compromised." The words of the Pope still tried to show how important their Vatican was.

At this point, Lei Yu didn't bother with the subtle hints being dropped since he didn't want to engage in any verbal disputes. "You should remember my friend who was captured right?"

The Pope nodded so Lei Yu continued, "It wasn't the Dark Council that did this, the culprit was Dr. Tony. I secretly followed

Bianca before finding out that he was behind everything. His goal was to make the Dark Council and the Vatican exchange blows, and once both the eagle and tiger were injured, he was planning to be the hunter who became the final victor.” The Pope’s eyes revealed a look of surprise.

“This Tony person deserves to die!”

“Things are far more than that. Whether his plan of capturing my friend succeeded or not, there is one thing I realized: He was the one who revealed to the Dark Council that I had left the estate or else things would not have developed this quickly. Also after meeting Dr. Tony did I realize how fearsome he was. If he really wanted to fulfill his

ambitions, even if the Vatican and the Dark Council joined forces, it would still not be able to stop him. Counting him as well, they had a total of five Ultimate Rank Mutants who were super experts no more different than you and me!”

“Wha... what? No... that’s not possible!” It was apparent that the Pope didn’t believe Lei Yu’s words. If five Ultimate Rank Mutants had appeared, would Lei Yu be sitting here safe and sound chatting with him?

# Chapter 185:

## Supreme Expert

“Why is it impossible?” Lei Yu pursed his lips. “You really didn’t know about this? After cooperating with Dr. Tony for so long? Now that is unbelievable. You should know that once Dr. Tony makes his move, the consequences are unthinkable.” Lei Yu never mentioned the strange occurrence. It was better this way, since it maintained an air of mystery and made the Pope feel like he couldn’t see through Lei Yu.

The Pope was lost in thought. Although he was shocked by Lei Yu’s words, he still chose to believe them, since Lei Yu had no need to

falsely confess.

“Your holiness, how do you plan on dealing with this current situation?” Lei Yu asked.

The Pope nodded, saying, “The Dark Council isn’t too much of a threat to us for now, since their strongest hidden expert Primus Hogue hasn’t appeared yet.”

Lei Yu had a strange look on his face as he shook his head, “It’s unfortunate that because of you and I, your faithful believers paid the price with their lives.”

“God will remember what they’ve done for the Vatican, and their souls will receive the best treatment in heaven.” The Pope made a fake

benevolent expression that disgusted Lei Yu.

“Okay, let’s not talk about this, and talk about your plans instead,” Lei Yu interrupted the Pope’s apparent show of piety.

“Your return has significantly increased our strength. There’s no longer any need for us to guard this place, so we can just rush out and cleanse the place of all these evil creatures. This is the quickest and easiest solution.”

Lei Yu thought this would work as well. Taking the initiative was better than sitting here and waiting.

Just as the two were discussing the issues and were about to arrive at a

consensus, an explosion came from somewhere in the estate grounds. It had come from quite a distance away, but even Ai Er, an ordinary person, could hear it clearly.

Following this, everyone rushed out together. Lei Yu asked, "What was that?"

Looking off into the distance, they could see a dark cloud, of at least five meters in height. And a huge gap had been blown open in the estate's walls. The guards who wanted to rush forward towards the cloud started screaming as their bodies began to shrivel up. It appeared as if their blood had been completely drained, and their deaths had been extremely gruesome.



“Primus Hogue!” The Pope’s face became pale while Lei Yu was in complete shock. This was the Dark Council’s most powerful existence, a supreme expert that had already surpassed the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior!

The sudden appearance of this fearsome individual left the Pope without a choice. He anxiously looked over at Lei Yu, who expressed his understanding. The two simultaneously brought out the scrolls inside their storage rings, an item that Lei Yu had always thought was only used to open Crete’s Labyrinth.

The scroll gave off a mysterious aura. Once it appeared, Primus Hogue’s voice was heard at a

distance just enough for everyone in the area to clearly hear it.

“Little child of the Vatican and your little friend Lei Yu, what are you up to? Do you want to release the arcane arts of the scrolls?”

The Pope’s eyes widened. “You... How did you know?”

“What of it? Surprised? Didn’t the previous generation’s Pope tell you...? Then let me, tell YOU!” This black cloud instantly appeared in front of Lei Yu, the Pope and the others in less than a breath, as if it had teleported, allowing everyone to see what Primus Hogue actually looked like.

Primus Hogue wasn’t as tall as he

looked at a distance; he was only about 1.6 meters tall (5ft 2in). His entire being was covered in a swirling dark energy, making him looking majestic and domineering.

His face was pale as if blood didn't flow in his veins. His lips and his fingernails were black, as if he had been poisoned. The most terrifying feature was his eyes - centered in the white of his eyes were barely visible pupils, the size of pinpricks. His gaze was hollow, as if he were already staring at everyone as if they were as good as dead.

His sudden arrival hadn't given Lei Yu and the Pope any time to react. The Vampire Prince Bel's strongest teleportation ability was still a ways off compared to this. And Primus

Hogue had displayed this ability with such ease...

Panic-stricken, the Pope suddenly stopped chanting half-way through his mantra. This made Primus Hogue smile in disdain. At the same time, Lei Yu pushed Ai Er behind him. The Holy Knights then rushed in front of the Pope and Lei Yu. As for Black Panther and the rest, they stood on both sides of Lei Yu, in their fighting stances.

“Such a big lineup... But unfortunately for you guys, you’re dealing with me! You guys will forever disappear from this world!” Primus Hogue wasn’t just all talk. He actually started waving his hand, and a dark aura blew over towards them. The moment this dark aura

came into contact with the Holy Knights standing in the front lines, their bodies started festering, giving off a foul smell. Eighteen Holy Knights. Eighteen experts who had reached the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior had instantly lost their lives! Was this the ability of a supreme expert who had surpassed the power of a Sixth Order Warrior? Nope, it was not only that. Primus Hogue had done this with a mere wave of his hand this time.

“A hundred years ago, I was trapped through the scrolls’ arcane arts by Kalchas and the last generation’s Pope. And only these past few years did I finally manage to break out of it. Now you guys want to use the same method to deal with me? Impossible!” Primus Hogue, only 1.6

meters tall, suddenly stared hard, making the two scrolls in the Pope's hand burn in flames before disappearing without even leaving any ashes behind.

Lei Yu and the Pope simultaneously took a few steps back. Even though Primus Hogue had only made two simple moves, with one of them the Vatican had lost eighteen experts, and with the second Lei Yu and the others had lost the treasure that was supposed to help them deal with this threat.

Lei Yu was currently overawed at Primus Hogue's presence, because he couldn't detect any life coming from him. It was as if Primus Hogue didn't exist. Yet here he was, in front of everyone. It couldn't

possibly be a fake. The other party's overpowering strength had made Lei Yu's ability to probe absolutely useless.

"You...! What do you want?! God is surely watching your evil deeds and you will suffer his punishment!" the Pope said in a panic.

At this point, the Pope had become a leader without any followers. The death of the eighteen Holy Knights was a heavy loss for the Vatican.

"Punishment? In this world, no one has ever dared to mention that word to me!" Primus Hogue's momentum was too compelling. Even if Lei Yu and the others wanted to attack they wouldn't be able to, because the pressure he

exerted was too great.

Lei Yu was secretly surprised in his heart at how weak he was. When facing a true expert, the chance of him escaping was equal to zero. If he was able to get out of this crisis, he had to increase! Increase! He had to increase his powers!

“The grudge between the Vatican and my Dark Council isn’t something recent that can be set aside just like that. As for this little child Lei Yu, having such strength at this young age truly makes him a rarely seen genius!” Primus Hogue then started shaking his head. “It’s too bad you made a mistake and killed a Senator of my Dark Council. We all know that you have to pay the price when making a



mistake, so there's no need to debate the issue!"

Not knowing where his courage came from, Lei Yu loudly replied: "If I didn't kill him, was I supposed to let him kill me? Was I born to let you guys kill me? What a joke!"

"Humph!" Primus Hogue suddenly stared hard, and Lei Yu's body instantly froze. Lei Yu felt that he was unable to breathe. His face became flushed and the veins on his neck started popping out. Lei Yu's current appearance was truly horrific, the stuff of nightmares!

# Chapter 186: A Heavenly Staff Descends

“How could a human’s lowly life possibly compare to our noble life? You are not qualified to speak with me and will only accelerate the time of your death!” It was obvious that Primus Hogue didn’t want to immediately kill Lei Yu, but wanted to play with his life instead.

Primus Hogue retrieved his dark energy and Lei Yu coughed violently a few times. Ai Er hurriedly slapped Lei Yu’s back. Even in a front of a supreme expert, there was no way this weak woman would change her

concern towards her most beloved. Ai Er actually looked quite calm in this situation.

In fact, Ai Er was thinking that even if they were to die, dying together with Lei Yu would be a rather happy and beautiful thing. But Lei Yu wasn't thinking of this, he only wanted to protect the people who needed protection, and didn't want any harm to befall Ai Er.

“Lowly?” Lei Yu firmly pinched his neck, allowing his breathing to recover. He then said in a rather reasonable manner: “Our lives are lowly?! I think you creatures of the dark who can't survive in the light are the dirty ones! Could it be that you guys were never humans before? I have the same two words

for you - simply laughable!”

“You must die!” roared Primus Hogue. Lei Yu had now fully angered Primus Hogue, the founder of the Dark Council!

To kill Lei Yu, Primus Hogue would barely need to use an ounce of strength. As a demon that felt he no longer belonged to this realm, a wave of his hand could make the entire town disappear forever.

But what about the Pope? He didn’t even have the courage to say a single word! This made the people next to Lei Yu look down on him, in contempt. Was this what the Vatican’s Pope was made of?

When Primus Hogue was about to

make his move, a black shadow shot down from the skies. The black wings on his back revealed his identity. That's right; this was a Senator of the Dark Council - Vampire Prince Bel.

"Your lordship. After a thorough investigation, I'm absolutely sure that there are no longer any creatures that need to be kept breathing except for the ones in this estate." Bel fiercely glanced over at Lei Yu.

"Very good. Since the commoners chose to betray us, then let us control their world. From this day on, you lead our Vampire clan and initiate a large-scale takeover of the humans. I want all these lowly humans to have our noble blood

flowing through their veins!”

“I obey your command!” Spreading out his wings, Bel soared into the sky.

“Bastard! Damn bastard!” Lei Yu yelled like crazy. But he knew he didn’t have the ability to deal with Primus Hogue. Facing such strength, a mere pinky finger of his opponent would easily kill him. Although their difference in power was a single level, the gap in strength between them was equivalent to a distance of thousands of miles.

Lei Yu suddenly realized something. Hearing Primus Hogue speak to Bel, it seemed that he was a Vampire. Then, could he be related to the

Kameno family?

The 1.6 meter tall Primus Hogue suddenly raise his eyebrows. “I’ve suddenly had a great idea!”

“Your idea will certainly be extremely vile!” Lei Yu was trying to go against the pressure exerted by Primus Hogue. Perhaps Lei Yu was the only one among those present who had the courage to criticize him.

“Vile? That’s too funny! I am going to turn you vile humans into family members of my noble Vampire clan. You guys should feel honored instead!” Coldly laughing, Primus Hogue then continued, “Even though I don’t know what kind of methods you’ve used to enhance

your strength up to this point in such a short period of time, your power level is already close to mine. If I were to assist your cultivation further, that means I would be willing to train you to become the next Chairman of the Dark Council!”

“Ptui! F\*ck that, you might as well kill me!” Lei Yu was so angry that he had practically lost his mind. He would rather die than become a member of the Dark Council.

Lei Yu hadn’t expected this at all. He had finally escaped Dr. Tony’s terrifying hell, and then suddenly had to face this super powerful opponent that he couldn’t take on at all! Everything was like one bad dream after another. It was



unbelievable, yet it was happening right in front of him!

“Humph!” Primus Hogue made a claw-like gesture with his hand, and Lei Yu’s body suddenly felt a powerful suction force. Unable to resist in the slightest, he was then sucked towards the demonic claws of Primus Hogue.

Ai Er wanted to pull Lei Yu back, but with a mere stare from Primus Hogue, her body flew off like a cannon ball. Enraged, Lei Yu’s eyes turned red, but no matter how hard he struggled, he still couldn’t escape that demonic claw.

Ai Er’s body flew off towards the castle manor, but was caught by Black Panther, whose quick speed

was able to react in time.

Fortunately, it had only been a physical attack, and it hadn't affected her soul. Lei Yu was relieved when he realized that Ai Er was unharmed.

His neck was clamped by Primus Hogue but their eyes were staring at each other. Lei Yu's eyes were filled with anger; his bloodshot eyes still looking as if they contained some type of elusive mysteriousness.

Even Primus Hogue, who was fully in control, couldn't see through him... As if Lei Yu still had a hidden ace that he hadn't revealed yet.

"No matter what other abilities you have, I'm going to suck all the blood out of your body and change it into our noble Kamenno family's blood!"

“No!” Ai Er hysterically yelled, but was there any use?

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

There were no dark clouds in the sky and no signs of lightning, so why would there be such loud and harsh sounds? Everyone raised their heads; even Primus Hogue felt something was off.

At this time, in another part of the sky, a golden light flew towards them like a rocket. “Bam!”

On the ground, a copper staff about as thick as a human’s leg had stabbed deep into the earth. Cracks

spread out on the ground around it, while everything was shaking just like during an earthquake. It took a while before Ai Er and others were able to stand firmly again.

Lei Yu was shocked. Could it be that another supreme expert was coming to wipe them out? “No! It shouldn’t be! This... this aura seems familiar!” Lei Yu, still being held midair, had some doubts. Who could it be? Such a powerful aura wasn’t something Lei Yu was capable of facing, or daring to send out his spirit in order to probe their identity.

Another golden light appeared where the copper staff had come from, in the sky. It was also shooting towards them and getting

closer!

“Lord Romon!” It’s unknown where the Pope got the guts from, but he actually stepped out and shouted this.

“Romon? The ascetic cultivator?”  
Lei Yu was surprised. Was this the person who the Pope said would save them when the Vatican was in a crisis - Lycomedes Romon?

A single person came down from the skies and landed, his whole body exuding a visible aura that had the same surface area as Primus Hogue’s, but in a gold color. This person gave off a sacred feeling, a force that only those who were righteous and upright had, the complete opposite of the evil force

that defined Primus Hogue of the Dark Council.

Amidst his blonde hair stood a small vertical horn. Looking at his handsome face, although the Pope said he had been alive for a very long time, his appearance and his supposed age didn't match up at all.

The most fearsome thing was his body - two metal hoops were firmly locked into his shoulder blades. Although fresh blood wasn't dripping out of those wounds, one look would be enough to instantly numb a person's heart. A body filled with wounds and scars... Who in this world was capable of hurting such a powerful existence? There was only one way to explain this - self-mutilation! As an ascetic

cultivator, he was meant to bear the pain and discipline that ordinary people could not tolerate. Not did it improve the strength of one's body, it also honed their extraordinary willpower. This was the one thing that was compulsory for all who walked the path of ascetic cultivation.

# Chapter 187: Lord Romon

Upon seeing this newly arrived individual, Primus Hogue removed his grasp on Lei Yu's neck. Lei Yu dropped to the ground and coughed a few times before backing away.

“You have already condensed your Gold Core? You're the rumored ascetic cultivator who appeared on Vatican's side?”

“Primus Hogue, have you finally chosen to die today? You damn f\*cking asshole!” Romon cursed.

Lei Yu, the Pope, Ai Er, and everyone present, including Primus



Hogue, had their mouths agape in shock. No one present had expected that such a powerful entity would have such a dirty mouth.

“What did you say?!” Only a while later did Primus Hogue come back to his senses. Hearing someone curse at him, he angrily condensed the dark energy around himself and pushed it towards Romon.

In an unhurried gesture, Romon casually flipped his palm. The large copper staff similar to a pillar flew up by itself and stabbed into the ground in front of Romon with a “bam”, blocking Primus Hogue’s attack.

“Lord Romon! Please save the Vatican and your followers!” Seeing

how strong Romon was, the Pope's courage also increased. He ignored Primus Hogue and went up to Romon.

“Save the Vatican? Is the Vatican headquarters even here? If you died here, there will always be a next generation Pope so is it even necessary for me to save anything?”

Romon's words almost made the Pope die from choking on his own saliva. Since he didn't know what else to say, he could only lower his head and silently retreat to the very back.

“Then what is your purpose for coming here? Did you just come here just to insult me?” Even though Primus Hogue wasn't very

tall, his increasing momentum made up for it as he tried to regain his face.

“You? You’re merely enjoying a bit of dog shit luck and succeeded in condensing your Gold Core during your demonic cultivation. You want to fight against me with your current strength? You’re still not qualified!”

Lei Yu and everyone else gasped. “Not qualified?” Lei Yu’s brain seemed to have short circuited. Could Romon be stronger than Primus Hogue by a lot? Lei Yu had already experienced the Primus Hogue’s enormous strength; its terrifying power made a person unable to breathe. No one had expected Romon to actually say

such a thing. Could it be that there were even more ranks once a person surpassed the Sixth Order?

“What did you say? You’re courting death!” Primus Hogue was completely enraged. Like a ghost, he pounced at Romon. The crushing momentum made the Pope and others feel like they’d lost control of their bodies and were about to drop to the ground.

The golden aura surrounding Romon suddenly brightened. The moment Primus Hogue drew near, Romon casually said: “Benefactor, we’ll chat after I get rid of him.” After saying that, Romon picked up the copper pillar and retreated backwards at a speed even faster than Primus Hogue.

Everyone had a surprised look on their face as their gaze fell on Lei Yu. “Benefactor? Wha... what does that mean?”

Black Panther wrinkled his nose as a bit of snot dripped down.

“Young... young master, how many people have you actually saved before? How come wherever you go, there’s someone calling you their benefactor?” It wasn’t surprising to see how shocked Black Panther and others were. They could understand if an ordinary person called Lei Yu a benefactor, but the person who said this had surpassed every powerful expert on this entire planet. So how could he call Lei Yu his benefactor?

Lei Yu scratched his head and blinked a few times. “I... I have no

clue! I've never seen him before!"

Looking off into the distance, those two powers were engaged in a fierce battle. The most eye-catching was definitely Romon. Holding that large copper staff made him look like the mythical legendary being, Sun Wukong (Monkey King). The ease that Romon displayed when manipulating the copper pillar really did make him look as if he were using the Monkey King's Ruyi Golden Staff.

When the staff had previously smashed into the ground, everyone present could already picture how much it weighed. But now that it was in Romon's hands, it looked as if it was as light as a feather.

With Romon's airtight defense, Primus Hogue's frequent attacks were unable to even get near his body.

A confrontation between supreme experts was beyond anything Lei Yu and the others would have imagined. This fight had completely been fought with internal energy this far, and the collision of the dark force with the golden force had made craters all over the ground. It was fortunate that both parties hadn't used their full strength, or else this place would have just turned into a giant hole in the ground.

Lei Yu's mind had drifted off somewhere else. He was wondering how it would feel to possess such

great strength, like those two.

The battle between was getting increasingly fierce. From the ground to the air, from east to west, the energy shockwaves produced by their collisions created gale-like winds. No one dared to blink, afraid that they would miss a second of the fight. As for Lei Yu, he evidently moved Ai Er behind him to protect her. He was using one hand to hold onto her slim waist, afraid that she wouldn't be able to resist the aftershocks by herself.

It was natural for those two to have different colored internal energy, but it looked like their momentum was similar to each other's. As for Primus Hogue's dark energy, it looked slightly thinner than



Romon's golden energy. Perhaps the slight gap between those two supreme experts could mean the difference between victory and defeat.

The distance between the two was only about a dozen meters. But to supreme experts like themselves, distance was no longer an obstacle. Their own movement speed and attack speed were the most important.

Romon suddenly waved the golden staff in his hand. Similar to a dragon bursting out from a cave, a sharp whistling sound was heard and an imposing momentum of energy flew straight for Primus Hogue's chest. Primus Hogue knew he was dealing with an attack that

wasn't at full strength, so he indifferently flung the huge cloak he was wearing in a rotating manner. Once that illusory dragon-like energy drew near, the whirlwind created by the cloak instantly cancelled out the golden dragon. Primus Hogue's eyes and tiny pinprick pupils suddenly enlarged as he roared into the sky. The cloak he was wearing suddenly fluttered in the air behind him and became huge, splitting down the middle as it formed into two wings.

With the larger eyes and clearly larger pupils, a shimmering red light accompanied Primus Hogue's terrifying gaze. After the cloak and hood disappeared, Primus Hogue emerged with short curly black hair, an unchanged pale face, and a

Western-style suit. His whole appearance didn't really quite match, which made him look slightly funny.

Two white fangs had now protruded out from the corners of his mouth. His mouth was also slightly opened, revealing his blood-red tongue.

With this, this identity as a Vampire had now been fully confirmed. But for a Vampire to achieve such strength is truly unimaginable. Lei Yu couldn't help feeling surprised after finding out the Dark Council was founded by the Kamenno family. No wonder their words seemed to have more weight behind them! From the day when he had fought Bel and Jonathan, Lei Yu could tell that even though their strength had

been similar, Bel's status seemed to be significantly higher than Jonathan's. So it turned out to be this reason.

It was at this moment that...!

“Bloodthirsty Eclipsing Wind!”

Roared Primus Hogue. Right after that, his huge wings started to flap, and the dark energy mixed with a disgusting stench sent out a gale of wind that blasted towards Romon.

This wind had a strong corrosive effect. If someone was tainted with it, their fate would be similar to the previous eighteen Holy Knights. But the difference this time was that Primus Hogue had enlarged the surface area of this attack by

multiple times, in order to encase Romon inside of it.

Facing this large area attack with no place to avoid, Romon surprisingly looked quite leisurely. Unhurriedly, he grasped the center of the copper staff with both hands and started rotating it in front of his chest. He then gave a shout that made everyone dumbfounded.

“Electric Fan!” [1]

-----

[1] ardastr: wot? :))) I can't evenO-x\_X oh wow

# Chapter 188: A Battle Between The Strong

Everyone had to admit that this was the most powerful electric fan they have ever seen! Like a tornado, it blew away the poisonous gas that Primus Hogue sent over without allowing it get close to Romon at all.

If this attack didn't work, there was always another. Primus Hogue was a supreme expert that surpassed the Sixth Order rank, so it was natural he had more up his sleeves.

With a flip of his hands, Primus

Hogue was now holding onto two sharp weapons. When one looked closely, those two weapons were extremely sharp daggers that gave off a white light.

“Humph!” Seeing those daggers, Romon voiced his disdain. The tornado like wind only stopped when Romon gradually stopped rotating the copper staff. Primus Hogue uttered a shrill cry like a bat and flapped his wings before flying up into the air. Similar to the tornado whirlwind that Romon previously displayed, Primus Hogue started rotating his whole body while in midair. His rotating speed kept increasing until his face could not be clearly seen. One could only see a powerful black whirlwind start moving towards Romon. This

almost thirty foot high black whirlwind was similar to a pillar that brought bursts of violent winds that made it hard for people to open their eyes.

Romon must have his own reason when he said that Primus Hogue was not his opponent. Sure enough, the copper staff in his hands started growing larger. Stabbed into the ground, it grew to a height of about three floors that was no less than the black whirlwind of Primus Hogue.

A person and a pillar were colliding with each other like a fight between two different colors of lightning. There wasn't any other sounds in the surrounding space except for the "bing bing bang bang" noises of



metallic items striking each other.

Primus Hogue had finally retreated and when one looked closely, they could see his hands were trembling nonstop. As for the big copper pillar, one could see many nicks and scratches on the surface of it. It appears that Primus Hogue's whirlwind attack had caused quite a bit of damage to the pillar. If the pillar was switch out for an actual person, that person would probably be shred to pieces and swallowed whole by his whirlwind.

“Boom!” Romon pulled the copper pillar out and smashed it to the ground. “You no longer have any chances left!”

With Romon as the center, his

golden energy started shining like the morning sun. The bright light and the terrifying energy made the people present feel like they were suffocating. Previously when the two had clashed, Romon had confirmed the Vampire wasn't his opponent. Although the two were on the same realm of power, the different levels they were on was enough to determine one's victory. Due to Romon's violent energy pressure, the surrounding air became visible and looked like it was rippling.

“Bang!”

The golden energy started melding together with the copper pillar. In just a few seconds, the huge pillar rose to the air and was completely

covered in flames. The heat from the flames started to make the air fluctuate and with a sudden roaring sound, the pillar of flame disappeared midair. The next moment, the pillar was seen falling down which seemed no different than a meteor smashing into the earth.

“Boom!”

The loud sound echoed out into the surrounding space and shook the earth. Lei Yu and others couldn't help but feel like this was the end of the world.

Dust filled the entire sky making one unable to see what was happening. Shortly after, a cool breeze then blew by, slowly blowing

all the dust away. Everyone's eyes looked like they were about to pop out of their sockets because the large estate had completely collapsed. The only thing left was where Lei Yu and others were standing, while behind them was the castle manor that stood alone amongst an abyss.

Looking off into the distance, it looked like the entire town had disappeared. The powerful shock had destroyed pretty much everything and the houses had all become piles of gravel.

“Strong! Too strong!” Lei Yu was shocked to the core. A single attack was capable of destroying an entire town; its power was no less than a magnitude 8 earthquake. This place

had become the epicenter as if they were on top of a cliff. The once lively rural town had now become a desolate place that one could not tell what used to be here.

“Where’s Primus Hogue?” Everyone was looking around and couldn’t even find a glimpse of his shadow. Their first thought was that under such a powerful attack, could it be that he was instantly killed by Romon’s enormous flame pillar?

No, it can’t be that easy! This wasn’t Romon’s strongest attack and he never expected to kill Primus Hogue with it either.

Sure enough, a shaking figure was slowly floating out from the abyss and into the sky – it was Primus

Hogue! With a body covered in dust, the blood on his clothes showed that he had been injured. It was expected since under such a large area attack that was almost instantaneous, even having a pair of wings and wanting escape wasn't a simple task. Not dying had already made Lei Yu and others extremely surprised. If they were in his spot, it's most likely their bodies would have already been destroyed into nothingness.

“Ding, ding!” Primus Hogue was banging the two daggers he was holding together. He lifted his head and stared at Romon who was also floating in midair with the copper staff resting on his shoulders. He then said in a cold voice: “You have completely enraged me! I am going

to reduce everyone here to ashes!”

A vicious person would always use vicious methods. They will never openly confront their opponents but find a weakness such as someone they care about and go after that. These types of people were the ones Lei Yu hated the most.

But Romon’s lips only lightly sneered and didn’t bother with what Primus Hogue had said. When it came to speed, Lei Yu had never seen how fast Romon was, but a Vampire’s speed was not slow at all. Someone like Bel who was at the Prince rank already had speeds that shocked Lei Yu. After all, they had a teleportation-like ability. And now, we’re talking about Primus Hogue, a

supreme expert that had already surpassed the Prince rank!

“You little runt who had just entered the early levels of a Blood Emperor, want to pretend to be cool in front of me and say I enraged you? You’re courting death!” It was obvious that the previous armageddon-like attack didn’t consume much of Romon’s energy because he still looked rather relaxed.

Lei Yu was so envious, being able to float or fly like them two would be such a cool thing for him!

“Screech, screech!” Primus Hogue with his blood red eyes once again screeched, his body suddenly disappearing from the sky.



“Not good!” Lei Yu’s face paled. A surge of powerful and difficult to resist momentum came billowing over, its target being them. No one could move their bodies at all. Could it be that they were going to be instantly turned into ashes by Primus Hogue?

“Humph!” Romon turned around and displayed a terrifying and unimaginable speed. At near instantaneous speeds, a rainbow shot through the air and the huge pillar smashed down towards the ground.

“Bam!”

Now this was a cannonball. Primus Hogue who had just appeared never dreamed that he would be smashed

like a baseball. No, rather than saying baseball, playing whac-a-mole would be more accurate. The body of Primus Hogue was smashed into the deepest part of the abyss. Even if he had 10,000 lives, it's impossible for him to stay alive because the strike by Romon had solidly hit Primus Hogue dead center.

Romon smiled at the crowd in front of him. His previous large area attack was controlled to perfection; everywhere was destroyed except for this place. There wasn't the slightest damage to the area where Lei Yu and them were standing.

# Chapter 189:

## Condensing A Gold Core

With such a scene like in the movies, it should have been a life or death fight for them. But with the emergence of Romon, it somehow ended like this. It was too unbelievable especially when it came to their strength; Lei Yu had become humbled after witnessing their God-like strength.

The surrounding hundred square meters had become a bottomless abyss. The place Lei Yu and others were standing at looked like the last pillar that hadn't collapsed which

happened to be supporting the castle manor.

“Benefactor, the danger has passed so you can be rest assured!” Romon leapt from the air and landed in front of the crowd.

“Lord... Lord Romon...” Lei Yu blinked a few times before asking in disbelief: “The benefactor you’re mentioning... is me right?”

“Who else could it be? If it weren’t for me attempting to make a breakthrough this last period of time, I would have met up with you a long time ago.” Romon said with a smile.

The Pope swallowed hard before saying: “Lord Romon, the huge

kindness you've..."

"That's enough! There's no need to say those useless words since the Vatican is insignificant when compared to the benefactor. The most I would have done for the Vatican is to give some minor assistance. If it wasn't for Kalchas that old devil making me protect the Vatican, I wouldn't even bother with you guys!"

"Uh..." The Pope suddenly felt extremely embarrassed. As if a fly had been stuck in his throat, he didn't know what to say for a brief period of time.

All this time, the Vatican likened Romon to their savior, a position that no one else was able to

surpass. Back then, Romon had been extremely respectful to Prophet Kalchas so no one expected today he would call Kalchas an old devil.

What was even more difficult for the Pope to accept was back then, he blew his trumpet in front of Lei Yu about how powerful Lord Romon was and how he would show up when the Vatican was in a crisis. And he had always treated Lei Yu as someone on the same level as himself, so never would he have imagined that the Romon he respected the most actually addressed Lei Yu as a benefactor. The Pope simply couldn't make heads or tails out of this situation.

The death of Primus Hogue was a

sign of the Dark Council's complete destruction. No one had ever expected this outcome to come about with such simplicity. But the cost of this was a bit too much, the casualties of the innocents were too numerous to count. And now that the town had disappeared without a trace, replacing it was cliffs and an abyss.

Romon's approach had a deeper significance, a so called ulterior motive. In fact, his main purpose was not to instantly kill Primus Hogue but to clear out remnants of the Dark Council within the town. Even the earlier loud and arrogant Prince Bel's body was scattered amongst god knows what pile of debris.

“Benefactor, can we speak alone?”  
Romon stabbed his copper staff off to the side. A “bam!” sound made Ai Er unconsciously hide behind Lei Yu.

“With... with me? Okay, no problem!” Lei Yu would never refuse getting close to this super strong expert since he knew Romon didn’t have any harmful intentions towards him.

Everyone entered the lonely looking castle that looked like it was floating in the void. While they all congregated around the first main hall, Lei Yu and Romon both went to the second floor. Even the Pope didn’t dare to ask any questions on what those two were doing. A Red Cardinal to the side whispered:



“Your holiness, is this Lord Romon for real or a fraud?”

“You’re courting death!” The Pope angrily rebutted. “Being able to defeat Primus Hogue who was a supreme expert at the Blood Emperor rank, how could he be a fraud? You’re simply spouting nonsense!”

“Yes! Yes! Yes!”

Inside Lei Yu’s room. Without waiting for Romon, Lei Yu first asked: “Lord Romon, have you mistaken me for someone else? How... how could I be your benefactor?”

Romon’s next move nearly made Lei Yu jump in shock. Romon

kneeled on one knee; his right hand clasped to his chest and showed an extremely devout face. “Oh honorable Lord Lei Yu, you may not know recognize me but you will definitely recognize my father!”

“Your father? How... how could that be possible?” Lei Yu wanted to support Romon to make him stand up but was refused by him.

“That’s right; you’ll definitely recognize him especially when you were the one who saved my father’s life. Over a thousand years ago, father and mother got married and I was given birth. I then followed my mother’s surname Lycomedes. My father was worried if I had his surname, something bad may befall me so that’s how it came to this.”

Lei Yu vaguely felt something and then asked: “Then your father is...”

“Minotaur Linos!”

“What?!” Lei Yu almost lost his footing, “bull-head?!”

Romon nodded and smiled. “In my father’s entire life, only you can call him as such. If it were someone else, I’m afraid they would have already been chopped into pieces by his Thirty-six Lunar Stars!”

“It’s really him? How... how... how could he have such a handsome son like you? This is too incredible!” Lei Yu stared with wide eyes and couldn’t believe what his ears heard.

Romon scratched his head, “This

was one of my fortunes because my mother was very beautiful. Even though I inherited her looks, I was destined to have a horn on my head making me a non-human. This is a fact that cannot be changed.”

Lei Yu gasped, “No wonder... quick! Get up!” While saying this, Lei Yu helped Romon get up.

While getting up, Romon continued: “I have always followed the teachings of father. Whenever there’s thunder and lightning, I would devoutly worship it in order to show my respects to you. Didn’t you use the pseudonym Lightning back then?”

Lei Yu nodded emotionally, “This I know because the Vatican’s Pope

had mentioned it to me.”

What made Lei Yu filled with all sorts of emotions was that the people a thousand years ago still remembered his kindness. But the people in society nowadays were filled with deceit, immorality and treachery. In order to reach their goals, they were even willing to sacrifice their own daughters for it. Comparing people to the ones back then, the modern people were truly frightening.

“Benefactor, I feel that your abilities have been improving rapidly. I believe you will soon make a breakthrough and reach the same Gold Core stage as me. But what makes me impressed is that you’ve only cultivated for a few short years

while my dull self has cultivated for almost a millennium!”

“Gold Core stage? What... what is that?” As if suddenly remembering something, Lei Yu then asked:

“Previously you were conversing with Primus Hogue and mentioned condensing a gold core, what does that mean?”

“Well, it’s like this...” Romon then slowly explained: “In this world, everyone has their own way of cultivating. Some take the general route and ignore training one’s own powerful flesh. Some choose to follow the martial route, even though the progress is slow, their foundations become deep and stable. There’s also some that follow the devil or demonic paths.

Oh yeah, Primus Hogue is a cultivator that follows the demonic path including my father. But my father didn't want me to bear the consequences of demon cultivation and had me follow the most painful path, the ascetic cultivator." Romon paused when he saw Lei Yu's face filled with confusion, he then continued: "Before a cultivator condenses their Gold Core, there are six levels they need to break past. And it's quite clear that benefactor has already broken through to the sixth level. In just a few decades or if quick, maybe only ten plus years, benefactor will be able to break through the bottleneck and condense his Gold Core leaving the mortal cultivation realm and becoming what we call an Immortal Cultivator."

“Immortal Cultivator?”



# Chapter 190: The White Crystal

“That’s right; one would undergo a qualitative transformation. The power of your old internal energy would increase but also gradually dilute itself and be replaced by a more powerful energy.”

“How... how could such a thing happen? How come I can’t comprehend what you’re saying?”

Romon calmly explained: “In fact, cultivators and Immortal Cultivators are under the same heaven but Immortal Cultivators are just a bit more mysterious. Anyone that touches the path of

cultivation can be regarded as an Immortal Cultivator, but the experts that are able to traverse the hardships and condense their Gold Cores are next to none. According to a different set of standards, Immortal Cultivators are split into various stages such as Foundation Building, Enlightenment, Inedia[1], Gold Core, Nascent Soul, Fusion Soul, Soul Splitting, Boundary Transition, and finally Mahayana[2] which makes up the nine stages. Those that haven't reached the Gold Core stage are considered mortal cultivators. If we compare this to the martial cultivator's reference, the First Order and Second Order Warriors are in the Foundation Building stage. The Third Order and Fourth Order Warriors are in the Enlightenment

stage, and the Fifth Order and the level benefactor is currently at which is Sixth Order, would be considered the Inedia stage. Once you break through that stage, then you can successfully condense your Gold Core and achieve immortality. Of course, I haven't been in contact with anyone above the Gold Core stage except for my father. The power of these Immortals has reached the level of being capable of destroying the heavens and the earth."

Lei Yu was a bit confused but was able to understand most of it. He then asked: "Your father? Is he still alive?"

"Of course! He's currently protecting Her Majesty Queen

Telephassa whom has already entered the stages of an Immortal Cultivator. In fact, the reason I've stayed behind here is to wait for your breakthrough." Romon replied.

Lei Yu felt a "buzzing" noise appear in his mind and suddenly felt dizzy. Could it be that the beautiful goddess Telephassa was still alive?

"Are you okay?" Asked Romon as he saw the change in Lei Yu's expression. Romon actually didn't know the relationship between Lei Yu and Telephassa at all.

"Ah? Oh, no, nothing's wrong." Lei Yu shook his head and determined he wasn't dreaming. But him who already has a girlfriend suddenly felt he was too much and had

become a dirty pervert!

Romon looked again before nodding in assurance when he determined there wasn't anything wrong with Lei Yu.

“Oh yeah, why is Her Majesty's crown in the hands of the Pope? Also, the Ares boots that I'm currently wearing, shouldn't they belong to your father?”

Romon smiled, “Well... once you reach the Immortal Cultivator stages and see them two, you will understand everything.”

“When I see them?” Lei Yu's heart started beating faster, could he really be able to see the world's most beautiful goddess again? All

of this had really made him have difficult time believing.

“That’s right. In fact, if the conditions permitted it, they would have definitely waited for you. But they’ve all made their breakthroughs over five hundred years ago and you haven’t even been born during then, that’s why they couldn’t wait anymore. As for that old devil Kalchas, he also wanted to wait for you but he couldn’t suppress it anymore after stepping into the Gold Core stage, that’s why he had to leave as well.”

Today, Lei Yu completely understood the term inconceivable. Every single one of Romon’s words was something Lei Yu had never imagined he would hear, it’s almost

similar to him hearing a mythical fairy tale. “You’re saying Prophet Kalchas hasn’t died yet?”

“Of course not. I returned to the Vatican to spread the news that he had died, then I haven’t made any further appearance after that. I have been continuing to improve myself because according to father’s words, I knew the day you were born was not far away.”

“Understood, I completely understand everything!” It was like Lei Yu had a sudden enlightenment. “So the next thing I need to do is to concentrate on cultivating, improve myself, and once I condense my Gold Core, I will see them again right?” Lei Yu was rather looking forward to this.

“Correct, that’s how it should be.”

Lei Yu was excited as he exhaled while trembling a bit, there’s no longer any need to stay in the United States. He had originally come here to get rid of Hasegawa, but he never expected the continuous chain of events. Since the Dark Council had been destroyed, Dr. Tony’s dream had been shattered, then it was time to return home and concentrate on cultivating.

After hearing Romon’s words did Lei Yu understand that in the eyes of those in the Immortal Realm, he was merely an infant that had started crawling and still needed to be nursed. There was still a long road ahead of him!



The two returned to the first floor hall. After seeing how respectful Romon was looking at Lei Yu, the Pope's mouth naturally opened as he gaped at them. Regarding Romon's prior demonstration of power, the Pope's heart had already thrown itself at Romon's feet and prostrated itself in admiration. What the Pope didn't expect was that Lei Yu, who he had always tried to draw to his side turned out to be Lord Romon's benefactor. As for how this benefactor business come about, maybe he'll never get to know the truth.

“Wanna get out of here? If we don't leave soon, I'm afraid a gust of wind might blow this place off the cliff soon.” Lei Yu joked.

It's unsure how the Pope mastered such an ability but he floated to the opposite side of the cliff. As for Lei Yu and others, they stood on top of Romon's huge pillar while Romon flew them across. Lei Yu actually had a great time with this process because it felt more stimulating than skydiving. He was determined to ask Romon later on how to grasp this flying ability.

As they were flying across, Lei Yu was surprised to feel that something was inside the abyss. It was a very unique powerful energy that didn't belong to the destructive type, nor was it created by someone. Lei Yu turned around to tell them what was going on and leapt off the cliff. Romon was afraid of an accident occurring so he followed

right after.

The death of Primus Hogue was without a doubt, so there's no way he was still alive. One of the things Vampires feared was having something penetrate the top of their skull.<sup>3</sup> And when Romon's staff slammed down, it shattered his skull so he was deader than a doornail.

This powerful energy was coming from the area where Primus Hogue's body had landed. Lei Yu was using one hand along the side of the cliff to slow down his descent before he landed at the bottom.

"Yes! It's coming from around here!" Lei Yu arrived at the mouth of a deep hole and discovered the

flashing of a faint white light. Lei Yu looked inside and realized with his eyesight, he couldn't see what it was.

“Let me do it!” Romon grinned before suddenly slamming his copper staff into the ground. The ground shook and sent the body of Primus Hogue bouncing out of the hole.

Lei Yu blinked a few times, “You are really too strong...”

Very quickly, the two found what was making the flashing light. It was a bead that was hanging against the chest of Primus Hogue. The bead was very similar to the Spiritual Bead of Longevity from before, but it wasn't the same thing

because this was a white crystal. As for what its uses were, they had no clue.

Lei Yu simply yanked the bead off. “Do you care if I take this?” Lei Yu asked while waving the crystal.

“Why would I care? I don’t even know what this thing does.”

Lei Yu’s eyebrow jumped before he stored the bead inside his storage ring. The two once again rose into the air and returned to where the crowd was waiting.

Two days later, Lei Yu brought Black Panther and everyone else to Dr. Tony’s base. They found inside some experimental data on many viruses and bacterium, including

some data code they couldn't read. Since the things they found at the Yamaguchi-gumi's headquarters were so useful already, then this old devil Dr. Tony's things should not be too bad either. Lei Yu collected everything!

-----

[1] Inedia is a belief that a person can live without eating food, so that means Lei Yu doesn't really have to eat now to stay alive?

[2] Mahayana is a Buddhist practice and the author uses this as to say this Immortal has achieved the highest ascension possible.

[3] In this world of the author, Vampires appear not to be afraid of

stakes through the heart but stakes through the head?

【Author's comment: I would like to make a statement so don't get pissed. Ai Er hasn't made a lot of appearances but her focus will be highlighted in the Immortal Realm. I have already thought of the story's outline and it should be good. Ai Er is a very important character, so important that Lei Yu's fate might turn to a different path. Please be patient and additionally, Lei Yu hears about Telephassa but can they really meet again? That's a secret for now.】

# Chapter 191: He's The Enemy?

Finally, Lei Yu arranged for Black Panther, Gray Bear, and Hu Jiong to take care of the nightclub and the fighting arena. As for whether anyone will appear to cause trouble, there was nothing to worry about. Who would be scared when they had the Vatican as their backing? Moreover, just one word from Romon and the Pope would be at his beck and call.

As for Romon, he chose to wait and had no intentions of returning to Tenglong country with Lei Yu. As a cultivator, Romon understood that relying on outside help was of no



use.

Ten, twenty, or especially thirty years was a long time for Lei Yu but was nothing to Romon. It's no wonder Lei Yu often used the term old evil spirit or old devil when referring to Kalchas.

In fact, Lei Yu still had some important things he hadn't completed yet, and that's finding his mother and finding the real murderer behind the death of his grandfather. The current Lei Yu had the complete qualifications to do such a thing!

Meeting up with Liu Hao and Cui Ying Ying, Lei Yu and Ai Er flew back to Tenglong country together. The ones to greet them on arrival

was actually the army!

After receiving news that Lei Yu was coming back, Lin Cang Hai and Martial Sect's Shangguan Xi Hong personally came to pick them up. Of course, included was Lei Yu's sworn older brother and best friend Nuo Hu, his father and aunt Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng.

Based on manners, Lei Yu first greeted Lin Cang Hai and Shangguan Xi Hong. Everyone knew that this twenty something year old kid who was greeting them politely was someone that had reached the legendary peak of a Sixth Order Warrior.

"Good! It's great that you've come back!" Lin Cang Hai was extremely

pleased. As the country's highest ranking official, he of course craved the support of such a talent. Since Lei Yu at such a young age had reached the strength of a Sixth Order super expert, he was definitely the first in the country's history to accomplish it.

With a police motorcade and a military escort, they had practically pushed Lei Yu to the highest position of attention. All of this was of course unnecessary to Lei Yu since was tired of putting up these false facades, but he still had to accept everything politely to give those leaders face.

This line of cars drove directly to Lei Yu's previous residence. Lin Cang Hai, Shangguan Xi Hong and

others first left, the only ones remaining were the ones Lei Yu had missed dearly.

“Big brother, I really missed you to death!” Lei Yu was finally able to give Nuo Hu a big bear hug. They both patted each other’s back, a gesture that meant more than a thousand words.

“Little Yu, you’ve matured a lot and became a lot stronger. As your big brother, the distance between us is getting further and further away!” Nuo Hu was feeling a hard to describe emotion. A youngster that was considered useless trash and kicked out had now been prioritized by the country. This was simply too incredible of a tale!

“Big brother!” Ai Er pouted, “Could it be that you don’t miss me at all? Seriously, you just ignored me and left me aside!”

“Ha ha...”

“Ha ha...”

After chatting and reminiscing for a few days did things die down for this group of happy people. This group even went back to that Barbecue City a few times, except they were missing one person – Fang Yi Ke.

They didn’t want to bring up the previous sad memories, and the Kou country had already paid a heavy price for it. And this happened because Lei Yu’s friend

had been sexually assaulted. If the Kou country was able to turn back time, we bet that even if they were beaten to death, they wouldn't want this incident to repeat itself.

Cui Ying Ying's body no longer had any big issues and the construction project in the Kou country still needed her to personally supervise and manage. Entrusted by Lei Yu, Liu Hao left Tenglong country with Cui Ying Ying. Lei Yu believed that the past incident of being abducted will no longer happen with Liu Hao around, therefore his heart calmed down a lot.

What Lei Yu was planning on doing now was to cultivate and to investigate the whereabouts of his mother. As for this evening, Lei Yu

had already made plans...

As night fell, Lei Yu arrived at Nuo Yi Long's residence. "Little Yu, quickly come in!"

Lei Yu had come here a few times before so he wasn't particularly formal. Although he was seeing his possible future father-in-law, the aura and the looks Lei Yu unintentionally gave out gave Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng an oppressive pressure. Fortunately Lei Yu realized this early on and retrieved his momentum back into his body.

After receiving some tea, Lei Yu carefully sampled it. A tea that revealed a faint aroma of leaves was something Lei Yu had yearned for.

Drinking coffee all the time in a Western country had started to bore Lei Yu quite a bit.

“Little Yu, I really want to know what level of strength have you attained now?” Nuo Yi Long asked.

Lei Yu smiled, “I can at least avenge the death of my grandfather so Uncle Nuo doesn’t need to doubt this.” Lei Yu went straight to the point since that was his purpose of coming here today.

The words said by Nuo Yi Long back then had been played back in Lei Yu’s mind all the time. His strength was too weak and he couldn’t do anything. As for now, someone that’s able to stand on the same level as Lei Yu in Tenglong



country would not exceed five people.

Nuo Yi Long's eyes were a bit moist; he was suddenly reminded of the many scenes he spent together with his most beloved. It's been many years that his hatred had been hidden inside, unable to be released. Now that a capable person has appeared, how could he not be happy?

Glancing at his sister Nuo Yi Feng, Nuo Yi Long sighed heavily before saying: "Previously I didn't want you to seek revenge because I was worried your power wasn't enough. As for now, with your personal strength, you subdued the Kou country and you destroyed several major powers in the United States.

Based on all of these, little Yu, you now have the requisite strength!”

Lei Yu was getting excited, he was about to know his mother’s enemy and the murderer behind his grandfather’s death!

“Who is he?” Lei Yu asked as he clenched his fists.

“The Ming Sect’s Du Chang Hai!”

Lei Yu suddenly stood up, “It’s him?!”

“That’s right; Du Chang Hai is at the Sixth Demonic Realm which is the same as a Sixth Order Warrior. Also, Demonic Cultivators have extremely vicious methods so unless you have 100% certainty, I don’t want you to confront him!”

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and nodded. "I understand... he will pay with his blood!" Lei Yu slapped his palm on top of the marble coffee table. With his tyrannical attack power, the coffee table would have easily shattered but this scene didn't occur. Lei Yu was angry but didn't lose his head. After experiencing many hardships, he was no longer the impulsive youngster like before. He had to be more or less shrewd in his actions now since it was something how a mature person was supposed to act.

"Little Yu, what are you planning to do now?" Nuo Yi Long asked. "If there's anything you need from your uncle, just go ahead and tell me!"

Lei Yu lightly smiled and waved his hand. "I'm not in a hurry in dealing with this." Since he knew who the enemy was, Lei Yu looked quite calm now. What he wanted was a period of peace since he had just concluded two terrifying battles which had made him feel really exhausted. Lei Yu really needed to take a break. It's not that he wasn't in a hurry to see his mother, or that he wasn't in a hurry to seek revenge for his grandfather, it's just that he had to remain calm and not be impulsive with his actions.

# Chapter 192: The Energy Returns

They've waited for so long already so why rush things now? Since this layer of paper hasn't been pierced, Lei Yu had to carefully plan things. Moving against Du Chang Hai meant moving against the foundation of the Ming Sect. This major force had deep roots inside Tenglong country and they're probably even more fearsome than Dr. Tony's in the U.S. Even though there's only one person, Du Chang Hai, who had reached the Sixth Demonic Realm, his underlings have spread to every nook and cranny. The political field,

businesses, and there's possibly spies in any or all three other major forces of the country. If there really was a falling out, there was bound to be big waves inside Tenglong country.

Returning home, Lei Yu took out the transparent white crystal he had taken off the body of Primus Hogue. He even dared to focus his spiritual energy into the crystal but didn't notice anything out of place. Lei Yu could only put it back into his storage ring and not bother with it for now.

Growing strong came from hard work, and through the process of hard work would one improve a little bit at a time. Although Lei Yu had encountered many fortunate

opportunities that made his strength go up by leaps and bounds, he still remains convinced that painstaking cultivation was the key to becoming a super expert revered by all.

Lei Yu sat down cross-legged as he calmed down, pushing all the things bothering him to the side. There was just too much stuff going on during this period, so Lei Yu hadn't been able to quietly cultivate in a while.

Circulating an unusually strong energy stored in his dantian, it was so much more powerful compared to when he had just started training "Lei Yu's Cultivation Method" which he personally named. Lei Yu could not help but have mixed

emotions when thinking about the past.

Mixed with little dots of white starry light, Lei Yu circulated this energy through his meridians in accordance to the all too familiar method imprinted in his mind. A sense of numbness with a mix of warmth flooded his entire body in waves, giving Lei Yu quite an enjoyable feeling.

After learning the Thirty-Six Lunar Star's cultivation method and techniques from Minotaur Linos, Lei Yu had fused its energy with his own internal energy. He had used quite a bit of time in order to reach a point of mastery. Not only did his attacks contain the vast powers of the stars, it also contained his own



powerful lightning energy which made a single attack much more devastating than the original. This was all due to Lei Yu's constant experimenting and theorizing that produced such progress.

The attacks displayed by the Thirty-six Lunar Stars were indeed unique and peerless. Every time Lei Yu was exposed to the energy of the universe, he was shocked by the vastness of it which made him feel tiny and insignificant. This was a very good way to forge a person's mind, making it a cultivation method that was difficult to master at the same time.

It was at this time that Lei Yu's body started trembling! This was caused by a familiar energy!

Inside his heart meridian, Lei Yu was shocked when he felt a weak force that contained great power make an appearance. Quickly focusing his spiritual senses to investigate, "The green energy! Why would it suddenly appear again?"

This was an energy that hadn't appears in a long time. Ever since the big battle in the Kou country against Hasegawa, this green energy that had lurked inside Lei Yu's body had disappeared without a trace. Even though Lei Yu felt it was still in his body, it had never revealed itself all this time.

This green energy had once helped Lei Yu repair his injuries and damaged meridians but after its disappearance, Lei Yu had gradually

learned to survive without depending on it. He never expected it would suddenly appear again.

Weak, way too weak! The energy was similar to something that had just hatched from an egg. As if it was scared, Lei Yu once again lost touch with the green energy. He could only quietly watch and wait.

Sure enough, the energy was like a little shy and naughty child, appearing briefly like it was testing the waters. It then disappeared again so Lei Yu hurriedly locked all his internal energy inside his Sea Of Energy meridian, so that not a hint of it would escape. After a while, the green energy finally appeared again. After finding no other threats around, it become bold and started

flowing out of the heart meridian.

The green energy started condensing itself into one single gaseous form. This gas looked just like it was in the past, except it wasn't as powerful. It looks like Lei Yu's previous death had made it lose too much energy, causing it to be so fragile looking and even a bit timid.

Lei Yu was kind of worried about its reappearance. Would it still follow its previous responsibility of healing his wounds and repairing his damaged meridians?

Thinking to this point, Lei Yu opened his eyes and decided on an experiment. Using his fingers that were as strong as steel, he scratched

himself in the shape of a line. In order to obtain results in the shortest amount of time, Lei Yu made the wound closest to the heart meridian where the green energy was gathered.

Momentarily, Lei Yu started laughing out loud. He could clearly feel that a warm energy was advancing through his meridians; its target was the wound he had just produced. After more than an hour of recovery, Lei Yu's wound had completely healed without any traces of it ever being injured in the first place.

Perhaps the green energy had just reemerged, so that's why it was so weak. Lei Yu believes that after a period of recovery, the green energy

may be as strong as it was in the past.

With the reemergence of the green energy, Lei Yu's confidence in defeating Ming Sect's Du Chang Hai had increased a bit. At least if he couldn't beat him, he could always run away. The recovery process of serious injuries would lead him to become unconscious, but at least he now had some life insurance up his sleeves.

For now, Lei Yu cannot allow himself to be injured because he had to give the green energy sufficient time to recover. When he's absorbing the spiritual energy in the atmosphere, Lei Yu was even planning to share a large portion of it with the green energy. Strangely

enough, the green energy gladly accepted the spiritual energy and the outcome was just as Lei Yu imagined, it started growing stronger.

Once morning came, Lei Yu opened his eyes. Even though most of the night's cultivation was used to service the green energy, Lei Yu did not feel an ounce of fatigue. A comfortable feeling from deep within his heart appeared, which he hadn't felt in a long time.

Lei Yu twisted at the waist and stretched his joints. After quickly washing up, he drove to Dragon Group where he hadn't been to in a long time.

This place was where his previous

brothers were all located at. Even though he didn't have much contact with them after leaving, he will never forget how well his fellow brothers of Dragon Team treated him. Most importantly, Lei Yu had to thank one person. If it weren't for the favor Instructor Fan Hong Chang had given him, most likely he wouldn't have gotten into Dragon Team. Of course, we can't forget about Lei Yu's astonishing performance. Lei Yu's gravity test result was a record that no one has been able to break yet.

"Instructor Fan!" Far away, Lei Yu could see that Fan Hong Chang was lecturing two soldiers that seemed to have made a mistake. Fan Hong Chang was annoyed at first, but when he turned around and saw Lei



Yu, his eyes were as big as a cow's that was comparable to Minotaur Linos.

"Little Yu! How... how come you're here?" Not bothering with the two soldiers, Fan Hong Chang hurriedly went over to Lei Yu.

"Can't I come back to visit the one that unearthed my talents?" Lei Yu didn't bother with a military salute and just gave Fan Hong Chang a hug, making it more intimate.

"Little Yu, no, I meant Deputy Commander, how could I be someone that unearthed a talent? It's only because you are too outstanding!" Fan Hong Chang smiled while shaking his head.

“Don’t call me that, it’s too distant sounding. Just continue calling me little Yu since I’m used to it!”

“Ha ha... fine. You are just too promising; I knew I saw something special in you!” The two had their arms on each other’s shoulder as they walked towards the villa.

# Chapter 193:

## Banquet Invitation

Those soldiers that were training all looked over with a strange gaze in their eyes. Fan Hong Chang looked at those soldiers and shook his head, "Sigh, if we had a few more people like you, then our Dragon Group would become the most powerful!"

In the midst of those soldiers, one of them recognized Lei Yu and suddenly exclaimed out loud: "Isn't that Lei Yu?!"

Lei Yu smiled and waved at him before continuing to leave the area with Fan Hong Chang.

The soldier that was greeted by Lei Yu grinned with a proud look on his face. The other soldiers beside him who didn't know what was going on started discussing this. Some started telling the others how formidable Lei Yu was and how he got to be so strong etc. After listening to the discussions, those once clueless soldiers started worshipping Lei Yu as well.

After arriving at Dragon Group headquarters, Lei Yu wasn't here just to see his former instructor Fan Hong Chang and his fellow brothers; there was an issue that he had to deal with. Lei Yu handed his resignation paperwork to Nuo Yi Long. Even though this wasn't unexpected, Nuo Yi Long and others were still reluctant. With Lei

Yu's powerful strength, it would be really great if he could stay in Dragon Group permanently. Even if he doesn't stay and just becomes a Commander in name, this will still make Dragon Group look good. But once Lei Yu decides on something, it's really hard to make him change his mind. Nuo Yi Long and them could only reluctantly accept his resignation because forcing him was an impossibility.

After bidding his farewell to Dragon Group, Lei Yu returned home. As he neared his house, Lei Yu noticed someone appeared to be waiting there. There's no doubt this person was here for Lei Yu, but he didn't recognize this person at all.

Seeing Lei Yu's car driving over, this

person walked up. "Second young master, you've finally returned. I've waited here for you for almost a whole day."

"You are...?" Hearing the way this person greeted him, Lei Yu had an inkling what this was about but he still had to ask.

"I am one of the outer members of the Lei family. The master knew you had returned so he had me invite you back for a visit. The family has prepared a banquet for you and is awaiting your participation." This person appears to have prepared his words in advance before speaking with Lei Yu.

Lei Yu was slightly hesitant but still

nodded. "I will go but I need to clean up first. You may return to the family and I will head there a bit later."

This person was overjoyed and nodded before leaving. Previously he had heard from other family members that it would be difficult to get Lei Yu to agree to the invitation. After all, all the things that had happened in the past were witnessed by a lot of people. This person never expected Lei Yu would only slightly hesitate before agreeing.

Lei Yu took a bath before putting on a set of more decent looking clothes. Although Lei Yu was reluctant to step foot in the Lei family household again, he still

agreed.

Lei Yu used to hate everyone inside the Lei family, even his own father. He was ruthlessly driven from the clan just because he didn't have the family's brand. Thinking about everything that had happened filled Lei Yu's heart with grief, but over time, the hatred he felt had gradually lessen. Lei Yu hadn't changed his mind and forgave these hypocrites; it's just that it used to be his home. Even if it was an unhappy place, it still supported and fed him for a good amount of years. Lei Yu was merely holding onto the thought of gratitude for them.

Going there for a meal was just to express his thanks to the family and



had no other meanings.

The time he was in the Kou country, Lei Yu had agreed to his father's request that after he had found his mother and avenged his grandfather, he would then return to the Lei family. But Lei Yu hadn't really intended to do this. Getting vengeance for his grandfather was a must, and finding his mother had always been Lei Yu's dream. Both of these issues had to be accomplished. Having Lei Yu accept his family once again seemed a bit too difficult to do. Lei Yu only said those words of rejoining the family because he didn't want his father to keep on bothering him.

Since Ai Er had left Tenglong country for a good amount of time,

she decided to stay by her father's side for a while. She said she wanted to accompany her father and aunt around to show her filial piety. As for the others, some left and some stayed to take care of their own things so Lei Yu could only attend the banquet by himself.

The person that went to invite Lei Yu to the banquet returned to the family to give the master the good news. He also bragged how articulate he was in front of Lei Yu, and how he had explained and defended the wrongs the family had done to him. The master of the family Lei Yun Tian didn't care how it was done; being able to invite Lei Yu back to the family was good enough to make him happy.

“Go to the Finance Department and get your reward of \$10,000 dollars.” Lei Yun Tian waved his hand and this person left in a happy manner.

If Lei Yu saw this scene, his heart would definitely be filled with sadness. Back then when he was forced off the cliff by the family's Lei Yun and company, his father merely asked a few words about it. Only after Lei Yu reappeared did his father find out his son did not jump off to commit suicide. Even so, the so called family rules were to randomly whip Lei Yun and the others a few times and let it go like that. And now in the present, in order to have Lei Yu return to the family household, this random outer family member was able to get a reward of \$10,000 dollars.

Had anyone ever asked Lei Yu if he went hungry or cold after being kicked out? That's why in Lei Yu's heart, Nuo Hu was his real family and his real brother.

A sports car was driving up the mountain roads. The mountain was still the same and hadn't changed one bit. Lei Yu felt that not a single tree or a blade of grass had changed. Shaking his head with a smile, "Most likely the people in the family hadn't changed at all either."

Arriving at the Lei family household's main entrance; the scene looked like they were greeting some VIP guest. Lei Yun Tian who rarely showed his face was standing right at the entrance while all the members of the clan were standing

behind with a fake smile on their face.

“Little Yu!”

Getting out of the car, Lei Yu merely smiled and didn't say anything. Wanting to call out “father” was too difficult for him to say right now. It was clear that Lei Yun Tian didn't hear the greeting he wanted to hear had become slightly disappointed, but tried to show he wasn't concerned. After all, Lei Yu coming here had already made him feel very happy.

The sky had begun to get dark. The Lei family was originally a big family and the lights that turned on made it even more dazzling. Throughout the mountain, the

lights created a touching scenery but Lei Yu wasn't in the mood to enjoy it.

Being led to the main hall, the Lei family was really set in their ways. The ancient feeling of this place really made a person a bit depressed. The repeated use of wood in the hall made Lei Yu really wonder if these guys had the flame ability. If someone made an accidental strike, wouldn't it burn the entire Lei family's main hall down?

The dishes prepared were very luxurious and most of them were what Lei Yu liked to eat when he was young. But the current Lei Yu wasn't so rigid and unchanging; ever since he had left the family, he

rarely ate those dishes. In order to give his father face, Lei Yu still ate it with a smile which made Lei Yun Tian quite happy.

During the banquet, dozens of family members took turns to toast Lei Yu. Alcohol to cultivators were just a formality since even if they drank a few cases of it, at most they would feel a bit bloated. Wanting to get drunk on alcohol was a very difficult thing.

Lei Yu never declined a toast. Even that guy Lei Tian who Lei Yu had broken his arm during the exchanging of pointers contest[1] had a face filled with smiles while clinking their glasses together.

---

[1] Back in Chapter 17, Lei Yu told his disciple to get off the stage and he would fight Lei Tian instead.



# Chapter 194: Break Your Dog Legs

At this time, the person Lei Yu hated the most came over with a grin. Seeing his face made Lei Yu want to slap him upside the head. But he didn't do that and only frowned a bit before quickly calming his facial expression.

“Lei Yu! Are you going to give me face? Let's toast and clink our glasses!”

“Fine, drink!” Lei Yu clinked glasses with him and downed everything.

“You are really worthy of being the family's second young master!”

Generous and filled with momentum! I hope the second young master doesn't mind what happened in the past. You have proved to all of us that pure gold does not fear the furnace[1]. I, Lei Yun utterly admire you!" That's right; the person that came to toast Lei Yu was the one that forced Lei Yu off the cliff back then – Lei Yun.

Lei Yu placed his glass down and stood up. Even if a person had a good temper, seeing such a person in front of him made Lei Yu want to say a few words.

"I don't mind at all. If it wasn't thanks to you, I would never have been enlightened and would never have gotten the lightning brand to appear so quickly. Lei Yun, I will

never forget you. Don't worry; I will forever remember everything that you have done!" Lei Yu's words weren't that straightforward but it was clear the meaning behind it wasn't good. This was already the limit of what Lei Yu could tolerate. Some people are just too shameless, they knew they would be publicly humiliated yet they still came running over.

One could see the muscles twitching on Lei Yun's face. He wanted to say something but didn't know how to start. The atmosphere of the hall suddenly changed to one of awkwardness. Lei Yun Tian quickly broke up the scene, "Come, come little Yu, try this freshly caught venison from the forests of our mountain, the meat is very

tender and tasty!”

Lei Yu viciously glared at Lei Yun a few times before sitting back down. The latter was extremely angry but didn't dare to retaliate in this situation. Once he attacked, the master of the family would definitely be enraged. At that time, he may actually suffer some physical punishment then. Lei Yun silently said to himself: “Just wait and see, I'll let you know the meaning of regret!” Lei Yun then awkwardly turned around and left the hall while four other younger looking people followed him. Even though there were some slight changes in their appearance, Lei Yu still recognized them. Ever since Lei Yun had been slated for the next position of Elder, those four lackeys

saw Lei Yun as someone closer than their own parents and never left his side. They were always the first ones to do whatever Lei Yun said, which made Lei Yun even more insufferably arrogant.

A smart person may say little, but a person with little knowledge truly likes to show off. This was the comparison between Lei Yu and Lei Yun.

The banquet that was like a slow torture to Lei Yu had finally ended and Lei Yun Tian wasn't going to let Lei Yu off that easily. Along with the Elder, those three arrived at Lei Yun Tian's office.

While on the sofa, Lei Yun Tian began by saying: "Little Yu,

according to what we spoke about, you agreed that once you came back to Tenglong country, you were going to re-join the family. You shouldn't have forgotten that right?"

"Was that what I agreed to? My lord father, you seem to be getting quite forgetful." Lei Yu knew his father wouldn't just let this go. If he were still the useless trash that the family had abandoned, wanting to see an inner family member would probably be an impossible affair for him.

"Are there any differences? Little Yu, can you not see the troubles your father have been through? He has placed too much emphasis on you, that's why he's so eager to

have you come back to the family. Can't you just be a little more considerate for him?" The Elder at the side said this as if he was resentful.

"Of course there's a difference!" Lei Yu didn't want to argue with them but there's times where things had to be laid out. "Previously I had agreed to return to the family, but it would only be possible after I avenged by grandfather and found my mother. Could the Elder somehow forgotten this as well?"

"This... this is a matter the family can help you to achieve so why are you still so stubborn? Do you really have to torture your father like this? Could you be that heartless?" The Elder asked. As for Lei Yun Tian, he

was sitting on the side silently waiting for Lei Yu's answer.

"And how heartless are you guys?" Lei Yu angrily stood up. "When the conversation is not agreeable, to say even half a sentence more is too much. I really don't understand whether the master of the family is in charge or it's you Lord Elder. You are always interrupting conversations. Weren't you the one that incited behind my father's back to kick me out of the family back then? Now you're asking me how heartless could I be? For eight years, no one cared about me in the family so how heartless could you guys be? I was forced off the cliff yet who inquired of my whereabouts? How could YOU guys be so heartless?" Lei Yu's chest was visibly heaving,



he felt like a lot of things were caused by this Elder.

“Enough!” Lei Yun Tian yelled out. “There’s no need to mention this again, I will wait for you to deal with your affairs first. Remember little Yu, the Lei family’s door will always be open for you.”

Lei Yu calmed down but the look that the Elder gave Lei Yu wasn’t very friendly, yet what could he do about it?

Leaving the main gate, Lei Yu was about to get in his car to leave. He looked up into the pitch black skies and saw a bright light fly by. “A meteor?”

Continuing to gaze at the stars, Lei

Yu felt a closeness to them. Perhaps it was related to him cultivating the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique. Lei Yu unconsciously walked forward and just as he was at the edge of the cliff, he stopped. It was a beautiful tonight; the sky was filled with endless stars which made Lei Yu feel like he was surrounded by the vast universe. This seemed to make him forget about the previous unpleasanties.

At this time, Lei Yu frowned as he detected people coming close to him from the left and right sides. Two of them were Third Order Warriors, one was a Fourth Order, and the last one was a Fifth Order. "Why are you guys sneaking around? Come out!" Lei Yu didn't bother looking at them as he

shouted out.

These four people were surprised they had been found out, but still shot forth towards Lei Yu.

“Lei Yu, you were a bit too proud at tonight’s banquet and did not give my any face. Did you think coming back to the Lei family would still make you the family’s second young master? Let me tell you, calling you second young master was just to humor you so don’t think you’re actually something!” Lei Yun’s face once again appeared in front of Lei Yu.

“Get lost; I have nothing to say to you.” Lei Yu didn’t even turn around and said this in a tone of contempt.

“You... what did you say?!” Lei Yun roared. “I know you have the lightning brand but so what? Your father I, will not believe you can beat all four of us. Even if you’re a late-stage Fifth Order Warrior, you still won’t be able to beat us!”

“Your father, I? Those words are something you can’t handle. If the master of the family heard your words, I wonder if he would break your dog legs and cut off your tongue? You have completely disrespected him!” Lei Yu was filled with disdain, a Fifth Order Warrior? That rank was considered something he passed a long time ago. This poor child Lei Yun still thinks he was the same rank as himself, this was way too funny.

-----

[1] Describing a person that has a good personality, strong-willed, and can withstand any tests thrown at them.

# Chapter 195: An Old Scene Repeats Itself

Lei Yun suddenly became dumb and unable to speak. How could someone like him, who had always been treated so highly accept this? A vicious idea then sprouted in his mind, “It looks like you want the scene a few years ago to be replayed again!”

“Oh?” Lei Yu wasn’t angry and actually smiled. He turned around, “I would really like to see how you guys will replay that scene.”

Lei Yun stepped forward and cried

out: “I will pin him down and you guys beat the shit out of him!”

“Understood!”

Lei Yu maintained his signature smile, his lips gently curved upwards. He stood there motionless since he really wanted to see what abilities Lei Yun had to pin him down.

“Whoosh!” With Lei Yun as the center, a wave of heat rose up around him. Lei Yu suddenly started feeling warmer amongst the slightly chilly night, making it quite comfortable. Lei Yu’s mind wandered off... If a woman married into the Lei family, not mentioning being blessed, but in the off chance she was married into a less

fortunate household, sleeping at night and holding onto this warm guy would certainly be a wonderful thing.

This was a fight that Lei Yu paid the least attention to in his life. There's no need to pay attention because Lei Yu wasn't planning on striking out or taking their lives. But he shouldn't just stand there and take the beating right? So Lei Yu started releasing his internal energy from his dantian and circulated through his body before using it to cover his periphery. Under Lei Yu's suppression, the bright starry purple light of his internal energy did not appear and nothing could be seen.

Lei Yun cautiously got closer



towards Lei Yu. He knew that the currently Lei Yu was no longer the useless trash and waste of food. Possessing the noblest lightning brand would surely make him difficult to deal with. Lei Yun would refuse to believe that Lei Yu had reached the rank of a Sixth Order Warrior because based off of age, it was an impossible matter. Since Lei Yu was the same rank as him, and with three helpers on scene, the outcome was already determined in his mind. Unfortunately Lei Yun was wrong, completely and utterly wrong.

Once Lei Yun pounced forth hoping to restrain Lei Yu, he found that a powerful suction was pulling him in. Wanting to retreat backwards had become impossible now.

Lei Yun's body was practically dragged on the ground to the front of Lei Yu. The latter still with a smile on his face gently placed his hand on Lei Yun's shoulder.

Suddenly, a powerful lightning current shot into his body making Lei Yun's nerves almost collapse.

Lei Yu had used this move previously when Black Panther wasn't his underling yet.

Everyone only saw Lei Yun's body shaking like crazy and his eyes filled with fear. Even though it was nighttime, they could still see that his face was all red and the veins on his neck were all exposed. Lei Yun looked extremely horrible and even under these conditions; Lei Yun didn't dare to raise his head

to look at Lei Yu. Inside Lei Yun's mind, Lei Yu was simply a terrifying demon!

The three at the side looked at each other and weren't sure if they should rush forward or not. Because Lei Yun did not give them any further instructions, so for the meantime, those three idiots just stood there staring at Lei Yun shaking.

Lei Yun's internal energy was pouring out in desperation, wanting to counteract the power of lightning that Lei Yu was releasing. But no matter what he did, he couldn't deal with Lei Yu's powerful internal energy making it look like a pebble smashing against a boulder. Especially when his flame energy

rushed out, it seemed to have strengthened Lei Yu's lightning power. This point was actually first noticed by Lei Yu. It looks like he had to investigate this in the future since it might be even possible to create a more powerful offensive technique.

Seeing that Lei Yun's internal energy was getting weaker, it appears that his power origins were also affected. Lei Yun was reaching the brink of collapse so Lei Yu was intending to stop, but at this moment, a voice that resounded through the heavens cried out: "Stop!"

Lei Yu looked around and it turned out to be Lei Yun's grandfather, who was the Lei family's Elder.

“Not letting go.” Lei Yu completely ignored the Elder’s anger. The intention of withdrawing his hand now changed to adding more power. This time, Lei Yun couldn’t handle it anymore and lost consciousness yet his body continued shaking.

“Lei Yu, you despicable person! You’re actually taking revenge against my grandson for those issues a few years ago!” The Elder’s eyes had turned red. How could his heart not ache when seeing his grandson like this? And looking at Lei Yun’s face, he was definitely in a bad shape.

“Say that again?!” Lei Yu narrowed his eyes; he already had enough of the way the Lei family did things.

“I said you were despicable! A dignified Sixth Order Warrior would bully a person that wasn’t your opponent for revenge!” The Elder had already reached a point of madness since he knew that his grandson was almost at his limit. If Lei Yu did not stay his hands, then the consequences would be disastrous.

“Shouldn’t your three explain everything to the Elder?” Lei Yu turned to the three other guys that were standing there in silence.

When the three of them heard the Elder mention what strength Lei Yu was at, they almost lost their footing. But they quickly recovered; this place was the Lei family household so who would dare

create chaos here? One of the three raised his courage, “Elder, what you’ve said was correct. Lei Yu was taking revenge for what had happened to him a few years ago on this cliff, that’s why he made such a move against Lei Yun!”

“You son of a b\*tch! You’re so damn shameless that you can lie without your face going red or your heart skipping a beat!” Lei Yu roared angrily, but then calmed down a bit. “Good, since you’ve already framed me for revenge, then I will take revenge for you guys to see.” Lei Yu then narrowed his eyes, “Just wait a bit... just a bit more and the meat of this ‘tool’ would be ready to eat paired with some alcohol on the side!”

In fact, everyone knew that Lei Yu didn't want to take Lei Yun's life. He had previously withdrawn his internal energy and the trembling was the natural reaction of Lei Yun's muscles. It would only take a short period before Lei Yun's body would be back to normal. But the strength of Lei Yun's internal energy did make big strides backwards, it's estimated that he would have to work hard for a few years before he can regain his current strength.

Crazy! The Elder had gone completely crazy! He never expected Lei Yu would dare to do such a thing. The Elder desperately rushed up and grabbed onto Lei Yun's clothes wanting to pull him away. But what kind of expert was



Lei Yu? An expert of the Sixth Order. How would it be possible for the Elder who was a Fifth Order Warrior to do whatever he wanted?

No matter how hard he tried, it was of no use. Eventually, Lei Yun's clothes were ripped yet he was still standing firmly in front of Lei Yu.

The Elder knew that he wasn't Lei Yu's opponent. Even if a few other people with his strength assisted, they still wouldn't be a threat towards Lei Yu. "What to do? What to do?" He had experienced many things in life and the person he cared about the most was his grandson. But the older the ginger, the spicier it was. Dealing with something like this, the calm part inside him knew that if he further

angered Lei Yu, something more horrible may happen. He had to use a soft approach. Now wasn't the time to care so he could only ignore his own face and beg Lei Yu.

# Chapter 196: Trying To Be Clever With Words

“Little Yu, I’m begging you! Please let Lei Yun go. Just blame everything on me, he... he’s still considered to be the successor the family’s Elder position! You don’t have to care about him but shouldn’t you at least think about what’s best for the Lei family?”

In fact, the Elder had already hated Lei Yu to the extreme. It wasn’t only because of what was happening now; there was also the scene that happened inside Lei Yun Tian’s office previously. The words of Lei

Yu had made the Elder completely lose his face in front of the master so how could he not be enraged?

But Lei Yu was right; from beginning to end, everyone in the Lei family was against him. And the words Lei Yu spoke were the truth but not everyone was broad-minded enough to accept it.

“Fine, I had no intentions of killing him. I had already withdrew my internal energy early on and I’m helping him to recover now so don’t bother me.” Lei Yu closed his eyes. Was it really helping Lei Yun recover? What a joke. Lei Yu wasn’t a vicious person but he wasn’t compassionate to this point either. Being begged by this bitter old man, was Lei Yu going to miraculously

become soft-hearted? Nope, Lei Yu just didn't want to waste his internal energy. He was currently retrieving his energy from within Lei Yun's body, nothing more.

After hearing Lei Yu's words, the Elder shut his mouth and didn't dare to disturb him. As the saying goes: An expert has their own mysterious ways. Lei Yu had now been placed in a position of a super expert just like his father. Even though there's only one level difference, a Sixth Order Warrior was similar to a divine presence. Except in the eyes of the Elder, Lei Yu's divine presence was still lacking. Just based on the two incidents of today, the Elder would be very happy to kill Lei Yu, but unfortunately he lacked the

capability.

With the present situation, the Elder was going to use all means to prevent the master from allowing Lei Yu to rejoin the family. If Lei Yu really managed to come back into the family, he was afraid the following days this pair of grandfather and grandson would no longer have a good future.

A while later, Lei Yu had finally retrieved all his internal energy. Spilt water was difficult to retrieve, but it's possible when it came to internal energy. But after all, releasing the energy was easy yet retrieving it took quite a bit of time and effort.

The Elder quickly held onto Lei Yun,

and it was this moment that Lei Yun woke up. His lips were pale, his voice was weak, and he kept mumbling: “Too terrifying! Too terrifying!” It was obvious he was shocked by Lei Yu.

After carefully observing Lei Yun, the Elder’s face became uglier and uglier. One could see that his body started trembling as if he was similar to Lei Yun who was under the attack earlier.

After gently placing Lei Yun on the ground, the Elder clenched his fists and stood up. He then pointed at Lei Yu and cursed: “You damn bastard! Look at what you’ve done!”

Lei Yu frowned, “What do you mean?!”

“What do I mean? You actually asked me what I meant? Come and take a look for yourself!” Said the Elder as he pointed at Lei Yun lying on the ground.

Lei Yu started walking over. If something had happened, the worst case would be his strength had weakened and nothing else other than that.

Once Lei Yu got close, he then realized why the Elder was so angry. He could only hear Lei Yun repeatedly mumble: “Too terrifying, too terrifying!”

“He became retarded? No way!” Lei Yu felt this was too unbelievable. How could a cultivator’s willpower be so poor? This was completely



beyond the imagination of Lei Yu.

What sorts of things did Lei Yu experience? If it Lei Yun followed Lei Yu around and met with the ninjas of the Kou country; the pile of corpses at Dr. Tony's base; and the city of death created by the Vampires and the Werewolves; perhaps Lei Yun would have become retarded thousands of times already.

"You can't blame me for this; you can only blame him for not having the destiny to inherit the position of an Elder. You might as well continue serving this position." Lei Yu simply didn't care when dealing with this type of trash. Lei Yun was talking all big but when he encountered an issue, his courage

was as timid as a mouse. Perhaps for him to reach the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior in these short few years were most likely the effort and assistance of the Elder.

“I will definitely report this to the master, and then we’ll punish you with the family rules!” The Elder ignored his grandson on the ground and quickly rushed into the family compound.

Lei Yu stood there quietly with indifference. He did go overboard a bit, but Lei Yu never expected Lei Yun to be so useless. Lei Yu wasn’t going to run away because as a man, he had to be responsible for what he had done.

Shortly after, the Elder returned

with the master Lei Yun Tian following behind. There were also a group of family members rapidly rushing to this place as well.

When everyone saw the scene where Lei Yun on the ground kept repeating a single sentence did they finally believe the Elder's words. Lei Yun Tian asked: "Little Yu, what exactly happened here?"

"I..." Lei Yu didn't even have a chance to continue talking when the Elder interrupted. "Lei Yu was taking his revenge on being thrown off the cliff a few years ago!"

"Is this true?" Lei Yun Tian asked.

"No, it isn't. I don't know who you're going to believe, but I was

merely defending myself and didn't make the first move. Lei Yun was holding a grudge from my words during the banquet so he made the first strike. I only raised my arm and nothing more." Lei Yu's explanation was simple and to the point. Those that heard this immediately understood the situation but inside the family, was there anyone that was going to side with Lei Yu? Perhaps the only one would be Lei Yun Tian since he's the one that wants Lei Yu to rejoin the family as soon as possible.

"Lies! You're definitely lying! There's three people testifying against you! It's all you! You tricked Lei Yun to this place and wanted to reenact the scene from a few years ago!" The Elder was hysterically

screaming this and disregarded his own status.

Lei Yu raised his hands and shrugged, "I have nothing more to say. With Lei Yun's lackeys testifying, what they said is exactly what you guys think happened. Is there any need for me to further explain myself?"

Lei Yun Tian believed Lei Yu since he wasn't a fool. Lei Yun was the only grandson of the Elder so he was spoiled rotten by the Elder his entire life. Now that his grandson had become retarded by Lei Yu's hands, the Elder would naturally use countless reasons to condemn Lei Yu.

After all, an Elder in the family has

quite a prestigious status. Lei Yun Tian then asked: "Then what would you like done about this Elder?"

Without even thinking about it, the Elder said: "Implement the rules of the family! Break both his arms!"

"Why?" Lei Yu asked.

"Because you have injured a member of the Lei family!" The Elder rebutted. The two then started arguing back and forth.

"Doesn't the punishment of the family rules only have the whip and the cane? Why was it that day I was thrown off a cliff, they only suffered a few whips by the family rules, yet now I have to have my arms broken?"

“Because back then, you were no longer a member of the family and had already been kicked out! Could it be that the injuries to my grandson can’t cause an outsider to have his arms broken?”

“So am I considered a member of the Lei family or not?”

“This... this...”

“Elder, are you becoming senile? An outsider like me, how can you scare me with family rules?” Lei Yu coldly said.

“You... you... you’re just trying to be clever with your words and twisting them! Master, you decide! I hope you will administer a fair judgment!” The Elder was

speechless and could only put his hopes on Lei Yun Tian.

Being requested by the Elder, Lei Yun Tian suddenly felt that this wasn't easy to handle. On one side was the future hope of the family, while the other side was a prestigious family Elder and the Elder's successor.

If he really punished Lei Yu with the family rules, then how would he support this? Currently, Lei Yu was indeed not a member of the Lei family and the Elder and he were the ones that made the decision of kicking him out back then. This path wouldn't make sense at all.



# Chapter 197: Lei Sect's Forbidden Grounds

If they really had a falling out with Lei Yu, wouldn't all the hard work he did in hopes for him return to the family be wasted?

Letting Lei Yu get off this... based on the Elder's personality, he would never let this go. This was really too big of a headache.

"Master!" The Elder urged again, but it seems Lei Yun Tian was still undecided on this. "If you don't make a judgment, I will make my move! If I happen to die by his

hands, all I ask is that you punish him appropriately!”

Without waiting for Lei Yun Tian’s reply, flames started blazing on the Elder’s body. The flames were much stronger when compared to Lei Yun but in the eyes of Lei Yu, this was still a bit lacking.

One could see a figure resembling a fireball rush towards Lei Yu who was still standing at the edge of the cliff. The rest of the family members only stared in a daze, they were still thinking of drinking and merriment at the banquet previously yet somehow it became this troublesome scene.

Lei Yu suddenly stomped on the ground and a powerful pressure

washed over the Elder. The invisible and formless force made the Elder unable to continue forward a single step.

“I don’t want to injure anyone, especially people of the Lei family! Even if I was kicked out before, I still consider myself someone that was fed and clothed by the Lei family. If I do make a move against the Elder, that means I’ve become unfilial and ungrateful!” Lei Yu then sighed. “We can only blame Lei Yun’s ignorance. He thought that relying on his strength of a Fifth Order Warrior and with the help of his lackeys, they could suppress me. That’s just too laughable! Even though the Lei family was not responsible for my teachings, they were responsible for my

upbringing. Lei Yu will always remember that! Therefore, I don't want to make any more excuses for today's matter. I will also not come back to the Lei family so you guys take care of your own affairs. If you still want to find trouble with my explanation, I, Lei Yu have never been afraid! Even though there are many pairs of eyes on me, I still have to say this: Elder, you do not deserve your position!"

Lei Yu shook his head helplessly. He couldn't understand why there were so many ridiculous people in this world.

Maybe those people that haven't reached the Sixth Order Warrior rank thing there's nothing remarkable about it, just replacing

it with more numbers will make up the strength. But that's not how it works since Lei Yu experienced it firsthand. While in the United States, Romon's display of power made Lei Yu realize what it truly meant to be super strong. Romon was on a whole nother level that felt like an insurmountable barrier for Lei Yu. Why would so many people be stuck in the Fifth Order or Sixth Order unable to move forward? It's because it's just too difficult to move past that single little step.

Everyone was silent, pondering Lei Yu's last sentence to them. Without waiting for the crowd's reaction, Lei Yu took a step back and jumped off the cliff.

“No! Let’s talk about this some more!” Lei Yun Tian wanted to salvage the situation but it was too late. The responsibility of this mess should be shouldered by the aggressive and arrogant Lei Yun. Of course, the Elder who was trying to defend his grandson’s blunder also couldn’t escape baring partial responsibility.

From this day on, it was most likely impossible for Lei Yu and the Lei family to come back together again. Perhaps this was the will of the heavens that cannot be changed by mere humans.

A few years ago, Lei Yu jumped off the cliff because of his stubbornness. Today Lei Yu was in a completely different state of mind

and simply didn't want to hurt the members of the Lei family. If he stayed any longer, a fight would be inevitable. Even if Lei Yun Tian stayed back and didn't interfere, would the Elder let it go just like that?

After falling about halfway down the mountain at high speeds, Lei Yu's keen eyesight was able to detect something different. It wasn't obvious but Lei Yu was able to detect a cave opening inside the mountain that gave off an aura of being extremely deep...

Performing a perfect rotation while in midair, Lei Yu single handedly grabbed onto a protruding rock on the cliff face and stopped falling. Using a bit of strength, his body

now flew upwards and into the mouth of the strange cave.

Even with Lei Yu's amazing eyesight, it still wasn't enough to see down the dark cave due to it having too many curved paths. Thus, Lei Yu couldn't tell what the conditions were like inside.

At this time, Lei Yu noticed a stone tablet erected by the cave entrance. In the middle of the stone tablet were four words: "Lei Sect's Forbidden Grounds." It could be due to the passage of time, but there seemed to be something else below those four words that Lei Yu couldn't make out.

How come he never noticed this the first time he fell down? Because of



his curiosity, Lei Yu carefully went inside to take a look.

A powerful energy became more obvious as Lei Yu continued in. And after a few turns, the path became narrower. Lei Yu could only duck his head in order to keep going further down the path. After making the last turn, a scene that shocked Lei Yu appeared. Piles of bones were piled densely on the ground which Lei Yu estimated there were at least over a hundred sets. Looking down further, a slight flash came right at Lei Yu that made him hurriedly dodge sideways. Even though he didn't know what it was, he heard "hissing" noises the instant the flash of light passed him. The aura of the light somehow seemed

familiar to him as well, making Lei Yu even more curious now.

Walking forward again and passing several caverns, a stone door appeared. Lei Yu finally understood why these people died here. In the center of the stone door was a circular opening. Inside the opening, a densely lit grid of lightning was buzzing that contained a power no less than what he currently possessed.

From time to time, a stream of lightning would come out. Lei Yu originally wanted to avoid it but the speed of it was just too fast. One must know that if Lei Yu threw out a lightning attack, there's no way his physical body would be able to catch up to it. Not to mention he

wasn't wearing the Ares Boots right now.

When the lightning struck Lei Yu, he only felt his whole body shuddering and an indescribable comfort. It appears that Lei Yu was immune to these lightning attacks which had no negative effects to him whatsoever. When that lightning energy entered his body, Lei Yu could feel his own internal energy surround it and start devouring it like mad. Even though the lightning that entered Lei Yu was so tiny that he couldn't even come up with a number for it, he could still determine the energy was very pure. His own energy really liked this foreign force, so it was acting like a starved wolf running through his meridians looking for

more. After running a full cycle through his body, his internal energy would return to his Sea of Energy and settle down after finding nothing.

“What... what is going on here?” Lei Yu blinked, wondering where the source of these lightning was from. Peering into the hole that was filled with arcs and flashes, one simply couldn’t see inside except for the dense strands of lightning.

At this time, another stream of lightning rushed out from the hole and Lei Yu didn’t bother dodging. Since his internal energy like this thing, he might as well let it happily absorb it.

Sure enough, once the foreign

lightning entered his body, his internal energy went crazy again. This time, even the green energy in his chest seemed to be unable to sit still and rushed out seemingly wanting to snatch it. But it seems that the green energy was still too weak and wasn't the opponent of his internal energy. It could only return with nothing.

Waiting until his internal energy settled down, Lei Yu took a few steps forward hoping to figure out this place. But the path forward was getting narrower and the ceiling was becoming lower. Lei Yu looked all around as he was moving forward and apart from seeing scattered piles of bones and pieces of weapons, there was nothing else here.

“Boom!”

“Crack!”

# Chapter 198:

## Ancestor Of The Lei Family

Lei Yu was immediately shocked, and with great difficulty opening his eyes, he peered forward. Loud sounds were coming from the circular hole in the middle of the stone door – it was thunder and lightning!

The overwhelming power of lightning was similar to a runaway horse as it charged out of the hole. Its target seemed to have been locked onto Lei Yu who was not too far from the door.

“Boom!”

There was no place for Lei Yu to escape to. The overwhelming amount of lightning covered the entire cave with Lei Yu in the midst of it. No matter how powerful he was, there's no way he could escape this. Even though the lightning had a powerful feeling to it, what surprised Lei Yu was that it didn't seem to be much of a threat to him and had actually made his internal energy more active.

Since there was no way out, Lei Yu simply raised his hands and gently grasped onto the white lightning that was slightly different from his purple one. A “hissing” noise that could chill one's heart was heard. As if the white lightning had found



its master, it madly rushed into Lei Yu's body and he couldn't be stopped even if Lei Yu wanted it to.

Lei Yu quickly sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. He was sensing the changes after this powerful lightning poured into his body.

Sure enough, the white lightning that entered his body had started fusing with his original energy. His purple internal energy had practically taken the foreign energy as its own. The previously silent green energy had also started surging around like crazy. Since the green energy didn't get any benefits the last time, it looked like now was its turn to have a good time!

As time slowly flowed on, Lei Yu felt that his body was full of energy. But the feeling was different from the time his consciousness entered the jade pendant with the “moon” character on it. The current Lei Yu felt that he had the power to prevent the foreign lightning from further invading his body, but he wasn’t going to do that. This energy was just too pure, as if someone had already refined it and Lei Yu could absorb it without bothering to do any other steps.

Lei Yu seemed quite calm being exposed to the white lightning. At the moment he was concentrating on absorbing the energy, he was unaware that the within the circular hole of the stone door, a pair of eyes from inside was peering out. When

this pair of eyes saw Lei Yu, it was a bit shocked. But once it saw the lightning brand on Lei Yu's right arm, a sign of understanding replaced the shock. It didn't bother with Lei Yu's absorption process and started retreating backwards as it silently waited.

The power of lightning to Lei Yu was entirely beneficial without any harm; it also helped him to rapidly increase his strength.

Time continued to flow and after a full three days, the motionless Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes.

“Ahhhhhhh!”

With a crazy roar, Lei Yu suddenly released a powerful purple internal

energy mixed with his own lightning that struck out and scattered the remaining white lightning in the cave.

“I have now reached the late stage of [Detachment]!” Lei Yu was obviously excited as he sensed his body was filled with an explosive force. The current Lei Yu had 10000% confidence that if he encountered Ming Sect’s Du Chang Hai, he would easily get rid of him. Even if he’s at the strength of a Sixth Demonic Realm, the unique abilities Lei Yu possessed were capable of Armageddon-like proportions!

At this time, Lei Yu once again glanced at the skeletal remains on the ground and wondered why there

would be so many of them here. What kind of place was this and why would it emit such a powerful lightning energy?

It was obvious that these people had died under the previous fearsome lightning attack. If Lei Yu was just like the other Lei family members who had the power of the flame, not only would he not be able to absorb so much power and improve his strength, he would definitely have exploded into 10,000 pieces upon touching that white lightning.

But what were these people here for? Could there be a treasure or something behind that stone door? Otherwise, why would so many people come here? I'm pretty sure

they all wanted to get a piece of this treasure and ended up perishing here!

At least that's what Lei Yu was thinking since he couldn't find any other reasons. At the same time, he became more curious as to what was behind the stone door. Lei Yu really wanted to go through to see what this was all about.

Looking around, he unintentionally noticed a red ball-like object on the ground next to the waist of a pile of bones. Lei Yu walked over and picked it up.

“What is this?” Playing around with the thing, the object was like a red fire ball that gave off a hot aura. Lei Yu inspected the red ball but still

couldn't figure out its use.

“It's called a Flame Bead and not some type of treasure. There's no need to be so surprised.”

At this time, a voice came from the stone door. Lei Yu was in complete shock while he stared at the door. After a while of shaking, the stone door opened by sliding upwards. Lei Yu took a few steps back and assumed his fighting stance.

“What? You want to fight with your ancestor? No matter how you say it, there's no way of justifying it!”

It was only now that Lei Yu was able to clearly see this person. He was a middle-aged looking man with a height of about 1.8 meters.

And it was not hard to tell that when this guy was young, he was extremely good looking. Lei Yu was also unable to sense what level of strength this expert was at. Lei Yu cautiously asked: “An ancestor? What do you mean by those words?”

“I’m the third generation Patriarch of the Lei Sect, Lei Rong Kun.” The middle-aged man smiled beneath the door’s archway as he said this.

“Lei Rong Kun? You’re Lei Rong Kun?!” Lei Yu was completely shocked. He had read through the old scrolls of the family before and came across the information about Lei Rong Kun. He was definitely someone of the third generation but why was he calling it the Lei Sect



instead of the Lei family?

“That’s right, it is I.”

“This... this is impossible! If you’re really the third generation’s Patriarch, you should have already... already...”

“Already been dead right?”

Lei Yu felt he was a bit rude but this was just too inconceivable. He could only lightly nod.

“Come in with me.” Lei Rong Kun turned around and went in. Lei Yu hesitated a bit before following him in through the archway.

The inside looked nothing like the circular hole that was filled with lightning. It was basically a stone

bedroom with a stone bed, tables and chair made of stone, and nothing else.

Lei Yu sat on a stone chair while Lei Rong Kun walked over and sat on the stone bed. Perhaps it was out of habit, but Lei Rong Kun crossed his legs and looked like he was about to cultivate.

“This place is the forbidden grounds of the Lei Sect. Whether it is outsiders or the Lei family members, no one is allowed. So, why have you come here?” Lei Rong Kun asked directly.

“I... I am here because something happened to me in the family and it was beyond my control that I jumped off the cliff. Halfway down

the mountain, I found a hole in the mountain that looked like a cave and figured I'd come in to take a look around." Lei Yu explained.

"Oh?" After examining Lei Yu, Lei Rong Kun then asked: "You've already reached the late stages of [Detachment], not bad! How old are you this year?"

"Twenty-five." Lei Yu replied as he looked around the cave bedroom.

"What?!" Lei Rong Kun jumped off the stone bed in shock.

# Chapter 199: Events From A Long Time Ago

Lei Yu was a bit scared by his reaction and repeated: "I... I'm twenty-five years old this year."

"When did you start cultivating?"  
Lei Rong Kun asked.

Lei Yu didn't hesitate because the whole story was something that was impossible for him to forget.

"Accurately speaking, it should be when I was eighteen years old. I was eighteen when I received the lightning brand and the cultivation method." Lei Yu wasn't planning on

hiding anything. Even though he didn't quite believe this guy was the third generation's Patriarch, one thing without a doubt was that this guy was extremely strong, so there wasn't any need to deceive him.

“Genius! Genius! You merely spent seven years and have reached your current strength; you're a rarely seen genius!” Lei Rong Kun's mood was very excited. “You should know, the only time such a genius talent appeared like yours was our Lei Sect's second generation Patriarch. I never would have expected that today, another person like him has appeared! This is such a fortune for our Lei Sect! Such a good fortune!”

Perhaps another such genius had appeared before and it was only

that Lei Rong Kun who had locked himself in the forbidden grounds didn't know about.

“Old... Old Ancestor, why are you in this place?” Lei Yu asked.

“We'll talk about this later. Tell me, why is that your lightning energy is the color purple? Also, how did you obtain the Heavenly Thunder Manual?” Lei Rong Kun appeared to be really concerned about these two matters.

“Heavenly Thunder Manual? What's that?” Lei Yu asked.

“It's the method you've been cultivating! Could it be that you don't know its name?” Lei Rong Kun asked.

Lei Yu shook his head, “I never knew what it was called, and also I don’t know how I obtained it. As for why my lightning energy is purple, no one has ever told me why. I remember back then I had lost conscious and when I woke up, I had all of these.” Lei Yu helplessly smiled, he actually gave the method a name of “Lei Yu’s Cultivation Method.” So it’s originally called Heavenly Thunder Manual.

Lei Rong Kun nodded, “So that’s what happened...”

“Oh yeah Old Ancestor, what did you mean previously when you said this Flame Bead thing wasn’t a treasure?” Lei Yu openly asked as he looked at the bead in his hand.

Lei Rong Kun sighed, “The Lei Sect originally relied on lightning as its core source of power.

Unfortunately, only the first, second and third generations like me had this power. The generations really got worse as it continued on. Since then, we haven’t found any descendants with the lightning brand and we don’t know why either. From then on, the descendants of the Lei Sect used the flame as their source of power. The Lei Sect had originally been manufacturing Spiritual Beads as their source of income, and the bead you are holding is a product that was refined by our family’s method. The descendants that possess the flame brand use our Lei Sect’s special manufacturing method to condense their own



energy into a single point to create this Spiritual Bead. Inside contains a certain amount of attacking power. Of course, in accordance to the person's own power level, the manufactured bead would have its own corresponding damage. The destructive power of a bead made by a First Order and a Sixth Order would be on completely different levels."

Lei Yu then asked with surprise: "Then how do I activate it?" If what the old ancestor said was true, then this thing was probably more powerful than the bombs in modern times.

Lei Rong Kun smiled in disdain, "This level of Spiritual Bead does not deserve to be brought out and

shown off, the most it could do is burn a cow or something since it's only a third grade Flame Bead. It's very simple to activate it; just inject a small portion of your internal energy inside the bead; throw it out and once it reaches the target location, use your external energy senses to control your internal energy to explode within, which in turn detonates the Spiritual Bead. But these Flame Beads of the younger generation cannot be compared to the Heavenly Thunder Beads that we have manufactured in the past."

Lei Yu gasped, wasn't this considered a time bomb? And this thing detonated whenever they willed it to, so there's no worry of throwing it out too early or it

exploding at the wrong time. Lei Yu could determine from the old ancestor's words that the third grade Flame Bead was created by a Third Order Warrior. The ancestor's tone about this thing was obviously filled with disdain, so how much destruction could a Heavenly Thunder Bead cause?

"This is too incredible!"

"Too incredible? If you want to learn the process, I can teach you." Lei Rong Kun said in a calm manner.

"Uh... I'm allowed to learn this?" Lei Yu tentatively asked.

"Why not? As a member of the Lei Sect, this is a skill you're supposed

to master. Listening to the tone of your voice, could it be that the Lei Sect no longer use such means to earn money?" Lei Rong Kun asked.

Lei Yu blinked and didn't know how to explain. It might be because the old ancestor had sealed himself inside the forbidden grounds for too long, and didn't know the outside world was no longer what he has imagined it to be.

Lei Yu still tried to explain: "Indeed, the Lei family no longer has this ability but I think the wealth they have now should be greater than the previous Lei Sect. At least in this country, the Lei family has enough wealth to occupy the position of 'the richest.'

Lei Rong Kun was once again excited. “Good, that’s really good! For our Lei Sect to be able to occupy this position in the Tenglong Continent has made me extremely pleased!”

“So... Old Ancestor, why are you here in this place?” Lei Yu couldn’t help but wonder as he asked this again.

Since he couldn’t probe the strength of the old ancestor, Lei Yu concluded that he must have at least surpassed the Sixth Order rank and attained the Gold Core stage that Romon mentioned, or maybe even a higher level. This kind of place couldn’t imprison Lei Yu so how could it hold Lei Rong Kun? That’s why Lei Yu came to a

conclusion that he stayed here on his own free will, and there's bound to be some reason for this.

“Sigh, it's a long story!” Lei Rong Kun sighed before getting up to walk towards a section of the wall and placed his hands behind his back.

Although there weren't any windows for the light to come in, the stone bedroom was still quite bright. Lei Yu lifted his head up and noticed the ceiling had round floating orbs of white lightning. So that's where the light was coming from... Ever since entering this stone bedroom, Lei Yu felt that this whole place exuded a strong pressure. The most likely cause would be the surrounding space

had been influenced by the old ancestor's powerful cultivation.

Lei Yu stayed silent as he waited for the old ancestor to start speaking.

A long time later, Lei Rong Kun finally turned around. "Back then, I possessed two of the Lei Sect's most sacred treasures: The Rank Advancing Secret Manual and the Sky Devouring Sword. These two treasures were the Lei Sect's most venerated of all treasures that everyone wanted. Of course, none of them are qualified to have it!" The eyes of Lei Rong Kun revealed anger and a bit of disdain, but it quickly changed to frustration and pain.

After sighing again, Lei Rong Kun

continued: “I had already reached the peak of being in the late stages of [Detachment], and it was at this time that my lover had been instigated by her father. Her father wanted to get those two treasures from me. As a Patriarch of a Sect, I cannot just pass those treasures to someone that’s not a member of the next generation’s Patriarch. Unfortunately, my lover threatened me with her death. In desperation, I chose to escape and gave up my position as Patriarch and came to this place. I then setup this place as the forbidden grounds of the Lei Sect. The funny thing was the whole world thought I had died. The descendants that knew I had the two treasures came here wanting to take it. Their deaths here weren’t accidental; they were all killed by



my Beast Entrapment Formation. They deserved to die. They were merely descendants possessing a flame brand, them wanting to obtain the methods of lightning cultivation is simply ridiculous!”

# Chapter 200: The Two Treasures

Looking at Lei Yu, Lei Rong Kun then said: “These past thousands of years, you are the first person to come in here and not be killed by my Lightning Beast Entrapment Formation. Therefore I realized you are a descendant of the Lei Sect and the fourth person to possess the lightning brand in all of our history. Since the world has betrayed me, why should I pity the world? My lover left me so why should I attach myself to this earthly world? I have no wants or desires, no need to survive or to destroy. I already don’t have any wishes except to spend my

countless number of years in peace and quiet here.”

Lei Yu felt bitterness well up in his heart. He could kind of understand the sad memories that this previous Patriarch had experienced in the family.

The ignorance of family members and the betrayal of a lover, these types of experiences greatly dulls a person’s heart. Lei Yu even imagined all these experiences of the old ancestor on himself. If their places were switched, would Lei Yu be so free and easy going? Having no requests of the human affairs, having no love for the earthly world, how incredibly hard was it for one to accomplish this state of being?

After staying silent for a long time, Lei Yu then spoke out: “Old Ancestor, since you want to let everything go, then there’s no need to keep remembering the past. It is all my fault for asking you about this.”

Lei Rong Kun smiled and shook his head. “No harm done. I’ve been alone for these thousands of years so being able to chat with someone has already made me quite happy. Since these things happened in the past, I will just let it pass by me then.”

“As for your...” Lei Yu suddenly remembered something and wanted to ask, but he couldn’t say it out loud. The previous memories had triggered Lei Rong Kun so Lei Yu

didn't want to continue asking.

“Did you want to ask me about the information regarding the two treasures?” Lei Rong Kun asked with a smile.

Lei Yu was a bit surprised but still honestly nodded.

“Don't worry, for someone that possesses the supreme mark of the lightning brand, who is also the descendant of our Lei Sect, I will never be stingy to this type of genius. Moreover, these items are basically useless to me so you can take it!” After saying that, Lei Rong Kun took out two items from an unknown place: One was a sword covered in lightning patterns while the other was an old brown scroll.

Both items were tossed over to Lei Yu.

Lei Yu hurriedly reached to grab the items, his mouth agape without knowing what to say. This sudden pie in the sky made it difficult for him to accept.

“Don’t be so surprised. Being able to reach such a level at your age is already something considered epic proportions of the millennium. I believe you will soon break through the bottleneck and condense your Gold Core. After that, you only have put in some effort and you will be bound to be successful. These two treasures for someone like me without aspirations are useless, but it should still help you out a bit.”

A bit of help? These things would help him out a bit? This was simply a gift from the heavens that made Lei Yu overwhelmed. He was originally worried on how to further cultivate after reaching the peak stages, but since he found a solution now, how could he not be shocked and be overjoyed? And within the Sky Devouring Sword, Lei Yu could feel an extremely strong power he had never felt before. If he could freely control that power, it would definitely release some devastating attack!

With a “plop” sound, Lei Yu kneeled on the ground. Ever since he had left the Lei family, this was the first time both his knees were on the ground. His heart was filled with infinite gratitude. Previously Lei Yu

still had a trace of doubt, but now he was completely convinced that this person in front of him was the ancestor of the third generation. Lei Rong Kun was supported Lei Yu's dream of becoming a supreme expert, or perhaps it could be said that he was helping Lei Yu achieve his slightly selfish desire. Lei Yu was somewhat urgent to enter in the Immortal World because that place had someone he really wanted to see again – Telephassa.

From this day on, Lei Yu had decided on one thing: He was going to be upfront and tell Ai Er everything that had happened in ancient Greece. For two people to be together, there shouldn't be any deception involved. Not to mention being a man, Lei Yu didn't want to



hide something like this to the one he loved or else this could become a fuse that breaks the feelings between two people.[1]

“There’s no need to kneel to me, this is your karmic fortune.” Lei Rong Kun helped Lei Yu up. “The scroll contains the methods on how to cultivate the latter half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual as well as the moves and techniques of the Sky Devouring Sword. If you can master both of them, I believe that you will still be matchless once you enter the Immortal World!”

Lei Yu nodded furiously. Lei Rong Kun then continued: “Inside the scroll is also something you need to master, which is what I had previously mentioned to you about

the method our Lei Sect refines the Heavenly Thunder Bead. Once you master the method, you will be able to create the powerful Heavenly Thunder Bead. Using it at critical times would make it an item similar to a life saving insurance.” After saying that, Lei Rong Kun flipped his palm and a light green pouch appeared.

“This is...?”

“We layman call this a Universal Pouch, a bag that can store anything. The person who created this has already entered the Immortal World. The number of items he created was very little, and our Lei Sect happened to befriend him and obtain two of them as gifts. Unfortunately, both of them

have remained on me and not with the Sect all this time. Today you've come here by chance, which is also destined, so I shall then gift one of them to you."

Lei Yu received the item. It can store anything? Would it have the same function as the storage ring he wore? With his common sense, Lei Yu focused his spirit and entered the bag.

Sure enough, the space inside was extremely vast. And comparing the space with his storage ring, this bag had at least double to triple the amount of free space!

Lei Yu was about to ask the old ancestor if the storage ring was created by the same person but

before he could open his mouth, Lei Rong Kun said: "You can leave now. I also don't want anyone else to come here to bother me from now on, do you understand?"

Lei Yu heavily sighed. He took a step back and then bowed three times. "Rest assured Old Ancestor. And before I enter the Immortal World, I will certainly come back to see you."

Lei Rong Kun merely nodded and turned around without saying anything. Lei Yu gritted his teeth as a mist appeared in his eyes. Why would the old ancestor torture himself like this? But since it was his own choice, what else could Lei Yu say?

After many twists and turns, Lei Yu finally exited the cave. This was already the fourth day since he had entered the place. He had never imagined that in these four days, his whole life would be changed just like that.

Obtaining the other half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual and the Sky Devouring Sword that was filled with tyrannical power, Lei Yu was full of joy. Since he has disappeared these few days, I should really make an appearance in case Ai Er and others become worried.

Lei Yu then directly jumped off the cliff and didn't bother with his car that was still up top. A few hundred thousand Tenglong dollars was considered nothing anyways. Not

that he cared about money to begin with, Lei Yu was happy as long as he had enough for necessities.

Landing on a small path, Lei Yu started looking for the way back to the city.

“Little Yu, how was it? Did the Lei family give you any trouble?” Asked Nuo Hu, who had been nearby the Lei family’s mountain perimeter for three days.

Lei Yu shook his head, “Nothing much went on, it was just that I had a sudden feeling of an unexpected breakthrough so I started cultivating in a random place. I’m sorry big brother, oh, also my lovely Ai Er, I made you guys worried.”

“You’re so hateful, stop always

making us worry okay?” Ai Er reluctantly held onto Lei Yu’s arm, making her abundant twin peaks inadvertently rub against him. This made Lei Yu’s heart a bit restless.

“I know it was my fault, so please don’t be angry.” Lei Yu smiled as he touched Ai Er’s hair.

“Little Yu, what level have you now reached?” Nuo Hu asked. As a cultivator, they were more concerned with matters such as these.

-----

[1] The author tries to be all wise and knowing with logical explanations of how a relationship could break apart, but doesn’t

realize it's probably been months since Lei Yu has left ancient Greece and only NOW does Lei Yu decide to go explain things to Ai Er. This naivety annoys the crap out of me.



# Chapter 201:

## Examining The Treasures

“Uh..., it should be considered the late stages of a Sixth Order Warrior.”

Nuo Hu’s face was filled with complaint, “You’re not human! You must be a demon sent by the Yama King to breakup my confidence! The late stage of the Sixth Order?! Is this a strength someone at your age should have?”

“Okay, enough!” Lei Yu laughed. “Isn’t my big brother also very strong? You’re not that much older

than me and you're already an elite of Dragon Group. And next year, you're going to serve as the Deputy Commander. Could it be that someone your age should have the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior?"

Nuo Hu shook his head helplessly. There's really no way he could compare himself to the monstrous Lei Yu, but his own achievements did make a lot of other people envious.

Whether Ai Er had a fever or for whatever reason, she suddenly asked a question that made Nuo Hu blush. "Big brother, you're at a mature age now yet still act like a child. How come you still haven't found a sister-in-law for me? You're a... uh... simple and honest person

and you have a high status, so the girls lining up for you should be plenty! Why don't you think about this for a bit?"

Nuo Hu scratched his head and stammered: "You guys don't know but I... I already have a girlfriend. But she went abroad for the past two days, that's why even you Ai Er don't know about it."

Lei Yu and Ai Er glanced at each other, their eyes filled with surprise. Ai Er then laughed, "Very good of you big brother, daring to fall in love behind our back! Tell us! Which family's daughter has such fortune?"

"This.... uh... she'll be back in two more days so I'll introduce her to

you two then.”

“That’s more like it.”

After sending off Nuo Hu, Ai Er also followed and left. Lei Yu returned to his bedroom and brought out the Universal Pouch. Suddenly obtaining so many precious items had really caught him off guard.

Wanting to urgently know the other half of the cultivating method, Lei Yu first skimmed the scroll for the portion of the Heavenly Thunder Manual so he could see what’s so exquisite about the content.

Lei Yu quickly recited the cultivation method of the Heavenly Thunder Manual before closing his eyes to experience the secrets of it.

Each different cultivation method had its own profoundness and if one went astray, the results of their cultivation will deviate too much. Two different people who studied the same cultivation method may have completely different effects. Each person has different perception levels so even if they have the same cultivation method, their strengths may end up on different levels. One also needed an intelligent mind and a physique fit for the method of cultivating to maximize its effectiveness.

Lei Yu was surprised to find that the cultivating mantra seemed to be tailor-made for him. Each part of the documented method was similar to how he imagined the next phases of his cultivation should be

heading towards. The most important thing he found was the mantra emphasized that if one were to possess two different types of energy, mastery will result in a more powerful attack.

This was something Lei Yu fully understood. Every time he utilized the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique that was given to him by the bull-head, he could feel that after fusing his lightning energy with the Lunar Star energy, the power of the attacks he releases would increase by at least double. And now that those two energy have fully fused together, it's exactly what the other half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual required.

As for the green energy of unknown

origins, Lei Yu couldn't control it so he could only let it remain there and let it do its own thing.

The latter half of the mantra was truly exquisite and was very suitable for him to cultivate. But he couldn't experience the latter half yet because Lei Yu had to wait until he condensed his Gold Core first.

Therefore, the only thing Lei Yu could do now was to continue consolidating his existing power. Only through various experiences would he forge ahead and condense his foundation. Being impatient and putting too much pressure on oneself will only lead to endless problems. A good example would be Lei family Elder's grandson, Lei Yún. His foundation was too poor

and he was similar to a flower in a greenhouse; one that had never experienced any ups or downs of the outside world. He had blindly relied on the Elder's support to grow strong, that's why he couldn't even withstand a simple attack by Lei Yu.

Ceasing his insights, Lei Yu took hold of the Sky Devouring Sword and injected his internal energy into it. Lei Yu was unable to believe that this sword contained such vastness of power within it. Not only did the sword contain a powerful force of lightning, there was also an evil aura lurking around that for those with a weak will, their mind might be taken over. Of course Lei Yu was not worried over this since his nature and will were forged since



he was young. This small amount of evil aura could be effortlessly resisted by him.

The Sky Devouring Sword had a length of 1.5 meters and width of 5 centimeters. The body of the blade was polished and gleaming with light, and lightning patterns were engraved throughout making it look pretty nice. The length of the hilt was about three fists that made it suitable for a two-handed grip. Holding it revealed the sword was quite light.

This Sky Devouring Sword can only be used by someone possessing the power of lightning. Lei Yu pitied those members of the Lei Sect who insisted on fighting for a weapon that they couldn't even use.

Lei Yu theorized that if he injected as much power as he could release into the sword, the resulting power should be extremely horrifying.

Adding the power of the Thirty-six Lunar Stars technique that wasn't restricted by any weapons, who knows how many times the attack power would increase by. Lei Yu couldn't help but feel overjoyed deep in his heart.

Fortunately, one good thing was that the wielder of the Sky Devouring Sword did not have to be at the Gold Core stage. And with the methods on how to use it was already within the sword, this was a joyous windfall. With this fearsome sword, Lei Yu would surely be able to take the head of Ming Sect's Du Chang Hai.

Storing the Sky Devouring Sword, Lei Yu then brought out the item he was most curious with – the secret to refining Spiritual Beads. The scroll was made of leather filled with stains and creases that made it feel very old. It was clear that this was caused by the long passage of time.

Lei Yu calmed himself down before reading the text, and only then did he realize wanting to create these beads wasn't an easy thing to do. One had to have mastery over the control of their internal energy in order to successfully create the beads. First, one had to condense their internal energy into a single point. Then implant certain nodes according to the method described. The distance between the two nodes

were very precise because in order for it to be detonated by one's internal energy, the two nodes would collide together. The two nodes would also determine the power of the blast. If those nodes are incorrectly implanted, then the bead would not be able to display its true power. That's why in order to create this small Spiritual Bead, one had to spend several days and completely exhaust their internal energy. Internal energy can be recovered, but this process does the cultivator more harm than good. This was why only limited members of the Lei Sect would spend their time refining this life insurance.

Inside the Universal Pouch were a lot of items, but Lei Yu had no clue on what their uses were for. But

three round beads caught his attention because they contained a really powerful energy. Could these be the Heavenly Thunder Beads the old ancestor mentioned? If they were, it must have been personally refined by the old ancestor. Lei Yu had no doubt that these beads held enormous power within them.

At this time, Nuo Hu's voice was heard through the window: "Little Yu, quick! Quickly come with me! Something major has happened!"

# Chapter 202: A Major Event

Sitting inside Nuo Hu's car, Lei Yu was completely shocked. "What?!" Lei Yu couldn't believe what he had just heard.

"That's right; I just received a call from my father. Martial Sect is in complete chaos right now because Shangguan Xi Hong may not make it!" Nuo Hu was driving really fast. Even though this matter was unrelated to Lei Yu, this sudden incident had made Lin Cang Hai request that Lei Yu go there and take a look. After all, Lei Yu used to be a member of Martial Sect and a Deputy Commander of the army.

This was an incident that no one imagined could ever happen.

Nuo Hu was driving in a reckless and erratic manner, causing many vehicles to get out of his way in a panic. There were many people cursing him but once they saw his license plate, they shut their mouths and no longer dared to make a sound. This was a vehicle belonging to Dragon Group so unless they wanted to lose their lives, who would dare to continue criticizing him?

Driving for a few hours, Lei Yu and Nuo Hu arrived at the main city. Near the center of the city was the country's largest hospital. Nuo Hu proceeded to park his car in the parking lot. This place appeared

more lively than usual and the parking lot was pretty much full. Reluctantly, Nuo Hu could only find some small corner of the lot and make his own parking spot.

“Stop! Today the hospital is prohibiting everyone from entering!” A burly guy blocked the path of the two.

Lei Yu was about to give his name but didn't expect the people of Shangguan Xi Hong to be so overbearing. “Prohibiting everyone from entering? What if there's a patient that's been seriously injured? Who gave you such an authority?”

Nuo Hu wanted to stop Lei Yu but the latter waved his arm to not



interfere. It was clear that Lei Yu was not very happy with how this incident was being handled.

“Scram! You are not qualified to know of Martial Sect’s business!”

Lei Yu was furious. Looking around, he noticed the empty field in front of the hospital had many patients sitting next to flower beds. Even a few well-intentioned nurses were helplessly pushing patients out while they were still in their beds. They were all humans so what gave Shangguan Xi Hong the right to take up the entire hospital for himself?

“Watch the tone of your voice!” Nuo Hu interjected in rage. “I am Dragon Group’s Nuo Hu, and this is

Lei Yu!”

“Lei... Lei Yu?” Hearing the words that someone was from Dragon Group, this burly guy was still filled with disdain. But hearing Lei Yu’s name, he couldn’t help swallowing hard. “The same Lei Yu that took out the Yamaguchi-gumi in the Kou country and destroyed two underground forces in the U.S.?”

“Cut the crap! I’m going to ask you once more, who gave you the authority to stop all those from entering the hospital?” Lei Yu asked again.

“It was our Eagle Group’s Commander Xiao.” The burly guy replied.

“Damn bastard! Who does he think he is?! Don’t piss me off, immediately allow all patients to enter the hospital for treatment!”

“This...” The burly guy hesitated, but upon seeing Lei Yu’s angry expression, he reluctantly nodded in agreement. If Commander Xiao blames him, the burly guy would just push the blame all on Lei Yu.

When all the patients were invited back into the hospital by several soldiers, a thin middle-aged man appeared in the hallway. A pair of cold eyes glared at the patients entering the hospital before he roared out: “Who let them come in?!”

“Co... Commander Xiao, it was...”

The burly guy pointed at Lei Yu and Nuo Hu who were standing outside the hospital entrance. The person who roared out was none other than the Commander of Eagle Group, Xiao Zhang, who was also the father of Xiao Fei whose arm was broken by Lei Yu in the U.S.

“Lei Yu? It’s you!” Seeing Lei Yu, Xiao Zhang’s eyes became even colder.

“The great Commander Xiao, you are really worthy of the title... you’re arrogant beyond measure! What rights do you have to prevent others from getting care inside the hospital? Could it be that as a Commander of an army, you can disregard the life and death of others?”

“Humph! You currently don’t have a title so you aren’t qualified to speak with me in such a tone! Also, you should know that Chief Shangguan is in critical condition and needs absolute quiet.” Xiao Zhang narrowed his eyes and coldly said this.

“F\*ck you! You want to kiss Shangguan Xi Hong’s ass? You are not even worth a piece of shit in his eyes. There are plenty of people inside the Shangguan family. If he were to really pass away, there will be naturally people of the Shangguan family replacing his position; it will never get to you! There’s one other thing I want to remind you: Even if I don’t have a title, Chairman Lin had previously issued a decree that I am under no

one's jurisdiction. As long as I want to, removing you from your position as the Commander of Eagle Group is as easy as pie!" Lei Yu said this without blinking.

"You...!" Lei Yu's words completely enraged him. At the same time, he would never forget what his son had been through in the U.S. so this time; Xiao Zhang was at the edge of having a meltdown.

"Big brother, let's go see Chief Shangguan. Hopefully he can recover or else these rats might commit an act that's devoid of one's conscience." As he was saying this, Lei Yu pulled Nuo Hu's arm. They both didn't bother looking at Xiao Zhang anymore and walked inside.

Any place guarded by soldiers would mean the location of Shangguan Xi Hong. The two of them merely spoke their identity and successfully entered the ward containing ultra-luxurious patient rooms.

Upon seeing Shangguan Xi Hong's appearance, Lei Yu was a bit surprised. The previous domineering and tyrannical aura was no more, replaced with a pale face as if it was void of any blood. Even his arms showed traces of early stages of festering sores.

“How could this happen?” Lei Yu raised his head and looked at the others present in the room. Apart from Lin Cang Hai, there was Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Yi Feng, and various

other officials of Martial Sect.

Lin Cang Hai came over, “Lei Yu, I suspect Shangguan Xi Hong has been poisoned! And after many medical examinations, we can’t find the cause or the way to heal it. It looks like he doesn’t have much time left.”

This type of news was extremely shocking. Lei Yu gently exhaled, “If Martial Sect lost Shangguan Xi Hong, chaos would likely ensue and the outcome would definitely be unpleasant!”

Lin Cang Hai pulled Lei Yu to a corner of the room out of ear’s reach of others. “This I also know, and after careful consideration...” Looking left and right and making



sure no one was eavesdropping, Lin Cang Hai then said in whisper only the two of them could hear: “We have to find someone with comparable strength and ability to take over Shangguan Xi Hong’s position.”

Lei Yu raised his eyebrows, “Chairman Lin, you’re not going throw this on me right?”

Lin Cang Hai nodded while faintly smiling. “Previously you didn’t consider my offer. Now that this great opportunity has appeared... as long as you take over his position, I believe all the strength of Martial Sect would be firmly in your hands. At that time, I will no longer have anything to worry about.”

Lei Yu shook his head and said:  
“I’m sorry but it’s the same words like last time – I am not interested, especially when my ambitions and the path I want to take in life is not in that direction.”

“But...”

“Oh, another thing Chairman Lin, I want to closely inspect Shangguan Xi Hong’s injuries. I have my suspicions on who the culprit is that’s involved with this.”

“Who is it?” Lin Cang Hai asked.

“Someone that’s able to create a poison that a Sixth Order Warrior cannot resist, I’m afraid there are only two people that can do this in the world. The first is a research

scientist that belonged to the now destroyed Yamaguchi-gumi; the other remaining person would be Dr. Tony. Apart from those two, I can't think of anyone else with that ability. Now for the only person that is connected to those two, perhaps there's only one such person I can think of."

# Chapter 203:

## Finding The Antidote

Back then, the Kou country's Yamaguchi-gumi wanted to come to Tenglong country and use the bacterium to earn huge profits. And Lei Yu knew during that time, the Ming Sect's Du Chang Hai had bought some drugs from the Yamaguchi-gumi. When Lei Yu had previously captured those research scientists while cleaning up Yamaguchi Island, those scientists wanting to preserve their lives had spilled everything they knew. But due to a number of reasons, Martial Sect did not make any moves

towards Ming Sect. It appears that things have now revealed itself, where the Ming Sect could no longer hold back their ambitions.

“You’re talking about the Ming Sect?” Lin Cang Hai asked with a slight surprise.

Lei Yu nodded, “It’s a possibility. I’m not trying to blow my own trumpet but I think the Ming Sect made this desperate move because of my return. The relationship between the Lei family and I is already a foregone conclusion, which isn’t a big secret. And from another perspective, I could still be considered a member of Martial Sect.” [1]

“What you’ve said make sense, so

what do you plan on doing?"

Lei Yu pointed to Shangguan Xi Hong lying on the bed. "Let's first take a look at the extent of the poison."

Going to the bedside, Lei Yu asked the person that was always by the side of Shangguan Xi Hong: "When did you find out that he was poisoned?"

"Last night." The old man replied.

"I need the exact time!" Lei Yu frowned, clearly not satisfied with the answer.

The members of the Shangguan family were usually proud and arrogant, but taking into account of Lei Yu's identity, the old man didn't

reveal his anger. Moreover, in front of Lei Yu, he was not qualified to show his temper.

Another middle-aged man on the side answered: "Last night around midnight was when we realized something was wrong. I was together with brother Shangguan when he suddenly became unconscious."

Lei Yu nodded, "Time is running out, we have less than twelve hours. We have to quickly find a way to detoxify the poison or else even if the Gods came, they would be powerless."

The words of Lei Yu were easier said than done. If they could really figure out a way to save Shangguan

Xi Hong, then this group of people wouldn't be standing around with a helpless look on their faces.

"Humph, such useless words. If there was a way, we would have already went and gotten it. There's simply no cure for this type of poison!" The previous old man said in a sarcastic tone.

"I would like to ask: How do you know there's no cure for this poison? Do you happen to know the medicinal properties of this poison quite well?" Lei Yu asked with his eyes narrowed.

"You... you... you're blabbing nonsense!" The face of the old man suddenly became pale. Although Lei Yu's words were insufficient to hint



at something, the old man's overreaction did make everyone a bit suspicious. Could it really be him?

Lei Yu only grinned and didn't say anything more. If it really was this old man, one thing for certain is that he had a relationship with Du Chang Hai or someone high up in the Ming Sect.

Lei Yu stared at the old man for a full two minutes without saying a thing. The old man was dripping in sweat that even drenched the clothes he was wearing. He didn't even dare to look Lei Yu in the eyes. One can imagine there was definitely something fishy going on.

It was not necessary for Lei Yu to

say anything more and people will start paying attention to this old man. Since Shangguan Xi Hong had high prestige in the family, he must have a lot of trusted confidants by his side. Once Lei Yu's words caused doubt within the family, the old man was shortly taken away without hesitation for interrogation.

Lei Yu then brought out a hard drive from his storage ring.

“Chairman Lin, I took this from Dr. Tony's place. Inside the hard drive should contain his life's work. I hope you can handle this item properly because I don't wish to see those horrible mutants appear inside our Tenglong country.” Even though Lei Yu does not fully agree with the way Lin Cang Hai does things, he is after all doing them for

the sake of the country. There are self-interests in the way he does things but in a broader sense, Lin Cang Hai was still a leader that could benefit mankind. Lei Yu believed it should be fine to give this hard drive to him.

“What...?! Lin Cang Hai was surprised. Both times Lei Yu returned home, he had brought back with him a massive gift. This hard drive made Lin Cang Hai feel a bit emotional and excited.

“We should draw a portion of the toxin’s component from Shangguan Xi Hong’s blood, then compare its structure with the information in the hard drive to see if we can find an antidote. This is the best that I can do. Whether he lives or dies

will be up to Shangguan Xi Hong's fate." Lei Yu and Nuo Hu left after leaving those words.

After Nuo Hu's car left the premise, a person was standing at the hospital entrance. "Lei Yu, the suffering my son has endured will be repaid a hundred times!"

Lei Yu waved goodbye to Nuo Hu and then thought to himself: "I can't guarantee there will be a way to detoxify the poison in the hard drive, so everything will be up to Shangguan Xi Hong's karmic luck."

Lei Yu laid back and relaxed, his fox tail about to reveal itself.[2] If Shangguan Xi Hong is really able to have some dog shit luck and avoid this crisis, even if Lei Yu doesn't

personally go look for trouble at Ming Sect, once Shangguan Xi Hong learns the truth, he would go seek them out for retribution. At that time, Lei Yu's chances of victory would increase a notch with Martial Sect's help.

Sitting inside his bedroom, Lei Yu looked at the time on his cell phone. As the hours passed by, the time before the poison erupts killing Shangguan Xi Hong was less than half an hour away and there was still no news coming from Nuo Hu's side. Perhaps they really couldn't find a way to detoxify the poison.

Lei Yu had tried his best. If Shangguan Xi Hong really couldn't be saved, then one could only blame

his bad luck.

The moment Lei Yu had given up, his phone started ringing. Before picking up, Lei Yu looked at the time which showed there was still 10 minutes to go. "What's going on big brother?"

"Little Yu, he woke up! He actually survived it!" Nuo Hu's voice seemed very excited.

"Oh? I understand. If there's anything new that comes up, give me a call." Hanging up the phone, Lei Yu felt everything was moving according to his expectations. Even if Shangguan Xi Hong was to die, Lei Yu had another method he could use against the Ming Sect.

The morning two days later. Lei Yu had just gotten out of the bathroom when the doorbell rang. After quickly getting dressed, Lei Yu found out the person who came over was none other than Shangguan Xi Hong.

“The leader of Martial Sect is truly extraordinary. In a few short days, you’re able to recover your previous magnificent self!” Lei Yu bantered with a smile.

“Lei Yu!” Shangguan Xi Hong seemed emotional. Even though he was the leader of the Shangguan family and the Chief of the country’s multiple army divisions, he wasn’t able to hide his gratitude. “If it weren’t for your help this time, I’m afraid I’d be currently meeting

with the Yama King. You are the savior of I, Shangguan Xi Hong's life. From this day on, my life belongs to you!"

Lei Yu was a bit shocked. He never expected Shangguan Xi Hong would say these words to him.

Standing between the edges of life and death, perhaps it might be able to change a person's personality. Lei Yu never saw Shangguan Xi Hong as a person that was insufferably arrogant, it was just that he took his own family and the Martial Sect too seriously and used the army divisions as supporting casts. But overall, Shangguan Xi Hong was really suited as the role of a leader.



-----

[1] The author is being ambiguous here. My take is that the four major forces of Tenglong are in balance with each other. They each have 1 Sixth Order expert except for Celestial Court who has 2, but Celestial Court doesn't care about the earthly things of the world. If Martial Sect now has 2 Sixth Order experts, Ming Sect might be in a precarious situation.

[2] Fox tail about to reveal itself symbolizes being cunning or crafty.

# Chapter 204: Cutting Out The Heart And Liver

(Demonic Realm has been changed to Devilish/Devils Realm.)

The previous Shangguan Xi Hong's attitude towards Lei Yu was lukewarm at best. Once he found out that Lei Yu had an unsurpassed talent, only then did Shangguan Xi Hong try to find all means to bring him to his side. No one expected that after this incident, a noble leader of Martial Sect would actually say those words. At least the people currently behind Shangguan Xi Hong would

absolutely not believe they had just heard those words.

“You’re too serious about this, please come in before we continue chatting.” Lei Yu made a hand gesture to invite them in.

Shangguan Xi Hong changed back to his domineering face and turned to the crowd behind him: “You guys wait outside!”

“Understood!” The group of people answered in unison.

After having Shangguan Xi Hong take a seat in the living room, Lei Yu deliberately took out his best tea to serve this VIP guest.

“My old subordinate confessed, and all of this was caused by the Ming

Sect. It was all thanks to you!”  
Shangguan Xi Hong went straight to the point without any nonsense.

Lei Yu didn't beat around the bush either and bluntly asked: “Then what are your plans?”

“I will show Du Chang Hai the methods of my Martial Sect!”  
Shangguan Xi Hong clenched his fists as he said this.

Lei Yu shook his head, “Chief Shangguan...”

Shangguan Xi Hong smiled and interrupted: “Don't call me Chief; my title in front of you is not worth half a cent. You can directly call me by name or if you don't mind, you can just call me Uncle.”

“Uh...” Lei Yu felt a bit reluctant but still said it. “Uncle Shangguan, are you saying you want to go to war with the Ming Sect?”

“The Ming Sect is originally a force of evil and should’ve been eradicated a long time ago. But because of maintaining the balance between the major forces of Tenglong country, this was never done. Now that they are acting so arrogantly, there’s no need for us to hold back!” Shangguan Xi Hong angrily said.

“The consequences of going to war with them can become disastrous though. The Ming Sect is rooted deeply in all areas. I’m afraid at that time; chaos will ensue in Tenglong country. The end result might cause

an economic collapse and by then, even the safety of our citizens may be in jeopardy!” This was one of the reasons Lei Yu hadn’t rashly made a move against the Ming Sect yet.

“Then what do you suggest we do?” Shangguan Xi Hong asked.

Lei Yu smiled, “Why should we break the balance? You should know that it’s only Du Chang Hai, a single person that wanted to harm you and not everyone in the Ming Sect. The major forces are maintaining a balance without anyone being stronger or weaker. If Martial Sect musters up all their forces to destroy the Ming Sect, killing a thousand would result in eight hundred of our own losses. I’m afraid the day of Ming Sect’s

demise would also mean the day that Martial Sect's standing will fall. By that time, who knows who the fisherman would be to reap the rewards?"

"Either the Lei family or Celestial Court!" Shangguan Xi Hong replied without thought. In fact, how could a leader of a major force in Tenglong country not think of this? This happened because the poison incident happened too sudden, making him somewhat lose his cool-headedness. After hearing Lei Yu's words did his mind suddenly become clear again.

"That's why my thoughts on this are very simple: Since it's the fault of a single person Du Chang Hai, why would we implicate the others?"

Killing him would naturally result in another person taking his position, which shouldn't create too much chaos. If we did eliminate all the Ming Sect's branches and chapters, it will definitely cause the destruction of both us and them."

"What you've said makes sense, so what plans do you have?"  
Shangguan Xi Hong asked.

Lei Yu didn't have to think about this because he had previously devised plans on the many possibilities after the poisoning incident. He then said: "I can help you to kill him, but I want to know what benefits would I get out of it?"

Shangguan Xi Hong couldn't believe what he had just heard from



Lei Yu. At the same time, he started wondering what level of strength Lei Yu had actually reached now.

“You? Are you sure you can beat him? He’s at the Sixth Devilish Realm and from what I’ve heard; he has reached the late stages of it. Could it be that you believe you have the assurance to handle him?” What Shangguan Xi Hong was considering wasn’t the benefits Lei Yu was seeking, but whether Lei Yu had such ability or not.

“Your suspicions are reasonable. I can tell you with certainty that, without meaning to be disrespectful, if we were to fight right now, I am confident in being the victor!” Lei Yu looked at Shangguan Xi Hong without

blinking. Not only did Lei Yu's eyes contain something as simple as confidence, it also contained a hidden meaning.

Lei Yu had no proof to back up his words, especially since these two have never fought before. But Shangguan Xi Hong had a feeling that Lei Yu possessed a treasure, one that was extremely powerful at that.

Whether it be a cultivator on the Warrior path or the Devil path, or what Celestial Court referred to as the Immortal path, or Primus Hogue and Minotaur Linos's Demonic path, once they've reached the late stages of the Sixth level, their strengths are comparable to each other. There's

no way to determine who is stronger or weaker in a short amount of time. Thus, they had to see who was holding a hidden ace up their sleeves since that's the key to victory amongst the experts. When Lei Yu spoke those words, it was obvious that he was holding onto a hidden ace.

After a while, Shangguan Xi Hong then slowly asked: "What benefits were you referring to?" He was asking this because he had a reason. In everyone's eyes, Lei Yu didn't care about money or status; he only paid attention to the relationship of people close to him. Shangguan Xi Hong didn't know how he could help Lei Yu with those bonds he cared so much about.

Lei Yu was in fact just acting along. Those that know Lei Yu having enmity with the Ming Sect was only Nuo Yi Long, and of course, he wouldn't go around telling everyone. Since Shangguan Xi Hong didn't know a thing about this, he had his own thoughts. Shangguan Xi Hong thought Lei Yu was helping him because Lei Yu wanted a favor owed to him. Those people with high statuses did not like owing favors so they would always quickly try to repay them.

Lei Yu smiled, "My request might be a bit too much for someone like you, but I have to do this for the sake of my friends and my brother. As far as I know, those on the Warrior's cultivation path, only the Shangguan family can reach the

Sixth Order Warrior rank. As for the other ancient clans, it's extremely difficult." Pausing a bit, Lei Yu continued: "I would like the cultivating methods of the Shangguan family. When it comes to my big brother Nuo Hu, I have no choice but to request this from you."

Grasping one equals to grasping them all when it's about the cultivating methods of the Warrior path. They were on completely different path to special cultivators like Lei Yu. Even if they had different mantras, the end stages on how to circulate and control their internal energy were all the same. This was something Lei Yu found when reading different books and scrolls. But he realized that his own

cultivating method was really not suitable for Nuo Hu.

Shangguan Xi Hong hesitated and thought for a long time. After all, they were talking about the most important treasure of the Shangguan family. This was something outsiders have never obtained before. After deliberating with himself, Shangguan Xi Hong then said: "I can fulfill your condition but I have a request. Our cultivating method can only be mastered by him and no one else. If we find out there is a second person, even if we become enemies, I will certainly spare no effort in getting rid of everyone!"

"That's a deal!" Lei Yu smiled as he slapped the armrest of the sofa.

Lei Yu had really profited big time from this. Originally, Du Chang Hai was someone he had to deal with. Now he had a helper, and that helper had to cut out his heart and liver[1] to take out a cultivating method that's never been revealed to outsiders before. Wasn't this considered a great occasion?

-----

[1] Taking out the Shangguan family's cultivating method hurts as much as cutting out his own heart and liver.

# Chapter 205: I Have Something Good

After reaching the agreement, Shangguan Xi Hong was still somewhat reluctant. But since Lei Yu had saved his life, and he gained his help in dealing with his enemy, he eventually felt it was a good deal. Little did Shangguan Xi Hong know that he was actually the one that suffered a big loss from this.

“Go ahead and tell me your plans.” Shangguan Xi Hong lightly sighed.

Lei Yu had to hold back a huge smile. “For now, we need a way to



flush him out. I propose that Martial Sect sends out two contingents of troops to raid the Ming Sect branches. I believe Du Chang Hai will show up because of this. At that time, we only need to utilize the eyes and ears of Martial Sect to pinpoint his exact location. Once the location has been passed onto me, I will take care of everything afterwards.”

“That simple?” Shangguan Xi Hong asked with surprise.

Lei Yu nodded, “It’s really that simple.”

Shangguan Xi Hong originally thought that he and Lei Yu would go and fight Du Chang Hai to the bitter end. He never expected Lei Yu

would have such simple arrangements. Shangguan Xi Hong couldn't help once again doubting if Lei Yu's abilities were strong enough. Only after seeing Lei Yu's steady and confident eyes did Shangguan Xi Hong reluctantly nod in agreement.

According to the conditions of their agreement, Shangguan Xi Hong personally delivered a copy of their family's cultivating methods to Lei Yu a short while later. He kept reminding Lei Yu over and over again that it had to be burned after being memorized, and that this method could not be revealed to the outside world. Lei Yu naturally agreed to everything.

According to their plans,

Shangguan Xi Hong began gathering his troops. He then inconspicuously picked out four Fifth Order Warriors amongst the four army divisions and had one of the Shangguan family members assume command. The troops secretly hid themselves near the southern branches of the Ming Sect while they waited for Shangguan Xi Hong's order to begin the raid.

-----

The headquarters of the Ming Sect was at a large company listed on the stock exchange. Du Chang Hai was sitting in an office on the top floor of the building.

"I didn't expect the Lei Yu kid to disrupt our plans!" Said Du Chang

Hai in anger.

“Sect Leader, should we take some precautions? Since Shangguan Xi Hong now knows it was us that made the move, would he initiate a counterattack?” A middle-aged man in a black suit at his side asked with concern.

Du Chang Hai nodded, “Based on Shangguan Xi Hong’s personality, he will definitely do something. But we’re not afraid if he does come; who knows who will be the final loser in this situation?”

Unfortunately for them, their calculations were completely wrong. Based on Shangguan Xi Hong’s personality, he would have declared war and gone all out. But

with Lei Yu's reminder, things will happen outside of Du Chang Hai's expectation.

In another part of the country, Lei Yu was sitting at home holding his cell phone. "Big brother, can you swing by my place? I have something good for you."

"What's this 'good' thing? Could it be the fruit that you've given me in the past?" Nuo Hu jokingly asked.

"Do you even need those anymore? Come quickly, it will definitely make you jump in joy!"

"Okay, okay! I'll be right over!" Nuo Hu's speed was very fast. And after Ai Er realized her brother was going to see Lei Yu, she insisted on going

as well so Nuo Hu could only reluctantly agree.

Inside Lei Yu's house.

“Brother Yu, I heard you wanted to give my brother something ‘good’? Does Ai Er get a piece of it as well?” Ai Er pretended to be a spoiled child as she swung Lei Yu's arms back and forth. This type of scene was something Lei Yu really enjoyed experiencing.

“I'm already yours and you're still not satisfied?” Lei Yu smiled as he gently pinched Ai Er's nose.

“You're so hateful; quickly tell us what this ‘good’ thing is so I can get a piece of it as well!” Ai Er was even more urgent than Nuo Hu.

Lei Yu turned to look at Nuo Hu, “Big brother, you’re currently a Fifth Order Warrior. Do you have and cultivation methods for the subsequent level?”

Nuo Hu sighed, “The Nuo family’s cultivating methods can only allow me to reach the peak of the Fifth Order, so I need the assistance of other methods for the later stages. Wanting to break through on my own is something extremely difficult. My father has been stuck at this level for a very long time and cannot break through, not to mention me.”

“I’ll say something that may be difficult to hear: Based on your current age, you’re considered a genius of the Nuo family right?”

With the strength of a Fifth Order Warrior when you're only in your twenties, if you still really had a better cultivating method, it's possible you would've successfully broken through into the Sixth Order already."

"Quit joking around, how could it be that easy? Only the Shangguan family has those advanced cultivation methods, and not everyone is able to break through. Otherwise, why would Shangguan Xi Hong be the only one to reach the Sixth Order Warrior level?" Nuo Hu said.

"In my estimates and based on your latent talents, if you really had the cultivation method, I believe you can really do it." Lei Yu started



smiling mysteriously.

Lei Yu had made Nuo Hu completely puzzled, his heart itching for an answer. “Little Yu, quickly tell us. What exactly is this ‘good’ thing you’re going to give me? Are you implying...!” Speaking up to this point, Nuo Hu felt that this was unlikely. The Shangguan family treated their cultivation method as something more important than their lives, so there’s no way Lei Yu would have obtained it right?

“Keep talking, maybe your guess is accurate.” Lei Yu continued with his mysterious smile.

“Could it be that you somehow obtained a peerless cultivation

method?” Nuo Hu showed a ‘give me a break’ smile.

“Your guess is right on, I have obtained one. And it’s actually the Shangguan family’s cultivation method, delivered personally into my hands by Shangguan Xi Hong.” As he said this, Lei Yu retrieved the hand copied cultivation mantra and placed it in Nuo Hu’s hands.

Still unable to believe this was happening, Nuo Hu’s shaking hands held onto a handwritten scroll filled with text. Endless emotions were surging in his mind since he dared not to believe this was possible. But when had Lei Yu ever fooled him in the past? Even if Lei Yu was playing a joke on him, why would he make his own big

brother come all the way here for it?

“Is... is... is this for real?” Nuo Hu swallowed hard as he asked in shock.

Lei Yu smiled and nodded, “Yes, it’s definitely the real thing. I’ve studied it already and it’s very complete. It should be very helpful to your cultivation. I believe that within a few years, you will break through the Fifth Order Warrior’s bottleneck and reach the strength of a Sixth Order.”

Nuo Hu gasped, even in his dreams had he never thought of having such a chance. Not to mention obtaining the Shangguan family’s cultivation method which was their

clan's ultimate treasure. This was similar to Lei Yu giving him the grace of heaven.

Nuo Hu was in tears, he was so emotional that he didn't know what to say. Ordinary people may not understand the thoughts of a cultivator, but as one that walked the Warrior's path; their biggest obstacle in life was being unable to break through to higher levels. In their entire lives, many people are unable to reach the stage of a super expert, but Nuo Hu had now been given an opportunity. And this opportunity was gifted to Nuo Hu by an indifferent Lei Yu in a playful manner.

"I must say big brother, can you not be like this? I... the hell, I thought

you would be so happy that'd you be jumping in joy. Instead, you're crying?" Lei Yu scratched his head and didn't know how to comfort Nuo Hu.

"Big brother, why are you crying? Isn't this a joyous occasion? I constantly see you, dad, and aunty depressed over being unable to cultivate further. Everything's fine now. Brother Yu gave you this gift, so there's no need to be depressed anymore." Ai Er stared at Nuo Hu with big watery eyes that were filled with uncertainty.

"Ai Er..." Nuo Hu heavily sobbed a few more times before calming down. "You don't know the meaning behind this. As a cultivator, having a cultivation

method for the later realms is the biggest dream of their life. Yet some people would keep these peerless mantras hidden and not let anyone else near it. Therefore the more people that do this, the more precious it becomes. You don't understand... you really don't understand!"

# Chapter 206:

## Another Path

“Okay, enough! You’re making me want to cry too!” Lei Yu patted Nuo Hu’s shoulder.

Nuo Hu wipes the tear stains with his arm, “Little Yu, I won’t say anything more or unnecessary!”  
There was no need for those thousands of grateful words between two brothers.

“That’s right big brother, there’s something I need to remind you of.”  
Lei Yu suddenly thought of Shangguan Xi Hong’s reminder.  
“Shangguan Xi Hong said that this cultivation method can only be

learned by you. If another person somehow gets hold of this, he will spare no effort in dealing with you so it's best that you're careful with it."

Nuo Hu nodded, this was enough. Even if it was only himself, it was enough to break the shame that the Nuo family had never had someone that had broken through to the Sixth Order Warrior stage. Nuo Hu firmly believed that he will live up to his brother's expectations. He will definitely succeed in breaking through, but he just needed some time.

"Don't worry; I will not disclose this to anyone else. Once I've memorized it, I will immediately burn it."



Lei Yu nodded, "It's definitely good to be careful now, but we don't have to be this rigid with our thoughts..." Lei Yu smiled with evil intentions. "Once you've reached the late stages of a Sixth Order Warrior, is there still any need to fear Shangguan Xi Hong? At that time, won't that mean you can pass the cultivation method to whomever you want? Uncle Nuo and Aunt Nuo are in need of such opportunities as well."

"Uh..."

His cell phone suddenly rang so Lei Yu stepped out to pick it up. "Lei Yu, everything has been arranged and we can make a move anytime." The voice on the other end of the line was Shangguan Xi Hong.

“That’s good, and we have to put some spies at their headquarters so that we’ll know if Du Chang Hai will make an appearance or not.”

After hanging up the phone, Lei Yu showed his mysterious signature smile. There was a reason for attacking the Ming Sect’s branch. Attacking the headquarters would definitely make the branches send out reinforcements for back-up. By that time, Lei Yu was afraid he wouldn’t be able to escape even if he wanted to. When it came to their branch sites, the forces gathered there were small to begin with and can’t handle anything major. There also wasn’t any need to wipe out the entire branch, Lei Yu merely had to cause some trouble and it would be sufficient for their true

aim.

The next day. After the attack on the Ming Sect's branch, information on their movement arrived. What made Lei Yu and Shangguan Xi Hong shocked was something unexpected happen; all the Fifth Order Warriors from the Ming Sect from all branches had disappeared without a trace.

“How could this happen?”

Shangguan Xi Hong was somewhat angry since he never imagined Du Chang Hai would be this cunning. Those on the Fifth Devilish Realm were of quite importance. With the disappearance of them, only the insignificant soldiers were left behind and killing them was meaningless.

Lei Yu was lost in thought, he never expected things would evolve to where it is now. It looks like Du Chang Hai had prepared for this.

“There’s still one path for us to take.”

Shangguan Xi Hong was immediately filled with spirit, “Quickly tell me, what path can we take?”

Lei Yu thought for a bit longer. Since there’s no other way, he could only take this route. “Inform the other major forces of the country and say that I, Lei Yu will challenge Ming Sect’s Du Chang Hai. The place of our fight will be the same as last time when I dueled Cai Zhong. The time will be three days

from now. We'll see what their responses will be like. Most importantly, we need to observe the reaction of the Ming Sect since this move will be similar to forcing them to a dead-end. Since doing things in the dark didn't work, we can only do things in the light."

"Is it inappropriate to do something like this? And which side are you representing on behalf of your challenge? If this is a personal challenge, Du Chang Hai can easily ignore it!" Shangguan Xi Hong said this with a worried expression.

"Of course I'm representing Martial Sect. If you agree to it, I will serve as Martial Sect's Deputy Chief. But this will only be temporary so don't worry about it. With that, I will

have a good enough reason and status to issue the challenge. If they agree, it could be considered an exchange of pointers between two major forces. If they don't agree, we can provoke them. The Ming Sect was in the wrong first; Du Chang Hai shouldn't have used secret and insidious means to poison you. And now, we need him to give us an explanation." Lei Yu explained.

Thinking back and forth, Shangguan Xi Hong was still undecided. After all, this wasn't a trivial matter and will bound to stir up a sensation. He still couldn't understand why Lei Yu seemed to be even more eager than himself to kill Du Chang Hai.

"I still feel this is a bit too hasty.

Killing Du Chang Hai openly in front of the public... aren't you afraid of the chaos that will ensue afterwards? I'm afraid by then, things will truly get out of hand!"

Lei Yu smiled and shook his head, "If we rallied our forces and made an all out attack on the Ming Sect, this will result in losses on both sides. But if we only killed Du Chang Hai, only internal chaos will appear in the Ming Sect as people start fighting for the position of the Sect Leader. The strongest person we feared no longer exists, so how rampant can Fifth Devilish Realm cultivators act in front of us?" Lei Yu then remembered something and said: "During the time when you were injured, there were very few people talking about taking

revenge for you. There was even someone thinking of taking over your position. This was something I saw with my own eyes so you don't have to doubt my words. If Martial Sect was like this, then we don't even have to mention what will happen to the Ming Sect."

"Who? Who was this person thirsting for my position?" Shangguan Xi Hong asked with anger in his eyes.

Lei Yu shook his head, "There's no point in saying the name since he has the desires but doesn't have the power. Aren't you perfectly healthy right now? It's best not to create any chaos amongst our ranks during a critical time like now."



After listening to Lei Yu's words, Shangguan Xi Hong felt it made sense and didn't need to pierce this window made of paper[1]. In his heart, he was already going through a list of several people he suspected.

"Then I will represent Martial Sect on your behalf and announce this message. We'll see what reactions the other two major forces will have."

"This is the only way. Since Du Chang Hai wanted to act like a turtle, this is the only trick we can use to force him out!"

-----

Inside a bamboo house located in a

secluded area that was similar to paradise on earth. “Court Leader, it looks like they’re going to perform a dogfight show for us to watch again!” The Elder of Celestial Court, Qing Feng, looked very excited. It seemed like he was extremely happy to see something like this happen.

A middle-aged man that looked slightly younger than Qing Feng then said: “Could it be that you don’t see the hidden meaning behind this?”

Qing Feng shook his head in confusion. The middle-aged man then said: “It’s obvious the Ming Sect made a move, and he didn’t just target Shangguan Xi Hong alone. Everyone knows about Du

Chang Hai's wild ambitions so I wonder what his response will be..." He's not an easy pushover right? This whole thing started when he acted against Martial Sect. What if it started with our Celestial Court or the Lei family? Would there be another outcome different from now?"

Qing Feng looked surprised, "It shouldn't happen right? Du Chang Hai would not dare..."

"Hard to say, very hard to say!"

"So what position should we take on this?" Qing Feng asked.

The middle-aged man smiled, "There's no rush, let's see what reactions the Lei family will have

first before we continue.”

-----

It was extremely lively in the Lei family household. The Elder was quite long-winded next to Lei Yun Tian’s ears: “Master, you didn’t make a decision that day. If we had punished Kei Yu, something like this wouldn’t have happened now! It’s obvious Lei Yu wants to break up the balance between our four major forces!”

“Oh? Is that what you think?” Lei Yun Tian clearly didn’t agree with the Elder’s view.

-----

[1] There’s things people understand between each other and

don't need to expose it or say it out loud.

# Chapter 207:

## Looking Forward To Tomorrow

“Isn’t that it? Lei Yu has publicly announced that he joined Martial Sect, and has come forward as the Deputy Chief of Martial Sect. As an outsider, he’s already tilted the scales of the four major forces. Now that Martial Sect has Lei Yu, the consequences for the rest of us would be disastrous! This vile bastard is kissing ass to climb up the ranks!”

“Shut your mouth!” Lei Yun Tian finally couldn’t tolerate it, a powerful momentum gushed out

making the Elder feel difficulty breathing and fear showing in his eyes. Only now did he realize his previous words were a bit too much.

“Master, I...” Cold sweat was dripping off the Elder.

Lei Yun Tian coldly humphed, “You dare to say that little Yu, who possesses the purest blood in our family as a vile bastard?”

“Master, I... I didn’t mean it like that. I was merely...”

“Enough! As an Elder, you’re too selfish and too short-sighted. Little Yu was correct when he said you weren’t fit to be in your current position!” Lei Yun Tian angrily

interrupted.

“You want to abolish my Elder’s position?” The Elder couldn’t remain calm anymore, there’s no way he would allow anyone to threaten his position. “My position as Elder was appointed by the previous leader of the family, could it be that you want to abolish it?”

“Are you threatening me?” Lei Yun Tian narrowed his eyes. “In this family, I’m still the MASTER!” Once his voice faded, Lei Yun Tian once again released his powerful momentum, a pressure that only a Sixth Order Warrior could have. This was also a momentum that no more than five people in this country were able to resist.



“You...!”

Lei Yun Tian never imagined that this Elder would only have his sights on his own grandson, and completely disregard the benefits of the overall family.

“This whole matter was clearly instigated by Du Chang Hai when he insidiously poisoned Shangguan Xi Hong. Little Yu is merely answering in response to the aggression based on his own measured strength. Do you really think he cares about the Deputy Chief position? Kissing ass to rise in rank? Are you getting more confused as you get older? Our Lei family has asked him multiple times to return to the clan but has he agreed? Could our Lei family be

not as good as Martial Sect? Did you think with little Yu's current strength, he's unable to sit as the Master of the family? This is too laughable!"

The Elder exhaled heavily, "Master, please cease your anger, it was all my fault. It's all due to little Yún's matters that created the confusion in my mind. I shouldn't have contradicted you so please forgive me!"

"Fine, let's not continue with this subject. There's still one thing that's keep my hopes alive with little Yu. He is definitely the true candidate that will bring our Lei family to the peak of its glory. If possible, I still hope that he returns to us. Regarding their confrontation

against the Ming Sect, I fully support little Yu. Go ahead and make some preparation, and spread the news. I'm pretty sure Celestial Court will quickly follow the flow of things." Lei Yun Tian didn't want to ruin all decorum with the Elder. After all, he was a veteran of his position and had very high prestige in the family. If he was really to abolish the Elder's position because of a person that was kicked out of the family, most likely a portion of the family will stand up in resentment. Lei Yun Tian had to be careful with his decisions.

With the Lei family's position on this matter, Celestial Court quickly gave their response to Shangguan Xi Hong and Lei Yu.

“This is great!” Lei Yu smiled.

“Now we wait and see what movements Du Chang Hai will make.” Shangguan Xi Hong faintly said. His greatest concern was the decision of the Ming Sect, but no matter the result, it cannot escape the hostility between their two forces.

“Bastard! This f\*cken bastard Lei Yu!” Du Chang Hai was holding Martial Sect’s Letter of Challenge, a method that hadn’t been used for a long time. Once a Letter of Challenge was issued, there was no turning back. Since Du Chang Hai created such an incident, then he had to face this on his own.

“Sect Leader, do we accept this or

reject it?" A person dressed in black asked from the side.

"Humph! Reject it? How can we maintain our Ming Sect's face if we reject it? Do you think I would be afraid of Lei Yu whose hair hasn't been fully grown out yet? [1] Reply and say that three days later, I will personally appear for the battle!" Du Chang Hai completely crushed the letter in his hand that not even a trace of it was left behind.

Standing alone in the room, Du Chang Hai looked out the window at the cars travelling down the road similar to ants crawling in line. Du Chang Hai muttered to himself: "I refuse to believe Lei Yu really has that much capability! He only cultivated for a short few years. If it

weren't for some wondrous encounter, how could he improve so fast?" Heavily sighing, "If I had known he would reach such heights today, I wouldn't have been so soft-hearted twenty something years ago!" [2]

It was expected that Du Chang Hai would accept the challenge since the Ming Sect's face would be completely thrown out if he didn't. Back then when Lei Yu defeated Cai Zhong, the prestige of Ming Sect had already been greatly reduced. Now that someone directly challenged the Sect Leader, how could they refuse?

Furthermore, if the Ming Sect didn't accept the challenge, how would they explain their actions made

against Shangguan Xi Hong? If they didn't give a proper explanation, it's believed that Celestial Court and the Lei family will follow the flow in helping Martial Sect denounce the Ming Sect. This will cause the whole Ming Sect to fall into dire straits as it will become difficult for them to further establish themselves in the future.

The calculating mind of Du Chang Hai is considered not too bad. If he could kill Lei Yu, not only could he demonstrate the Ming Sect's power, no one else will continue asking about the poisoning incident. It was Lei Yu who issued the challenge, and life or death is predestined with no one to blame. Even if the Lei family or Martial Sect is dissatisfied with the outcome, they still couldn't

openly collaborate against the Ming Sect.

-----

After everything was settled, Lei Yu actually looked quite relaxed. Shangguan Xi Hong was worried for him; worried that if Lei Yu meets his demise, the ending will be difficult to remedy. Nuo Hu and others were worried about Lei Yu's safety as well, especially Ai Er.

In the eyes of everyone, Du Chang Hai was a dignified Sect Leader of Ming Sect, a super expert at the Sixth Devilish Realm. Can Lei Yu really deal with this type of expert?

“Little Yu, why don't you look worried at all?” Nuo Hu anxiously



asked.

“What’s there to be worried about? Should I be scared that Du Chang Hai will rush over and immediately kill me right now?” Asked Lei Yu as he and Nuo Hu were on the streets eating some fresh meat buns.

“You should know how mysterious those cultivators on the Devil paths are, aren’t you afraid of something unexpected may occur?” Nuo Hu knew that if he tried to persuade Lei Yu to give up the fight would be an impossible thing. But Lei Yu should at least do some last minute training to relieve the concerns of those who care about him right?

“Unexpected things will certainly happen. You should know that

fighting is the best way for me to improve myself. I'm honestly not afraid what will happen during the fight, I'm more afraid after Du Chang Hai dies, how the Ming Sect will seek revenge for him. It looks like... 'Sigh,' it looks like I'll be experiencing those long days ahead of me again." Lei Yu smiled bitterly before taking another bite out of his bun.

"It's really hopeless when dealing with you." Nuo Hu shook his head while his brows were tightly locked together.

Lei Yu had an indifferent facial expression on him. Tomorrow will be the time when the two will duel, by then, whether it was his grandfather's death or the

whereabouts of his mother, the truth will finally reveal itself. Lei Yu was really looking forward to it, or more like he was extremely excited about everything tomorrow.

The following morning, Lei Yu took a bath out of habit. He put on some clean clothes but the difference with today's clothes was that they were more suitable for the large movements of martial arts. As he opened the door to leave, a dozen or so people were already standing out there waiting for him.

# Chapter 208:

## Opening Prelude

This was a very impressive show up: The main family members representing the Shangguan family; the Lei family's master and some of his clan members except for the Elder; and finally not a single person is missing from Nuo Yi Long's family.

"Good morning." Lei Yu greeted them all with a light smile.

Everyone glanced at each other in silence; no one expected Lei Yu would look so leisurely. If this was switched to one of them, or even if the place with switched with

Shangguan Xi Hong, they doubt he would be as casual and carefree as Lei Yu right now.

Everyone then got into these commercial vans and headed towards the stadium.

The streets surrounding the stadium were under martial law. If it weren't for the power of Martial Sect, who else would have such rights in their control?

Lei Yu's arrival and being the person first on scene garnered the attention of everyone in the stadium. People were suddenly discussing with each other, and those that had never seen Lei Yu before were somewhat surprised. "I never imagined the person daring

to challenge Ming Sect's leader would be so young!"

"Right... could it be that he's already at the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior? That's probably impossible!"

"What? You didn't know? You guys are too ill-informed. Not only did Lei Yu destroy the Kou country's Yamaguchi-gumi, he also destroyed Dr. Tony's research base in a Western country. On top of that, the most terrifying thing he did was uproot the Dark Council that had centuries of history behind it. Do you guys still doubt his strength now?"

"That's too unbelievable!"

Lei Yu's arrival won him cheers and applause, but it was the loudest in the direction where the military force of Martial Sect was located.

Lei Yu then quietly sat down at the front of the VIP seating area, and no one went up to disturb him. He then closed his eyes while he waited for the arrival of Ming Sect's leader.

Under such a scene, those extremely excited were not in the low numbers. They were naturally excited because for regular cultivators, they may never encounter an opportunity to witness such events during their lifetime.

The people of Celestial Court looked rather calm. The Elder of

Celestial Court Qing Feng who had appeared in public in the past was sitting firmly next to a middle-aged person. Looking at his face, Qing Feng was very respectful towards this middle-aged person. Needless to say, this person must be the leader of Celestial Court.

As the minutes and seconds passed by, the appointed time was drawing nearer. No one from the Ming Sect had shown up yet, which caused some people start discussing this subject.

“The Ming Sect shouldn’t be afraid of Lei Yu right? How come they still haven’t shown up yet?”

“Impossible!” Someone interjected, “Last time Lei Yu and a Branch



Leader of the Ming Sect fought, the Ming Sect had placed great emphasis on the duel. Now that today's match is between two leader-class people, would the Ming Sect really ignore losing their face and not participate? Impossible, absolutely impossible.”

No one else said anything after considering this. The main parties involved weren't in a hurry, so what reason was there for the spectators to be in a hurry?

While the audience was anxiously waiting, Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes looked towards an entranceway before he slowly stood up. “They’ve arrived!”

Based on Lei Yu's reaction,

everyone glanced at where he was looking.

Lei Yu slightly frowned before thinking to himself: "It looks like the Ming Sect is serious this time. The people they've brought, none are lower than the strength of a Fourth Devilish Realm. Amongst the hundred or so people, they have about twenty who have reached the Fifth Devilish Realm while the rest are at the Fourth Realm. With this makeup of fighters, it would be difficult to imagine what will happen on the outbreak of chaos."

Ming Sect was led in by Du Chang Hai. Even though his height was not as tall as what one would think, no one would dare to look down on the mysterious momentum he gave off.

It's those discreet looking people like him that no one would dare doubt their unfathomable strength.

Without the need of unnecessary words, Du Chang Hai led his people to the seats that were arranged for his Sect. Du Chang Hai remained standing while staring at where Lei Yu was. Although the distance between the two was far, they could still see the anger revealed in each other's eyes.

No one dared to interrupt their staring contest for a period of time. "Sect Leader Du, please." Lei Yu made an inviting hand gesture.

"Humph!" A red aura suddenly sprang up around Du Chang Hai's body. Similar to a bullet, his figure

then flew towards the central area of the huge stadium. Lei Yu didn't remain motionless either. Slightly shifting his foot without using any internal energy, he relied purely on his physical strength to maximize his speed to the limit. This wasn't something anyone was capable of; it required one to train their physical body for long periods of time in order to reach such a stage.

“This Lei Yu is truly not simple; he has reached this level of strength at such a young age. It looks like the winner of this duel today is still up in the air!” The Court Leader's faint and calm tone made people feel that he really was someone that didn't bother with the gossip of the outside world, but his eyes still revealed some surprise in them.

Lei Yu and Du Chang Hai both stood in the middle of the field. They didn't exchange any words with each other because it wasn't the time yet. At this time, Shangguan Xi Hong leaped out and landed in the middle between the two. Using a voice that the spectators in the entire stadium could hear: "Today's duel is a personal matter between Martial Sect and Ming Sect. I would like all the other major forces to please stay at the sidelines and not intervene no matter what happens. Shangguan Xi Hong personally thanks everyone for this."

Shangguan Xi Hong's words made a lot of people snort in contempt at him, but they didn't dare to show it in public. He was the victim of this

incident yet didn't dare to stand out and fight it out with Du Chang Hai; he actually used Lei Yu who was a youngster to go against him. This was the first thing the audience had an issue with. The second was that even though Lei Yu was a member of Martial Sect, the weight of his status was still not enough to challenge Du Chang Hai. They all thought Lei Yu was merely a Deputy Commander of a subsidiary army of Martial Sect, so how can people not find this situation weird?

While many of the audience were puzzled, Shangguan Xi Hong continued by saying: "I hereby declare that Lei Yu will be representing Martial Sect in this fight, as the status of Deputy

Chief!”

“Woa!”

“What?!”

“I didn’t hear it wrong right?!”

The ones that were making all the noise were the regular members of the major forces. As for their leaders, they already knew about this so they didn’t find the situation weird nor were they surprised.

Those that were the most shocked were the leaders of each army group of Martial Sect. Eagle Group’s Xiao Zhang had a very ugly looking face on him right now. He had made so much effort these past years and yet he still couldn’t rise up to such a position. Now Lei Yu, a

youngster in his twenties had actually achieved a status of being under a single person, but above tens of thousands others!

Those elites of Dragon Team under Dragon Group, who used to be at the same status as Lei Yu, were completely shocked. Lei Yu's strength progression had left them all in the dust, and there's no way they could pass him anymore. In their eyes, the look they gave Lei Yu showed that they worshipped him even more at this point, where it fully came from their heart.

What they didn't know was that this whole situation they were witnessing was caused by Lei Yu's own might, which influenced Shangguan Xi Hong's decision. The



elites of Dragon Team believed without a doubt that Lei Yu must be holding onto a treasure as a last resort in this fight.

“This duel disregards life or death, so you two, please get ready!” Leaving the center, Shangguan Xi Hong went over to Lei Yu and patted his shoulder, “Be careful.” Lei Yu nodded to acknowledge the words.

Du Chang Hai had the same idea as Lei Yu; they were going to test their opponent to see how deep their strength was. As for the aces up their sleeves, it was going to be used to throw their opponents off.

Coinciding at the same time, Lei Yu and Du Chang Hai’s body rushed

forth. The two were finally fighting each other. As the two sides both approached each other, the explosion caused by their collision had finally opened the prelude to their duel!

# Chapter 209: Is This All You've Got?

A stream of emotions was going through Lei Yu. In the process of exchanging rapid blows, he was able to feel an enormous and unfathomable pressure from Du Chang Hai's hands. Lei Yu was still able to resist this pressure with his own strength, but compared to his opponent, Du Chang Hai shouldn't be having an easy time. Suddenly, Lei Yu took several steps back and at a critical moment, a stream of lightning with the thickness of a human's thigh shot out towards Du Chang Hai.

“[Detachment] stage’s most powerful esoteric attack!” Lei Yu’s voice was very faint, but it was still clearly heard by Du Chang Hai. The most powerful attack? Then Du Chang Hai decided he had to exert all his strength into his defense in order to resist it.

No one would consider dodging a lightning attack because it was simply too quick, and wanting to avoid it was almost impossible. One can only rely on their own power to take it head on.

An electrical light pierced the air making it vibrate and tremble. Lei Yu stared unblinkingly at his powerful opponent as the light reached him. It took time to test an opponent’s strength, and since

normal attacks couldn't distinguish the difference between their strength, Lei Yu could only rely on using the most powerful attack of the current stage he was at.

With unmatched speeds, the attack was about to land on its target in less than the time it took someone to take a breath of air. The heaven and the earth underwent a change; the originally clear sky started forming dark stormy clouds. The moment that lightning reached its target, the entire earth shook!

“Boom!”

After the loud boom, Du Chang Hai's entire body was covered in a lightning net. At the same time, one could see a red aura wrapped

around his body for protection. Even though the electrical light was constantly attacking like crazy, it was unable to get close to Du Chang Hai's body at all. Thus these two forces of energy were at a stalemate. Lei Yu couldn't move because he had to concentrate on controlling this massive attack which happened to be the first time he has ever released it. On the other hand, Du Chang Hai was being contained by the electrical net and was unable to fight back one bit.

A compelling scene filled with momentum made the entire audience burst out in sounds of amazement. A lightning attack that had armageddon like destructive properties, one must ask has anyone seen such a scene?

Sitting in the VIP section, Lei Yun Tian was going through an emotional turmoil. His mind kept repeating these same words: “He is truly a descendant of my Lei family! I completely messed up that day...!”

In the area where the members of Celestial Court were sitting at.

“Qing Feng, do you think you can withstand the attack Lei Yu just unleashed?” The Court Leader asked.

The expert Qing Feng whom had already reached the realm of a Sixth Grade Celestial shook his head in shock, “If such an attack struck my body, I’m afraid I wouldn’t be able to resist it for more than half a minute!” At first he wasn’t

optimistic with Lei Yu's chances, but now it had completely changed. Lei Yu's strength has reached the peak, a place that he could not go beyond. Moreover, possessing such a strong and unique attack truly made a person sigh in inferiority.

If one were to say Lei Yu had tyrannical strength, then Du Chang Hai wasn't weak either. Being able to fully resist the lightning energy under Lei Yu's control, and that it seemed his defenses wouldn't be broken through for the time being; just this point alone has gained Du Chang Hai the admiration of many viewers.

The two of them were comparable in strength, so this created a situation where victory would be



decided on which of the two would have a better quality weapon on them.

Time went on longer making the atmosphere of the stadium have a rather oppressive feeling to it. The sky was getting darker and those in the audience who were originally quite chatty were now in a somber mood, as they held their breath awaiting the outcome.

The bodies of Lei Yu and Du Chang Hai had begun to tremble as bean sized sweat drops dripped down constantly. It was obvious that the two couldn't hold on much longer, and the audience was just waiting to see who would be the last man standing.

It was at this time that Lei Yu roared out: "Break!"

"Boom!"

"Crack!"

After several ear-piercing explosions, the lightning net that Lei Yu had surrounded Du Chang Hai with suddenly burst apart. The dazzling bright light made everyone with less than a Fifth Order's strength tightly shut their eyes.

The power of the explosion was extremely furious; the momentum that blasted out made the clothes on the audience start flapping. After seeing the light disperse, they could finally see what happened to Du Chang Hai.

The clothes of this Ming Sect Leader had been blasted apart by Lei Yu to a pathetic state. His hair had become puffy and his face was covered in gray ash that made him quite awkward looking.

The current image of Du Chang Hai caused a lot of laughter in the audience. “Lei Yu! “You’re dead meat!” Du Chang Hai was completely enraged. Ever since he had become a Sect Leader, he had never suffered such insult before, so how can he not be angry? A huge wind blade suddenly left Du Chang Hai’s hand as it rapidly shot towards Lei Yu. Even though the speed of the wind cannot be compared to the speed of lightning, it was still quite fast. At the last second, Lei Yu firmly waved his

hand in the air and a lightning net cover his hand like a glove. Once the wind blade arrived in front of Lei Yu, one could only see his arm shake. Relying on his strong body and his skeletal structure filled with metallic properties, Lei Yu completely dispersed the wind blade. Except, there was a trail of blood on four of his fingers as it continually dripped onto the ground. Lei Yu hadn't made a counterattack yet but Du Chang Hai had already started his follow-up attack. A pair of eyes filled with hatred was locked onto Lei Yu, and at this moment, Du Chang Hai's heart suddenly shuddered once. His eyes underwent a physical change that satisfied the condition of his next attack. Once Lei Yu was able to observe closely, it was already too

late. When it came to speed, there's no way Du Chang Hai can be compared to Lei Yu. But when it came to comparing with a cultivator on the Devil's path, Lei Yu lacked the secretive and mysterious arts they had.

The distance of the two became closer.

Du Chang Hai roared out once before his speed was pushed to the limit. Like a gust of wind, he rushed forth making Lei Yu react on reflex to confront him head on. There was no need in trying to escape the attack because that's not how super experts fought. They relied on their own body's physique and agility in order to create the strongest defense.

Suddenly, Lei Yu saw a fearsome looking expression. Du Chang Hai had narrowed his eyes, and the previous subtle changes had now revealed itself. After seeing his mouth form a sneer, a dark light flashed on his back. Before Lei Yu could react, the black light flew out in a straight line cleaving down in-between the two.

Lei Yu yelled to himself: "Not good!"

But it was half a second too late. Once the black light flashed by, the two suddenly separated themselves and pulled away over ten meters.

Starting from the base of his ears, down the face until the chest area, a horrifying wound appeared on Lei Yu. Blood was pouring out like

crazy as if it didn't cost any money. Lei Yu tightened his body and sealed some blood vessels using his internal energy. It was only after that did his blood stop gushing out.

Lifting his head up to look at Du Chang Hai, Lei Yu could now see that he was holding onto a machete that was half a meter long. The eyes of Du Chang Hai had a smile that he couldn't hide, as if his victory was already determined.

Ai Er covered her mouth while her eyes were filled with fear. The appearance of Lei Yu had almost made her collapse. Nuo Hu on the side tried to comfort Ai Er by holding her shoulders, but it looked like it wouldn't be that easy.

This fight was something that cannot be stopped. And wasn't this duel initiated by the currently injured Lei Yu to begin with?

Lei Yu lightly exhaled before saying the words that made everyone shocked: "Is this all you've got?"



# Chapter 210: How Is This Possible?

Du Chang Hai was slightly stunned before sneering: "There's no need to force yourself, for it'll only speed up the time of your death!"

"Oh? You made one attack and could already see the conclusion of the fight? That's really too funny!" Lei Yu stared in anger before a powerful aura quickly surrounded him. His purple internal energy mixed with white starry dots was similar to waves as it surged around him like crazy. Lei Yu then roared out: "Thirty-six Lunar Star's fifth form!"

A large and terrifying fist aura flew straight at Du Chang Hai's direction. The huge momentum it carried along with it made Du Chang Hai's face filled with shock. It looks like this attack had already surpassed the level of power that Lei Yu was supposed to have.

Even though the surface area of the attack was quite small, the momentum and power behind it was not any less than Lei Yu's previous lightning attack.

As if it was able to sweep all obstacles aside, the surface of the ground exploded as the attack swept by forming a deep trench. Whipping up torrential winds, the attack locked onto its target which was the complacent looking Du

Chang Hai who had now become shocked.

“Waaah!”

The spectators in their seats didn't even have time to be surprised when the attack had already arrived in front of Du Chang Hai. Now everyone was watching on how he was going to resist it.

Avoid it? Obviously not. Block it head on? How was he going to resist such a powerful attack?

As a last resort, Du Chang Hai switched the machete to his left hand and his right-hand formed a hand seal. “Scorching Sun! Break!”

“Boom!”

“Whoosh!”

When everyone thought that Du Chang Hai would be unable to resist it, a round shield suddenly appeared in his hand. The entire shield was yellow, and it was large enough to protect his whole upper body.

One could see Du Chang Hai was using all his strength to resist, as he was pushed back at least a dozen meters by the impact of Lei Yu’s extremely powerful attack. His two legs left behind two trench lines on the ground, and only when the power began to weaken did Du Chang Hai finally stop sliding backwards.

“This...!” Lei Yu was shocked. He

knew that Du Chang Hai's machete wasn't something ordinary, and now he also had a shield? This was too unbelievable!

"Haha, hahaha, hahahaha...." One could only hear Du Chang Hai and his burst of laughter at the center of the field. The sound of laughter started from soft to loud, as if he was just too ecstatic.

"Lei Yu! It's time for your death!" Du Chang Hai lowered his shield and switched hands with the machete. He then used the machete to strike at the shield before coldly saying: "Crescent-moon Blade and the Scorching Sun Shield, these are my Ming Sect's supreme treasures. You alone are more than enough for me to slaughter, so let's see how

you're going to beat me today!"

Shangguan Xi Hong suddenly sucked in a cool breath. These two weapons were indeed mentioned in legends, but who knew that it was in the hands of the Ming Sect.

Combining sun 日 and the moon 月 characters, didn't that spell the word Ming 明? (As in Ming Sect)

"It looks like it will be difficult for Lei Yu to escape this crisis."

Celestial Court's Leader shook his head in regret. Once the weapons were revealed, it became an indisputable fact that Du Chang Hai was pretty much invincible now.

Shangguan Xi Hong also heavily sighed, "I didn't expect this, I really

didn't expect this at all!"

In Shangguan Xi Hong's opinion, Lei Yu's first lightning attack was already extremely strong yet it was still broken apart by Du Chang Hai. That didn't matter since he believed Lei Yu still had an ace up his sleeves. Indeed, Lei Yu then released a second attack which had such a strong momentum that it didn't lose out to the first one. But the results were that it was resisted by Du Chang Hai's use of the Scorching Sun Shield. Looks like the conclusion of this fight was very clear, Lei Yu was definitely going to lose!

"Laugh at your own mother, b\*tch!"

The smile on Du Chang Hai's face

froze, and the eyes of everyone in the audience almost popped out of their sockets. There were even some in the audience that were looking all over for where that voice came from.

Lei Yu patted off the dirt his previous attack had showered him with. He then said: "You think by bringing out a turtle's shell and you've won? Funny, way too funny!"

Qing Feng who was originally sitting crooked in regret suddenly sat up filled with spirit. "There's still more to the show!"

The brows of the Celestial Court's Leader twitched as a slight smile appeared on his face.



“Could... could it be that Lei Yu still had something up his sleeves he hasn’t revealed yet?” Shangguan Xi Hong felt his heart skip a beat as he stared unblinkingly at Lei Yu hoping something would appear.

As for the section where the Lei family was at, Lei Yun Tian was already excited beyond words. The hand reaching for a cup of water was trembling, and he was unaware even when the water in the cup spilled out. “Little Yu, you... what other shocking thing are you going to keep showing me? Do you really want me to die of regret until you’re satisfied?” The current Lei Yun Tian really hated himself for listening to the Elder’s words back then, and also blamed himself for not having a firm enough will which allowed a

peerless genius to leave the Lei family.

“You’re too arrogant!” Du Chang Hai then coldly humphed, “I refuse to believe you have any more moves to take out!”

His mouth said those words but Du Chang Hai was ready for something big again. Needless to say, Lei Yu’s previous two attacks were naturally powerful and if Du Chang Hai made the slightest mistake, he would have been obliterated into ashes.

Lei Yu calmly wiped the blood stain from his face. “Arrogant? Aren’t you the arrogant one? You’re holding a turtle shell and think of yourself as invincible?”

As he was saying this, a flash was seen on Lei Yu's hand and a sword with a length of 1.5 meters appeared.

The audience was suddenly in an uproar, "He really had an ace up his sleeves!"

"It's now hard to tell who would win or lose!"

"It should be him! Lei Yu's performance today was too incredible and shocking!"

It was at this time, the cup that Lei Yun Tian was holding fell out of his hand with a "dong dong" sound. His eyeballs were staring at the sword Lei Yu had in his hand, while everyone around him were looking

at Lei Yun Tian after hearing the cup drop.

They only saw him point at the direction of Lei Yu and say: “Sky Devouring Sword! How could that be?! How could that be?!”

Lei Yu slightly turned around, “What? The Lei family’s master recognized this thing?”

“No... it’s impossible! How could it be the Sky Devouring Sword! Impossible! Absolutely impossible!” Lei Yun Tian was now completely crazy. He had seen the image of the Sky Devouring Sword in the family’s ancient scrolls multiple times. There’s no need to even mention the power it contained. According to the rumors, many members of

the Lei family had perished while trying to get their hands on this supreme weapon, yet how could it appear in Lei Yu's possession right now?

"What's impossible about this? The heavens pitied me and gifted me the Sky Devouring Sword. Can't that happen?" Said Lei Yu with a sneer.

"Sky Devouring Sword? What is that?" Shangguan Xi Hong was also a bit surprised.

Over in the area of Celestial Court, the Court Leader and the Elder started whispering to each other as their eyes fell upon the sword in Lei Yu's hand.

“The Sky Devouring Sword is a supreme treasure of the Lei family, why... why would it be in your hands? Hasn't it been missing for hundreds of years already?” Lei Yun Tian still couldn't believe his own eyes, but once his words came out, it made everyone beyond shocked. A treasure that had been missing for hundreds of years would actually appear in Lei Yu's hand? This was definitely something difficult for people to believe, especially someone like Lei Yun Tian who was very knowledgeable about its history.

“Cut the bullshit!” Du Chang Hai roared in anger. “Even if you have the whatever Sky Dogfart Devouring Sword, I'll still rip you apart into a thousand pieces!”

The main protagonist should have been Lei Yu and him, but now everyone's attention was focused on Lei Yu's figure, making him feel like he lost face and wasn't taken seriously. And now everyone was discussing the fame of this Sky Devouring Sword which seemed to overwhelm his own Crescent-moon Blade and Scorching Sun Shield.

# Chapter 211: You Must Die

“Since you want to die, I might as well send you along.” Lei Yu smiled as he turned around and looked at Du Chang Hai who had an awkward look on him. “Let me experience the power of the so called supreme treasures in your hands!”

Du Chang Hai had the Crescent-moon Blade and Scorching Sun Shield so Lei Yu was unwilling to be left behind. That day with Romon’s words, Lei Yu didn’t have to return the Ares boots to the Vatican, so today was the perfect opportunity for him to show it off.



People only saw a flash of golden light before seeing a pair of golden boots appear on Lei Yu's feet. With the addition of the long sword and the wound on his body, his manly momentum overwhelmed all the women in the audience. Even though they weren't ordinary people themselves, Lei Yu's achievements had become indisputable making every woman go crazy for.

"How could another thing appear now? Just how many hidden items does Lei Yu have on him?"

Shangguan Xi Hong was completely subdued by Lei Yu's surprises; it looked like the real showdown had just started.

With the addition of the Ares boots,

the speed of Lei Yu's figure had already reached the stage where the eyes were unable to catch up with.

"You have your defense while I have my speed. Let me warn you beforehand, I have a lot of experience dealing with Sixth Order experts with lots of defense!" Lei Yu laughed before his figure disappeared only leaving behind an afterimage.

"The speed of lightning!"

"Oh heavens!"

A killing aura was suddenly boiling out of Du Chang Hai's body. A dark red aura wrapped around his body as he was prepared to meet another of Lei Yu's tyrannical attack. Even

so, Du Chang Hai was fully confident in himself by relying on the two supreme treasures in his hands.

The ground around Du Chang Hai suddenly began to quake, and Lei Yu's figure was merely a black blur before he immediately arrived in front of him.

“Clang!”

“Clang!”

Several sounds of metal colliding were heard. Lei Yu could feel the Crescent-moon Blade in Du Chang Hai's hand gave him an indescribable pressure that poured into him. The feeling seemed very familiar but he just couldn't quite

recall it at this moment. As for Du Chang Hai, he wasn't having an easy time himself. Lei Yu's Sky Devouring Sword contained a large amount of lightning power within itself, making his arms begin to have a numb feeling. If it weren't for him being careful and relying on his internal energy to resist it, it's possible the weapons he was holding would have fallen to the ground already.

“Ahh!”

Lei Yu fiercely retreated and assumed a defensive stance. Since his speed held the advantage, would he be afraid of Du Chang Hai's counter-attack? In reality, Lei Yu's long-range attack was the most powerful and the hardest to resist,

this was actually his greatest trump card.

The remaining internal energy inside Lei Yu allowed him to release one more fifth form of the Thirty-six Lunar Stars technique. The power behind the bare fist attack he used was already terrifying. Now that he had a weapon in hand, it would definitely be even more tyrannical!

“What? You’re scared now?” Du Chang Hai coldly sneered before his figure quickly rushed over. He had already misinterpreted the reason for Lei Yu’s retreat, making him bound to suffer some type of serious injury.

“Thirty! Six! Lunar! Stars! Fifth!

Form!” Lei Yu roared out every single word which was clearly heard by everyone.

Du Chang Hai suddenly panicked and increased his speed, wanting to reach Lei Yu before the attack was released. But how could his speed be compared to Lei Yu’s?

Everyone once again saw purple internal energy mixed with scattered starry dots appearing around Lei Yu.

“Ooh! Lei Yu wants to release that previous attack again!” Qing Feng exclaimed in surprise.

“It looks like this attack will really decide who would come out victorious right?” Shangguan Xi

Hong had both his fists clenched; apparently revealing he was excited to the extreme.

Lei Yun Tian's emotions were all over the place. The first reason being Lei Yu's exceptional performance; being able to fight head-to-head with Ming Sect's Leader Du Chang Hai, there's probably no more than five people in the entire Tenglong country capable of it. This alone made him beyond regretful of ever kicking Lei Yu out. The second being the appearance of the Sky Devouring Sword. This was an item that had been missing for a long time, and no matter how he racked his brains, he couldn't figure out how and why it would be in Lei Yu's possession. Lei Yun Tian would naturally not

believe Lei Yu's absurd reason.

“Go!”

After the yell was heard, a completely different looking attack was released. This happens to be Lei Yu's first attempt at releasing the Thirty-six Lunar Star's technique through a weapon. He had no clue on the difference in power between having a weapon or not, but when it came to this powerful sword, Lei Yu wasn't worried about its performance.

Just like a star streaking across the sky, a light beyond sharp slashed through the air emitting a harsh shrieking noise.

“So powerful!”



All those at or above the Fifth Order Warrior stage exclaimed out loud in unison. Even the faces of Shangguan Xi Hong and other super experts at the Sixth Order became pale. With such a powerful and sharp attack, there was probably no one here that could withstand it. Was this a power that someone as young as Lei Yu was capable of releasing?

“Whoosh!”

“Ding!”

“Click!”

These three different sounds had made everyone mute as they stared at Du Chang Hai in surprise.

Before Lei Yu’s attack was released,

Du Chang Hai already knew he wouldn't be able to reach him on time. Therefore, him rushing forward had been changed to retreating backwards like crazy. While it was impossible for him to avoid the attack, at felt he could at least mitigate the damage by creating distance from Lei Yu.

“Agghh...!” Du Chang Hai hysterically roared out. His upper and lower jaws were clenched tightly together while blood started flowing out of his mouth. One could see his single hand could no longer resist the attack, so the other hand holding the Crescent-moon Blade was reinforced behind the Scorching Sun Shield as both hands tried to resist. This time, Du Chang Hai wasn't like last time where he

was pushed back because it was no longer impact force, but a terrifying cutting force!

“Crack!”

“No!”

A heart-wrenching and piercing cry was heard. The Scorching Sun Shield in Du Chang Hai's hand could no longer handle Lei Yu's attack; it actually split into two halves before falling to the ground. As for Lei Yu's attack, it didn't stop and kept penetrating forward as if it was a tiger that had just broken out of its cage.

“Whoosh!”

It was merely a faint sound before Du Chang Hai's left arm was

directly cut off at the shoulder area. Just like the two halves of the Scorching Sun Shield, his arm then fell to the ground.

Silence, not even a crow or a sparrow was heard!

There were over a thousand people in the audience yet everyone's mouth was agape. Some even forgot to breathe as if they had forgotten they were still alive.

The only people here that was capable of moving was perhaps them two. One of them had a face filled with pain and was almost driven to the point of insanity – Du Chang Hai. He quickly gathered his internal energy at the wound on the shoulder before sealing some

acupuncture points to prevent more blood from flowing out.

As for the other person, he was standing at a distance over 100 meters away. His mouth was gasping for air, his body swaying as if about to fall, and his legs look like they wouldn't be able to support the body any longer – Lei Yu.

Lei Yu had released his most powerful attack twice now, but Du Chang Hai had only lost an arm while still retaining the ability to continue fighting. On the other hand, Lei Yu was done since he had no more strength and his internal energy was almost exhausted.

“You must die! You must die!” Du Chang Hai's eyes were now

bloodshot. Combined with his menacing looks and his blood covered mouth, he truly looked like a devil incarnate at this moment.

“You should’ve died twenty something years ago. It was all because of that woman! It was that woman! I’m going to kill you! I’m going to hack you into meat paste!” Du Chang Hai had completely lost control as he took one step at a time towards Lei Yu.

# Chapter 212: The Last Ace

Lei Yu's body suddenly trembled as he widened his eyes. "What woman? What woman are you referring to?"

Du Chang Hai's words were very strange which made Lei Yu feel like he remembered something. Twenty something years ago? Should've died? It was that woman?

"Humph!" Take your stupid question to hell along with you!" Du Chang Hai obviously ignored Lei Yu's question.

Everyone watched as Du Chang Hai

got closer and closer towards Lei Yu. The distance was less than ten meters and everyone's heart felt like it had risen to their throat. It was obvious that Du Chang Hai was not going to let Lei Yu off. Lei Yu was indeed very powerful, but because Du Chang Hai was able to narrowly avoid death, the person about to face a disaster had changed to Lei Yu.

Lei Yun Tian could no longer stay silent and suddenly stood up. He wanted to rush out within that second but it was at this moment, someone made a move from the seats of Celestial Court. Before Lei Yu Tian had rushed out, Celestial Court's Leader had already arrived in front and blocked his path. "Brother Lei, doing this doesn't



seem appropriate right? Before the duel, it was already announced that life or death was up to fate, so you have no right to intervene!”

“But he’s my son!” Lei Yun Tian sharply retorted.

“According to my knowledge, Lei Yu was kicked out of the family seven years ago. Up until now, he still hasn’t returned to the Lei family right?”

The two hadn’t finished conversing yet when they heard Lei Yu say in a voice that everyone could hear:

“Even if I die...!” After gasping for air a bit, “I only want to know the whereabouts of my mother. Also, why did you have to kill my grandfather?!”

Lei Yu's words caught everyone by surprise as they held their breath. At this time, it was clear that Lei Yun Tian started trembling while Du Chang Hai's accelerating body became startled.

"You know about the matters of your grandfather?" Du Chang Hai was angry but didn't lose his ability to reason. One could see this by him previously sealing his acupuncture points to stem the flow of blood before making other moves. And he was now surprised at the questions Lei Yu had asked.

"That's right! He knows about it!" Under the eyes of everyone, Nuo Yi Long stood up.

"Nuo Yi Long?" Du Chang Hai

looked at him in disdain, “I don’t know how you found out, but I can tell you for certain that his grandfather was killed by me, in addition to that b\*tch! What a cheap piece of life, she actually committed suicide because of a bastard like you!” After saying that, Du Chang Hai flipped his hand and a jade pendant appeared. Lei Yu’s eyes were suddenly round and wide.

“Shut your mouth!” Lei Yu was completely enraged. Once he heard his grandfather was definitely killed by Du Chang Hai, and he also mentioned a b\*tch, Lei Yu was able to determine he was speaking about his mother.

“Take it, this is your b\*itch of a mother’s property. Now it can

accompany you together to see your mother in hell.”

Lei Yu’s eyes started getting misty while he wanted to burst into tears. But this wasn’t the time because he hadn’t taken care of this true enemy in front of him yet. He mustn’t look weak, especially in front of his enemy!

“What I hate is that I don’t have the ability, or else I would personally cut your into thousands of pieces!” Nuo Yi Long said this through clenched teeth.

“Uncle Nuo? What is going on?” Lei Yu stabbed his sword into the ground to support his balance, before asking in a very calm voice.

“You will understand very soon.”  
Nuo Yi Long then looked at Du Chang Hai, “Twenty something years ago, do you remember that you killed Liu Xiao Yue’s junior sister Du Ling Er?”

“You are her...?!” Du Chang Hai was suddenly surprised.

“That’s right! Ling Er is my wife!”

“Humph! With her abilities, she wanted to save Liu Xiao Yue?  
Simply dreaming!”

“Because you were coveting for a beauty twenty something years ago, you made Ling Er’s senior sister, whom is little Yu’s mother Liu Xiao Yue, go through hellish torment by your despicable extortion. Do you

acknowledge this?" Nuo Yi Long asked in anger.

"That's right, so what? Can you kill me?" Du Chang Hai's face was still filled with disdain.

"In order to safeguard little Yu's life, she had to bow down to your demands and be under house arrest. While Ling Er was trying to save her senior sister, she was then killed by you. Everything is still fresh in my memory... I'm too weak... I'm too weak! I've already been a coward for two decades, if I can't kill you today, I would rather die together with little Yu than to drag out this ignoble existence!" After saying this, Nuo Yi Long was prepared to rush out into the field.

“Uncle Nuo, don’t come over!” Lei Yu cried out. After hearing Nuo Yi Long’s words, things had become very clear and the reason for his grandfather’s death was apparent.

Nuo Yi Long had given Lei Yun Tian a lot of face today by not mentioning his name at all under everyone’s gaze.

“I cannot allow you to die alone!”  
Said Nuo Yi Long as his voice trembled.

Ai Er, Nuo Hu, and Nuo Yi Feng standing to the side couldn’t accept what was about to happen, but they didn’t know what they could say. Ai Er could only cry since Lei Yu was now in a very dangerous situation and it seemed like he had no hope

of staying alive.

“If you want to die, how easy would that be? I’ll just slash you once to end your life!” Du Chang Hai coldly laughed.

Lei Yu once again gasped for breath before coldly saying: “I’m afraid the person that will be dying today... will be you!”

“What did you say?!” Du Chang Hai was now cautious.

“What?! Could Lei Yu still...” Shangguan Xi Hong couldn’t believe what he had just heard.

“No, that’s impossible. It’s impossible for him to make any more moves at this point.” Qing Feng shook his head as he sighed.



He was thinking Lei Yu was merely bluffing right now.

“Master of the Lei family, if I’m lucky enough to survive, I hope that you tell me in full detail of what happened twenty something years ago!” This was the issue Lei Yu was most concerned about.

Lei Yun Tian’s face twitched a bit, but agreed to the request. Did Lei Yu really have some means he hadn’t revealed yet?

During the time when he was conversing, Lei Yu was quickly restoring his internal energy. Even if it was a tiny bit, it was still capable of activating the Ares boots allowing Lei Yu to retreat over a hundred meters away. This was

already enough! Lei Yu decided to use the last insurance he had, Lei Sect's third generation Sect Leader's treasure – Heavenly Thunder Bead!

“Did you think you still had hope of surviving? Truly too funny!” Right after saying that, Du Chang Hai had already rushed forward. He didn't want to give Lei Yu enough time to really bring out whatever fearsome thing he had.

In an instant, Lei Yu mustered whatever left of his internal energy and the Heaven Devouring Sword disappeared. His figure had already disappeared from the spot! Too fast, it was simply too fast! Once Lei Yu reappeared, he was already another hundred meters away from Du Chang Hai.

Lei Yu with his usual good habit of leaving a trace amount of internal energy had now drained everything. That last slither of internal energy he hid inside a meridian was also completely used up as he injected it into a transparent bead filled with explosive power that had suddenly appeared in his hand.

“Everyone look! What’s that in his hand?”

“I don’t know! Could it be Lei Yu’s real hidden ace?”

That’s right; Lei Yu had no more strength to fight on. He was now using his last chance by struggling to throw out the Heavenly Thunder Bead. When that last slither of internal energy injected into the

bead was about to break its connection with him, Lei Yu detonated the bead.

# Chapter 213: Xiao Zhang Explodes

The sky shook and the ground trembled! A dense flood of lightning was bombarding the central area of the stadium!

Even for the surrounding people in the spectating area, all their hair stood on its end.

The furious and terrifying power made the audience feel suffocated; the light of the lightning was even brighter than daylight making them unable to fully open their eyes. Even those experts at the Sixth Order were in a similar situation, the energy of the impact had even

caused them to feel a hint of fear welling up in their hearts. This was a power of Armageddon proportions!

Lei Yu's worst fear didn't happen. Even though this Heavenly Thunder Bead contained an unimaginable amount of power, the surface area of its attack didn't extend too far out. Otherwise, everyone here today would not have a chance of surviving.

At the edge of the area where the lightning was bombarding, Lei Yu sat on the ground attempting to absorb this powerful energy currently being released. But however hard he tried, he wasn't able to extract the energy into his own body. He then reluctantly said:

“What a pity!”

Presently, the only one able to see what exactly was happening at the center of the field was Lei Yu. He could clearly see that Du Chang Hai was being wrapped up by a powerful lightning energy. From time to time, a stream of lightning would whip his body and no matter how much Du Chang Hai tried, he wasn't able to free himself from the powerful lightning induced suction force that kept him at the center of the field.

“Swish!” Du Chang Hai's hair started burning from the lightning bombardment.

“Bzzzt!” The lightning had now struck him in the eyes creating two

black holes rendering him unable to see anything.

“Bzzzt, bang, bzzzt!” After these three loud strikes, the lightning bombardment had already mutilated Du Chang Hai’s body to the point where blood no longer flowed out. One could only smell something similar to meat being cooked.

No matter how painfully he screamed, the overwhelming sounds of lightning striking had completely covered his voice.

The surrounding area of the stadium was already under Martial Law, yet cars a few miles away had stopped and turned off their engines, while pedestrians stopped



walking and looked over. Like a huge firework display, the white lightning net stayed suspended in the air as it continuously struck the ground. This scene was too incredible and made the people think that this world was coming to an end!

At the edge of the lightning net, it was almost unbearable for Lei Yu to continue watching. But since this was his enemy; the villain that forced the death of his mother; the beast who killed his grandfather; Lei Yu forced himself to go on watching. He watched as each lightning struck Du Chang Hai, and each part of his flesh becoming charred.

This stream of attack lasted for a

full two minutes before the lightning gradually dispersed. Fortunately, there was no rain or any electric conductors around or else Du Chang Hai wouldn't be the only person suffering today.

Once the lightning dissipated, everyone opened their eyes wide. The landscape of the huge stadium had been completely changed. The green grass no longer existed, even the soil underneath went missing at a depth of a meter. The outcome of this massive attack made the scalp of the audience go numb. Was this the power a human was capable of having?

Nope! No one would dare believe this was possible!

There were only two people on scene that remained calm. The first being the person who caused such a large amount of lightning power – Lei Yu. The second would be Ai Er, who witnessed the catastrophic powers of the ascetic cultivator Romon in the United States. The damage Romon inflicted was a hundred to a thousand times more powerful compared to the current scene.

Many in the audience was trying to look for Du Chang Hai's figure, but realized they couldn't find anything.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth before shakily standing up. Using his last bit of strength, he yelled out: "Ming Sect, it's time to get a new leader!"

“Heavens! Did he... did he really die?!”

“Is he human? Is he even still human?”

Everyone present couldn't believe their eyes, and couldn't believe what they saw had actually happened. Yet this indeed happened, and the most powerful proof of it was the devastation of the stadium's field.

“Branch Leader Zhao, what should we do now?” In the area where the Ming Sect sat, a large middle-aged male asked a youth in front of him.

The youth narrowed his eyes and coldly said: “Use this chance to kill him!”

“Understood!”

Like ghosts, the large guy and another middle-aged man rushed down into the field. Under the eyes of everyone, these two were both holding fearsome looking daggers. It appears their intention was to take Lei Yu’s life in the shortest amount of time possible.

Would Lei Yun Tian, Shangguan Xi Hong, and Celestial Court’s two Sixth Grade Celestials turn a blind eye?

One could see several sword auras descend from the sky and trap the two men rushing at Lei Yu. A raging fire in Lei Yun Tian’s hand flew out like a cannon while at the same time, Shangguan Xi Hong utilized

their Shangguan family's secret move to create a weapon out of air pressure. The pressure then compressed the two burning men of the Fifth Demonic Realm into meat patties.

The three forces merely took a second to make their move, and once again showed how powerful a Sixth Order Warrior was. Terrifying, way too terrifying!

Lei Yu nodded, "Thank you."

His butt plopped onto the ground since he no longer had the strength to remain standing. The Lei family glared at the remnants of the Ming Sect. If they dared to make another move, they will inevitably suffer the attacks from all three forces.

Shangguan Xi Hong waved his hand, "Quick, go see how Lei Yu is doing!"

The members of Martial Sect all rushed over, and among them was a person. His eyes were filled with evil intention as a sharp nail started extending from his finger. Like everyone else, he was rapidly rushing towards where Lei Yu was.

Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng weren't prepared for this. Nuo Hu brought Ai Er along so his speed was relatively slower than the others.

Mixed amongst everyone was the Eagle Group's Commander, Xiao Zhang!

His speed became faster and faster, already exceeding everyone else! Once everyone witnessed the changes on his hand, their faces became pale!

“Lei Yu! I’ve told you before that I will pay you back a hundred times for what you did to my son!” Xiao Zhang already distanced himself from everyone. Even if Shangguan Xi Hong or others wanted to make a move, it was already impossible now because the distance between the two were too close!

“Nooo!” Ai Er’s eyes were filled with tears and she screamed hysterically. Of course Xiao Zhang wouldn’t bother with her scream since there was only Lei Yu in his eyes. Even if he was to die here today, he still



had to avenge his son.

Perhaps others cannot understand why he chose to do this. His son Xiao Fei merely had his arm broken, so why would he put his life on the line? The price he is paying right now seems a little too much.

One needs to know that Xiao Zhang had put all his efforts onto his son. Studying abroad, an indoctrination of their family's martial cultivation, all so that his son could replace his position in the future, or maybe even replace the first chair of Martial Sect, the Chief Leader position. But with Lei Yu's appearance, his dreams and fantasies were all for naught which made him completely lose his mind.

Seeing that Lei Yu was now seriously injured, how could he still remain calm? It was impossible for him to encounter another chance like this!

Lei Yu weakly lay there before shouting out: “If you don’t make your move now, I’m afraid I’m really going to die here!”

# Chapter 214: Flying Into The Air

Once Lei Yu said that, Xiao Zhang hesitated a bit and didn't have time to look up. One could only see a huge copper pillar descending from the sky. "Bam!"

Ai Er was immediately filled with joy, "Great!"

Nuo Hu's jaws dropped to the ground while everyone raised their head to look up. Even the Martial Sect members running towards Lei Yu unconsciously stopped to look.

Lei Yun Tian, Nuo Yi Long siblings, Shangguan Xi Hong, Celestial

Court's Leader and Elder, all stared intently in the sky.

No one cared what happened to Xiao Zhang after the huge pillar dropped on top of him. There was no doubt he had already been squashed into a meat patty.

Looking up into the sky, everyone watched as a man descended and landed on top of the huge pillar stabbed into the ground. This man then squatted and looked down at Lei Yu with a smile: "Benefactor, that treasure of yours is really powerful. Even I got a good scare from it!"

"Come on, how can it be compared to your perverse powers?" Lei Yu endured the weakness he felt and

sat up with the support of his trembling arms. After sighing heavily, "If it weren't for your arrival, I'm afraid I would really be finished today. That Xiao Zhang is quite the sinister guy."

This scene looked like it was a joke for the audience. A huge pillar with a full thirty feet in height would suddenly fall from the sky for no reason, and somehow accurately land on top of Xiao Zhang who was about to attack Lei Yu? Moreover, who was this youth? No matter how they looked, this youth wasn't a Tenglong citizen but seemed to have a rather close relationship with Lei Yu.

"We can only say benefactor's fate is blessed!"

That's right! The person that came was none other than Minotaur Linos's son – Romon!

“You came looking for me?”

“Right, there was something important that I forgot to tell you but it seems like it's no longer necessary.” Romon jumped off the pillar and arrived in front of Lei Yu. He then pulled out a small white bottle and poured out a black pill. “This was given by Kalchas. The results aren't bad so give it a try.”

Without any hesitation, Lei Yu popped the pill into his mouth and swallowed since he would never worry if Romon was trying to harm him or not.

“Who is that person?”

“How could he suddenly descend from the skies?”

“Right, and look, he looks to be Lei Yu’s friend!”

The crowd in the audience was in an uproar again. Everyone was surprised with this person showing up and was shocked by the strength he possessed.

Ai Er pulled Nuo Hu along as they reached Lei Yu. Tear stains still showed on her face but her previous fear had been replaced with a smile. “Romon! Thank you!”

“I was just passing through, there’s no need to be so polite.” Romon replied politely.

All the top figures of Tenglong country present naturally heard the conversation between Lei Yu and the newly arrived mysterious figure. It was also obvious that Ai Er knew this figure as well.

Romon had decided to use English for everyone to understand. If he had chosen to use ancient Greek, perhaps Lei Yu would be the only one here to understand him.

Shangguan Xi Hong and the other two major forces' leaders came over as well. When it came to foreign language skills, then the master of the Lei family, Lei Yun Tian would stand out the most since he had businesses all over the world.

“Thank you for saving my child, I



am extremely grateful for your actions!” Said Lei Yun Tian.

Romon waved his hand followed with a surprised look, “He’s your father?” Lei Yu nodded as a reply. Romon then smiled and respectfully greeted Lei Yun Tian, “My Lord!”

Lei Yun Tian was almost lost his footing, “I dare not, I dare not accept that!”

Everyone was very curious towards Romon’s style; both his shoulder bones were locked by hoops and he possessed such a huge copper staff. Anyone would be surprised by his strange appearance.

“Okay, enough of this for now.” Lei

Yu used his strength to gasp for a few more breath of air. “Ai Er, I need to heal and recover so wait for my return. Big brother, please take good care of Ai Er.” Pausing for a bit, Lei Yu turned his attention to Lei Yun Tian. “Master of the Lei family, don’t forget my words. I hope that when I return, you will be able to tell me everything I want to know.”

There were some slight changes to Lei Yun Tian’s expression, but he still heavily nodded.

A smile appeared on Lei Yu, “Ladies and gentlemen, thank you for supporting my duel today. And Uncle Shangguan, please don’t blame me. I only wanted to support my big brother, that’s why I came

up with that rotten idea. The treasure you gifted will not be known by a second person, so you can be rest assured!”

Shangguan Xi Hong smiled, “No need to be so courteous, no worries!” Since Lei Yu possessed such great powers, staying on friendly terms with him would be considered Martial Sect’s blessings. Why would he be angry at Lei Yu over something like this?

“Romon, help me leave this place.”

Romon nodded. His left hand supported Lei Yu while he shook his right hand. Similar to an obedient pet, the huge pillar flew out of the ground and floated beside him. This was when everyone

noticed on the other end of the pillar was the residue of a meat paste.

They only saw Romon suddenly slap at the pillar and the flesh and blood stuck to it fell down from the vibration. The huge pillar was now completely clean without any signs of blood on it.

The two of them then jumped on top of the pillar. Just as everyone was surprised by their actions, they felt a huge momentum strike their bodies. The audience couldn't help but use their arm to shield their eyes. The next moment, two of them rose up into the sky and disappeared into the horizon.

“Who was that person?! Who was

he?!” Celestial Court’s Qing Feng couldn’t bear the curiosity anymore and asked.

“Lei Yu is truly not a simple kid! His friend had actually surpassed the strength of a Sixth Order, this is really too unbelievable! Too incredible!” The words of Celestial Court’s Leader caused everyone’s attention to be focused on him. Apparently, they couldn’t understand the previous scene at all. How did those two just fly into the air like that?

“Court Leader, what did you mean by those words? Are you implying...” Qing Feng’s eyes were now round and wide.

“Correct, it’s an ability that only

those that have surpassed the Sixth Order are capable of – flight!”

“Ah!”

“What?!”

“No way!”

The eyes of the crowd grew larger by the minute, as if their brains didn’t have the capacity to comprehend those words. This was the first time they’ve ever heard of such a thing. Surpassing the Sixth Order? Are they still considered human then?

Nuo Hu suddenly remembered something and turned around in a hurry. “Ai Er! Do you know this Romon person?” Everyone’s ears perked up, hoping to glean some

information from Ai Er. This was especially true for Lei Yun Tian because Lei Yu had shocked him too much today, making him regret his past actions over a million times now!

Ai Er felt very smug as if she had forgotten her previous fear and panic. She then replied: “Yes, of course I know him. I think brother Yu saved him before, that’s why he calls brother Yu ‘benefactor.’ But I don’t know the details of the story.”

“So has this Romon person really attained what the Celestial Court’s Leader mentioned, the strength that surpasses a Sixth Order?” Nuo Hu hurriedly asked again.

Ai Er thought for a bit before

answering: “I’m not too clear on the matters for you cultivators, but according to brother Yu’s words, this should be the case. Romon also mentioned that about ten plus years later, brother Yu should reach that level as well.”

Everyone gasped. Lei Yu will actually achieve such a strength in the future? This was too unbelievable!”

“Oh yeah!” Ai Er thought of something and continued: “Back then, it was Romon who helped out by killing that Dark something Council’s Blood Emperor. Also, everyone remembers the devastation when brother Yu killed Du Chang Hai right? The damage you all saw was less than one



percent of Romon's attack power!"

"What?!"

"WHAT...?!"

# Chapter 215: The Dragon Vein's Location

Everyone present felt their scalps go numb. Was Ai Er really telling the truth?

“Ai Er, please stop joking with us. How can there be such a strong existence in this world?” Nuo Hu's voice was actually trembling a bit.

“Didn't you watch the news? It previously mentioned a town in Idaho had disappeared and turned into cliffs and canyons. This wasn't some geological change, it was all caused by Romon, but of course no

one would suspect this was man-made.”

Another outcry was heard in the crowds...

-----

“Where are you taking me? Just find me any quiet place so I can recover.” Asked Lei Yu.

“When I was coming to Tenglong country, I noticed a strange place that was filled with a strong momentum. Perhaps this place would be good for your recovery and for cultivating; I’ll take you there to have a look.”

Perhaps they would reach that place before long because Romon’s flight speed was simply too fast, so

fast that it was hard for ordinary people to conceive.

While soaring through the air, Lei Yu even forgot that he was seriously injured. The wound on his chest and the lack of internal energy made Lei Yu feel exhausted while under unbearable pain. But once he ate the pill that Romon gave him, it seemed to really make a difference. Although his recovery was considered tiny, yet compared to before, his physical condition was much better now.

While enjoying the feeling of flying, Lei Yu fantasized and wondered when he will be just like Romon. How would it feel to be so powerful? Although in the eyes of ordinary people, Lei Yu was

regarded as one of the most powerful existences, yet he himself couldn't imagine how much hidden power the human body was capable of holding. Romon was the perfect example: The copper pillar was certainly very hard, but it still required Romon's power in order for it to display its Armageddon-like destructive force. Where is the source of all this power?

Perhaps it will take Lei Yu ten to twenty something years before he will be able to experience this. However, something he would never have dreamed of happened very quickly.

The distance to their destination was still about ten plus minutes out. Romon suddenly remembered

the reason why he came to Tenglong country. “Benefactor...”

“You should really call me by my name or even little Yu if you want. I’m not used to being called ‘benefactor’ constantly.”

“Then... fine then. Little Yu, the reason why I came was to tell you something. Before an Immortal Cultivator condenses their Gold Core, they must experience a tribulation. This is a tribulation that descends from the heavens and cannot be avoided. One can only fight with their life on the line. I was originally worried that you didn’t have a weapon to help you resist this tribulation, but after I saw your sword, it seems like me worrying was unnecessary.”

“A tribulation from the heavens?  
What is that?” Lei Yu asked.

“I don’t quite understand it myself but I’ve seen this happen four times now. The first time was with my father, the second time with Her Majesty the Queen; the third was with Kalchas, and the last being myself. There’s a total of nine lightning’s that descend from the heavens. My father used the Ares Armor and Ares Axe and successfully resisted it. Her Majesty the Queen used the Jade Maiden Staff to successfully resist it. As for Kalchas, he almost didn’t make it but fortunately for him, the last lightning wasn’t that powerful and he passed the test in the end. I have the Heaven Supporting Pillar so it was naturally very easy for me. I

wanted to come to tell you that the Ares boots have no resistant effects. I didn't expect you to already have such a powerful weapon so it looks like resisting those heavenly lightning's won't be a difficult task for you."

Lei Yu understood some but not everything. But since Romon said it wasn't a difficult task, then there shouldn't be any problems in the future. Moreover, Lei Yu had always been fond of lightning so experiencing a few of them would not be a bad thing.

Lei Yu suddenly felt his body tremble as a large momentum pressure rush out at him from the ground.



“We’ve arrived!” Romon notified Lei Yu before slowly descending.

The closer they got, the more powerful Lei Yu felt this energy was. It was something he had never experienced before!

“What kind of place is this? How could such a tyrannical momentum pressure exist here?” Lei Yu asked in surprise.

Romon smiled, “According to ancient records, there exists three types of veins in this world: The first a Heaven Vein, second a Earth Vein, and the third a Dragon Vein. If I’m not mistaken, this place should have a Dragon Vein. Anyone who cultivates here should quickly improve, except for people who

have already condensed their Gold Core, it shouldn't have too much of an improvement for them."

"A Dragon Vein! This place actually had a Dragon Vein!" Lei Yu had heard that term before but he had always thought it was just old legend, the stuff of dreams. He never thought it would really exist!

Carefully observing the terrain around here, Lei Yu only knew Romon kept flying in an Easterly direction but to where they were currently at, he had no clue.

But one thing was for certain, this place was to the East of Tenglong country. Since the earth is round, Romon should have started flying from the United States. Tenglong

country was to the West of the Pacific Ocean and the U.S. to its East. Based on the same semi-circle flight path from East to West, then they should naturally hit this undiscovered wonderful place.

This place was desolate and filled with mountain ranges. One could say that even birds wouldn't want to lay eggs here. The two of them then flew down into a gap between two mountains.

“Such a powerful momentum pressure! Such a great amount of Spiritual Energy!” Lei Yu was extremely excited because this place was a cultivator's dream. He didn't expect Romon to find this wonderful place in Tenglong country.

“Take care of your recovery, and only cultivate when your body has regained its peak condition.” Said Romon.

“What about you?”

“I have to leave and cannot stay here; otherwise I won’t be able to seal my own powers. When that time comes, there’s no way for me to wait for you here to condense your Gold Core.

“What... what do you mean?” Lei Yu asked in confusion.

Romon glanced around the place before saying: “There’s too much Spiritual Energy here. Even though it doesn’t benefit me that much, it’s still able to increase the strength of

my body faster than other places. I have suppressed my powers to the peak of the Gold Core stage and cannot make anymore progression. If I surpass the Gold Core stage and don't enter the Immortal World, danger may befall me. As for what danger I may encounter, I'm not too sure on that since my father only parted those words to me."

"Then... it's fine then. So when will we meet again?" Lei Yu asked.

"The day you condense your Gold Core will be the day I make my appearance again!" After saying that, Romon had already stepped onto the copper pillar and rapidly flew off into the sky.

Lei Yu watched as Romon

disappeared before looking around again. “That Romon is really careless. He didn’t even ask whether I’ll starve to death in this place or not. Fortunately, I have some food inside the storage ring that can only last me for two to three months of time.”

Both sides were extremely high cliffs. Lei Yu looked up and could only see the sky like it was a crack in the air, while he was tucked away in-between two mountains. Even if he wanted to leave, he’ll have to spend a good amount of energy climbing up. At this time, he suddenly felt the momentum in front of him was stronger than his current position. Filled with curiosity, Lei Yu started walking forward in a cautious manner.

# Chapter 216: Seven Stars Align

This was a very long chasm and there was no end in sight. With Lei Yu's current weak body, he may not be able to hold out walking that far, but there seemed to be a force summoning him. As if his legs simply weren't listening to him, they kept desperately walking forward on their own.

The powerful energy didn't appear to be concentrated at the end, but somewhere in the center of this place!

There was a significant depression in the ground here, and Lei Yu

could feel waves of aura rise up from here and wrap around his entire body. This powerful aura made him have difficulty breathing so he quickly exhaled heavily. Lei Yu then closed his eyes, sat down cross-legged with both palms facing up and placed on his knees. In the center of his palms, a faint spark of lightning was dancing in the air. The heaving of Lei Yu's chest also started growing steadier as time went on.

Shortly after Lei Yu closed his eyes, the surrounding no longer stayed calm. Similar to a strong wind disturbing the ground and blowing dust around, the whole area started to change. Strands of yellow energy visible to the naked eye started seeping out of the ground around



Lei Yu. After it swirled around a few times, it then broke apart into thousands of energy strands before plunging into every part of Lei Yu's body in a crazy manner.

Lei Yu's body was startled by this, and beads of sweat suddenly covered his whole forehead. Lei Yu's breathing once again accelerated. Once these strands of yellow energy entered Lei Yu's body through different meridians, it started circulating around trying to find a place it liked. But after a full cycle, it seemed like it hadn't found anything to its taste. While close to Lei Yu's nose area, it followed his breath and rushed out in frustration.

Lei Yu didn't know what this meant,

but continued dedicating his effort into absorbing the energy that was unable to escape out of his body. This energy was just too pure and too powerful!

After Lei Yu absorbed a large amount of those strands of yellow energy, gradually less and less were able to escape. According to the flowing paths of his cultivation method, this yellow energy was eventually merged into his own. Finally, the green energy residing in Lei Yu's heart vessel couldn't stay calm anymore and came out looking for its own share.

The moment this green energy made its appearance, those strands of yellow energy that had just escaped from Lei Yu's body

suddenly stopped. It then crazily dove back into Lei Yu's body. Lei Yu suddenly clenched his hands and the faint dancing lightning disappeared.

“Agggghhh!” Lei Yu roared out, as red blood vessels started popping out in his eyes.

More and more energy in the surrounding gathered and entered into Lei Yu's body. Along with the sudden changes of Lei Yu, the ground also started shaking and rocking around. At the same time, the large amount of yellow energy seeping out of the ground knocked Lei Yu into the air.

The yellow energy started as strands and became thin lines. The thin

lines then changed to streams of energy the thickness of a finger. From all over, this energy stream then entered into Lei Yu's body in a frenzy before fusing with the green energy within the heart vessel. Out of all this energy, Lei Yu was only able to absorb about one tenth of it.

Lei Yu, who was now suspended in midair, could no longer remain calm and maintain his cross-legged posture. The pain coming from his chest had started to make him curl up into a ball while he spasmed non-stop. Lei Yu had already reached an unbearable point from being tortured by the pain. Gasping for air was unable to relieve any pain, so he was now screaming hysterically. If one could see the pain in Lei Yu's face right now, they

would definitely be extremely worried for him. The pain had already surpassed his limit. The pain Lei Yu was experiencing right now was similar to having the meat on his body sliced off one piece at a time. It won't allow you die, but it will make you beg for a quick death.

After a long time, Lei Yu looked like he was dead. Both his arms and legs were hanging lifelessly to the side while he was still suspended in midair by the energy rushing out of the ground.

It was at this time that the lightning brand on Lei Yu's right arm suddenly flashed brilliantly. The pain from this once again made Lei Yu roar out loudly.

Three meters below Lei Yu's floating body, an enormous column of energy the same thickness as a human surged out of the depression in the ground.

“Boom!” Similar to a dragon, the column of energy burst out of the ground with a loud noise. It coursed through Lei Yu and continued up into the sky, making Lei Yu's mind go blank. Lei Yu could only sense that he was wrapped up by this powerful yellow energy and couldn't move at all.

The energy column kept surging up straight into the sky, and the blue sky suddenly became dark. After this column of energy went past several layers of clouds, it actually formed an image of a dragon

entirely made from energy. The dragon then reversed itself and started diving downwards, its target being Lei Yu.

“Agghh! Just kill me now!” Lei Yu was now completely nuts. He could no longer bear this type of pain since it was thousands time worst than being sliced apart.

Lightning started streaking through the dark skies as rain clouds started gathering in the area. Lastly, a streak of lightning fell down slightly faster than the energy dragon, into the chasm and straight for the brand on Lei Yu’s arm. Lei Yu’s whole body suddenly started shaking violently. His eyes almost popped out of the sockets while all the veins and blood vessels bulged

out of his muscles like a pattern on a slab of granite. All his clothes were already shredded into pieces at this point. Once the energy dragon touched upon Lei Yu, all the shreds of clothing turned into ashes, leaving Lei Yu's naked body in place. Lei Yu was unable to move at all, he didn't even have the strength to twitch his fingers.

“Splash!”

In the skies, heavy rain started falling and splashed onto Lei Yu's robust body. Lei Yu was already unconscious from being paralyzed by the pain. Everything inside his body was transforming like mad, as if it was the previous scene of the blue skies suddenly turning dark.



Seven bright stars appeared in the sky, the Big Dipper?!

The seven stars slowly moved together and one of them flashed brilliantly, setting off the other six stars. Like meteors, they shot off and started extending at both sides and arranging themselves into a familiar pattern.

“The seven stars have aligned, and the Dragon Vein has recognized its owner! This... how is this possible?!” A chorus of voices sounded throughout millions of miles away.

There was a large “BOOM” inside Lei Yu’s dantian. Everything started calming down and the dark clouds dispersed. Lei Yu dropped heavily onto the fall and a mouthful of

blood sprayed out. The ground had stopped shaking and the previous yellow energy had disappeared. The heavy rain had also stopped at the sky had become sunny once again.

Power! His whole body was filled with an explosive power! Lei Yu suddenly sat up and ignored his naked body and all the dirt he was covered in. He only felt his body possessed an inexhaustible amount of power.

Lei Yu concentrated his spiritual energy to look at the internal changes of his body. All his meridians looked like they were scrubbed. Lei Yu was most concerned with the changes to his dantian because the previous sound of explosion came from there.

In the center surrounded by layers of mist, was a spherical object. Lei Yu's heart then skipped a beat, "Could it be a Gold Core?!"

Only when Lei Yu carefully examined it did he discover that it wasn't a Gold Core but a round purple bead. But the power this bead contained made it difficult for Lei Yu to believe what was happening. This type of power was greater than his previous dantian by a hundred, a thousand, or even tens thousands times.

Lei Yu went completely nuts!

"Is this really a power within my body? How could it be so powerful? Then again, what's really going on? Why is it purple? Is this actually a

Gold Core I've condensed or is it not?"

# Chapter 217: The Immortal World's Void Sect

“Unexpected! This is truly unexpected!” Romon’s voice was heard a short distance away. Because Lei Yu had been too excited, he didn’t realize Romon had returned.

“How come you’re back?” Lei Yu turned around to look.

“Little Yu, you actually absorbed the Dragon Vein! This is too incredible, too unbelievable!” Romon slowly walked towards Lei Yu, his face filled with shock.

“Absorbing the Dragon Vein? Are you talking about that huge dragon that flew into the air and then rushed back down into me?” Lei Yu asked.

“Correct! No one has ever been able to completely absorb the Dragon Vein. At most, they would be in the vicinity absorbing the rich spiritual energy. Ever since this Dragon Vein emerged, I didn’t expect you to be the first person to ever fully absorb it!”

Lei Yu wasn’t concerned about the Dragon Vein for now, he was more concerned on the changes in his body. He wanted to know if he had successfully condensed a Gold Core or not.

“Do you know why I don’t have a golden bead inside me but instead, I have a purple one? Is it even a Gold Core?” Lei Yu asked.

Romon trembled as he exhaled, “I’m also not too clear on that. Perhaps it’s due to your uniqueness that caused your Gold Core to be different from others, since you are the first person in history to completely absorb a Dragon Vein.”

With Romon repeating the absorption of the Dragon Vein, Lei Yu felt that this was indeed something to be noted. After observing his internal body again, Lei Yu then said: “The appearance of that heavenly lightning was quite sudden as well. I didn’t even have time to take out the Sky Devouring

Sword and was already struck. I almost didn't make it."

"That shouldn't be the heavenly lightning because the ones I've experienced should be a total of nine of them. Since I only saw one lightning strike, perhaps you... you may not have yet reached the Gold Core stage."

Romon's words made Lei Yu somewhat disappointed, but Romon then continued: "I'm also not positive, so the only way is to test it out."

"How do we test it?" Lei Yu asked.

"Take out your Sky Devouring Sword, then inject the internal energy from your dantian into it.



We'll see if you can use your internal energy to make the Sky Devouring Sword float by itself."

After hearing Romon's words, Lei Yu quickly took out the Sky Devouring Sword from his storage ring. His heart was very excited, but he was also worried that he celebrated for no reason. But it shouldn't matter anyways since according to Romon's original estimates, he would've needed at least ten plus years in order to breakthrough. Even though he hadn't broken through now, he shouldn't be too disappointed.

There's one thing that was without a doubt, and that's Lei Yu had become very powerful. Much more powerful to unimaginable

proportions compared to before.

Gently exhaling, Lei Yu slowly closed his eyes and transferred out a portion of energy from the purple bead inside his dantian. Everything went smoothly and no signs of rejection appeared. It looks like this energy was indeed his own. Lei Yu's lips curved into a slight smile before injecting his internal energy into the Sky Devouring Sword in his hand. By utilizing the slight link he had with the internal energy, Lei Yu slowly released the Sky Devouring Sword.

“It's really floating!” Lei Yu was so excited that he felt like he was about to cry. But this was followed by a “bang” sound when the Sky Devouring Sword fell to the ground.

“You need to concentrate!” Romon reminded Lei Yu.

Lei Yu nodded and calmed his elated mood. He once again made contact with the internal energy left inside the Sky Devouring Sword, and watched the sword tremble a bit before floating into the air.

“Great! This is great! It looks like you have really broken through! The power of this Dragon Vein really deserves its reputation!” Romon was also beyond excited.

Lei Yu suppressed his excitement and asked: “Does that mean that I can inject my internal energy into any item and make it float?”

Romon shook his head, “Only items

full of spiritual power can be freely controlled by you, but a lesser form of telekinesis is an easy thing for you to accomplish. It's like how I can call forth my Heaven Supporting Pillar at any time."

Lei Yu flipped his palm making it face down. He then made a grasping motion and the Sky Devouring Sword acted like a trained pet by flying into his hand, hilt first.

"Does this mean I am able to fly now?" Lei Yu looked very eager as if he couldn't wait anymore.

"It takes a lot of practice. First you need to find your core to balance because your weapon isn't as big as mine. Also, you need to practice

how to follow up on injecting new internal energy into the weapon by the time the previous energy inside it disappears. Otherwise, you'll directly fall down when the internal energy inside the weapon depletes itself before you have time to put more in." Romon then smiled before continuing: "Let's practice your attacks first."

Lei Yu never imagined that he hadn't even finished in training the other half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual yet had already broken through to the Gold Core stage. Now training in the future would be much easier.

Just to experiment, Lei Yu condensed his internal energy onto his palm and a ball of lightning the

size of his palm started rapidly spinning there. Lei Yu then threw out this ball of lightning that had only been condensed with a tiny bit of his internal energy.

A hundred meters away, a loud “BANG” was heard and a huge pit with a diameter of about five meters appeared on the ground.

Lei Yu couldn't believe what he saw. He only condensed a tiny bit of internal energy and it resulted in such a strong power. “I'm too awesome!”

Romon smiled, “It looks like we can leave this place now and meet up with my father and them! Five hundred years... I've been separated from my father for five hundred

years!”

Three days later, one could see a figure standing on top of a sword. The sword was floating three meters off the ground and the figure was wobbling all over the place.

-----

In another place millions of miles away, surrounded by mist of fog was a towering mountain. Water was endlessly cascading down a waterfall while smaller mountain peaks and ridges stretched hundreds of miles away. At the foot of these mountains was a dense jungle, making the scenery of this place look like something you would see in a painting.

In a particular area of the mountain, a wall made of bluestones was found. Ancient looking buildings were found behind this bluestone wall, the tallest one of them broke through the clouds where one could not see the top.

And it was inside this tallest ancient building was three people talking about something.

“This is unprecedented. The Dragon Vein has recognized its owner and the seven stars have aligned. A heaven sent genius has arrived!” Said an old man with all white hair, beard down to his chest, and wearing ancient clothing with a sigh.



“Senior brother, what should we do? Several other Sects including the Evil Cults have begun to make their move. Shouldn’t we rush to the front ahead of them all?” Sitting across from the old man were two others. They were dressed similar to the old man, one was fat and one was thin. Both had black hair tied up and both were middle-aged. The one that spoke up was the fat one.

“Send two of our disciples forth and tell them to be careful. And no matter what, we must get this extraordinary person to join our Void Sect!”

“Understood!” The fat one got up and left, leaving the old man and the thin man to discuss other matters.

As time flowed on, it was now a full month later. Lei Yu could easily control his flying skills now and did a few loops in the air while beaming with happiness.

“Not bad, not bad! It initially took me half a year in order to master my flying skills.” Romon clapped with a smile on his face.

“Nonsense, of course it took you longer since your copper pillar is so big.” Lei Yu descended next to Romon and patted his huge pillar as he made fun of him.[1]

“Can we leave now?”

Lei Yu nodded and said: “I first need to make a trip back to the Lei family and find out what happened twenty

something years ago. Also, Ai Er, my big brother, and those in the Kou country such as Liu Hao and Ying Ying; I have to explain everything to them. Because this matter has been so sudden, I really need to have a long talk with them.” As for Nami, Lei Yu hadn’t seen her at all ever since he returned to Tenglong country. In fact, his heart somewhat missed her but due to certain reasons, Lei Yu didn’t know how to deal with it. Yet the time has come to a point where no matter what, he had to face this once and for all.

-----

[1] No sexual innuendos there...

# Chapter 218: Many Years Ago

Lei Yu carelessly shoved Romon's copper pillar to the ground and jumped on top of it.

“Can't you fly by yourself now?”  
Romon asked in confusion.

Lei Yu had a grin on his face, “It's not like there's not enough room, why are you being so stingy?”

“Uh...”

(Their flying speed was extremely fast. Even though they were heading for the borders of Tenglong country, it wasn't considered long

for them to reach their destination. It's just that the millions of miles would still take this group of people nearly two months to get there.)

The first place Lei Yu headed for was the Lei family. He didn't look for Ai Er first wasn't because she wasn't important; it was just that her mother's issue had been stored inside Lei Yu's heart for too long now. This was something Lei Yu wanted to know the most, so he couldn't wait any longer.

The two of them didn't bother to enter through the main gate and directly went to the main courtyard of the Lei family. Lei Yu jumped off, a distance of nearly a hundred meters from the ground. If this was the past, there's no way Lei Yu

would dare to do this. But now that his body felt as light as a Swallow, he wasn't worried about destroying the ground from his landing.

As dexterous and light as a feather, Lei Yu landed on top of a stone tablet of the main courtyard without making a bit of sound.

“You guys look!” Some youths of the Lei family were completely shocked when they saw Lei Yu descend from the sky.

Lei Yu didn't bother with them and lifted his head up, “Romon, aren't you coming down?”

“There's no use in me hanging around. Once you're done with your matters, we'll meet up again!” A

golden light flashed, and Romon had already disappeared into the horizon.

“Waaa! What sort of person can fly?!”

“Is that still a human? Isn’t that considered an Immortal?”

The clamor outside was naturally heard by Lei Yun Tian with his strength of a Sixth Order Warrior. He sprinted out and was about punish those youths for making a fuss over nothing when he noticed Lei Yu; his face suddenly becoming stiff.

“Little... little Yu!”

Lei Yu jumped down with a light smile. “Master of the Lei family,

there's some matters I wish to discuss with you."

"Okay, come with me!" Lei Yun Tian woke up from his trance and led Lei Yu back to his office.

Lei Yu didn't see any changes in his father; he only didn't see the Elder who usually shadowed everywhere his father went. Lei Yu also didn't bother asking since this had nothing to do with him.

A servant of the family brought them tea, and the two symbolically sampled it. Lei Yu then went straight to the main subject: "Master of the Lei family, I really want to know what happened between you, my mother, and Du Chang Hai twenty something years



ago. Also, how did uncle Nuo's wife get involved in this?"

Lei Yun Tian wasn't in a hurry to answer Lei Yu's questions. His face twitched a little as his heart felt emotionless to the extreme. "Little Yu, could it be that you still aren't willing to address me as your father?"

Lei Yu merely smiled, "I'm sorry. That day when I returned to the Lei family, that was the second time that I was forced to jump off the cliff. Ever since then, I had vowed to completely cut off all relations with the Lei family."

"But that wasn't my fault!"

"I know, but you didn't open your

mouth and say a single word to defend me right? Could you not understand what that day was all about?" Lei Yu sighed heavily. "This was the same seven years ago; you didn't say a single word when I left. Therefore, can we please not talk about this anymore? Let's get back down to the main topic."

Lei Yun Tian clenched his fists. Seven years ago, Lei Yu getting kicked out was instigated by the Elder. Since Lei Yu indeed did not have the family's brand, he could only abandon him. As for now, because the Elder's position was highly esteemed, Lei Yun Tian had once again lost the chance of having Lei Yu return. Perhaps everything was destined by fate and cannot be changed.

After being silent for a while, Lei Yu Tian then slowly started: "Your mother's name was Liu Xiao Yue. She was an ordinary girl from one of the ancient martial clans, and was close like sisters to another girl called Du Ling Er. One day, I had a business dealing with that family and at first sight... I was attracted to your mother. We started meeting each other more frequently and slowly, she developed feelings for me. But I was already a married man then; your big brother Lei Long's mother was my main wife. Reluctantly, we could only see each other in secret." Lei Yun Tian sighed before continuing with a trembling voice: "It was during this time when everything seemed peaceful; Du Chang Hai's appearance completely disrupted

everything. He took Xiao Yue away, and she didn't have the powers to escape from his grasp. Back then, I was the successor in being the Patriarch of the Lei family, so it was impossible for me to publicly go rescue her. I secretly sent my most trusted people there but I never heard back from them ever again. Ultimately, I had to give up on it."

"Give up? You actually gave up on the woman you loved?!" Lei Yu almost couldn't tolerate his father's love of his future status; such a cruel and heartless bastard!

"I know, back then I was too unfaithful, but... but this wasn't out of my own free will! Did you think I didn't suffer?" Lei Yun Tian's chest was already heaving up and down,

appearing as if his emotions were extremely agitated. "When I thought everything had concluded, a year later on a certain day, Xiao Yue arrived at the Lei family's main gate, and an old man was following by her side. Only after questioning them did I find out about you." As he said this, tears were already coming down Lei Yun Tian's face. "She told me that Du Chang Hai was using you as a threat. If Xiao Yue didn't stay at his side, then that animal was going to kill you. Your mother didn't know what to do and could only request that you be placed in the Lei family. I told them back then that as long as you stayed here, Du Chang Hai wouldn't dare to do a thing. But your maternal grandfather back then had already been injected with a Devilish Poison

Chip. If your mother didn't quickly return, Du Chang Hai was going to activate the Devilish Poison stored inside the chip. Helpless to do anything, Xiao Yue could only leave you and your grandfather with the Lei family."

"You're talking about this?" Lei Yu flipped his palms and retrieved a black chip that had been taken out of his grandfather's head in the past.

"That's right, it's exactly this. This Devilish Poison cannot be normally taken out or else it will accelerate the death of the victim, that's why I had never dared to touch it."

Pausing for a bit, Lei Yun Tian continued: "Within the next decade, Xiao Yue's junior sister Du Ling Er

focused all her efforts in cultivating and had finally reached the strength of a Fifth Order. She wanted to go rescue your mother but couldn't defeat Du Chang Hai. She eventually died under that same Devilish Poison. Your mother went completely insane and tried to desperately escape, but still did not succeed. That year when you became twenty years old, you were originally able to see your mother again. But after she found out that you had left the Lei family, and your grandfather had also left, this made her completely fall apart. Du Chang Hai couldn't control your mother anymore and could only activate the Devilish Poison in your grandfather as a punishment. It was at this time your mother became disheartened, so she gave up her

will to live and left this world. After hearing this news, I was in so much pain over it but unfortunately there was nothing I could... sigh!"

"To maintain your status, you gave up my mother. For your reputation, you gave up my existence!" Lei Yu said this one word at a time, his voice filled with hate and his face filled with tears.



# Chapter 219: Lei Yu Flew Off

“Little Yu, listen to my explanation!”

“There’s no need to explain anything! Isn’t this already a fact?”

After understanding the entire matter, Lei Yu didn’t want to hear any excuses Lei Yun Tian had and sprinted out of the office. Since he had already killed his worst enemy, Lei Yu was somewhat satisfied. Lei Yun Tian rushed out after him but only saw a light on Lei Yu’s finger flash, and a white light streamed out. A sword had appeared, it was the Sky Devouring Sword!

A purple light entered into the Sky Devouring Sword before Lei Yu leaped on top of it. Both sword and person then started flying into the air!

Lei Yun Tian's heart was beating like crazy as he stood there watching Lei Yu's figure disappear into the horizon. A long time later, he disregarded his status and image and screamed into the air: "I really regret it! I regret it so much!"

While flying through the air, Lei Yu wasn't as excited as before when he had first mastered flying. His face still had tear stains on them while he drifted downwards with the flow of the wind, then disappearing without a trace.

Lei Yu actually still cared about his father Lei Yun Tian, but because of these matters, he now couldn't make up his mind anymore when before he was intending on forgiving him. Everything could be blamed on the heinous Du Chang Hai and shouldn't be blamed on others. After all, Lei Yun Tian shouldered the entire Lei family so he had to be cautious with every single act he makes.

As for the present situation of the Ming Sect, Du Chang Hai was dead and the rest of the members were inadequate and aren't able to create any big waves. Lei Yu could just ignore them since it would be too difficult for them to further develop themselves.

In just a brief moment of time, Lei Yu had arrived at the Dragon Group headquarters. Around this time, Nuo Hu should be here so Lei Yu didn't bother going anywhere else to look for him.

Lei Yu came out amongst a grove of trees in a more secluded area of Dragon Group before he started walking towards the villa.

“Little Yu!”

Lei Yu's sudden appearance made Fan Hong Chang, who was just finishing up some paperwork, jump in fright.

“Little Yu, you're back! How is your recovery going?” Nuo Yi Feng was the second person to notice Lei Yu

had returned.

Very quickly; Nuo Yi Long, Nuo Hu, and Ai Er who rarely hangs out in Dragon Group, all rushed out of their respective places.

After being bombarded with questions, Lei Yu slowly revealed everything that had happened to him. He also put all his cards on the table and explained that he would be leaving this place soon. The story Lei Yu iterated made everyone present feel like they were hearing a fairy tale. But no one doubted his words because Lei Yu had created too many miracles in their eyes.

The Nuo family was never going to forget the name of Lei Yu. Not only did Lei Yu kill their common enemy

Du Chang Hai, the most important point was that the Nuo family may have the first descendant to breakthrough out of the peak of the Fifth Order Warrior stage. This chance was given by Lei Yu, a key that could revitalize the entire Nuo family!

Their eyes of everyone present was filled with happiness except for one single person. Lei Yu knew that this matter had to be explained to Ai Er in full detail.

Lei Yu gently grasped Ai Er's hand, and everyone immediately took the hint and turned around to leave.

"Brother Yu, you're going to leave this place? You don't want Ai Er anymore?" Tears had already filled

Ai Er's eyes, and her pitiful face had already made Lei Yu's heart ache painfully.

"You silly girl, what are you talking about? How could I not want you?" Lei Yu gently stroked Ai Er's hair and led her out to the outside garden of the villa.

"But you definitely have to leave here right? Then how are we going to see each other in the future?" Ai Er bit her lips as she suppressed her tears from dripping down. She wanted to show how strong she was in front of Lei Yu, but no matter how hard she tried, she was unable to fight the reluctance in her heart.

Lei Yu exhaled heavily, "I want to take you away with me, but there's

one thing I'm not sure if it's possible."

"Really?!" Ai Er was shocked and almost couldn't believe her ears.

Lei Yu nodded, "If I'm allowed to, bringing you along isn't a difficult task. But If I cannot, then..."

"What methods do you have? Let's quickly try it out!" Ai Er didn't want to hear the rest of the words and only wanted to know what method Lei Yu was going to use to take her away. As long as she can stay with Lei Yu, she was willing to do whatever it took.

"It's all up to this thing." Lei Yu slowly raised his hand and revealed the ancient ring on his finger. "I



have never tried putting a living creature inside this thing. If it really works, I'm hoping to put you inside it. Once I enter the Immortal World, then I can take you out again."

"This ring?" Ai Er stared with big round eyes, not understanding what Lei Yu had just said. She looked at the ring on his finger a bit longer yet still couldn't figure out what Lei Yu was talking about.

Lei Yu nodded, "Let's try it out now!" Not waiting to see if Ai Er was prepared or not, Lei Yu focused his will on both Ai Er and the ring. Lei Yu's spiritual energy trembled a bit before Ai Er instantly disappeared from the spot!

Lei Yu was overjoyed. "It worked! It

really works!” At this time, he understood why Romon never mentioned about taking him away to the Immortal World before his time. This was because Romon did not have such a storage treasure and probably didn’t know much about it. If he had one and had the knowledge, there’s no way he would be wasting his time flying around on his copper pillar waiting for Lei Yu.

There was another flash and Ai Er appeared in front of Lei Yu with a shocked expression. “Just then... where was I? What place did I go to?”

Already grinning from ear to ear, Lei Yu smiled before saying: “What you saw was the space inside of my

ring. Ai Er, did you feel anything wrong with your body after entering that space?”

Ai Er shook her head, “There was nothing uncomfortable about it, I just felt very curious, that’s all.”

“That’s good then! Very good!” Lei Yu had an additional thought: Couldn’t he bring whomever he wanted along and just put them all inside the storage ring? But after thinking further, he gave up on that idea. Everyone had their own family and matters they couldn’t just walk away from. Lei Yu shouldn’t be so selfish!

“Does that mean I can leave this place with you?” Ai Er asked.

Lei Yu was nodding like a chicken pecking at food on the ground. "You can, of course you can. But I want to tell Liu Hao and Ying Ying about my matters first. Wait for me here and I'll go pick them up. I should be able to return within an hour with them."

Ai Er hurriedly put her hand on Lei Yu's forehead, "Brother Yu, do you have a fever? You want to make a roundtrip to the Kou country within an hour? Is that even possible?"

"You will understand in a bit." Lei Yu grabbed Ai Er's hand and gently planted a kiss on it. It was at this time Nuo Hu came out and saw this scene. He immediately stopped, "Uh... I came out at the wrong time. I was about to comfort Ai Er but it

looks like there's no need."

"Big brother." Lei Yu laughed. "I'm going to go out for a bit but don't leave, I'm going to pick-up Liu Hao and them and we'll get together at Long Hua's Barbeque! Oh yeah, I can have Romon come along as well."

Nuo Hu could only blink while questions marks filled his head.

Lei Yu took a step back before the Sky Devouring Sword appeared. With a purple flash, his figure had already flew off and disappeared into the horizon.

Ai Er and Nuo Hu had their mouths agape as they stared at the sky, their heads still in a blur. Lei Yu

had never explained clearly why Romon could fly, so they never expected Lei Yu to disappear into the sky with a flash as well. Was this a fairy tale they were in?

“Eh? Where’s little Yu? Wasn’t he just here?” Nuo Yi Long and Nuo Yi Feng both came out asking.

Nuo Hu looked at them, and then looked back at the sky. He swallowed hard before pointing at the sky, “He flew off!”

-----

(T/N: I don’t understand why the author doesn’t have Lei Yu try storing a live animal in his ring first instead of toying with Ai Er’s life...)

# Chapter 220: Big Changes In Appearance

This was Lei Yu's first attempt at flying long-distance by himself. He originally had a heavy heart, but after the happy conclusion with Ai Er's matter, his mood seemed to have taken a load off.

His flying speed was not considered slow, so the people on the ground were unable to clearly see what flew by in the air. By the time they tried to look closely, Lei Yu's figure had already disappeared.

In another area.

“Senior brother, are you able to sense this so-called extraordinary person?”

“I don’t sense his whereabouts in this place, but fortunately I have something give by master which should be able to detect his position.” An ancient looking ruby appeared on this person’s hand. The person then placed the ruby on his chest and felt the fluctuation of the energy. He then felt his spiritual power instantly spread out and cover the entire vast lands.

“He’s flying towards the East, quickly come with me!” Two figures disappeared off into the horizon.

Feeling the blowing of the wind against his face, Lei Yu naturally



closed his eyes and enjoyed this feeling of freedom. But before he had enough of this feeling, he already flew across the waters of Tenglong country to this tiny island. In this place was a country that had a lot of stories and a lot of history – the Kou country.

Lei Yu did not hurry down but looked at this spectacular overwater city at the edge of the Kou country.

“Ying Ying is really capable. She was able to complete such a large project in just a few years; it looks like the title of ‘alpha woman’ perfectly fits her.” Lei Yu couldn’t help but sigh in admiration.

At both ends of this overwater city were two bridges. One end was

connected to the Kou country while the other end was connected to an island that once belonged to the organization that dominated a whole country – Yamaguchi-gumi. But now this island had underwent a big change in its appearance.

Ever since breaking through the Sixth Order and reaching the Gold Core stage, Lei Yu felt that his perception had become much more powerful. He was able to pinpoint a person's location within a few kilometers from him.

At the top floor of a skyscraper at the central region of the overwater city.

“What sort of business plan is this? Is this just a perfunctory proposal?

Take this away and revise it!” A young woman sitting on top of a luxurious looking chair was reprimanding a youth.

But this youth didn’t hear a single word from the young woman. His eyes were wide open and his jaw was about to hit the floor from staring out the large floor-to-ceiling window behind the young woman.

“Did you hear what I just said?!” The young woman was clearly even angrier now, but the youth just stood there motionless.

This youth stood there for a long time before he raised his trembling hand and pointed out the window. “S... super... superman!”

The young woman immediately swiveled her chair around. Once she saw a smiling face outside waving to her, she also froze in her chair. Because she was wearing a dress skirt and her legs were slightly spread open, the smile on the person outside the window floating in midair suddenly froze, almost causing blood to spray from his nose.

“Holy cow! This meeting present is really too grand! \*Cough, cough\*” Lei Yu looked away and knocked on the glass. Only then did the young woman recover her senses and pointed down and shook her head. Her meaning was the window cannot be opened so Lei Yu had to come in from the ground floor.

That's right, the person outside was exactly Lei Yu. And the young woman inside the large office was none other than Cui Ying Ying who had parted ways from Lei Yu not too long ago.

"Immediately make preparations and notify the others, the young master has arrived!"

"Ah! Okay! I... I will immediately notify everyone!"

Cui Ying Ying smoothed out her own clothes about to go downstairs. She then suddenly started blushing when she thought of Lei Yu's expression and her previous appearance.

"Roaring, and rumbling!"

Everyone was rushing downstairs. The elevators couldn't fit any more people so most of them started running down the stairs from the thirty something floors. Some were in such a panic that they ignored it when their shoe fell off from running. Everyone wanted to see what the rumored miraculous person looked like who had once stirred up a storm in the Kou country.

There were some customers on the ground floor who were surprised at what was going on. All the customer service staff had rushed to the main entrance and neatly arranged themselves in an orderly fashion. Everyone was busy smoothing out their clothes and trying to look presentable.

One minute, two minutes, three minutes... a full ten minutes later and Lei Yu still hadn't emerged. Cui Ying Ying walked out of the main entrance and looked up into the sky, but still didn't see any traces of Lei Yu. Everyone thought this was weird; could it be the young master didn't come?

Just when everyone was getting restless, a "ding" sound came from the elevators and a light lighted up. The hundreds of people turned their heads around at the same time to look.

A young man in his twenties came out. He was wearing a tight black T-shirt that highlighted his strong physique, and the lines on the exposed part of his arm showed

how muscular he was, while the lower part of his body was wearing normal black pants.

His mouth hung a slight smile while his eyes will filled with mysteriousness.

“What are you guys doing here?”  
Asked Lei Yu while he blinked a few times.

Cui Ying Ying turned around and looked at him. “You... why are you coming out from the inside?”

“Uh... I was afraid I would scare everyone if I directly descended down.” Lei Yu smiled with a shrug.

“This is the young master?”

“Wow! He’s so handsome!”



“Is it really the young master?” The crowd became noisy with chatter as everyone started guessing who this man was that got out from the elevators.

“Hello everyone, I am Lei Yu.” Lei Yu smiled with a slight bow.

“Ahh! It’s really the young master!”

“Young master! Young master!”

The men called out his name in shock while the women shrieked. This scene was almost too much for Lei Yu to digest. Was he really that popular?

Lei Yu also quickly noticed one thing, which was everyone present was speaking the Tenglong language. Whether it be the little

dwarves, a tall beauty or a tall guy, they were all speaking the same language.

Lei Yu couldn't help but hope that the Tenglong language would become the universal language of the world. And regards to this, it looks like it's heading in that direction here.

Before the crowd would get out of control, Lei Yu grasped Cui Ying Ying's hand and pulled her into the elevator and quickly closed the elevator doors.

"Why did you cause such a huge scene? It's not like they're welcoming some big country's official or anything." Said Lei Yu with a slight frustration.

Cui Ying Ying happily said: “The current you in the Kou country is even more famous than other people. Being able to work for the young master is everyone’s dream come true! But of course our corporation has strict standards; we won’t hire them unless they are talented.”

“How many people downstairs were Tenglong citizens?” Lei Yu asked.

“The tall ones are, while the shorter ones are Kou citizens.”

Lei Yu’s eyebrows jumped, “That’s such a stark contrast.”

The two arrived at Cui Ying Ying’s office. About five to six minutes later, they heard the sound of

knocking. "Come in!"

A super beauty comparable to an angel was dressed in business attire and a white shirt came in. Lei Yu's eyeballs almost popped out. The beauty's shirt was open at the top, and her long slender legs started walking towards the two. Lei Yu noticed her hands holding two cups, so naturally she was here to serve them refreshments.

The beauty bent down to place the cups while she shot Lei Yu a seductive gaze. Because her body was arched, her two voluptuous white and soft looking mounds were revealed in front of Lei Yu's face.

"You may leave now." Cui Ying

Ying looked like she wasn't too happy.

# Chapter 221:

## Someone's Following

Lei Yu pretended to disapprovingly drink the tea that the beauty brought in.

“How come you’re here?” Also, just then...” Cui Ying Ying pointed at Lei Yu and then pointed at the window before asking in confusion: “Even though I know that you have many amazing facets, yet I still can’t figure out what happened outside there.”

Lei Yu smiled, “The reason why I’m here is to tell you about some

matters. Oh yeah, where's Liu Hao? What's his current whereabouts?"

Cui Ying Ying wrinkled her nose and humphed, "Him? Apart from entwining himself with a little starlet, what else could he be doing?"

Lei Yu helplessly laughed. "I was wondering why he wanted to go back to the Kou country with you. Turns out that he couldn't let go of the life of being surrounded by beauties, what a useless brat!"

"Should I call someone to send over a car to pick him up?"

"It's easier if we go pick him up ourselves."

"That's fine as well."

The Meng Yu Talent Agency that used to be in the Kou country's mainland had been moved to this overwater city. And it alone occupied a building over a dozen stories high which was considered quite impressive. It began developing with twenty something A-listers, and because the backing was too impressive, some celebrities and artists from abroad also defected their original companies and joined Lei Yu's company. Of course with all those big celebrity names, it was natural for the company to maintain a steady stream of income. Each and every star under their company had so many requests for work that they couldn't fit it all into their schedules.



Lei Yu was sitting in a car as he watched the scenery of this place go by. It appeared as if this overwater city was more prosperous than the large cities in the Kou mainland by several times. Everyone was rushing about on the main streets as if they had endless tasks to run. In this organized chaotic city, probably the only two people who had so much free time was the master and disciple pair – Lei Yu and Liu Hao.

In fact, Liu Hao was not as bad as Cui Ying Ying made him out to be. He did hang out with a bunch of those celebrities but he also helped the Talent Agency deal with a lot of their affairs. Liu Hao had learned quite a bit of business knowledge from following Cui Ying Ying around all these years.

“Liu Hao!”

“Who’s so rude to actually address me by my full name?” Liu Hao put down the paperwork in his hand and raised his head. A beaming smile suddenly appeared on his face.

“You little bastard, what else do you want me to call you?” Lei Yu jokingly cursed.

“Nothing! Nothing! Master, why are you here?” Liu Hao quickly rushed over to Lei Yu.

Because this was an open office area, all the employees and customers who were discussing business proposals were startled. When they looked at the new

arrivals, they noticed a man and a woman. The man was handsome while the woman was extremely seductive looking, pretty much giving all the people present here a feast for their eyes.

“Are you done with your work? If you’re done, come with us.” Said Lei Yu as he patted Liu Hao’s shoulder.

“Done. Would I dare to not listen to my master’s words? Go, let’s go now!”

The three of them were chatting and laughing loudly as they left the company. Once they left, everyone erupted into a commotion.

“Who was that? How could he dare to speak with Chief Liu like that?”

“Didn’t you hear their words? Chief Liu called him master!”

“There’s also that girl, she’s so beautiful. If she and I could...”

At this time, a thirty something year old woman angrily came out of her office. Because Lei Yu and Cui Ying Ying announced they were coming by too abruptly, she didn’t have time to prepare for their arrival. She had planned on immediately heading out to greet them but due to an important phone call, she didn’t have to leave the office and meet with them.

“Do you even know what nonsense you guys are blabbing on about?!”

The chaos from the commotion

immediately settled down as everyone went back to their own work.

The middle-aged woman walked in front of the office and said: “Do you know who was it that just came? Those words you guys were saying were enough for you to be kicked out of the company!”

“Manager, who was that? That guy was way too handsome!” A young girl couldn’t bear it anymore and asked.

“Handsome? Don’t you feel using the word handsome is underrating the young master?”

“Young master!”

“Young master!”

“Good heavens! It was actually the young master! Damn me, why didn’t I at least go up and shake his hands?!”

Inside a Cafe.

“What?! Master, what you’ve just said is too unbelievable!” Liu Hao exclaimed aloud. Cui Ying Ying’s face was filled with shock as she couldn’t really comprehend Lei Yu’s fairy tale like story.

“The reason I’m here is to pick you two up and return to Tenglong country so that we can all hang out one last time. If there aren’t any changes, I believe this will be the last time all of us will spend time together.” As Lei Yu said this, he deliberately looked at the two. Just

as he thought, Liu Hao was taking it fine but Cui Ying Ying looked like she was about to cry.

Lei Yu didn't know what words he could say to comfort her and only remained silent. After a short time, Liu Hao was the first one to speak up: "Master, don't worry and just go. I will work hard on cultivating in order to surpass the strength of a Sixth Order Warrior, then we'll meet up again in the something world!"

Lei Yu had a pleased smile on his face, "Cultivation is not such a simple subject. If all you know how to do is entwine yourself with women, I estimate that you will never see me again in your entire lifetime."

“Don’t worry master; I won’t deal with such matters in the future. I will have sister Ying Ying to get a new person to replace my position. From today onwards, I will work hard on cultivating and not be a lazy bum!” Liu Hao was filled with confidence, and was completely different from the carefree clown he used to be.

“Do you really have to leave? What about me? What should I do? How did things happen so suddenly? I’m not prepared for all of this!” Cui Ying Ying couldn’t hold back her sadness and started crying.

“Ying Ying...” Lei Yu paused a bit before continuing: “Some things cannot be changed, and I don’t know what else I should say. But



I'm really unable to change the outcome of these plans." Lei Yu didn't want to say those pretentious words like you'll eventually find a man better than me etc.

After being comforted for a while later, Cui Ying Ying finally felt a bit better. In accordance with his original plans, Lei Yu brought them two into his storage ring. In an alley without anyone around, he stepped onto his sword and flew up into the air.

In the opposite direction.

"Junior brother, caution, he's coming back this way!"

"What should we do?"

"There's no need to rush. We'll first

stay hidden and then follow him.”

They rapidly descended. Amidst a forest, the two hid themselves there. At this time in the sky, a white light flew by. The two then followed behind by maintaining a certain distance, afraid their target would notice.

These two people were trailing someone that was none other than Lei Yu who was quickly returning to Tenglong country.

With Lei Yu’s powerful spiritual perception, he naturally felt there were two powerful auras following behind him. Lei Yu didn’t immediately stop but actually increased his power to the maximum. In the air, one could

only see a white figure disappear without a trace.

“Not good, quickly catch up!” The two became anxious and increased their speed to catch up.

Lei Yu concealed his aura. This was an ability he grasped before breaking through the Sixth Order level when he reached the [Energy Suppression] stage. As long as his opponent's strength wasn't too much higher than his, there's no way they will be able to detect his presence.

Lei Yu quickly stored his Sky Devouring Sword and angled his body towards the ground. He then landed gently with the wind and hid beneath a boulder. He then looked

up – they're humans!

# Chapter 222:

## Branch With The Same Roots

“That’s weird; could it be this world has many other supreme experts that Romon and I don’t know about?” Lei Yu felt this was too strange, and apparently they were targeting him.

“Not good, his aura has disappeared!”

“Are there any reactions from the thing master gave you?”

This person shook his head. These two people just floated in midair for

a long time and still couldn't think of a solution.

“It looks like he found out about us. Senior brother, how about this: We'll go to that place that's a branch with the same roots as our Void Sect in the Mortal World called Celestial Court and ask about there. We'll see if they know of this extraordinary person's existence?”

“It looks like that's the only thing we can do now. It's clear that he's deliberately avoiding us. It'll be useless if we just wait around so let's go over there and see what happens!”

As their voices trailed off, the two had already disappeared into the

distance.

Lei Yu waited for half an hour before he once again flew back into the air.

Since Lei Yu couldn't figure some things out, he may as well not dwell on it. He will probably figure everything out in the future. Moreover, those two were obviously targeting him so they will eventually cross paths. Those two should be the anxious ones instead of Lei Yu.

Around this time, a dozen or so people with unfamiliar faces appeared one after another on the piece of land known as Tenglong country. Their target was the same person, which was the

extraordinary person that the Dragon Vein recognized as its owner!

Back at Dragon Group headquarters, they met up with Ai Er and others. According to plans, this group of people drove several cars towards Long Hua's Barbeque that they've frequented many times. They had a great time eating large amounts of meats and drinking a lot of beer. From start to finish, Lei Yu had hidden his aura in case anything should happen while he was enjoying his time. One should know these two people were capable of flight, so it's possible they did not belong to this world. Since he had no idea why they have suddenly shown up here, it was best for Lei Yu to act cautiously.



Lei Yu had no clue that these people came looking for him solely because of his miraculous event at the Dragon Vein. This event was simply too shockingly astounding.

The usual quiet and peaceful Celestial Court had been broken because two supreme experts from the Immortal World millions of miles away had arrived. This was an event that neither the Celestial Court Leader nor the Elder Qing Feng had encountered before. They of course were extremely respectful to these two. In the ancient records, they have known that the Void Sect and Celestial Court came from the same branch. But what they have never imagined was that the Void Sect still existed, and their sudden reappearance would bring along

two unmatched experts with them.

In fact, experts don't really need to make a move. Just the momentum they release would already make others feel pressured.

"You two... Immortals sudden visit to my Celestial Court has made me feel some trepidation!" The Court Leader was very polite. From seeing their appearance, he felt like addressing them as immortals was the most appropriate.

The two of them nodded and smiled like a celestial, "Pardon our surprise visit but there's something we would like ask."

The two of them narrated on where they came from and why they were

here, except for the part where the Dragon Vein had recognized its owner. They only asked if the Court Leader had noticed any strange phenomenon's related to lightning or the stars appearing.

The Court Leader and Qing Feng were both beyond shocked. This was their first time hearing about an Immortal World, but how could they know about such an ethereal and distant place to begin with? As for these two visiting guests, they continued treating them with extraordinary respect.

That day when daytime and nighttime exchanged places and the seven stars aligned, even someone nearsighted would have seen a fuzzy version of it. Not to mention

these two were super cultivators with amazing vision.

“This indeed happened. About a little more than a month ago, I witnessed a strange phenomenon in the sky. I had originally intended to rush over there to observe it closely but it disappeared too fast.” The Court Leader respectfully replied.

The two Void Sect members glanced at each other, and one of them continued asking: “In the Mortal World, is there a person related to either lightning or the stars?”

“Lightning? Stars? Could it be...!”  
The Court Leader and Qing Feng’s face became pale.

“What? You know of such an extraordinary person? Quickly tell us, who is it?!”

“If we insisted on creating a relationship between those two things, I believe Lei Yu is the only one. I remember when he was dueling with Ming Sect’s Du Chang Hai, we heard him recite the words ‘Thirty-six Lunar Stars’ something something. And he also specializes in lightning attacks!” The Court Leader replied.

The two of them were immediately overjoyed. “Senior brother, it has to be him!”

“Do you know his current location?” Asked one of them as he calmed down a bit.

“He is a descendant of the Lei family, but due to some reasons, he was kicked of the family years ago. He later joined one of the army branches of Tenglong country’s Martial Sect, called Dragon Group. Also... through various channels, I’ve found out that he seems to have surpassed the Sixth Order Warrior stage and have attained the power beyond the Sixth Order.” The Court Leader slowly said this with narrowed eyes.

The other person was apparently easily irritated and had a temper. “Stop blabbing nonsense! My senior brother asked his location, not his origins!”

“Yes! Yes!” Even after being reprimanded, the Court Leader

didn't dare to make a noise. This was the first time in his life to be spoken like so yet it was still enough to make him frightened out of his wits. What status did these two people in front of him have? What abilities did they have? Why would he dare offend them? He then quickly responded: "We only know that he often appears in Dragon Group because he has a sworn brother called Nuo Hu, who happens to be the son of Dragon Group's Commander. There's also this Commander Nuo's daughter called Nuo Ai Er, who happens to be Lei Yu's girlfriend. If my guess is accurate, Lei Yu should be together with them right now."

"Have someone take us there so that we can meet this so called Lei

Yu!”

“Yes! Understood!”

Qing Feng personally brought the two foreign visitors over and arrived outside the main gates of Dragon Group. They had flown here which gave Qing Feng an addictive thrill in the process.

“This is the place.” Said Qing Feng.

“Senior brother, try it again. Let’s see if it can sense his presence.”

After making another attempt, the senior brother shook his head. “It looks like he’s really vigilant, which means there’s no doubt he has found out about us. There aren’t any people flying around in the Mortal World so it’s no wonder why



he's so cautious."

"Respectfully asking the two immortals, what should we do now?" Asked Qing Feng.

"We will wait somewhere nearby. If it's really him, he will eventually show up and at that time, you only have to point him out."

It was currently late at night so it was impossible for Lei Yu and company to return to Dragon Group headquarters. And on a sudden whim, the group wanted to go sing karaoke. This was perhaps the last chance Lei Yu was going to be able to enjoy these types of things here. Except, this screwed with the three people struggling to wait nearby the military grounds of

Dragon Group. We can say that this group bitterly struggled for an entire night.

However, they all possessed extraordinary powers so even when it came to Qing Feng, he didn't mind too much about such things. The three of them sat down with their eyes closed and waited patiently.

The following morning inside Lei Yu's house.

"That Romon, who knows where he went off to." Lei Yu stretched before fully waking up from cultivation. Even though he has reached such a high level, he still hasn't stopped or become complacent.

“How about we go back to Dragon Group since it’s only appropriate that I say goodbye to my father and my aunt first.” Ai Er came into Lei Yu’s room and snuggled into his arms. Since it was too late last night, she stayed at Lei Yu’s house for the night.

# Chapter 223:

## Acquainted With Them

“That’s definitely necessary. Let’s have them all gather up together.”  
Lei Yu nodded in agreement.

Affected by Lei Yu’s words yesterday, Liu Hao completely transformed into a different person and was now diligently cultivating. Lei Yu showed a gratified smile, “Keep at it! There’s nothing in this world that cannot be overcome when you have faith, and are persistent at it!”

When Lei Yu was cultivating, he

kept his internal energy enclosed inside his body and did not release it in the slightest. The energy was constantly circulating inside his body so the two people from the Void Sect would not be able to detect it. And now, Lei Yu once again activated his [Energy Suppression] state, so there's no way they could detect his existence. There is a downside to this though, which is Lei Yu cannot release his spiritual perception outwards. Once he uses that ability, then he would definitely expose himself. Even though Lei Yu doesn't know whether it's a good thing or a bad thing for those two people looking for him, his thoughts are "the less trouble the better." Especially when who knows where Romon went off to, so it's best to wait for him to

appear before they figure out what to do.

In front of the Dragon Group main entrance, a car was slowly entering the compound. Qing Feng pointed at the car and said: "Lei Yu should be inside that!"

The two nodded. "You can leave now, and don't mention to anyone of our existence. Otherwise, I doubt anyone will come help save you guys from the future troubles you may encounter. Do you get what I'm saying?"

Qing Feng nodded in a panic. Even though he doesn't know what future troubles these two men were inferring about, he doubts these guys are making irresponsible

remarks so there's definitely a reason behind it.

A scene where a white haired old man was being reprimanded by two youngsters was quite strange and awkward to watch, but Qing Feng didn't stay and immediately left. He didn't want to stir up any troubles for himself since these two men might be hunting down Lei Yu for vengeance or something.

Without a care, these two walked straight towards the main entrance of the Dragon Group headquarters and went straight in, completely ignoring the guards on duty.

However you say it, Dragon Group was still a military force so how could they let any random people

enter? Two guards stepped out and stopped the two uninvited guests.

“What are you guys here for?”

The two frowned, “Move aside.”

“This is a restricted area of Dragon Group; unauthorized people are not allowed entry!” The guard did not show any signs of backing away.

“Humph! You don’t know what you’re messing with!” One of the two raised his hands and lightly tapped on the chest of the two guards. The two guards suddenly felt their chest tighten, shortness of breath, and suddenly could no longer breathe.

“Junior brother, what are you doing?!” The senior brother angrily



asked.

“Senior brother, no one dares to block the path of our Void Sect. Doesn’t that mean they deserve death?”

“Damn bastard! Do you think the Mortal World is a place you can walk sideways in? Grand Master has always said that killing is a taboo, so does that mean you don’t want to achieve enlightenment?”

“Will I really sin that much from killing a few ordinary people?”

“Do you even understand what the wrath of heavens is? How can ordinary human beings be something you can freely kill? If it’s really free from repercussions, do

you think these humans would still exist here?”

While these two were talking, it was unknown when that Lei Yu had appeared standing twenty something meters away from them.

“Is this considered your greeting gift? Do you really think our Dragon Group members can be easily bullied like this?” On Lei Yu’s last word, a hundred plus military personnel rushed out from the surrounding. Nuo Yi Long and others stood next to Lei Yu while the other hundred plus soldiers were divided into two companies.

Lei Yu wasn’t expecting these hundred plus soldiers to help much, but after carefully listening to those

two people converse, he figured there's no need to worry since they consider killing ordinary people somewhat of a taboo.

The two of them couldn't detect a single trace of aura coming from Lei Yu, but they would never suspect Lei Yu as an ordinary person. Even ordinary people would have a faint aura about them, yet Lei Yu seems to have confined it all inside himself without the slightest leakage.

For someone that's capable of escaping their detection, and even escaping the detection of the treasure their master gave them, he may be much stronger than the two of them. One of the two showed a steady smile, "This sir must be Lei

Yu? I am the Void Sect's Yuan Xiu and that is my junior brother Yuan Li."

"Void Sect?" Lei Yu racked his brains but couldn't remember there being such a place.

Yuan Xiu smiled, "Can we step to the side and talk?"

Lei Yu nodded. Although their arrival resulted in two guards being killed, they were acting quite polite and speaking reasonably. It didn't look like they were deliberately causing trouble here. "Uncle Nuo, I'm going to go chat with them."

"Be careful." Said Nuo Yi Long.

For someone that's at Lei Yu's level of strength, he was no longer

someone Nuo Yi Long could figure out. There were simply too many incredible occurrences surrounding Lei Yu so there's no way he could understand or have the capacity to understand these matters. Nuo Yi Long felt it was best to not involve himself at all.

Lei Yu had no intention in chatting with these two inside Dragon Group because he was still wary of them. Even though for these two experts to ruin this military compound is as easy as flipping their palms, it's still better to be cautious since the members of Dragon Group were all people important to Lei Yu.

It was only when they were at least a kilometer away from Dragon

Group did Lei Yu stop and look at the two. “There’s no one around us here, so can you tell me the reason why you guys are looking for me? Also, you two should be the ones trailing me yesterday right?” Lei Yu’s mouth was speaking but he was already preparing to act in case something hostile occurred.

Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li glanced at each other and smiled. Lei Yu’s words had without a doubt told them that the youth in front of them was the person they were looking for.

“What’s the meaning of this?” Lei Yu asked with a frown when he saw those two smile at each other.

“The two of us are from the

Immortal World's Swallow Mountain; we're the fourth generation disciples of the Void Sect. We have been specially commissioned by the Sect to invite you to join our Void Sect; we hope that you will not refuse our request." Yuan Xiu answered.

"You're inviting me? Why? Wait a minute...! You guys are from the Immortal World?" Lei Yu was shocked.

"That's right!" The two nodded and replied.

Lei Yu was a bit doubtful. "Can the people of the Immortal World freely enter the Mortal World?"

"Nope!" Yuan Xiu shook his head.

“The Immortal World has an unwritten rule that it’s easy to enter, but difficult to exit. It is very difficult for someone to leave the Immortal World to go to the Mortal World.”

“Then what about you two...?” If this was the case, then Lei Yu couldn’t understand why these two were here. Lei Yu was also very clear that in this world, there are only four people that have surpassed the sixth Order Warrior and reached the Gold Core stage. Primus Hogue who had already died, Romon and himself, and the last being the old ancestor in the forbidden grounds of the Lei family mountain – Lei Rong Kun.

Yuan Li proudly smiled, “The path



from the Immortal World to the Mortal World lies at the edge of the Chaotic Star Sea, and it's guarded by several unsurpassable experts. Since our Void Sect is acquainted with them, they made some concession and allowed us two to pass through."

"Oh?" Lei Yu smiled, "I'm afraid it's not as simple as it looks right?"

"Could you be doubting my words?" Yuan Li frowned, apparently starting to get angry with Lei Yu doubting him.

Lei Yu pointed up into the distant at a black shadow and asked: "If what you've said was true, then that person must also have a close relationship with the guards at the

Chaotic Star Sea?”

# Chapter 224:

## Illusory Body

In fact, Lei Y was extremely shocked when he felt the appearance of something unusual approaching but pretended to be calm. When he met with these two from the Immortal World, Lei Yu had abandoned the use of his [Energy Suppression] ability. If some supreme expert did appear, then they would definitely be able to sense him out right now. But what Lei Yu wasn't expecting is the fact that people would come that quickly.

The two immediately raised their heads to look.

“Violet Gold Hall!” Yuan Xiu frowned; it looks like their purpose for coming here was the same as theirs.

One could see a person in the air wearing a set of cool looking purple clothes, a long pink and purple belt around his waist, long flowing hair, and a handsome looking face. He was standing on top of a huge gourd and slowly descended as he reached the area where Lei Yu and the other two were at.

He smiled and saluted by clasping his fists in front of him, “My two friends from the Void Sect are also here!”

“I’m wondering what this friend of the Violet Gold Hall is here for?”

This was a rhetorical question between the two. Watching as Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li who have been here for a while act shocked, it became apparent why this person from the so called Violet Gold Hall was here as well. Since these two men still asked such a question, it showed Lei Yu a scene he hated the most - hypocritical people who knew what was going on yet still pretended they didn't understand.

“Ah...” The person from the Violet Gold Hall smiled, and the huge gourd transformed into a small gourd about the size of two fists. After using the belt at his waist to secure the small gourd, he then said: “Nothing much. Under the command of my master, I’ve been sent here to invite this

extraordinary genius to our Violet Gold Hall.” After saying that, he slightly bowed to Lei Yu and smiled, “I am Violet Gold Hall’s fourth generation disciple, Luo Feng. Greetings to you, sir.”

This person called Luo Feng appeared to be very polite, making Lei Yu have favorable impressions towards him. Even though this favorable impression was under such conditions, at least it was much better than the Void Sect who showed up and immediately killed two of Dragon Group’s guards.

“This friend from Violet Gold Hall, it appears that we were the first ones here.” Said Yuan Li as he stepped forward.

“I really don’t understand... the Void Sect is such a large place yet they actually only sent two people at the early Gold Core stages to invite sir. Isn’t this a bit too disrespectful?” A light sneer appeared on Luo Feng’s mouth as his face showed disdain. This completely wiped away the previous polite look.

“What did you say?!” Yuan Li yelled out in rage.

Lei Yu was thinking to himself: “Looks like things are about to go down, I just hope it won’t cause Dragon Group any problems!” Lei Yu was still somewhat fearful when it came to experts at this level. This was because the devastation that Romon created in the U.S. was

something he was unable to forget. Although he had the same strength as well now, this shadow still lingered deeply in his heart.

At this time, Lei Yu suddenly took two steps backwards; his eyes had become especially big that was now comparable to the bull-head.

“Let’s stop arguing, there’s more people coming!” Lined up in the air were three people wearing loose blue robes. They only started descending when the people on the ground noticed their arrival.

After landing, these three people didn’t even look at Luo Feng and the other two. Led by an elderly person filled with smiles, “Sir, would you like to follow us three to



the Skywalk Sect? Our master has already prepared a rich banquet awaiting sir's arrival. I hope that sir does not refuse our invitation!"

This was really too weird, was there some type of fragrant scent on his body? Why would all these people come here looking for him?

Lei Yu was completely puzzled now. What's the purpose of all these people coming here? And the people arriving all seem to be part of some big organizations. One needs to understand that a mere Sixth Order expert can create chaos in this world, not to mention a single Gold Core stage expert. What made Lei Yu shocked was that so many experts have arrived in one place. If these people exploded into

a fight, would Tenglong country still exist?

Thinking to this point, Lei Yu suddenly shivered before saying: "I'm sorry, but there are still many matters in the Mortal World I haven't dealt with yet. I don't think I'll be leaving in the short-term so would my fellow cultivators please go back for now?"

What Lei Yu didn't expect was this group of people replied in unison: "It's not a problem, we can wait."

Lei Yu swallowed hard and show an unnatural smile, "There's no need, I will probably take quite a long time before I leave. Everyone should part ways for now, and once I reach the Immortal World, I will certainly pay

a visit to you all.”

Lei Yu’s words clearly made this group of people feel like he wasn’t giving them any face. But this was the fault of Void Sect’s Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li who were so pretentious at first which made Lei Yu misunderstand.

The Chaotic Star Sea did have several guards there, but the situation wasn’t how Yuan Xiu portrayed it to be where they had some relationship to the four guards. In order for them to enter the Mortal World, they had to produce some property of value. Of course, this was different from the money we know of. This was a currency that could only be used in the Immortal Realm.

And the cost to do so was astounding! If a famous and powerful Sect wanted to send forth one or two people to the Mortal World, they had to spend an amount that was close to all of the Sect's assets in order to do so. Otherwise, wouldn't the Mortal World have experts flying all over the skies?

But how would Lei Yu know about these matters? That's why it was natural from Lei Yu's tone that these people felt he was being somewhat contemptuous.

"We are giving you face by inviting you. If you don't come back with us, what can you do if we even tie you up?!" Said one of the younger Skywalk Sect disciples in an angry

manner.

This elderly man did not reprimand the youth but still maintained a pleasant smile on his face. “My junior brother has a bad temper so I hope sir doesn’t blame him. But his words are justified so I hope sir will reconsider. After all, entering the Mortal World just once is not an easy feat!”

“Oh really? What I heard from the two members of the Void Sect was that it’s not a difficult task. They also said that they had a very good relationship with the guardians of the Chaotic Star Sea, that’s why they could easily come here.” Lei Yu’s raised his eyebrows and said so pretending to be surprised.

“Humph! Shameless things!” The elderly man scoffed, “Having a friendly relationship with the Lord Guardians? Simply making a laughing stock out of oneself! Didn’t the Void Immortal teach you guys the morals of being a person?”

“What did you say?!” Yuan Li angrily retorted. “If you have the guts, let’s see who’s the stronger ones are!”

The silent Luo Feng now coldly interrupted them: “It looks like you guys aren’t putting my Violet Gold Hall in your eyes!”

It was once again the youth of the Skywalk Sect that quickly retorted: “What sort of thing is the Violet Gold Hall considered? It’s not your

place to speak up yet!”

Was Luo Feng really a polite person? With sudden rage, he stomped his foot on the ground. One could feel the ground suddenly tremble before his body gradually became illusory. And within his illusory body, one could see the area below his dantian; his Sea of Energy had a humanoid figure floating there wrapped around by internal energy.

This was the first time Lei Yu had encountered such a scene. What's more unimaginable was that this Luo Feng could make his body become illusory.

“Nascent Soul stage!” The five people present were completely

shocked. In the history of the Immortal World, the rules say that ones that have surpassed the Gold Core stage are not allowed to enter the Mortal World. If they were found out, then the guardians will punish them. But it was clear that this Luo Feng was an expert that had already reached the Nascent Soul stage. This was something they couldn't understand and at the same time, one of them regretted their previous words.

But it was too late, how could Luo Feng tolerate others insulting his Violet Gold Hall? He enunciated every single word: "Those who insult my Violet Gold Hall - die!"



# Chapter 225: Want To Make a Move?

Once his words ended, he didn't even wait for a reaction before a powerful fist aura was thrown straight at the arrogant youth that previously insulted his Violet Gold Hall. One could see the youth's body suddenly tremble before his body flew backwards like being hit by a cannonball. It was only after smashing through several large trees did his body come to a stop. It was very clear that it would be difficult for this youth to stand up straight for a while. Lying on the ground and gasping for air, the youth was thinking to himself that

if he knew this guy was an expert at the Nascent Soul stage, he would have never had made that remark earlier. But of course, it was too late now.

When the remaining elderly man and middle-aged man saw their own fellow disciple being attacked by others, they immediately wanted to fight back. But even if they wanted to make a move, they remembered their opponent was an expert at the Nascent Soul stage. Instead, they shifted their feet that created a rising white smoke before they had already flown up high into the air.

“Where can you escape to?!” Luo Feng roared loudly before the gourd at his waist instantly became large.

Jumping on top of the gourd, the immediately chased after them leaving Yuan Xiu, Yuan Li, and Lei Yu behind making these three unsure how to react.

Lei Yu never expected the people of the Immortal World would be so impulsive. It was merely a minor verbal altercation and they were already making killing moves?

In fact, Lei Yu didn't know that these situations in the Immortal World were considered common occurrences. One could tell from the expression on Yuan Li and Yuan Xiu because they weren't surprised or anything, they maintained their bland expression while discussing something with each other.

“How was the Violet Gold Hall able to send forth an expert of the Nascent Soul? Could there have been a change of rules at the Chaotic Star Sea? They’re now allowing people that have surpassed the Gold Core stage to enter the Mortal World?” Yuan Li felt this matter was extremely weird.

“That’s impossible, such a thing cannot happen. Perhaps there’s another reason for this, but it certainly won’t be what you’ve mentioned about a rule change.” Yuan Xiu disagreed with his junior brother’s view, but couldn’t come up with an explanation himself.

Suddenly as if he remembered something, Yuan Xiu turned around

to Lei Yu: “Sir, have you considered what we recommended previously?”

Lei Yu then smiled and asked: “I would really like to know why all you guys would come here to look for me? Could it really be just for asking me to join your Sect’s?” Lei Yu really wanted to figure out what was going on.

“It was because of the Dragon Vein’s movement...”

“Junior brother!” Yuan Xiu angrily interrupted Yuan Li’s words before turning back to Lei Yu with a smile, “Because sir is special!”

Lei Yu wasn’t dumb; Yuan Li’s unfinished sentence already gave him a clue. No wonder Romon was

so shocked back then, that's why others were also paying attention to it.

"I'm really sorry but as I've said earlier, there's really many things I haven't taken care of yet, that's why I temporarily won't be going to the Immortal World. Please return and once I enter the Immortal World, I will definitely pay my respects to your Sect!" Lei Yu once again used the same excuse to notify those two.

"It seems like sir is making things difficult for us?" Yuan Xiu's smile changed to a cold tone, "Did you not hear what the Skywalk Sect said previously? It's not an easy feat to enter the Mortal World. We have used up over half of the Void Sect's

treasury, so do you think it's such a simple task of just returning empty handed?"

"Senior brother, less bullshit with this guy! Let's be straightforward, us fellow apprentice-brothers will tie this fellow up and let the master deal with him!" Yuan Li rubbed his fists about to make his move.

"You two want to make a move against me?" Lei Yu narrowed his eyes; it looks like today's matter was unavoidable.

In fact, things were rather contradictory right now. Lei Yu was determined to go to the Immortal World, but he was planning to see Telephassa and Minotaur Linos whom had once rescued. If he were

really to go to the Void Sect... Let's first push aside the question whether he would maintain his freedom there or if some other issue may occur. The main issue now was - would Lei Yu provoke the other Sects that had also just invited him if he joined the Void Sect? In the off chance that he landed in dire straits, Lei Yu doubted the Void Sect would stand up and shelter him against multiple other Sects.

For people like these that pointed at the wind and called it rain, and with such explosive tempers, something might happen just because they didn't like what they heard. Therefore Lei Yu decided he was going to offend one single Sect instead of offending all the rest.



“Be a good fellow and quietly come back with us, or else don’t blame us two apprentice-brothers for being rude!” Yelled Yuan Li. He was already standing in front, tightly gripping onto Lei Yu’s shoulder.

Lei Yu’s body slightly trembled and a substantial amount of purple lightning rushed out of his body attacking Yuan Li’s hand. Yuan Li roared out in surprise as he quickly retreated backwards. He never expected a person like Lei Yu who had just entered the Gold Core stage to have such power. It looks like he had to be very careful when dealing with Lei Yu.

Lei Yu wasn’t willing to fight in this area in case it affected Dragon Group so after spinning around, he

body shot into the air as the shadow of the Sky Devouring Sword had already appeared beneath his feet. Lei Yu's figure then flew off to the east with a speed comparable to a lightning strike.

Yuan Xiu nodded before Yuan Li quickly flew off to catch up. Even though he wasn't as fast, it still wasn't easy for Lei Yu to shake him off in the short-term.

It was at this time that the remaining Yuan Xiu started having an evil idea.

One step at a time, he got closer to Dragon Group. He wasn't in a hurry because he knew Lei Yu wouldn't be back that quickly. Especially with Yuan Li holding him down, wanting

to escape would not be an easy thing.

Yuan Xiu wasn't going to start killing randomly; he wasn't stupid enough to endanger himself by suffering the wrath of the heavens. If someone was to block his way, he'll just use his abilities rendering them immobile.

Yuan Xiu then stepped into the military compound with over a thousand soldiers like it was his own backyard; it was impossible for anyone present to stop him. His targets were the ones that Celestial Court's Elder Qing Feng mentioned - Lei Yu's sworn brother Nuo Hu and his girlfriend Ai Er.

After using a full hour, Lei Yu

reached the broad expanse of the sea. He then stopped flying and floated in midair while he waited for Yuan Li's arrival.

This fight was unavoidable. Lei Yu actually wanted to test out how strong he was now, and really wanted to find an evenly matched opponent to practice on. There was still a large gap in strength when compared to Romon, since that guy was already at the late Gold Core stage and Lei Yu had only been in the Gold Core stage for about a month. Moreover, there's no way Romon would go all out when fighting with him.

According to Luo Feng of the Violet Gold Hall, the person chasing after him was only in the early Gold Core

stage so wasn't this a perfect opportunity for him?

"What happened? You're not running any longer?" Yuan Li coldly asked as his figure instantly appeared in front of Lei Yu.

"Run? This daddy had no intention of running in the first place!" Lei Yu smiled, "You wanted to fight right? Right here will do. I want to see what abilities you possess to tie me up and take me away!"

Once his words ended, Lei Yu didn't give his opponent the chance to respond. He flipped to the side and the air started vibrating around him. A ball of lightning then appeared on Lei Yu's palm.

In an instant, Lei Yu made a throwing motion and the ball of lightning shot out; its speed was no slower than an actual lightning strike.

Yuan Li coldly sneered as he slightly veered his body away. Lei Yu's lightning ball shot past Yuan Li's body and didn't hit the intended target.

# Chapter 226:

## Close-quarters And Long-distance

“That was too weak! Why don’t you try this out?!” A light blue internal energy was suddenly condensed on both of Yuan Li’s hands. He then clapped his hands together before slowly separating them. A sword completely made of internal energy then appeared between his hands. His left hand moved away and his right forefinger and middle finger clasped together. A Sword Qi then shot straight at Lei Yu, its speed no less than the previous lightning ball.

Lei Yu could feel the sharpness of the arriving Sword Qi, but it wasn't enough to make him panic. Lei Yu was too lazy to avoid it so he clasped his hands together above his head and then smashed downwards.

“Bang!”

The Sword Qi was completely smashed to pieces by Lei Yu, making layers of energy spread out to the surrounding area.

“I think your attack is even weaker, it didn't even have the qualifications to make me dodge it!” Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and coldly sneered. Even though he said those words, he wasn't going to be careless here. After all, his



opponent was an expert at the Gold Core stage while he himself had just entered the threshold of it. Lei Yu had to focus all his efforts in order to have a chance at winning.

“You’re way too arrogant!” Since his attack was so easily broken by Lei Yu, this made Yuan Li fly into a rage. Energy started surrounding Yuan Li’s body while his mouth was chanting something. One could see the energy suddenly forming into a countless amounts of Sword Qi before it flew like rain towards Lei Yu!

Lei Yu roared out: “Perfect timing!”

Similar to Yuan Li, a purple energy started fluctuating around Lei Yu. He then waved his right hand and

the sky above was suddenly filled with a sea of lightning. The powerful lightning strikes happened to break apart all the Sword Qi coming at Lei Yu. One or two Sword Qi's had broken through so Lei Yu used the same method previously and used his fist to smash apart them. Yuan Li's attack had not affected Lei Yu one bit.

For attacks to land between the two were getting less and less. Each time Lei Yu rushed forward according to his old melee fighting style, Yuan Li would always dodge to the side at the last moment and keep a certain distance between himself and Lei Yu. This caused Lei Yu to realize a major weakness of Yuan Li, this guy was afraid of close-quarter combat!

This can only explain one thing: Yuan Li's defensive capability was weak and cannot handle Lei Yu's heavy strikes! Catching his opponent's weakness, Lei Yu utilized his speed to the maximum. Under Yuan Li's constant dodging, Lei Yu's attacks became increasingly fierce and faster. This made Yuan Li unable to fight back, and even unable to keep his distance from Lei Yu anymore, let alone have time to gather his internal energy to manifest an attack.

With Lei Yu's storm like attack, it made Yuan Li enter an awkward situation where he couldn't retaliate. He had never experienced this type of fighting before. Perhaps it was due to him always

cultivating within his Sect, the only people he came into contact with was his fellow apprentice-brothers who also only used Sword Qi's to fight. Meeting someone with Lei Yu's style of fighting was really his first time.

With his powerful attacks at lightning speeds, and the fact that his opponent was not used to melee fights, this gave Lei Yu a huge advantage where this was considered a one-sided fight.

When it came to speed, Yuan Li was no match against Lei Yu. At the right time, Lei Yu would definitely give Yuan Li a powerful strike.

A long time later, Yuan Li couldn't take it anymore. He instantly

exploded forth his internal energy, and the energy aura smashed against Lei Yu. Lei Yu was not prepared for the sudden release of Yuan Li's energy aura so he was shoved back several meters. If he hadn't practiced using the Sky Devouring Sword until it felt like an extension of his limb, Lei Yu may have been already fallen off and landed in the sea.

After stabilizing his body, a smile appeared on Lei Yu's face. "Could all the people in the Immortal World be as weak as you? I really want to see how you're going to boast now. Come; tell me whatever bragging lies you have!"

Although Yuan Li's energy aura contained a degree of impact force,

it didn't have the necessary power for attacking. Maybe if an ordinary person was struck by it, perhaps they would fly off a hundred to several hundreds of meters away. Even though they wouldn't be hurt by the impact force, they may be hurled to their deaths by the g-force. But why would Lei Yu care about this tiny bit of g-force?

After mumbling something, a strong aura gushed out of his body before purple internal energy started distorting Lei Yu's surrounding area like waves.

Right at this moment, a huge roar of thunder was heard. In the sky, a purple lightning similar to a purple dragon flew straight for Yuan Li who was still gasping for air at a

distance.

This was merely an attack that was modified by Lei Yu. Ever since he had reached the Gold Core stage, Lei Yu felt that there was a lot of ways he could combine together with his internal energy to produce various attacks. But in order to master them, he still had to spend a good amount of time in testing them out.

This simple attack in Lei Yu's eyes had become something extremely frightening in the eyes of Yuan Li, that's why he was planning on dodging it. Unfortunately, Yuan Li met his nemesis. How fast was the speed of lightning? The previous lightning ball was a palm sized thing, but this time, the lightning

dragon was much larger so could it be dodged that easily?

“Boom!”

After a loud sound, one could see that the clothes Yuan Li was wearing no longer looked immortal-like. His clothes were now all ragged looking, his hair was standing on its roots while white smoke was rising out of them.

Borrowing the advantage that he was up in the sky, Lei Yu only used a portion of his own energy. There were some weak traces of cumulonimbus clouds in the sky, and after combining it with his own energy, thus such a powerful attack was generated so easily.



After being struck by the purple lightning dragon, Yuan Li felt that his entire body was paralyzed and couldn't move at all. He was no longer able to control the sword he was stepping on and started nose diving straight into the sea.

Lei Yu's mouth formed a sneer, "It looks like the people of the Immortal World aren't that special. But Yuan Li's still in the early Gold Core stage while Luo Feng of the Violet Gold Hall had a momentum that I couldn't compare to. That's why I have to further train myself and not be complacent or else I'll be the one to suffer in the end." Lei Yu was thinking this to himself while Yuan Li was about to plunge into the sea.

Lei Yu turned into a blinding light and shot down. The moment Yuan Li was about to hit the water, Lei Yu grabbed onto him. Lei Yu quickly retrieved a wooden bed from the storage ring and threw Yuan Li on top of it. This was the same bed that Lei Yu had prepared for himself before he was going into the Cretan Labyrinth back in ancient Greece. It would be a useful item if he got lost and tired inside the labyrinth and could rest comfortably. Now was the perfect time for it to be used.

The wooden bed became a naturally floating device with Yuan Li sitting on top of it. Yuan Li will just float around with the waves of the sea. Lei Yu wasn't worried because once Yuan Li recovered his strength; he

could just fly off and leave this place.

Lei Yu didn't want to kill him because he didn't want to forge any deep hatred with a major Sect when he hadn't even reached the Immortal World yet.

"I'm not going to kill you; I only want you to have more empathy when dealing with others. Did you think I would be used by you guys no matter what? Go back and tell your master of the Void Sect that sometime later, I, Lei Yu will definitely visit to greet him!" After saying that, Lei Yu flew off like a meteor and disappeared without a trace.

Drifting alone in the sea, a rather

comfortable Yuan Li looked into the sky helplessly and said to himself: “Could the things I’ve learnt in the Void Sect be all useless? I couldn’t even beat a person that had just entered the Gold Core stage...”

In reality, it wasn’t that the teachings of the Void Sect were useless but it was Yuan Li having a single tracked mind and wasn’t flexible with what he learned. Not only could Sword Qi be used as an attack, it could also be used as a defensive ability.

As cultivators, some were good at refining their bodies while some were good attacking from a distance, but there’s always a certain balance between the two paths. Lei Yu being good at close-

quarters and long-distance combat was an exception, and Yuan Li just so happened to encounter such an abnormality.

# Chapter 227:

## Chaotic Star Sea

The time it took Lei Yu to fly away, fight, then come back, everything was already too late by the time he returned to Dragon Group.

Everyone at the military compound had been frozen in place with blank looks in their eyes. Lei Yu didn't have time to care about the soldiers since he was more worried for the people close to him.

Just like the soldiers, Nuo Yi Long, Liu Hao and others including Fan Hong Chang standing outside the villa, were all frozen with the same blank look.

“Instructor Fan! Instructor Fan!” Lei Yu’s cries seemed to have no effect. He then ran inside the villa and smacked Liu Hao, but it was also of no use.

Lei Yu’s heart became anxious when he suddenly realized something. “F\*ck his mom, where’s my Ai Er? Liu Hao, hurry up and wake up for this daddy!” Screaming was useless. After Lei Yu ran upstairs and downstairs scanning the entire place, his heart completely collapsed. Ai Er and his big brother Nuo Hu had disappeared without a trace.

Lei Yu’s whole body started trembling as he neared insanity. Only after forcefully breathing in and out a few times did he

gradually calm down. He realized that the more flustered he became, the worse his decision making ability would become.

After using his internal energy to probe the bodies of the people here, Lei Yu realized an energy was blocking a nerve to the brain. Once he found the cause, wanting to break it wasn't a difficult task. Lei Yu closed his eyes and then condensed a small portion of lightning energy. He then accurately tapped a nerve on the neck of everyone, allowing them to awaken and become alert once again.

"Master! Quick, quick!" Liu Hao was in such a panic that he forgot how to speak properly. He could only



blindly urge Lei Yu to be quicker yet didn't explain what was going on.

Lei Yu looked at Nuo Yi Long,  
“Uncle Nuo, quickly tell me what happened?! Where's Ai Er and my big brother?!”

“Quickly go chase after him! One of the two guys that previously came looking for you took Ai Er and Nuo away. He's been gone for a long time now so quickly go save them!” Nuo Yi Long's voice sounded very weak. When he knew that Lei Yu wanted to take his daughter away with him, he was already reluctant. Now that his last hope Nuo Hu was in danger, how could he not feel dispirited?

Lei Yu didn't have time to care

about or placate Nuo Yi Long's mood. He quickly dashed out and a "whoosh" sound was heard before Lei Yu disappeared without a trace.

A few minutes later, a golden light flashed by. A huge pillar stood erect in a small garden in front of the villa while a youth with a small horn on top of his head entered.

"Where's little Yu? It's time for us to go." The person who just went in was none other than Romon. He did not notice anything wrong with the people inside the villa.

With a distressed face, Liu Hao anxiously described in detail of what happened to Romon. The latter didn't bother asking too much and only asked one thing: "Which

direction did they fly off to?”

Liu Hao pointed the direction Lei Yu disappeared off to, while Romon had already jumped atop of his pillar and to quickly chase after him.

“Little Yu! Don’t be too impulsive, wait for me! Wait for me!” The Immortal Realm’s Chaotic Star Sea is not a simple place. If there isn’t a pair of people helping each other out, it’s very easy for something disastrous to occur. This was another reason why Romon didn’t directly leave by himself, and now everything was too late.

Lei Yu seemed to have gone insane as he flew on the Sky Devouring Sword at its maximum speed. One

almost couldn't see his physical body and can only see a black shadow exuding a purple aura flash by.

“F\*cking bastard! Son of a b\*tch! I’m going to rip you into a thousand pieces!” Lei Yu’s eyes were now bloodshot. He had already been merciful when fighting Yuan Li and didn’t expect the Void Sect to be this vicious and insidious to come up with such a move. It was no doubt that this was Lei Yu’s biggest weakness - his family and friends. They were more important than his own life. As someone that has gradually distanced himself from his family, Lei Yu didn’t want to lose anyone close to him yet things like this somehow happened repeatedly. He was already

disappointed with the people of this world and now it was the same thing for the other realm as well.

In the direction Romon spoke about before, Lei Yu's speed did not slow down in the slightest. Everything around him appeared illusory as he rushed by. Battling the fierce wind resistant, Lei Yu was now completely numb to it. He didn't care about anything. As long as he can catch up to Yuan Li and save Ai Er and Nuo Hu, he didn't bother thinking of anything else.

At his current speed, even if Yuan Li departed earlier than Lei Yu, it was a matter of time before he would catch up. Yuan Li was also bringing two additional people with him so he's flying should be

inconvenienced which ultimately restricts his flying speed.

Yuan Li had also realized this point and did not anxiously rush back to the Chaotic Star Sea. He hid the two people in his grasp in the midst of a jungle while he concealed his aura to the best of his ability.

Before long, a black shadow flew by in the skies. The blur was something ordinary people with their naked eyes couldn't see, while only those with adequate power can detect the presence of.

“This Lei Yu is truly not simple! He had just reached the Gold Core stage yet was able to shake off Yuan Li's containment and rush over here!” Yuan Xiu could not help but

sigh in his heart.

Not daring to leave immediately, Yuan Xiu waited for another half an hour before grabbing Ai Er and Nuo Hu ready to depart. At this moment, a golden light flashed by making him conceal his aura once again. After looking carefully, it was a person he didn't recognize. His speed was not capable of catching up with Lei Yu but it definitely wasn't slow.

"A person from another Sect?" Yuan Xiu shook his head and smiled, "With Lei Yu's girlfriend and sworn brother in my hands, I'm not afraid of Lei Yu not going to the Void Sect. By that time, conditions will be ripe and success will follow!" Yuan Xiu's mind was filled with

thoughts about returning to the Sect and how great his reward would be.

Lei Yu then started flying up at a certain direction perpendicular to the ground. He was heading to the place connected to the Chaotic Star Sea which was difficult for ordinary people to find. Even with modern science and technology, they still wouldn't be able to detect it or enter after getting there.

The air was becoming increasingly thin while Lei Yu's speed continued without stopping. Someone like him that had reached a certain level of power no longer cared if there was oxygen in the air for breathing. Holding their breath was a skill they had mastered, and the amount



of time they could hold it in for was difficult for ordinary people to imagine.

At this time, Lei Yu looked back down and the image of the entire Earth appeared before him. Based on his flying height previously, if he wasn't so impatient and opened up his perception ability, perhaps he would have detected Yuan Xiu or even Ai Er and Nuo Hu's weak aura. But since he was too eager to save those two, he completely forgot to activate that ability.

After flying for a full three hours, Lei Yu had finally arrived at his destination. He had travelled over a million miles yet he had merely traversed one percent of the total distance required to actually step

into the Immortal World.

At this time, Lei Yu was able to see a black hole off into the distance. The diameter of the black hole was quite wide to Lei Yu and without exaggeration; it was about the size of a large city.

Even with modern technology, it is doubtful anyone would dare to continue moving forward into the black hole after arriving near it. The consequences of entering a black hole are unknown but have been theorized, so no one would even dare to try.

Lei Yu paused for a bit before clenching his jaws and dove straight into it.

This place was no different to what Romon had described. Romon had explored the outer area of this black hole before and it was indeed the only path leading to the Immortal Realm. And inside the black hole was a place that struck fear in everyone's heart - the Chaotic Star Sea.

# Chapter 228: A Small Town In The Chaotic Star Sea

Darkness covered his eyes. One would say Lei Yu took the initiative to enter the black hole, but in fact, an intense suction power pulled him in where he was unable to leave even if he wanted to.

And endless space, it made Lei Yu feel like he was being exposed to the vast star fields of the universe. A magnificent scene that Lei Yu was unable to describe appeared causing him to be unsure of where he should go towards. When he turned around, he could no longer

see the exit path from this place.

In such a broad star field, burning boulders were floating all around. Although those boulders looked small, once Lei Yu got close to them did he realize they size of each boulder was comparable to the size of a city.

Of course, there were other ordinary rocks floating around as well. And on top of those ordinary rocks were some low-level biological species. But Lei Yu didn't have time to care about these strange species since he was concentrating on finding Yuan Xiu's presence.

Only now did he activate his perception ability to carefully comb

his surroundings. Lei Yu wasn't able to detect Yuan Xiu and only found a large amount of small and weak auras that weren't his target.

Shuttling through the vast star field, Lei Yu flew straight ahead in a certain direction. If one wanted to get past the Chaotic Star Sea, one must fly for at least two months before they can accomplish it. This journey would take a long time. And since the Chaotic Star Sea region was so vast, if Yuan Xiu was somewhere here, it would be impossible to locate him in a short amount of time. Thus Lei Yu decided to go straight to the Immortal World and up to the Sect to demand the return of Ai Er and Nuo Hu.

On a path without day or night, Lei Yu would retrieve food and water from this storage ring whenever he was hungry and needed to replenish his strength. Occasionally he would rest on some random planet to recover his internal energy.

This was a long and arduous journey. Even though Lei Yu was extremely anxious, he came to a conclusion that the Void Sect wouldn't hurt Ai Er and Nuo Hu. What he couldn't figure out was why they would capture them? Could their purpose be to lure him to the Sect? Since he has not arrived at the Sect yet, Lei Yu was confident that Ai Er and Nuo Hu should still be safe for now.

After thinking to this point, Lei Yu's

heart calmed down a bit.

Gently spitting out a mouthful of turbid air, Lei Yu slowly opened his eyes and looked around his surroundings.

Here was a planet amongst the hundred million others. This place was surrounded by green grass, trees, and flowers. The color of the grass and the trees here were roughly the same as each other. Lei Yu stood up and turned at his waist while doing some simple exercises to stretch his muscles. After that, he was ready to continue on with his journey.

At this moment at the north end of the planet, a loud explosion was heard. Lei Yu frowned and wanted



to sense what was happening there. But because his perception ability wasn't able to reach that far, he came up empty.

Due to his curiosity, Lei Yu wanted to head over there to take a peek. Hiding his aura, Lei Yu relied on his physical strength and started running. His speed was not slow so in a matter of minutes, he was already a few kilometers away maintaining an easy and leisurely pace.

Lei Yu had a reason for doing this. The Chaotic Star Sea was an unfamiliar place to him so he had to be cautious at all times. Who knows when something unknown might suddenly appear? Hiding his aura was the best way in self-

preservation.

As Lei Yu gradually got closer, a scene entered his eyes. This place actually had some buildings resembling a small town. The houses were built with stone and there were obvious auras of people around. Lei Yu felt this was kind of strange so he started walking towards it.

But as he entered the town, Lei Yu found the streets to be empty. Every household had their doors and window closed and not a person in sight was seen.

“Boom!”

Another loud sound was heard, allowing Lei Yu to estimate the

location of the noise. He then started jogging over at a certain direction.

He reached a huge empty field, and the field was surrounded by a large crowd. Each of the people in the crowd showed faces of panic as they looked at a burly guy with a large and sturdy physique in the middle of the field. In the hands of the burly guy was a copper hammer the size of two human heads, and that copper hammer did not look light at all.

There were several cracks on the ground that was obviously made by the burly guy smashing his hammer down upon it.

With a full beard on his face, the

burly guy glared at everyone in the surroundings. "You guys listen up carefully! Do not make my family's elder brother personally come here. Just obediently take out the crystal stones in your possession or else my family's elder brother will flatten this place and make your town completely disappear!"

Lei Yu blinked a few times while mumbling: "A robbery? How could a robbery take place here?"

Apart from dressing differently, the appearance of the people on this planet looked no different than Lei Yu. Everyone's appearance here seemed to have an ancient feel to it, and perhaps the people here were farmers so that's why they were mostly wearing short pants and

shirts.

Lei Yu began to wonder why the strongest person out of everyone was only a Sixth Order Warrior. And the majority of them did not even reach the strength of a Fourth Order Warrior. What was going on? Could it be that this place wasn't the Immortal Realm? Shouldn't the weakest people of the Immortal Realm be at the Gold Core stage?

As Lei Yu pondered this unusual situation, he felt someone tugging at his clothes. Lei Yu looked down and noticed a little boy who was about three or four years old staring at him with big clear eyes. With a tender voice, the little boy then said: "Big brother, don't be afraid. The Clan Leader will be here soon, he is

very strong and will drive away this bad guy.”

Lei Yu smiled before squatting down and gently touching the boy's head. Based on the words of the little boy, it appears the most powerful person among them weren't here and this bandit head was clearly here to loot a burning house. Lei Yu smiled, “Big brother is not scared, do you want big brother to beat up the baddie for you?”

“Really?” The child revealed an innocent face that was somewhat doubting Lei Yu's words.

Lei Yu slowly stood up and started walking to the center of the empty field. Whether it be the child's look of innocence or his look of

kindness, it triggered the benevolent side of Lei Yu. The burly guy noticed Lei Yu approaching and a grin appeared on his face. “That’s right; surrender your crystal stones so that you will suffer less torment of the flesh!”

Lei Yu made a strange facial expression where one eye was opened and the other eye squinting. “Can you tell me what a crystal stone is?”

Lei Yu’s question caught him by surprise, and his slow working mind didn’t know how to answer. The crowd in the surrounding field also started discussing with each other.

“Who is this person?”

“He doesn’t look like someone from our town!”

“Is he an outsider?”

At this time, a high pitched voice of a child was heard in the crowd:

“This big brother is here to help us beat up the baddie!”

Everyone’s gaze once again fell upon the sudden appearance of the youngster as the sounds of discussion gradually stopped.

“Kiddo, you’re here make a name for yourself by helping them?” The burly angrily shouted once he heard the child’s words.

“I’m not really here to make a name for myself. I just happened to be passing through and decided to



help take out the trash.” A slight grin appeared on Lei Yu’s face.

“You’re courting death!” Angered by Lei Yu’s words, the burly guy swung his hammer at him. Lei Yu merely shifted his feet and his body easily dodged as if he was a ghost.

“What? Is that all you’ve got?” Lei Yu further pulled away from the burly guy. No matter how hard he tried, the burly guy couldn’t catch up to Lei Yu let alone touch the corner of his clothes.

-----

# Chapter 229: A Token Of Appreciation

The burly guy was now running out of breath but had no way of getting near Lei Yu.

Lei Yu seemed to form an opinion on those in the Immortal Realm. Cultivators here appear to be specializing in one method of attacking and neglecting other methods of support. The previous Yuan Li only knew how to use his Sword Qi to perform long-distance attacks and didn't understand how to use that specialization of his to protect himself. As for this big

burly guy, it was clear that he over emphasized on close-quarter combat and neglected to train the benefits of speed or long-distance attacks.

Lei Yu took the appropriate steps and used this against the burly guy by bombarding him with a series of lightning attacks. The effects of this played out quite well.

The burly guy felt a numbness throughout his body causing him to lose feeling to everything. His mind was in a daze and his reaction now was half of what it was before.

This was of course great for Lei Yu because he could effortlessly take care of the burly guy without using too much internal energy. Once

again dodging the burly guy's smash of the hammer, Lei Yu tapped his toes and leapt up on top of the copper hammer. Lei Yu raised his leg past his head and kicked out, his toes lightly tapping the burly guy's head. The explosive force of this light tap wasn't something anyone could handle. One can say this was what made Lei Yu outstanding - not was he only good at melee combat, he had also studied many long-distance attack moves. When dealing with different types of enemies, Lei Yu would come up with different coping methods.

One could only see the burly guy crashing to the ground with surprise in his eyes. Although he did not die, wanting to stand up

again at this moment would not be a simple task for him.

“Great!”

“So powerful!”

“This outsider is really powerful! He’s not simple at all!” The crowd of town inhabitants were all applauding and yelling out. How would the townspeople not be happy when Lei Yu was able to so easily handle a large burly guy like this?

An old man was so happy that he started stumbling forward towards Lei Yu. The townspeople also started surrounding Lei Yu while rejoicing and some people were even stepping on top of the burly

guy to get close to Lei Yu. One could see that the townspeople were generally kind-hearted but not so much when dealing with bullies.

The old man made a deep bow towards Lei Yu to express his gratitude.

“Immortal! Thank you for coming to our rescue, allowing our little town of the Star Sea to escape from his murderous hands!”

“I just happened to pass by, don’t worry about it.” Lei Yu smiled.

At this time, the little boy forced himself through the crowd. “Big brother, you are so powerful!”

Lei Yu picked up the boy with an amiable smile, “What is your

name?”

“My name is Tian Dan Er!” The child replied while blinking his big clear eyes.

“Oh? Tian Dan Er (Field of Eggs)?  
Ha ha, good... ha ha...”

The crowd didn't know what Lei Yu was laughing about. Perhaps it was the strange name of Tian Dan Er, or maybe some other reason, but everyone also started laughing along with him. For now, the previous anxious atmosphere disappeared and turned into one that was more harmonious.

A while later, the burly guy slowly got up from the ground. Lei Yu coldly humphed, “If I ever find out

that you came here to plunder the property of these townspeople, I will chop off your head! Did you hear that?!”

“Yes! Yes! Thank you to this Immortal’s mercy for my life! Thank you to this Immortal’s mercy for not killing me!”

“Scram!”

Once Lei Yu finished speaking, the burly guy crawled off to the side and started injecting his internal energy into the copper hammer. He then jumped on top and started flying off in a shaky manner.

All the town’s residents gathered at a house that had a rather large courtyard. Looking at the mass of



people, there were a full two hundred of them.

Lei Yu and the previous old man were sitting in the middle of the courtyard on stone benches talking about something. Tian Dan Er was sitting on Lei Yu's lap with a face filled with such innocence making Lei Yu think he was incredibly adorable.

“Where did this Immortal come from and where are you going? Why did you land on our small planet?” The old man asked.

Lei Yu felt a small pain in his heart but did not reveal his true identity or where he was from. “I came from another planet and I'm planning to go to the Immortal World to

experience it, and I just happened to pass through here.” Seeing this town on the planet, Lei Yu understood that there was bound to be countless other towns like this throughout the Chaotic Star Sea.

“Immortal World? This Immortal is really going to the Immortal World?” There was a slight change in the old man’s expression; even the surrounding crowd started whispering to each other in discussion.

“That’s right; I’m planning on going there. Is there some sort of problem with it?” Lei Yu asked somewhat puzzled.

The old man sighed before saying: “This Immortal may not know, but

from your previous words, you must be a cultivator from another planet who has reached the Gold Core stage, and now you want to go to the Immortal World to make a name for yourself. Has this old man guessed accurately?”

With a slight hesitation, Lei Yu nodded, “That’s right.”

“Immortal may not know but I’ve heard the Clan Leader mention before that ordinary cultivators wanting to enter the Immortal World is extremely difficult.

Without a strong Sect as your backing, it’s really hard gain a foothold in the Immortal World. There might even be a chance that one may not survive there.

Therefore, this old man advises

Immortal to return to your planet because that place is not simple at all.”

After hearing the old man’s words, Lei Yu’s interest increased and asked: “What if one wanted to go there to get a master?”

The old man shook his head, “Even though there’s still a very long distance to the Immortal World, our little town’s Clan Leader had also tried to go there to get a master and rely on a big Sect. But he was rejected by them and was almost killed by the bandits on the road there. Because of that, people no longer dared to go past those surrounding planets to the Immortal World.”

It looks like the Immortal World was definitely not an easy place to get to. One could see that for those inhabitants of the Immortal World who would especially go to the Mortal World to find and draw him in, that would be the dream come true for many people here.

Unfortunately, a series of events changed everything and thinking about this further was useless.

“Please be rest assured old man, I still have some treasures for self-protection so I’m not afraid of the bandits. If I don’t at least try, it will forever bother me. Therefore...”

After hearing Lei Yu’s words, the old man knew that further persuasion would be of no use. He no longer discouraged Lei Yu but

took out a brown cloth from his body. Slowly unfolding it, three crystal like items the length and thickness of a thumb was revealed.

“Our town is really poor so there’s nothing much we can give Immortal to repay your gratitude. This old man has three crystal stones in his possession. Although it’s rather meager, but it still represents our thoughts in thanking Immortal in saving our town from disaster.” The old man placed the rough brown cloth and crystals into Lei Yu’s hand.

“There’s really no need!” Lei Yu hurriedly pushed it back to him. “It was only a slight effort on my part so it’s not worth making a big deal out of it! I’m not going to take it so

old grandpa should just take it back.”

Although this was the first time Lei Yu had seen such items, he remembered the previous words of the burly guy and they should be called Crystal Stones. Perhaps this is the currency that’s being circulated through the Immortal Realm.

Lei Yu didn’t know how much money these crystals were worth, but no matter their worth, he couldn’t accept them. The old man had already mentioned that their town on this planet was not wealthy.

After pushing back and forth between them, and with all the

things the crowd were saying, Lei Yu helplessly took two and left one of them with the old man. In the future, Lei Yu would realize his actions today were quite laughable since they were merely three white crystal stones.

-----



# Chapter 230:

## Massacring The Small Town

When he actually came into contact with the crystal stones, Lei Yu felt they contained a very pure spiritual energy which was something necessary to all cultivators. How could it be stored inside? After carefully sending his senses towards it, Lei Yu finally understood. The so called crystal stone was in fact a crystal condensed from spiritual energy. If one directly absorbed it, the crystal stone will diminish or even disappear.

“I won’t be staying here any longer and will be leaving immediately.”

Lei Yu cupped his fists towards the townspeople.

The old man and the townspeople knew it was useless to further persuade Lei Yu. If he really did have some magical treasures on him, it shouldn’t be a problem in protecting his life. Enduring some losses would also be a good experience so no one bothered to say anything more.

“May I ask of Immortal’s great name?” The old man asked.

Without hesitating, Lei Yu casually replied: “Lightning.”

“What an imposing name!”

Lei Yu waved at the crowd before leaving. Jumping onto the Sky Devouring Sword, his figure disappeared off into the distance. It was at this time from another direction, a person was rushing over. Lei Yu was able to sense it, “It should be their Clan Leader returning” Lei Yu mumbled to himself.

Suddenly, Lei Yu was shocked. “Something’s wrong, an aura of life has disappeared! Could it be...?!” Lei Yu quickly turned his body around and flew back towards the town on his sword. Once he arrived at the town, the place had already become a sea of blood. There was a tall and large middle-aged person holding a blade raised above his head, just about to cut off the old man’s head.

“Stay your hand!” Lei Yu madly screamed. He rushed forth like a lightning strike and managed to grab onto the about to descend blade with his bare hand. Lei Yu managed to stop the old man from being killed but his hand was cut and blood started dripping on the old man’s face.

“You were the one that injured my brother?” The middle-aged man coldly asked.

Lei Yu looked at the middle-aged man and noticed he was about two meters tall. He was burly and muscular, similar to the previous burly guy but the aura he gave off was more intense. Lei Yu could clearly sense this person was an expert at the middle Gold Core

stage.

“You bastard, look what you’ve done!” Lei Yu didn’t answer him but looked at the ground filled with hundreds of dead people. The bodies were piled up like a mountain while the fresh blood was like a river. The only person left alive was this old man.

“There’s no need to regret the deaths of these lowly life forms!” Scoffed the middle-aged man.

Cruel, this was just too cruel! Just because his brother was injured, this bastard actually eliminated everyone in the town. Lei Yu’s breathing was no longer calm and roared out in rage: “Compensate with your life!”

A fatal punch was thrown at the middle-aged man's chest but this person did not dodge or attempt to resist. The middle-aged man maintained his previous posture while his eyes were filled with disdain.

“Break!”

Lei Yu's heavy punch landed on the person's body but felt like he had struck a piece of steel. But the two of them were still forced back several steps with shock showing on both their faces.

“In my entire life, the only person that's able to force me backwards so far is just you!” The middle-aged man no longer took Lei Yu lightly and concentrated his efforts. He

originally thought that taking care of Lei Yu would be very easy but this was no longer the case.

Lei Yu stared angrily at the middle-aged man and coldly said: "That's because you have never encountered someone stronger than you. You're trying to show off when you're merely at the Gold Core stage? Simply laughable!"

"You're courting death!" The middle-aged man was enraged from being belittled by Lei Yu. Apart from the Manor Lord of his group, he had never suffered such indignation from outsiders before so how could he not be angry?

The middle-aged man rushed over like an arrow loosened from the

bow strings. Lei Yu calmly dodged to the side by rotating in midair before his toe tapped the back of the middle-aged man's head. Borrowing the force, Lei Yu then lightly landed over ten meters away.

Lei Yu's strange ghost-like movement skills made the middle-aged man surprised for a brief moment while his head felt a bit dizzy. But he wasn't the previous burly guy, he could still easily resist Lei Yu's attack on the head or else he would've fallen down on the ground already.

"You do have some abilities, how about going back with me? The Manor Lord likes talented people. I believe if you came back with me, the Manor Lord would highly value



you. You might even be like my brother and I in becoming a deputy leader. Then, wouldn't your life be filled with bliss?" The middle-aged man was slightly afraid so he decided to rope Lei Yu in. With Lei Yu's skills, there's a chance he won't be able to even touch him. And how could he handle being continuously attacked while unable to fight back?

"Pei! Burning, killing, stealing, and pillaging. These are the actions of beasts! My hometown had once experienced such a history, but that perpetrating country will eventually perish!" Lei Yu's words were clearly referring to the Kou country. Cui Ying Ying's company has currently monopolized the economy of the entire Kou country. She had done

this by partnering up with several large companies inside the country and weren't afraid if the country does go down.

"You refuse the wine of respect but rather drink the wine of penalty!"

[1] While Lei Yu was speaking, the middle-aged man rushed forth at his fastest speed. When he arrived within two meters from Lei Yu, he raised his blade and sliced down watching Lei Yu split into two halves.

He didn't even have time to be happy before he felt a sharp pain in his lower abdomen. The middle-aged man looked down and cold sweat suddenly beaded on his forehead.

“You... you...” The middle-aged man had wide round eyes while looking at Lei Yu unable to believe what had happened. The spot he had had previously struck was now empty.

“Idiot. You really thought that your attack could touch me?” Lei Yu coldly said.

The previous attack by the middle-aged man sliced apart the afterimage of Lei Yu. Lei Yu himself was unscathed from dodging it and managed to counterattack at the same time.

His body trembled while the middle-aged man sprayed out a mouthful of blood. His body felt like millions of ants were currently grazing on his internals making it

extremely unbearable.

It was hard for the middle-aged man to believe that Lei Yu's previous attack which did not seem to have much power would actually make him unable to resist.

Lei Yu was like a sticky substance attaching himself to the large man in close-quarter combat. The large middle-aged man just couldn't understand how Lei Yu's attacks suddenly became even more powerful. Only Lei Yu himself understood what was going on. His previous attacks were him using the power of his physique, and now he was combining his physique with his powerful lightning ability so it was natural for his damage to increase. Now that the middle-aged

man was trading blows with his target, he was getting over confident in himself. It was during this time that he lowered his defense to focus on offense, thus receiving more damage than normal.

The middle-aged man was becoming enraged after receiving Lei Yu's attacks. He roared out to endure the pain before rushing forth again. He was helpless in this situation because he didn't have any long-distance attacks, unless you counted him throwing out his blade.

Lei Yu was too skillful at dodging so the attacks could not hurt him at all. The ground had already started collapsing from the middle-aged

man's blade. Some parts of the ground even had huge trenches appearing.

A few minutes later, the middle-aged man felt completely helpless. He stopped his charge and gasped for breath before setting his sights on the old man not too far away.

The middle-aged man made a fake. Lei Yu thought he was going to attack again so he retreated back a few steps. Who knew, the middle-aged man suddenly turned and rushed towards the old man. He then clasped his hand around the old man's neck and lifted him up into the air.

With the old man's Fifth Order strength, there was no way he could

resist it. Being restricted by an expert at the Gold Core stage was something Lei Yu experienced in the past, the uncomfortable feeling was no different to almost dying.

Not good! Lei Yu wanted to rush forward to help the old man but the middle-aged man waved his blade, “What? You want him to die right now?”

-----

[1] Another way of saying it would be: “I asked you nicely but you refuse it, and would rather suffer the consequences?”

# Chapter 231: The Clan Leader Returns

“Let go, or else I will shred you to thousands of pieces!” Lei Yu coldly said.

“I would really like to see how you’ll shred me into pieces!” One step at a time, the middle-aged man walked towards Lei Yu. The latter didn’t dare to move an inch because as long as he made any moves, just a twitch of the middle-aged man’s fingers and the old man would instantly be killed.

“What to do? What should I do?”



Lei Yu's was running scenarios through his mind but couldn't come up with anything for the time being.

The middle-aged man was getting closer and closer. He once again waved his blade while his eyes were filled with a sense of evil. As long as he slashed his blade down, even if Lei Yu doesn't die, he would at least be seriously injured. At that time, even if Lei Yu wanted to continue resisting, there's no chance he could do a thing.

"Immortal, don't bother about me! Kill him! Kill him to avenge my clan!" The old man couldn't keep watching. Seeing that Lei Yu's head was about to be slashed by the blade, how could he not be anxious?

“Shut up or else I’ll crush your neck right now!”

Lei Yu sighed heavily. “I’m sorry old man. If it weren’t because of me, you guys would have escaped this crisis merely by paying up some crystal stones. But now the entire townspeople... I am so sorry to you all!”

“Immortal cannot think like that, your actions were out of good faith!”

The middle-aged man was enraged when these two seemed to completely ignore him, “Shut up!”

A “crack” sound that could cause a person’s heart to shiver was heard. Lei Yu cried out: “No!”

But it was already too late; the old man's life had ended. The middle-aged man grinned, "Don't you like meddling in other's business? It was all your fault for causing the entire town to lose their lives!"

"You f\*cking beast!" Lei Yu could no longer stay calm. The rage in his heart completely exploded forth making him pounce out like he had turned into a wild animal.

The middle-aged man had been long ready for an attack. Once Lei Yu's body moved, he had already swung his blade in a horizontal sweeping motion. Lei Yu had nowhere to escape to and at the last moment, he raised the Sky Devouring Sword in a vertical fashion by his waist.

“Ding!”

The sound of metals colliding was heard. Lei Yu’s body shook before the impact forced him flying off to the side. A piece of flesh on his waist was actually cut off by his own weapon causing blood to drip down to his legs before dying the ground red.

“Ha ha! You, a mere early Gold Core stage wants to compete with me? You overestimate yourself!” The middle-aged man continued speaking in disdain: “Before I was showing you some leniency because I thought you had potential in being of use to me, but you refuse to realize your own errors so don’t blame me for being ruthless!”

Would it be that easy for the middle-aged man who wanted to end Lei Yu off with one blade strike? Since everyone had now died, Lei Yu no longer had to worry about anything else. Lei Yu calmed his anger and took a few steps back, "I will now let you know the meaning of fear!"

Lei Yu raised the Sky Devouring Sword that was dripping with his own blood, high up above his head. Enunciating one word at a time, "Thirty-six Lunar Star technique's, fifth form!"

With the Sky Devouring Sword as the starting point, a bright light with starry dots mixed with purple lightning flew out. With this strike, even the air was cut apart as it

contained a powerful slicing ability. The strike created a sharp piercing noise and wherever it passed by the ground, a deep trench would be created following behind it.

“Whoosh!”

“Click~!”

The middle-aged man didn't even have time to raise his blade to block. A thin red line appeared on his face and ran down his body. A few seconds later, the middle-aged man had split into two straight down the middle, dying an extremely gruesome death. In his stomach area, a yellow golden bead started floating up into the air and slowly flew off in the opposite direction of Lei Yu.

Lei Yu noted the movements and leapt up, grabbing onto the golden bead. “Such a powerful aura!” Lei Yu was shocked, and figured it might be of use in the future. He then placed the golden bead inside his storage ring.

Turning around, Lei Yu gently lifted up the old man’s corpse intending on burying it with everyone else. He suddenly sensed a faint aura in the pile of bodies. As Lei Yu was about to try to figure it out, at that moment, a white light shot through the skies towards him. Lei Yu was suddenly shocked, “Another person has come!”

The person was dressed in a simple manner; his gray clothing even looked a bit dilapidated. The style of

clothing was very similar to what the townspeople here wore. From the look of his face, this new arrival was a middle-aged man with a moustache who seemed like a simple and honest individual.

This person's eyes were filled with shock as his body trembled. The person looked at the grounds filled with corpses, "How... how... how could this have happened?!"

Lei Yu was about to say something but this person suddenly turned around. Once he saw Lei Yu holding the old man, he suddenly shouted: "Father! Why did you kill my clansmen? Why?!"

"I..."



“Accept your death!” Lei Yu didn’t even have time to speak when this person already started chanting something. Right after that, the sword underneath the person’s feet looked like a soul had entered it and started flying towards Lei Yu. It was obvious the sword was being controlled by this person’s internal energy. This was considered a form of attacking and can be considered one of the more sophisticated kinds.

Lei Yu hurriedly raised his Sky Devouring Sword to block the strike. While blocking, he cried out: “You must be this town’s Clan Leader right?”

“There’s no use spouting crap! You will pay for this with your blood!”

The person's attacks became more furious and violent.

At this time, in the midst of the pile of bodies was a slight sound. Lei Yu was the first to hear it and hurriedly used his Sky Devouring Sword to smash away the Clan Leader's sword. Lei Yu's body then quickly flashed across towards the sound he heard. The Clan Leader didn't have time to react and by the time he realized something was up, his eyes became bloodshot and tears started dripping down.

“What are you trying to do?!” The Clan Leader clenched his jaws while displaying an expression that he wanted to rip Lei Yu to shreds with his bare teeth.

Lei Yu was holding onto a child that was covered in blood. One could see the child wanted to cry but was already scared beyond that stage. While also gasping for air, the child was simply unable to cry at this point.

Lei Yu didn't bother responding to that person or bother explaining himself. As long as the child was okay, everything would reveal itself.

"Tian Dan Er, are you okay?" Lei Yu softly asked, afraid that his own voice would startle him.

Standing a short distance away, that person was startled by the words. The only people in the town that knew Tian Dan Er's name were his own clansmen and no one else.

How did this stranger know it?

That's right; this child was the little boy with big clear eyes that Lei Yu first met - Tian Dan Er.

Tian Dan Er was fine because before the massacre, the townspeople had surrounded him. Once that middle-aged man started his massacre, he didn't notice his faint aura which ended up saving him. It's fortunate that Lei Yu pulled him out of the heap of bodies just in time or else the weight of all those corpses alone would take his life.

After a while, Tian Dan Er sobbed a few times before finally crying.

"Don't be afraid Tian Dan Er, that

baddie has already been killed by me. Don't be afraid!" Lei Yu gently stroke his back to comfort him.

# Chapter 232: Red Haired Yanrong

Tian Dan Er was crying his heart out while the other person was at a loss on what to do. His eyes looked at Lei Yu strangely as if waiting for Lei Yu to say something.

When Tian Dan Er's crying gradually became light sobbing, he could then finally say: "Clan Leader! There was... there was a big baddie who killed everyone in the town!"

A single sentence from Tian Dan Er washed Lei Yu of all charges, proving the villain was another person.

Depending on the families, everyone was buried in different graves but next to each other. Lei Yu gave a long sigh as he watched the person kneeling in front of the old man's grave without a word. While holding onto Tian Dan Er, Lei Yu walked over to the person and gently patted his shoulder.

“The dead cannot be resurrected, so please don't grieve too much and let life go on.”

“Thank you... thank you for punishing that evil trash. It's all my fault; it's my fault for coming back too late!”

“You shouldn't blame yourself. I actually have some responsibility when it comes to this matter. If I

hadn't gotten rid of that burly guy previously, he would have just collected some money and left. This scene in front of us would have never happened." Lei Yu sighed once again.

"Your intentions were out of the goodwill of your heart, so how can I blame you for this? Sigh~ since things have reached this point, my Tian family' town is considered finished. Where should I go from here?"

It was only now that Lei Yu realized this little town in the Chaotic Star Sea was called the Tian Family's Town. But unfortunately, this quiet and peaceful place has become a silent grave and will never revert back to its previous liveliness.



“So do you have any plans?” Lei Yu asked.

The man shook his head, “I can only take Tian Dan Er to another planet and settle him down. I promise to completely annihilate that tyrant's nest so that there's no way for them to perform their vicious deeds in the future!” The man heavily smashed the ground. It looks like his determination had been set and could not be changed.

Lei Yu hesitated for a bit before saying: “I will go with you!”

“What?!” The man was surprised and asked: “How can I accept that? You have already helped this town a lot, and aren't you currently injured?”

Lei Yu lightly touched the wound on his waist, "It's not a big deal, it's just a flesh wound. If you don't mind, I'd like to go with you!"

Rescuing Ai Er and Nuo Hu wasn't something that could be done in a short time. This matter was already related to him since it was because of his good intentions that caused the backlash from the tyrant, massacring the whole town. With this point alone, Lei Yu had a responsibility that he couldn't shirk.

"Thank you!"

"No need to be so polite, may I ask what your name is?" Lei Yu asked.

"Tian Ye. May this Immortal impart

your honorific title?”

“I know, I know!” Tian Dan Er rushed to answer with his big eyes, “Big brother is called Lightning! Grandpa Clan Leader said big brother’s name was very imposing!” It seems like he had forgotten his sadness. The innocence of a child would always bring a trace of warmth to those grieving, making Tian Ye and Lei Yu’s heart feel slightly better.

There was an advantage for Lei Yu in staying behind because he could at least get to know more things about the Immortal World from Tian Ye. The old man had previously said that Tian Ye had gone to the Immortal World in search of a master but returned

after failing. He must know quite a bit of things then.

Tian Ye took one last look at this piece of land with a nostalgic face. He then flew off with Tian Dan Er and Lei Yu to a nearby planet.

It was considered not far away but the distance to the other planet took at least the time one would take to fly around the circumference of our planet Earth. According to the Immortal World's calculation of time, it took more than an hour for the three of them flying at high speeds to reach their destination.

This was considered a dead planet. While there were trees around, they had all been burnt to charcoal. Lei

Yu felt this was strange and asked:  
“What happened to this place?”

“This place had once suffered the plundering of that evil tyrant. After that, the Clan Leader brought all his people to our Tian Family’s Town in order to escape this disaster. When things calmed down, they then moved back here.”

Lei Yu nodded, “It looks like this tyrant needs to be eliminated or else he’ll continue being a scourge to society!”

They continued flying forward at a certain direction before they eventually arrived at an area with green vegetation. There were some unknown animals here grazing on the grass that didn’t try to hide or

avoid the three. Those animals merely looked up at Lei Yu and company before going back to chewing their big mouthful of grass.

“We’ve arrived!”

The three of them then started descending. Throughout the trip, Tian Dan Er was too afraid to open his eyes because he had never experienced flying his whole life. That was natural because his age was so young, yet he still seemed quite excited about it.

This place was similar to the Tian Family’s Town where houses were constructed with rocks, but the population of this place was obviously lesser based on how

many buildings they had here. Looking at all those unknown named animals, Lei Yu could tell these animals were not afraid of people. Lei Yu could only conclude that these were some type of domesticated animals.

“Is brother Yanrong around?”

Tian Ye had used a loud voice that shook the grounds of this place, yet the people moving about didn't seem to be surprised or pay much attention to it. Some of them nodded or waved at Tian Ye and Lei Yu as if this was very natural.

“How come you used such a loud voice?” Lei Yu asked in confusion.

“What you don't know is that this

guy would often tunnel underground to cultivate. If I didn't use such a loud voice, it would be impossible for him to hear it."

Sure enough, the ground shook a bit and a person flew out of a nearby cave. There was something special about this person, which was his long red hair. Even his eyebrows and his beard were fire red. His clothes were also the same color as his hair, making him look like a human flame.

"Brother Tian Ye, do you really have that much free time to come get a free meal from me again?" The two of them seemed to have a good relationship and didn't hold back their words. Once this Yanrong person saw Lei Yu, he was a bit



surprised before asking: “This person is...?”

“He’s my friend, and his name is Lightning!”

“Brother Lightning, greetings!”

“Brother Yanrong!” Lei Yu also clasped his fists in greeting.

Yanrong took a closer look and immediately grinned, “Tian Dan Er! Quick, give me a hug!”

Tian Dan Er pouted, “No way, you’re too hot!”

“Ha ha...”

After a burst of laughter, Yanrong brought his guests into his own house. The atmosphere started to

tense up as Tian Ye told him everything that had happened.

“That bastard! That gang of thieves has really gone too far!” Yanrong roared out before angrily slamming his fist onto a wooden tabletop. The table was suddenly burnt into a crisp while the ashes scattered to the ground.

“Brother Tian Ye, what do you plan on doing? I, Yanrong will support you with all I have!”

Tian Ye quickly waved his hands, “No no, how can I accept that?”

“What’s wrong with that?!”

Yanrong then rapidly said: “If it weren’t for your help back then, my several dozens of townspeople

wouldn't have survived until now. The kindness you have shown us will be forever remembered by I, Yanrong. Now that you need help, how could I become a turtle and just hide without doing anything?"

"The whole point is that you still have a clan here while I have no one left. Your clan still needs your protection. If you left here, what if..."

# Chapter 233: No Signs Of Life

Tian Ye's words awed Lei Yu. In such a situation, he was still able to care about other people's well-being. How can Lei Yu not admire someone like him? Lei Yu then thought to himself, this type of friend was someone he must have!

"So my brother had thought of this issue, then it was I, Yanrong who has misunderstood you." Yanrong shook his red head and said:

"Brother Tian Ye does not have to worry about this. My child has broken through the Inedia stage and has successfully condensed a Gold Core. He is fully capable of

protecting this place. We can let go of any restraints and eliminate those beasts to their roots!”

“Good! Very good!” Tian Ye was immediately overjoyed. With another person’s help, their probability for success would be greater. Even if their enemy has a late Gold Core stage expert, the situation has become less difficult than before.

Lei Yu also nodded. These two people before him had their own unique characteristics: One was honest and kind while the other was loyal and straightforward, both of them were forthright great men. Lei Yu couldn’t help but change his perception to these people of the Immortal Realm; not everyone here

were filthy bastards like those from the Void Sect.

Lei Yu patted Tian Dan Er's head and said: "You be a good boy and stay here until we return, understand?"

Although he didn't know what these adults were talking about, he still knew that they must be talking about a serious matter. Tian Dan Er nodded his head to show he understood.

"Let's not delay this any longer, let's set off!" Said Tian Ye who was already impatient to get going.

The remaining two didn't have any objections. The three of them brought out their weapons and in a

blink of an eye, flew off into the distance.

There were countless living organisms in the Chaotic Star Sea, but this area closest to the entrance had very little powerful experts. It's also mainly because of this, that the area seems to be neglected by the Immortal World.

The so called local tyrant of this area lived in a planet not too far from where they were, and their “nest” was surrounded by several planets of different sizes. The people from each of those surrounding planets had suffered from this tyrant's plundering. Eventually, this plundering became a habit so from time to time; those inhabitants would automatically

turn in a portion of their crystal stones to ensure that they continued living in peace.

To those affluent towns and cities, a portion of crystal stones was considered nothing to them. But for a small and poor town like the Tian family's, it had become a huge problem. The townspeople had to rely on the Clan Leader to go to other planets for trade in order to barely satisfy their needs of food and clothing. Now these animals wanted them to take out all their hard earned money?

In another area.

“The Chaotic Star Sea has such a vast space, where could Lei Yu be?” Romon had been flying for a very



long time yet simply couldn't find any traces of Lei Yu. And Lei Yu's speed was much faster than his own so how could he even catch up? Not to mention Lei Yu had already flown to someplace else so there's no way Romon would be able to find him.

Romon's perception ability was not as powerful as Lei Yu, so it was natural that he was unable to feel the existence of other humans or living organisms amongst the billions of planets.

Slowing down his flying speed, Romon dodged to the side of a meteorite debris hurtling by. He then continued flying forward again.

After Romon entered the black hole, Yuan Xiu did not bring Ai Er and Nuo Hu in. He was actually waiting for his junior brother Yuan Li's arrival.

After a long time, he finally saw a white speck of light flying towards him. Yuan Xiu hurriedly pulled the two up into the air before blocking the path of that speck of light.

“Junior brother!”

“Ha ha!” I knew senior brother would have his own means. I previously went to the place where we found the extraordinary person and didn't find any traces of you. But once I saw how much panic they were in, I knew something must have happened and senior

brother had left the place.” Yuan Li smiled as he looked at the two people in Yuan Xiu’s grasp.

“That’s enough, that Lei Yu person has already entered for a long time now. I presume he has already gone deep into the Chaotic Star Sea. If he has luck on his side, he might already have reached the Immortal World. If not, then it would mean we did all this work for nothing.”

At this time, Ai Er and Nuo Hu were unable to move but their eyes could still see and their ears could still hear. They were really anxious about their current situation but had no way to deal with it. In front of these supreme experts, they had no power to resist at all. They couldn’t even die if they wanted to

and could only accept their fate.

“To be honest, that guy is really powerful. He had just reached the Gold Core stage and was able to defeat me. If it weren’t for him being merciful towards me, I would probably have fallen into the waters and became fish food.” Said Yuan Li who was somewhat fearful.

Yuan Xiu had suddenly become shocked, “He’s really that powerful?”

Yuan Li nodded, “That’s right. He gives people an impression that even though he’s at the early Gold Core stage, no matter his attack or defensive powers, they all surpass someone at the mid Gold Core stage. I am definitely not his

opponent!”

After hearing his junior brother Yuan Li’s words, cold sweat broke out on Yuan Xiu’s forehead. If he had come forward and blocked Lei Yu’s path back then instead of hiding, perhaps he would’ve lost his life already. After all, he has captured his girlfriend and his sworn brother.

“It looks like I was correct in not being too impulsive.” Yuan Xiu secretly rejoiced.

“Not only that, I find that his fighting style is very strange that does not give a person any chance to fight back. No matter if it’s close-quarters or long distance, he seems to be very good at them both.”

“There’s such a thing? It looks like our Sect’s decision was correct, this person is really extraordinary. If our Void Sect had him, then it can be regarded as huge plus!”

“What should we do now?” Yuan Li asked.

Thinking for a while, Yuan Xiu replied: “Let’s wait for a while longer. He might be currently looking everywhere for us in the Chaotic Star Sea. If we entered hastily and bumped into him, I’m afraid the situation would be difficult for us to handle.”

Yuan Li nodded in agreement. He didn’t want to fight with someone on a perverse combat level like Lei Yu because the feeling was not

enjoyable at all.

-----

Lei Yu, Tian Ye, and the newly joined Yanrong flew for a long period of time, and eventually got close to their destination. This place was different from others because it was filled with death; there were no trees or grass, and no signs of living creatures.

There were numerous sinkholes in the ground which Lei Yu concluded were the aftermath of many battles. It looks like they weren't the only ones that couldn't tolerate it anymore and went to seek revenge, except those people didn't succeed.

The three chose not to continue

flying and landed while trying to hide their auras to their best. Only Lei Yu was capable of not exposing any of his aura at all. No matter how strong the expert was, it's most likely they wouldn't be able to sense his presence. Adding Lei Yu's ingenious foot skills that resembled a roaming creatures', this made him look even more mysterious to others.

A few kilometers away from these three was a huge manor. It was surrounded by a high wall that was at least four to five meters tall. An ordinary person is simply unable to jump over it, yet would there be ordinary people living in such a place as this? Lei Yu couldn't understand why bother to having a wall then. But if he doesn't enter



inside, he may never know why.

This place gave one a sense of oppression because an aura of death exuded everywhere. Even when they were so far away, Lei Yu could still smell blood in the air. For the time being, he didn't dare to send out his perception to probe the area in case the three of them exposed themselves.

# Chapter 234:

## Manor's Spring Scenery

In actuality, Lei Yu didn't want to come here with these two since he had urgent issues himself, but humans tend to give into their own guilt. Lei Yu's kind-hearted intentions had an opposite effect causing Tian Ye's entire town to be massacred. If another person were in his shoes, they wouldn't just leave either. This was considered a responsibility that a decent human being should take care of.

Even if Lei Yu was to leave, Tian Ye would probably not say a word. But

Lei Yu's heart would not be able to forgive himself for causing this unintentional fault.

But in retrospect, being able to encounter experts after just entering the Immortal Realm, this could be counted as a chance at honing his skills. Listening to Tian Ye and Yanrong's words, this local tyrant was a Manor Leader and expert that had reached the late Gold Core stage. Since Lei Yu could kill a mid Gold Core stage already, then the tyrant was only considered half a level higher so it shouldn't too much of a problem for Lei Yu. Not to mention there's three of them as well right now which should further increase their odds in a victory.

“You guys stay and wait while I go take a look ahead!” Said Lei Yu.

The other two nodded. Their skills couldn't match Lei Yu's, and Lei Yu had hidden his aura so well that not a bit was leaked out.

“Be careful!”

Lei Yu quietly approached the manor wall. Stamping his leg on the ground with some force, he used just the right amount of strength to leap up and grabbed onto the top of the wall. Lei Yu raised his head up to take a peek inside and what he witnessed made him dazed.

“What the hell?! The difference between the inside and the out is way too much!” Lei Yu couldn't help

but sigh internally.

Inside the grounds of the manor were many brightly colored flowers of different species. Some Lei Yu had seen before while some were unknown. The grass here was vibrant everywhere while trees were neatly lined up on both sides of a pathway. The scenery of this manor was just too beautiful. The most breathtaking was to the right of the manor; there was an artificial pond that had a surface area of about four to five hundred square feet. There was an artificial rock mountain in the center of the pond and the surface was covered in lotus leaves. There was even two lotuses budding.

When Lei Yu's eyes were focused on

the scene in the pond, he couldn't help but swallow hard. A burly muscular guy was in the water eating something similar to a fruit. And to his left and right, two girls as beautiful as angels were completely naked and rubbings their breasts against the burly guy's arms. The snow white skin of these girls glistened with beads of water made the scene even more enchanting.

One could see the burly guy narrowing his eyes with a face filled with enjoyment. His mouth was constantly chewing the fruit and didn't bother with the two attractive girls on his sides.

At this time, ripples appeared on the water surface in front of the

burly guy before a third girl came out of the waters. After taking in a few breaths of air, she dove back into the waters and moments later, one could hear the burly guy start groaning softly. With such a blissful face, anyone can imagine what was going on. It was obvious the girl that dove back into the water was sucking the burly guy's dirty stick.

The burly guy suddenly opened his eyes wide and threw the fruit behind him. He yanked the girl out of the waters and flipped her around before plowing her from behind. This type of crazy scene made Lei Yu unable to resist some urges himself.

Breathing out heavily, Lei Yu quietly returned back to the other two.

“Brother Lightning, how was it? Is it dangerous inside?” Yanrong asked.

“Uh.....” It was really hard for Lei Yu to respond, but he still bit the bullet and replied: “It doesn’t appear to be dangerous. There’s a man inside... currently engaging in sexual intercourse with a woman. I was able to sense that this man should be the tyrant expert you guys have mentioned, who’s at the late Gold Core stage.”

Tian Ye and Yanrong glanced at each other. It was Tian Ye who responded the fastest, “This is the time he’s defense is the most lax, we should rush in and perform a sneak attack!”



“Good idea!” Yanrong immediately agreed with Tian Ye’s idea. Lei Yu also nodded in agreement.

The three quietly arrived behind the wall closest to the pond. They mutually nodded at each before suddenly leaping into the air. Locking onto the target, Tian Ye roared out: “Evil thief, give me your life!”

Three different streams of light flashed through the air heading straight for the burly man in the pond.

The burly man was shocked, but one had to admire his reaction speed. He pushed the girl he was humping away and immediately turned around when he saw those

three beams of light heading straight at him. All of this took a long time to describe but actually happened very quickly. The burly man then reached for a wide edged blade he had hidden in the water and threw it out at the approaching lights.

“Dang! Clang!”

The wide blade clashed with the three beams of light before flying off to the side and dropping to a grassy area. Losing one's weapon is equivalent to losing one's protection. At this time, Lei Yu and company were already rapidly descending, readying their next round of attack.

The burly man grabbed a girl beside

him and forcefully threw her at the approaching three. The girl shrieked as she hurtled through the air towards Lei Yu and them.

Technically, this human missile would not be of much use, but the girl's white naked body in itself was a lethal weapon towards men.

Lei Yu was the one with the fastest reflex and immediately used his energy aura to intercept the flying girl before deflecting her to the side. The girl landed on the ground with only minor scratches. She then got up and didn't bother with her eye-catching image and ran off like crazy into the distance.

It was at this moment that the burly man jumped out of the water and shook his palms towards his

weapon. As if the wide blade had its own spiritual awareness, it flew right back into his hands.

“Who are you people?!” The burly man coldly asked.

“The ones that are going to kill you!” Tian Ye angrily roared back.

The burly man sneered and narrowed his eyes, “With just you three, you think you’re qualified? You’re courting death!”

The burly man swiped his wide blade across the front of his body and a yellow crescent moon of light flew right for the three of them. This was rather similar to Lei Yu’s Thirty-six Lunar Star technique’s first form. And based on the power

of this attack, it was on another level higher than Lei Yu's. Even though the surface area was a bit smaller, the powerful force contained in this strike could not be looked down on.

Even with Lei Yu's powerful defenses, he didn't dare to take the strike head on. The three of them flew off at separate directions and was able to dodge the powerful crescent moon attack.

They could all hear a loud boom behind them but no one turned around to look. They already knew what sort of damage that strike could have caused.

The wall behind them had suffered the cut-like attack and a portion of

it had already collapsed.

The burly man looked like he wasn't in a rush to kill the three of them as he rested his wide blade on his shoulder. The two remaining girls by his side grabbed some of his clothes and covered his lower area before they dove into the waters and swam off to the side.

"I'm going to ask again, who are you people?" The burly man cold asked.

Tian Ye took one step forward, his anger was already at its limit before furiously asked: "Do you have two underlings, one in the early Gold Core stage and the other in the late Gold Core stage?"

“That’s right!” The burly man seemed to realize something and sneered, “There are many people who have sought me for revenge, but their fates have all been very tragic. Even late Gold Core stage people have come before yet were still killed by me. Do you guys really think you have the ability?”

Tian Ye’s breathing started increasing; his eyes had already become bloodshot. His own father had been killed by these people so how could he not be in pain? Having already lost all rationality, he started to rush forward before suddenly feeling a hand land on his shoulder in a tight grip. Tian Ye immediately turned around and looked at a pair of mysterious eyes staring right back at him.

“Let me do it!”



# Chapter 235:

## Beyond Imagination

Tian Ye wanted to say something but upon seeing Lei Yu's gaze, his words were swallowed back down.

“What's going on? Someone is in a rush to die first?” The burly man coldly humphed. Right at this time, a person from a distance came flying over. This person was also rather large and had a full beard on his face. Lei Yu recognized this new arrival as the burly guy he had taught a lesson to previously. Upon seeing him, Lei Yu became enraged. If it weren't for this bastard who

didn't change his evil ways and came to rat on the town, the massacre would not have taken place. Lei Yu started clenching his fists tightly.

"We still don't know who's going to be the one that ends up dying!" Lei Yu snapped back.

"What an arrogant kid!"

"Manor Lord, you have to be careful! Even though this kid had just reached the Gold Core stage, his strength seems to have exceeded the Gold Core stage and is very difficult to deal with!"

The burly man who was addressed as Manor Lord coldly humphed.

"You useless trash, you still have

face to speak up around here? Just watch how I take care of him!”

“What I hate the most is others being arrogant in front of me!” Lei Yu narrowed his eyes appearing without any fear. Perhaps he has already prepared on how to deal with his enemy.

“Die!” The Manor Lord yelled.

While holding the wide blade, the speed of his body had reached the extreme as he became a blur to attack Lei Yu.

“Ding~!”

“Bang~ Clang~!”

There were several sounds of impact with Lei Yu’s Sky Devouring

Sword yet the burly man did not gain any advantages. The so called Manor Lord began to get angry and started condensing more internal energy into the wide blade. He then performed a spinning slash yet Lei Yu still easily dodged the strike.

This Manor Lord's speed and strength was way above his subordinates, but there was still a gap when compared to Lei Yu's speed. As for strength, Lei Yu knew he wasn't a match so he didn't dare to take anything head on. He would block when he could and dodge when the strike was too powerful.

The Manor Lord increased his speed yet still couldn't compare to Lei Yu's illusory movements. Still not getting any results after several

attacks, he then began to change his method of attacking.

Since his speed was not as good as his opponent, then the most sensible approach was to back off and wait for the right time. It appears that this Manor Lord's focus was close-quarter fighting and wasn't good at long-range attacks. Or else previously, he wouldn't have thrown out the girl and his blade at the oncoming three of them.

Up until now, Lei Yu had been releasing his perception ability and confirmed the Manor Lord had indeed reached the late Cold Core stage. When it comes to a one-on-one fight, the odds of Lei Yu winning were impossible. But Lei

Yu still had several methods of attacking he hadn't revealed yet. Once he does use them, it's most likely the Manor Lord will be seriously injured. By that time, Tian Ye and Yanrong could both go all out on him and the results should be a positive outcome.

One may have these thoughts, but making it happen may not be that easy.

At this time, the Manor Lord started retreating backwards and stopped, waiting for Lei Yu to lead the attack.

Those that specialized in long-range attacks would gather their internal energy into a physical form outside their bodies and shoot it off at a distance. And those that

specialize in melee attacks would have power beyond imaginable in each of their strikes. There's really no saying which of the two were better or worse since it depended on the user and whether they could grasp the opportunity for a fatal strike.

Lei Yu unfurled his arms; his right hand holding the Sky Devouring Sword while a lightning ball hovered above his left palm. Although this attack of his didn't have too much power behind it, the biggest advantage in using it was that it was quick to create and didn't require much effort.

Like a bullet, the lightning ball Lei Yu tossed out flew straight at the Manor Lord. The latter raised his

wide blade vertically in front of him to block. A “dong dong” sound was heard, and Lei Yu’s attack was scattered without having much effect. The Manor Lord then looked at Lei Yu...

“Shit!” The Manor Lord yelled, and quickly raised his blade above his head. This reaction of his was extremely quick and the sound a metal colliding was heard. The Manor Lord’s body was smashed into the ground at least three feet deep by Lei Yu who had descended from the air.

The Manor Lord roared before jumping out of the ground while Lei Yu had already retreated off into a distance. Lei Yu’s previous lightning ball attack was just a fake and



didn't expect the burly man's reaction to be so quick. He was actually able to detect Lei Yu's second attack in such a short amount of time and successfully block it. It looks like this guy is truly not someone easy to deal with.

Everyone knew the Manor Lord had suffered a loss from this hidden attack. Raising his blade to block was purely out of instinct, so the sudden attack was not blocked by him using his full strength. His arms were now feeling a paralysis-like feeling. As for Lei Yu, while his left hand was previously condensing the lightning ball, his right hand was already charging his internal energy into the Sky Devouring Sword. One could say Lei Yu had used over fifty percent of his

power already yet the effects of his attack didn't achieve what he was expecting.

The Manor Lord appeared to be angered by Lei Yu's deceptive attack. Based on these circumstances, he was afraid that he wouldn't be able to deal with Lei Yu if this continued. A deep breathing sound started coming from the Manor Lord's mouth before a column of red aura started rising from his back. The red aura then completely enveloped the Manor Lord, shredding all the clothing on his body. Replacing the clothing were patterns created by the red aura. Gradually, the column of red aura disappeared leaving behind the Manor Lord completely covered in a red zebra-like pattern.

“Now this appearance is quite unique!” Lei Yu was somewhat surprised and couldn’t understand why the burly man did this. But the moment Lei Yu released his perception ability, his face froze. He then shockingly said: “You’re not at the late Gold Core stage!”

Once Lei Yu’s words were heard, Tian Ye and Yanrong behind him paled with shocked expressions.

“Brother Lightning, could... could he be...?”

Lei Yu didn’t even dare to turn his head around to answer. Facing this Manor Lord who had changed his appearance and now had a momentum that overwhelmed everyone, Lei Yu replied: “The aura

of his momentum has at least doubled! If I'm not wrong, he should have already reached the... Nascent Soul stage!"

"What?!"

"What?!"

Tian Ye and Yanrong both exclaimed aloud at the same time. They both have seen experts at the late Gold Core stage before, but weren't those Nascent Soul experts supposed to only appear in the inner depths of the Chaotic Star Sea? Why would one suddenly appear here in the outskirts?

"That's right! Unfortunately for you guys, you've realized this too late so just go ahead and die for me!" The

words of the post-transformed Manor Lord were exceptionally arrogant and didn't put the three of them in his eyes.

One could see a slight flash on the Manor Lord's brown hair on his head before a terrifyingly strong aura started rising from his body. It was at this time that Lei Yu and company started to feel fear in their hearts.

"Not good!" Lei Yu loudly yelled while at the same time, raising his Sky Devouring Sword. He then immediately shouted: "Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, fifth form!"

A powerful attack was combined with a terrifying cutting power. Lei Yu's attack was like a meteor as it

rapidly flew straight for the burly man. The entire place started shaking while the ground was split apart!

One could see this Manor Lord didn't even move. He watched this powerful attack arrive in front of him, an attack that had split the middle-aged man in half back then when he massacred the town. The Manor Lord roared out before slashing his blade downwards. In an instant, the earth seemed like it had shattered while a blast of light shot out everywhere. This was the type of dazzling light that one could not open their eyes to look at directly. Even Lei Yu couldn't help but partially close his eyes.

# Chapter 236:

## Spinning Wide Blade

The explosion created an extremely powerful energy aura, blasting the surface of the pond and creating a huge wave that reached the skies. As things started to calm down, the Manor Lord was still standing at the same spot uninjured. The grass in the surrounding area had all disappeared leaving only the bare soil.

But the Manor Lord's eyes did reveal a shocked look while also looking at Lei Yu with eyes of confusion. He couldn't understand

how a mere early Gold Core stage person, one that had just reached it as well, was able to release such a powerful attack.

Even though this attack was different from some apocalyptic methods or collapsing an entire region of land, it still had its merits when compared with those large area attacks! This attack concentrated all its power into one point, which was a move that was very difficult for a person to withstand.

The Manor Lord was surprised, but Lei Yu's expression was beyond shocked. Lei Yu couldn't believe what he was seeing were in fact reality!



There was someone that could actually block his focused fifth form attack head on. Was this person still human? But on another thought, this was an expert at the Nascent Soul stage so it completely explains everything.

Tian Ye and Yanrong had their mouths agape for a long time already. For such a powerful and fast attack, if they were the ones on the receiving end, they were afraid they would have already been cut in half. Yet this attack had been completely withstood by the Manor Lord.

That burly guy that Lei Yu had fought with previously was dumbfounded. He felt very fortunate that Lei Yu previously at

the Tian Family's Town did not use such a move on him, or else he would never be able to come back to this manor.

To everyone's surprise, the Manor Lord did not show any anger and actually smiled. "A mere early Gold Core stage would have such a move... good! Very good! It looks like there's no need to continue fighting. I doubt you can release such a powerful attack again since I can tell a large portion of your spiritual energy has already been depleted. I estimate you have less than half left, right?"

Lei Yu coldly humphed, "Whether I can or cannot release another such attack is not up for you to decide!"

The Manor Lord waved his hand, “Let’s put it this way, you are fully qualified to stay here and work for me with your current abilities. I promise you that from now on, you will live in a world filled with women and money. What do you think? Oh yeah, I am also willing to accept those two friends of yours you came with.”

“Dream on!”

The Manor Lord narrowed his eyes, “You want to refuse the wine of respect and decide to drink the wine of penalty?! Once I make my move, I’m afraid it will be too late for regrets!”

Lei Yu did not have an ounce of fear and coldly replied: “I really want to

see what qualifications you have! Could everyone in the Nascent Soul stage be as arrogantly savage as you?”

“Good! Such a backbone! I’m willing not to kill you in case you really lose your life the moment you regret your words!” The moment the Manor Lord finished his words, he had already disappeared from his spot. Lei Yu was shocked and quickly looked around but didn’t find any traces. He then closed his eyes and relied on the resonance generated by his lightning ability to release a magnetic field. Lei Yu was hoping he would be able to find traces of the Manor Lord in the shortest amount of time possible.

With all that effort, Lei Yu still

couldn't find anything. Could he have disappeared into thin air? Or has the Manor Lord retreated to a distance beyond the area of his perception ability? No, impossible! Lei Yu shook his head to rescind his thoughts. So what could be the reason? He then thought of one possibility: The Manor Lord wasn't in the air but underground!

Lei Yu stomp his foot and started moving around. He also didn't forget the existence of another evil bastard. Lei Yu activated his speed to the limit and instantly arrived in front of that burly guy. Lei Yu then revealed his signature smile, "I previously spared your life yet you didn't change your ways and came back to rat on us. For all the lives lost in the Tian Family's Town, you

will have to pay the price!”

Even though Lei Yu had a smile on his face, the burly guy only saw a person holding his death warrant. The burly guy didn't even have time to react when he felt a cold object resting against his neck. The burly guy widened his eyes hoping to beg for mercy but it was already too late. Lei Yu injected internal energy into his Sky Devouring Sword and made a slicing motion with both hands.

“Swish~!”

A human head flew up into the air and a fountain of blood gushed out. And this human head happened to still show a person with wide and round opened eyes.

Lei Yu gently leapt up, and from bottom to upwards made a slash to cut the head into two. The two parts of the head fell into the pond causing blood and white sticky brain matter to float on top of the water. The two naked girls off to the side shrieked in fear before quickly scrambling back onto land and running off to a corner of the manor.

These girls should consider their lives lucky. Lei Yu's previous attack had been blocked by the Manor Lord and the energy aura from the collision did not take their lives.

It was at this time that Lei Yu suddenly felt his scalp go numb, and a cold sinister feeling then started crawling up his back. Lei Yu

wanted to turn around but only heard a voice, "Don't move!"

A big hand had tightly gripped onto Lei Yu's shoulder. There was no need to ask, it had to be the Manor Lord that had previously disappeared. Lei Yu didn't even notice when this guy had appeared behind him.

Even Tian Ye and Yanrong off in a distance didn't notice how the Manor Lord appeared out of nowhere. This all happened faster than the words used to describe it. The two of them immediately rushed forth hoping rescue Lei Yu from the grips of the Manor Lord but right at that moment, the Manor Lord turned around and waved his blade. A powerful Sword



Qi blasted out, forcing the two of them back to their original positions.

“So... have you changed your mind?” The Manor Lord asked in a sinister manner.

Lei Yu started to close his eyes. In the next moment, he suddenly opened them and a purple light flashed in his pupils. One could see his body tremble before a powerful internal energy mixed with a terrifying amount of lightning energy erupted from his body, forcing the Manor Lord's grip on his shoulder to release itself. Lei Yu slowly turned around, “So you hid yourself and appeared again... what's so scary about that?”

The Manor Lord coldly humphed, “You’re not crying until you see your own coffin! Let me show you my true attack powers!”

One could see the Manor Lord shift his blade to a vertical position before “crack~”, stabbing it into the ground. His mouth then started chanting something and his blade looked like it had its own soul. It started shaking like crazy and giving off a sharp metallic buzzing sound.

“Boom~!”

The wide blade rose into the air and a noticeable change appeared on the blade’s edge. The originally all copper yellow color now had stripes of red mixed in; the pattern was

exactly the same as the Manor Lord. The blade was now spinning in the air creating bursts of wind. The Manor Lord then said: “I will ask you one last time, have you changed your mind?”

“You wish!” Lei Yu made his internal energy surround his body, preparing to withstand whatever was going to be thrown at him.

“Go!” Shouted the Manor Lord. The wide blade was really obedient and started flying downwards. It didn’t stop spinning and its speed was almost as fast as Lei Yu’s previous fifth form attack.

Lei Yu frowned and thought to himself, “Not only does this guy have long-range attacks; his defense

is also extremely tough! What should I do?"

Indeed, there was no doubt about the toughness of the Manor Lord's defense. One could already clearly see it from him smashing apart Lei Yu's Thirty-six Lunar Star technique's fifth form. And at the present, he was obviously controlling his weapon for a long-range attack.

The sharpness of the spinning blade mixed with a powerful internal energy was something that could not be looked down upon. At this time, that spinning wide blade was rapidly flying straight at Lei Yu, about to cut him up into slices of meat!

# Chapter 237:

## Mournful Scream

The wide blade tightly locked onto Lei Yu. Even if he wanted to dodge it, it was clearly impossible.

In a short amount of time of less than a second, Lei Yu had already released over a dozen lightning balls in order to block the spinning blade. But it was of no use, the wide blade didn't look like it had been affected at all.

Lei Yu swallowed a few times. Since there's no way of dodging it, he might as well take it head on!

Standing off in a distance was the

anxious Tian Ye and Yanrong who couldn't do a thing. Even if they were to rush forth, there's nothing they could help with. All they could do was stand there and stare at Lei Yu, hoping some miracle might occur.

Eyes without any emotions except for endless mysteriousness, Lei Yu started injecting his internal energy into the Sky Devouring Sword. More and more energy continued flowing inside the sword...

At this moment, the spinning blade was less than a meter in front of Lei Yu. One could see Lei Yu raising the Sky Devouring Sword before roaring out.

“Ahhhh!”

This cut was powerful enough to cleave mountains and rivers! The trajectory of the Sky Devouring Sword made a beautiful arc in the air, causing a “hissing” sound as if the air was tearing apart. In that instant, time seemed to have frozen in place as one watched Lei Yu’s sword and the spinning blade collide together.

“Bang~!”

“Crack~!”

The two collided and several crisp sounds were heard. That was followed by the ground shaking and a burst of powerful energy aura exploding forth. The flash of red and purple seemed to have fused together, and every stream of light

looked like it had the power tear apart everything as it burst through the surrounding.

The surrounding breathable air had been completely shattered and no longer existed. The two of them were surrounded by a red and purple cross shape light and an egg-like shaped energy. Everyone on the outside couldn't see what was going on inside.

At this moment, one could hear a scream of pain. That voice should be Lei Yu's!

After more than a full minute, the light gradually subsided and everything seemed to have calmed down. Lei Yu and the Manor Lord were standing in their original



positions breathing heavily. In-between the two of them was a hole in the ground that was at least three meters deep.

Tian Ye was the first to notice Lei Yu's arm. Blood kept flowing down from it, creating a thin line that dyed the ground red. Tian Ye followed the line of blood upwards to look for the wound, and noticed an exposed bone on his elbow! It was obvious that Lei Yu's previous attack was too forceful; the collision resulted in his elbow being ripped out from his muscles and pushed out into the open.

This pain was probably something not anyone can tolerate, and most likely more painful than having something broken. This was similar

to tearing apart one's flesh, and dislocating the bone in order to force it out of place.

Tian Ye's scalp went numb,  
"Brother Lightning!"

It seemed like Lei Yu didn't hear Tian Ye's voice as he continued staring at his opponent in front of him. The Manor Lord's eyes appeared to be filled with shock and awe before he asked: "What kind of weapon is that?"

Lei Yu replied with one word at a time: "Sky Devouring Sword!"

"I must have it!" The eyes of shock on the Manor Lord had become one that was filled with greed as he stared at Lei Yu's sword.

After hearing the Manor Lord's words, Tian Ye and Yanrong standing off in a distance finally noticed - the wide blade had actually disappeared!

After combing the area, they finally noticed that the originally powerful wide blade had become shards of debris scattered on the ground. And on the bodies of Lei Yu and the Manor Lord, there were traces of the scattered blade stabbed into their muscles.

The two involuntarily looked at the sword in Lei Yu's hand and couldn't help but be shocked at how tough it was.

Lei Yu breathed out heavily before saying without much strength left:

“He’s already without a weapon, so shouldn’t you guys make a move now?!”

With Lei Yu saying that, Tian Ye and Yanrong were struck with realization before recovering their senses. It had always been Lei Yu alone fighting the opponent, and it felt like it had become a personal duel after arriving at this place. The two of them hadn’t done anything at all! Now that Lei Yu had shattered the Manor Lord’s weapon, this was the perfect opportunity of a lifetime!

The two of them no longer stayed still and started condensing their internal energy. They were now releasing a powerful aura, planning to use their life’s most powerful

attack in dealing with this fearsome opponent.

There's no way Lei Yu would allow this person to lay their hands on his own weapon. He quickly stored the Sky Devouring Sword into his storage ring and started retreating like a storm. In less than a second, he was already a hundred meters away.

Lei Yu had not exhausted all his strength yet. Although his arms suffered a serious injury, there was nothing wrong with his legs so his retreating speed was not impacted. It was just that the pain in his arm while moving made his mouth crimp a little.

The first to form his attack was

Yanrong; he had formed a huge fire pillar and wrapped it around himself and the sword in his hand. The surrounding area was instantly burnt to a crisp. If it weren't for Tian Ye having already released his internal energy into an aura surrounding himself, he may be currently wearing only his birthday suit.

A huge fireball was then condensed that seemed to be able to burn forever. Under Yanrong's control, it was then flung out. The air in the surrounding was distorted from the heat as the fireball flew straight for the Manor Lord.

At the same time, Tian Ye had completed forming his attack. A sword shining with white light was

tossed into the air, and instantly becoming several sizes larger. The huge sword spun around once before shooting off straight for the Manor Lord as well.

This was a top and bottom attack at the same time. If it were another person, they would have already accepted their fate because there was no place to escape to. But when the two thought their attack was about to succeed, the previous scene happened once again. The Manor Lord had disappeared without a trace!

This time, it was Lei Yu's turn standing off at a distance who couldn't see how the Manor Lord managed to disappear. After clenching his teeth, Lei Yu used his

left hand to grip his right arm and forcefully twisted. After a “click” sound, Lei Yu clenched his right fist. Even though the intense pain hadn’t gone away, at least his bone that had shifted out of place had been restored to its original position. Now he was able to control his right arm again.

“Pak!”

“Pak!”

There were two cries before Tian Ye and Yanrong flew off like a kite with its strings cut. They landed heavily on the ground with blood coming out of their mouths, and couldn’t understand how they were already seriously injured.



After all, their defense wasn't as good at their attacks. With the flaws these two had, if they didn't make a killing pre-emptive strike, they were probably just waiting for their own deaths.

At this time, the Manor Lord's figure was slightly visible. Lei Yu was finally able to clearly see that this person was somehow using the red patterns on his skin to help him instantly disappear. But even though Lei Yu figured it out, what was the use of it?

The moment the Manor Lord emerged, his palm had already condensed an energy ball the size of a human head. He then flung it towards the direction of where Tian Ye had landed. The energy ball was

shining a dazzling light and Tian Ye's defense was definitely not capable of withstanding it. Now, the energy ball was getting closer and closer towards Tian Ye.

At this extremely urgent moment, Lei Yu's body flashed forward. In a very short amount of time, he had called out the Sky Devouring Sword and utilized his speeds to the extreme. It was just enough to catch up!

Lei Yu raised his arms and chopped the energy ball in half, but flew back from the impact and landed heavily on the ground while spraying out a mouthful of blood.

The three of them were now seriously injured, and wanting to

defeat the Manor Lord had become an impossible task.

It was at this time, an impossible to resist energy aura descended from the sky. Lei Yu and company raised their heads to look up but the pressure of the energy aura made them unable to see much. They could only see the Manor Lord reveal a look of horror in his eyes.

Right after that, “Nooo!” A mournful scream was heard.

# Chapter 238:

## Chaotic Star Sea's Guardian

Two bright lights shot down from the sky. Perhaps it was because the Manor Lord's whole body was enshrouded by the light, his body began to rot and he fell to the ground rolling in pain.

Lei Yu and company couldn't understand what was happening. They only saw two beams of light, one black and one blue shine again and the Manor Lord's screaming voice stopped. The Manor Lord had now become a pile of rotten meat and within the pile of rotten meat;

there was a long red string that was undamaged from the shining lights.

This complete reversal of the situation made the three unable to come to their senses. Originally unable to fight anymore, they never expected the sudden appearance of lights would annihilate the Manor Lord. The three of couldn't help but have cold sweat drip from their foreheads. What would've happened if those lights shone on them instead? Would they also be like the Manor Lord and turn into a pile of rotten meat that could easily make one vomit?

“Humph!” There are laws in the Chaotic Star Sea; the outer periphery does not allow cultivators beyond the Gold Core stage. Even

there are existences beyond that stage; they must possess the token given by us! You lowly servant dare to suppress your cultivation to avoid us killing you? You deserve more than death!”

Said a voice from the light. Lei Yu and company watched as the light gradually subsided, revealing two people standing in place.

Instead of saying two people, it was more like one person and one beast. This person was dressed like an Immortal, and his face made him look like a middle-aged man. He was considered quite handsome but the terrifying aura he exuded was something no one could bear, including Lei Yu and company. This sense of pressure made them three

unable to move at all.

As for the beast, it was wearing a full body metal armor armed with a battle axe. Its skin color was dark purple and its eyes were yellow with black vertical slits as pupils. Two fangs were exposed upwards from its mouth with green scattered hair on top of its head, making its whole image quite terrifying to behold. The one that spoke previously was exactly this Orc.

After looking at Lei Yu and company, the Orc then said: "Once you guys reach the Nascent Soul stage, my advice is that you leave the outer periphery of the Chaotic Star Sea. Otherwise, your fate will be exactly the same as that one!" After saying that, a bright light once

again flashed around the human and beast before two beams of light shot up into the sky. Lei Yu and company didn't even have time to orient themselves before those two disappeared without a trace.

The three of them stared at each other and didn't say anything for a while. Lei Yu clearly saw Tian Ye and Yanrong both have strange expressions on their faces, and their body was trembling non-stop.

“Who were those two people?” Lei Yu asked.

While still trembling, Tian Ye breathed out heavily before replying: “Those two were the Chaotic Star Sea's Guardians.”



“Chaotic... Chaotic Star Sea Guardians?!” Hearing that title, Lei Yu recalled the Void Sect’s Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li’s words - they had also previously mentioned some things about the Guardians.

Now Lei Yu finally understood why the appearance of the Violet Gold Hall’s Luo Feng would make the others so surprised. Luo Feng’s strength was without question, at the Nascent Soul stage. Based on what the two guardians said, those at the Nascent Soul stage weren’t allowed to appear in the outer periphery of the Chaotic Star Sea. Somehow, that Luo Feng not only crossed the outer periphery, but also entered into the Mortal Realm. Then there’s only one explanation - he possesses the so called token

mentioned by those two! But what kind of relationship did Violet Gold Hall's Luo Feng have with the Chaotic Star Sea Guardians? How did he get a hold of the token? This was the million dollar question.

Since the Manor Lord had died, the three could be considered safe now. It was after a long while before Tian Ye and Yanrong recovered from their shock from seeing the two Guardians. In a shaky voice, "Brother Lightning, we simply didn't help at all! Ashamed, we're so ashamed of ourselves!"

"There's no need to say such things!" Lei Yu smiled while waving his hand. "It was only because I had some special attacks, or else I'm afraid the three of us would have

died in this place!”

The other two didn't know what else to say while it was Lei Yu who was the first to break the silence. “I think I should leave now since I still have some important matters to tend to.”

“How can that be?! Brother Lightning, no matter what, you have to follow us two back so we can properly thank you!”

In fact, a big rock had been removed from Lei Yu's heart now. From the death of the Manor Lord and the burly guy, he was considered having atoned for the guilt from the Tian Family's Town massacre. Lei Yu felt much more at ease now so there was no need to

continue staying in this place. His worry for Ai Er and his big brother Nuo Hu did not diminish one bit, and his anxiety was actually increasing.

“There’s really no need, I’ve accepted the goodwill and kind thoughts of you two. There’s really something important I must do right away!” Lei Yu’s tone was very firm. The two knew further persuasion would be of no use, so they could only nod their heads.

“Brother Lightning, when you have free time, remember to come back so we can get together!” Said Yanrong in a boisterous manner.

“That’s of course. Oh right, when you return, let Tian Dan Er know

that once I'm free, I will go see him!"

"Don't worry, I will." Replied Tian Ye with a nod.

"Brother Tian Ye, there's one thing I would like to ask you." Said Lei Yu.

"There's no need to be so polite brother Lightning, just go ahead and ask away!"

Lei Yu nodded and slowly asked: "I... I heard from your father that you had previously entered the Immortal World before?"

"That's right, I've been there. But due to some reasons, those so called big schools and sects rejected me. I'm so ashamed!"

“Then I want to ask: What exactly does the inner depths of the Chaotic Star Sea have? And why did those Guardians say that anyone who surpasses the Gold Core stage aren’t allowed to stay in the outer periphery?”

After hearing Lei Yu’s question, the two seemed to understand something. Tian Ye then replied: “The inner depths of the Chaotic Star Sea is a place where fishes and dragons are mixed together[1], any unique people or strange beasts may appear and is extremely dangerous. In the Chaotic Star Sea and the Immortal World, as long as someone has the strength, they have the right to kill. This is a world for the strong and the weak can only act servile or else they would

face death. In the Chaotic Star Sea, there's only one path that no one dares to tread on, and that's the only pathway from the Immortal World to the Mortal World. Only that place is the safest. But the Chaotic Star Sea is boundless, so wanting to find that pathway is next to impossible. Even if you do somehow find it, without enough crystal stones, the Guardians will kick you out."

After hearing Tian Ye's explanation, Lei Yu finally understood why the Immortal World's Void Sect, Skywalk Sect, and Violet Gold Hall were able to successfully send forth people into the Mortal World. Not only did they pay the Guardians the so-called "road toll," the path they took did not have any danger

whatsoever. Otherwise as Tian Ye said, the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea was filled with danger; wanting to cross it with a low level cultivation was harder than ascending to heaven!

But Lei Yu didn't have those crystal stones mentioned, and even if he did, he only had two of them on hand. Plus, this was something the old man had given him to express his gratitude. There was also no way Lei Yu would be able to find this safe direct path through the Chaotic Star Sea so there was only one option he could choose: Go straight through this fearsome Chaotic Star Sea!

-----



[1] Most of you already know that idiom from reading other novels, but just in case, it means good and bad people are mixed together.

# Chapter 239: Three Story Pavilion

“Brother Lightning, could it that you’re planning to go to the Immortal World?” Tian Ye couldn’t help but ask.

Lei Yu nodded, “That’s right, I have to go there.”

Lei Yu had said before that he had something important to do, and wanting to persuade him out of those thoughts was clearly impossible. But the dangers of the Chaotic Star Sea were well known to everyone so it was inevitable that these two were worried for him.

“How about... I will accompany brother Lightning there?” Said Tian Ye.

“If you guys are going, might as well count me in too!” Yanrong followed up.

Lei Yu waved his hand, “You two are more informed than I regarding the dangers of the Chaotic Star Sea, so I don’t want you two to accompany into it solely for my own personal reasons.”

“But...”

“There’s no need for buts!” Lei Yu interrupted the words of the two. “This task is something I have to do alone. I also need to go look for a friend of mine, so it’s best if I do

this by myself. My two fellow brothers have no need to worry, I will be careful in everything I do.”

The two could only nod. Since Lei Yu said it this way, they couldn't keep persisting.

In fact, it's not that Lei Yu didn't want them to come with him. In unknown situations like the Chaotic Star Sea, one or two extra people watching his back would increase his odds of surviving. It's just that Lei Yu couldn't even guarantee his own safety, so how was he willing to drag two other people down with him? Moreover, even if they manage to reach the Immortal World safely, Lei Yu's purpose was to demand the return of Ai Er and Nuo Hu. At that time,

the chance of conflict was inevitable. Not only could he lose his life in the process, he was going to implicate those two as well? Lei Yu wasn't that type of person so he could only firmly reject their good intentions.

“Brother Lightning, what about your injuries?” Asked Yanrong as he looked at Lei Yu's arm that was still oozing out blood.

Lei Yu smiled, “It's not a problem. I just have to recuperate a bit and it should recover by itself. It's not a big deal so don't worry.”

The two nodded. There was also no need to continue staying at this place so the three bid their farewells. Lei Yu also promised, “If I

return safely, I will definitely come back here and get together with you two brothers!”

One Lei Yu leaves this place, who knows how long he will be gone for? Perhaps by that time, everything would have changed by then.

After sending off those two, Lei Yu decided the first thing he had to do was to find a quiet place to heal his injuries. But there happens to be something even more urgent, which was to get that object.

Turning around, Lei Yu walked towards the pile of meat paste that was once the Manor Lord. After squatting down, he used the Sky Devouring Sword to gently lift up a

long red belt thing. With a flick of the sword, it was actually a ribbon! But how could this ribbon have the effect of making a person instantaneously disappear? He had to carefully examine this when he had time.

Lei Yu placed the ribbon into the edge of the pond and started rubbing it. Only after washing out the blood and bits of meat stuck to it did he bring it back out. He then placed it inside his storage ring before heading towards the pavilion off in a distance.

This pavilion had a total of three floors. Unlike the towns in other planets, this pavilion wasn't made out of stones but was entirely made out of wood. The style and

decoration of the wooden Manor gave off an ancient flair. Lei Yu couldn't help draw a breath, "This evil bastard really knows how to enjoy himself!"

After reaching the Manor, Lei Yu gently pushed open the first floor's wooden door and started hearing screams from inside. Even though he knew there were people inside, he never thought those people would have such a big reaction.

Lei Yu barely even looked up and was struck by the snow-white skin of girls in this slightly dim pavilion. Lei Yu quickly looked off to the side but still swallowed hard. Over a dozen young girl's bare and attractive bodies were all revealed before his eyes, so how would his



mouth not dry up? After forcing himself to breathe out twice, Lei Yu sprinted up to the second floor.

There were wooden boards used as partitions on this floor, and near the staircase was two small bedrooms created by the partitions. One look and one could tell these small bedrooms belonged to the Manor Lord's two subordinates, the burly guy and the middle-aged man. The furthest away was a bright and spacious bedroom.

Although the room didn't look like what we would see in modern times where they portrayed rooms in the ancient times filled with antiques and such, the room did have other items filling it up. On the sides of a large bed were two tall lamps but

they didn't have candles on them. Instead, the lamps held two white stones that exuded light which seemed to play the role of a lighting mechanism.

At the end of the bed, a few pieces of silky women's clothing laid there, the type where the woman wearing it would look no different from not wearing anything. Lei Yu cursed, "This bastard is really perverted as f\*ck!"

The second floor didn't really have anything else so Lei Yu started walking up to the third floor.

A door was at the top of the flight of stairs. Upon reaching it, Lei Yu could clearly see and feel a strong aura from the doorway. Lei Yu had

no doubt this was to prevent unauthorized access to the floor. The strength of the aura was most likely setup by the Manor Lord to stop his two subordinates from accessing it. Even if the girls in this manor somehow got inside and obtained some things, they wouldn't be able to leave. It was obvious they didn't have any flying abilities to assist them in leaving the third floor. Apart from the Manor Lord, the only ones here that could fly were the burly guy and the middle-aged man.

Lei Yu punched two to three times but still couldn't open the door. He then took out his Sky Devouring Sword and slashed at it. After a loud "bang~" noise was heard, a gap was seen in the visible aura. Lei Yu

quickly injected more internal energy into the sword and stabbed at the gap. His Sky Devouring Sword finally managed to puncture a hole through the door, and the powerful aura impeding his access disappeared. Lei Yu then quickly went inside.

“Woa!”

Lei Yu was completely shocked; all kinds of weird and strange objects were placed throughout the room made his vision swim. But what this room had the most were crystals that scattered different colors of light. Most of the crystals here were white and were similar to the size of one's thumb. Lei Yu brought out the two crystal stones he had in his storage ring to compare with the

ones in the room, and they were indeed the same. But why were some of the crystals different colored?

Apart from the countless white crystals, there were over a dozen yellow crystal stones. There were also five blue crystals, 3 purple crystals, and one blood red crystal. Lei Yu didn't bother with second thoughts and quickly stored all the currency into his storage ring.

“This will be considered my medical expenses!” Lei Yu grinned while talking to himself.

Based on Lei Yu's own assumption, the white crystal stones should be considered spare change. And the crystal stones with color should

hold some larger denominations. The funny thing was he was going back and forth with Tian Family's old man over spare change.

Lei Yu didn't care about the majority of the items here except for one that caught his attention. In the corner of the room was a bracelet that exuded a faint white aura.

After grabbing onto the bracelet, Lei Yu felt a cold sensation shake his spirit a bit. "This is something good!" Was Lei Yu's first thought. It appears that the pain from the previous injury on the arm had been reduced a lot by the cold sensation.

Not bothering about anything, Lei

Yu simply slipped the bracelet onto his own wrist. Fortunately, the style of the bracelet was ancient and thin, and didn't look too girly. It also happened to be quite large as well making it seem like it was only suitable for use by men.

Lei Yu once again looked through the other items, but nothing strange or interesting caught his eyes. But since it was placed in this room, these items would naturally be of value. Lei Yu made up his mind and stored them all into his storage ring. The previous third floor pavilion filled with treasures was now completely empty.

This time, not only did the Manor Lord lose his life, he had lost all his treasures as well. It was not worth

it! [1]

After heading back down to the first floor, “Put on your clothes and come with me!”

-----

[1] It was not worth it to make an enemy out of Lei Yu.

T/N: You guys read about pavilions all the time but anyone actually go look it up what they look like? to one of them.



# Chapter 240: I Have A Request

A girl that seemed to be the leader asked while trembling: “Where... where are we going?”

The girl did not attempt to cover herself and stood there with her two exposed soft mounds. With her trembling, those two mounds also bounced along. But even if the girl wasn't ashamed of her naked body, Lei Yu couldn't handle the visual. He turned around and tried not looking at them before saying: “Based on my perception, you girls don't have any powers at all. Are you all going to stay here until you starve to death? Leave with me and

I will bring you to a place where you can all settle down.”

Some girls went into a daze while some even started sobbing. Lei Yu then asked: “Why are you crying? Could it be that you girls don’t want to leave this place?”

It was still the supposed leader of the girl who answered: “Imm... Immortal doesn’t know, but us sisters have been kidnapped and trapped here by that evil bastard since we were children. We have been tortured by his sexual pleasures and have never known freedom; they don’t even treat us as humans. We sisters have never thought that we would be able to leave this place. Today, Immortal has killed that bastard and is

willing to take us away from this place. We... we..."

The girl didn't know what else to say, and with a "plunk," she kneeled down. The dozen or so girls behind her also started kneeling down. Tears were already dripping down their necks and down to their breasts before it hung like a dew drop on their pink nipples.

Lei Yu swallowed hard a few more times and didn't know what to say momentarily. After a short time, "Okay, enough with the talking. Since you girls aren't willing to stay here, put on your clothes and leave with me."

"We don't really have clothes, only those silk lingerie upstairs that

can't really cover our bodies." Said the girl while sobbing.

Lei Yu clenched his fists and started cursing the evil bastard's ancestors and all his eighteen generations.

With a slight thought, a pile of clothes appeared neatly in his hands. Amongst them, some were his own clothes while some were Ai Er's. These items had been previously prepared by Lei Yu in times when they had to change their clothes.

Moreover, wherever Lei Yu went or stayed, he would consider it his home for the time being. One could say that ever since Lei Yu had this storage ring, it was equivalent to him having all his personal items with him. He had pretty much

everything stored inside to save himself from mundane troubles.

All the girls thankfully received the clothes and quickly put them on. Some of them fit into the clothes and some did not, but they generally looked okay in them.

During that time, Lei Yu stood outside the pavilion while he waited for those girls that would cause any guy a nosebleed.

All the girls started coming out and Lei Yu gave them a glance over. Most of Ai Er's clothes were made up of jeans and t-shirts, and those girls wearing it looked quite nice without losing an ounce of their sex appeal.

As for the girls wearing his clothes, it looked like a few sizes too big on them. But whenever certain body parts moved revealing their white skin, it did stir one's imagination giving it a different sort of flair. Even though they looked like this, Lei Yu felt their appearance was much more attractive to him than just their previous bare bodies. Lei Yu then nodded and said: "Don't be scared later on when I temporarily store you girls in another place. It will only be for a sure moment."

The girls all nodded. Lei Yu then focused his spirit and two, four, six... In a mere few seconds, all the girls had disappeared from their spots. Lei Yu lightly breathed out before squeezing his injured arm. He then injected internal energy

into his Sky Devouring Sword and rose into the air. His destination was towards the little town in the planet that Yanrong and Tian Ye were currently at.

In fact, settling down these girls was just one thing since there was actually something more important Lei Yu wanted to do. Since he had attained a large amount of treasures from the Manor Lord's pavilion, and also that he felt he had no use for them, Lei Yu decided he might as well give it away. From another perspective, Lei Yu didn't think Tian Ye and they were well off. With these confiscated valuables, perhaps their harsh living conditions might be improved.

In accordance with the Immortal Realm's time calculation, he had flown for about two hours or so. Lei Yu slowly descended onto a planet that wasn't that big, no different from the others around it except for it being more populated. Lei Yu sent out his perception ability in search for Tian Ye and Yanrong's aura and then quickly found it.

Lei Yu arrived in front of a stone cottage with a spacious yard area where dozens of people were gathered. Yanrong was standing in the center of it like a huge fireball, saying something to all the people. All the way in the back, Lei Yu started listening to see what he was saying.

“Brother Lightning completely



crushed that evil bastard's nest for us, so that's basically him doing a huge favor for all the people in the surrounding planets!"

Everyone present started nodding and silently engraved the name that wasn't Lei Yu's real name to heart.

"You guys didn't see brother Lightning's moves... even though he had just reached the Gold Core stage, but I'm completely sure that if I and Tian Ye joined forces, we still wouldn't be his opponent at all!" After saying that, Yanrong's face was filled with admiration.

Tian Ye, who was standing off to the side nodded in agreement. And amongst the crowd, a child stood forth and said: "That's of course!

Big brother is really powerful since this was someone that I personally saw!" The child was none other than the adorable Tian Dan Er.

Lei Yu shook his head helplessly before starting to walk forth while parting the crowd.

His appearance suddenly created a great sensation. Everyone has seen Lei Yu's appearance before when he left together with Yanrong so he was no stranger to them. It was only because Lei Yu had been standing behind them previously, that's why no one realized he was there.

"Brother Yanrong, your words are a bit too exaggerated!"

"Brother Lightning! You... you... you

came back!” Yanrong and Tian Ye stared with their big round eyes in surprise. In the meantime, Tian Dan Er quick ran over and was picked up by Lei Yu.

“If I didn’t come back, I wouldn’t have known that you guys had touted me all the way to the heavens, haha!” Lei Yu laughed.

“Quick, quick! Let’s prepare the best food we have, tonight we won’t leave until we’re drunk!” Yanrong loudly cried out to the townspeople and they all started to get busy.

Tian Ye went over and asked:  
“You’ve changed your mind Brother Lightning? This is too good! Yanrong and I were so worried about you!”

Lei Yu shook his head, “Nope, I haven’t changed my mind and would never change it. There’s something I have to do. I’m back because there’s something I need your help with.”

Tian Ye and Yanrong glanced at each other before asking in unison: “What is it?”

Lei Yu hesitated for a bit before saying: “Do you remember the girls inside the tyrant’s manor?”

“You’re... you’re talking about those girls that the tyrant was engaging in sexual acts with?” Tian Ye asked.

Lei Yu nodded, “I would like to settle them here. According to my probing, they are ordinary people

that haven't even reached the Foundation Building stage yet. They were innocent children back then when they were kidnapped by the tyrant, and have endured a lot of torture under his hand. They would have starved to death if I left them in the manor so I'm hoping you two would help shelter them here."

"There's absolutely no problem!" Yanrong loudly said with bravado. "No one was born like that. It was only under threat that those girls acted that way, so what's the big deal in taking them in?"

# Chapter 241: Huge Wealth

“Brother Yanrong is truly kind-hearted and filled with heroic spirit!” Lei Yu praised.

“Then let’s not waste time, should we go now?” Yanrong smiled magnanimously.

“No need.” Lei Yu smiled and formed a thought, and over a dozen girls as beautiful as angels wearing strange clothing appeared in front of them. This made the townspeople off to the side that has never seen such beautiful women before completely shocked, while Tian Ye and Yanrong duo actually

started drooling.

Over a dozen girls politely bowed,  
“We greet benefactor! We greet the  
two Immortals!”

The sudden appearance of the  
dozen plus girls made them two  
shocked. How did they appear here?

“Damn, brother Lightning! I never  
thought you would have such  
magical powers! Powerful... so  
powerful!” Yanrong said in surprise.

Lei Yu shook his head, “What  
magical powers? It’s just a treasure  
a friend of mine gifted me which  
can store items and even living  
people inside. The space is not  
small, a dozen plus people is  
considered nothing.”

Tian Ye and Yanrong were both breathless before saying: “Good treasure! Good treasure!”

Yanrong shook his head with a weird expression on his face and said: “If back then I had such a treasure, brother Tian Ye and I wouldn’t have had to fly back and forth a few dozen times. And each time, we were only able to bring two people with us!”

The appearance of the beauties wasn’t considered much when compared to what Lei Yu was about to do. The entire townspeople had their mouths agape and their jaws dropping to the ground.

“Oh yeah, there’s still something inside that I would like to give to



you all.”

Once they heard there were gifts, all the busy townspeople dropped what they were doing and scampered on over. Being able to bring out over a dozen beautiful girls had already shocked them. They were now extremely curious what Lei Yu was going to take out next.

Lei Yu ran over to an empty area and put his spirit into the storage ring. A light flashed and the once empty ground was now piled up high with countless items.

“This...!”

Everyone sucked in a cool breath; these items were all things unheard of by them. Even though they didn’t

know how good they were, just based on the color and the shimmering lights they exuded, the townspeople concluded it had to be good stuff.

“There’s more.” Lei Yu faintly smiled before retrieving a big wooden box. Lei Yu opened the lid and the townspeople froze in shock. Especially exaggerated were the looks on Tian Ye and Yanrong, they both had already been scared stiff.

“Oh heavens! Crystal stones! A lot of crystal stones!”

“I have never seen so many crystal stones in my entire life! This is too incredible!”

“I’m not dreaming right? Is

everything here real?”

Lei Yu had brought them too much shock. Previously, it was eliminating the tyrant. Even though Lei Yu did not personally kill him, he was still considered as playing a big role in it. And now, he had brought out so many crystal stones and treasures. Based on his style of doing things, who else could do something like that?

If it were switched to another person, they would have probably embraced all these angel-like beauties and taken all the crystal stones for themselves. But Lei Yu happened to be so magnanimous so how can people not admire him?

A long while later, everyone

recovered from their shock. With his voice trembling, Yanrong said: “Brother Lightning, I... I really don’t know what to say!”

On the side, Tian Ye also nodded to Yanrong’s words. He too was completely shocked by the sudden appearance of such wealth.

Lei Yu waved his hand, “Then there’s no need to say anything. There’s more...”

“What?! More?!”

“More?!”

“My God...!”

One could only see everyone here with big round eyes staring. Lei Yu had experienced similar scenes like

this before but not as exaggerated.

Lei Yu then brought out the different colored crystal stones from his storage ring. According to his theory, these should be considered the larger denominations of the currency. Lei Yu only heard someone in the crowd cry out in shock: “It’s a blood crystal stone!”

“This... how is this possible?!” Lei Yu blinked a few times while looking at Tian Ye and Yanrong. The eyes on the two looked like they were about to jump out of their sockets. After swallowing hard, Tian Ye then said in a trembling voice: “It’s actually a blood crystal stone! It’s actually a blood crystal stone!”

“What’s a blood crystal stone?” Lei Yu asked.

Everyone looked at Lei Yu as if seeing a monster. Only after Tian Ye answered Lei Yu’s question did he feel like he was a country bumpkin.

“Brother Lightning, let me explain it to you this way. Back then, my Tian Family’s Town with a population over a hundred people would require about ten crystal stones to maintain their survival. And I’m talking about the ordinary white crystal stones. This single yellow crystal stone can be exchanged for one hundred white ones. This blue crystal stone can be exchanged for one hundred yellow crystal stones. And this purple crystal stone can be

exchanged for one hundred blue crystal stones. As for this blood crystal stone...” Tian Ye stared unblinkingly at the blood red crystal stone in Lei Yu’s hand, his heart was so excited that he couldn’t even speak anymore.

Lei Yu continued the thought, “One hundred purple crystal stones?”

“That’s right!” Tian Ye replied while trying to force his voice to remain calm.

Lei Yu nodded, “Then it looks like this is not a small fortune before us. If it’s like this, it should be enough for your future livelihoods. At least for the time being, you guys won’t have to worry about not having enough crystal stones.” Lei Yu

handed over the crystal stones to Tian Ye.

If one started converting the crystal stones, the handful of crystal stones Lei Yu handed over would amount to over a hundred million ordinary crystal stones. The value of this wealth was enough to make people go crazy! Absolutely crazy!

“This is for real!” Yanrong and Tian Ye, including everyone present couldn’t believe what their ears heard. Lei Yu was going to give all these things here to them!

“What’s false about this? Of course it’s for real.” Lei Yu smiled, “But I have a request.”

“What kind of request?!” Yanrong



asked.

Presently, no matter what Lei Yu requested would probably not be rejected. Lei Yu then embarrassedly asked: “Could you give me one color of each of those crystal stones? I think my cultivation may...”

Lei Yu didn’t even finish his words and watched Tian Ye place the blood crystal stone in his hands. And then started grabbing one of each color stone from the ground and the chest and placed them all onto Lei Yu’s hand.

Lei Yu hurried said: “I don’t mean the blood crystal stone, that I’m not taking!”

“How could that be?!” Tian Ye shook his head, “These should have originally belonged to you!”

Lei Yu shook his head and smiled, “Why would a single person like me require so much crystal stones? And there’s no way I’m going to take away the most valuable crystal stone. You should keep this blood crystal stone and save it for your descendants to use!” Lei Yu returned the blood crystal stone to the hands of Tian Ye.

The eyes of Tian Ye and Yanrong started turning red as if tears were about to flow out. Lei Yu hurriedly said: “Don’t become a joke to others! We are all grown men, what do you guys have to be like that? That’s right, weren’t you guys

preparing the alcohol? Hurry it up,  
I'm starving!"

"Right! Right! Quick! Quickly  
prepare the food and alcohol! Today  
we will get drunk!"

Lei Yu was hungry? People like him  
may never be hungry ever again.  
They only need to absorb the  
spiritual energy in the air to solve  
all issues.

# Chapter 242:

## Spiritual Bracelet Of Frost

He only did this to interrupt their thoughts so that those two wouldn't start having tears streaming down.

What a lively banquet! And with the girls that Lei Yu brought back with him dancing to mix in with the festivities, this made the banquet a lot more colorful. Even though these girls were now wearing the plain looking clothes prepared by the townspeople, it still made many men forget what they were doing at times.

During this period, Lei Yu could obviously feel two areas on his body that felt strange. There's no need to mention the green energy located on in his chest since Lei Yu knew it had abilities of restoration. The most important thing was the bracelet he was wearing that was found on the third floor of the pavilion. It was exuding a cool and refreshing aura making Lei Yu feel very comfortable, and he was now no longer feeling any pain from the injury on his arm.

Because of the present crowd, Lei Yu didn't investigate what effects this bracelet had yet.

The banquet lasted late into the night and everyone was reluctant to go back home. It was around this

time that Tian Ye, Yanrong, and Lei Yu brought those dozen plus girls to an open area in the northern part of the town. Yanrong gave a shout, and the sword he was holding started rising up into the air before it slashed into a boulder the size of a small mountain a few times. A few slices of proportional slabs of stones were cut out. Together with Tian Ye, the two of them pulled the huge slabs of stone out and started stacking them together. They finally put a large slab of stone on the top, completing a house that had been formed by stones. Lei Yu could only sigh at the speed they used in creating a house.

In accordance to our modern calculation of time, the whole process only took about 15 minutes.

The living area of this stone building was quite large, and it was dividing into two rooms. However they wished to design or furnish the place was now up to these girls.

The girls all bowed gratefully,  
"Thank you Immortals!"

Yanrong smiled, "From today onwards, you girls don't have to keep calling us Immortals. You can address brother Tian Ye and I, as Clan Leaders!"

"Understood, Clan Leader!"

Lei Yu started taking out some objects from his storage ring for the girls use. After settling them down, the three then began to leave.

"Brother Lightning, when are you

planning on leaving?" Tian Ye and Yanrong were a bit reluctant in asking that. But these two knew that Lei Yu was bound to leave soon.

"I can't be delayed any longer so I'm going to leave immediately. The sooner I take care of this, the earlier I would have peace of mind.

Otherwise, I would keep worrying to death and feel uninterested in whatever I do." Lei Yu replied with a sigh.

"Fine then, us two won't keep saying anything unnecessary. Brother Lightning, you will forever be our good brother!"

Lei Yu nodded heavily. With the appearance of his sword and a flash



of purple light, Lei Yu had disappeared off into the boundless skies.

After flying a distance, Lei Yu found a lifeless planet to stop and rest for a bit. "Apart from finding a place to heal myself, I can also check out this bracelet and see what effects it has."

Finding a tall mountain, Lei Yu punched it at a certain spot in order to create a hole to act as a cave. He then flew in and used his internal energy to create a barrier at the mouth of the hole. This was done in order to prevent any unnecessary dangers that may appear while he was unprepared.

Slowly calming down his aura, Lei

Yu adjusted his body to its optimal state. He then slowly closed his eyes and released a portion of his spiritual powers to check the surrounding area.

After that, Lei Yu circulated his internal energy throughout his whole body. The green energy had already begun its work at this time, restoring the wounds located at different parts of his body except the speed of the recovery was a bit slow. Even though it had devoured a lot of the Dragon Vein's essence, it seems that it had not fully recovered yet. Saying it in another way, Lei Yu felt the green energy was far inferior to before. Perhaps Lei Yu's body wasn't that strong before, that's why it was much easier to restore. And now that he

was at the Gold Core stage, the green energy might be having a difficult time now in restoring his injuries.

This healing process was not something that would be done in an instant and Lei Yu wasn't in a hurry when it came to this. If he wanted to enter the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea, he had to enter while his body was in its optimal state. Otherwise, he might even die from a single slap.

The green energy was slowly helping him recover so Lei Yu took this time to concentrate his spiritual power into the newly attained bracelet on his wrist. Once it made contact with the surface, it was that familiar cold aura again.

But this aura wasn't the bone chilling cold kind; it was instead a very gentle cool feeling. It was similar to a beautiful ice maiden gently stroking his skin; the feeling was very intriguing and also very comfortable.

"What exactly is this?" Since he couldn't tell from contact with its surface, Lei Yu came up with a bold idea. He was going to focus his spiritual power directly into the bracelet to see what effects it would have.

After deciding that, Lei Yu transferred a portion of his internal energy to his wrist. He then injected his spiritual power into the bracelet and it smoothly went in without any obstacles.

It was a snow-white world and Lei Yu was in the midst of a vast snow storm. That cold feeling before had now become much clearer. Lei Yu then sent out his senses all around but didn't find anything strange. But all these white fluttering objects were really snow which made Lei Yu really surprised.

With his spiritual power still inside the bracelet, it wasn't long before a floating white figure gradually came closer. Lei Yu was startled by this and sent out his perception. It was only after that did he finally see its appearance.

It was a woman, a very beautiful woman. Her skin was extremely white to the point where one felt that blood did not flow through her

body. She was wearing white silk-like clothing which allowed one to see through her wonderful and alluring body that were big and slim in all the right places. If one was to say that her entire body was white, then the only colors one could see was at the looming twin peaks of her chest that showed two pink mounds, and the long black hair atop of her head.

Why would a woman appear inside this bracelet?

Lei Yu asked with a strange expression: "Who are you? And why would a person such as you be inside this bracelet?"

"A person?" The girl was surprised, and then covered her mouth with a

giggle. After resuming her elegant looks, she then said: "Do I look like a human to you?"

"So you aren't a human?"

The girl shook her head and smiled, "I'm not, I'm just a spiritual body. Accurately speaking, I should be called a Snow Spirit's Body."

"A Snow Spirit's Body? What is that?"

"My master has already passed away, something that had happened a thousand years ago. You are the first person in these thousand years to have entered into the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost. I should be calling you master." The girl slightly bowed.

Lei Yu's mind went into a daze since he couldn't understand what was going on.

Hearing the girl explain in detail, "This Spiritual Bracelet of Frost was created by a craftsman who happens to be my previous master. And this bracelet has a healing effect. Gradually, master exhausted all his internal energy in order for a spiritual body to be born, which is me. It was around this time that master suffered an attack from the outside world and died. Thus, I had become a lost soul without a master."

"Then why has no one else come inside here for the past one thousand years yet I have come here so easily?"



The girl replied: "Not just anyone can enter this place. The biggest action they can take is to destroy the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, which will naturally cause me to disappear along with it. I will not meet up with just anyone either, but master seems to possess a very special power that has a strong common connection with the aura of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost."

# Chapter 243: The Name Xue Yu

The Name Xue Yu

"We have a common aura connection? What sort of power is it?"

"This is the power inside master's body, so how could I know?"

"Then... can you tell me what specific abilities does the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost have? And how it can be used?" Lei Yu asked.

The girl nodded and replied: "Snow is considered the most holy form of water, extremely pure and clean.

Not only can it nourish the spirit, it can also assist in suppressing pain. It has the magical effect of healing, yet all of this is not particularly significant. The most important thing out of all is that it can help you purify the spiritual energy you have absorbed from the air. It eliminates your need to circulate that energy to expel the impurities, and that's the true essence of the bracelet."

Lei Yu was immediately overjoyed! Wasn't this another Spiritual Bead of Longevity? Even since that bead had been injected into Nami's body, Lei Yu felt the progress of his cultivation had become slower and slower, and wasn't even half of what it once was. Now this was equivalent of gaining an ultimate

treasure that could once again help with his cultivation, so how can he not be ecstatic?

But this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost did not have the effects of resurrection... While on this subject, each item usually has its own unique abilities. The essence of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity was being able to revive the dead, and removing the impurities from the absorbed spiritual energy was just a secondary role. The main function of this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost was precisely the secondary role of the Spiritual Bead of Longevity, so the effects it gives should be much better than the latter.

"So the reason you are in here is...?"

"I am the soul of this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost. Of course, the soul is essential because without it, the items will lose the spiritual intelligence it's supposed to have. No matter what effects it has, it will not be able to complete its responsibilities according to the will of the master."

After hearing these words, Lei Yu seemed to understand a bit more. That Spiritual Bead of Longevity clearly didn't have a soul, or else Lei Yu wouldn't have been so pissed at it several times. He almost couldn't escape when he entered the jade pendant back then!

"Can you leave this place? Uh... in other words, can you appear in the real world so that I can see you in

real life?" Lei Yu asked.

After thinking for a bit, the girl replied: "Technically speaking, it's possible. But master's strength is currently too weak; you only have the strength of a late Gold Core stage. When you can break through the Fusion Soul stage and reach the Soul Splitting stage, you can inject your soul into the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost allowing me to borrow it to appear in reality."

Lei Yu was immediately shocked. But he wasn't shocked that this girl could appear in real life, he was shocked that she said he had the strength of a late Gold Core stage. Lei Yu couldn't help but ask in a strange manner: "I had only recently broken through the... uh..."

Inedia stage and entered the early Gold Core stage, why did you say that I have the strength of a late Gold Core stage?"

The girl was slightly surprised before saying: "I only felt that your aura was very similar to someone at the late Gold Core stage, so I said that about you. Could it be that master really just condensed your Gold Core? This is really too weird."

After hearing the girl's explanation, Lei Yu suddenly remembered something and asked: "So, there's one other thing I don't understand. Why is that the Gold Core I've condensed not a gold color but purple? Could this be related to the cultivation method I am training in?"

The girl shook her head and shrugged. It was clear that this question was something she didn't know about. Lei Yu could only wait until later when he finds someone more knowledgeable to ask.

Lei Yu thought for a bit before asking: "Is your named called Snow Spirit Body?"

The girl nodded. Lei Yu then said: "The name is too long. How about this - since your name is related to snow, and this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost is like a white jade... how about I call you Xue Yu (Snow Jade)?"

"Xue Yu? Sounds really nice! Thank you master!" Seeing the girl's current joy, it was different from



her previous gentle look. Lei Yu felt it was funny but didn't dare to focus his attention on her for too long because her body was just too tempting.

He then pulled his spirit out of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost and recovered his own consciousness into reality. Lei Yu then found that the green energy and the Frost bracelet had performed a two-pronged approach at healing his body. The wound on his arm had a scab over it and he no longer felt a single ounce of pain.

After swallowing a few times, Lei Yu wanted to try whether Xue Yu said was true or not. After all, if he didn't personally experience it, it would be difficult for him to believe

that the bracelet was better than the Spiritual Bead of Longevity.

With Lei Yu's circulation, the internal energy condensed in his dantian started travelling the paths according to the Heavenly Thunder Manual. The internal energy started following the blood vessels and gradually flowed along. At the same time, the spiritual energy outside slowly entered his body. In the past, Lei Yu relied on his internal energy to wrap around the newly entered spiritual energy and then convert it into his own, and also removing the impurities as well. But now, he was going to ignore the removing impurities part and wait to see what happens.

Sure enough...! The next thing made

Lei Yu completely ecstatic. From within the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost came two white energies that shot into his body. These two energies had a cool feeling and not the bone chilling kind, making his spirit feel alive and quite relaxed.

The two white energies appeared somewhat similar to fog but were a lot denser. They both travelled independently but parallel to each other, and started enshrouding the spiritual energy that had just entered Lei Yu's body. It was almost instantaneous that the impurities disappeared without a trace. The spiritual energy that had been clearly cleaned started searching for his own internal energy before fusing together with it. This strange phenomenon was something Lei Yu

had never seen before, making him completely overjoyed.

After realizing one thing though, Lei Yu slightly frowned. But the next thing that happened made him completely crazy with joy. Because those two white energies had removed the impurities previously, their colors became a little darker. This clearly showed the impurities were absorbed by it. The two slightly darker white energy started withdrawing from Lei Yu's body and entered back into the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost on Lei Yu's wrist. Another two white energies appeared right before the two slightly darker energies had finished returning. These two new beams of energy once again entered Lei Yu's body, and started removing

the impurities of any newly absorbed spiritual energy.

Now the strange thing was at this part: The no longer clean energy while returning to the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost had all its impurities blocked on the surface, so only the pure energy actually went back into the bracelet.

With this endless cycle, all the internal energy that Lei Yu had lost had been restored. After opening his eyes, Lei Yu rubbed the surface of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost. The impurities that were blocked from entering came off, reverting the bracelet back to its previous crystal clear state.

"Good thing! This is really a good

thing!" Lei Yu was in love. With this bracelet, his future cultivation speed would at least double.

At this time, Lei Yu had restored himself to the optimal state and was time to leave. Standing on top of this tall mountain with a serious look, Lei Yu looked up at the other floating planets and meteors flying through the Chaotic Star Sea. "Ai Er, big brother! Wait for me! I'm coming right now!"

His figure jumped, and landed on top of the Sky Devouring Sword. A purple light flashed and Lei Yu had disappeared off into the distance. His destination was the dangerous and unknown depths of the Chaotic Star Sea!

# Chapter 244:

## Demonic Beast

## Dragon-Snake

Although he had heard from Tian Ye and those from the Void Sect say the whole journey would take around two months, Lei Yu's speed should be faster than them by a bit. But even though he was a bit faster, Lei Yu still couldn't calculate how far the distance was since he had never been here before.

In the Chaotic Star Sea, there were numerous planets floating about. Some were filled with lava, and some were filled with lightning. There were even some planets that

had nothing but water. While in the midst of this all-encompassing great universe, Lei Yu felt that it had greatly helped with his comprehension of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique. This type of comprehension would only come about when one experiences it themselves.

In this state of flight, a full two days had passed yet Lei Yu hadn't stopped once. The was because while flying, the spiritual energy he was constantly absorbing had been purified by the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost. Even though the depletion of internal energy was a bit more than what he replenishes, the difference was so minute that it allowed Lei Yu to not rest at all.



Even so, it's unfortunate that the path he was taking compared to the path Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li were taking were completely different. Bringing along Ai Er and Nuo Hu, those two were on a path where nothing dangerous would appear on it.

Just as Lei Yu was feeling everything was very peaceful and wasn't as dangerous as Tian Ye had mentioned, he heard a roar that shook the heavens. Lei Yu immediately stopped flying and floated within the void to see what was going on.

"A dragon! No, a snake!" Lei Yu was shocked. Even though he was looking at a head that he had the impression of being a dragon, Lei

Yu continued observing and did not find any so-called dragon claws. Its whole body was a single line without any protruding limbs, that's why he changed his mind and called it a snake. But this snake's head was exactly the same as a dragon's head he had seen in books before - it had a beard, sharp fangs in its mouth, and two horns that looked like it shouldn't belong to it.

The snake's whole body was white and it was coiled around a meteorite. Its eyes didn't blink while staring at Lei Yu. Its snake tongue kept flickering out of its mouth making "hissing" noises that would give one's heart the chills.

Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless since this snake's body was huge.

Looking at it coiled around the big meteorite, its body length would definitely not be less than 30 meters to upwards of 50 meters. And one has to add that humongous head as well!

After probing with his senses, Lei Yu knew that this snake was stronger than him. As to how much stronger it was, Lei Yu couldn't estimate because it didn't release its full aura yet.

At this moment, the snake suddenly spouted human words: "Leave your Gold Core behind so that I can eat it!"

Lei Yu lightly breathed out before saying: "Then you want me to die?" After saying that, Lei Yu narrowed

his eyes. He never thought the first danger he encounters would be such a monster. What should he do now?

The huge snake then said: "Even if you are not swallowed by I, the Dragon-Snake; the ghostly thing in the east will not let you go either. Since you have to die no matter what, you might as well end your life here!"

"Dragon-Snake? No wonder you have such a long body!" Lei Yu finally understood why it had a dragon's head and a snake's body.

The Dragon-Snake's body trembled once, and a white light flashed. Its body started shrinking and it became smaller and smaller.

This Dragon-Snake had actually transformed into a human's form! He was wearing a white gown, had long white hair, and his face was quite handsome. Except there were still two horns sticking out of his head that it couldn't get rid of.

Lei Yu sucked in a cool breath. Such a huge monster could actually reduce its body to such a degree and even change into a human's form... could this be the so called demonic beast?

Lei Yu's speculation was spot on. When beasts cultivate to a certain extent such as reaching the Nascent Soul stage, they can turn into a human's form. They use the infant's form of their Nascent Soul to transform their outer appearance to

match the soul. As for this Dragon-Snake, it had indeed reached the early Nascent Soul stage.

"You want me to die for the sake of you? What a beautiful ending for you alone... you should at least give me a reason!" Asked Lei Yu as he suppressed the shock in his heart.

The transformed Dragon-Snake with a human body coldly humphed, "Is there a need to give you a reason in the Chaotic Star Sea? Hasn't it always been that the weak will be devoured by the strong?"

"Oh? For real? Then I want to ask you: How can you, an early Nascent Soul stage demonic beast be able to survive for so long? Could it be that

you have some super special ability or something?"

The Dragon-Snake was obviously very surprised, "You... how did you know that I was at the early Nascent Soul stage?!"

Lei Yu smiled and said: "Before, you released a powerful aura in order to transform into a human, this alone allowed me to probe your strength. I advise you to move aside because not long ago, a cultivator of the early Nascent Soul stage was killed by my hands!"

Lei Yu was trying to use words to shock the monster into retreating, but it seems like the trick wasn't working.

"That is just too funny! A mere Gold Core newbie can kill a cultivator at the Nascent Soul stage? This is the biggest joke in the world!" The Dragon-Snake gave a stare and a solid beam of white light shot at Lei Yu.

With a slight foot movement, Lei Yu shifted the Sky Devouring Sword out of the way and easily dodged it. "What? You aren't afraid that I'll rip out your snake bones and take your snake gallbladder?"

"You're courting death!" The Dragon-Snake was about to rush forward but Lei Yu hurriedly stopped it. He didn't want to have any unfortunate accidents when he had just entered the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea. It would be a



blessing if he could escape this disaster.

"Wait!"

"What else do you want to say?!"

"I know that demonic beast cultivators need to devour other people's Gold Core or Spiritual Beads in order to improve themselves." Lei Yu then lightly said: "I want to ask, if I gift you a Gold Core, are you willing to let me pass by?"

"You're speaking the truth?" Asked the Dragon-Snake. In fact, he was a bit wary since who knows what this person said was true or not. The Dragon-Snake had been entrenched on this meteorite for so long now.

Whenever he met someone stronger than him, he would shrink his body to less than an inch in order to avoid being found out. And when he found someone weaker than himself, he would restore his body to its original size as a deterrent effect. If it could really effortlessly get a Gold Core, it would be enough for it to cultivate for quite a long time. Why would it spend so much effort to kill then? In case this person really had some deadly treasure or ability, then it would be too late for regrets.

One must know for beasts to have cultivated to this stage is not an easy feat. They are very concerned with their own lives and would never use it as a gambling chip.

"Of course it's for real!" Lei Yu knew that beast cultivators had to consume other people's essence in order to cultivate because he learned it from the Ink Beast. Otherwise, it would never have fought a big battle with the Qilin in order to devour the Spiritual Bead of Longevity.

After saying that, Lei Yu flipped his palm and a round bead shimmering with a golden light appeared in his hand. The power it contained cannot be overlooked; this was the Gold Core of the middle-aged man Lei Yu killed at the Tian Family's Town. Lei Yu had taken this with him because it contained all the essence of a person at the Gold Core stage. He thought this thing would be useful to himself; perhaps

it could even play a large effect to his cultivation. He never expected that today, he would have to gift it away to this monster.

Seeing the Gold Core appear, the snake was overjoyed. It was about to snatch it with its mouth when Lei Yu withdrew his hand.

"What?! You want to go back on your words?!" Said the snake as it glared at Lei Yu.

# Chapter 245:

## Bound By The Dragon-Snake

Lei Yu shook his head and smiled, "No, I only want to first know what you meant by that ghostly thing in the east?"

The Dragon-Snake coldly snorted, "He's just a little bastard, nothing noteworthy. Didn't you say you are able to kill those in the early Nascent Soul stage? Don't worry, he's strength is only at that level."

Lei Yu's eyebrows were raised as he nodded. But his heart didn't like it at all since he didn't want another

wave of trouble when the current one wasn't settled yet.

Seeing Lei Yu's expression, the Dragon-Snake narrowed his eyes. "Can you give it to me now?"

Lei Yu shrugged and tossed the Gold Core out. And at this time, Lei Yu's hand shook a bit and a tinge of red appeared in his hand. He then moved around the Dragon-Snake and started flying forward again. Once he wasn't that far away, the Dragon-Snake suddenly had an evil thought.

"Since he didn't want to fight, that proves he's afraid of me. Perhaps he doesn't have any powerful treasures on him after all. Killing someone in the Nascent Soul stage was purely

nonsense he concocted! Why don't I kill him and take out his Gold Core as well?" Thinking up to this point, the Dragon-Snake's tongue flickered out of its mouth. A snake's forked tongue coming out of a human's mouth made the scene look even weirder.

The speed of lightning!

The speed of a snake pouncing on its prey was something hard for one to conceive, and the Dragon-Snake was able to perform this motion in perfection. In a blink of an eye, his body flew forth like a bullet flying out of the chamber, while his body became extremely soft and flexible.

Lei Yu already knew the Dragon-Snake wasn't going to let him off

that easily. Right before the crucial moment, Lei Yu's mouth formed a sneer. As the Dragon-Snake was less than half a meter away from him, a huge change suddenly took place.

"Where is he?!" The Dragon-Snake look all around but couldn't even find a glimpse of his shadow. Even the sword underneath his feet had disappeared without a trace.

It was at this time a purple lightning came from the heavens. Like a chisel, it struck upon the Dragon-Snake's head.

"Crack!"

The Dragon-Snake roared into the air, its voice being quite frightening.



The sudden disappearance of Lei Yu didn't give the Dragon-Snake any time to react and the purple lightning coming from the heavens was so fast that it had no chance to dodge.

At this point, Lei Yu's figure slowly appeared in front of the Dragon-Snake. At the same time, the Dragon-Snake noticed a red ribbon wrapped around his right arm.

The Dragon-Snake was enraged after being struck by Lei Yu's lightning. He ignored his white hair that had now become black from being burnt, and rushed at Lei Yu. His momentum was overwhelming and his expression looked like he wanted to rip Lei Yu into a thousand pieces!

"You dare to sneak attack me?! Go to hell!"

Even though the Dragon-Snake's attack speed was extremely fast, even faster than Lei Yu by quite a bit, it was still the product of an instant explosive attack. When it came to average speeds, Lei Yu was still a step ahead.

After a few close calls of escaping the strike of the Dragon-Snake's horns, Lei Yu flipped around and landed on the meteorite that the Dragon-Snake was previously wrapped around.

Upon seeing that, the Dragon-Snake quickly followed close behind and landed opposite to Lei Yu's location. Its eyes had a terrifying

look in them and with its forked tongue continuously flickering out; the look would cause one to have chills in their heart.

"You damn beast, think clearly who was the first one to sneak attack who!" Lei Yu pointed at the Dragon-Snake and cursed.

"You mere early Gold Core stage thing, what qualifications do you have to speak to me about this? The life of a weak person has always been in control by the strong!"

Lei Yu was breathing heavily but didn't dare to be too obvious. The long red ribbon did give a person the ability to temporarily disappear, but the internal energy consumption was too much. Lei Yu

originally thought he only had to inject a bit of internal energy into it and could easily utilize it, but never expected that he had to use almost half of his energy. This was the reason why the Dragon-Snake was only half a meter away from him before Lei Yu was able to disappear.

There was also another shortcoming, which was the time a person can disappear for was kind of short and cannot be controlled. Apart from that, the item was still considered a good thing since it was like a life preservation item. But overall, the cost of using it was too big and didn't have a long term effect and only worked a short few seconds.

Based on this calculation, this red

ribbon could only be used twice when one was at full power. And after using it twice, the person would then become a human sandbag.

"You're too greedy!" Lei Yu coldly said. "You were already given a Gold Core but aren't satisfied with it. I will tell you the truth - even if you want to kill me, I will make you pay heavily for it!"

"Then we'll see if you have that ability!"

After roaring that out, the Dragon-Snake started moving. Lei Yu's body was like a ghost as he rushed forth as well. The Sky Devouring Sword in his hand was exuding a white light mixed with a purple lightning

that was colliding with each other causing a "hissing" sound.

It was not without reason that Lei Yu chose to land on the meteorite. In order to maintain his body suspended in midair required the support of the Sky Devouring Sword, which meant he had lost the use of a weapon to attack with. Now that he landed on the meteorite, his feet were on solid ground and could openly fight with all he had.

When facing this Dragon-Snake, Lei Yu didn't have a big assurance of winning. After all, the Manor Lord wasn't killed by him and was killed by the two guardians who arrived just in time that led to his death. Now that he was in the depths of

the Chaotic Star Sea, that lucky occurrence will not happen again.

But it's not that there wasn't a sliver a hope in all of this. When Lei Yu was fighting the Manor Lord, the attacks he used did cause some serious damage - the Manor Lord's wide blade did get broken into pieces from his attack. If it weren't for that red ribbon, the outcome of that battle might actually be difficult to predict.

Now this Dragon-Snake in front of Lei Yu had no abilities to disappear and no weapons in his hand. And it was clear that its attacks relied only on the two horns on its head.

Lei Yu's speed was really fast but the Dragon-Snake's reaction wasn't

slow either. After chopping and slicing a few times, Lei Yu didn't hurt the Dragon-Snake at all. But the latter also had no way to deal with Lei Yu. In the time being, the two of their figures were constantly moving around. At times they would be jumping and at times they would bounce back from the collision with each other.

The longer the time went on, the more surprised the Dragon-Snake was with Lei Yu. It never thought that a cultivator at the early Gold Core stage was able to fight against him for such a long time and still come out unscathed. That made him feel like he had lost all face. After roaring out in anger, it opened up the distance between them. One could see the Dragon-Snake jump



twice into the air before flying down straight at Lei Yu for a fatal blow.

Lei Yu's guess was inaccurate. The Dragon-Snake did not only have his horns as the means of attack, it also had a characteristic unique to snakes - binding!

The ability to constrict was an ability any snake would have, and this monster that wasn't really a snake or a dragon was no exception. One could see its body had once again become soft as it bypassed Lei Yu's sharp sword while its legs instantly became longer and firmly bound Lei Yu.

Lei Yu forcefully shook his body hoping to break free of the binding but no matter how hard he tried, his

hands and legs were unable to move. The Dragon-Snake's binding power started growing in intensity, even making Lei Yu start to feel suffocated!

The two of them looked like they were trying to merge into one. The terrifying eyes of the Dragon-Snake were then staring at Lei Yu, "You want to break free? Keep on dreaming!"

One could see the Dragon-Snake suddenly open its mouth. Its mouth was like made of rubber; the extent of its opening was about the size of Lei Yu's head. Its open mouth exposed its white fangs as if it could easily stuff Lei Yu's entire head inside.

Lei Yu stopped his breathing,  
"Damn, this really stinks!"

-----

(T/N: Plot holes galore... Aren't they in space so without the sword, Lei Yu should be able to still float? Does the meteorite have its own gravitational field where they can stand firmly on the ground? And I thought there's no oxygen in space so Lei Yu should already be holding his breath and wouldn't smell the snake's stinky breath!)

# Chapter 246: Striking The Snake's Vital Seven Inches

- Striking The Snake's Vital Seven  
Inches

Hearing that Lei Yu said its mouth stunk, the Dragon-Snake became even more enraged. It then sprayed out a yellow fog off to the side before staring at Lei Yu's head as if it were about to swallow it in one gulp. Lei Yu couldn't hold back from yelling: "Let me go or else I'm going to rip out your snake tendons!"

After hearing Lei Yu's yell, the Dragon-Snake wriggled a bit. It did feel that there was something behind its head and the originally cold blooded monster felt that the "something" felt cold to the touch.

The reason being the moment before Lei Yu was bound by the Dragon-Snake; he had released the Sky Devouring Sword. He then used his skill of controlling internal energy to manipulate the Sky Devouring Sword so that it pointed directly behind the head of the Dragon-Snake. As long as there was any danger, even if it was mutual-destruction, Lei Yu would not hesitate to stab the sword in.

With such a close distance, it is but a dream if the Dragon-Snake

wanted to dodge it. If it really did swallow Lei Yu in one bite, then its life will definitely be snuffed out. Thinking to this point, the Dragon-Snake didn't want to take any risks. The Dragon-Snake actually closed its mouth and returned to a human looking appearance. But the look it gave Lei Yu was even more vicious now.

"Release me!" Lei Yu yelled out.

Reluctantly, the Dragon-Snake slowly shrunk his lengthened limbs that had completely tied Lei Yu down. Lei Yu finally willed the Sky Devouring Sword to float in front of the Dragon-Snake.

"Greedy! You are really too greedy! Believe it or not, I could just stab

you to death right now!" Grasping the initiative, Lei Yu raised his voice in an emboldened manner.

"Lower your sword or I will make you regret it!" The Dragon-Snake's cold tone suddenly made Lei Yu think of a clever idea.

"I really want to see what abilities you have to carry it out!"

One could see a red flash in the Dragon-Snake's eyes and a white light surrounded the area. Its body continuously expanded so quickly that in a short 1 to 2 seconds, it had returned to its original form that Lei Yu had first encountered. Its entire body was covered in scales that shimmered a white light, and the Dragon-Snake's huge body

coiled around the meteorite that wasn't that large to begin with, creating an environment where Lei Yu was surrounded by its body. And its huge head stopped in front of Lei Yu and remained motionless. In its bell-shaped eyes were vertical slits as pupils, and the terrifying gaze it gave off startled Lei Yu.

For such a huge monster with such little distance between it and Lei Yu, it made Lei Yu seem rather tiny in comparison. He was not even the size of the Dragon-Snake's fang. No to mention the Sky Devouring Sword that was floating in the air, it wasn't even a decent toothpick for the Dragon-Snake.

"The time of your death has arrived!"



As the Dragon-Snake was speaking, the breath it spit out was like the raging wind causing Lei Yu unable to open his eyes. But the thing that Lei Yu absolutely could not stand was the odor of the Dragon-Snake's breath, it was extremely unpleasant.

Speed - this was something Lei Yu felt he would not lose to anyone, even if it was a monster!

Almost instantaneous, Lei Yu and his sword were like a phantom as he rushed out of the Dragon-Snake's confines and started floating in midair.

"I'm unable to kill you!" Said Lei Yu. The Dragon-Snake was about to laugh when Lei Yu continued: "But you can't catch me either!"

"What did you say?!" The Dragon-Snake screamed.

"Did I say anything wrong? Take that Gold Core and obediently stay here and don't cause any trouble. Careful that I might find the opportunity to blind your eyes!"

"Hiss~!" The huge dragon head rose up, "I would like to see if you have the ability!"

The snake tail whipped towards Lei Yu. With such a strong force behind it, even if Lei Yu's bones were super hard, he didn't dare to stay still and receive such an attack. The Sky Devouring Sword immediately dodged to the side. The Dragon-Snake's tail created a raging wind that blew past but didn't land on Lei

Yu.

Lei Yu was quickly racking his brains for any knowledge on a snake's weakness.

"I've got it!" Lei Yu's eyes brightened up. There's a saying: "When striking a snake, strike the seven inches." But when it came to such a huge monster, seven inches was an impossible location. Yet according to similar proportions, that vital spot should not be difficult to find. Lei Yu was constantly looking for an opportunity; even if he can't accurately hit the seven inches, the three inch area will still take its life!

The seven inches refers to the place below the head which is where the heart is. And the three inches refers

to most vulnerable part of the snake's spine. As long as a heavy strike hits any of those vital areas, even if they don't die, they will be seriously injured.

Lei Yu's body was continuously dodging the Dragon-Snake's attacks, and couldn't find any opportunities. The Dragon-Snake's body was wrapped around the meteorite so there was no way for him to accurately calculate the location of its weakness.

After dodging another heavy strike, Lei Yu's figure retreated furiously. The Dragon-Snake thought Lei Yu wanted to escape so it quickly unwound itself to chase him. Unfortunately for the Dragon-Snake, it had fallen for Lei Yu's

trick!

Lei Yu had no intentions of escaping, he just wanted give himself some space. Just relying on its tail, the Dragon-Snake was able to perform attacks. And it was merely as simple as swinging its tail. But for Lei Yu on the receiving end, each swing of the tail carried forth a heavy attack so he had to avoid it. If this continued and more time went on, the situation would become more unfavorable for Lei Yu.

Locking onto the target on the Dragon-Snake's back, Lei Yu roared out: "Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, sixth form!"

With a bright flash of light, Lei Yu

ignored his body blasting backwards. He aimed at the target and slashed down with his Sky Devouring Sword. The target was exactly the area of the Dragon-Snake's heart!

A large circular purple light mixed with white starry dots was shining brightly. This was like adding a dazzling star amongst the vast Chaotic Star Sea.

The circular light was very thin, almost paper-like, but the cutting power of it was unquestionable. The circular disc flew at the Dragon-Snake at almost instantaneous speeds. Realizing the power behind the attack, the Dragon-Snake suddenly panicked. The speed of it was just too fast and

the Dragon-Snake didn't have time to avoid it.

The Dragon-Snake immediately shook itself, and its huge body made a slight movement. One could only see the circular disc fly away without making any sounds as if the attack didn't land on the target. Only a white light had lightly flashed on the Dragon-Snake's body before the disc flew off into a distance and disappeared.

Lei Yu was gasping for air before quickly injecting internal energy into the Sky Devouring Sword so that it could remain afloat to support his body.

A few seconds later, a piercing scream came out from the Dragon-

Snake's mouth. As if it had gone completely crazy, its body was twisting continuously and its tail was thrashing all over the place. The meteorite had been smashed apart by its tail, creating numerous broken pieces of stone that floated off into the Chaotic Star Sea.

"I'll take your life while you're injured!" A light flashed on the palm of Lei Yu's hand and a white ball appeared. Some internal energy was injected into it before he tossed it towards the Dragon-Snake who was still struggling in pain. One could only see white lightning shrouding the area before striking down in an overwhelming force. The dense web of lightning started striking from different directions onto the Dragon-Snake's body.



"Oooowwww!"

The pain caused the Dragon-Snake to scream out a sound that did not belong to it. Its huge body suddenly stiffened up when a particular thick lightning struck its wound. This was where its heart was, exactly the most vulnerable place in its body.

The Dragon-Snake's defense had been completely broken. The scales of the Dragon-Snake had some defensive properties to it originally, but now it couldn't handle that thick lightning. There were now a number of charred areas on its body. Its huge dragon head then shook one last time... The Dragon-Snake never thought that its life would end at the hands of a person in the Gold Core stage.

# Chapter 247: Flash Of White Light

Lei Yu didn't bother caring about the unwillingness seen the Dragon-Snake's eyes. "Originally, nothing would have happened, you would take the Gold Core and I would leave. We can only blame everything on your greed!"

As Lei Yu's voice ended, the Dragon-Snake made one last roar into the air. Its huge body then stopped supporting the dragon head before the body started floating away.

Lei Yu grabbed onto the Dragon-Snake's thick tail before slowly

flying to the nearest planet he could find.

People often said that a snake's body was filled with treasures so of course; Lei Yu wasn't going to let this opportunity pass by.

Lei Yu was able to successfully kill the Dragon-Snake today wasn't because his strength had improved these past two days. One can only say that he was lucky. With the Manor Lord's red ribbon; the skillful control of the Sky Devouring Sword in order to avoid being eaten by the Dragon-Snake; and able to remember and accurately find the Dragon-Snake's weak spot, this all contributed to his victory. If the Dragon-Snake was different to a typical snake and its

weak spot wasn't at that particular place, then Lei Yu would currently be in a world of suffering.

Although his internal energy had been almost used up, the help of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost allowed him to recover at a pretty quick pace. Lei Yu felt very fortunate to somehow get this great treasure.

The closest planet to Lei Yu was very special. It had mountains and water, including many biological life forms. Lei Yu simply couldn't believe such a peaceful planet would exist in the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea.

Lei Yu wasn't going to let this peaceful scene trick him, so he

carefully dragged the 30 - 50 meter long Dragon-Snake next to a rather wide river. He then released his spirit perception ability to explore the area. He didn't find anything abnormal except for some tiny creatures or animal without much attack powers. Perhaps there's a strong existence here, but based on Lei Yu's current strength, he can barely feel the existence of people at the early Nascent Soul stage. He was unable to perceive anyone stronger than that.

Lei Yu figured he'll deal with it when it comes. He then released a portion of his spirit perception to prevent any accidents occurring before sitting down cross legged and then quickly attempting to restore his depleted internal energy.

After breathing in and out a few times, Lei Yu felt rather refreshed. The energy the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost was releasing made Lei Yu extremely comfortable and the spiritual energy that had been purified was gradually absorbed by Lei Yu.

This time, Lei Yu didn't suffer any injuries yet the green energy ran around gobbling up a portion of the purified spiritual energy that he was absorbing. This was pissing Lei Yu off quite a bit.

"It really picks the worst times! I don't even have enough for myself and yet you decide to come along for a ride?!" He was thinking this but Lei Yu couldn't do without it. Otherwise, who knows how many

times he would have died already.

Lei Yu realized that today the green energy seemed to be somewhat different than usual, but he couldn't put a finger on exactly what. It was at this time that the green energy brightly flashed. But it was only for a moment before it returned to its previous appearance as if nothing had ever happened.

This changed made Lei Yu a bit surprised. He controlled his internal energy and carefully approached the green energy, hoping to get close and observe what was going on. But the moment Lei Yu's internal energy got close; the green energy gave up eating the spiritual energy and quickly ran back towards the heart meridian as if it

was in shock. "What's going on with this green energy? Why did it suddenly give off a flash of light yet restored it's calmness?" Lei Yu once again controlled his internal energy to approach his heart meridian. He then felt there was some defensive setup there as his internal energy could not flow through normally. This was completely different from before. In the past, the green energy would lead his internal energy to circulate through other meridians, including the heat meridian.

Whenever Lei Yu used too much force to break through a meridian and caused it to fracture, the green energy would rush up and start repairing it. But why would it now be so afraid of him? What caused this to happen? This was something Lei Yu just couldn't figure out.



One thing for certain was that Lei Yu could clearly feel that the power of the green energy seemed to be a bit stronger than before, but just didn't have that explosive power it had back then. If it was back then, Lei Yu's internal energy would not be able to get so close to his heart meridian unless it was being led there.

Since he couldn't figure it out, he might as well stop thinking about it. Having the green energy restore its power was undeniably a good thing. Perhaps it was acting shy because it hadn't fully recovered yet.

Over time, Lei Yu felt that his internal energy had been pretty much fully replenished before he opened his eyes. Although there

was no concept of time here, Lei Yu knew he spent at least ten plus hours in the recovery process.

After standing up, Lei Yu did some simple exercises while looking around. The scenery here was really quite good which gave Lei Yu a familiar feeling. After recalling some memories, Lei Yu finally thought of something. This place also had a river, surrounded by trees, and in front was a small mountain not that high. Wasn't this place very similar to the paradise Lei Yu had woken up in when he was driven out of the Lei family?

Lei Yu was a bit surprised with this thought process, did he somehow return to the past? He then laughed at himself and shook his head. How

could such a thing happen?

After jumping up and down a few times, he felt that he had pretty much fully recovered. Only then did his gaze land on the huge body of the Dragon-Snake.

The eyes of the Dragon-Snake were closed. With such a huge body, Lei Yu temporarily didn't know where to start. He started looking all over the huge body. Even though every part of the snake was considered a treasure, there's no way he can take everything. If he did covet everything, it would most like take a long time for him to take it all. By that time, he was afraid when he truly did find something extremely valuable; the body would be at the decomposition stage and stink up

the entire area.

Lei Yu took out the Sky Devouring Sword from his storage ring and then jumped over the Dragon-Snake's body to the other side.

Waving the sword, he started slicing off the scales on the snake. Blood started coming out like it was pouring out from a barrel before it gushed into the river staining it completely red.

Lei Yu was carefully searching for something before his eyes went wide. "I've got it!"

He stabbed the Sky Devouring Sword inside and made a cut. A round green and black thing the size of a human's head was then held only by Lei Yu. "What a big

snake's gallbladder!"

The snake's gallbladder was considered an herbal ingredient. It could benefit one's eyes, and decrease the heat in one's body and many other effects.[1] But these are the characteristics of the common snake's gallbladder while Lei Yu was holding onto something he had never seen before. It's not clear what its uses are or whether it would work like the common variety. At least Lei Yu felt that this thing should be something good.

After storing the gallbladder into his storage ring, Lei Yu started circling the huge body. Underneath a particular scale of the Dragon-Snake, he removed the Gold Core that previously belonged to him and

stored it.

"I wonder what its Nascent Soul looks like. Could it be like a little doll?" Lei Yu had once seen the Violet Gold Hall's Luo Feng exert his power and display his Nascent Soul, and it did look like an infant's body. But what would the snake's Nascent Soul look like?

"Could it... uhh... could it be a baby snake?" Thinking up to this point, Lei Yu felt a bit disgusted. But he still went towards the Dragon-Snake's lower abdomen area and cut it open. A white light suddenly flashed.

"Bang!" After the loud noise, Lei Yu's body flew back and smashed against a nearby huge rock.

"Poof~!" Lei Yu threw up a mouthful of blood. He could feel his eyes blur and then he gradually lost his senses before falling unconscious.

-----

[1] In traditional Chinese medicine, foods are split into hot, cold, and neutral characteristics. And humans also are split into having the hot (yang) or cold (yin) constitutions. If you have a hot constitution body and eat too much food in that same characteristic, the body goes haywire so you become sick etc.

# Chapter 248: Play With You Guys

The blurred image Lei Yu last saw in his mind was a white face opening its mouth rushing at him. He felt a touch of red amongst the white light before he completely lost his consciousness.

A breath of cool aura streamed forth from Lei Yu's bracelet and straight into his mind causing his spirit to tremble. Lei Yu opened his eyes and found the current place he was in was different from before. Looking around, he was clearly inside a house. Even though it was furnished simply, it had all the necessary items. Lei Yu noticed



there were quite a number of chairs surrounding a table in the center of the house. In another area was a pile of wood burning giving off the occasional "pak pak" sounds. Next to the fire was an animal covered in white fur lying down. Lei Yu thought it was a dog but upon closer inspection, it wasn't one.

The shape and size of it was similar to a dog, but it wasn't. The fur on this animal was much smoother and the flame reflecting off it made it look quite shiny. The biggest difference it had compared to a dog was the center of its forehead had something that was rather eye catching. It looked like a red oval shaped ruby with a gold trim on the sides making the whole thing very pretty. But it looked like this animal

that was similar to a dog, was born with that ruby and wasn't placed there afterwards as an accessory.

Noticing Lei Yu had awakened; the animal stood up without any malice in its eyes and started barking at the door.

"So it's really a dog after all?"

The barking was exactly the same sound a dog would make. Lei Yu couldn't help but be surprised, but then again, what's so surprising about it? Can't someone in the Immortal World or Chaotic Star Sea have a dog as their pet? Only that the owner of this dog gave it a rather luxurious looking accessory which made Lei Yu feel weird why someone would do that.

Hearing footsteps outside the house, Lei Yu unconsciously released his spirit perception to probe who this person was. What made Lei Yu surprised was that he couldn't feel any energy fluctuations from this person. There were only two explanations for this: One, the person coming had no cultivation. One could say this person was a baby because only babies would have the aura of life but no energy fluctuations. The second explanation was the person coming was a super strong expert that was a lot stronger than Lei Yu.

As he cautiously looked up, something that completely shocked Lei Yu appeared before his eyes. The person that came into the house was actually a girl, a girl that

was only about 16 or 17 years old.

The girl had a very cute appearance that completely startled Lei Yu. Her hair was tied up into two ponytails that hung all the way down to her waist; her complexion was fair like pure white jade; she had a pair of big clear eyes; and she had a high bridged nose with a small cherry-like mouth.

The girl had a slim waist which was perfectly outlined with her milky white dress. Her chest didn't have the abundance that mature women had, but the roses about to bud would still make men fly off into their own fantasy.

"You are...?" Lei Yu blinked while asking the girl.

"You... tsk, tsk. You almost died from the Nascent Soul explosion. If it weren't for Big White finding you and bringing you back here, you'd probably be dead right now."

"Big White? You're talking about him?" Asked Lei Yu as he looked at the animal that looked like a dog sitting next to the girl.

"That's right; his name is called Big White." Replied the girl as she blinked her big eyes.

"Thank you for saving my life." Lei Yu quickly got up and saluted the girl in gratitude, but felt his head still had a heavy feeling to it.

The girl smiled and shook her head, "No need to thank Big White and I.

Quickly heal your injuries and play with us, that's the best way to repay your gratitude."

"Play... with... you guys?" Lei Yu couldn't figure out what was going on. He couldn't understand why the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea would have such an innocent girl appear. And Lei Yu actually couldn't feel any energy fluctuations coming from Big White next to her either. Lei Yu even wondered if his perception ability had degraded. Or perhaps he had temporarily lost that ability from his injuries?

"Oh right, grandpa doesn't let me run around the place yet he himself, went off to participate in Uncle Roc Emperor's birthday. He's so hateful; he didn't even bring me along." The

girl suddenly changed her expression and smiled, "But it still works out fine because you came here. It's perfect timing because now you can play with us or else I would have died of boredom."

"Uh..." For the time being, Lei Yu didn't know what to say. He was also in a confused state because he couldn't understand what was going on here.

"Go ahead and rest. Big White, stay here and watch him so he can't run away. I still have to go check on grandpa's stove." The girl then skipped away.

Lei Yu blinked a few times before walking forward a few steps. That Big White was sure obedient,

wherever Lei Yu walked to, it would follow right along as if afraid he would run away.

Lei Yu started talking to himself, "What sort of place is this?"

"Ceng Hong Villa."

Lei Yu immediately lowered his head as Big White looked up at him. Lei Yu was completely shocked, "You... you can speak?!"

"Nonsense, of course I can speak." Said Big White as he shook his head.

"Then why did you previously bark?"

Big White lay on the floor, his two front paws propping up his head as



he reluctantly said: "The young miss likes to goof around and doesn't allow me to speak. I, too am helpless in this situation!"

"Uh... who on earth is she? Also, aren't we in the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea?" Lei Yu's mind was now in complete confusion.

"Of course it is. As for the young miss, you should ask her yourself. If she found out that I told you about her, she might ride atop of me and make me run around the Villa for three days again."

It looks like this girl is nuts. Lei Yu was wondering if he should quickly figure out a way to get away or else strange things might happen to him.

Thinking up to this point, Lei Yu activated his spirit and found that nothing was missing from his storage ring. With a flip of his palm, the Sky Devouring Sword appeared in his hand. "Tell your family's young miss that I have something very important to do so I will be taking my leave. Oh right, Big White, thank you very much for saving my life!" Right after that, Lei Yu injected his internal energy into the sword and flew off with a purple flash of light. He didn't even wait for Big White to respond before flying up into the sky.

Big White shook his head helplessly. He immediately condensed strength in his legs before pouncing into the air to catch up.

"You really cannot leave or else young miss will be furious!"

"Ahh?! Why are you chasing after me?! You..." Lei Yu looked below Big White's legs, and then around his body but then was nothing underneath him. How did he stay afloat up in the sky?

"Come back with me voluntarily or I'll have to drag you back." Big White bared his teeth and started grinding his upper and lower teeth. The image looked quite funny but Lei Yu maintained his cautiousness. Would an ordinary dog be able to catch up to him so easily?

"But I really have something important to do. Later on, I will come back and look for your

family's young miss to... uhh... play.  
May I do that?"

Big White shook his head, "It's best if you speak to the young miss about this yourself. I don't care about any other matters." After saying that, he bit onto the corner of Lei Yu's clothes and pulled him back. The strange thing about this was that Lei Yu didn't even have time to dodge the bite, and somehow didn't have the strength to resist being pulled. What on earth was going on?!

# Chapter 249: The Rude And Unreasonable Bao Er

High up in the sky, Lei Yu was being dragged downwards and back to the front of the hut.

This was definitely the first time Lei Yu was forced to stay like this, and it was the first time being made by something that resembled a dog. If people heard about Lei Yu being forced to stay here by a dog that could speak human words, they would probably laugh their heads off.

But after careful consideration, his heart tightened a bit. Lei Yu remembered the Dragon-Snake had previously said that as long as one reached the Nascent Soul stage, any demonic beast will be able to turn into a human form. So, does that mean Big White has already reached the Nascent Soul stage?

That should be the case, or else how would he be able to speak? But one thing Lei Yu still couldn't understand was how come he couldn't feel any energy fluctuations from him at all.

In fact, the reason can be easily deduced. On the surface, it looked like Lei Yu had lost his perception ability. But in reality, Lei Yu couldn't probe this pair of human

and pet because the gap in strength between them was simply too great.

Lei Yu wanted to say something but the previous girl appeared now with a wrinkle in her nose and pout. "I knew you would try to run but it was fortunate Big White was around to drag you back. Thanks Big White!"

"Woof!"

Lei Yu couldn't help thinking this pair of human and pet was quite interesting. Big White could obviously speak yet couldn't open his mouth to do so in front of this girl. And this girl was quite outrageous for forcing him to stay here in order to play with her.

"My name is... Lightning." Said Lei Yu.

"Lightning? What a fun name! Lots of fun!" The girl jumped around while clapping her hands.

"Uh... may I ask what your name is?"

"Bao Er, you can just call me Bao Er! Although you can stay here, there's one thing you have to be prepared for: You can only play with me for two or three days. I estimate that grandpa will be back in two to three days and after that, he might kill you. Therefore, these two days you must make sure that I'm extremely happy, understand?"

"Aghh! That's insane!" Cried Lei Yu



in shock.

"I'm really not lying to you; Ceng Hong Villa is not a place anyone can come to. Grandpa has a bad temper and there's nothing I can do about it. But don't worry, when the time comes, I will plead on your behalf. Whether it will work or not is something I'm not sure about." Bao Er was drumming her fingers on her white cheeks as if thinking about something.

Lei Yu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "I say Bao Er; can't you just let me leave then? Do you really want your grandfather to kill me?"

"That won't work. If you left, only Big White and I will be left here and

there's no fun at all." Bao Er shook her head in disagreement.

"But I have something important to do!"

"I don't care about that; you have to play with me!" Bao Er was pretty much wielding a royal decree in front of Lei Yu's home.

Staying here was an impossible thing for Lei Yu. Moreover, the consequences of staying here was death, thus Lei Yu definitely couldn't stay. His mouth slightly moved and the Sky Devouring Sword acted as if it had been injected with a stimulant. It suddenly shook and Lei Yu flew up, his speed was similar to a meteor flying up into the sky.

"Big White, drag him back here!"  
Said Bao Er, as she placed her hands on her waist with an unhappy expression.

"Woof!"

Big White's speed was simply too outrageous as a white mirage flew into the sky. Lei Yu had already utilized his speed to its maximum but within a few blinks of an eye, the previous scene appeared once again.

"I say, can't you just let me go? I really have something important to do!" Lei Yu anxiously said.

"It's really out of my hands. I have to listen to young miss's words because it's the rules of Ceng Hong

Villa. Of course, this rule was also made by young miss..." After saying that, Big White extended his mouth. Lei Yu quickly stopped before dodging to the side.

"If you really force me to stay here, then I won't be polite!" Lei Yu was getting a bit angry. This was the first time he has encountered being toyed with, and this also wasn't the best time to be joked around with.

Lei Yu secretly condensed a ball of glittering light. Even though he had prepared an attack, he didn't intend on killing Big White. Yet a small punishment was still necessary.

Lei Yu did not think things through at all because he never made any attempts to estimate how strong Big

White was. He only kept on thinking on getting away from this place and ignored that he wasn't an opponent of this dog-like animal.

The lightning ball had finished condensing in his hand before Lei Yu tossed it out. Similar to a cannonball, the lightning ball shot out while Lei Yu started flying off into another direction.

"Sheesh, stop running. There's no way you are able to get away! You are merely someone on the Gold Core stage so how can you escape from me?" Big White simply waved his paw and the lightning ball was scattered away without have any effect.

"What did you say?!" Lei Yu was

shocked.

"Oh right..." Big White then said: "Remember that Dragon-Snake that you killed? He's just one of my many other properties. But I never expected it would be killed by you, especially when you're just at the Gold Core stage. This really made me surprised."

"One of your property?"

"That's right. Or did you think a mere early Nascent Soul demonic beast would be able to survive in the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea by itself? That's impossible!" Big White said in disdain.

"Then..." Lei Yu swallowed hard, this time he had completely given

up on escaping. He then recalled that he had utilized his flying speed to the maximum already yet was still caught up by Big White in mere moments. Lei Yu then asked with uncertainty: "Then Big White, what stage has your cultivation level reached?"

"That's not something you should worry about for now. Just come back with me, young miss has a bad temper and doesn't like to wait for people. If she becomes impatient and personally catches up with you, then I wouldn't want to think of what consequences that might entail."

Lei Yu couldn't help but suck in a cool breath. Could the strength of that little girl called Bao Er be

stronger than Big White? This train of thought was reasonable or else with Big White's strength, why would he willingly recognize this girl as his master? Thinking to this point, cold sweat started dripping down Lei Yu's back. It looks like he had to stay at this place to put on a clown show.

"Let's go back and don't try to escape again. Maybe the young miss might even let you leave if you make her happy enough? But wanting to sneak away is certainly something that would never work." Said Big White.

"That's easy for you to say... what should I do when her grandfather comes back and wants to kill me?"



"Who can you blame? Who told you to break into Ceng Hong Villa for no reason? No one has ever dared to enter this place without an invitation. But I can clearly tell you that you're the first person that has ever broken in and stayed alive the longest." Saying up to here, Big White turned around and slowly drifted downwards. His meaning was very clear - he was going to see if Lei Yu was still going to be stubborn about it.

Images of Ai Er and Nuo Hu being tortured were flickering through Lei Yu's mind. Although this was just his imagination, he still couldn't calm down. Lei Yu also had a temper that not anyone could suppress.

Clenching his teeth, a red ribbon appeared in Lei Yu's hand. After injecting nearly half of his internal energy into it, Lei Yu's body became illusory before disappearing without a trace.

Big White turned around and noticed Lei Yu had disappeared which surprised him a bit. But he sniffed with his nose and oddly humphed, while staying afloat motionless.

"It's no use, just come back with me already!"

Because the time this red ribbon allowed Lei Yu to disappear for was too short, he gradually reappeared again. Lei Yu then put on a painful crying face, "Hero! Please let me go!"

# Chapter 250: Only Three Days

Big White pretended he didn't hear a thing and bit onto the corner of Lei Yu's clothes. Just like the previous time, Lei Yu couldn't move at all and was dragged back down.

"I say Big Miss Bao Er, I really have important things to do so can you just let me leave?!" Said Lei Yu, as he stood in front of Bao Er unable to laugh or cry.

"Of course not. If you leave, who's going to play with me?" Bao Er still shook her head in disagreement.

"Then tell me, what do I have to do

before you'll let me leave?" Lei Yu knew that with his strength, there's no way it would be possible for him to make another attempt at escaping. Big White said that the Dragon-Snake he had a big battle with was merely property, so how powerful was Big White? Also, would this Bao Er be even more powerful?

Bao Er looked at Lei Yu with a slanted head and smiled, "Only if you make me happy. As long as you make me happy, I will let you leave!"

"Are your words for real?!"

"Whatever I, Bao Er say will count!" Bao Er vowed by patting her not so big chest.

"The day it counts is the day pigs can fly."

"Big White! What did you say?!"  
Yelled Bao Er as she looked at Big White with her hands on her hips.

"Woof, woof, woof..."

"Uh..."

With a thought, Lei Yu retrieved an item from his storage ring. For people in the modern age, this item was something often seen. But for Bao Er, it will be considered as her seeing a novelty treasure for the first time.

"What is this?" Asked Bao Er while carefully observing the big item with wide eyes. She then started touching the shiny exterior of it.

"This is called a car, and it's very expensive!" Said Lei Yu as he pointed to the modern era necessity, his Mercedes-Benz E-Class roadster.

"How come I have never seen this before?" Bao Er's face had an expression of an innocent and curious child, making Lei Yu unable to link her previous unreasonable attitude together. But her unreasonableness was an undeniable fact.

"That's of course; this is something only available in my hometown."

"What can it do?"

"Take a seat!" Lei Yu opened the car door for Bao Er while he went and

sat on the driver's seat. As for Big White, he also wanted to experience this and jumped into the back seat.

"Now what?" Asked Bao Er as she looked around at the interior of the car.

"Sit tight, I'm going to turn on the car!" The car started. They were surrounded by endless fields of grass which was suitable for driving on, except the grass was going to suffer quite a bit.

"Wow! This is your mount! It's so awesome!" Bao Er was waving her hands out of the car in joy with a rather cute and innocent expression.

"It's still not as fast as me..." Big

White mumbled while lying in the back seat.

"It's definitely not as fast as you, but it's more comfortable than sitting on you!" Bao Er seemed to have forgotten the rule of not allowing to speak she had set for Big White, as she openly refuted him.

Seeing how happy Bao Er looked, Lei Yu was secretly happy in his heart. This Bao Er had agreed that as long as she was happy, she would let him go. It looks like he could leave very soon.

As the car rapidly sped through the grass, Lei Yu unintentionally looked behind and was a bit surprised at what he saw. Big White had poked his head out the side of the car with



his mouth open and his tongue swaying in the wind, while drool was dripping down and backwards like crazy.

"Could this be its nature? Uh..." Lei Yu didn't know what to say regarding this.

Speeding through this huge grassy plain, almost an hour had passed by. Only then did Lei Yu slowly stop the car and get out, "How was it? Are you happy?"

"This is lots of fun! Really fun!" Bao Er nodded and clapped her hands with a laugh.

In fact, it's not really that much fun. Even though this new and strange gizmo was bland in the fun factor,

its fresh concept was the most important reason for the approval.

"So does that mean I can leave now?" Lei Yu made a thought and his car was stored back into the storage ring.

"No way! You can't leave! You wanting to leave have made me unhappy now!" Bao Er was like a rattle drum as she shook her head.

Lei Yu felt his heart shatter as if someone looted his belongings without paying. His mouth was agape and his eyes wide, an expression that had rarely appeared on his face his entire life.

A while later, Lei Yu finally recovered his senses. "Didn't we

make an agreement? As long as I could make you happy, you were going to let me leave. How could you go back on your words?"

"Who says I'm going back on my words? You can't just make me happy for a single moment! You have to make my happy constantly for it to count!"

Looking at the girl's rogue expression, Lei Yu really felt like slapping her a bit. With a solemn face, Lei Yu then said in a serious tone: "Enough, Bao Er! I've already said that I have something important to do! Lives are at stake! If I don't go now, I'm afraid it will be too late! Please stop messing around and making unreasonable demands!"

Seeing how serious Lei Yu looked, Bao Er pouted, "You're bullying me! Wait until grandpa comes back and I tell him!" After saying that, tears started swelling in her eyes.

Seeing Bao Er cry, Lei Yu felt like he wanted to die. Lei Yu had no fears when facing his enemies, but when it came to the face of a girl crying, he was completely helpless. Lei Yu was now in a helpless situation; he couldn't fight and he couldn't cry. "You...!"

With Bao Er crying, Big White growled and humphed a few times sounding like he wanted to rush towards Lei Yu and tear him apart. But when Lei Yu turned around to glance at Big White, he noticed Big White was trying to wink at him.

Although the look of a dog trying to wink at you was extremely weird, Lei Yu understood Big White was only pretending to be angry around Bao Er and didn't really want to tear him apart.

Lei Yu walked forward and looked at Bao Er, "How about this: You let me go handle my tasks and once I'm finished, I will immediately come back and play with you. Even if your grandfather's going to kill me, I will still come back. How's that? I'm begging you, please stop crying!"

"You're lying!" Bao Er looked up and wiped the tears from her face.

"Unless you play with me for three days, then you can leave before grandpa comes back!"

"For real?"

"The words that I, Bao Er have said will surely..."

"It's fine, it's fine! I wouldn't dare to believe your words anyway since I've experienced your so called promises before!" Lei Yu waved his hands and interrupted her words.

Seeing the roguish girl's mouth once again quiver before tears started dripping down again, Lei Yu clenched his teeth. "Fine, I'll agree to it! But you really have to let me leave when the time comes!"

Hearing Lei Yu's words, Bao Er jumped into the air with her fists raised, "Yaaa!"

"Yaaa?" Lei Yu blinked, "Is this an

expression that the people of the Immortal Realm also have?"

Two days later, Bao Er had a lot of fun and was extremely happy. Lei Yu had taken useful items from his modern world out of the storage ring making her more excited after the next. There were some things he couldn't be used here though, such as a cell phone. Once the batteries were used up, he won't be able to use it anymore. There's no way Lei Yu would use his lightning ability to recharge the batteries right? He was afraid that before the batteries were charged, the cell phone would be burnt to a crisp already.

On the third day, it was clear that Bao Er was not as happy as the past

two days. But time had arrived and Lei Yu didn't want to delay anymore. After gently patting her shoulder, "Bao Er, the third day has arrived and I should be leaving now."

One could see tears start welling up in Bao Er's eyes, "But Bao Er does not want to you go!"

Off to the side, Big White also looked quite reluctant and sad. Even though it was only three days, Lei Yu had expertly made this difficult to handle big missy extremely happy. And Big White was fed a lot of delicious stuff that he had never experienced before.

Lei Yu was about to console Bao Er when he heard a roar from the



heavens, "Who are you?!"

-----

Here's the link for a if you're  
curious.

# Chapter 251: Don't Kill Him

Lei Yu quickly raised his head while Bao Er seemed to have forgotten her sadness. "Uh oh, grandpa is back!"

Before Lei Yu could even make out that person's face, he felt a hand firmly clasped around his neck. Lei Yu felt like he couldn't breathe and didn't have any strength to resist at all.

This appeared to be an old man with gray hair but no beard. On his face, not a wrinkle was seen which was completely mismatched with the color of his hair. He was the

image of a white haired guy with a youthful complexion.

"Intruding into the Ceng Hong Villa - death!" As the words ended, the old man tightened his grip. One could hear a "crack" sound that even made Big White unconsciously squeeze his eyes shut.

"Grandpa! Don't kill him!" Bao Er screamed.

Unfortunately, Lei Yu was breathing air out more than breathing in, his eyes were about to roll back as if he was about to die.

The old man loosened his grip, and Lei Yu heavily fell on the ground. With a cold humph, "Bao Er, who permitted him to enter the Villa?

Do they not know my Villa's rules?!"

"Grandpa! I said not to kill him so don't kill!" Bao Er quickly rushed over and held up Lei Yu as if she was trying to save him.

"You...!" The old man was a bit surprised. His own granddaughter actually held a strange man in her embrace.

Bao Er raised her head with a grievance-like face, "Grandpa, I'm begging you to save him. Bao Er promised him that as long as he played with Bao Er for three days, she would let him go. But who would have thought before he could leave, grandpa has come back already."

"You are getting more and more outrageous! You allowed a stranger to enter the Villa?!"

"Grandpa!"

"Enough, there's no need for more words! A mere kid at the Gold Core stage, just let him die. Why are you so worked up? Just quickly let go of him!" The old man angrily roared.

"No! No way! You're such a bad grandpa! Bao Er is going to ignore you!" After that, she easily picked up Lei Yu and walked towards the small house.

"You...!" The old man angrily stared with wide eyes, but was helpless since he doted on his granddaughter so much.

Big White lolled out his tongue and followed since he didn't dare to even glance at the old man.

"Sigh! That girl...! Flinging his sleeves, the old man then went inside the small house.

"Bao Er, who on earth is this person? Why did you allow him to stay in the Villa? Aren't you afraid he might be a danger to you?"

"Grandpa, stop talking and save him!" Seeing that Lei Yu was about to die, Bao Er anxiously looked at her grandfather with a pitiful face.

"Humph! As if I would!"

"Grandpa! It's not easy someone is willing to accompany Bao Er to play, yet now you've killed him! Bao

Er has always been forced by grandpa to stay in the Villa and has never left before. Bao Er has now found someone to play with yet you still oppose it!" After saying that, Bao Er's tears couldn't be held back anymore and started dripping down.

The old man sighed and went to Bao Er's side. "My good granddaughter, you should know that inside the Villa contains my life's work. How could I allow a stranger to stay here?!"

"But he's not a stranger! Bao Er... Bao Er... Bao Er loves him!" After saying that, Bao Er's face went red.

"Nonsense! Complete nonsense! I'm telling you, immediately drag him

out of here!" The old man's temper flared up to his eyes. He never expected his innocent granddaughter would say such words.

It's no wonder... Bao Er has never left the Ceng Hong Villa and those that accompany her here had only been the old man and the dog-like Big White. Even if outsiders come, they're the old man's good friends and would never play with Bao Er. Lei Yu was the only one, and is now dying because of her grandfather's return. How could Bao Er not be sad and anxious in this situation?

"I won't!" Bao Er cried out as her tears kept dripping down.

"Big White! Drag that guy out for



me!" The old man angrily yelled as it pointed to Lei Yu lying on the bed.

Big White was helpless in this situation. He was very close to Bao Er but he has never dared to go against the words of the old man. Although reluctant, Big White still went forward one step at a time.

At this time, a white internal energy that was cold and pure rose out of Lei Yu's wrist and into his body. Without hesitation, it travelled through his meridians and flowed to his throat before rapidly healing it. And the green energy inside his body forgot about being shy and rushed forth to help Lei Yu reconnect his airways.

"Spiritual Bracelet of Frost!" The old man loudly cried out.

The cool aura was clearly felt by Bao Er who was the closest. Although it was cold, it wasn't the bone chilling kind of feeling. And the feeling was very comfortable which even made Bao Er stare with big round eyes.

At this time, Big White was already at Lei Yu's side about to open his mouth to do what the old man had ordered. The old man suddenly rushed forward, grabbed Big White's head and shoved it aside. He then sat on the bed next to Lei Yu and started carefully observing the bracelet on Lei Yu's wrist.

Big White hadn't used any strength

to resist so was a bit disoriented after being shoved to the side forcefully. Although he wasn't injured, he couldn't help but blink in confusion.

"It's really the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost! Who is this kid? Why would he have this?" Said the old man in shock.

"Grandpa, what's this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost thing?" Asked Bao Er with big round eyes.

The old man exhaled heavily before saying: "This Spiritual Bracelet of Frost is considered a supreme treasure that has disappeared for countless years. Many people had once fought for this thing which eventually lead to numerous

casualties. Who would've thought that it would actually appear on this kid!"

"That's great grandpa! If you want to know why it's in his possession, why not quickly save him and have him tell you?" Said Bao Er as she shook the old man's arm.

The old man nodded and closed his eyes. He then crossed his arms and a light blue internal energy started flowing through them. The energy was getting more intense before the old man waved his hands, causing two streams of internal energy to rush straight for Lei Yu's throat. One could hear the "pak pak" sounds of bones moving before Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes. Lei Yu opened his mouth wide and took in

a big breath of air, before starting to rapidly breathing once again.

"You're a lucky bastard. With the protection of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, it won't let you die so quickly. However, if it weren't for me saving you at the crucial moment, you would still eventually die in the end even with the bracelet's help!" Said the old man in a cold manner as he stood up.

"Big brother Lightning, you should hurry up and thank grandpa!" Bao Er gently tugged the recovered Lei Yu.

Lei Yu swallowed hard a few times. Only after determining that his throat had been reconnected, he then cupped his hands, "Thank

you... uh... thank you for your grace in saving my life." Even though his mouth said this, his mind was thinking: What the f\*ck?! You attempted to kill me and then saved me, and now I have to thank you?! What sort of bullshit is this?!

"It's fine, enough of the nonsense. Tell me how did the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost land in your hands? Where did you get it?" The old man then coldly humphed, "It is a fact that you've trespassed onto the Ceng Hong Villa. If you dare lie to me, I will not hesitate to kill you!"

"Well..." Lei Yu's mind was on overdrive thinking how he should reply.

# Chapter 252:

## Descendant Of The Ceng Family

The old man was very concerned about the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, and even made a move to save Lei Yu who was about to die because of it. Lei Yu had realized those two points. For some reason, the old man did not try to take the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost away but saved him. It wasn't difficult to deduce that he and the owner of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost may have a relationship. If Lei Yu said that he took the bracelet from the treasure trove of a tyrant, that would show that he and this bracelet had no

relationship. And the results of that would be unpredictable.

After quickly thinking things through, Lei Yu instead asked: "Why should I tell you? Could it be that you want to take away the family treasure that my grandfather left me?"

"What?!" Your... your grandfather left behind this family treasure for you?" The old man was so shocked that even his voice was trembling a bit.

"Th... that's right!" Lei Yu was also shocked by the old man's reaction. There was a reason for Lei Yu to makeup such a reply. He wanted to give the other a vague answer so that whether the old man was a



friend or enemy to the bracelet's owner, he could easily come up with more stories.

If the old man and the owner of the bracelet were friends, then that was easy to handle. Lei Yu could follow the flow and say he was a descendant and would naturally escape any life-threatening situations. If they were enemies, it was still easy to handle because Lei Yu could say that his ancestors got a hold of it by accident and had started to pass it down through the generations. That way, they would have no connection to the original owner of the bracelet.

"What is your name?" The old man asked.

"Grandpa! His name is Lightning!"  
Bao Er rushed to reply.

"Nonsense!" The old man clearly didn't believe anyone would have such a name. It was probably a pseudonym to hide one's real identity. "Hurry up and tell me what your real name is? And what relationship do you have with our family's old master?"

"Old... old master?" Lei Yu blinked a few times while his brains seemed to hit a dead end.

"Do not lie to me or else I will rip you into pieces!" The old man fiercely clenched his fist that gave off a "pak pak" sound. Lei Yu never doubted the old man's capabilities; he felt that when the old man

crushed his throat previously, it was probably as easy as stepping on an ant.

If he spoke out a family name or a first name that was not related to what the old man wanted to hear, Lei Yu might encounter a disastrous consequence. Sweat had already started dripping down his forehead, "What should I do? What should I do? Why didn't I think about the possibility of such a close relationship?"

Just as Lei Yu had fallen into a pit of despair and anxiety, he heard a voice in his mind going: "Master! Master!"

Lei Yu was startled, "Xue Yu! Is that you Xue Yu?"

"Yes, master. Don't panic, I can tell you my previous owner was called Ceng Yi Han. You can follow the family name and give yourself a name."

Lei Yu was overjoyed and was about to say something when the old man snapped: "Quickly, tell me or else I will twist off your head!"

"Why are you so anxious?!" Lei Yu cleared his throat while his lips trembled a bit. "My... my... my name is Ceng... Ceng Yu!"

"How did you know that this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost was left to you by your grandfather?"

"This... I... my father told me it. He said that this bracelet was created

after my grandfather exhausted his life's effort. After leaving this to me, he then disappeared leaving me alone to drift throughout the Chaotic Star Sea.

The old man felt his body tremble and his scalp go numb. It was a while later before he recovered his senses. With red eyes and a "plop" sound, the old man kneeled and said "Young master! Ceng Hong will now kowtow to you!"

"You..." The scare Lei Yu received was not light. He looked at Bao Er, then at Big White, and finally at the old man kneeling on the ground. Lei Yu's mind was now in a complete daze.

"Grandpa! What are you doing?"

Bao Er rushed up to support the old man.

"Bao Er! Quick, kneel and greet the young master!" The old man couldn't control his tears anymore as they dripped onto the ground. Bao Er was blinking in confusion before being pulled down onto the ground by the old man.

"What... what are you guys doing? What... what young master are you guys talking about?" Asked Lei Yu while swallowing hard.

"Young master, back then there was a huge calamity in the Ceng family. Over a hundred people were murdered and only one was left alive. I brought young master... um... who's your father and fled.

We were ambushed midway and I separated with the young master. I would never have thought... that young master was helped by the heavens and managed to escape the crisis. He was even able to leave behind a descendant! The heavens have eyes! The heavens have eyes!" As he was saying this, the old man was kowtowing and heavily smashed his head on the ground.

"There can't be such a coincidence right?" Lei Yu was shocked yet was secretly happy. But to impersonate someone else causing the old man to perform such a great ceremonial act towards him, Lei Yu felt unease. Then again, Ai Er and Nuo Hu was waiting to be saved so Lei Yu had to do this in order to protect his own life. He absolutely cannot die right

now.

"Quickly get up first!" Lei Yu rushed forth to support the old man before pulling Bao Er up as well.

At this time, Big White's expression was rather funny. His eyes were big and round, his mouth agape, and his tongue drooped out as if it had forgotten to go back inside. And the red ruby like stone on his forehead was constantly flashing.

"The heavens have eyes! The heavens have eyes...!" The old man's heart was so emotional that words couldn't describe it. All he could do was keep repeating those words.

A short while later, the old man seemed to have remembered



something and said full of guilt:  
"Ceng Hong was previously rude  
and in the wrong, please punish me  
young master!"

"No need! No need! You... you didn't  
know before right?"

After the old man Ceng Hong  
explained his past, Lei Yu finally  
understood what happened. A  
thousand year ago, the Ceng family  
had suffered a total extermination  
by their enemies. After that, the old  
man had separated with Ceng Yi  
Han's son. If Lei Yu didn't have the  
help of Xue Yu who resided in the  
Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, most  
likely his soul would currently be in  
the afterlife. The most fortunate  
part is that everything was too  
coincidental - if back then Ceng Yi

Han did not have a son, then Lei Yu's lie would not have worked out. One can only say that Lei Yu was too lucky.

"Young master..."

"It's best to call me little Yu." Lei Yu blushed a bit after being called young master since it really wasn't him. Lei Yu would also feel unaccustomed to being called Ceng Yu either. "Little Yu is better because many people are called that, and it's also more intimate."

"Right! Right! Ceng Hong was being stupid. In order to hide young master's identity, it's best to call you little Yu." The old man smiled, "So little Yu, what are your plans?"

Lei Yu shook his head in reluctance, "I actually have something important to do. I have two friends that have been kidnapped by a Sect in the Immortal World and while I was rushing to go save them, I didn't expect to be intercepted halfway by a Dragon-Snake. Fortunately, I was able to kill it eventually. But who would've thought that I would arrive at your Ceng Hong Villa."

"Bao Er is young and ignorant, so I request that young master forgives her!"

"Call me little Yu!" Lei Yu then said: "Don't worry about it, Bao Er is so cute. And in order to save me, she even got into a heated argument with you. Everything is fine."

"How about this - I will accompany you to go and save your friends?"

# Chapter 253: Green Vein Dewdrop

"Grandpa, have you forgotten? You're still refining a medicine in your furnace! You've been refining it for a full three years and within these two days; the furnace can be opened soon!" Bao Er reminded him on the side.

Ceng Hong shook his head,  
"Compared to little Yu's matter, the medicinal pill is considered nothing!"

Lei Yu frantically waved his arms,  
"No! No! Three years is not a short amount of time so just stay here to prepare to open the furnace. I,

alone can go there."

"How can that work? The deeper you go into the Chaotic Star Sea, the more dangerous it gets. Ceng Hong will be worried for you if you went alone!"

Lei Yu felt that having a bodyguard with him was obviously a good thing, but he couldn't make someone that had spent three years to refine a medicinal pill to give up on it and accompany him. What Lei Yu couldn't understand was what kind of medicinal pill would require one to refine it for such a long time.

Moreover, his identity as a young master was completely fake which made him feel rather ashamed of his actions. If he was let that person

follow and protect him as well, the thought of that made Lei Yu feel like he should just shove his face inside his own crotch.

"There's no need! Just do what I've said, elder should just stay here and watch your medicinal pill. I should be able to handle whatever is to come."

"This..."

"It's decided then!" Lei Yu smiled.

"Little Yu..." Ceng Hong was not going to let the last Ceng descendant risk his life, so he said: "How about this, allow Big White to follow you. As long as he's with you, I believe there won't be many people who would give you trouble."

Within the Chaotic Star Sea, I, Ceng Hong still have a bit of face."

"Then... fine!" Lei Yu could only helplessly agree that Big White could be an exception. Moreover, having such a powerful big dog following him around wasn't such a bad idea.

Big White seemed to have a happy expression as his tail kept wagging back and forth. Inside his heart, flowers were already blooming in joy since being able to take a stroll away from the Villa was a good thing. Moreover, Lei Yu possessed a lot of strange and delicious foods that stirred up his greed.

"Grandpa, what about Bao Er?" Bao Er pouted with a frown, clearly



displaying her sad face.

"You? Just be a good girl and stay here! You've already delayed little Yu's important matter, could it be that you want to delay him even more?" Lectured Ceng Hong.

Bao Er then mumbled, "Didn't grandpa almost kill him?"

"You...!"

Lei Yu quickly interrupted, "It's fine, it's fine, aren't I safe and sound right now? Bao Er should listen to your grandfather. Once I complete my tasks, I will immediately come back and look for you. By then, there will be two extra people to play with you. How's that?"

"Really?!" Bao Er jumped into the

air, her sadness instantly becoming happiness.

"For real, I'm not like someone that goes back on their words!"

"You're making fun of me!"

-----

Lei Yu wasn't sure what else may happen on the way so he didn't want to delay anymore. His mood was now extremely anxious.

"Little Yu, I have a medicinal pill called the Green Vein Dewdrop Pill which has a decent effect. When one has almost depleted their internal energy, consuming the Green Vein Dewdrop Pill will allow them to instantly recovery everything." As if it was a supreme

treasure, Ceng Hong slowly pulled out a medicinal pill and handed it to Lei Yu.

After receiving the pill, Lei Yu took a closer look at it. The pill was round and about the size of a fingernail. The pill was transparent with a shade of light blue while on the surface were some green lines that looked like veins. Perhaps the name of the pill came from the appearance of the green lines.

After gently smelling it, Lei Yu realized it had a hint of fragrance to it which made him almost want to swallow it from impulse.

"There's only one?" Lei Yu was overjoyed after hearing the pill's effectiveness from Ceng Hong.

Whenever he encounters danger, wouldn't this be similar to bringing in another one of him into the fight? For something this good, Lei Yu wouldn't mind getting a few more of them.

"That's right. For the past several centuries, this pill is the only one I was able to successfully refine. Due to the extremely rare materials and the cumbersome process, refining this pill is rather difficult." Replied Ceng Hong.

Lei Yu felt a bit shocked. He never thought such a small medicinal pill would be so precious, yet this Ceng Hong could so easily gift it to him. How could Lei Yu have the nerve to accept such a big gift? When he was about to decline it, Ceng Hong

said: "Little Yu, please don't decline it. Ceng Hong cannot accompany you forth is already considered an offense, so gifting you this medicinal pill is the expression of my good-will."

Seeing Ceng Hong's sincere eyes, Lei Yu nodded heavily.

Seeing a person and a dog fly off into the distance, Ceng Hong sighed. "I hope the young master will be safe and sound."

Bao Er stared at the gradually disappearing Lei Yu before mumbling: "Brother Yu, you must come back and look for Bao Er! Bao Er will be waiting here for you!"

During the several days Lei Yu was

trapped in Ceng Hong Villa, the two apprentice-brothers Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li had brought Ai Er and Nuo Hu along to the exclusive safe path that led to the Immortal World. They were unimpeded along the way but due to the long distance and the fear of encountering other Sects, they proceeded cautiously instead at top speeds.

"Big White, what level of strength have you actually reached? You can tell me now right?" Towards this situation, Lei Yu was very curious about.

Big White shook his head and said: "Young master, why are you so focused on this matter? Isn't it good enough knowing that Big White has the ability to protect you?"

"I'm just curious." Lei Yu laughed.

"You will know in the future..."

"Why are you still trying to be mysterious with me?" Lei Yu then suddenly remembered something and reminded his companion: "Oh right Big White, I heard from the Dragon-Snake that there's another creature that will block our path. Should we be more cautious?"

Big White disagreed by saying: "Don't worry young master, within a million miles of Ceng Hong Villa; no one would dare to give us a hard time."

"Really?"

"Of course, so don't worry about a thing."

Although he was told this, Lei Yu firstly didn't know Big White's true strength, and secondly couldn't fully trust his words. But since Big White said this with such an attitude, Lei Yu didn't bother continuing with the topic.

The human and beast were flying quite fast as they were similar to meteors streaking by.

It was at this time that Lei Yu sensed a huge momentum in the surrounding area. He looked around vigilantly and released his spiritual perception in hopes of finding something.

"Why don't you show yourself?!"  
With Big White's cry, that powerful aura vibrated and a strange creature



appeared in front of the two.

"What the devil is this thing?!" Lei Yu stared with big round eyes. This monster had a head like a locust but didn't have the antennas on its head. Instead, it had a single horn on its head. Its two eyes were bell-shaped but did not have any pupils. It had a large body that looked like a human, but was covered with a thick shell. All of this still looked quite normal until one's sight reached its hands; they looked like claws of an eagle instead.

"Why are you acting so sneaky around here?" Big White coldly asked.

The monster appeared to be very scared upon seeing Big White.

While its body was trembling, it  
replied: "This little one deserves to  
die. This little one did not know  
Lord White had arrived! Please  
spare my life! Please spare my life!"

# Chapter 254: The Large Roc's Territory

"Lord White?" Lei Yu was surprised, but then thought back when Big White previously said that the Dragon-Snake was merely one of its properties. And when it came to this monster, it looks like it's the ghostly thing that the Dragon-Snake had previously mentioned off to the east.

"Move aside, we have important matters to take care of so stop blocking our path!" Big White coldly said.

This unknown named demonic beast was scared out of its wits before running off and disappearing without a trace. Lei Yu blinked while looking at Big White, "I have never seen you like this before, I had always thought you were quite docile."

Big White grinned before replying: "Young master, it's up to who I'm dealing with. When dealing with this type of demonic beast, how can I lose the face of our Ceng Hong Villa."

"Uh..."

With Big White following along, the two didn't encounter any trouble. Even if those that didn't bother looking closed and decided to cause

a problem, they would scurry away like a rat upon seeing Big White. Lei Yu was rather curious - was Ceng Hong Villa really that powerful? From beginning to end, Lei Yu had no clue what level of strength Big White had reached.

For three full days, a human and a beast flew through the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea. Lei Yu's heart was still very anxious, wanting to quickly reach his destination as soon as possible.

As for Big White, the most enjoyable thing about being together with Lei Yu was eating delicious food. But these foods for Lei Yu were considered nothing special. They mostly consisted of different kinds of bread or even a

hot dog etc. Other things consisted of edibles that could last for a long time, such as cookies and others similar. All these food items weren't available in the Immortal World or the Chaotic Star Sea, so it's no wonder Big White was so excited to taste them.

"How much longer until we arrive?"  
Asked Lei Yu.

"Please don't be anxious young master; it's still quite far away."  
Replied Big White as he licked his lips from the delicious food he just ate.

"Could it be that all the dangers in the Chaotic Star Sea to you, I mean, to the Ceng Hong Villa are considered nothing?"

"It's not completely true since it's only for this certain region. When we get to the Large Roc Emperor's territory, we will have to be careful." Big White replied.

"Large Roc Emperor?" As if he remembered something, Lei Yu said: "Is it the Uncle Large Roc that Bao Er mentioned?"

"Right, that's him. Even though the Large Roc Emperor is friends with our Villa, it's just based out of mutual interest."

"Mutual interest?"

"Right, the medicinal pills that owner refines is bought by many people, and the Large Roc Emperor is just one of the many."

Lei Yu nodded to show he understood Big White's meaning. They got up and then continued on their journey. Unbeknownst to Lei Yu, there was a pair of sharp eyes staring at the two of them off in a distance.

"Whoosh~!"

There was a golden flash that stopped in front of Lei Yu and Big White. The speed was so fast that Lei Yu only saw a blur of light before an extra person appeared in front of them.

"You guys dare to invade the Large Roc Emperor's territory? Who are you people?" Asked the person who had suddenly appeared.



Lei Yu was a bit surprised because the person in front of them had a pair of golden wings on his back. His nose and mouth were merged together while curving downwards that was similar to an eagle's beak. Apart from the wings and the beak, he was no different than any other human.

"Friend, we came from Ceng Hong Villa and are passing through your territory to take care of some business in the Immortal World." Said Big White in a polite manner.

Lei Yu slightly raised his eyebrow. It looks like what Big White said was true; they were no longer in the region belonging to the Ceng Hong Villa. Even Big White was speaking so politely and didn't dare to be

rash here.

"Ceng Hong Villa?"

"Right, I am Ceng Hong Villa's divine beast - Big White. And this is an important guest of our Ceng Hong Villa." Big White introduced themselves.

In fact, Lei Yu had already sent out a probe and found out this birdman had the strength of an early Nascent Soul stage. But since they were in another's territory, it was better to act respectfully.

"This friend, Big White and I have some important matters. We would appreciate it if you allow us to pass through your precious territory." Said Lei Yu with cupped fists.

"What proof do you guys have? You want to safely pass through after spouting a few words? You guys seem to not put our Large Roc Emperor's family in your eyes!"

Big White coldly humphed, "Don't push it too far! We have already given you a lot of face, so don't blame me if you piss us off!"

"Pissed off? So what if I piss you off? In order to pass through, you need to leave something of value or else... humph...!"

"Something of value?" Is this how your family's Large Roc Emperor teaches his subordinates? Could it be that you don't know that our Villa Master is good friends with your Large Roc Emperor?" Big

White was starting to get angry. One could see the red ruby on his forehead was starting to shine while his eyes were narrowed to a glint.

"Enough of the bullshit! This is the rule; you have to leave a toll fee or else turn around and leave!" The birdman coldly replied while looking off to the side as if he didn't put Lei Yu and Big White in his eyes.

Big White was about to make a move before Lei Yu quickly blocked him. With a flip of his palm, a yellow crystal stone appeared. "This should be enough right?"

"Young master..."

Lei Yu made some furtive glances at

Big White to stop him from saying anything else. The birdman's wings flapped and he flew towards Lei Yu and grabbed the crystal stone. After checking it out a bit, the birdman smiled, "Please proceed!"

"Thank you!"

Lei Yu cupped his hands in thanks while Big White fiercely glared at the birdman before the two started to leave.

"That bastard, he didn't even place Ceng Hong Villa in his eyes. Once we go back, I'm going to tell the Villa Master everything and make them give us an explanation!" Said Big White in a tone filled with hatred.

"It's best to have fewer issues than more. It's merely a crystal stone right? Didn't we pass through smoothly? Stop thinking so much about it." Lei Yu tried to comfort Big White.

That birdman was floating in midair while holding the crystal stone in joy. Suddenly, a few beams of golden light stopped around him. That birdman immediately became respectful, "Captain!"

Five people with a similar appearance as the birdman arrived. One of them nodded before asking: "Who were the people just then? Why did you let them leave?"

"Captain, this gift is to pay respects to you!" After that previous birdman

passed over the yellow crystal stone, he then said: "They said they were from Ceng Hong Villa and was passing through to the Immortal World."

"Oh? They only gave a mere yellow crystal stone?" Asked the Captain.

"Ye... yes!"

"You idiotic thing! We have so many brothers, how is this enough for us to split?" The Captain then smiled, "It's not easy for us to meet people passing through so this daddy will lead you all today. How about we go grab ourselves a little something extra?"

"Good!"

"Sounds good! Captain, we're

counting on you!"

The several birdmen revealed a strange smile. The Captain waved his hand and multiple gold lights burst forth chasing after Lei Yu and Big White.

"Young master, looks like something is off." Said Big White softly.

Lei Yu also felt several powerful energy fluctuations rapidly heading in their direction. As he glanced back to take a look, multiple golden lights had already arrived.

"Friends from Ceng Hong Villa, please stop!" The so-called Captain cried out.

Lei Yu light exhaled before putting



on a smiling face, "I wonder what matters you have for us?"

# Chapter 255:

## Appearance Of The Large Roc Emperor

The Captain smiled, "Ah, it's like this... That subordinate of mine is a newcomer and doesn't the rules. If he has offended the friends of Ceng Hong Villa, I hope you can forgive him."

After hearing those word, Lei Yu glanced at Big White before smiling, "There's no need to be so polite, after all, Elder Ceng Hong and the Large Roc Emperor are good friends."

"Those from Ceng Hong Villa are

truly magnanimous, except..." The Captain made a face filled with hesitation.

"Except for what? Friend, you can be straightforward and tell us what you have to say." Lei Yu knew things wouldn't be this simple.

"Except that there are strict rules in the Large Roc Territory and my newly arrived subordinate doesn't know them too well. A single yellow crystal stone as the toll fee is a bit..."

"What you mean to say is that we need to pay some more right?" Asked Lei Yu as he ignored that Big White was pulling him back with his paws.

"Haha, I have incurred ridicule from this friend. We are only doing things by the rules so I hope we haven't offended you. We hope that the friends from Ceng Hong Villa can be magnanimous and forgive us!" The Captain laughed while cupping his hands with a very embarrassed look.

"I have no problems with that but... we left too hastily and forgot to bring more crystal stones with us, or else I would definitely offer more with open hands." Lei Yu slightly bowed with an apologetic look.

"Oh?" The Captain turned around to look at his men before facing Lei Yu again. "Then I'm really sorry. According to the rules, a single yellow crystal stone is not enough

for the toll fee. My two friends, please go back to where you came from."

Lei Yu knew how precious crystal stones were. Yanrong and Tian Ye and previously said that just ten ordinary crystal stones could maintain food and clothing for a small town for a full year. And on his person was only a single yellow, blue, and purple crystal stone. Now this person wanted a lion's share so how could Lei Yu agree to it? And just because of this problem would force him to turn back was something Lei Yu would definitely not agree with.

"This friend, we truly have some important matters to attend to. How about this: Once we return, we

will definitely give you all the necessary crystal stones, okay?" Lei Yu was hoping to make a final compromise.

"Sigh~" The Captain's face showed that he was in a difficult position. "It's not that I don't want to help you friends, but we do have our own difficulties. We have our responsibilities and don't dare to make any changes to them. If our superiors found out, we would certainly be punished. I hope these friends will understand and not make things difficult for us."

"Humph! You guys have gone too far!" Big White finally couldn't tolerate this anymore and roared out.

"Don't get angry! Don't get angry!"  
The Captain smiled, "It looks like your family's pet is much poorer in holding their emotions in compared to the owner."

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes while Big White loudly roared. His voice shook the sky before he coldly said: "You, will die a miserable death!"

"What do you plan on doing?!" The Captain was shocked and started retreating backwards. Several of his subordinates flapped their wings and flew over while drawing weapons from their waist. The weapons they held looked very similar to an eagle's claw.

"What am I going to do?" Big White floated forward, "My owner and the

Large Roc Emperor have many years of friendship, yet you, a mere Nascent Soul stage birdman dare to spout out arrogant insults! This is equivalent of not putting my owner in your eyes! Today, you must all die!"

Big White's body turned into a white light. Lei Yu couldn't even see what happened and the next moment, several miserable cries were heard. In an instant, several people were completely torn into pieces while the Captain was left floating there alone with eyes full of fear.

Big White coldly said: "What? You scared now? When you said those words, did you think about the consequences? Let me tell you - it's



too late for regrets!" One could only see a red light flash on Big White's forehead before a beam of light shot out. The speed was too fast to dodge and the red light had already penetrated through the Captain's chest. The fear in his eyes had not subsided yet and he had already lost the ability to breathe.

Big White coldly humphed once more before turning around, "Young master, let's go."

Lei Yu swallowed hard. These were six people at the Nascent Soul stage who were easily killed by Big White. Lei Yu was getting more and more curious as to what level Big White was at.

Around this time, a golden light in

the distance flew off rapidly and disappeared without a trace while Lei Yu and Big White continued on their journey.

On a certain planet and a place surrounded by cliffs, a lone castle sat at one of the highest points. The castle gave off a faint golden glow that was strangely bright. The entrance to the castle happens to be not on the ground but in the air, where one would traverse through a golden beam of light.

In the main hall of the castle sat a person. This person was wearing a golden satin gown and on the chest area was embroidered with a majestic eagle soaring into the sky that looked very domineering.

Long golden hair was hanging loosely behind him. He had a protruding forehead and a pair of sharp eyes that looked like it could kill with a glance. On his back was a pair of huge wings resting on both sides. On either side of the wings stood a girl that was gently wiping the golden feathers on the wings with a silk handkerchief.

"Emperor! Something bad has happened!" A beam of golden light entered the main hall.

"Why are you panicking and losing all decorum? What happened?" Asked the middle-aged man atop of the throne.

"Several of our patrolling guards have been killed by someone!"

"What?!" The middle-aged man's eyes went wide, "Who has the guts to act so wildly in my territory?!"

"Who... who..."

"Who are they? Quickly tell me!"

"This little one didn't hear them mention it so I don't know who they are. But it's a young person and a white beast, and on the forehead of the white beast is a red ruby-like stone.

The middle-aged man narrowed his eyes, "Ceng Hong Villa's Big White?" He suddenly stood up.

"Humph! He's not putting me, the Large Roc Emperor in his eyes! Take me there!"

"Yes! Understood!"

Lei Yu and Big White were both fly forth rapidly but when comparing speeds, Lei Yu was much slower. Lei Yu originally thought that the biggest advantage he had over others was his speed, so he never expected the gap between him and Big White would be so big.

"Young master, we should increase our speeds further. Killing the Large Roc Emperor's people in his territory, I'm afraid the consequences will be disastrous if he finds out. That guy always protects his own no matter what, so something bad might happen when dealing with him." Said Big White.

Lei Yu nodded, "Right, after all, this is his territory so let's hurry and get out of here!" After saying that, the

two increased their speeds a bit more.

From a distance, two golden lights were approaching. "Emperor, it's them!"

The speed of the middle-aged man suddenly increased exponentially and leaving the person who spoke in the dust. No matter how much he tried, he couldn't catch up with the Large Roc Emperor's speed.

The speed of the middle-aged man was comparable to the speed of light. Less than a blink of the eye, the Large Roc Emperor stopped in front of Lei Yu and Big White. He floated there with his huge golden wings unfurled which had the span of at least five meters.

Big White was shocked and quickly lowered his head by saying:  
"Greetings Large Roc Emperor!"

Lei Yu glanced at Big White before looking at the person that had suddenly appeared. Knowing things didn't look good, he still had to give the other face. Lei Yu then cupped his hands, "Greetings Lar... Large Roc Emperor."

# Chapter 256: Bao Er's Friend

"Who are you?" The Roc Emperor did not look at Big White and instead, stared at Lei Yu's unfamiliar face.

"Someone who is just passing by!" Replied Lei Yu.

The Roc Emperor's eyebrow twitched, "What a nonsensical response! Are you looking down on me?"

"Roc Emperor, he's..."

"Was I asking you? Shut your mouth!" Big White was about to say



more but was cut off by the Roc Emperor. The Roc Emperor then went back to staring at Lei Yu, "In my Roc Emperor's territory, no one has ever dared to speak to me like that!"

"Then I must ask Roc Emperor, does passing through here require paying crystal stones as a toll fee?"

Lei Yu's sudden words made the Roc Emperor who rarely revealed himself hesitate. "Paying crystal stones? What do you mean be that?"

Lei Yu smiled, "It's not that I'm looking down on the Roc Emperor, it's just that your subordinates without your knowledge, has collected from me crystal stones as

a toll fee. After that, they even verbally embarrassed and cursed at Big White. No matter what, Roc Emperor and Elder Ceng Hong are good friends. So for someone to insult Big White, doesn't that mean that person was insulting your good friend, Elder Ceng Hong? Your subordinates borrowed your mighty name to oppress others, isn't that considered discrediting your face? Big White merely made a move to teach them a lesson and nothing more."

Lei Yu knew that this Roc Emperor chased after them to demand an explanation, and might even have intentions to make a move on them. Lei Yu had to quickly eliminate his desire to make a move and the best way was to throw fault on his

subordinates.

"That's utter nonsense! How can our noble Roc family do such a dirty thing? Is the little friend here trying to insult this Roc Emperor?!" Asked the Roc Emperor in a tone filled with rage.

Lei Yu never expected that this Roc Emperor would protect his own so much to the point of ignoring any sensibilities. If this continued on, his defense would not solve this problem at all. But this Roc Emperor even made Big White show so much respect which meant his powers was strong to an unimaginable level. For the time being, Lei Yu was at a loss at what to do.

At this time, Big White said: "Roc Emperor, please blame Big White for the previous reckless actions. But I hope you are a magnanimous person and would forgive little characters like me. Big White shall thank you here on behalf of my family's master."

"On behalf of your family's master? Are you qualified to do that? Humph!" After the Roc Emperor's cold snort, he looked at Lei Yu: "You still haven't answered me, who are you?"

"Me? I'm Bao Er's friend." Lei Yu naturally couldn't tell him his lie so he could only reply like that.

"Bao Er? Ceng Hong's granddaughter?"

"That's right!"

"Ridiculous! Simply laughable! Everyone knows that Bao Er would never take a single step out of Ceng Hong Villa so how could she make friends with you? Your words cannot be trusted! Also, this Emperor will not sit idly by from the things that have happened today. The two of you shall go back with me and carefully explain everything!"

Lei Yu was getting more anxious now. "I'm really sorry but I have important matters to attend to. Once I return, I will personally go to your place and apologize for it!"

Lei Yu had gone against this Roc Emperor's words multiple times

now. As the highest ruler of this territory, how could his noble self tolerate such blasphemy? The Roc Emperor angrily said to his subordinate that had finally caught up: "Take them back with us!"

"Understood!"

The underling flapped his wings and flew towards Lei Yu and Big White before making a "please come with me" gesture.

At this point, Lei Yu's brows were tightly knitted together. "I've never thought that the Roc Emperor would be so unreasonable. It was clearly the fault of your men yet you pushed all responsibility on us. Is this how you wield the powers of your position? How would anyone

be convinced of your status?"

"You damn bastard, I'm going to kill you!" The Roc Emperor had been completely angered by Lei Yu's words. His fingers made a claw shape and three illusory finger shapes flew out straight for Lei Yu. Even though it was such a simple attack, it wasn't something Lei Yu could withstand at his current strength. It was at this time that Big White suddenly rushed out and blocked in front of Lei Yu. A red light flashed on his forehead before a beam of light shot out from it. The beam of light smashed into the Roc Emperor's illusory fingers and caused a huge explosion.

"Impudence!" The Roc Emperor then coldly said: "Big White, didn't

your family's master teach you any manners? You should know the consequences of hindering this Emperor's matters right?"

"Roc Emperor!" Big White once again slightly bowed and respectfully said: "Please don't be angry, there's something Big White cannot hide anymore." After glancing at Lei Yu, Big White then said: "I believe that you certainly don't want to start a feud with my family's master. And don't you always need my master to refine pills for you?"

"So what if you're right? What's that got to do with him?"

"Roc Emperor, I can guarantee that if you hurt him, not only will you



never get my master's pills, his elderly self will look for you and fight you to the death. Also, if you were to hurt a single finger on him today, Big White will be forced to fight to the death with you as well in order to protect him!"

"What did you say? You actually dare to threaten this Emperor? You're courting death!" The Roc Emperor widened his eyes, his body shook, and a sudden aura of pressure pressed against Lei Yu and Big White.

Big White suddenly stood up completely blocking Lei Yu behind him, and not a single bit of pressure landed on the latter.

"Big White, you..." Lei Yu was a bit

shocked. He never expected Big White, whom he had just met for a few days would say such words. This made Lei Yu's heart fill with guilt.

"Don't worry. With me here, I will not allow you to suffer any harm!" As Big White said this one word at a time, his eyes never left the Roc Emperor's body.

One could see Lei Yu's face twitch and didn't know what to say, while Big White's actions made the Roc Emperor even angrier.

"You overestimate your own abilities!"

While enraged, a golden light enshrouded the Roc Emperor's body

making him look similar to a golden eagle floating in midair. Big White immediately cried out: "Quick, retreat to the nearest planet!"

Lei Yu's reaction was quick so while under the cover of Big White, he suddenly flew off in a direction. That subordinate of the Roc Emperor wanted to intercept Lei Yu but was instantly cleaved into two by Big White's paw. The speed of Big White made Lei Yu lose his breath in astonishment.

A human and a beast descended onto a planet that wasn't too far away. The place those two were previously at suddenly exploded, and the two halves of the corpse belonging to the subordinate of the

Roc Emperor turned into bits of meat paste floating in space.

"Trying to run? There has never been anyone that's able to successfully escape from this Roc Emperor's grasp!" There was a loud eagle cry before the Roc Emperor flapped his wings to chase them.

This loud eagle cry made Lei Yu feel like his eardrums were about to burst. He increased his speed even more and was the first to reach the ground of this planet.

Lei Yu understood what Big White was trying to do. Fighting a powerful eagle in mid air was not a wise move at all. When they're on the ground and able to borrow it as a leveraging point, perhaps they

would have a small chance in winning.

But Lei Yu still couldn't help feel unease - was Big White truly able to beat the Roc Emperor? No matter what, this Roc Emperor was the king of this territory. How could someone with such status be easily beaten by Big White? This train of thought would be too unbelievable.

# Chapter 257: The Mysterious Big White

"Big White, what exactly is the level of your strength? How come you're not even afraid of the Roc Emperor?" Lei Yu asked quietly.

It's hard for Lei Yu to be not curious. The pressure and aura the Roc Emperor released caused Lei Yu to have difficulty breathing, yet Big White seemed to be unaffected by it at all.

One could see Big White's mouth form a grin. "If it weren't for following around Master, I, Big

White might also be a King of a territory. What is the Roc Emperor considered? If it weren't for giving face to my family's master, I wouldn't have placed him in my eyes at all!"

Lei Yu couldn't help but gasp as he stared at Big White.

The Immortal World and the Chaotic Star Sea had very clear levels. Apart from achieving a longer life span after entering the Gold Core stage, and as long as one didn't die from unknown causes, dying of old age was something that couldn't happen. After reaching the Nascent Soul stage which was only a single level difference from the Gold Core stage, the difference in power was not proportional at all.

That single level wasn't merely double one's power.

So far, the most powerful person Lei Yu has met was only in the Nascent Soul stage. When it came to Ceng Hong and Big White, there was no way for Lei Yu to estimate their strength. As for the Roc Emperor that has caused them problem, Lei Yu also couldn't tell what level of strength he has reached. But based on his intuition, all those people mentioned could pinch him to death without even trying.

For the Fusion Soul and Soul Splitting stages, Lei Yu hadn't made contact with anyone on those levels yet. But today, he will encounter such levels and thoroughly understand the profoundness



behind them.

"I want to see where you guys can escape to!" In a blink of an eye, the Roc Emperor had already caught up to them with unimaginable speeds. Based on this fact, Lei Yu was very envious. But with the looming enemy before him, Lei Yu really didn't have time to envy others. Even though Big White's words were very brazen, it was still hard for Lei Yu to not worry.

"It looks like I'll be punished by master when I return, but this was all forced by you, Roc Emperor!" Once Big White finished saying that, his figure became a white light akin to white lightning that arrived in front of the Roc Emperor. His silvery claws gave off a white light

as Big White swiped at the chest of the Roc Emperor.

"Whoosh~!"

The Roc Emperor's speed was extremely fast. The moment before the attack arrived at his chest, he had flapped his wings and dodged backwards. But even so, the white light exuding from Big White's claws still pierced the golden colored clothes of the Roc Emperor.

The eagle soaring backwards suddenly burst with power. "It's time for you to regret it!" The Roc Emperor roared before stopping his retreat and rushing forward.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Ear-piercing explosions were heard. The Roc Emperor's eagle claws and Big White's claws clashed numerous times before both of them then broke away from each other. The Roc Emperor had a shocked look on his face, "What level of power have you reached?!"

"Don't you think it's too late to ask such a question?" Big White coldly humphed. He wouldn't mind it if he could get rid of the Roc Emperor easily without giving him a chance to retaliate. The only thing he was worried about was the punishment he would receive when he returns to the Ceng Hong Villa. But Big White couldn't think about the consequences for now when dealing with this current situation.

Big White once again rushed forth. The strength behind his claws did not weaken one bit as he aimed for the Roc Emperor's chest once again.

The Roc Emperor who was already shocked by Big White's strength did not dare to be careless. From an unknown place, he brought out a weapon and used it to withstand the strike towards his chest.

"Clang~!"

A loud sound of metals clashing was heard, making Lei Yu feel that his eardrums were about to burst. One could see Big White retreat while giving off a slight grunt. No one expected that the Roc Emperor would suddenly bring out a weapon that looked similar to an eagle's

claw. They could also clearly feel that this weapon was many times more powerful than those that his subordinates had previously taken out.

"Big White, are you okay?" Asked Lei Yu when he saw Big White's front paw trembling a bit.

Big White gently shook his head, "It's not a problem, I just wasn't prepared for that. Be rest assured, most likely today's Roc Emperor will never appear again in the future. In my entire life, I, Big White, have only willingly allowed two people to injure me. The first is my family's master, and the second is the young miss. Today, there will be an extra person but it's not the big eagle!"

Based on Big White's words, it was clearly directed at himself. Lei Yu's heart trembled as a strange feeling arose inside.

Big White was completely enraged by the Roc Emperor. One could see the red light shining on his forehead before his body began to undergo a significant change. Lei Yu couldn't help but stare with wide eyes.

Big White's white fur started changing into an exceptionally eye-catching blood red color. Apart from the fur changing colors, no other parts of his body showed any difference. If one had to say what the biggest effect was, then it would have to be his eyes. Big White's eyes looked like they were filled with

rage. When Lei Yu glanced at his eyes, he felt a creepy feeling while all of his own hair stood on its end.

The Roc Emperor could feel an extremely strong aura rising from Big White making him suddenly panic. He then rushed forth with his eagle claw weapon at speeds so fast that he looked simply like a golden beam of light.

"Scram!"

After Big White's roar, his body started vibrating and blasted the Roc Emperor's weapon away to the side. If it weren't for the Roc Emperor gripping his weapon tightly, the powerful energy aura may have blasted the weapon off to who knows where.

The Roc Emperor's eyes were round and wide. He would never have thought that the usually meek and docile Big White, who he viewed as an ordinary beast would be so powerful. After exchanging several blows with him, the Roc Emperor felt like it was getting more difficult to resist Big White.

However, as the Roc Emperor who was someone at the late Fusion Soul stage, how could he show fear in such circumstances? His huge wings shook and he rose into the sky. It was only now did he realize why Big White wanted to find the nearest planet. Big White's purpose was to fight with him with a solid ground underneath their feet, and this was precisely what he wasn't good at. After adjusting himself, the



Roc Emperor dived down as if Big White was a prey that he was about to capture in his talons. Just like a mirage, Lei Yu felt that the two of them weren't moving at all. But the words to describe their exchanges seem slow, but in reality it was as fast as lightning. Lei Yu could only see splotches of blurry lights because the speed of those two experts was simply too fast. The next moment, the Roc Emperor soared into the sky once again. Signs of scratches had already appeared on his body while blood seeped out and stained his clothes.

As for Big White, he was just standing there staring at the Roc Emperor with a terrifying gaze. Lei Yu couldn't tell if there were any injuries on his body because Big

White was densely enveloped in blood red fur.

"Exactly what level have you reached?" Asked the Roc Emperor as he gasped for breath.

"You will know after you display your special skill!" Big White coldly replied.

After adjusting his breathing, the Roc Emperor coldly laughed: "You were the one that forced me to do this!"

A golden light suddenly brightened, and then began to enshroud the Roc Emperor within it. The Roc Emperor's body started to transform rapidly. His human body disappeared and was replaced by a

golden eagle with a gold crown on its head. The bright dazzling light of this process made Lei Yu unable to open his eyes at all. One could see the golden eagle extend its wings that reached a length of ten meters. The sharp eyes of the eagle landed on Big White's blood red body as if it had noticed a wild hare. Its huge wings flapped once before it dove downwards.

# Chapter 258: Early Soul Splitting Stage

Big White didn't seem to care and stood in place. It looked like he wasn't worried about the sharp claws glimmering with white light on the golden eagle. But what Lei Yu could see and feel that those sharp claws appeared to be able to destroy anything. He couldn't help but start to worry for Big White's safety.

The next moment, everything seemed to have frozen in place. Lei Yu even started to doubt whether there was something wrong with his eyes or not.

The moment before the golden eagle's attack landed, one could see a white light detach from Big White's body. When one looked closely, it was actually another Big White!

Big White's red body took a step back, and the huge eagle clawed into the ground as if he was digging into tofu. After ripping his claws out, it was at this time the golden eagle screeched out a painful cry. Lei Yu couldn't help but to put his hands up to cover his ears.

From the red body of Big White, the emerged white version of him bit down on the large eagle's neck and clenched on tightly. The Roc Emperor tried hard to get away but unfortunately for him, it was too

late.

One could see the red version Big White rush up. Being restrained by the white version of Big White, the red Big White released his most tyrannical attack. One could only hear an agonizing roar that sent chills down one's back.

Countless golden feathers were fluttering all over the sky while some landed near his feet. Lei Yu was completely overawed and couldn't believe his own eyes.

The two Big White's merged back into one. With its open grinning mouth, one could see his fangs were stained with blood. As for the large golden eagle, he was now beyond recognition. His head was separated

from his body while his abdomen was cruelly ripped open.

Lei Yu swallowed hard, "Big... Big White? Is... is that really you?"

"Young master." Big White turned around and at the same time, the blood red fur on his body became white again. Those pair of terrifying eyes disappeared and was replaced by a pair of kind and docile eyes that Lei Yu had originally known.

"Big White! You... how did you...?"

"Young master, the danger has now passed so don't worry. If you would allow Big White to rest for a moment, we can then continue our journey." Big White's body trembled a bit before he lay down. A white

light started enveloping his whole body before Big White slowly closed his eyes. It was only now that Lei Yu could see that Big White had over a dozen wounds all over his body. It was only under Big White's own self-recovery powers did those wounds start to scab over.

Lei Yu didn't know what to say but knew now wasn't the time to speak or disturb Big White. His heart was still trying to calm down from the shock. In his eyes, the God-like existence of the Roc Emperor had become such a sorry sight after being attacked by Big White. This clearly showed that Big White was an ever scarier existence, but this even scarier existence had moved Lei Yu's heart.



A long while later, Big White gradually opened his eyes. "Young master, I'm ready."

"Do you want to rest for a bit more? I'm really worried with the way you look right now!" Lei Yu pointed at all the splotches of blood that had stained his white fur.

"There's no need. Young master's matters are very important so let us leave now."

Lei Yu trembled a bit while exhaling before nodding his head in agreement. A human and a beast then rose into the sky. At this time, there were over a dozen birdmen floating off at a distance who didn't dare to get close to Lei Yu and Big White. These birdmen knew that

their Emperor would never be able to stand up ever again.

While they were flying, Lei Yu couldn't hold it in anymore and had to ask: "Big White, can... can you tell me what level of strength have you reached?"

"It looks like young master is really curious about this question." Big White's tone of voice seemed to be more relaxed now.

"Right. How can I not be curious after seeing how strong you are? And looking at your usual docile looks, it's really hard to imagine you would be victorious after the big battle with the Roc Emperor." Lei Yu was still recalling the battle which made his blood surge with

excitement.

"Sigh, I wonder what punishments I will receive from master when we return. This truly makes one worry!" Big White lamented.

"Don't worry. Once we return, I will explain everything to Elder Ceng, okay? But you have to tell me everything above the Gold Core stage since I am completely clueless about it." Lei Yu smiled.

Big White nodded. After thinking for a while, he then began: "The Gold Core stage is the so-called stage where one condenses their Gold Core. Once someone attains that stage, their life can be extended by at least two thousand years."

The eyes of Lei Yu went completely round and wide. "That means right now I can live for at least two thousand years?" This was the first time Lei Yu had heard of such a thing so it was natural for him to be so shocked.

"That's right, but that's considered nothing. Within the two thousand years, as long as your strength improves and reaches the Nascent Soul stage, you will have successfully gained eternal life."

"E... eternal life?!" Lei Yu's voice started shaking.

"Yes, eternal life. However, in the Immortal World or the Chaotic Star Sea, even when one has eternal life, one cannot escape the cruelty of the

law of the jungle. This is something that cannot be avoided. But a large amount of cultivators or other forms of practitioners treasure their own lives so they will not expose their existence to the world under normal circumstances. They would generally find a safe and quiet place to cultivate. Once they believe they are truly strong enough will they reveal themselves. This is similar to what the Roc Emperor did; he recruited a bunch of his own species, divided up a certain territory, and then became an overlord."

Lei Yu nodded like he kind of understood the explanation. "Then what's the difference in power between someone at the Nascent Soul stage and the Gold Core

stage?"

"The Gold Core stage is naturally when one condenses their Gold Core, and the Nascent Soul stage is when one transforms their Gold Core to an infant-like Nascent Soul similar to one's body. Although it looks like a minor physical change, but the difference in strength is a huge gap. As for the Fusion Soul stage, it's when one's soul fuses together with the Nascent Soul at a state without flaws. The fused soul is very fragile but the offensive capabilities are very powerful. Your own body requires a strong defensive quality to protect it. But if one was to give a qualitative number to your body's defense, it still cannot be compared to the offensive power of the Fusion Soul.

Therefore, the two needs to work well with each other in order to release the most powerful attack. This happens to be the Fusion Soul's ultimate esoteric, and that Roc Emperor's final attack contained that esoteric. Even though it looks no different from a normal attack, but the power behind it isn't something one can withstand easily, and that includes me." Explained Big White.

"Including you? Then what level are you at?" Asked Lei Yu.

Big White glanced at Lei Yu before saying: "That Roc Emperor was at the late Fusion Soul stage, and I'm only slightly higher than him by a bit - I've reach the early Soul Splitting stage. Even though it's a

slight level difference, the power has at least doubled!"

"Soul Splitting stage! The early Soul Splitting stage?"

"Right, that's why there was two of me that appeared. Between the two, one was my soul and one was my true body. My true body's defensive properties are extremely powerful so I used it to restrain the Roc Emperor. Then I used my soul to attack, which had the strongest attack power. That's why you were able to witness the scene previously."



# Chapter 259:

## Unprecedented

Lei Yu felt enlightened since knowing about these things will allow him to know his future path, which was similar to a movie trailer. Except, how hard would it be to walk the path all the way to Big White's level? Not to mention how Big White keeps mentioning about "my family's master," it was none other than Ceng Hong Villa's master - Ceng Hong.

Even though Lei Yu's level was quite a distance away, he has never given up!

"Ai Er, big brother! Wait for me!"

You guys have to wait for me!"

As they continued on their journey, those that were acquainted with Ceng Hong Villa became less and less. This meant Big White had no need to show a respectful attitude any longer. Whenever they encountered an obstacle, Big White would reveal his strength and most would retreat. There were only a small minority of them that would hand their lives over to Big White. Perhaps they were in a rush to raise their strength so they desperately wanted to gain Lei Yu and Big White's cultivation essence. Lei Yu was not sympathetic to those types of people one bit.

More than a month later, the two of them had been rushing throughout

their journey. When they were resting, Lei Yu wouldn't slack off and would cultivate according to the later methods of the Heavenly Thunder Manual. Lately, Lei Yu could clearly feel that his Sea of Energy area had a feeling that it was overflowing with energy.

"Let's rest for a while, I feel like I'm about to breakthrough!" Said Lei Yu.

Big White was slightly skeptical, "A breakthrough? Young master, how long ago was it that you condensed your Gold Core?"

Lei Yu thought for a bit before saying: "To be precise, it should be less than two months ago. The progress is truly quite slow. Especially when I have the aid of

the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, it's still progressing so slowly."

Big White sucked in a cool breath of air and then asked with big round eyes: "Two months? Did you just say two months?!"

Lei Yu nodded, "Right, what about it?"

"Incredible! It's too inconceivable! How can something so unimaginable happen?" Big White shook his head as his eyes were filled with shock.

"What's so incredible about it?"

Big White licked his lips before saying: "Young master, you should know that once one succeeds in condensing their Gold Core, they

are considered to be in the early Gold Core stage. But wanting to break through to enter the middle Gold Core stage, the majority of people will take over ten years if they're quick, and over a hundred years if they're slow. As for you... you only took two months! This is too unbelievable!"

After being scared by Big White's words, Lei Yu unconsciously glanced at the bracelet on his wrist and mumbled: "This truly is a treasure!"

No matter how shocked they both were, it was a fact that there was going to be a breakthrough. Lei Yu and Big White stopped at a random planet before Lei Yu sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. He

had now begun to carefully examine the situation inside his body.

As for Big White, he stood watch at the side of Lei Yu acting as his security guard.

Inside his dantian, a shining purple bead was hidden amongst a white fog. Lightning was flashing left and right around it, giving off sounds that could chill one's heart. There were white starry dots in the area that had started fusing with the purple bead making it shine even brighter.

Lei Yu gently spit out a mouthful of turbid air, and a strong energy suddenly burst out from his dantian. Under Lei Yu's careful

observation, he was surprised at what he saw. "This energy isn't mine! What is it?"

This light yellow energy was extremely powerful, and it indeed did not belong to Lei Yu in the past. But if it weren't for this powerful energy, Lei Yu wouldn't have been able to successfully condense his Gold Core in such a short amount of time. And the weak green energy wouldn't have regained a good amount of its energy. This energy was exactly why the big Sects of the Immortal World were trying to recruit Lei Yu - it was the energy of the Dragon Vein!

The sudden emergence of the Dragon Vein's energy followed Lei Yu's internal energy to circulate a

full cycle before returning to its calm. What made Lei Yu happy was that the timid green energy actually followed behind the Dragon Vein energy in a naughty manner, absorbing any leftover traces of the Dragon Vein energy.

A full cycle of circulation took almost eight hours. Lei Yu gently wiped the sweat from his forehead. At this time, Big White asked: "Young master, what are the results?"

Lei Yu smiled while shaking his head, "Nothing yet, this is only the start."

"Ah?!"

Once again closing his eyes, Lei Yu



felt his body was empty. It appears that all his internal energy had disappeared, but this wasn't the case. After a full cycle by the Dragon Vein's energy, all other energy had been removed because Lei Yu was about to gain something new and stronger. Everything he had before had to be cleared out, and the green energy trailing behind doing cleanup work coincidentally came in handy.

After breathing rapidly a few times, Lei Yu focused his spiritual power into this dantian. With Big White protecting him, Lei Yu could feel at ease and focus all his efforts without being worried about outside interference.

His dantian's Sea of Energy was

trembling while thunder and lightning was rumbling around the white fog. As if the purple bead was being refined, it started spinning violently bringing about bursts of wind. It was becoming like a tornado that could swallow anything up as it sucked up all the surrounding lightning. Suddenly, a purple lightning flashed causing Lei Yu's whole body to shake.

Everything had become calm once again.

Lei Yu gradually found that his dantian had been completely changed. The white fog now had a touch of purple to it with the purple bead as its backdrop, giving it quite a spectacular scene. And the previous Dragon Vein energy had

disappeared without a trace.

Honestly, Lei Yu didn't even know where to start looking for it. After mobilizing a trace of energy, Lei Yu felt that it was much easier to control his internal energy now, and the word he would use to describe that was "effortless."

This part of the breakthrough process was described as lightning fast. Lei Yu didn't even have time to settle down and the whole process was already over. The time he used for this portion of the process was less than a minute.

Did Lei Yu really reach the middle Gold Core stage? Nope, he didn't. Because of the sudden appearance by the Dragon Vein energy, a strange phenomenon occurred in

his body. Lei Yu felt like he was touching a certain barrier, one that felt insurmountable but it was still within reach.

"Late Gold Core stage!" Lei Yu loudly cried out.

"Young master, you... what did you say?" Asked Big White with eyes about to pop out of their sockets.

Lei Yu checked once again and replied with a trembling voice: "I... I seem... I seem to have reached the late Gold Core stage!"

"What?!" Big White suddenly stood up, "How is that possible?!"

Lei Yu cleared his throat before saying: "It feels like I've touched some kind of barrier but there's no

way for me to break past that for now. Yet there's a feeling that it's within reach, so isn't that the feeling one gets when they are at the late stage?"

"Young master, you... are you still human?"

Lei Yu gave Big White a blank stare, "What are you talking about?"

"Ah! Uh... I... I was just too surprised. Being able to go from the early to the late Gold Core stage in such a short span of two months, I believe in all of history, this can be described as unprecedented!"

Lei Yu stood up and smiled, "Perhaps the reason is that I've got good luck!" Lei Yu didn't tell Big

White about him gaining the Dragon Vein. Although he doesn't know why and how those in the Immortal World found out about it, it seems that Ceng Hong and Big White were clueless.

# Chapter 260: The Five Great Sects

"Good luck?" Big White blinked a few times. He didn't believe Lei Yu's words but also couldn't find a reason to not believe.

"Okay, let's continue our journey!" After stretching himself, Lei Yu felt his body was filled with explosive power. If he were to fight that tyrant Manor Lord now, Lei Yu was sure that he could easily defeat him.

While flying again, Lei Yu felt a lot more relaxed. The first being easier to control his internal energy, and the second, there seemed to be a stronger understanding or bond

with the Sky Devouring Sword that was difficult to describe.

When it came to speed, Lei Yu was obviously faster than before. It looks like he had gained many benefits after reaching the late Gold Core stage. Lei Yu recalled that in the latter half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual, there was a method where one could concentrate their attack power. If Lei Yu were to use that method and integrate it with the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, then the power of the attack would become even more powerful!

"Young master, we're not that far away now!" Said Big White as he shook his head.



The closer that got to the Immortal World, the more excited Lei Yu felt. But his heart couldn't help worry as well. Could he really successfully rescue Ai Er and his big brother? This was the question that had been plaguing him for a while.

It was around this time that a person suddenly appeared in front of them.

"The two of you, please stop for a bit!"

After getting a closer look, this was a middle-aged person wearing a gray robe. The ancient style look he portrayed made Lei Yu uncomfortable.

"Is there something you need?"

Asked Big White.

"Um, could the two of you have come from the Chaotic Star Sea?"  
The person asked.

Lei Yu and Big white glanced at each other before the former pointed to the rear, "Is that place not the Chaotic Star Sea?"

What a stupid question, but Lei Yu wasn't going to say it out loud. He wanted to see what this person wanted from them.

"Um, right! Right! I was wondering if these two friends are willing to join my Sect?" This person's gaze landed on Lei Yu, apparently treating him differently than Big White.

"Joining your Sect? What do you mean?" Lei Yu felt this was odd. Back then when he heard from Tian Ye, all the big Sects in the Immortal World regarded themselves very highly and wouldn't place their eyes on random people who came knocking on their doors. Yet somehow today, someone would be blocking their path and inviting them to join their Sect.

"It's like this..." The person paused for a bit before continuing: "My Sect is called the Thunder Rune Sect, and it's a big sect that has been handed down from the ancient times. We are currently recruiting disciples so if you're interested, please come with me to take a look."

"Thunder Rune Sect? Thunder Rune Sect?" Hearing that name, Lei Yu somehow felt very close to it but couldn't figure out why. Perhaps the reason was it had the word "thunder" in it.

"We're sorry but please give way; we still have some important matters to attend to." Lei Yu hadn't had a chance to say anything yet when Big White opened his mouth. Perhaps he was unhappy with the guy after being given the cold shoulder.

"This..." That person looked disappointed but tried to smile, "Then I won't bother you two." He then made a "please" gesture for them to be on their way.

Big White was about to leave when Lei Yu said: "Wait a minute..."

"What is it young master?"

"Let's go take a look."

"Ah?!"

The person excited laughed out loud, "This is great! Great! Please come with me!"

The person led the way atop of a flying sword while Lei Yu and Big White followed behind him. Big White couldn't understand and asked: "Young master, aren't we in a hurry to go save your friends? Why..."

Lei Yu smiled, "First of all, I don't know anything about the Immortal

World and I believe you aren't too clear on it either. Secondly, this person doesn't look like a bad person, and his strength is only at the early Gold Core stage. I imagine their Sect must have experienced some major disaster so that's why they are widely recruiting disciples. According to my friends, such scenes would never happen with the large Sects of the Immortal World. We should go take a look and try to understand what's going on here currently. I believe it shouldn't take too long."

Big White nodded to show he understood and didn't dwell on it further.

They flew with this person for about an hour and passed through

a fog barrier. Beyond the fog barrier, the scene made Lei Yu and Big White quite surprised.

Compared to the dark and gloomy Chaotic Star Sea, this place was like a paradise.

There was a bright and clear blue sky while there seemed to be a light layer of clouds beneath them. It gave one a feeling that they were walking in the clouds. There were a series of high mountains in the surrounding making it look like a beautiful painting one would hang on the wall. There would be occasionally three to five people flying through the air on their swords which made it a truly wondrous scene.

"Please don't be impatient, we will be there soon." Said the person leading the way.

Lei Yu and Big White were both enjoying the beautiful scenery and wasn't impatient at all. But since someone were to say that, they still had to respond out of politeness.

"Don't worry; we're not impatient one bit." Lei Yu's gaze stopped on a mountain with a waterfall. He was imagining when he would have time to swing by that place and enjoy a good swim there. Who knew that the place was the destination they were aiming for?

In the Immortal World, there were countless large and small Sects about. There were five factions that



were more famous and considered the strongest, each of them located on top of five mountains.

According to what Lei Yu knew, the Sect that was closest to the Chaotic Star Sea should be the Void Sect. For a Sect to sit atop of one of the mountains naturally meant they had extraordinary strength. Not only did they have countless disciples, all of them received the true teachings of the Sect and had an immeasurable future. But the most important factor was the master of the Void Sect - everyone knew he was a true expert in the Immortal World.

Just a few hundred kilometers away was the Violet Gold Hall, a school that possessed an unrivaled wealth.

Perhaps it was due to their wealth that they could send forth an expert at the Nascent Soul stage to the Mortal World. In the back mountains of the Violet Gold Hall, there are several experts guarding there because there's a mine filled with rare minerals that everyone wanted to get their hands on - crystal stones! Although the output is not considered big, it can still be regarded as a small fortune. As one sits on literally a mountain of wealth, numerous other Sects would try to have a good relationship with them. But what goals these Sects have in mind in befriending them is not known.

The next great Sect was the Breeze Pavilion. Although the overall strength of their disciples were

rather average, there is pretty much a "sea" of them. If someone provoked the Breeze Pavilion, they will act like one big unit and cause a large-scale retaliation as if they were a pack of wolves.

As for the Skywalk Sect, Lei Yu knew a bit about them from their meeting in the Mortal World. Even though they didn't seem that strong, they were similar to the Void Sect who had an expert supporting them in the background. Their Sect wasn't a place that average people would dare to challenge.

The last Sect was also the most mysterious Sect - the Four Illusory Court. Legend says that four disciples can become one due to

their expertise at formations. And if anyone dares invade their territory, they will be bombarded with violent attacking arrays. Their disciples rarely travelled outside alone and always travelled in four's.

As for this person that Lei Yu encountered, their Thunder Rune Sect was considered the smallest of the small Sects. But Lei Yu was still quite interested in them.

"These two guests, we have arrived!"

-----

(T/N: Just a reminder for readers, Lei in Chinese means Thunder in English. I didn't want to name it the Lei Rune Sect so made it Thunder Rune Sect.)

# Chapter 261: The Master Returns

Lei Yu turned his head forward and saw an old building. A wall had surrounded a courtyard with the old building in the midst, but what made Lei Yu feel weird was that there was no main gate. Perhaps due to everyone being able to fly, gates were no longer needed here.

The courtyard was huge but everything in the surrounding looked quite old. The ground and the walls all had deep cracks in them. Who knows if it was due to fights or just the passage of time?

The courtyard was filled with small

two-story buildings that looked like it was for people to live in that gave off an elegant and quiet appearance. In the center of it all was a taller ancient looking building. In the middle of this tall building was a plaque hanging there, and on this plaque that had a blue background with gold lettering were the three words: "Thunder Rune Sect."

The two humans and one beast arrived at the empty grounds in front of the tall building. Right after that, two youngsters came forth to greet them.

"Senior brother, it's been hard on you!" One of the youngsters smiled.

The person that led Lei Yu and Big

White here then smiled, "It was my responsibility, is the master around?"

"Master has gone out."

The person nodded and turned around, "Would you two please come with me, we will rest in the guest rooms for now. Once master comes back, we will go pay respects to him."

Lei Yu responded with a smile. Along with Big White, they followed behind this person to the courtyard and into a two-story building.

The layout of the room was very simple; there were only two beds, a bookcase and a chair. Lei Yu then said some polite words of gratitude

to the person.

"My name is He Chuang, just look for me if you need anything."

"Thank you."

After He Chuang left, Lei Yu sat on a bed and looked outside at the landscape. Although the scenery here wasn't as beautiful as the scenery outside the walls, it was much better than what the Chaotic Star Sea offered.

"Young master, how long are we going to wait for this Thunder Rune Sect's Sovereign to return?" Asked Big White while lying on top of the other bed.

"We'll wait for a bit. I just feel like there's something familiar here."



Maybe it's not a feeling and rather the aura this place exudes. It's just that I don't understand it myself right now, maybe we'll know when their Sovereign returns."

It was already the third day yet they haven't seen the Sovereign return yet. Even though during this period, there were people coming by to deliver water and food, Lei Yu still felt anxious. He wanted to get some current information about the Immortal World but continuously waiting here was making him antsy.

"My apologies but we still have some matters to take care of. Once we handle our affairs, how about we come back to visit your Sovereign then?" Lei Yu found He Chuang and apologized to him.

"This... perhaps master will be back soon. Could you two guests just wait a little bit longer?" Persuaded He Chuang. He was afraid that once Lei Yu left, he wouldn't come back here.

"Be rest assured, once I've taken care of my matters, I will definitely come back. There's something that I need to personally see your Sovereign and ask about."

"Okay then..." He Chuang could only helplessly agree.

These past three days, Lei Yu and Big White had stayed and eaten for free here so they were somewhat embarrassed saying those words to He Chuang. But it's just that Lei Yu really couldn't wait any longer.

These past three days, although they had seen a number of the Thunder Rune Sect disciples, this Sect still felt rather deserted and not prosperous at all. According to Lei Yu's imagination, a Sect should be filled with the atmosphere of people cultivating everywhere. But this wasn't what he saw here; everyone looked a bit lazy and didn't have a sense of urgency to improve themselves.

Settling atop of his sword, Lei Yu and Big White was just about to leave when a dark shadow shot towards them from a distance.

"Is the little friend here looking for a master to learn from?"

The sudden arrival of this person

made Lei Yu slightly surprised. Besides them, He Chuang smiled and said: "Master, you've returned!"

This was a middle-aged man with a wooden hairpin holding up his neat gray hair. He was wearing a long black robe that had gold embroidery on the sleeves and neckline, and his ordinary looking face made him seem approachable. The whole simple look still gave one a feeling that he was a distinguished individual.

"You are the Thunder Rune Sect's Sovereign?" Asked Lei Yu while cupping his fists.

"That's right. Two guests, please come with me." This middle-aged person who He Chuang addressed

as master glanced at Lei Yu before looking at Big White with surprise before making a "please" gesture. Already intending to leave, Lei Yu helplessly turned back towards the Sect.

They all entered the tall building at the center of the Sect.

Lei Yu had been in this Sect for three days and this was his first time entering the tall building. But what Lei Yu saw was unimaginable to him; a dignified Sect would actually be so simple and crude. Apart from eight chairs that were aligned on both sides, there were only a few ancestral tablets centered on the back wall. After observing what was inscribed on those tablets, most of them had the

surname of "Lei" on them.

The Patriarch went and sat in the forefront of the eight chairs while Lei Yu and Big White just stood at the center of the hall. This wasn't surprising because the Sovereign thought Lei Yu was here in search of a master. How could a new disciple sit right next to his master for the ceremony? Wouldn't that mess up all the rules?

"I can sense that this young friend has already reached the late Gold Core stage, not bad, not bad at all! Ha ha...!" The Sovereign didn't bother with taboo and just bluntly said what he sensed. But his eyes then swiveled towards Big White because he simply couldn't feel any energy fluctuations from him.

"Sovereign is over praising me." Lei Yu cupped his hands and smiled.

"Looking at this young friend's face, you should have cultivated for several centuries now right?"

Lei Yu didn't even have time to reply when Big White wrinkled his nose and said: "He only condensed his Gold Core two months ago."

"What?!" The Patriarch's eyes opened wide and immediately stood up from his chair. It was obvious he was shocked by Big White's words.

"I said, my young master condensed his Gold Core only two months ago."

"No... no... impossible, that's impossible! Such a thing cannot

happen! Absolutely impossible!"  
The Sovereign was mumbling to himself and didn't believe a single word of Big White.

Lei Yu only smiled since he couldn't blame Big White for speaking so frankly. He originally thought his cultivation speed was slow, yet he never imagined this matter would make people so shocked.

"What Big White said was correct. It was only two months ago that I successfully condensed by Gold Core. But all of this was due to luck... I was just lucky..."

"Little friend, what is your name?"  
The Patriarch swallowed hard. Since this person has arrived at the Thunder Rune Sect, he had to find



all means to keep him here. Being able to go from the early Gold Core stage to the late Gold Core stage at such a fast rate was definitely unprecedented. The prospects of such an incredible person would be boundless in the future. For a small Sect like the Thunder Rune Sect, this may be a great opportunity for them to make a name for themselves. Although the future is not determined, but at least now there was a better chance than just merely fantasizing about it.

After coming to the Thunder Rune Sect, Lei Yu had a very good impression of them. Everyone he had met treated him politely and he didn't encounter what Tian Ye had mentioned, of being given the cold shoulder. This had caused his heart

to feel some warmth from staying here.

"Lightning."

Because there were people in the Immortal World who knew of Lei Yu's real name, he wasn't going to expose himself here yet. That Void Sect will definitely not let him go that easily so Lei Yu had to be careful in everything he did.

# Chapter 262: I Am Willing To Join

Hearing the name Lightning, the Sovereign's face twitched but quickly recovered.

The Sovereign delayed in asking Lei Yu if he wanted to join the Sect because he couldn't sense what level of strength Big White was at. Although Big White was a beast, he refused to believe it was an ordinary animal and that was proven by it being able to speak previously.

"Sovereign, I have some questions that I was hoping you could enlighten me with." Said Lei Yu with his fists cupped.

"Please ask away." Replied the Sovereign as he sat back down on his seat.

"Big White and I are from a planet within the Chaotic Star Sea.

Although we experienced many dangers, I was fortunate enough to have Big White here to help me get out of them. We don't know anything pertaining to the Immortal World so we were hoping you could briefly introduce us to it."

After hearing this, the Sovereign's thoughts were affirmed. There weren't many people that could traverse the Chaotic Star Sea and arrive at the Immortal World. There were some, but there were less and less these days. And those that were able to rely on their personal

strength to reach the Immortal World were usually very strong, and it was by pure luck that He Chuang happened to encounter Lei Yu. Honestly, He Chuang could wait until he died of old age and most people wouldn't be willing to follow him here. Even if He Chuang successfully encountered someone, that person would usually be so strong that He Chuang didn't even have the qualifications to speak with them.

"So that's the case." The Sovereign remained calm and responded with a nod: "There are countless Sects in the Immortal World. Within it are five great Sects..."

"In other words, the Void Sect is one of the big Sects that are closest to

the Chaotic Star Sea?" As he was asking that, Lei Yu unconsciously tightened his fists.

"That's right. Because they have the Void Immortal as their support pillar, no one dares to act rashly around them. Even if it's an expert in the Chaotic Star Sea, they wouldn't dare to cause them any trouble." Replied the Sovereign.

Lei Yu nodded and then said:

"There's something I'm not sure if I should ask, but I find it extremely strange."

"Please go ahead."

"If I offend you in any way, I hope you don't take it to heart because I just find it very strange. A friend of

mine in the Chaotic Star Sea once told me that the big Sects would never randomly accept disciples, so why is your Sect different? And these past few days, it was strange to see that there weren't that many people in your Sect. Is it because they are all out on assignments?" Asked Lei Yu.

"Sigh!" After heavily sighing, the Sovereign the replied in a depressed manner: "Back then, my Thunder Rune Sect was considered one of the five great Sects and that Skywalk Sect wasn't even ranked with us. We suffered something unexpected and unfortunate in the Sect; a vile bastard came from us that caused our situation to be like this today."

"Oh?" To be able to stand among the ranks of the five great Sects meant the Sect must be rather powerful. With such a sad current state of the Sect, Lei Yu believes there shouldn't be a need for the Sovereign to deceive him.

"Back then, the Lei family was flourishing with people. Although it wasn't as much as the other Sects, it's not about the quantity but about quality."

"Lei family!" Lei Yu's heart started beating furiously.

Big White's ear quivered a bit. It was clear that he heard Lei Yu's accelerated heart beat so he looked up, "Young master, are you okay?"



"Ah? Uh, no, nothing wrong!" Lei Yu shook his head and smiled.

"What is it? Could it be that this little friend has heard of my Lei family?"

Lei Yu's face stiffened up, but still managed to force out a smile. "I've heard of it, but I was just surprised the family would end up like this now."

If he said he heard of the Lei family, then it can only be said in the Mortal World. But somehow, the Immortal World also had a Lei family which made Lei Yu extremely shocked. Even though they were called the Thunder Rune Sect, from beginning to end, Lei Yu had a strange familiar feeling

towards it. Once the Sovereign mentioned the Lei family, he finally understood why.

Lei Yu was thinking to himself: Could the Immortal World also have the Lei family's bloodline? But this shouldn't be surprising since below the cliffs of the Lei family mountain, there was a forbidden area with his ancestor still there. So it shouldn't be strange for the Immortal World to have his clan members here as well.

But Lei Yu cannot just confirm this with a few words by the Sovereign, yet he couldn't stop his heart rate from increasing.

"About a thousand years ago, a rebellious child came out of the Lei

family... I'm ashamed... such a shameful deed!" The Sovereign shook his head and continued: "This rebellious child is exactly the Lei family Sovereign's child."

"You're talking about yourself, Sovereign?" Lei Yu lightly rubbed his eyes.

"Right, it's exactly my son." The Sovereign then walked off to the hall's main door and stared outside. Lei Yu also followed suit.

"That day, my unfilial son had a relationship with the daughter of our Lei family's worst enemy. It brought us a huge disaster; those that fought had died, and those that could escape had escaped. The result is the current scene you're

witnessing now."

Lei Yu felt a little depressed after hearing that. There were times when it was helpless when it came to relationships between a man and a woman. But at times, one can choose to avoid those feelings for the greater good. But it was clear that what occurred here seemed to have caused this irreparable situation.

Lei Yu didn't know why the Sovereign would tell him so many details about the story. Even though he did ask about the situation, perhaps if it was another person in his place, the Sovereign might have made up some random excuse instead of telling him the truth.

Lei Yu refused to believe the Sovereign would use such a story to gain pity. Why would a distinguished Sovereign of a Sect lower themselves to do that? Of course no one would believe such a thing could happen.

As Lei Yu was thinking about this, the Sovereign turned around. "Little friend, you may be wondering why I would tell you these things..."

Lei Yu nodded with a smile, "Yes. I believe if it was someone else, you wouldn't have told them right?"

"I'm not sure why but the first time I laid eyes on young friend; it made me feel like I was close to you, an unexplainable familiar feeling."

Lei Yu gently breathed out. Big White who had very sensitive ears could hear the exhale also trembled a bit. He heard Lei Yu ask: "This one dares to be bold to mention a request."

"Please tell me."

"Can you raise the sleeves of your right arm?"

The Sovereign was startled. Perhaps he understood something because he pulled up the sleeves of his robe without hesitation. Gradually, what was revealed was something Lei Yu wanted to see but also hated to see - the flame brand!

Lei Yu felt like his mind had gone numb and didn't say anything for a

while. The Sovereign could feel there were some changes with Lei Yu and asked: "Little friend, what is it?"

"I am willing to join the Thunder Rune Sect but I have an important matter to deal with first. Once I have taken care of them, I will definitely come back here. Also, I will make my most effort to restore the Thunder Rune Sect to its past glory!" If it was someone else other than Lei Yu saying those words, one would think they were just blowing one's horn. But for someone that can go from the early Gold Core stage to the late Gold Core stage in a short two months, who else was capable of that? No one! No one would dare to guess what Lei Yu's future would hold for him. Even Big

White or the Elder Ceng Hong would not dare to speculate, therefore his words were credible! The most important was the determined eyes of Lei Yu made it difficult for people to doubt him.

As for why Lei Yu would agree to join the Thunder Rune Sect, the Sovereign didn't know. But one thing he was certain about was it must be related to the brand on his arm!



# Chapter 263:

## Happened Upon By Chance

"Good! I'll be here waiting for you!"  
The Sovereign nodded furiously.  
Which Sect wouldn't want to get their hands on such an incredible genius like Lei Yu? It's strange how things turn out. Who knew that Lei Yu who originally didn't want to stay any more would inadvertently meet the ancestor of his Lei family?

Lei Yu and Big White once again left. They returned to the previous path they were on because that direction was where the Void Sect was located at.

Lei Yu wasn't willing to drag the Thunder Rune Sect into his matter and didn't want to bring a potential disaster onto their head. They've already experienced a catastrophe before so there's no way this Sect, under such a sad state, would be able to handle another blow. For a place connected by blood to him, Lei Yu would naturally not want to see its complete demise.

As for Big White, from beginning to end, he couldn't understand why Lei Yu was so surprised. And Lei Yu's display of excitement started to form some doubts in Big White's mind. Of course Lei Yu wasn't going to let Big White know that this person was his ancestor right? If this was revealed, Big White would certainly turn into his enemy

instantly and his fraudulent identity would collapse by itself.

The marvelous scenery before them was truly intoxicating. If this paradise appeared in the Mortal World, it was definitely become a hot tourist destination. But unfortunately this kind of thing will never happen.

"Young master, are we going to forcefully break in?" Asked Big White.

"No, we'll figure out the situation first before making any plans. I've already endured for such a long time so a few more extra days won't make any difference." With a hundred miles to go from reaching their destination, such a distance

was considered nothing much to this human and beast. All that mattered was how fast they were going to fly.

"Over there, we've arrived!" Lei Yu pointed at a mountain with clouds floating by. The scenery that looked like a painting on a wall would make anyone simply infatuated with it.

"Young master, look!" Big White quickly cried out as his sharp eyesight was able to see four people at the main gates of the Void Sect.

"Ai Er! It's Ai Er and big brother!" Lei Yu was so surprised because he didn't expect his own speed to be so fast. He had already been in the Immortal World for two to three

days now and that Yuan Li and Yuan Xiu had just arrived with Ai Er and Nuo Hu.

"What should we do?"

Lei Yu activated his speed to its limit, "Intercept them! Intercept them! Quick!"

At the crucial moment, Big White didn't bother to wait for Lei Yu and a white light blasted forward. In an instant, Big White had already arrived next to those four people.

"Quick! Get inside!" Yuan Xiu cried out after sensing something wrong. With one hand clutching a girl, he quickly rushed towards the inner area of the Void Sect. Yuan Li was half a step slower before a red light

shot out. Yuan Li's eyes widened as he found a round hole had appeared on his chest.

In the hands of Yuan Li, a strong looking young man was about to fall down along with him but was held onto by Big White. He then heard Lei Yu yell out: "I'll do it! Big White, quickly go rescue Ai Er!" Hearing Lei Yu's words, Big White turned around and flew into the air. His speed was almost at the speed of light but it was still too late. That Yuan Xiu had brought Ai Er into the second courtyard already and by the time Big White caught up, a huge energy aura completely forced him backwards.

As for Lei Yu, he carried Nuo Hu on his back and flew in the direction

towards Big White.

"We're too late. Young master, someone has setup a barrier in that area so we can't enter!" Big White was a bit despondent, "Sorry young master, I'm really sorry!"

Lei Yu's breathing was no longer normal as his blood red eyes stared at the blurry figures inside the barrier. "I'm going to kill you!"

After roaring that out, Lei Yu could no longer stay calm. After laying Nuo Hu gently to the ground, he took a step close to the barrier and the Sky Devouring Sword appeared in his hand.

"Thirty-six Lunar Stars, the first form!" A crescent moon beam

slashed towards the barrier. One could see the blurry mist only slightly quiver before Lei Yu's attack disappeared.

"Second form!" And the outcome was similar to the first.

"Third form!"

"Fourth form!"

"Fifth form!"

"Sixth form!"

After six consecutive attacks, it only made the barrier tremble a bit and didn't really do anything. Lei Yu let out another roar; he had completely lost his senses and forgotten about everything. The current him only wanted to rescue his beloved Ai Er



as he completely exploded with rage. He then roared into the sky one word at a time, "Thirty-six Lunar Stars, six combines into one!"

As if the stars started to blot out the sky during day time, a meteor shower of starry lights burst forth like crazy.

"Boom~!"

A piercing sound of something being blasted apart was heard, and a crack could be seen on the blurry fog that was the barrier. A sword then shot out of the gap from within the barrier heading straight for Lei Yu.

"Whoosh!"

"Ding!"

All of this took a while to describe but it actually happened really quickly. At the last moment, the sword that was about to pierce into Lei Yu was struck away by Big White's sharp claws which left a cut on him.

"Die! Die! You all must die!" Lei Yu didn't care about anything and rushed forth while Big White chased after him hoping to stop him. At this time, three figures on top of swords arrived in front of them.

Big White could clearly sense that amongst the three, only one of them was at the Nascent Soul stage. The other two were both at the Fusion Soul stage; one at the early and the other at the mid stage.

Dealing with someone at the early Fusion Soul stage was easy, but difficulty increases when having to simultaneously deal with someone at the mid Fusion Soul stage as well. The current scenario made Big White hesitate a bit but for Lei Yu, he had to fight regardless of all costs. This was because Lei Yu was the family's young master which was equivalent to being his owner.

An illusory image!

A red light flashed and a white light shone brightly!

The moment Big White's speed reached the extremes, two Big Whites appeared at the same time but only their colors were different.

The blood red Big White rushed towards the two at the Fusion Soul stage while his original body went for the one at the Nascent Soul stage.

"Ding ding clang clang," a series of rapid collisions was heard. The one at the Nascent Soul stage instantly lost his life while the one at the early Fusion Soul stage suffered a serious injury. One hand was clutching at his chest while blood flowed out through his fingers. As for the one at the mid Fusion Soul stage, he was just breathing heavily with eyes filled with horror.

After that fierce clash, Big White had retreated back to where Lei Yu was. The blood red Big White had blood dripping out of his mouth

while his red fur stood on its end and quivered; the image of him was truly terrifying to behold. As for the original Big White, he was panting and was apparently seriously injured.

Lei Yu's impulsiveness led to this current bad situation because his previous explosive attacks made him deplete most of his internal energy. If he didn't explode in anger, Lei Yu could have at least assisted Big White in handling that Nascent Soul person while Big White focused on the other two. That scenario would be much more advantageous to them but unfortunately, it was now too late.

If they continued to stay here, their situation would only become more

dangerous. And that was when only three people came out of the Sect! They had to leave right now!

The original Big White and the red Big White both merged together, and now there was only the red Big White. Big White immediately turned around and grabbed Nuo Hu with his mouth and tossed him on his back. He then bit onto the clothes of the dazed Lei Yu and flew off.

Within the fog, Yuan Xiu's voice could be heard. "Quickly block them! He's the extraordinary genius that our Sect has been searching for!"

# Chapter 264: Eight Whiskered Catfish

The two experts at the Fusion Soul stage disregarded their dead brethren and quickly rushed out to chase after Lei Yu and Big White. And within the foggy barrier, two more people rushed out to as well.

Big White was escaping as fast as he could but the people behind were also chasing at their top speeds. In regards to Big White's speed, it would be a difficult task for those several people wanting to catch up to him. But unfortunately, Big White had just depleted a large portion of his internal energy and add Nuo Hu and Lei Yu as baggage,

his current speed cannot be compared to his original.

Although these people wouldn't be able to catch up to them in the short term, they will be bound to be intercepted as time went on. This situation had made Big White extremely anxious. Around this time, Lei Yu recovered his senses and got off Big White's back and landed on his Sky Devouring Sword.

"Young master! Quickly take your friend and leave this place. I will delay them for some time so you can escape!"

"No! If we escape, we do it together!" Lei Yu turned around to look at his pursuers. He could see that each of them had vicious look



on their faces which did not match the flowing immortal-like robes they were wearing. These pursuers looked more like that tyrant Manor Lord back then.

"Young master! If you're like this, none of us will be escaping! You guys leave first while I'll stay back. I will immediately catch up with you later!" Big White's anxious voice sounded like he was about to cry.

"Fine then, be careful!" As soon as he finished his words, Lei Yu grabbed Nuo Hu from Big White's back and shot off. He kept his speed at the maximum but continued to glance behind him.

Lei Yu did not doubt Big White's strength since he was an expert at

the Soul Splitting stage. As for those people chasing after them, Lei Yu wasn't too clear on their levels. But during the previous fight, Lei Yu could see that the person at the Nascent Soul stage was instantly killed and was no longer a problem for them. As for the remaining ones, even though Big White was outnumbered, escaping shouldn't be a problem. Thinking up to this point, he no longer hesitated and focused on maintaining his top speed.

One could see Big White shaking while his red fur stood on its end. The pursuers were all blasted back several meters from the sudden enormous pressure Big White exuded. The two parties stared at each other. The pursuers then

glanced at the disappearing Lei Yu before a person who seemed to be leading the group rushed up. Right after that, the rest of the pursuers all attacked together.

Under so many fierce attacks, Big White was overwhelmed. A number of sword wounds were seen on his body before he mournfully cried out. His body then started to plummet down from the air.

"Quick, catch him!" After being ordered by this leader, the fellow disciples behind him quickly flew off towards Lei Yu's direction.

Lei Yu heard Big White's mournful cry which made his body tremble. He didn't dare to slow down and kept flying at top speeds. At this

time, Lei Yu noticed a crevice in a mountain and quickly rushed towards it.

At the same time, he stored Nuo Hu in his storage and activated his internal energy to conceal himself. Not a single bit of aura escaped from his body.

"Big White, you must be safe or else I'll never forgive myself!" Tears were already welling up in his eyes. Everything was his fault. If he wasn't so impulsive, this current situation wouldn't have occurred. Lei Yu was filled with regret but everything was already too late.

After a full day, Lei Yu didn't dare allow his aura to escape his body and quietly stayed in this random

mountain crevice. Countless thoughts were playing through his mind during this time.

The thing he was most worried about was Big White's safety. If something happened to Big White, how was he to face the Ceng Hong Villa?

Lei Yu quietly stuck his head out of the crevice and didn't see anyone around. He then cautiously crawled out, still not daring to release his internal energy. He then relied entirely on his fingers to support his body while climbing down.

The clouds had obstructed his vision but Lei Yu didn't care, and proceeded to drop down from the side of the mountain.

As he was falling down, Lei Yu felt a strong hurricane like wind blowing at him. His cheeks were flopping around while he couldn't even close his eyelids. The wind from his fall shouldn't be this strong... it looks like someone is deliberately blowing out this wind at him from the bottom!

Lei Yu grabbed onto a ledge on the side of the mountain and flipped his body upside down to stare down. It looked like a bottomless abyss!

"Is it really bottomless?" Lei Yu heavily breathed out before letting go of his hands. His body started free falling before he grabbed another ledge. This repeated multiple times until he realized it

wasn't bottomless and there was actually a wide river at the bottom.

At the edge of the river, Lei Yu slowly sat down and stared at the steady flow of water in a daze.

A while later, Lei Yu suddenly recalled something and looked all around. "Something's not right! Wasn't there a strange burst of wind that came from down here? How come I can't see or sense anything from it now?"

Lei Yu then released his spiritual energy to probe the area, "There's something in the water!" Lei Yu cried out.

One could see the surface of the river ripple with a "splash," before a

big fish appeared!

"What is it?!" Lei Yu examined it and realized it was a catfish with eight whiskers and its body length was at least ten meters. A fish this size was unheard of, and Lei Yu was certain this fish had formed its essence and gained intelligence.

The eight whiskered catfish leapt out of the water and somersaulted in the air before diving back down into the water. The mist of water floated towards Lei Yu semi drenching him. The next moment, a person broke out of the water surface. This person was dressed completely in black and looked no different from any other human, except that it had a long beard on its chin.



"You were that previous eight whiskered catfish?" Lei Yu narrowed his eyes.

"Right, and you happen to be trespassing in my territory so shouldn't I show up to take a look?" The eight whiskered catfish in human form started approaching Lei Yu.

"What do you want?" Lei Yu flipped his palms, ready to retrieve his Sky Devouring Sword.

The eight whiskered catfish smiled and sat down next to Lei Yu. "No need to be so worked up, I don't have any malicious intent."

What made Lei Yu surprised was that he couldn't sense the level of

strength this eight whiskered catfish had. Could he also be someone that had broken past the Nascent Soul and has reached the Fusion Soul or even later stages?

After swallowing hard, Lei Yu deliberately shuffled away a bit.

"What kind of place is this?"

The eight whiskered catfish smiled, "Scaling Dragon Cave."

"Cave? Where's the cave?" After looking around, there was nothing around Lei Yu apart from the wide river in front of him, not to mention a cave entrance.

"Dummy, it's underwater!"

"Uh..." The way this unfamiliar

beast said that made Lei Yu speechless.

"So what do you want from me?"  
Asked Lei Yu in a suspicious manner.

"I want to ask, is your name Lightning?"

"How did you know?!" Lei Yu bounced up off the ground with shock in his eyes.

"Follow me." After saying that, the eight whiskered catfish walked towards the river. Lei Yu blinked a few times but still followed. He didn't think this creature had any ill intentions or else the creature would have already made a move against him. But what was it

planning? What medicine was it selling in its pot? [1]

"Splash!" The eight whiskered catfish splashed droplets of water everywhere after diving into the river. After a brief thought, Lei Yu also jumped in. He then released his internal energy to wrap around his body. By doing this, the water was forced a few centimeters away and couldn't penetrate through the barrier of energy.

The underwater world made Lei Yu shocked. The surface made it look like a regular river but it was actually very wide below and even ran under the mountains. With the many species of fishes swimming about, Lei Yu felt like this was the most fantastic underwater scene he

had ever encountered.

-----

[1] What is this person hiding up its sleeve.

# Chapter 265:

## Underwater

### World's Long Er

Although it was somewhat dark underwater in addition to a sense of pressure, it didn't impact Lei Yu in the slightest. As he followed the eight whiskered catfish to the deepest reaches of the river, a different underwater scene was revealed before Lei Yu's eyes. He finally found out where the so called Scaling Dragon Cave was located at.

As he took in the scene, Lei Yu felt that this wasn't a river at all and looked like the sea bed. What

surprised Lei Yu was that the area was so wide that one couldn't see the edges of a river bank. Layers of reefs and corals that shouldn't appear in a river but the sea was everywhere the eye could see. The contrast of various different colors in this dim underwater world created a different kind of beauty.

Nestled in-between some reefs was a tunnel that was completely in darkness. Next to the entrance to the tunnel were three words inscribed on the reef: "Scaling Dragon Cave."

"Why did you bring me here?"  
Asked Lei Yu.

The eight whiskered catfish turned around and smiled, "Could it be

that you don't want to see your friend?"

"My friend?" Lei Yu couldn't really understand his meaning but after thinking for a bit, he cried out: "Is it Big White?"

The eight whiskered catfish nodded and then continued swimming forward. This startled Lei Yu, but he quickly followed behind. It looks like Big White and this eight whiskered catfish knew each other!

This was a tunnel made up of reefs. Gradually, the further along they went, the wider the tunnel became. Lei Yu could only stare in wonder at how amazing this underwater world was. What was even more beyond Lei Yu's expectation was this place



had a palace-like manor! At the end of the tunnel was a huge door. Upon inspecting it, the door was arched shape inlaid with shiny white beads. These white beads were none other than pearls that were the size of a chicken's egg. If these pearls were presented in the modern Mortal World, they would definitely fetch a high price. Yet these expensive pearls were inlaid to the edges of a door; the extravagance truly shocked Lei Yu. But he was considered a country bumpkin since in the Immortal World; these pearls were as common as household items.

On both sides of the huge door stood two guards, each holding onto a trident. Their appearance deemed them to be part of the fish species,

making Lei Yu was surprised at how many fishes were able to form their essence and gain intelligence here!

As the eight whiskered catfish brought Lei Yu through the door, the main hall they arrived at was even more spectacular. Different colored corals were placed around various places that gave off a myriad of colors. And at the center of the hall was a large pearl giving off a white light. The pearl was the size of a basketball that completely shocked Lei Yu. Just that pearl alone was enough to light up the entire main hall.

In the back of the hall in a central location was a exuding a golden light. On the handles of the throne were two magnificent lifelike

dragons carved into it.

Upon the dragon throne sat a person that looked like a young man who had two beautiful girls by his side.

The eight whiskered catfish cupped his fists, "Your highness."

"You may take your leave." The youth waved his hand and the eight whiskered catfish respectfully left, leaving Lei Yu standing in the center of the hall alone.

"May I ask... why you've brought me here?" Lei Yu deliberately stared at the young man and released his spiritual perception ability but couldn't feel any energy fluctuation from him. This meant the youth

was another super strong expert much stronger than him, someone that had surpassed the Nascent Soul stage!

"Lord White turned out like this from saving you?" The youth slightly raised his head and asked Lei Yu.

"Lord White? Are you talking about Big White? Where is he right now?" Lei Yu's body trembled as he asked emotionally.

"He is recuperating in the rear palace, and I'm not sure about his current conditions." Said the youth with a sigh.

"You are...?" Lei Yu tentatively asked.

The youth glanced at Lei Yu and replied: "I am the master of the Scaling Dragon Cave, my name is Long Er."

"What relationship do you have with Big White?" For someone to be so concerned about Big White, Lei Yu didn't have to be so cautious anymore and asked away.

"Back in the Chaotic Star Sea, Lord White had once saved my life!"

"Chaotic Star Sea? That means...?"

"Enough chatting, everything will be fine if Lord White is okay... but if there's any unfortunate accident, I will guarantee you will suffer the consequences for it!" The youth coldly humphed before turning

around to leave.

Lei Yu was surprised as he stood there not sure what to do. Hearing the youth's words, it looks like Long Er and Big White has a deep relationship. But why would Big White have friends in the Immortal World? And he even happened to be this guy's benefactor.

There was no need for Lei Yu to think too much about this. As long as Big White pulled through safely, then everything will reveal itself.

Lei Yu wanted to follow Long Er to see how Big White was doing but the previous two girls blocked his path. "The rear palace is a forbidden area for outsiders!"

In other people's territory, Lei Yu couldn't be rash. He also didn't have the qualifications to cause trouble here because he would be simply seeking his own death. He could only helplessly wait here hoping nothing bad would happen to Big White.

After three or four hours, Lei Yu decided to just sit down cross-legged and cultivate. As he was trying to steady his breathing, ripples of water would fluctuate in front of his nose and mouth but were unable to enter.

Lei Yu felt that the spiritual energy underwater wasn't sufficient; it wasn't even one third of the energy on land. It was quite labor intensive in order to recover his internal

energy but fortunately, he had the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost so the process didn't take too long.

"Young master!"

Hearing the cry, Lei Yu immediately opened his eyes that were filled with joy. "Big White, you're okay!"

But what appeared in front of him was a total stranger. Lei Yu blinked a few times before asking: "You... you're Big White?"

"Right, it's me. Young master doesn't recognize me after I've transformed to a human?"

Lei Yu carefully inspected the new Big White. After transforming to a human, he was dressed in white clothing from top to bottom. He



had a handsome face and a set of long white hair that fluttered elegantly in the water. Big White was the image of a good looking man, and the most prominent feature was still that red ruby that seemed to be fused onto his forehead.

"I definitely cannot recognize you."  
Laughed Lei Yu.

It was at this time that Long Er came out from the back. "My apologies. I was too anxious previously so if I offended you in anyway, I hope you will forgive me!"

Lei Yu shook his hands and smiled, "As long as Big White is okay, I wouldn't have cared if you said a few more words." Why would Lei Yu

hold a grudge over this? He was only curious about the relationship between them two. Just as Lei Yu was about to ask, Big White started the introduction.

"Young master should already know his name is Long Er; he and I are friends. Previously when I was injured, I fell into the water and by luck, Long Er happened to rescue me." Big White glanced at Long Er with eyes of gratitude before asking in a peculiar tone: "Young master, where is your friend? How come he isn't together with you?"

# Chapter 266: Their Goal Is Me

Lei Yu replied: "Don't worry, he's fine right now. Oh yeah, how did you two get to know each other? It seems that Big White rarely steps out of the Ceng Hong Villa."

Big White lightly smiled and didn't reply, while Long Er from behind stepped out to answer. "I too came from the Chaotic Star Sea to the Immortal World. Lord White and I have known each other for over a thousand years now."

Lei Yu felt like time within the Immortal World was considered like nothing. They could casually

talk about something happened for a thousand years as if it was not a big deal.

Big White interrupted, "In fact, this matter was related to my family's master but let's not talk about this for now because we have plenty of time for it in the future. Young master, what are your plans for our next step?"

Having this subject brought up, Lei Yu couldn't help but feel overwhelmed. Not to mention they weren't the opponents of the Void Sect disciples, that mere barrier was something they couldn't even break. At this current scenario, wanting to rescue Ai Er had become an extremely difficult task.

"If that's the case, just stay here for the time being to recover from your injuries. We can discuss the plans in detail in the future, so what do you think?" Asked Long Er.

Since there were no other solutions for the time being, Lei Yu and Big White could only nod in agreement. At least Nuo Hu was safe for now. As for Ai Er, the Void Sect hadn't captured Lei Yu yet so she shouldn't be any danger. No matter how anxious his heart was, he couldn't act rashly or else it would lead to another disaster. Lei Yu was unwilling to allow Big White to tackle the dangers on his behalf again.

After being arranged a guest room in the rear palace, Lei Yu and Big

White sat down and closed their eyes. One was healing his injuries while the other was recovering his internal energy.

In another area, within the foggy mist of the Void Sect.

"Martial Ancestor, she is the companion of that extraordinary person." Said Yuan Xiu with a bow. In front of him were three people: In the middle was an elderly person with a full head of white hair. His beard went all the way down to his chest and he was wearing a deep blue robe. On the left and right of him sat a fat and thin person. They both wore clothes similar to the elderly person except they looked much younger than him.

The elderly person in the middle said: "We haven't gotten any clues these past few days. It looks like this extraordinary person possesses a special technique that even we aren't able to detect his presence."

"That's right, Martial Ancestor. That day, I used the treasure you gave me to search for his whereabouts, but in an instant, his presence was able to disappear without a trace." Yuan Xiu then continued: "And what is even more shocking is this extraordinary person's cultivation time - it hasn't even been ten years yet and he has already reached the Gold Core stage!"

"For such an extraordinary genius, our Void Sect must win him over at all costs!" The elderly person then

started caressing his beard, "How about this: Spread the news throughout the Immortal World that our Void Sect will be openly accepting disciples starting from today. Also remove the Cloud Barrier from the main gate. I believe this extraordinary person would never miss such a great opportunity and find this time to be fish in the muddy waters and try to do something. At that time, I will personally make a move!"

"Understood!" Yuan Xiu bowed before leaving filled with excitement. The three heavyweights of the Void Sect weren't people that anyone could see. Anyone below the Nascent Soul stage was not eligible to enter this pavilion, yet he, a mere Gold Core stage was allowed in.



Not only that, he was allowed to step upon the highest floor of this pavilion. Such matters would make him the envy of all Void Sect disciples and give him lots of capital to boast about.

"Senior brother, would we cause too many waves from doing this? After all, this extraordinary person is someone all the other Sects want to get their hands on as well. Didn't Yuan Xiu previously mention? The Skywalk Sect and the Violet Gold Hall also sent people to the Mortal World. It was only because they broke out into a fight half-way that Yuan Xiu was able to receive a stroke of opportunity. If we did this, wouldn't this create an opportunity for other people to cause trouble at our Void Sect?" Asked the thin

person to the side of the elderly person.

"There's no need to worry junior brother Kun Xian, I have my own plans." The elderly person closed his eyes with a smile and sat there quietly. The fat and the thin person glanced at each other before they too closed their eyes.

Sure enough, three days later, the news that the Void Sect were openly accepting disciples spread throughout the Immortal World causing a huge uproar. Even the communities in the Chaotic Star Sea that were at the edge of the Immortal World heard about the news and would rush there. At this time, the usually quiet and serene Void Sect started bustling with

activity. In the air above the Void Sect, a crowd of people were floating there as if waiting for something.

This piece of news naturally reached Lei Yu's ears so Big White, Long Er, and he were in the main hall discussing on how to deal with it.

"I believe this is our chance. The Void Sect openly accepting disciples is a once in a millennia matter, and those hoping to become a disciple of the Sect will definitely flock there in droves. And naturally, that many people will create a chaotic atmosphere so at that time, we can become fishes in troubled waters and target an opportunity!"  
Proposed Long Er.

"Right, I think what Long Er said makes a lot of sense. Young master, what do you think? Such a large and powerful Sect that's recruiting disciples on a large-scale basis will inevitably lead to chaos. If we can manage to blend in with the others, it's highly possible we can find an opportunity to rescue your friend." Big White endorsed at the side.

Lei Yu gently exhaled as his mind was on overdrive contemplating this. From what Lei Yu could discern, this matter was not that simple. Their real purpose was obviously him, but this was also a once in a lifetime opportunity.

"Since Long Er said that this was a rare instance that only happens once a millennia, it is indeed a good

opportunity for us. But have you guys thought about why now? Have you thought about what their goal is?" Asked Lei Yu.

The two of them glanced at each other, "Could their goal be you?"

Lei Yu nodded, "Right. At this point, there's no longer any need for me to hide things from you two. It's time for me to tell you their true purpose."

Lei Yu had no intentions of revealing his real identity. If he did, there was no doubt that Big White would immediately have a falling out with him and the consequences would be unimaginable. But there was one matter he could reveal without any problem.

"What's their goal?" Big White and Long Er both asked in unison.

"Have you guys heard about the Dragon Vein?" Lei Yu asked.

"Dragon Vein?" replied Big White.  
"The Dragon Vein is one of the three legendary veins. In the ancient times, it had appeared before and they were separated into Heaven, Earth, and Dragon. And the Dragon Vein was the pillar of the three. What about it? Why did young master bring this subject up?"

"Wait a minute!" Long Er was a bit astonished as he interrupted. "I remember about four months ago, seven stars aligned in the sky and a huge dragon flew up into the air

before flying back down as if it had found its owner. The Dragon Vein should have been absorbed by someone, and this extraordinary genius that only appears once a lifetime has been sought out by many Sects and factions."

"Right, and that's their true motive." Pausing for a bit, Lei Yu then continued: "I am the person that absorbed the Dragon Vein, and the people the Immortal World sent out was to look for me."

"What?!"

"This... this... this is impossible!" Big White and Long Er were both shocked as they stared at Lei Yu with wide eyes.

# Chapter 267: Seeing An Acquaintance

Lei Yu just nodded and remained silent. This wasn't something that requires any more explanations since them two should understand the implications. At first, Lei Yu wasn't too particularly concerned about the whole matter of the Dragon Vein recognizing its owner. But once the Immortal World sent out people in search for him did it make him realize this matter wasn't so simple. And when he was able to leap from the early to the late Gold Core stage, the benefits this Dragon Vein had given Lei Yu was something he personally



experienced.

It was a while later before Big White and Long Er recovered their senses. The former then said: "I finally understand why young master was able to leap a realm from the early to the late Gold Core stage. So it's because of the Dragon Vein's power..."

It was clear in Lei Yu's heart that to have such good fortune was entirely due to the unknown energy inside his body. If it weren't for that green energy, perhaps he would still be in the Mortal World working hard on cultivating. It may take him ten or even several dozens of years before he could even condense a Gold Core. All these encounters had created the current Lei Yu;

therefore he truly cherished what was inside his body.

"Since their goal is you, then it's obvious why they're openly accepting disciples at such a large-scale. If that's the case, we have to be extra careful." Said Long Er.

"Right, but we still have to go since this opportunity isn't something that will appear every day. We must think of a surefire plan that can cover all our bases."

The three of them were in a deep discussion when at this time; the eight whiskered catfish came in.

"Your highness, the current atmosphere of the Immortal World can be described as being

abnormal. In a radius of a hundred miles above us, it is packed with people. This type of situation is something that has never happened in the Immortal World before."

"Eight Whiskers, bring two men with you and go up to see what everyone's gossiping about so we can understand the current situation." Said Long Er.

"Understood!" The eight whiskered catfish just turned around when Lei Yu spoke up, "Hold on, I'm coming with you."

"You can't do that, it's too dangerous! Especially when we haven't come up with a plan to counter them yet!" Big White was the first to speak up in objection.

"Don't worry, have you forgotten that I can hide my aura? As long as I don't release my internal energy, no matter what special abilities they have, they simply won't be able to find me. As for you Big White, you should stay here and recuperate because if you appeared, you would definitely be the first to be found out by them." Said Lei Yu.

Big White felt this made sense too. Lei Yu could hide his aura but Big White could too, except he didn't have the ability to completely retract it to the point where nothing leaked.

"You have to be extremely careful of everything!"

"Eight Whiskers, you are

responsible for protecting the young master!" Said Long Er.

"Understood!"

Bringing Lei Yu along, the eight whiskered catfish took the lead while two subordinates followed in the rear. As they arrived at the river bank, Lei Yu retracted his internal energy. He was thinking to himself that the [Energy Suppression] stage was just too useful in the Immortal World.

Lei Yu sat on the back of the eight whiskered catfish as they leapt into the air. Demonic Cultivators didn't have to rely on a weapon for flight but relied on their own ability, which made Lei Yu very envious of.

As they broke through the clouds, a mass of people were floating in the air as if they were waiting for something. Lei Yu didn't dare to use his internal energy but used his eyes to observe his surroundings.

As they got closer to the crowd, Lei Yu finally understood why everyone was just hanging around here - the Void Sect's foggy barrier had not been lifted yet so these people couldn't get through. Of course it's not impossible to break through if everyone concentrated their attacks... But such an act would be the biggest sign of disrespect to the Void Sect so no one in their right mind would do something like that.

The eight whiskered catfish looked rather eye-catching with its huge

slippery body floating in the air, but no one would bother to observe it in detail. There were countless demonic beasts that wanted to join the Void Sect so the appearance of the eight whiskered catfish was just considered another demonic cultivator joining the lively atmosphere.

The closer they got, the more uneasy Lei Yu felt. He looked around carefully and noticed that pretty much the entire Void Sect was protected by the foggy barrier. That wasn't the main issue because even if the barrier was lifted, the Sect was easy to defend and tough for attackers. Even though the mountainous cliffs and terrains weren't obstacles for a cultivator, there was a platform every ten

meters apart on the side of the mountains. And on top of these platforms were many Void Sect disciples. Based on this situation, wanting to attack the Void Sect head on would only lead to one's own destruction.

Attacking any place will result in being surrounded by the disciples of the Void Sect. This was similar to the saying of pulling one hair and the whole body is affected; their defense was completely airtight!

Lei Yu couldn't help but feel a headache coming on as multiple scenarios played in his mind yet none of them could be implemented.

"Move back! Can't you see that we



were here first?" Just as the eight whiskered catfish started moving closer, an impatient voice to the side cried out.

Lei Yu looked back and saw a pig. Yup, it was indeed a pig that looked similar to . It had a pig's head and a fat human's body which made Lei Yu slightly shocked.

"Friend, you're here to become a disciple of the Void Sect too?" Lei Yu asked with a smile.

"Bullshit, humph humph!" The Pig-head then continued: "Isn't everyone here for that purpose? Unless they're all here to get a wife?"

"Uh..." Lei Yu blinked a few times

and wondered if this pig was really the Zhu Bajie of legends.

"How come the foggy barrier still hasn't been removed? Could it be the news about the Void Sect accepting disciples was fake?" Lei Yu tentatively asked.

"Fake? Not possible. I had a friend inquire about this who had already been waiting here for a whole day. The Void Sect is openly accepting disciples regardless of their strength, so anyone can come in search for a master. Take a long look around yourself at the 10,000 plus people waiting, so how could the news be fake?"

It was indeed accurate that many people had come in search of a

master and becoming a disciple. And the estimate of 10,000 plus people seemed to be on the low end. Lei Yu felt like there was as many as several tens of thousands of people gathered here right now.

As they packed in with the rest of the crowd, Lei Yu's body suddenly trembled.

The eight whiskered catfish appeared to have felt it and asked: "What is it young master? Did something happen?"

Big White addressed Lei Yu as young master so it was natural Long Er also addressed him the same. And since the King of the Scaling Dragon Cave addressed Lei Yu as such, the eight whiskered catfish

who was much stronger than Lei Yu, still had to be respectful and address him as young master as well.

"Quick, take a look at that person in the crowd!" Lei Yu pointed at a certain area amongst the mass of people.

Because there were too many people here, the eight whiskered catfish couldn't get in closer. It then activated its own slippery body's ability and instantly shrunk in size. The previous ten plus meter body became about two meters in length. This was nothing special to those in the Immortal World so it didn't draw too much attention. As for the pig-head, he kept making "humph humph" sounds before saying: "You

guys have no manners at all! Have I finished speaking yet?"

Lei Yu turned around with an apologetic look and said: "I'm sorry but I saw a friend so I need to go over and say hello!"

In the midst of the crowd, Lei Yu saw familiar figure which made him extremely emotional. The most eye-catching thing about this figure was that he had a copper pillar like staff next to him that was thirty feet tall!

# Chapter 268:

## Perhaps It Will Be Useful

As they got closer, Lei Yu's heartbeat starting beating faster.

"Romon!" Lei Yu yelled out in a shaky voice. It wasn't that loud but Romon clearly heard it.

Slowly turning around, this person that once shook the Mortal World started having misty eyes. After clearing his throat, "Little... little Yu, it's really you! It's really you!"

"Whoosh~!"

Romon controlled his pillar and flew straight towards Lei Yu. His speed was so fast that it made the dense crowd of people give away since they didn't want to be accidentally struck by that huge pillar. Even though they were all cursing under their breaths, no one dared to cause any trouble while they were in the area of the Void Sect.

Ignoring everything, Lei Yu leapt off the eight whiskered catfish and landed on top of Romon's copper pillar.

"It's good that you're okay! Haha!" Romon was so excited that he didn't know what else to say. While trying to catch up to Lei Yu, he had encountered numerous obstacles

but was able to deal with it all. Luck played a big role in it. Romon's face looked quite haggard which seemed to be caused by him trying to chase after Lei Yu relentlessly. Now that he had finally found him, the pent up exhaustion disappeared and was replaced by an indescribable feeling of relaxation.

"Eight Whiskers, let's go back first!" Lei Yu looked at the eight whiskered catfish and the latter nodded his huge head and started descending. The two subordinates who had just caught up to them also started flying down with Romon following them in the rear.

As they entered the water, Lei Yu naturally released his internal energy and formed a layer of energy



around himself. Romon didn't have to be reminded and followed suit.

Inside the Scaling Dragon Cave.

"Let me introduce him to you all - this is Romon, a good friend of mine!" It was clear that Lei Yu was still very excited.

Romon slightly bowed, and then Lei Yu continued: "This is Big White, my benefactor. And this is Long Er, the master of this Scaling Dragon Cave."

Seeing that Lei Yu who usually had a worried look on his face seemed better now, Big White and Long Er were happy for him.

"Romon, the Chaotic Star Sea is filled with danger everywhere so

how did you get here?" Asked Lei Yu.

Romon smiled, "It is indeed filled with danger everywhere, but it looks like not many people are willing to cause trouble for an ascetic cultivator like me in the Chaotic Star Sea and the Immortal World. Even if there is someone that is trying to make it difficult for me, I was lucky that they only want something in return to let me through. Honestly, I don't really know why that's the case."

Hearing Romon's words, Big White and Long Er started observing his appearance. With a bare upper body, healthy bronze skin with clear cut muscles, and two metal hoops locked into his shoulder blades.

"You're really an ascetic cultivator!"  
Big White cried out in shock.

"Right, I am."

"Incredible, this is too incredible.  
There are extremely few ascetic  
cultivators around yet I'm fortunate  
enough to meet one today!"

"Is there really that little ascetic  
cultivators around?" Asked Lei Yu.

"Right." Long Er nodded. "Among  
tens of thousands of practitioners,  
finding one ascetic cultivator out of  
them all is not an easy feat. The  
pain that ascetic cultivators have to  
go through is something regular  
people cannot imagine. And  
encountering someone that is able  
to condense their Gold Core, that's

a situation even more difficult to come upon."

Romon only walked this path because it was entirely at the request of his father. And also because he was waiting for Lei Yu to appear. He never expected that so few people would cultivate like himself.

"Are there anything special about ascetic cultivators?" Asked Romon.

Big White light smiled, "You will know in the future. But I need to remind you that unless it's a life and death situation, you cannot take off the Bone Locking Hoops!"

"Why?"

"This is a secret of the ascetic

cultivators and can be regarded has a life protecting seal. But not many ascetic cultivators know about this which is why so little people walk this path. Once the Bone Locking Hoops are removed, the consequences could be disastrous."

Big White only had a general understanding of these matters but didn't know the specifics.

Romon nodded as he understood some but not all. Lei Yu suddenly remembered Nuo Hu inside his storage ring and asked: "Is there a way to remove some water and make a space here?"

"That's not difficult at all." Long Er waved his sleeves and the surrounding water started violently

vibrating. Even the main hall's ground started shaking as well. Long Er started emitting a strong energy from his body and even though it didn't have any attack power, the energy aura released still made Lei Yu and Romon tremble before it. In the center of the main hall, water started receding outwards as a transparent energy created a barrier. Although this was similar to how Lei Yu created a layer of protection around his body, Long Er's was much stronger in comparison. Based on Lei Yu's current strength, he could turn this place upside down but there's no way he could control his internal energy to such exquisite levels.

Lei Yu made a thought and Nuo Hu instantly appeared before everyone.

"You have a storage treasure?"  
Asked Big White in shock.

Lei Yu showed the ring on his fingers, "This is it."

"Not bad!"

Currently, certain parts of Nuo Hu's nerves had been blocked in his brain so that he remained in a frozen state. Big White briefly examined him before shooting out a white light that circled his neck. Nuo Hu suddenly started to gasp for air before grabbing a hold of Lei Yu's hand.

"Little Yu! Little Yu!"

"I'm so sorry big brother; it was all my fault that you and Ai Er had to suffer so much!" Lei Yu started to

cry. All this time, Lei Yu had treated Nuo Hu as his own brother. And for a brother, Lei Yu was even willing to give up his own life for him!

This stout youth Nuo Hu was also reduced to tears and had become speechless. Seeing those two clasping their hands together, the three to the side didn't know what to say. In their view, these two people had an extremely special relationship or else Lei Yu wouldn't risk his life to go save him.

It was a long time later before these two manly men calmed down.

"Little Yu, even though I previously didn't have any feelings like I was frozen, I was still able to see and hear during the entire journey. I



clearly heard the conversations between Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li so it may be of assistance." Said Nuo Hu.

"Quickly tell us!" Lei Yu and company all bent forward to listen.

Ever since he found out Lei Yu could fly, he was already extremely shocked. But ever since entering the Immortal World, this scene had become nothing special. That's why he wouldn't even bother asking stupid questions such as how could there be an underwater palace. Nuo Hu was able to clearly remember everything Yuan Xiu and Yuan Li spoke about which allowed him to understand some things about the Immortal World and not feel they were unusual. There were several key pieces of information that Nuo

Hu felt it was necessary for Lei Yu to know though.

"The person backing the Void Sect should be called the Void Immortal right?"

"Right." Long Er understood these matters the most and nodded in reply.

No one was surprised that Nuo Hu knew this information, but what he was about to say next made everyone shocked.

"That Void Immortal has already left the Void Sect!"

"What?!"

"What?!"

"This... how could this be possible?"  
Long Er stared with wide eyes as if  
he didn't believe Nuo Hu's words.

# Chapter 269: Ares Axe Appears

"They indeed said that." Nuo Hu then continued: "Currently, the Void Sect has three people supporting it. Although I don't know the difference in strength for each level in the Immortal World, but those three are all in the Soul Splitting stage, and respectively are in the early, mid, and a late stages."

"Soul Splitting stage? They're actually all in that level?" Exclaimed Long Er in shock.

"Oh right Long Er, what level of strength have you reached?" Asked Lei Yu.

"I'm only at the late Fusion Soul stage. And Eight Whiskers is only a little worse than me, he's in the early Fusion Soul stage."

Lei Yu didn't really care whether the Void Immortal was in the Void Sect or not. Everyone says he was strong but to what extent was something Lei Yu had no concept of. Even if he wasn't at the Void Sect, he still had many disciples guarding it. Even with a low estimate, there were over a hundred of them. With that number of troops, even if Lei Yu and company combined all their powers to attack, the outcome would still be their utter defeat.

"I have an idea..." Lei Yu muttered.

"What kind of idea? Let's hear it

out."

"Since the Void Immortal has left the Void Sect, why not spread that news out? I believe there should be some Sects that are in conflict with them, so at that time, we may not even have to raise a hand ourselves." Said Lei Yu.

Long Er shook his head and smiled, "That won't work. Even if the news was considered reliable, some will still be suspicious of it after it's been spread. Under normal circumstances, no one would be willing to take a risk in testing it out because people in the Immortal World cherish their lives a lot. The path to achieving immortality is not easy, so no one will be willing to give up their life that easily."

Lei Yu nodded and felt this idea may not work after all.

"So we don't have any other ideas?" Nuo Hu was really worried about his sister since the longer she stayed in the Void Sect meant higher chances of her encountering danger.

"The Void Sect is an unfathomable place; just that Cloud Barrier is not something ordinary cultivators can break open. I believe things will not work out that easily." Said Big White since he had personally experienced that strong repulsion energy.

For the time being, the main hall had become completely quiet.

"Your highness!" The eight whiskered catfish rushed in and felt his body tremble before realizing the main hall had been blocked by an energy.

"What is it?" Asked Long Er.

"The Void Sect's Cloud Barrier has been removed!"

"Oh? That's good!" Big White smiled and continued: "Even though the Void Immortal isn't around and we don't have any chances of saving someone, we can at least still cause some trouble for them!"

With the addition of Long Er and the eight whiskered catfish, their side's battle ability had undoubtedly increased by a lot. Lei Yu and



Romon can easily take care of all those in the Gold Core stage, and those three old fogies shouldn't appear that easily. So anyone above the Gold Core stage that shows up will be taught a lesson by Big White, Long Er, and Eight Whiskers.

"That's true; we don't need to fight to the death. Once we gain a cheap advantage, we can immediately leave." Smiled Long Er.

"But..." Big White hesitated a bit.

"What is it?" Asked Long Er as everyone glanced at Big White.

"With you and Eight Whiskers appearing, they will definitely know that Scaling Dragon Cave and us are working together. By then, I'm

afraid..."

The main hall suddenly became quiet again, but shortly after, Long Er waved his hand and said: "It's merely a cave palace, no big deal!"

"No! No! Being able to have one's own territory here is not an easy feat. You can't lose this just because of my personal matters!" Lei Yu refused by shaking his head. Even Nuo Hu nodded in agreement. No matter how anxious they are to save Ai Er, there's no way they can drag others into this mess.

"Why bother with worldly possessions? My life was saved by Lord White; therefore young master's business is my business!" Said Long Er not caring at all.

"How about this: We'll go take a look at the situation first and act according to the circumstances." Big White suggested.

"That's fine too. It's a lot better than rashly striking out."

Nuo Hu was once again stored into Lei Yu's storage ring in order to keep him safe. Although Romon and Nuo Hu felt it was strange on why Big White and Long Er were addressing Lei Yu as young master, they felt this wasn't the right time to ask. Asking right now didn't seem too polite, and besides, Lei Yu would tell them eventually even if they didn't ask.

Coming out of the water, the noisy sounds up in the air could already

be heard at the bottom of the abyss. As everyone flew up into the sky, Lei Yu hid his internal energy. As for Big White, he didn't bother since no one was going to mess with someone at the Soul Splitting stage for no reason. Even someone from the Void Sect would have to weigh the risks and benefits.

Long Er had already made arrangements in the cave palace. A dozen of his subordinates were ready and prepared, just waiting for Long Er's command in order to fly into the sky for a fight. Everything had been properly planned while they observed the current situation.

As they broke through the clouds, the mass of people appeared to be even more crowded now. Lei Yu and

company started mixing in with the crowd in hopes of finding out what was going on.

All the Void Sect disciples were standing atop of the property walls prepared to deal with any emergencies. Although the Cloud Barrier had been removed, the Void Sect had not yet indicated it was time to enter so no one dared to step forward.

At this time, in the center area of the Void Sect stood a person on top of an ancient pavilion. Due to the interference of some fog, one could not see his face clearly but his voice shook the heavens which allowed everyone to hear him clearly.

"The recruitment of disciples will

last for ten days, and at the minimum, they must be at the early Gold Core stage. For those that are interested, please form a three man squad and enter the main hall!"

For such a famous Sect to recruit disciples, of course they would be picky about it. But even though this recruitment period was fake, they still had to act in accordance to the norms befitting their status.

Several people in the front row were immediately overjoyed. For the ten day recruitment period, they were able to get in on the first day so of course they were naturally happy since they didn't have to painfully wait for a long time.

Although the crowd was noisy, no

one dared to be rash and began to orderly arrange themselves. The most eye-catching scene was for that pig-head; after being pushed and jostled around, he actually managed to be one of the first three to get in.

In accordance with the rules, only three people at a time were allowed to enter the main hall to be screened. The first three slowly floated towards the main hall of a certain pavilion. The Cloud Barrier had indeed been lifted since the three successfully went in without any interference.

On the other side of things, such a big matter would naturally cause other major Sects to send people over to investigate if the situation

was true or not. After these people found out the Void Sect was truly recruiting disciples, they quickly turned around and flew back to their own Sects.

"Are we attacking or not?" With eyes of disdain, Long Er glanced at the Void Sect disciples standing on the walls and platforms.

"Hold up, this could be a trap!" Said Big White.

About ten plus minutes later, one could hear an angry roar from the center of the Void Sect. This roar was rather special because it clearly belonged to a pig's.

Tens of thousands of people suddenly started discussing with



each other while they released their spiritual senses hoping to figure out what was going on.

At this time, a gust of strong impact force came from the Void Sect's main hall and started spreading out to the surrounding area and kicking up bursts of violent winds.

"What's going on?"

"Who was it that was just yelling?"

Suddenly, tens of thousands of people couldn't help move forward slowly for a better look. One could only see an obese figure rush out from the main hall holding onto a large axe. It was a golden colored axe that emitted a very strong aura.

Romon and Lei Yu exclaimed in

unison: "Ares Axe!"

# Chapter 270: A Chaotic Scene

"You guys recognize that weapon?"  
Big White and Long Er asked.

"That... that's my father's weapon!"  
Replied Romon. His voice wasn't  
that loud which only allowed those  
close by to hear it. Even though that  
was the case, it still caused  
everyone to turn and stare at him in  
surprise.

One could see a strong energy  
attack land on the Void Sect that  
was surrounded by fog. The fog was  
then blown away which allowed  
everyone to now clearly see their  
grounds.

That pig-head was carrying the Ares Axe on his shoulder and making "humph humph" sounds before yelling out: "How dare you insult me by saying this daddy would degrade the Sect's image! I'd really like to see what allows the five great Sect's Void Sect to have so much arrogance!"

The pig-head started swinging the Ares Axe around and creating bursts of gale like winds. It appears that the pavilions of the Void Sect already had barriers setup around them because despite how fierce the pig-head's attacks were, he still couldn't damage any of the buildings.

A line of a dozen disciples on the surrounding walls started flying

forward; their target was the pig-head acting recklessly.

Unfortunately, these Gold Core stage Void Sect disciples were unable to get close. In normal circumstances, the rest of the Void Sect disciples would typically all rush up as well leaving no one to stand guard. But in the off chance that those tens of thousands of people outside the Void Sect started causing trouble, then the consequences would be unimaginable. That's why they didn't dare to move from their spot and just stayed there anxiously waiting for the instructions of senior sect members.

Seeing one disciple after another being pushed back by those

powerful attacks, and even two disciples that couldn't resist and instantly lost their lives, it was at this time that an elderly person rushed out of the main hall.

"Impudence! You've ruined my Void Sect's matter so hand over your life!" That elderly person had salt and pepper hair with a chubby face. Although not as big as pig-head's obese body, but he was still considered someone at the heavyweight class.

A sword flew out of his sleeve and shot straight at the pig-head.

Although obese, the pig-head's reaction speed wasn't slow at all. He brought the Ares Axe across his body and a "bang!" sound of metals colliding was heard. The sword qi the elderly person released was

easily blocked by the pig-head.

"Humph!" After the cold humph, the elderly person shot into the air. Internal energy was rising out of his body as his hair started floating above his head. His face was contorted with anger as he was intent only cutting the pig-head to death!

Within the crowd, a black shadow suddenly rushed out and shot inside the Void Sect. Those disciples on the wall didn't even have time to react when that shadow had already rushed in.

"You damn pig-head; you only know how to cause trouble!"

"Woa!"

"These two truly are bold! They even dare to cause trouble at the Void Sect!"

Voices of shock were heard in the crowd.

Lei Yu whispered, "Make a move now? I think that pig-head is just simple-minded and isn't scheming something. It's just the strange rules of the Void Sect that egged him on."

Several people on the side nodded. Since someone had started trouble, why not use that as the foundation to create a bigger mess?

Led by Big white, he pounced out like a wolf whose speed was even a few levels faster than that black



shadow that had previously shot out of the crowd. Right after that, Long Er and Eight Whiskers followed up closely behind. Lei Yu and Romon followed behind as well, but did not speed up because their targets were the disciples standing on top of the walls.

"These people are here to solely cause trouble!"

"Heavens! Is the Void Sect that weak?"

Everyone watched as several powerful individuals entered the Sect. Within the tens of thousands of people here, there were only a small amount of people that had reached the Nascent Soul stage or higher. The vast majority of them

were at the Gold Core stage which was why they were so shocked at what was going on.

For such a big change to occur, the face of that elderly person standing on top of the ancient pavilion paled. The original plan was pretty much foolproof, yet he never imagined someone dared to move against the Void Sect. This sudden turn of events was completely outside his expectations. Especially for that group of people that lastly rushed forth made him widen his eyes before he too rushed down.

When the pig-head saw Lei Yu and company, he smiled and said:  
"Friends, thank you for helping me out! Let us deflate this Void Sect's arrogance a bit today!"

Lei Yu was about to say something when a sharp sword flew right at him. The Sky Devouring Sword under his feet suddenly buzzed before dodging to the side and avoiding a fatal strike. Turning around to look, Lei Yu realized it was one of the Void Sect disciples on top of the wall.

"Humph!"

As his hands clasped together, a touch of purple exuded from Lei Yu's eyes. Pulling his hands apart revealed a stream of lightning dancing between palm to palm. With a cold humph, Lei Yu then thrust the stream of lightning out.

Thinking that the lightning was going to head in a straight line at

him, that Void Sect disciple was surprised when it suddenly disappeared without a trace!

It was at this time that the clouds in the sky started changing into storm clouds, and sounds of thunder and lightning started shaking the heavens!

Those disciples guarding upon the walls and the platforms had to immediately release their internal energy to resist the lightning strikes descending down upon them. It was fortunate for them that this large area of attack by Lei Yu was not particularly strong, so their bodies only felt a slight numbness when hit.

At the same time when Lei Yu's

lightning descended, Romon narrowed his eyes and the huge copper pillar shot out with a burst of golden light. When these disciples were still numb from the lightning, the huge pillar continuously smashed three disciples flying away before a strong aura finally withstood it.

They were currently not in a dangerous situation. Lei Yu let out of breath before focusing his energy on the group of disciples in front of him. As for Big White, he was helping the pig-head deal with the elderly person. Lastly, Long Er and Eight Whiskers were confronting disciples pouring out from the pavilions with the strength of a Nascent Soul or higher stages.

For the time being, this situation was the definition of chaos. Such a scene had not been seen in the Immortal World for over a thousand years, making a lot of the cultivators in the area very excited. Even if they couldn't join the Void Sect, being able to witness such a battle of this proportion made it a worthwhile trip for them.

Both sides were tightly locked together in their battles and whether who had the advantage or disadvantage could not be determined as of yet. It was at this time, a strong gush of wind came smashing down from the skies. The huge energy aura caused Big White to suddenly retreat tens of meters away.

"Crack!"

"Clang!"

A huge sword descended from the sky that was surrounded by a light blue energy. The energy aura given off by the sword definitely came from a strong expert! Even Big White felt threatened by this aura. If he hadn't escape in time, the consequences would be disastrous if he was hit by that huge sword!

Upon the sword slicing into the ground, a loud deafening roar was then heard: "Everyone stop!"

Lei Yu, Romon, and those spectating outside the Void Sect felt their ears ringing. Even the heavens and the earth seemed to be shaking!

The surrounding ground where the huge sword was stabbed into was all cracked, and it didn't stop until the hilt was before the door of a main hall. The sword then began to become illusory before disappearing and replaced by an elderly person with white hair appearing in front of everyone.

"Senior brother!" Said the fat elderly person while cupping his hands.

"Everyone, today's disciple recruitment has been temporarily canceled so please return!" Facing tens of thousands of people, the elderly person's voice didn't falter as it echoed through the mountain valleys and throughout.

Those that were timid immediately



turned around to leave. A few minutes later, the tens of thousands of people had mostly dispersed, leaving only a small portion that stayed. Those that stayed still numbered in the thousands though.

The elderly person once again declared: "If you don't leave, that means you want to be our Void Sect's enemy! You will then have to suffer the consequences!"

# Chapter 271: Lei Yu Is Trapped

Once the last words were said, the rest of those that stayed had pretty much left except for a few. For those with the courage to stay, it was natural they thought of themselves as possessing some weight in the Immortal World. Therefore, what was their reason for coming here? Wasn't it for joining the Void Sect? Since the Void Sect has encountered trouble, these people wanted to see how capable the Void Sect was in order to be known as one of the five great Sects.

Of course, these people staying

behind would not take the elderly person's words seriously. With this group of people causing trouble around, why would the Void Sect waste time to do something to back up their words?

Seeing that most of the people left, the elderly man yelled out to a certain pavilion: "Activate the barrier!"

"Not good!" Lei Yu and company were shocked. If there were really trapped inside here, they'll be cornered like a rat in a hole.

Big White's sharp eyes instantly found a person the elderly man was yelling at. That person had a thin face but no one would ever doubt the strength this person possessed.

It takes a while to describe this but everything happened in an instant. Big White crazily pounced out and shot forth. At the same time, the fur on his body turned blood red and his speed doubled.

The elderly man wanted to block Big White but Long Er and Eight Whiskers intercepted him.

The surrounding cloud slowly converged towards the walls of the Void Sect. Time was of the essence; if they didn't leave right now, they would definitely be trapped here!

Seeing that Big White was just about to reach that person activating the barrier, a strong energy was suddenly released. Big White's body fluctuated

momentarily, and he no longer had the chance to get through.

One could no longer see properly while in the midst of the foggy clouds. They could only rely on their spiritual senses to feel what's in their surroundings.

"Quick! Everyone run!" At this moment, the pig-head cried out before swinging his axe at a Nascent Soul disciple. He then flew out towards an area where the clouds had not fully condensed yet. Although his body was obese, his speed was no less when compared to other people.

Long Er and Eight Whiskers had dodged the elderly man's attack before quickly flying in retreat.

Romon was actually in the outermost area near the gap where the clouds had not fully condensed yet, but he wasn't the first to escape out of it.

"Whoosh~!"

"Whoosh~!"

"Whoosh..."

Everyone had already left. Lei Yu injected internal energy into his Sky Devouring Sword and activated his speed to the maximum, heading towards the gap that was about to merge with the rest of the barrier.

"There's nowhere to run!" In the midst of the foggy clouds, a cold humph was heard. A white flash was followed by that, its target

being the Sky Devouring Sword  
beneath Lei Yu's feet.

"Shua!"

"Bang!"

A loud sound was heard and the Sky Devouring Sword beneath Lei Yu shook. His unstable body caused him to fall off, but Lei Yu kept his cool and was able to react quickly. This was the confidence he had in his own skills of manipulating internal energy. The Sky Devouring Sword shot down and supported Lei Yu before flying back up again.

"Not good! Young master! No!"

"Little Yu!"

"Friend!"

Everyone had successfully left so no one expected an accident to happen to Lei Yu. Watching the last trace of clouds about to completely seal the barrier, everyone floating outside was filled with anxiety. Lei Yu clenched his jaws and his fists. A purple internal energy quickly condensed, and shot towards the tiny gap made of clouds. Lei Yu then roared: "Break!"

There was a loud boom. A few seconds later, those outside that thought Lei Yu would be able to escape successfully began to worry when they didn't see him.

"What should we do? Let's kill our way back in!" Romon was unconsciously weaving back and forth on his copper pillar which



showed his anxiety.

"That won't work, there's no way for us to get back in!" Said Long Er with a frown.

"How could that be? Shouldn't it be a barrier that's been setup by someone in the Soul Splitting stage? Can't we just combine our attacks and break it?" Asked Big White.

Long Er heavily sighed, "It's impossible. This Cloud Barrier isn't something as simple as Lord White's belief that it was setup by a single person. This barrier had been formed previously and not by the Void Sect. This barrier formation is a masterpiece of the famous Four Illusory Court. The Void Sect and the Four Illusory Court have a good

relationship, so the array they've laid is something no one can break. Not to mention, this formation was personally laid down by the Sovereign of the Four Illusory Court himself.

"How do you know this?" Asked Big White.

"The Scaling Dragon Cave is very close to the Void Sect, so I personally witnessed this a few hundred years ago." Long Er replied.

Hearing this, Romon was even more anxious. "Is there really no other way then?"

To Romon, Lei Yu was even more important than his own life. If it weren't for Lei Yu saving his father,

it would be impossible for Romon the ascetic cultivator to appear now and it would be impossible for the brilliance of ancient Greece to shine in history. And now that Lei Yu was trapped within the Void Sect, how could Romon not be anxious? Why did he painfully wait for over a thousand years for? It was precisely to bring Lei Yu along in search for his father.

"It's not that there's no way..." It was at this time the pig-head standing behind the four spoke up.

Romon and company immediately turned around, "You have a way?"

The pig-head glanced at a person wearing sharp looking black clothes and smiled, "Since this barrier was

setup by the Four Illusory Court, why not just go ask the Sovereign for a method to break through it?"

"Friend, do you think that's even possible?" Big White was disappointed, "Previously Long Er said that the Four Illusory Court have a good relationship with the Void Sect. Do you think they will help us and become enemies with the Void Sect?"

Pig-head shrugged and smiled helplessly, "Do you have a better suggestion then?"

Being asked like this, everyone didn't know how to respond and became mute on the spot.

"It's not entirely impossible!" Said

Long Er after some serious thinking.

"What do you mean?" Big White turned towards him.

"It's because the young master is an extraordinary genius that he's being treated like this by the Void Sect. And you guys mustn't forget that recruiting disciples was entirely a cover up by them while their true goal is to locate the young master and make him join the Sect. Since the Void Sect is so concerned by the young master, could the other Sects not have those same intentions? You should know that the young master is not an ordinary individual!" Long Er's words made Big White and others immediately come to a realization. But that pig-

head and the other person dressed in black had no clue what they were talking about.

Long Er naturally wouldn't expose the fact that Lei Yu had been recognized by the Dragon Vein. After all, he wasn't familiar with the pig-head and the person in black. Who knows what impact it would cause if this piece of information were to spread all over.

"Let's not delay anymore and rush to the Four Illusory Court!" Said Romon who already couldn't keep still anymore.

"Let's wait here for a bit first and see if there's any change to the situation." Said Long Er as he looked towards the Cloud Barrier.

Time slowly went by and they've waited for half an hour already. Romon couldn't wait any longer and urged them to be on their way again. Everyone nodded and four figures rapidly flew off into the distance. Long Er wasn't worried about the Scaling Dragon Cave because he didn't really care if the Void Sect knew he had participated in today's matter.

He, the most important person wasn't around so would the Void Sect slaughter his men as retaliation? If that were the case, then the Void Sect will likely cause a huge controversy in the Immortal World for behaving like this.

# Chapter 272:

## Breaking Out Of The Barrier

The current Romon had forgotten something very important. His father's Ares Axe was still being held by the pig-head but he forgot to ask about it and even forgot how to figure out how to look for the pig-head in the future. Romon's mind was completely filled with worry on how to rescue Lei Yu.

"Should we also follow them and check things out?" The pig-head glanced at the person in black.

"What's there to look at? Are you



intending on getting further involved?" Said the black clothed person in a cold manner.

"I'm quite interested in that person. Why are all the great Sects competing for him? The Void Sect even caused such an uproar just for him, so aren't you curious?"

The black clothed person still shook his head so the pig-head coldly humphed a few times. "If you aren't going, I am!" After saying that, he quickly flew off.

The black clothed person shook his head helplessly. A black blur then streaked into the direction of where the pig-head flew off to.

Inside the Void Sect's Cloud Barrier,

everything was foggy looking so Lei Yu couldn't see anything. He could only rely on his spiritual perception to determine if there were any approaching dangers.

Rounds of energy blasts came from all directions making Lei Yu dodge left and right. He wasn't using his eyes and was purely using his spirit, but little did he know that a person was slowly approaching him.

The foggy environment also had attacking capabilities that came consistently. Lei Yu could only continue using his body maneuvering abilities to keep dodging. Although he was being exposed to attacks consistently, his sense of direction did not mess up. Lei Yu clearly remembered which

direction would be the exit and which direction was the inner compound of the Void Sect.

A mass of clouds was heading straight for Lei Yu's back. Because it wasn't close enough yet, Lei Yu didn't detect it at all and was concentrating his senses at the front where he felt a large energy aura was about to strike him. Lei Yu sidestepped and avoided that frontal attack.

The frontal energy aura attack collided with the mass of clouds right behind him.

"BOOM~!"

A huge explosion rocked the entire area, blasting Lei Yu several meters

away before he could stabilize himself.

Lei Yu was startled before he started straining his ears. "I can hear the wind behind me!"

His heart was rejoicing as he controlled his Sky Devouring Sword. It looks like the explosion had caused a rift for him to get out. If he had a chance to hide, he will hide. If he could block, he will go ahead and do that all in order to rush forward. His body burst through the clouds that wouldn't dissipate and before long, Lei Yu finally flew out of the clouds. Lei Yu was now floating along a mountain outside the Void Sect!

"I'm actually out!"

Unexpectedly, the previous collision of the energy aura along with a mass of cloud and forced him to the edge of the barrier. Although there were other energy attacks within the cloud, Lei Yu was able to successfully avoid them and make his escape.

"This barrier is nothing much after all!" Lei Yu coldly humphed. He then hid his aura and stored his Sky Devouring Sword. Lei Yu's body immediately fell downwards and his target was the huge river at the bottom of the mountain.

It wasn't that this Cloud Barrier was only so-so in Lei Yu's words, but he was already at the edges of the formation markings from dodging all those attacks. Lei Yu happened

to be halfway in the barrier's defensive array area and not fully in the binding area where he received those periodical attacks. If Lei Yu was just a single step further back, he would have been fully in the defensive formation instead of in-between, which allowed him this impossible good luck.

The whole point of the defensive formation region was to repel attackers. That person hiding in the mass of clouds was taking this into account so began to take action. But that person's stalking speed was too slow as he watched Lei Yu who had been trapped there make an escape.

Lei Yu hid his aura and used the same method as before while dropping down. Not a single trace

of energy escaped out of his body as he grabbed onto the side of the mountain to reduce his speed.

Arriving at the base of the mountain, Lei Yu jumped into the river without hesitation. He then released his internal energy to form the protective membrane before swimming to that particular reef area.

"Where's your king and the others?" Lei Yu quickly asked as he saw the two guards in front of the cave.

"We haven't seen them."

Lei Yu was surprised by the response, "They haven't returned yet?"

Lei Yu should have thought of this

sooner. Not to mention Long Er and Eight Whiskers, but it would already be impossible for Big White and Romon to leave the area while he was still in danger. Yet they were definitely not in the area of the Void Sect because Lei Yu had spread out his spiritual perception before dropping down. Even if he couldn't detect Big White, Long Er, or Eight Whisker's aura, he still should have been able to lock onto Romon. Since he didn't find anyone, it looks like they had left the area and hadn't come back to the Scaling Dragon Cave.

"Where would they have gone to?"

Lei Yu couldn't stay in this place for a long time since it was no longer safe here. Since he couldn't find his



companions, he didn't know where else to go. Lei Yu helplessly swam along with the current of the river.

Lei Yu swam for about an hour and only after determining no one was chasing from behind did he relax a bit. He was about to swim upwards and only could do so for about ten meters when he was sudden blocked by an extremely strong pressure. It made him unable to move a single inch forward.

"What's going on?" Lei Yu could clearly feel a formless energy forcing him down.

At this time, a series of bubbles floated up from the bottom of the river. Upon looking closer, a turtle was slowing swimming upwards

nearby. When we say slow, it was just the action of it swimming that looked slow but its speed was something Lei Yu couldn't match. One must know that within the water, the speed of this usually slow animal is immeasurable. Not to mention this turtle was definitely not an ordinary one!

Lei Yu's mind was recalling the ancient scrolls he had read, the . Isn't that exactly the turtle he's looking at right now? Not only that, the turtle in front of him was almost exactly the same as the pictures he had seen.

The turtle had light blue eyes, and its neck was obviously much longer than the average turtles because it was stretching out almost two

meters. On the turtle's head was a single brown spike, which was the same color as the huge shell on its back. The patterns on the shell were clearly visible, and within each scute were sharp spikes.

This giant turtle had an overall length and width of five meters. For such a large turtle to have such strange looks, there was no doubt that it had cultivated to the point of achieving its essence and gaining intelligence!

"Who are you?" Asked the giant turtle.

Lei Yu clearly knew that he didn't have the ability to break through the obstructing pressure so he could only keep his body in place.

He momentarily didn't know how he should answer because he wasn't unable to sense the giant turtle's energy fluctuation. This proved the giant turtle was much stronger than him.

"Didn't you hear what I asked? This is my territory. Why have you trespassed into it?" Asked the giant turtle.

Lei Yu's face twitched, "I've lost my way in the water and had no intentions of trespassing here. Please pardon my intrusion!"

"You got lost? No intentions? That's quite laughable! You think I don't know that you came from that little insect's territory?" The giant turtle shook its neck, creating a mass of

bubbles that floated upwards.

"Little insect? Are you talking about Scaling Dragon Cave's Long Er?" Lei Yu's eyebrow was slightly raised. Although he doesn't know if this giant turtle had any ill intent behind those words, Lei Yu wasn't afraid of him just because he was much stronger. He just didn't want to be reckless for the time being.

"You actually dare to call him by his name, so you shouldn't be one of his subordinates. But since you're just in the Gold Core stage, could you be the friend of that little insect?"

Encountering such a question, Lei Yu had to carefully analyze the situation. One wrong response

could provoke the other side. Lei Yu figured he could fudge some matters to remain discreet as to not cause any unnecessary trouble.

# Chapter 273:

## Entrusting The Old Turtle

From this giant turtle's tone of voice, Lei Yu could feel that he was neither friends nor enemies with Long Er. It looks like they just each have their own territory and didn't bother each other. If there were really any hostilities between the two, Lei Yu's meager Gold Core self would be subdued immediately without the chatter at all.

Thinking up to this point, Lei Yu smiled: "I am merely acquainted with him."

The way this giant turtle was speaking wasn't very polite, but there didn't seem to be any malice behind it either. If it were another person, trespassing on someone else's territory may result in being attacked. But this didn't seem to be the situation so just by this point alone; Lei Yu could feel he just had to play it careful for the time being.

"Did you notice that the past two days, there seems to be some big movements up top?" Asked the giant turtle.

"You mean the Void Sect?"

The giant turtle nodded, "The Void Sect has been too quiet for too long, it's about time someone caused some trouble with it."



Lei Yu's raised his eyebrows; it looks like this giant turtle and the Void Sect were at odds with each other. Lei Yu could tell by that simple sentence that even though they weren't enemies, they definitely weren't friends either.

"If it weren't for trying to avoid from getting killed by the Void Sect, I wouldn't have jumped into the water."

"You mean the trouble up top was caused by you? Impossible. You're just a mere Gold Core stage kid, what capabilities do you have?" The giant turtle apparently didn't believe a single word of Lei Yu.

Lei Yu smiled, "Of course it's impossible for me alone, I naturally

had help from others. Perhaps you didn't know but the Scaling Dragon Cave has already become an empty shell."

"Oh?" The giant turtle's eyes suddenly opened up wide, his light blue eyes emitting a glimmer of light. "That insect was actually that bold? I didn't expect that! Didn't expect it at all!"

For a short time, Lei Yu didn't know what to say. The giant turtle then said: "Follow me!"

"Where to?"

"You said that you had pursuers. If you wish to keep running forever, go ahead. If you don't, then follow me." After saying that, the giant

turtle's body shook as it swam deeper into the depths.

Lei Yu was lost in thought for a moment and actually felt some fluctuations off in the distance. He then quickly swam after the giant turtle.

Deep underwater was a cave manor. It was a simple structure and wasn't as extravagant as the Scaling Dragon Cave. There was no one else living here but the giant turtle.

"My place should be safe so don't worry." Pausing a bit, the giant turtle then said: "I want to know why the Void Sect is acting like this, and I also want to know why you caused trouble at the Void Sect."

Lei Yu thought for a bit but decided to tell the truth. Since this giant turtle was helping him avoid the pursuit of the Void Sect, it shouldn't have any malicious intentions. "The people of the Void Sect are all hypocrites. They are supposed to be a righteous Sect but in fact, they are nothing but dirty underhanded bastards!"

"What do you mean?" Asked the giant turtle. Lei Yu sighed heavily, "In order for them to have me join the Void Sect, they travelled millions of miles from the Immortal World to the Mortal World. When they were rejected by me, the actually kidnapped my girlfriend and my sworn brother. In order for me to save them, I used this chance to create trouble for them."

"You're saying that in order to force you to join the Void Sect, they are utilizing such methods? Then that means... you're the extraordinary person that the Dragon Vein has recognized as its owner?" The giant turtle had a strange look on his face, but it was most likely he was in total shock.

Lei Yu nodded as confirmation.

"Unfortunately, my girlfriend is still in their hands and I don't have the strength to save her! This is so maddening!"

The giant turtle revealed a look of sympathy and didn't know what to say. At this time, one could see the giant turtle's body slightly shake before he softly said: "I didn't expect them to search all the way here."

One could hear a voice transmission coming from the outside. "Is the old turtle in? Hand over that person and we will let it slide. Otherwise, you will be responsible for your own consequences!"

"Not good, it's Kun Xian of the Void Sect! He has already reached the strength of an early Soul Splitting stage. It's fine if he was alone, but if any of his senior brothers came as well, then the situation would be bad!" Said the giant turtle in shock.

"Early Soul Splitting stage?" Lei Yu recalled that it was the same level as Big White. It's not surprising he would be difficult to deal with and was capable of finding this place.

On land, any powerful individual can easily sense the aura that their target is exuding but it was different underwater. The water caused a person's aura to fluctuate differently and might even give the detector an illusion. This was why Lei Yu was willing to release his internal energy to form a protective membrane once he went into the water. He never expected this bastard to actually be able to find him here.

"Old... senior, I should go out because I don't want to get you involved!"

For such a kind giant turtle, Lei Yu didn't want to get him entangled with his troubles. Although Lei Yu's path was previously blocked by the

giant turtle, he eventually brought Lei Yu back to his cave manor so that Lei Yu could escape the Void Sect's pursuit. Even though Lei Yu had been found, he still couldn't unjustly involve the giant turtle. Lei Yu decided that even if he were to die, as long as he could see Ai Er one last time, he will still die with content.

"How can I do that? If it weren't for me previously blocking your path, they wouldn't have so easily caught up to you. If I let you out while I sit idly here, then how will this old turtle have any face left?" The giant turtle then continued: "Let them come in and take a look. Do they really think that this old turtle is easy to deal with?"



"Your interception is solely because I stepped into your territory, and didn't you already choose to help me after finding out these people were chasing me? This is enough already. Old senior, I have a storage here and I hope you can keep it safe for me. You only need to connect your spirit energy to it and will be able to retrieve items from within it. Inside is my sworn brother whom I managed to save after a desperate encounter. I am entrusting you to find a place without water and release him there because he hasn't reached the Gold Core levels yet. I'm afraid that he won't be able to handle the pressure while underwater. Old senior, little Yu will go ahead and thank you ahead of time!" After saying that, Lei Yu quickly retrieved a pouch and his

Sky Devouring Sword. He then placed the storage ring that had accompanied him for so long in front of the giant turtle before swimming towards the outside of the cave manor.

"He's coming." A burly elderly person standing outside the cave smiled. "Prepare to capture that person alive for us to bring back!"

Several Void Sect disciples standing behind him replied in unison: "Understood!"

The giant turtle intended to block Lei Yu's path but because of his previous actions startled him, the stunned giant turtle didn't react fast enough. Wanting to block Lei Yu's path now had become an

impossible thing.

The giant turtle cried out: "We only had a chance encounter, how come you trust me so much?"

Lei Yu turned around and still manage to show a smile, which made the giant turtle feel admiration. A person being surrounded by danger could still act like this; it's most likely Lei Yu would be the only one in the world that can be like this. "Old senior, if I didn't guess wrong, you should be one of the Divine Beasts - the Black Tortoise Xuan Wu, right? Little Yu's matters will be entrusted to you!"

Facing forward again, Lei Yu swam out of the cave manor leaving the slightly shocked giant turtle. No

matter how much he thought about it, he couldn't understand how Lei Yu knew that he was a Divine Beast.

# Chapter 274: The Void Immortal

Several people shot out of the water causing water to splash everywhere. They then started flying towards a canyon where the Void Sect was located at.

Lei Yu didn't look at this place that was filled with clouds as a righteous Sect, but hell! Inside was the love of Lei Yu's life, so he couldn't not go. Even if he were to die, Lei Yu had to see her one last time. Otherwise, even in death he wouldn't rest in peace!

He let go of the idea of breaking out in anger. Lei Yu was currently being

stared at by the slightly fat elderly person as if he was afraid Lei Yu would suddenly disappear from his sight.

Several of those Void Sect disciples were leading the way as they rushed towards the midst of the fog.

Lei Yu's vision started blurring and couldn't see anything clearly anymore. He could only rely on his spiritual perception to sense those disciples in front in order to keep up with them.

This Cloud Barrier wasn't exactly a formation that nothing could get by. Within it actually contained a path that would directly lead them into the Void Sect. It's just that this path was very complex, even if one

traversed it many times, they wouldn't be able to remember it clearly. Only when one held the information from the person who created this formation would they know how to break through the barrier. Of course Lei Yu would naturally not have that information.

The area within the Cloud Barrier wasn't big; it's just that to traverse the special path, this group of people had fly left and right for over ten minutes. During that time, Lei Yu could clearly feel strong energy aura's created by the clouds fly by him but didn't attack.

After many twists and turns, the front started to clear up and they've finally arrived within the inner area of the Void Sect.

"Please! My senior brother has been waiting for a while." Said a cold voice behind Lei Yu. "Don't even think about playing any tricks, you won't be able to escape from the Cloud Barrier. Previously, if it weren't for your fast speed allowing you to enter the defensive area, you wouldn't have been able to escape!"

Lei Yu didn't bother responding to him, he just floated in the air waiting for this elderly person to lead the way.

Lei Yu followed the elderly person towards an ancient looking pavilion. They didn't fly through the front door but directly flew to the top of it.

They entered through an open



window, and there sat two old men. The old man with a head full of white hair opened his eyes, "My two junior brothers Kun Xian and Kun Rong, you two may leave first while I speak with this little friend."

The fat elderly person who brought Lei Yu here, and the thin elderly person sitting next to the old man both made a sound of acknowledgement before leaving.

Only Lei Yu and the old man were left now. The old man smiled before saying: "My name is Kun Feng and I'm the Sovereign of the Void Sect. Little friend, you've made me wait for a long time!"

Lei Yu coldly replied: "I want to see my friend!"

Kun Feng smiled while shaking his head, "I'm afraid that's impossible."

Lei Yu stared in anger, "What do you mean by that? What did you guys do with her?"

Kun Feng stood up, "No need to be anxious little friend, your friend is safe and sound. Don't worry, how about I take you to meet someone?"

"Meet who?" Lei Yu asked in a vigilant manner.

"You'll know after you follow me." After saying that, Kun Feng flapped his long sleeves and proceeded to walk up to the top where there was a hidden door.

Upon entering this part of the ancient pavilion, Lei Yu could

immediately feel a strong aura. Somewhere inside here was a formless pressure that made him have a difficult time breathing.

As Lei Yu followed Kun Feng to the front of the hidden door, an even more intense pressure caused Lei Yu have tightness of breath. Fortunately, this didn't cause him too much problems.

Watching Kun Feng's right thumb and right middle finger clasp together, an orchid hand pose appeared. He then recited something under his breath before pointing out. A light blue energy then shot towards the hidden door.

There were some "booming" sounds before the hidden door started

shaking. It then slid upwards and Kun Feng went inside, followed by Lei Yu.

They didn't walk very far when the pressure became stronger. Lei Yu supported his body by holding the wall as he cautiously looked everywhere. There was absolutely nothing here except for another wooden door at the end of the passageway. Lei Yu clearly felt the pressure was coming from inside that wooden door.

"Master, I've brought the person here."

"Crack!"

An energy aura caused the wooden door to open. A person's voice came

from inside, "Let him come in and you can leave for now."

"Understood." Kun Feng made a "please" gesture before moving aside, indicating to Lei Yu to enter.

Hesitating for a moment, Lei Yu glanced at the old man Kun Feng with a set of white hair before striding inside.

Upon entering, the wooden door closed by itself. And it appears that someone released an energy that protected the door. Lei Yu knew that with his current strength, there was no way he had the ability to open it even if it was just a mere wooden door.

He could only take things as they

come. Lei Yu wanted to see what kind of tricks this Void Sect was going to put on for him.

Under careful observation, this place made Lei Yu beyond shocked. From the outside, the livable area of this ancient pavilion didn't seem particularly large. But after coming into this place, it was actually very spacious with about 300 square feet of space. Lei Yu couldn't understand how the top of this pavilion that looked tiny from the outside would have such a spacious area.

There were very few furnishings in this room, and it was only surrounded by a few chains hanging from the beams of the ceiling that each held a sword. Each sword was

different sizes and shapes, but it wasn't difficult to see that each and every one of them were masterpieces.

There really wasn't anything else except for a few futon prayer mats on the ground.

In the center of the room was a person sitting there with his eyes closed. Lei Yu gently sighed and then asked: "Why are you putting up such a revolting facade right now while forcing me to come here? Don't you have something to say to me?"

That person immediately opened his eyes and a violent burst of wind blew by. Lei Yu's clothes made "flap flap" sounds while his hair was

blown all over the place. Lei Yu then felt a great pressure that made his whole body feel like it was about to rip apart. If he relaxed just a tiny bit, the violent wind blowing past him may slam his body against the wall behind him.

After the violent wind pass did that person slowly reveal a smile.

After the pressure eased up, Lei Yu began to inspect this person. He looked like a middle-aged man wearing an eye-catching white robe. His long gray hair was firmly bundled up by a wooden hairpin. He had a pair of sharp eyes that were similar to an eagle, making Lei Yu not dare to look at them directly. His two large flaring ears was probably the ugliest part of his



whole body. His face was considered handsome, and it wasn't difficult to see that when he was younger, he was probably considered quite good looking.

On his forehead was a light red mark which looked similar to the shape of the number "6," except it was slightly slanted which made it look rather strange.

"Perhaps this little friend has heard of the Void Immortal..."

Lei Yu suddenly widened his eyes and repeated in shock: "Void Immortal?"

"Correct!"

"You are that Void Immortal who founded the Void Sect?" Lei Yu

asked again as he couldn't believe it.

"That is I!"

Seeing how shocked Lei Yu was, the Void Immortal replied and nodded as he didn't feel this was strange.

"Then why did the Void Sect disciples say you weren't here?"

The Void Immortal got up and brushed his sleeves with a smile, "I think there's no need for you to know that. What you should be most concerned about is yourself, right?"

Lei Yu cast away his shocked emotions and resumed his calm face. "You guys forced me to come here so isn't it to make me join the

Void Sect? Is there any use for me to say anything else after being captured here? Just say what you want from me!"

# Chapter 275: Ai Er Behind Closed Door Seclusion

"Good! Bold! I didn't find the wrong person!" The Void Immortal then smiled, "Being able to stand up tall and neither arrogant nor pushy under such pressure, it looks like you are really not simple!"

"So what?!" Lei Yu glanced at him coldly before looking off to side as he didn't put the founder of the Void Sect in his eyes. It wasn't that Lei Yu had any ability to make him so arrogant; it's just that he has never seen someone do such despicable deeds in order to invite

someone over. And Ai Er was still in their hands, making Lei Yu filled with anger, so how could he show a pleasant face?

"No one in history has ever rejected the invitation of my Void Sect!"

"Then I'm the first one!" Lei Yu replied with a cold humph.

"So there's no conditions we can talk about?"

"There is!" Lei Yu turned around, his firm eyes even surprising the Void Immortal.

"Let me hear it out."

"Let my girlfriend go, or else no other conditions would be possible!" Lei Yu was neither arrogant nor

pushy. His stubborn personality doesn't always reveal itself but only does when there's no room for discussions.

"I'll honestly tell you that it's impossible."

"You..." Lei Yu clenched his fists wanting to rush at him. Even though he knew it would be of no use, he still wasn't scared.

"Let me finish my words." The Void Immortal then continued: "Your girlfriend is the same as you, possessing an exquisite skeletal structure. She is currently in my Void Sect's spiritual holy grounds undergoing a baptism, which you would understand if I say it's similar to behind closed door

seclusion."

"What did you say?!" Lei Yu was wide eyed with shock, not daring to believe those words.

"Perhaps in a few years or a decade, she would be reborn and tread the path of a cultivator." Looking at Lei Yu's look of surprise, the Void Immortal continued saying: "If you wish to, I can also give you the same opportunity. In that place, cultivating will yield twice the result with half the effort. With you two present, I will have no worries for the Void Sect when it's time for me to leave."

"Humph! I have my own cultivation methods." Lei Yu clenched his teeth, "You want me to join the Void Sect?"

Stop dreaming!"

Pursuing all the way here, it was just in order to save his girlfriend. And after overcoming many hardships, he still didn't get to see Ai Er. Lei Yu didn't want to say what was in his heart since there was such so much enmity between them, how can there be a compromise? If he was able to make a choice right now, Lei Yu would rather Ai Er not go through any changes and stay as an ordinary and cute girl.

Lei Yu wasn't being selfish, he just didn't want Ai Er to change solely because she was being forced into it. Lei Yu and Ai Er were currently involved with matters where they had no say whatsoever. For



someone like Lei Yu who had never liked to be restricted since young, giving him a choice may actually be more difficult than making him kill himself.[1]

"Could it be that you think your own cultivation method is greater than our Void Sect's 10,000 years of fine-tuning? What a funny joke!"

The Void Immortal shook and his robe started fluttering without any wind about. His face appeared angry since he could tolerate anything, except when his lifelong and painstaking efforts to create a cultivation method were rejected. To the creator of such methods, this was considered one of the greatest insults against them.

"You think I'm wrong?" Although Lei Yu was forced back a few steps by such a powerful aura, he still raised his chest and said: "Can you guarantee that cultivating the Void Sect's technique would allow me to achieve my current strength from scratch? A short seven years to reach the early Gold Core stage? Can you guarantee that cultivating the Void Sect's techniques will allow me to reach the late Gold Core stage from the early stage within two months?"

Lei Yu's words made the Void Immortal become mute and didn't know how to answer. His own disciples required decades to even a century in order to achieve the strength that Lei Yu had right now. This indeed was an anomaly. But

after thinking it through, Lei Yu and Ai Er were the same, the both have an exquisite skeletal structure which made them suitable for any martial cultivation. Moreover, Lei Yu had absorbed the essence of the Dragon Vein, so his enhanced leveling time wasn't out of the question.

"You want proof?"

"Right! I want proof!"

"Fine!" The Immortal Void coldly smiled, "I will give you chance, two years! If after two years you are able to defeat your girlfriend Ai Er, I will agree that you two may leave. If you lose, then you have no choice but to join my Void Sect. What do you think?"

Lei Yu clenched his jaws and stepped forward and forcefully withstood the pressure, "Do you really mean it?!"

"What a joke. I, the Void Immortal will never make false statements!"

The Void Immortal waved his sleeves and a flash of light created a breach behind Lei Yu. Lei Yu turned around and back forward to look at the Void Immortal in surprise.

"Go ahead and leave. Two years... two years you will definitely lose!"

With another gentle wave of his sleeve, a huge gap appeared in the distance of the Cloud Barrier. Lei Yu retrieved the Sky Devouring Sword from the Universal Pouch

and stepped on top of it. "I will be back two years later!" With a flash of purple light, Lei Yu flew through the breach and disappeared into the cloudy atmosphere.

Lei Yu kept turning his head back while flying through the air, "I'm sorry Ai Er, I currently don't have the power to rescue you. I also don't wish to join a Sect that forcefully kidnapped big brother and you. You must wait for me! In two years, just wait for my return. I will definitely take you away from here!"

Many disciples naturally saw Lei Yu leaving. While standing at the top of the pavilion, those three elderly people Kun Feng, Kun Xian, and Kun Rong looked off into the distance. Kun Xian was the first

who couldn't take it anymore, "Why did master let him go? I'll go catch him and bring him back!"

"Stay still!" Kun Feng blocked his path, "Are you trying to go against master's wishes?"

"But..."

"There are no buts, I'll go see the master and see what plans he has!" After saying that, Kun Feng turned around and went towards the hidden door.

Inside that wooden door.

"Master, why did you let him leave just like that?"

With his eyes still closed, the Void Immortal replied: "For such a

stubborn person, he would still not obey even if you threatened him with death. With it being like this, why not strike a blow at what he feels most proud of to make him utterly convinced!"

"Are you really that confident in that girl?" Kun Feng asked with some worry.

"Nuo Ai Er has an empty body that's incomparably pure. While she cultivates in my spiritual holy ground, the spiritual energy will erase everything in her memory. When a mind is clear of distracting thoughts, her cultivation speed will increase. By that time, that Nuo Ai Er will not remember that she once had a lover and will only remember she is a disciple of the Void Sect. By

then, everything will be a foregone conclusion. Even if he comes back two years later, everything will have changed." After smiling, the Void Immortal continued: "I have my own reasons for not killing him and you guys will understand in two years time."

Kun Feng didn't dare to ask anymore and only nodded before leaving.

It appears that the Void Immortal had already predicted what will happen two years later, but will the outcome really be so? Perhaps the Lei Yu two years later will no longer be at the level of strength he expects!

-----



[1] If it sounds confusing to you... Ai Er chose not to cultivate with Nuo Hu etc, therefore she stayed an ordinary girl by her own free will. If she does cultivate on the other hand, she may achieve immortality and live with Lei Yu for a long time.

# Chapter 276: Under The Command Of The Demon King

Lei Yu never thought that he would be able to leave the Void Sect. Since Ai Er was able to obtain a great cultivation method, why would it matter if they temporarily can't see each other? At least two years later, everything will be revealed. By that time, Lei Yu doesn't believe he'll still be unable to take Ai Er away. Even if he fails, when push comes to shove, Lei Yu will still die together with Ai Er!

The most pressing matter right now was that Lei Yu must hurry

underwater to find the old turtle. His storage ring and Nuo Hu were in the turtle's hand, so Lei Yu had to inform his big brother about Ai Er as soon as possible in case he became overly worried.

Clearly remembering which path he came from, Lei Yu dove underwater and started swimming.

The cave manor was completely empty and the old turtle wasn't there at all. This felt really strange to Lei Yu since after searching the surroundings, he still couldn't find any traces of the old turtle.

"Where could he have gone to?" Lei Yu frowned, "Could I have trusted the wrong person? That shouldn't be, perhaps the turtle just left for

the time being."

Lei Yu decided to go back to the old turtle's cave manor and wait there.

In another area. Romon, Big White and company were flying towards the Four Illusory Court while that pig-head and the person clothed in black followed in the rear. Although they detected the two following behind, they knew those two didn't have any malicious intentions and didn't bother with them.

The Four Illusory Court was really too far away from the Void Sect. Even though they were flying, it would still take three to five days before they arrive. Everyone was extremely anxious as they hoped they would convince the Four

Illusory Court to help them. They also hoped they could get back in time to rescue Lei Yu. Little did this group of people know that Lei Yu had already safely left the Void Sect. And even swam all over the place before experiencing being captured and let off.

As for that old turtle, Lei Yu still couldn't find him!

When Lei Yu had been captured, the old turtle didn't stay around for long and brought everything with him to Long Er's Scaling Dragon Cave. From what Long Er's underlings told him, the group flew off for a group attack on the Void Sect but now there was no news of them. The old turtle felt something wasn't right. Since Lei Yu had

trusted him so much, he couldn't fail on what he was entrusted to do. The old turtle quickly rushed out of the water and transformed into a human form. He then found a quiet place in the Immortal World and let Nuo Hu out to tell him everything that has happened. It was no use worrying for Nuo Hu to worry so he could only swallow his tears back and stay with the old turtle for now. As to what may happen later? That's a matter for the future. But Nuo Hu's future achievements will be entirely due to this master that wasn't a human!

Fully devoting himself to cultivating in order to take revenge for Lei Yu and Ai Er was the only support that Nuo Hu had for now.

In this short amount of time, all of Lei Yu's companions had separated from him. He was the only one left staying at the old turtle's cave manor quietly waiting.

Three days passed by and Lei Yu awoke from his deep cultivation. He could no longer remain calm and flew out of the water searching, at the same time leaving the Void Sect territories.

Unfortunately as luck would have it, a few days after Lei Yu left, Romon and company decided to fight to the death with the Void Sect. Since the Four Illusory Court didn't agree to their request, they decided to drench the grounds with Void Sect blood in order to rescue Lei Yu. But then they heard from the mouth of

a disciple that Lei Yu had already left.

"What should we do now?" Romon anxiously asked as the group of them floated outside the Void Sect.

"How about we go back to the Scaling Dragon Cave first? Perhaps the young master is waiting for us there." Long Er suggested.

Everyone nodded and descended to the mountain valley. In the Scaling Dragon Cave, Long Er's subordinates reported what had happened in detail the past few days before turning around to leave.

"The old turtle and even young master had come by. But it looks like they've headed off into



unknown directions!" Said Long Er as he frowned.

Big White seemed to have suddenly remembered something, "You guys wait here while I swing by the Thunder Rune Sect, he might have gone there."

After Big White left, everyone realized that the pig-head and the black clothed person had followed them back as well. Since they were so focused on finding Lei Yu, they didn't even pay attention to those two.

"Friends, since the matter has been resolved, are you two intending to leave now?" Said Long Er. These two individuals seemed to have witnessed the entire joke that has

happened in trying to save Lei Yu.

The pig-head gave two humphs, "Disappointing... I am so disappointed. I thought I would get to have fun with another big battle but it looks like I won't get to play anymore. Farewell!" After saying that, he flapped his sleeves about to leave. The black clothed person cupped his hands to Long Er and company before following behind the pig-head.

"Wait a minute!" Cried out Romon as he suddenly remembered something.

The two of them turned around as everyone's gaze was focused on Romon. Romon then asked: "Why do you possess the Ares Axe that

belongs to my father?"

After that question was asked did everyone remember that Lei Yu and Romon mentioned the Ares Axe outside the Void Sect.

The pig-head and the black clothed person were startled by those words. Their eyes were round and wide as they glanced at each other, unable to believe their ears. The pig-head swallowed hard, "You said this Ares Axe belongs to your father?"

Romon nodded. The pig-head and black clothed person started recalling something before carefully observing Romon. "Right, right! He's an ascetic cultivator! Is your name Romon?"

Romon nodded again. One could see the pig-head and black clothed person take two steps back before kneeling down on one knee. "Your subordinate Tai Lao, Hei Feng, greets the young master!"

The move made by the two shocked everyone; what identity did this pig-head and the black clothed person have? Why would they kneel to a mere late Gold Core stage Romon and greet him as a young master? The reason was very simple - their master must be Romon's father.

"You guys... you guys..." Romon stared with wide eyes in shock, unsure what to say at the scene in front of him.

The pig-head was the first to speak:

"Young master, I, Tai Lao am the Left General under the command of the Demon King. This Hei Feng is the Right General. We two are the ones that assist the Demon King in his daily affairs!"

The earlier playful pig that enjoyed humph'ing at everything suddenly became serious; making it hard for everyone to accept what was going on.

The black clothed person nodded, "Young master, the Demon King has waited for you for over a thousand years now. There's not a day that he doesn't mention you. We didn't expect that you've finally arrived in the Immortal World!"

"Demon... Demon King?"

"Excuse this subordinate for being bold - the Demon King's name is Minotaur Linos!" Replied Hei Feng.

Romon's body trembled and couldn't stand properly. All he felt was a ringing sound inside his mind.

The pig-head looked at the rest of the others, "Didn't Lord Lightning come with you?"

"Young master? Could the Lord Lightning you mention be my young master?" Asked Long Er in confusion.

"Could it be...?" Tai Lao and Hei Feng gasped, "Could it be that the extraordinary person you were trying to rescue is Lord Lightning?"

Romon seemed to be a bit happier after hearing news about his father, but then said in a dispirited tone: "Right, it is him. I have disappointed my father...!"

"Your subordinate deserves death! If we knew that person was Lord Lightning, we would have given our lives to rescue him! If Her Majesty the Queen knew that Lord Lightning was in trouble, she will definitely become furious. Young master, can you come back with us two first so that we can discuss some measures?" Asked the pig-head as the two lowered their heads in apology.

# Chapter 277: Four Colored Flower

## Chapter - Four Colored Flower

Romon nodded but wasn't anxious to leave right away. He had to wait until Big White came back to determine whether Lei Yu went to the Thunder Rune Sect or not. Only after that would he go back with Tai Lao and Hei Feng, and explain everything in detail to his father.

Big White later returned without any results.

"When I see father, I will definitely have him do everything possible to find the whereabouts of little Yu. If



you guys have any news, please inform me as soon as possible!" Romon told Big White and company the general location that Tai Lao had told him of the Demon King's territory.

No one knew about the appointment Lei Yu made with the Void Sect two years from now. And it was naturally impossible for them to know that Nuo Hu's words of the Void Immortal not being present at the Void Sect were completely wrong.

The main goal for Romon to see his father was to request that he help Lei Yu by flattening the Void Sect! And Romon completely believes that Minotaur Linos will not refuse it. After all, Lei Yu was his

benefactor and someone his father had always thought of through these thousands of years.

-----

Not to mention that none of them knew where Lei Yu went off to, even Lei Yu himself didn't know where he was. He was currently surrounded by thick clouds and couldn't see anything around him. Lei Yu's previous flying speed was too fast so by the time he entered into the clouds, wanting to get out of it would require some time.

It appears that the dense clouds have covered a large surface area and Lei Yu couldn't find the borders. Even though he was flying in one direction, he still couldn't get

out of this strange location.

"No way! I had just escaped that Cloud Barrier of the Void Sect yet I unexpectedly landed in a similar environment again!" Lei Yu anxiously shifted his Sky Devouring Sword downwards, hoping that descending will allow him to leave this place.

What disappointed Lei Yu was that he couldn't find an exit down below either. Even with solid ground beneath his feet, the place was still surrounded by layers of clouds. In the midst of this place, Lei Yu felt like he was no different from a blind person. Apart from using his spiritual perception ability, his eyes were completely useless right now.

While still in the midst of the clouds, "Could it be that I'll be trapped here until my death? Perhaps someone also created a formation thingy as well, or else why would all the clouds be condensed here?"

Pondering how this place came to be was one thing, but finding a solution should be his priority. Lei Yu once again leapt atop of his Sky Devouring Sword and flew upwards into the sky. He was hoping that there would be a way out in the upper atmosphere. At this time, Lei Yu felt an area that gave him some pressure.

Lei Yu's fast speed was without question but the higher he went up, the more disappointed he became

and eventually even desperate!  
There was no end to this! He had unintentionally entered it and didn't expect to be trapped without an exit in sight. Going down and up didn't help either, making Lei Yu start to feel some terror. "Was this naturally formed or made by someone?"

Just when Lei Yu ran out of ideas, a bolt of lightning came from the sky and struck his body.

A flash of light blinded his eyes and everything seemed to clear up. The clouds gradually faded away and Lei Yu found himself in a desolate area - the entire area was covered by a yellow dirt ground. Upon closer inspection, the yellow ground was abnormally neat and tidy that one could not find any stones bigger

than the size of a fist.

"Escaping"

"Through"

"The void"

"In space"

A deafening sound came from all directions. Lei Yu looked around and couldn't find anyone in sight. Even releasing his spiritual perception yielded zero results. But those words were still echoing throughout the heavens and the earth and had not disappeared for a while.

Lei Yu remembered those words, but couldn't understand what they meant. At this time, Lei Yu felt

some changes inside his body. Could it be caused by the lightning that had previously struck him? Lei Yu was about to look inside his body when suddenly, the ground starting shaking. Even though he was floating in the air, he could still clearly see the effects.

At this time, the ground started breaking apart causing dust to fly everywhere. Lei Yu was completely shocked, "What the hell is going on?"

With Lei Yu as the center, the surrounding ground split in four directions into a chasm at least 100 meters wide. Within the chasm, a multitude of colors shot out forming a powerful energy that made Lei Yu afraid of moving close

to it.

"What is that thing?" Lei Yu spoke out in shock.

At this time, four separate lights shot out of the chasm before clashing together in the air right above it.

"Boom~!"

After the loud sound, the colors after the collision were even more brilliant. Lei Yu couldn't help praising out loud: "So beautiful!"

Gradually, the booming noise subsided. The four different colored energy continued to collide together centrally, criss-crossing each other and actually forming a bright four colored flower. The flower had four



petals and the stamen was blank. At this time Lei Yu was just frozen in place as he stared in shock.

Suddenly, the sound of thunder was heard in the sky. According to Lei Yu's familiarity with thunder and lightning, he didn't even look up before shifting his body to the side. One should know that the speed of lightning itself is faster than sound. If Lei Yu spent time to look up, everything would be too late by then.

Sure enough, a dazzling flash of lightning struck down narrowly missing Lei Yu. The thickness of that light was the size of a human's body. If it had struck Lei Yu, even he himself couldn't imagine what will happen afterwards.

Breathing out a sigh of relief, Lei Yu looked at the place where the lightning struck. It was exactly the blank stamen of the four colored flower!

Upon its contact with the flower, the lightning broke apart and separated like a lightning net covering all the petals of the flower making it even more stunning.

Lei Yu was completely in shock from what he was seeing. For no reason whatsoever, the earth broke apart and out came four different colors of energy. And then that previous lightning landed onto the flower completing it and making it bloom. Lei Yu felt like he was watching fireworks during a festive occasion!

The voice that disappeared once again sounded out. Lei Yu was startled by it as he carefully listened to it.

"For you to become the collector of honey, the flower's stamen was planted by lightning, four magical energies as a cutting edge, they will disperse once it breaks free

."

Lei Yu lifted his head and looked, "Who?! Who is it?!"

The voice came from all directions and Lei Yu couldn't understand a single meaning behind those four phrases. Lei Yu still couldn't see anyone. With this strange phenomenon along with this

strange voice, Lei Yu was at a complete loss at what to do.

At this point, layers of mist started coalescing out of nowhere. It was even coming out of the ground. Lei Yu was immediately shocked because if he were to be trapped by these clouds again, leaving would be impossible!

Thinking up to now, Lei Yu immediately injected his internal energy into the Sky Devouring Sword in attempts to quickly get out of this place. Moreover, everything he had just witnessed here gave Lei Yu a very uneasy feeling.

"Boom!"

An energy aura forced Lei Yu back

to his original position above the four colored flower. Lei Yu was now flabbergasted, "What the hell is going on? This type of situation didn't happen before!"

# Chapter 278: The Strange Nascent Soul

After making several attempts in different directions, Lei Yu had completely given up. There was no way to escape this area since it appears all directions had been sealed off, leaving the strange scene that was blocking him down below.

Lei Yu shifted his sight towards the four colored flower in full bloom. A "hissing" noise was emitting from the center of the flower's lightning filled stamen. It was unknown why but Lei Yu felt like there was an extremely powerful force from the

flower that seemed to be beckoning him. Even the Sky Devouring Sword below his feet was making a buzzing sound.

Lei Yu lowered himself to test the waters, but that slight movement caused him to immediately panic. Four different colored energies suddenly shot out from the four colored flower, attaching to Lei Yu's four limbs before dragging him down. Lei Yu tried to break free but no matter how hard he resisted, it was of no use.

The surrounding clouds gradually restored its previous denseness where nothing could be seen. The four colored flower below then started exuding a dazzling brilliance.

Lei Yu didn't bother resisting anymore and allowed those energies to drag him into the midst of the flower.

With Lei Yu joining the party, the lightning stamen of the four colored flower appeared to become even more active. It was jumping like crazy around Lei Yu while giving off a stronger "hissing" noise that could chill one's heart.

Lei Yu didn't feel any discomfort at all, but his internal energy actually felt a strong resonance with flower's lightning filled stamen. As they bounced off each other, Lei Yu felt a powerful energy constantly invading his whole body and gradually improving his internal structure.



Lei Yu gave up all resistance and focused his spirit on the process. He then crossed his legs and closed his eyes to enter a meditative state. Since he couldn't break free, Lei Yu decided to follow along and see what will happen.

"The four colors are in fear, and will suddenly swell!" That voice that shook the heavens and the earth went off again. Lei Yu didn't even have time to open his eyes to take a look around when the four petals formed by energy started rotating and engulfed Lei Yu. The blue energy was the first to rush into Lei Yu's dantian, then it was the white petal across from the blue one's turn. Those two energy started twisting together like a hemp rope inside Lei Yu's body. The hemp rope

of energy suddenly tightened and shattered becoming little starry dots that showered and floated inside his dantian randomly.

Lei Yu took a deep breath before the red petal and the yellow petal entered into his body like the actions of the previous two. When the red and yellow energies became starry dots, the surrounding lightning stamen then rushed in like mad. Similar to soldiers assuming a battle formation, the lightning stamen condensed into a half inch purple lightning that floated in his dantian. Those multicolored starry dot energies that were scattered all over Lei Yu's dantian acted like they had finally found a home before madly rushing towards the purple lightning. Those

starry dots were continuously converging together that lasted an extremely long time.

Lei Yu tested something by controlling his own internal energy to get near that purple lightning, but as it got close, the purple lightning released a light that forced his internal energy back.

When Lei Yu wanted to try again to sense what that light was, his own internal energy started trembling and didn't have the courage to step forward.

Lei Yu couldn't help but wonder what sort of power this was and why would it enter his body? Lei Yu could clearly feel that any single one of these four energies had the ability to destroy the heavens and

the earth. For such powerful energies to enter his body, Lei Yu wondered what would happen to him in the future.

It was at this time that Lei Yu's body suddenly shook as an unknown energy that he couldn't control started rushing about inside.

"What is it?!" Lei Yu was shocked. Only after observing did he find that this unknown energy was the lightning that had previously struck him.

At this point, it started heading towards the purple lightning in Lei Yu's dantian that everything except his own internal energy wanted to get near. A sudden embryonic form

then appeared!

Lei Yu was shocked to find that the four different colored energies that had become starry dots had transformed to similar shapes to limbs while attaching to the purple lightning. And that purple lightning had become the body, while that previous lightning that struck Lei Yu had actually formed a head!

When all those energies finally settle down, the purple lightning now looked like an infant floating in his Sea of Energy. An extremely powerful aura came from the infant that made Lei Yu feel a sense of being full.

The voice that shook the heavens was once again heard, "Break!"

Shaking~ Shaking~

Within the white fog, Lei Yu sat there as he sensed his Gold Core was constantly trembling. The powerful energy contained inside felt as if it was about to burst out.

Lei Yu clenched his jaws as his entire body was drenched in sweat. All his clothes were now wet and sweat droplets were splashing onto the ground from his hair.

Lei Yu clenched his fists and spread out his arms before roaring into the air, "Agghh!!"

His roar shot through the clouds, showing how much pain Lei Yu was currently in.

"Bang~!"

A muffled sound came from inside Lei Yu's body as the purple Gold Core exploded like a bomb. The purple internal energy acted like it had just lost its home and started madly smashing around. Lei Yu clenched his jaws as he fought against the pain from the explosion before condensing all that internal energy.

Gradually, his internal energy formed a mass as it floated in a central location of his dantian. But there was no way he could keep it up like this because a slight slip of his concentration would cause the internal energy to rush out of his body. If that were to occur, all those years of cultivation will disappear into thin air. Lei Yu couldn't keep controlling it in perpetuity and

couldn't move his body anywhere either. "What should I do? I need to move it to another place that can hold my internal energy!"

Lei Yu looked all over inside his body and then it struck him, "That infant's body!"

Since Lei Yu couldn't keep his concentration on it for that long, he locked onto his target and didn't bother dwelling on the possible outcomes. All his internal energy started rushing like mad into that infant body at the edge of his dantian.

Absorb! The infant acted as if it was dying of thirst before crazily absorbing all of Lei Yu's internal energy. At the same time, Lei Yu



started to feel relaxed.

All the power from his years of cultivation was absorbed into the infant with four different colored limbs, purple body and a white head!

Lei Yu sighed out heavily before attempting to control it. The energy was transferred out of the infant's right arm, and immediately, Lei Yu felt that his own right arm was filled with an explosive power. He then closed his eyes and clenched his right fist before throwing out a punch. One could hear a loud "boom" off into the distance as the ground started shaking.

"What a powerful force!" Lei Yu then cried out, "What's going on?"

Lei Yu returned the energy to the infant's right arm. Why did his own right arm suddenly display such a powerful force? Could it be...? Could it be that it's the body of a Nascent Soul?

Lei Yu could only feel his heart quivering. Could it be that in such a short period of time, he had broken through the Gold Core stages and reached the Nascent Soul stage?

"No! Impossible! This is impossible!" Even Lei Yu couldn't believe it could be like this. He again tried transferring a portion of power from the head of the infant to himself.

Lei Yu sucked in a cool breath as his mind felt extremely clear. He

released his spiritual perception and realized that he could sense at least a dozen kilometers more than his previous self.

-----

(T/N: I've read ahead about 50 chapters but the author hasn't explained where this sudden power-up came from. I think and hope it will be revealed towards the end of the novel.)

# Chapter 279: An Extra Younger Sister

"My spiritual perception has increased by at least ten times! What on earth is going on?!"

Lei Yu's heart was trembling while an energy was moving around in his heart meridian. Lei Yu quickly looked and realized it was the green energy that had always hidden itself there.

All Lei Yu could see was that the green energy seemed to have found its target, and started flowing towards the infant inside the

dantian. That green energy that had always been afraid of Lei Yu's internal energy after reappearing, was now taking the initiative to get close to the infant. This scene was rather strange for Lei Yu to witness, but what happened next made Lei Yu completely dumbfounded!

The moment the green energy got close to the infant, it looked like it was being shocked as it started shuddering. Right after that, it started rushing like crazy towards the infant's right arm before drilling itself inside it. After that, Lei Yu felt his own right arm start to feel a hot sensation as if it was being set on fire. The feeling was unbearable but Lei Yu wasn't willing to extract his spiritual senses because he wanted to continue watching internally to

see what was going on. After all, his power was inside that infant baby's body so Lei Yu wasn't going to give up that easily on seeing the changes to himself.

Once again sucking in a cool breath of air, that green energy had actually formed a lightning shape and branded itself onto the infant's right arm. At this time, the burning sensation on Lei Yu's own lightning brand on his arm gradually disappeared and was replaced by a warm and comfortable feeling.

The change inside Lei Yu's body was like the world turning upside down. His purple Gold Core had exploded and then disappeared without a trace. It was then replaced by an infant's body.

Without a question, Lei Yu was now suspecting it could be a Nascent Soul. Did he really break through the Gold Core stage and reach the Nascent Soul stage?

The voice that shook the heavens and the earth came again so Lei Yu listened very carefully. "Escaping, Through, The Void, In Space. The four powers have returned. Lei Yu, you have reached the realm of the Nascent Soul. Go to the barren land in the south and try your moves!"

"Who? Who are you?!" Hearing that voice actually call his name out, Lei Yu immediately opened his eyes. The foggy clouds had dispersed and everything was visible once again, but Lei Yu still couldn't find the person that spoke.

No matter how much Lei Yu tried to ask, that voice didn't respond. What made Lei Yu even more surprised was that his current location didn't have any signs of the previous chasm in the ground. The ground was completely unblemished as if the previous scene never happened at all. Lei Yu started scratching his head, "Was I dreaming?"

After clenching his fist, his whole body felt like it didn't have any power. Lei Yu was shocked, "What's going on now?"

He quickly focused his spirit to look internally, "I wasn't dreaming, that infant body is still there!" Lei Yu then transferred energy from the infant's right foot to himself, and felt that his right foot had worn a



shoe that was filled with power. Lei Yu made a thought and his body started levitating!

Lei Yu clearly knew that he wasn't stepping atop of the Sky Devouring Sword yet he was still capable for floating up into the air? That infant body must certainly be the cause!

Lei Yu was overjoyed since he no longer needed any weapons and could still fly into the air like those demonic beasts. Lei Yu was even more excited now than compared to back then when he first stepped onto the Sky Devouring Sword to fly.

Lei Yu's mind couldn't help but recall those four phrases spoken by the voice: "For you to become the

collector of honey, the flower's stamen was planted by lightning, four magical energies as a cutting edge; they will disperse once it breaks free."

Lei Yu seemed to understand the meaning of only the first three phrases... Those four energies formed a four colored flower, and the lightning that came from the sky formed the stamen. This described the second phrase of "the flower's stamen was planted by lightning." And Lei Yu was the collector of honey which was the metaphor for him absorbing the flowers power right? As for "four magical energies as a cutting edge," it should be describing the four different powerful energies, but Lei Yu couldn't quite understand what

"they will disperse once it breaks free" meant. Putting those thoughts aside, since Lei Yu had now indeed reached the Nascent Soul stage, the fact of it made him fill with excitement and joy. These mixtures of happy emotions appeared to have lessened the worry he had for Ai Er and the rest of his companions.

While floating in the air, Lei Yu fell into a deep thought. "Who on earth is helping me out? It only took me two months to reach the late Gold Core stage from the early stages. And now it has only been ten or more so days yet I broke through again. Is this rapid increase in power a good thing or bad thing for me?"

"Oh right!" Lei Yu suddenly

remembered, "Didn't that voice tell me to go to the southern area to try out my moves?"

Lei Yu looked all around, "South side... south side... where's the south side?"

Lifting his head up, Lei Yu noticed the sun should be setting in the west soon so wanting to know where south was shouldn't be difficult by then. Lei Yu was rather looking forward to see what was waiting for him to the south.

No longer needing the Sky Devouring Sword, Lei Yu leapt into the air and started flying around. He noticed that his current flying speed was a few levels faster than previously on the sword.

Lei Yu inadvertently looked at this right arm and realized his lightning brand had changed colors!

From the previous purple color, the lightning brand had now become green. This strange appearance made Lei Yu recall that the green energy had rushed into the infant's body and formed a brand on the infant's right arm.

Lei Yu didn't know what effects or consequences this change will bring, but at least he didn't feel any discomfort because of it. Moreover, this green energy had already become an indispensable energy to him since it had helped him avert multiple crises, so whatever changes that may happen will not make Lei Yu loathe it.

This so called southern area seemed to be extremely far away because it had been a while yet Lei Yu hadn't noticed anything different. He may have to get past this yellow dirt ground in order to find the place. Lei Yu couldn't help but wonder what was waiting for him.

Even though Lei Yu was looking forward to it, it's rather normal for someone to either feel excited or fear towards the unknown dangers ahead. But for Lei Yu, the excitement he felt had eclipsed the fear part.

In another area.

Along with Tai Lao and Hei Feng, Romon was filled with anticipation as he flew towards where Minotaur

Linos was. How could Romon not be excited when he can finally see his father who he had been thinking of and missed for over a thousand years? But of course, his first order of business was to quickly notify his father and Queen Telephassa that Lei Yu had disappeared.

"Young master, we will arrive in Lord Demon King's territory after passing through these mountains; there are countless demonic cultivators there." Tai Lao turned as he spoke to Romon.

Romon nodded as he sat atop of the huge copper pillar. "I haven't seen my father in over a thousand years, how's he doing lately?"

"Lord Demon King is doing great; he even gave you a younger sister."  
Said the pig-head Tai Lao.

"A younger sister?" Romon blinked a few times and asked in shock,  
"How could I suddenly have an extra sister?"

"Uh..."

Tai Lao and Hei Feng didn't know how to reply to such a question. Speaking about Romon's younger sister, she was a little demon that all demonic cultivators feared. Although her strength wasn't that great, she was extremely naughty and unreasonable. Those that recognize her would keep her at an arm's length and not dare to provoke her. Romon will know once



he sees her, so Tai Lao and Hei Feng didn't dare to mention anything more.

# Chapter 280:

## Trying Out Some Moves

Lei Yu no longer needed the assistance of the Sky Devouring Sword and was flying through the air through the support of his internal energy circulating through his legs. His current destination was the so called southern area.

It was unknown why but the closer Lei Yu got to the southern area, the more he felt there was random energy flowing by him. The closer he got to his destination, the stronger these energies became.

Lei Yu gradually slowed his flight speed and then released his spiritual perception out. Based on his superior perception ability, he was able to sense everything in the area. The inexplicable energies flying around made Lei Yu surprised. The power behind each energy seemed to be similar, but each of them was slightly different from one and another. One thing Lei Yu was certain of was this place had a lot of cultivators gathered in one place. Whether they were martial cultivators, devil cultivators, or demonic cultivators, that was something Lei Yu was uncertain of.

Crossing the yellow dirt grounds, Lei Yu found himself in an area filled with water. Accurately speaking, it wasn't just an area

filled with water but a multitude of rivers connecting with each other that was surrounded by grassy lands. To Lei Yu, this unique area was basically composed of two colors; the green grass and the white colored rivers.

Lei Yu slowly descended and looked around. He once again sent out his spiritual perception and found that there weren't any living beings around where he was. He then slowly exhaled.

"What am I supposed to do in this southern area? Am I supposed to fight with the cultivators here?" Lei Yu was confused about the whole thing since in his mind; he had never provoked other people for no reason.

Even though Lei Yu didn't provoke others to cause trouble, that didn't mean trouble wouldn't find him. Lei Yu was currently in an area close to where demonic cultivators were. There were strong ones and weak ones. If Lei Yu was to continue forward further, he would meet existences that surpassed his current power level. What he could appropriately handle for now was exactly this place where the rivers interconnected. Of course Lei Yu didn't know any of this information so it was fortunate that he didn't continue further flying south, or else danger would befall him out of the blue.

"Who dares to invade the Green Eyed Toad King's territory?"

A roar came out from the depths of the river while Lei Yu was enjoying the scenery around him. Ever since Lei Yu had reached the Nascent Soul stage, his spiritual perception had extended out quite far so he already knew there was something in the waters. Not only could Lei Yu's perception spread out horizontally, he could sense everything above and below him. Lei Yu was similar to a walking radar while his perception was the scanner.

Lei Yu sensed that the thing underwater was an early Nascent Soul cultivator who was on the same level as him. He didn't react to the voice and just quietly stood in place waiting for that thing to make an appearance.

"Splash!"

A huge monster jumped out of the waters, his body a full four meters wide. The most eye catching thing about it was the monster's eyes that had a green glow to it. If one met this monster during nighttime, they would definitely jump in fright.

After this huge creature jumped out of the water, it suddenly sprayed a mist of water like substance at Lei Yu. The latter calmly released his internal energy that covered his whole body forming a membrane a few centimeters away from him, and the water mist couldn't even get close to him.

One could see smoke coming from the mist as it touched the

surrounding surface. Lei Yu frowned, "It's poisonous?"

"Trespasser! It looks like you have some abilities!" The huge monster landed and only then did Lei Yu finally have a clear look at its face. It looked just like a toad enlarged a few hundred times except that its eyes were green. The body of the big toad had small and large bumps all over it that looked like warts. And from time to time, a dark green mucus substance would drip from it. Lei Yu couldn't help but squeeze his nose from the stench of the smell.

"What an evil creature. You just came up and decided to use such an insidious method?!" Replied Lei Yu in a harsh tone.



"You dare to behave presumptuously in the territory of the Green Eyed Toad King?" The big toad was enraged after Lei Yu lectured him about being insidious. Its front legs went bent and his white belly laid on the ground. Its two cheeks continuously inflated and deflated as its green eyes started sinisterly at Lei Yu. If another person was in Lei Yu's place, they might have been scared out of their wits. But Lei Yu didn't care about it and shook his body, dispersing the internal energy he was previously surrounded with. That energy had already been corrupted by the poison gas so there was no need to bring it back into his body.

"You wanna fight? That's good, just

in time when I want to test my strength!" Lei Yu's lips curved into his signature smile that hadn't appeared on his face in a long time. He hadn't forgotten that he still had important matters to attend to, but it's just that he attained his new power and was happy about it. Now that he happened to encounter an opponent, he wasn't going to let this opportunity pass by where he can test his current fighting potential.

The big toad croaked loudly, and suddenly rushed at Lei Yu. Its hind legs could not be looked down on; although its body was large, its hind legs using the ground as leverage gave the big toad the speed that was no less than Lei Yu when he was still at the Gold Core stage.

Lei Yu was different from before since his speed had been significantly improved. The big toad's speed was nothing in Lei Yu's eyes.

However, Lei Yu wasn't going to rely on his speed to beat the toad. He actually stood his ground waiting for the tyrannical pounce to arrive at him. A green light started flashing in the big toad's eyes and the moment its body was about to crush Lei Yu, it suddenly opened its mouth and shot out a dark green mist.

"Water wall!"

Lei Yu roared out and instantly, all the water started converging towards him. It was as if a huge

wave and risen up out of all the rivers and flowed towards one area, creating a scene that was probably never seen before in this southern area.

The waves of water streamed around Lei Yu and seemed to instantaneously surround him. We can't say that nothing could get through, but this wall made of water was pretty airtight. At least the previous dark green mist sprayed out by the big toad couldn't penetrate through it one bit.

Seeing that his poison mist didn't have any effect, the big toad in the air didn't stop and continued hurtling towards Lei Yu.

Lei Yu grinned. While still being

surrounded by water, he waved his left hand and the water wall exploded.

"Bang~!"

Droplets of water splashed everywhere. If one was to carefully look at each droplet of water, one would be able to find signs of little purple starry dots glittering inside.

With the dense spread of water droplets, no matter how good the big toad was, he wouldn't be able to dodge this.

The instant that the water droplets touched its body, the big toad trembled. Right after that, as if he hadn't completely finished peeing and need to shake it a bit, his body

started shaking non-stop.

"Splat!" After slamming to the ground, its body had caused the grassy ground to become a pit of mud.

Upon climbing out of the pit, the big toad now looked at Lei Yu with hesitation in its eyes. It didn't even dare to make any further actions as it was afraid another simple move by Lei Yu would make it unable to stand up.

From the beginning of the fight, the big toad only saw Lei Yu raise his left hand. It was just that simple motion and no other actions, yet that slight raising of the hand had made it suffer quite a bit already.

"What level are you at?" The big toad no longer attacked and asked.

Lei Yu raised his eyebrows and shrugged, "I'm not sure, but I do know you're not my opponent!"

"You... you just wait! I'm... I'm going to get my elder brother!" The big toad made a u-turn and made a run for it.

Lei Yu blinked a few times, "Those in the Immortal World also like to call for backup?"

# Chapter 281: The Wild Southern Lands

After briefly stretching his arms and legs, Lei Yu felt that his newly gained abilities were truly quite powerful.

It's not that Lei Yu was able to freely use the surrounding water as part of his abilities; it's just that the aura in his body was completely different from the past. By utilizing his own internal energy, he could use it to control any objects in his surrounding area. This was commonly referred to as telekinesis, but the powerful internal energy Lei



Yu now possessed has made it a level more powerful than just calling it telekinesis.

During the Gold Core stage, Lei Yu had to rely on injecting internal energy into his Sky Devouring Sword in order to fly. And now, he only had to manipulate his internal energy to support his own body. Lei Yu no longer needed to rely on any outside object to support his body for flight now.

His previous water wall move was the example. Lei Yu released his powerful internal energy to wrap around the water in the river to control its movement. With his internal energy as the main defensive force, and the water being the support, only then did it create

the previous scene on blocking the big toad's attack.

Lei Yu wasn't stupid enough to stay around while the big toad went to look for help. He rose into the air and released his spirit to start probing around this unique area. Lei Yu believes his real opponent hadn't appeared yet, so what did it really mean when that voice gave him the suggestion of coming here? What was that voice's real intention of having him come to this wild looking southern region?

In another area.

In an area with a wide body of water was a tiny island, and on that tiny island was a youth with a bare upper body standing there. He was

using his body to struggle against the multiple waves crashing against him.

These waves weren't created by nature but by a person. So who was this person that created the waves?

Lazily sitting on top of a huge rock was an elderly person with white hair. One of his hands was stroking his long beard while his other hand was constantly waving in front of him. It appears as if he was the one controlling the multiple waves to crash upon this bare bodied youth.

Upon closer observation, this elderly person had a shell on his back. This type of shell was only something a turtle would have. There was no doubt that this elderly

person was the same person that left the deep waters and was entrusted by Lei Yu - the Divine Beast Xuan Wu!

As for the youth, he was none other than Nuo Hu that the old turtle took out of the storage ring, Lei Yu's sworn elder brother!

One could see Nuo Hu clench his teeth as he resisted these huge waves. If these were normal waves, Nuo Hu wouldn't care about them one bit. But these waves were waves controlled by the old turtle's internal energy that contained a vigorous force. Each time one of these waves crashed against him, Nuo Hu had to use all his strength to resist them.

After many hours, the old turtle nodded in satisfaction.

"Not bad, we will call it for today. But your defense is still too weak. As my disciple, you have to cultivate your body to the strongest defensive level possible!"

Nuo Hu nodded and wiped away the water on his face. "Don't worry master; I will definitely do my best!"

The purpose of training so hard day after day was to become strong. Only then can he step onto the distant Void Sect and take revenge for his sworn brother Lei Yu and his sister Ai Er. Even if he were to be smashed into pieces, Nuo Hu would not back away from this goal!

The body of the current Nuo Hu already showed signs of some change; it looked like he wasn't very far from the peak of the Sixth Order Warrior. From the look of things, Nuo Hu's luck wasn't too bad. In certain aspects, his luck was even better than Lei Yu's. For his current power level to enter the Immortal World and stay alive, and even gain such a famous master was considered an enormous fortune. Under the instructions of the old turtle, Nuo Hu had already grasped the main essences of the Shangguan family's cultivation method. And he had also received the true teachings of the old turtle's defensive cultivation methods. Given some time, Nuo Hu may become an unimaginable expert!

-----

There are three regions where the demonic cultivators have gathered in this area. This place where the rivers crisscross is considered the outer periphery of the area, had has a gathering of many amphibian like demonic cultivators. As one continues down further south past the crisscrossing rivers, one would arrive in an area where mostly water based demonic cultivators gather. And finally at the most southern area, this is where the most powerful land based demonic cultivators have gathered.

In the depths of the most southern region lies a palace that has been constructed for hundreds of years. This palace is considered the most

sacred place for all of the demonic cultivators because living inside is the most powerful Demonic King. And alongside of him is the embodiment of beauty, his Queen! But there's one thing that all demonic cultivators knew, which is those two rulers are not husband and wife. Strangely enough, the status of the Queen whose strength is slightly weaker than the Demonic King, happens to be on a higher level!

-----

Lei Yu slapped his clothing to shake off the water mist and coldly looked at the huge toad in front of him. "You're that big toad's elder brother, big big toad?"



"You dare to insult me?! You're courting death!" The massive bodied toad rushed towards Lei Yu.

Lei Yu dodged sideways since he didn't want to fight head on with such a disgusting creature. The massive toad realized his attack didn't succeed and bent his front legs with its belly touching the ground. Both sides of its gills continue to fluctuate as it seemed rather pissed off.

Lei Yu looked at the two big toads and thought they both like rather alike. They both had green eyes except one was slightly bigger and the other slightly smaller.

"Do you feel that you can beat me?" Lei Yu grinned. "How about this: As

long as you can touch me, I will immediately admit defeat and you two can do whatever you want with me. How about it?"

"You said it, don't regret your words!" The big toad and the slightly smaller toad said in unison.

Lei Yu nodded, "Of course I won't regret my words!"

The two big toads glanced at each other and smiled sinisterly. They nodded with each other before both rushed straight for Lei Yu. As if they were carved from the same mould, one could say that the action of them pouncing out and the posture of them landing on the ground were exactly the same.

A while later, the two toads were gasping for air because even after dozens of attacks, Lei Yu was able to easily avoid them. Not even a drop of water they splashed up was able to touch Lei Yu's body.

With the speed displayed in front of their eyes, they realized their own storm of onslaught was considered nothing in the eyes of Lei Yu.

"Is that all you've got?" Lei Yu was standing on top of the water. Below his feet was a faint purple internal energy acting as a barrier that allowed him to stand on the surface and not get wet at the same time.

The big toad looked at the bigger toad, "Elder brother, is this guy playing with us? I'm guessing he's

already surpassed the Nascent Soul stage so why did he appear in the outer periphery of our territory?"

The slightly bigger toad then looked at Lei Yu and asked: "Friend, with your abilities, you should be in the center area of the water region. So why are you in this place?"

Lei Yu smiled, "I was only passing by; it was your short-sighted little brother that suddenly came out and attacked me. Could it be that you're putting the blame on me now?"

The bigger toad immediately glanced at his little brother, "You bastard, didn't you say he came by to deliberately pick a fight with you? You were making stuff up!"

"Elder brother! I..."

"That's enough!" Lei Yu waved his hand to stop the two from continuing arguing. "Tell me, what sort of place is this?"

"You don't even know what this place is?" The two toads widened their green eyes. "This is the territory of the Demon King! The Wild Southern Lands!"

"Wild lands? Aren't there water and grass here? Why is it a wild land?" Lei Yu asked with doubt.

The slightly smaller toad rushed to answer first. "This is just the outer periphery, further in is the water region. And then pass the water region is the real wild lands which

is the desert region. That place is where our Demon King and the Qu..."

"Shut up!" Without letting the smaller toad finish, the bigger toad interrupted his sentence. "That place is not a topic we can casually talk about. Friend, if you want to find out more, you can personally continue forth while we won't be accompanying you!" After saying that, his back legs stepped on the smaller toad to push him down into the water before he too dived in.

"Uh? Wait...!"

# Chapter 282: A Long Drawn Out Shout

Lei Yu hadn't finished asking yet and those two had already disappeared into the water. He probably wouldn't be able to get them come back out of the water anymore, right?

Lei Yu could only helplessly leave this area. Even though he doesn't know all the details, he could somewhat piece together what he was told about this southern wild lands. There were a total of three regions and the outer peripheral of the area was this place where rivers

crisscrossed each other. Further south is a region that is all water, and which according to the two toads, it's the area that he should be in with his current strength.

Lei Yu clearly knew that he had just stepped into the Nascent Soul stage, while the two toads, one was an early Nascent Soul and the other a late Nascent Soul. Even though they were both not his opponent, but in a sense, it was because of Lei Yu's abilities that restrained them. Lei Yu's speed was extremely fast and his newly gained ability just coincidentally was able to be utilized in a way that it could block out the poison mist which those toads excelled at. It was due to those several factors that made those two toads mistake Lei Yu's



strength.

What those toads didn't know was that Lei Yu was clear on his own worth. Even though there weren't any opponents in this outer peripheral area, Lei Yu didn't dare to carelessly enter the water region. The dangers in that area was something Lei Yu didn't dare to try just yet.

For Lei Yu to reach the Nascent Soul stage, one could say he was completely reborn. Each meridian, bone, and even skin had undergone earth shattering changes. Lei Yu firmly believes that with his current speed, he could probably keep up with those at the Soul Fusion stage. Even for a super expert like Big White who was at the early Soul

Splitting stage, Lei Yu believes he can almost keep up with him.

-----

Around the same time, in the desert region where anyone below the Soul Splitting stage wouldn't dare to get close to, the real Southern Wild Lands had a huge city in the midst of it. Three people were flying in line heading for a castle sitting in the center of the city. One of the three was on top of a huge copper pillar that was thirty feet long. A hint of excitement on his handsome face was mixed with some sadness in his eyes. This person was none other than Minotaur Linos's son, Lycomedes Romon.

Passing through the water region, a

group of demonic cultivators looked up in envy. In the Southern Wild Lands, no demonic cultivator would dare to be presumptuous. The Demon King had set down rules that those below the Soul Splitting stage weren't allowed to fly here. Otherwise, the consequence for the rule breaker would be disastrous!

In other words, the demonic cultivators below the Soul Splitting stage wanting to cross the desert region on foot was a near impossible task. In-between the waters and the desert lies an insurmountable gap, metaphorically speaking. Unless one gets the okay by the Demonic King, or the Left and Right Generals Tai Lao and Hei Feng, no one else was qualified to cross it!

With such provisions, as long as an outsider flies across the water region towards the desert region, he or she will definitely suffer group attacks from local demonic cultivators. But there was a special rule: Even if the locals attack the outsider, they must capture them alive and be handed over to the Demonic King so that he can personally punish them.

This special rule sounded tough, but in fact it was a stipulation formed from the discussion between the Queen and the Demon King. Their sole purpose for that rule was a precaution when Romon and Lei Yu comes looking for them. They cannot be killed and must be captured alive - this was to avoid Lei Yu and Romon losing their lives.

Secondly, those below the Soul Splitting stage were forbidden to fly so it created an environment where very few people flew through the air in the Wild Lands. If there were suddenly two outsiders with low strength suddenly flying through, this would be extremely eye-catching to everyone in the area.

"Young master, it's just up front!" Tai Lao turned his pig-head towards Romon with a smile.

Romon nodded and looked at the scenery below him. That single glance gave Romon a huge shock!

"This place is really lively!" Romon said in shock.

Hearing Romon's words, Hei Feng

replied: "This was deliberately made by Lord Demon King and Her Majesty the Queen. A city jointly established by tens of thousands of demonic cultivators, this city is almost exactly the same as the ancient Greece which young master grew up in."

Romon nodded, "It looks like father and Her Majesty the Queen have put a lot of effort into creating this subtle hint! Even if one didn't know they lived here, they would still realize the clue upon seeing this city."

The city wasn't particularly large, and the weakest demonic cultivator inside it was at the Gold Core stage. Of course, they were the builders that had started living there ever

since they had completed the structures. As for the latter cultivators, they had to go through special procedures in order to be eligible to enter the city. There was another way, which was to offer up crystal stones. But for this territory with crowds of demonic cultivators, how would they earn crystal stones when they couldn't fly freely?

Therefore, those relying on entering the city with crystal stones became less and less. There were still some that entered that way since they would rely on capturing the invading outsiders and taking their belongings.

The nearer they came towards the castle, the more excited Romon became.

It was around this time that a sudden drawn out shout shook the heavens. This was the sound a bull would make!

The inhabitants of the city were startled by the cry. This type of cry was only heard by them once before when an extremely powerful invader had arrived. After the cry sounded out, a colorful Taurus figure was seen flying into the sky and killed the powerful invader. Today was the second time they had heard this cry.

"Could there be another invader?" During this time, many people from small and large streets started gathering and discussing this issue. They looked up into the air and watched three people flying by.



"That's not right, isn't it our two Generals?"

"Right! Look you guys, there's an outsider with them!"

Everyone was staring at the youth on top of a huge copper pillar. Since the weakest inhabitants of the city were at the Gold Core stage, their eyesight allowed them to clearly see this youth's face. They realized that the most unique thing about this youth was a single horn on his forehead!"

"Who is he? Why would he cause the Demon King to be so angry?"  
Everyone was discussing the identity of this person but they guessed wrong. It wasn't the cry of anger but of happiness! After

waiting for over a thousand years, a joyous cry had finally been sounded out!

Without waiting for Romon and the other two to get close yet, a beam of golden light and a beam of red light shot into the air. Everyone had their mouths agape because such a scene had never been seen before. The Demon King and the Queen had both appeared!

Upon seeing the beam of light, Romon's eyes were filled with tears of joy before yelling out: "Father!"

"My son! My son has returned!" The voice was filled with so much emotion that one could hear it tremble.

The two figures met in midair and Romon kneeled down onto his copper pillar. "Father, Romon had finally arrived! Romon is able to finally see you!"

"Good! It's good that you're back!" Minotaur Linos's huge bull head was shaking as he leapt onto Romon's pillar and supported Romon to stand up. One could see that the Demon King revered by tens of thousands was shedding his precious tears.

After wiping away his tears, Romon turned towards a beautiful girl that was like a goddess who had descended and respectfully bowed. "Your Majesty."

Everyone in the city was shocked.

"This is the only ascetic cultivator out of all demonic cultivators? Our very own Demon King's son, the young master Romon?"

# Chapter 283:

## Countless Demons Flying Into The Air

That's right; this woman who was the embodiment of beauty was Telephassa. One could see her eyes look all everywhere before she hesitantly opened her gentle mouth. Off to the side, Minotaur Linos seemed to know what was going on and was the first to ask: "How come benefactor didn't accompany you here?" Minotaur Linos looked at Romon and then glanced at Tai Lao and Hei Feng in the rear.

"Lord Lightning..." Tai Lao and Hei

Feng glanced at each other. Tai Lao then said: "Lord Lightning has... has gone missing."

"Missing? How could that have happened? Tell me the details!" At this time, Minotaur Linos didn't even bother to have his son go to the castle first and asked this in front of everyone while still floating in the air.

Telephassa's beautiful eyes started shimmering as if the news of Lei Yu disappearing had struck an emotional blow.

"Father, it was all Romon's fault. I couldn't protect little... benefactor!" Romon lowered his head in apology. "While in the Mortal World, we made an agreement that

when benefactor reached the Gold Core stage, he would settle all his affairs and we would head out together to the Immortal World to meet up with father. But unfortunately, something major happened halfway!"

"What happened?" Asked Minotaur Linos.

Romon sighed before saying: "Due to fortunate circumstances, benefactor absorbed the essence of a Dragon Vein causing tremendous changes to the heavens. The seven stars aligned, which caused the large Sects of the Immortal World to send people forth to search for him. They were rejected by benefactor when his girl... girlfriend..." Speaking to this point,

Romon unconsciously looked at Telephassa and noticed her eyes were filled with worry instead of jealousy. It was only then he continued: "Benefactor's girlfriend and his sworn big brother were captured by two disciples sent by the Void Sect. Because benefactor was in such a rush to rescue them, we lost contact with each other." Pausing for a bit, Romon then continued: "As I passed through the Chaotic Star Sea and arrived at the Immortal World, I heard the news that the Void Sect was doing a large-scale recruitment of disciples. I coincidentally met up with benefactor during then, but afterwards..."

Romon narrated all the details of what had happened to his father



and Telephassa. There were two parts of the story that made everyone shocked: The first was that Lei Yu was the extraordinary person that the whole Immortal World was in an uproar over. The second was that the Void Sect had captured Lei Yu, and for some unknown reason let him go after that.

Minotaur Linos nodded and said: "It looks like benefactor isn't in any imminent danger and has only gone missing. There's no need to worry for now, I'll immediately send people out everywhere to see if we can find benefactor's whereabouts. Once we find him, then we'll start making plans for the future!"

Knowing that Lei Yu was

temporarily not in any danger, Telephassa let out a sigh of relief. She then said: "Romon, you should go back and rest first while the task for searching for Lei Yu will be given to your father."

"Your highness!" Romon then respectfully said: "It was all my fault that I couldn't protect benefactor, so I really want to participate in searching for him!"

Minotaur Linos smiled and said: "Good, Left and Right, attend to my orders!"

"Yes!" The pig-head Tai Lao and the person clothed in black Hei Feng clasped their fists respectfully waiting for the Demon King's command.

"You two will command the two outer regions of the Wild Land's Four Commanders to search throughout the Immortal World! The location of benefactor must be found!"

"Understood!" Tai Lao and Hei Feng raised their cupped fists before disappearing from the spot. Those two had already flown off to where they had come from.

Right after that, Minotaur Lino who was floating in the air, used a voice that everyone in the city could hear. "This is my son Romon, who is the person that you have always heard about that happens to be the only ascetic cultivator out of all demonic cultivators!"

A cry that shook the heavens came from the entire city: "We pay respects to the young master!"

Romon waved with a smile, but his smile was a bit stiff since this wasn't the time for celebrations.

"Romon..."

"Father." Romon bowed waiting for his father's words.

"You will lead all those at the Nascent Soul stage and above to search outside the Wild Lands. As for the rest of the Immortal World, you can leave that to Tai Lao and the other five."

"Understood, father." Nodded Romon.

Minotaur Linos once again raised his voice: "All citizens at and above the Nascent Soul stage, rise up!"

"Whoosh~!"

"Whoosh~!"

"Whoosh~!"

The sky was blotted out - the number of demonic cultivators flying into the air was no less than ten thousand in number. Above the huge city were many different kinds of demonic cultivators floating in midair. For such a spectacular sight, it made Romon recall the scene a few days ago outside the Void Sect.

Romon had never imagined that his own father and Her Majesty the Queen would possess such

strength!

"If you brought such a large crowd of demonic cultivators out into the Immortal World, it will inevitably lead to an uproar. That's why I had Tai Lao and the other investigate it themselves. I really don't want to create any unnecessary issues with the rest of the Immortal World, you understand right?" Minotaur Linos shook his huge head as he mumbled.

"Yes, father!"

After exhaling a deep breath, Romon waved his arm and cried out: "Follow me!" A golden light flashed as the huge pillar disappeared off into the north. Behind him were tens of thousands

of demonic cultivators following. This scene left those in the city that were below the Nascent Soul stage stare with their mouths agape. Although they were shocked because they had never seen such a spectacular scene before, they didn't feel that it was anything strange because they understood the person they were searching for was really important. This person was much more important on many levels that it caused the Demon King to break his own rule of no flying, which had been established for many hundreds of years ago!

The citizens faintly heard a name being spread about, which was the totem that all demonic cultivators in this region respected and worshipped - Lightning!

In another area, Lei Yu was sitting down cross-legged within that Green Eyed Toad King's territory. The toad wanted nothing to do with Lei Yu so it wouldn't bother to disturb him. Even though this was the case, Lei Yu still sent out a portion of his spirit in order to prevent any incoming dangers while under deep meditation.

What Lei Yu was doing was correct, but today he committed a serious mistake. A mistake that he couldn't escape from.

Up in the sky, a mass of figures over ten thousand in number were flying above, causing Lei Yu to suddenly open his eyes. For such a large group, even if they were mostly at the Nascent Soul stage, such a



number of troops will still cause an uproar in the Immortal World.

Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless since he didn't know what this crowd of demonic cultivators was up to. He quietly submerged his body into the river and only revealed his head to look up. Amongst this dense number of cultivators was someone Lei Yu would be familiar with. But with his aura completely hidden, Lei Yu's eyesight did not land on this person atop of a copper pillar.

At this time, a strange looking head popped out beside Lei Yu. Its large mouth opened up and said: "What a spectacular scene!"

Lei Yu squinted at the toad, "Lower

your voice! Aren't you afraid they'll notice you?"

"What do I have to be afraid of? I've been fulfilling my tasks as the Green Eyed Toad King and haven't made any mistakes! It must be because of you, outsider! This Southern Wild Lands is an area that prohibits flying. If I'm not mistaken, didn't you arrive here by flying?"

"Flying is prohibited? Who laid down such a rule?" Asked Lei Yu as he watched the countless numbers of demonic cultivators flying by.

"Of course it's by our Lord Demon King and..." Pausing for a bit, the toad then continued: "My elder brother said that this topic isn't something we're qualified to

discuss. But I wonder what this mass of experts is up to? Why would the established rule of prohibiting flight be broken today? Could something serious have happened?" The big toad mumbled to himself.

Lei Yu couldn't help but be surprised. What kind of Demon King would have such a powerful force at its disposal?

# Chapter 284:

## Underwater Yaksha

### Underwater Yaksha

After all the demonic cultivators had flown by, Lei Yu jumped out of the water back onto the grass. Only then did he dare to release his internal energy.

It was just at this time that Lei Yu could feel a more obvious energy fluctuation coming from a distance. His first intuition was that these were more powerful existences because he couldn't tell what level these experts were at!

Lei Yu helplessly once again

condensed his internal energy into his dantian where the infant body was. This time Lei Yu didn't bother jumping into the water and raised his head to look up. His eyebrows went up, "Isn't that the pig-head that I saw at the Void Sect that day? Why would he be here?"

"Shut your mouth!"

The big toad to the side continued yelling at Lei Yu: "You dare to insult General Tai Lao? It looks like you don't want to live anymore!"

Lei Yu glanced at the toad, "General Tai Lao?"

"Correct! He is one of the Left and Right Generals under the command of the Demon King. There's General

Tai Lao and General Hei Feng!"

Lei Yu couldn't help suck in a cool breath, "This Demon King's forces are truly powerful!"

He had over tens of thousands of underlings at and above the Nascent Soul stage. And for the pig-head and several others he was with, Lei Yu couldn't tell what level they were at which meant they were beyond the Fusion Soul stage.

When Lei Yu reached the Nascent Soul stage, he was able to detect existences at the Fusion Soul stage. But Lei Yu was only able to feel an energy fluctuation when these six demon cultivators flew by so he was unable to tell their strength.

Needless to say, they were existences that had exceeded the

Fusion Soul stage!

With such a powerful and large amount of troops, if this Demon King stomped its foot, wouldn't the whole Immortal World shudder from his strength?

Little did Lei Yu know that this large-scale action which broke the rule of allowing those below the Soul Splitting stage to fly, was all because to look for him!

Although he was acquainted with the pig-head, Lei Yu wasn't going to scratch his own face and rush up pretending they were on friendly terms. Lei Yu didn't have the personality to do something like that. Moreover, the pig-head was with the person clothed in black

and four other demonic cultivators Lei Yu had never seen before. He wasn't going to take such a risk. What if he delayed their important business and got killed because of it. Wouldn't he die of injustice?

"It looks like this place isn't very safe." Lei Yu scratched his head, "Maybe I should swing by the water region the big toad mentioned before and take a look around?"

Lei Yu believes that as long as he keeps his spiritual perception on, he can easily find the presence of those that were stronger than himself. And before he gets close to those experts, it shouldn't be difficult for him to hide his aura or leave the vicinity. At least this was better than having a large group of



demonic cultivators constantly flying over his head.

After making up his mind, Lei Yu turned around and made a simple wave goodbye to the toad that he had once fought, then continued to the south himself. But this time, he didn't fly but was running. Lei Yu still remembered what the toad said: Those below the Soul Splitting stage weren't allowed to fly. In order to not bring any trouble on his own head during this chaotic situation, Lei Yu felt it was better to play by the rules right now.

Lei Yu had been running for several hours across this region where the rivers crisscrossed each other. He knew his speed on the ground could not be compared to when he was

flying. But the current Lei Yu was relying on the muscles of his legs and a bit of internal energy to push his back, which saved a lot of effort and increased his speed quite a bit.

This water region was indeed broad where one couldn't see the other end of the shore. If modern people on Earth saw this, they would assume this was the sea. But Lei Yu knew that in the Immortal World community, this was merely considered as a large river and nothing more.

Without hesitating, Lei Yu leapt up and dove into the large river.

At the same time, Lei Yu released his spiritual perception and paid attention to any incoming dangers.

He was considered an outsider in this place, and will inevitably draw everyone's attention and they would put up their guards against him. That's why he had to be especially careful right now.

At the bottom of the water, Lei Yu carefully swam forth. Although he was surrounded by water, Lei Yu was sure about one thing: As long as it wasn't a super expert at the Soul Fusion stage or higher, he could flee and disappear without a trace.

The underwater scene had a forest of corals that were many different colors and breathtaking to behold. Lei Yu couldn't help stopping to admire the scene before him.

He was completely immersed by the beauty of the corals and relaxed his spiritual perception momentarily. When Lei Yu finally recovered his senses and released his spiritual perception again, he suddenly realized that not too far away was the presence of someone. Even though that person only had the strength of an early Nascent Soul, Lei Yu was still nervous because what if there was another one that was close by?

Fortunately, Lei Yu didn't sense any dangerous energy fluctuations and upon glancing around, his eyes almost popped out of his head!

"Bi... bikini?" After blinking a few times, Lei Yu couldn't believe what he was looking at.

It was a girl with red hair, and looking at the facial features, she was probably in her twenties. A pair of innocent looking eyes stared at Lei Yu while the black pupils in her eyes were constantly trembling.

Lei Yu could see that the only difference this girl had from an ordinary human was the two horns on her head. It was brown and they were similar to ones that one would find on a cow. But somehow, the horns on her head had actually increased her cuteness factor by several times. It was obvious to Lei Yu that she was a demonic cultivator.

She had snow white skin and a towering chest that made Lei Yu sigh in wonder. For such a young

girl to have such a pair of enchanting twin peaks, she was no less than the Kou country's Nami. Only her twin peaks and lower body was covered by clothing, that's why Lei Yu exclaimed out loud bikini. Just by looking at her figure, she would be considered the highest of the top grade women. But Lei Yu's attention was then drawn to the weapon she was holding.

This was a trident, and each point shimmered a white light that reflected how sharp it was. The handle of the trident was about five feet in length and looked quite majestic in the hands of this exotic beauty.

He was trying to recall something in his mind for a long time before Lei

Yu stared with wide eyes. "A Yaksha?" [1] But he was exclaiming in his heart and didn't shout it out.

The girl slowly swam towards Lei Yu as if being cautious of something, but she didn't stop and her distance towards Lei Yu became closer and closer.

Lei Yu knew that in front of a girl at the early Nascent Soul stage, he didn't have to worry one bit. Not to mention fighting, just running away from her would be effortless so Lei Yu wasn't afraid of any malicious intentions.

"Who are you? Why are you here?" The girl asked.

"Am I not allowed to be in this

area?" Since he had nothing going on, Lei Yu decided to exchange a few words with her.

"You are an outsider, how come you entered the water region?"

Lei Yu's eyebrow was slightly raised, "How do you know I'm an outsider?" His mouth asked this but Lei Yu couldn't help glance at the girl's soft snow white skin.

"That's natural, outsiders do not have the aura we demonic cultivators of the Southern Wild Lands have. " Said the girl as she shook her trident.

"I just happened to be passing by." Lei Yu was trying to be perfunctory, but things weren't that simple.



"Happened to be passing by? Where do you want to go?" Without waiting for Lei Yu to answer, the girl continued: "This place is already the southern tip of the Immortal World, there's nothing else after that. And you say you're passing by? You're lying!"

"Uh..."

-----

[1] A Yaksha is a broad class of nature spirits who are usually benevolent, but sometimes mischievous and sexually aggressive. I think the author is trying to paint her as a succubus.

# Chapter 285:

## Angering The Demoness

"Quickly speak! What are you doing here?!" The girl had one hand on her hip while the other hand holding her trident while pursing her lips in an interrogating manner. But no matter how much Lei Yu looked at her cute appearance; she had the resemblance of a Yaksha. Except that this was the first time Lei Yu had ever seen a Yaksha that seductive.

"You say that this place is the southern tip of the Immortal World? Then let me ask you..." Lei

Yu grinned, "The south of this water region, it should be where Lord Demon King resides right? So what you're saying is that the desert of the Southern Wild Lands doesn't exist?"

Lei Yu remembered the toad's words before it stopped halfway, that's why he hardened his stance and asked the girl in reverse.

"That place isn't a place that anyone can enter. Even someone at the Soul Splitting stage must get permission in order to step foot on it!" Said the girl.

Lei Yu was a bit surprised in his heart and thought to himself: "Who the hell is this Demon King? He already possesses such a huge

amount of troops, and even experts at the Soul Splitting stage must get his permission to set foot on his territory?!"

Lei Yu lightly smiled, "Little girl, you are merely at the early Nascent Soul stage, how come you know so much about the Southern Wild Lands?"

"Humph!" The girl sneered, "I know far more than that!"

"Oh? What else do you know?"  
Asked Lei Yu.

"Why should I tell you?!" The girl seemed a bit angry. From the outer periphery of the water region to the inner regions of the Southern Wild Lands, few people dared to speak with her. Even if they spoke with

her, they wouldn't dare to use such a tone as Lei Yu. The girl was slightly angry in her heart but thought this was also very interesting.

The girl seemed to have noticed something and her eyesight landed on Lei Yu's chest.

"Your pendant is very pretty! I want it!" The girl pointed at the two pendants hanging off Lei Yu's neck. One was engraved with the word "moon" while the other was engraved with the word "day."

"Don't even think about it!" Lei Yu shook his head in refusal.

"You dare to refuse me?! No one has ever dared to refuse me in this

area!" The girl pouted angrily.

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and coldly said: "Even if you were the Heavenly Emperor's daughter, you can forget about getting any one of my jade pendants!" Lei Yu would naturally not give these pendants to her. Even if he had to forfeit his life, he still wouldn't hand them over willingly. The pendant with the "moon" character was something his mother left for him. As for the pendant with the "day" character, it was his mother's relic passed down after her death. Lei Yu treated them as his most important treasures so why would he give them to others so casually?

"You...!" The girl was so angry that she couldn't even speak. She waved

her trident and rushed at Lei Yu, "I want it! I always get the things I want in the end!"

"I'm afraid today will be your first disappointment!" Lei Yu never expected that just for a jade pendant, this girl would actually start a fight. But in Lei Yu's eyes, the early Nascent Soul stage was considered nothing much so he'll play with her for a bit.

After dodging left and right a few times, the attacks made by the girl weren't a threat to Lei Yu at all. As for the girl, she was starting to get embarrassed by several shoves and playful strikes by Lei Yu. The girl stopped and her red hair was scattered in front of her chest as it swayed about by the natural

movements of the river.

Because she was breathing hard, he twin peaks kept heaving up and down which was rather enticing for viewers. Lei Yu couldn't help but swallow hard as he tried very hard to not look at the beautiful scene that would arouse any living male.

"Stop dodging!" Yelled the girl as she placed one hand on her hips while the other pointing the trident at Lei Yu.

"Are you sick? You want me to stand still while you kill me?" Lei Yu shrugged and gave a bizarre look at her. The girl then clenched her jaws, "You're picking on me! If my father found out about it, that will be the end of you!"



"Your father? Is he an old Yaksha?"

"You!" The girl stared with wide eyes, "You are calling my father an old Yaksha?" It was hard for the girl to not be shocked because in the entire Southern Wild Lands of the Immortal World, no one would dare to insult her father. Ever since she was born, this was the first time she has heard such an insult.

"Isn't he? For him to have a little Yaksha like you, then isn't your father considered an old Yaksha then?" Objected Lei Yu. But no matter what, there's no way that he would know that this girl was the daughter of the highest existence in the Southern Wild Lands -  
Minotaur Linos!

The girl clenched her fists and roared out before rushing at Lei Yu again. After several rounds, she still couldn't do anything to him. She was now extremely angry and anxious. Even though she was rude and unreasonable in her daily life, she treated her father's existence similar to one that would treat a God. She will never allow anyone to insult him so even if she had to fight with her life on the line, she had to regain face for her father!

No matter what she tried, Lei Yu's speed was too fast. The girl simply couldn't land any strikes on Lei Yu. While filled with anxiety, the girl roared out a sound that didn't seem like it could come out of her mouth. The water at the bottom of the river started shaking, and Lei Yu could

feel that his body was floundering around from the water.

"Someone insulted my father! Is there anyone here that can accept that?!" The girl roared out. Lei Yu was dumbfounded because he suddenly felt numerous energy fluctuations from demonic cultivators coming from all directions.

"What a good ability to mobilize your people! I'll take my leave!" Lei Yu activated the infant body's internal energy and a light purple energy started coming out of his feet. His body was just like lightning as it flew upwards almost instantaneously. The girl only saw an after-image in front of her and the water didn't even have time to

fill in that void. Lei Yu's figure had already disappeared without a trace.

Bursting out of the water, Lei Yu's speed was similar to a meteor as it flew towards the outer areas of the water region. He didn't bother with the thousands of demonic cultivators flying around because keeping his life was more important right now! Not only did Lei Yu previously feel that Gold Core and Nascent Soul demonic cultivators were rushing towards him, he even felt several experts at the Fusion Soul stage coming for him. If he didn't run, wanting to keep his life would probably be impossible.

It was less than ten seconds after Lei Yu burst out of the water when the water surface started trembling.

Then, dozens of demonic cultivators of various shapes and sizes could be seen flying into the air. As if they were under an Imperial edict, they ignored the rules of no flying in the Southern Wild Lands and chased after Lei Yu like mad.

Although this scene was slightly lacking compared to the previous tens of thousands of demonic cultivators flying through the air, it was still quite an impressive scene to behold!

After flying for several hours, Lei Yu started getting anxious and doubted whether there was really a rule prohibiting flying or not. Previously, tens of thousands of demonic cultivators were flying through the air, and now dozens of demonic

cultivators were also flying through the air chasing after him.

A few hours wasn't considered short or long, but flying long distance was a test of strength for all those future powerhouses. Lei Yu gradually distanced himself from the demonic cultivators chasing him and eventually, only several Fusion Soul demonic cultivators were left still trying to catch up. As for those below the Fusion Soul stage, they had already given up because they couldn't catch up no matter how hard they tried.

"Are you guys ever going to stop?" Lei Yu helplessly yelled. He then once again accelerated his speed a few notches. At this time, they were

already reaching the shores of the outermost boundary of the water region back to the region where rivers crisscrossed. Many demonic cultivators and beasts looked up in the air with their mouths agape, watching this group of people playing cat and mouse in the area where flying was prohibited.

The two toads, one big and one small both raised their head to look, "That brother is pretty badass! In a short one day span, he's actually capable of provoking so many enemies!"

The smaller toad blew a raspberry, "No wonder we weren't his opponent. There are so many experts at the Fusion Soul stage yet they still cannot catch up with him,

not to mention us!"



# Chapter 286:

## Southern Wild Land's Demon King

While crossing this region where rivers crisscrossed each other, the distance between them pulled further apart. Catching those experts chasing him off guard, Lei Yu suddenly descended.

"Not good, quickly catch up!" A demonic cultivator that looked like a lobster cried out. Several cultivators behind him quickly descended as well but once they arrived at the last river of the region, Lei Yu's figure had disappeared. One could say that Lei

Yu had evaporated into thin air and disappeared without a trace!

"That's strange, I don't see him."

They were all searching the area thoroughly and even released their spiritual perception in hopes of sensing Lei Yu's energy fluctuation, but how can their perception pierce through Lei Yu's ability gained at the [Energy Suppression] stage? No matter the scope and sophistry of the cultivation method, they couldn't compare to Lei Yu's at all.

After hiding his internal energy inside the infant body, Lei Yu was comparable to a piece of stone. As long as he doesn't make a noise, no one would notice him even if he stood behind them.

After removing some aquatic plants he was hiding under, Lei Yu watched as this group of Fusion Soul experts gave up on looking for him. It was only then did he quietly break out of the water surface and sighed. "That was really quite dangerous! Who is that little girl anyway? And why would so many mobilize upon her words? Could it be...?!" Lei Yu blinked a few times, "Could it be that I provoked the Demon King's daughter?"

After thinking it through, Lei Yu shook his head and rejected that idea. How could a dignified Demon King's daughter so randomly appear in the water region? Shouldn't she be in a castle in the most southern part of the Southern Wild Lands? Moreover, how could a Demon

King's daughter be dressed in such revealing clothes? And even started a fight over an old jade pendant?

Based on Lei Yu's judgment, she was probably the daughter of the water region's boss who was similar to a Commander of Dragon Group. At least that's the opinion Lei Yu came up with.

Since this Southern Wild Lands wasn't a place Lei Yu was welcomed at, he decided to leave. Lei Yu's body lightly shook and his powerful internal energy flung off all the water and random underwater plants stuck to him. He now looked like he had never entered the water at all.

After condensing internal energy

onto his feet, Lei Yu was about to leap into the air. At the same time, he released his spiritual perception to check if he had gotten rid of all the pursuers.

It was fine if he didn't probe the area but once he did, Lei Yu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. In the outer area of this region where rivers crisscrossed, those demonic cultivators at the Nascent Soul stage and above were undergoing a ground search. Lei Yu was really curious, "What on earth are they looking for?"

Watching as this mass group of people gradually move closer towards him, Lei Yu knew that leaving was impossible. It looks like he can only go back south. Lei Yu

had experienced being surrounded in the past, but not to this point where he felt so trapped.

Looking off into the distance, Lei Yu noticed the two big toads were lying on the grass lands with their eyes closed. They looked like they were sunbathing.

Lei Yu grinned as he ran over, "Let me borrow your territory to rest for a bit!"

The two toads opened their eyes and a green light shimmered from their eyes. Both toads swallowed hard but didn't respond, so Lei Yu sat down cross-legged next to them as if the two didn't exist.

The slightly bigger toad glanced at

the other one and nodded. The latter seemed to understand that gesture wanting to leave. Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes, "You want to rat me out? Whoever dares to take a step away here, I will skin and roast them into frog cutlets to eat!"

Those two toads seemed to understand the first half of Lei Yu's words, and didn't doubt Lei Yu's strength to follow through with his threat. But the latter part of frog cutlets, they had no clue what that was. But the first half of Lei Yu's words were enough choke them with fright. They returned to their original position of sunbathing, but were no longer as relaxed as before because they were staring at Lei Yu with wide round eyes.

Since everything had calmed down now, Lei Yu entered a deep meditation. He believes that as long as he doesn't make an excessive usage of his internal energy, those demonic cultivators would not bother this area.

But in another area, it wasn't as calm as the Southern Wild Lands. When Lei Yu flew south and back north to the crisscrossed river region, a lot of time had gone by already. Tai Lao and Hei Feng along with four other demonic cultivators weren't weak, so how incredible would their speeds be if they had maximized it on the get go?

It was not long after Lei Yu went into deep meditation when those six had already crossed the



southern yellow dirt region and reached the main areas of the Immortal World.

Previously, the bull-head Minotaur Linos had commanded pig-head Tai Lao and the black clothed person Hei Feng to head to the Void Sect to see what tricks they were up to. Minotaur Linos wanted to know why they would suddenly recruit disciples on a large-scale basis. Of course, those two never expected the latter things to happen. As for the present, they made a special trip for a punitive expedition under the flag of the "Wild Land's Demon King!"

Outside the Void Sect, the six of them stood outside the foggy clouds quietly waiting for a response. A

short while later, three elderly figures on swords flew out from the clouds.

"What matters do these friends have for coming to my Void Sect?" The head of the party was the Void Sect's current Sovereign, Kun Feng. Floating on his left was a fat elderly figure, his third junior brother Kun Xian. And to his right was a thin figure that did not lose out to the domineering aura of him, was his second junior brother, Kun Rong.

It's no wonder those three would personally appear outside the Void Sect. A disciple reported that the pig-head whom had previously caused trouble in the Sect had returned and brought helpers with him. In fact, before these three had

appeared, they had already ordered their disciples to guard the area on the walls and the platforms of the mountains. With just a command, they would all attack together.

"Enough with the pretenses. I want to ask you: that Lord Lightning who was captured by your Void Sect, where did he go afterwards?" Tai Lao showed a threatening momentum with one hand on his hip and his other hand holding the Ares Axe.

"Lord Lightning?" The three Immortal like figures glanced at each other. Kun Feng replied: "We aren't familiar with any sort of Lord Lightning."

"You aren't familiar?" Tai Lao coldly

humphed. "The Lord Lightning that absorbed the Dragon Vein, are you guys familiar with that? You've exhausted your efforts to come up with a large-scale recruitment of disciples, isn't that to draw out Lord Lightning to join your Void Sect? Now you shamelessly say you don't know him which is completely despicable. And you dare to vainly hang a title of being a virtuous Sect?!"

"Impudence!" Enraged by pig-head Tai Lao's words, when has the Void Sect even been humiliated to such a degree? Kun Feng and the other two had already released their internal energy creating a powerful and overbearing momentum!

"Let me ask you, who are you

people? What qualifications do you have to act so wildly in front of my Void Sect?" The thinner looking elderly person Kun Rong coldly asked.

The fatter elderly person was already impatient and shouted: "Several wild demonic beasts dare to act so atrociously in front of my Void Sect?! Hand over your life!" After saying that, he rushed forth but was blocked by Kun Feng. He was still calm and wanted to figure out his opponents backing, in case they provoked any big troubles that would be difficult to fix in the future.

"Shouldn't you tell me your names and titles?" Sensing that his opponents weren't weak, Kun Feng

didn't dare to act carelessly.

"Perhaps you have heard of the name, Wild Land's Demon King!" Coldly responded the person that had spoken a single word yet, Hei Feng.

"What?!"

"What?!"

"Did you... did you just say the Wild Land's Demon King?!" Kun Feng and the other two stared with wide eyes, not believing what they had heard. One could clearly see that their throats unconsciously swallowed hard.

# Chapter 287:

## Refining a Gold Core

"That's right!" Tai Lao then coldly said: "Us two are the Demon King's Left and Right Generals, and these four are Wild Land's Four Great Commanders!"

These three elderly people who were super strong experts at the Soul Splitting stage were all stunned. The title of Demon King had pretty much disappeared in the Immortal World community for a long time. The Immortal Realm is divided into two parts: The first being the Chaotic Star Sea, a place

where a variety of cultivators gathered. Devil Cultivators and Demonic Cultivators made up most of the population, while the rest were Martial Cultivators. The other part is obviously the Immortal World itself, that contained many small and large Sects. The five major Sects acted as the pillar of the world.

But if the Immortal World was split up into parts as well, then there will be three. Two parts was where they were while the last part would be the area past the yellow dirt region, the Southern Wild Lands!

Everything in that area belonged to Queen Telephassa and her follower the Demon King Minotaur Linos.



Kun Feng's face twitched a few times before he revealed a smiling face. "Greetings to these Immortals, please forgive me if I previously offended you!" Dealing with these six, the Void Sect didn't dare to not give them some face. Even if they were demonic cultivators, he didn't dare to greet them as anything but Immortals.

Amongst the six of them, the four commanders didn't even bother looking at Kun Feng and the other two. From beginning to the end, they didn't even open their eyes because according to them, those three were not qualified for them to be taken seriously.

For someone like Tai Lao who was used to dealing with people and

making connections, he still put up a tough persona. Now with a little more pride, "I'm going to ask again, where did Lord Lightning fly off to? I'm going to be upfront with you guys, he is someone our Lord Demon King has waited for over a thousand years. If you angered his old esteemed self, I guarantee the Immortal World will not have a single peaceful day from here on out!"

"This..." Back then when the pig-head pretended to join the disciple recruitment tests, the Void Sect didn't know his identity. But now that they did, no one dared to be arrogant anymore. "If you Immortals can wait for a bit, we will request our master the Void Immortal to come out!"

"Void Immortal?" The pig-head and Hei Feng looked at each other strangely. They clearly remembered back then that Romon said Lei Yu's big brother Nuo Hu told them that the Void Immortal wasn't in the Void Sect. So why would these three suddenly say something like this now?

Tai Lao and Hei Feng nodded in agreement but made an eye movement. The pig-head Tai Lao then said: "Leave a person behind for us to chat with."

The three of them glanced at each other before Kun Feng smiled and said: "My two junior brothers will request our master to come out while I will keep you Immortals company."

"Yes, senior brother." Kun Rong and Kun Xian was about to fly into the foggy clouds when at this time, a voice broke out from within. The voice was ear deafening, but came out at a focused horizontal direction that only those nine present could hear it. As for the Void Sect disciples guarding the walls and the platforms, they didn't hear a single thing.

This voice would be a powerful deterrent for those at the Fusion Soul or lower stages. But for these old perverse fogies, it was considered nothing. Although this was created to show a domineering appearance, Tai Lao and others only scoffed at it. And only now did those four commanders finally open their eyes to look at the

approaching person.

The pig-head and Hei Feng both cupped their hands, "Greetings Immortal, please forgive us for our previous offense." Upon seeing the Void Sect's real boss, Tai Lao naturally had to give him full face or else any discussions would be futile. Furthermore, they had no intentions to make a move against them on this trip or else Minotaur Linos would have personally come along as well.

"You do not have to stand on ceremony." The Void Immortal looked polite and gentle, but his surrounding was filled with a domineering aura that was fluctuating about. This suffocating feeling he was releasing was

undoubtedly to tell those that came here that the Void Sect wasn't a place that anyone could mess with!

Facing this powerful pressure, the facial expressions of Tai Lao and the others didn't flinch but still showed a smile. Tai Lao said in a somewhat respectful tone: "I'm sure Immortal already knows the reason why we're here today."

There's a saying that one should be tolerant of others and the Void Immortal wasn't someone that would fail to appreciate one's kindness. If he really angered the people of the Southern Wild Lands, it will bring about a war that wouldn't be easy to conclude. This small deterrent was already enough. A slight flash went off on the

imprint on the Void Immortal's forehead before he put away his internal energy. He then said with a light smile, "I'll be candid with you, that extraordinary person has already left the Void Sect."

Since the Void Immortal said so, Tai Lao and others couldn't ask anything more. A character of his status would absolutely not lower themselves to lying.

"Excuse us then, we'll be on our way!" The six cupped their hands and after a few "whoosh" sounds, they had already disappeared into the horizon.

"Master, they..." Kun Feng wanted to say something but was interrupted by the Void Immortal. "It looks like

everyone wants to draw this extraordinary person to their camp. Even the Southern Wild Land's Demon King who never interacts with our Immortal World has reached out his demonic claws!"

"Master, are you still worried about it? Isn't his girlfriend still in the hands of our Void Sect?" The fat Kun Xian asked.

The Void Immortal angrily lectured him, "Nuo Ai Er is merely staying at our Void Sect in secluded meditation, nothing more. Do you understand?!"

"Yes!" Kun Xian quickly nodded, "Disciple understands!"

After softly sighing, the Void



Immortal slowly said: "I'm not afraid of the extraordinary person not showing up in two years time. I'm just afraid that if the two years date is known to other Sects or the Wild Land's Demon King, our Void Sect in two years time will draw the criticism and ire of everyone!"

"Then what should we do now?"  
Kun Feng asked.

"For the next two years, you three shall not bother with the Sect's business. Just give it to the third generation disciples to take care of. You will all be focusing your attention on Nuo Ai Er's cultivation. I want that extraordinary person to be completely convinced of his defeat in two years time. By that point, it will be useless no matter

what the other Sects have to say about us!"

"Yes, disciple understands!" The three nodded.

In another area.

It has been over a day since Lei Yu has been in deep meditation. The two big toads hadn't moved at all during this time and only stared at Lei Yu. Their green eyes were starting to ache but they still didn't dare to move.

"Elder brother, what do you think frog cutlets are?"

"I don't know, but it should be a type of food they often eat. They are really quite cruel!"

Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes,  
"What are you two mumbling  
about?"

"Nothing! Nothing!" Their two  
grinning heads kept shaking yet Lei  
Yu couldn't tell if they were smiling  
or crying. It only looked very  
strange to him.

"I want to ask you guys  
something..."

"Please ask away."

Lei Yu nodded, "Are Gold Cores the  
only thing that can be refined for  
one's cultivation?"

"Refining a Gold Core? You... aren't  
you being a bit too extravagant?"  
The two toads opened their eyes  
wide.

"What do you mean?" Asked Lei Yu somewhat confused.

The slightly larger toad replied: "It's something so good that even crystal stones cannot purchase! Although there's an estimated market price, but it's not even on the market for one to buy!"

# Chapter 288:

## Brushing Past

"Oh?" This was something Lei Yu never expected. But since it can help one cultivate, then it must be something good. "When compared to refining a crystal stone, is refining a Gold Core better or the crystal stone better?"

The two toads would fall out of their chairs if they were sitting on one. They have heard of these two types of cultivating methods but have never seen anyone utilize it. No matter if it's in these Wild Lands, the Immortal World, or the Chaotic Star Sea, the life of a cultivator is very important to

themselves yet this guy... Well, it is technically easier to refine a Gold Core, and the energy it contained was also purer and more vigorous than crystal stones. We can say a Gold Core contained a cultivator's entire life's essence.

"G... Gold Core, the Gold Core is better." The slightly bigger toad swallowed hard before replying.

Lei Yu once again asked: "Is it only a Gold Core that can be used to cultivate? Can a Nascent Soul be used?"

"Cannot!" The two toads jumped up at the same time.

Lei Yu rolled his eyes, "What are you two so worked up over? I didn't

say I was going to extract your Nascent Souls, I'm just asking."

With Lei Yu's words, the two toads were able to calm down. The slightly bigger toad then replied: "Those that would use a Nascent Soul would only be the Devil Cultivators. This approach is extremely cruel and I've only heard about but never personally witnessed it. As for normal cultivators and demonic cultivators, they won't be able to refine a Nascent Soul. Only the Gold Core would be most suitable for cultivation by everyone."

Lei Yu nodded, "So that's how it works. It looks like if I have the opportunity in the future, I will have to save up a few more Gold

Cores so that I can have it handy while cultivating."

These words made the two toads form an opinion of Lei Yu comprised of two words - Evil Fiend!

How could anyone say the words of saving up more Gold Cores? It was fine while in the Chaotic Star Sea because those cultivators above the Gold Core stage weren't allowed to stay in the outer periphery near the entrance region. As for the inner depths of the Chaotic Star Sea, no matter if it were devil cultivators or demonic cultivators, those in the Gold Core stage hanging around were very few. If there were some, they would usually be under the wings of a major force so people



would never harbor evil thoughts on their Gold Cores.

After asking this information, Lei Yu didn't bother chatting with them further and went back to cultivating after closing his eyes. As for the two toads, they were at a complete loss because they couldn't run away and they didn't want to stay. Before Lei Yu had asked those previous questions, they may have the guts of thinking about escaping. But at the present, they felt they were looking at a living devil's incarnate, so how would they dare to act rashly? These two toads were now thoroughly regretting why they had previously made a move against Lei Yu.

-----

Tai Lao and company had split up into six different directions: Upper atmosphere, lower underwater, North, South, East, and West. As for Romon and company, even though they had over ten thousand demonic cultivators searching high and low, they had no results and could only return with disappointment.

When all the demonic cultivators were returning, Lei Yu hid his aura and showed a plain look liked nothing was out of the ordinary. But the two toads couldn't hold it in anymore as they looked up into the air where the sky was blanketed with the many different demonic cultivators. The slightly smaller toad was about to shout, but before his voice even came out of his

throat, a column of water shot straight into his mouth making him close his mouth. At the same time, a pair of golden boots had appeared on Lei Yu's feet - the Ares Boots!

The next moment, Lei Yu had already disappeared from his spot. There was no trace of him and no clues to which direction he had disappeared off to.

"Help! Help!" The toad started screaming after spitting out the river water. Its shouting was naturally heard by those up in the sky, and everyone turned to stare at a figure with golden hair and a single horn on his forehead.

"I will take a look." The youth with the single horn on his forehead flew

down with his huge copper pillar.

After sensing the strength of the person flying down towards them, the two toads couldn't understand what was going on. Only those above the Fusion Soul stage were allowed to fly yet why did this person with the strength of a late Gold Core stage fly around? Could it be that the rules have really been changed in the Southern Wild Lands?

"What are you guys screaming about?" Asked the single horned youth as he floated atop his copper pillar not too far from the two toads.

After the two toads told their story in detail, the single horned youth

was shocked. "Where is he right now?!"

This single horned youth was none other than Romon who had been searching all over for Lei Yu.

"We... we don't know." The two toads glanced at each other before responding further: "We were looking up and he had already disappeared within a blink of an eye."

Atop of the copper pillar, Romon started screaming hysterically: "Little Yu! It's me, Romon! Little Yu! Where are you? Quickly come out!"

Romon's voice echoed throughout the area but there was no response. Lei Yu had disappeared right under

his nose, making Romon feel like he was about to go crazy. But one cannot blame Lei Yu and only on Romon and his father. Why did they have to go all out bananas searching for Lei Yu? If there were just a few familiar people out searching instead of the massive troops of demonic cultivators, perhaps Lei Yu would have already jumped out early on. Unfortunately now, they only brushed past each other.

"Friend, are you guys looking for that person?" Asked the big toad.

"You damn bastard!" A yell came from the sky as a demonic cultivator rushed over. Based on its appearance, it should have been a lizard that had cultivated its

essence. Its strength had exceeded the Nascent Soul and already reached the Fusion Soul stage.

The two toads suddenly blinked their green eyes, "Greetings to you, your lordship!" Although there were times when Fusion Soul demonic cultivators appeared around here, there were less and less frequent. Being so close to one today made those two toads feel some fear. But what they couldn't understand was how they drew the ire of this expert.

"Why aren't you transforming to a human form and saluting the young master?" Asked the lizard coldly.

"There's no need, let's return first and let my father know. If little Yu intended to hide, there's no one in

existence that's capable of finding him."

A sticky mucus was seen dripping down the nostrils of the two toads. Their mouths were agape as they watch countless demonic cultivators fly off behind a mere late Gold Core stage youth with a single horn on his head. "There's always strange things going on every year yet there's especially more this year." Mumbled the big toad as he suddenly remembered this saying from somewhere.

If Lei Yu only knew Romon was looking for him, he would most likely appear in front of him instantly. But everything was too late. During Romon's descent and speaking with the two toads, Lei Yu



had already run off to some place a hundred kilometers away. The area where the two toads were, was already beyond the coverage of Lei Yu's spiritual perception. Moreover, Lei Yu was so anxious to run away that he had already forgotten to release his spiritual perception. So this opportunity for a wonderful reunion had been missed by a hair's breath.

After leaping out of the Southern Wild Lands, Lei Yu took a left at the yellow dirt region and ran towards a Westerly direction. In this area, there was no one who would dictate whether you could fly or not. But Lei Yu also felt fortunate that no one found out he had been flying in the Wild Lands.

With the golden Ares Boots on, Lei Yu's running speed was actually faster than his flying speed. After storing his boots, Lei Yu condensed a light purple internal energy on his feet and started flying up into the air.

# Chapter 289: Too Much Interference

After flying for a while, Lei Yu could see that this area was completely filled with dust where one could not see what was in front. Lei Yu frowned, "Such bad luck!" He watched as a tornado that was over a hundred feet high and a thousand meters wide was spinning like crazy ahead of him. Lei Yu had never seen such a huge tornado in his entire life!

But what made Lei Yu feel strange about this scene was that the tornado was stuck in place and didn't move about. It looked like it had taken root at this place or

something. The ground looked like it had collapsed, which was presumably made by this tornado spinning in place.

Such a strange phenomenon made Lei Yu feel something weird was up. He unconsciously inched forward a bit and was now only a few miles away. He could feel the intense whipping of the wind and hear a strange whistle like roar sound as he got closer.

Lei Yu immediately released his spiritual perception around him and lightly frowned, "There's actually someone inside the area of the tornado?"

Although he was able to feel a slight energy fluctuation, due to the

interference of the tornado's rotation, Lei Yu couldn't determine the exact strength of these people. Since there were people about, Lei Yu didn't dare to go forward and turned around to leave.

Coincidentally at this time, there was a whistling sound at the top of the tornado and out came a person flying the same direction as Lei Yu.

Since it had come to this, Lei Yu would definitely raise their suspicion if he suddenly ran away. Lei Yu decided he might as well stay here and see what would happen.

"Is Sir a demonic cultivator?" The person who arrived was a youth. The moment this youth came closer, Lei Yu was able to sense that he was at the late Gold Core stage.

"Demonic cultivator?" Lei Yu blinked a few times before looking up and down his own body. "Which part of me looks like a demonic cultivator?"

The youth lightly smiled, "If you're not a demonic cultivator, how come you don't need a weapon to stay afloat?"

Lei Yu seemed to have suddenly realized something big before answering: "It's just my secret skill..."

"I dare not to be rude, but what reason did Sir come to our Four Illusory Court for?" The youth tossed aside the useless chatter and went straight to the point.

"Four Illusory Court? This place is the Four Illusory Court? Why is it so close to the Southern Wild Lands?" Lei Yu's eyes widened a bit in surprise.

Lei Yu knew that the Immortal World had five great Sects, and the one ranked at the end was this Four Illusory Court. Although they were ranked last, one could not look down at them. There's a rumor that people of the Four Illusory Court will never go out alone, and they will always go out in fours. It looks like the rumor was true.

But this youth was only one person while there were three others guarding three different locations inside the tornado. It looks like this tornado is the Four Illusory Court's

defensive formation, and it wasn't easy for someone to go through without permission. First of all, one's line of sight had been obstructed. And with the tornado's interference, one cannot determine the precise location of those maintaining the formation. Second of all, this formation couldn't be broken, or at least Lei Yu felt it wasn't easy to break.

Those that laid this formation down included this Four Illusory Court disciple who was merely at the Gold Core stage. It's not difficult to form a conjecture that the other three people that laid this formation shouldn't be that much stronger than this youth. But for these four people to maintain such a large formation, Lei Yu felt this tornado



was much more amazing than the one at the Void Sect.

The Void Sect's Cloud Barrier was laid by the Four Illusory Court. As long as one knew the method to break through it, anyone could easily go in or out of it. But this formation that created a rotating force was not simple at all, and the strength behind its attack power shouldn't be something that's easy to withstand.

When one enters a formation, it's very easy for them to lose their sense of direction. And the rotation speed of the tornado was extremely fast, so just the inertia alone would make it difficult for one to escape it. Moreover, this formation was not dead because there were people

maintaining it. This was similar to giving the formation a soul and intelligence, naturally making it more powerful.

If we compared this tornado formation to the Cloud Barrier of the Void Sect, then the latter would be the heavens and the former be the heaven above the heavens.

The essence of the formation wasn't something Lei Yu could comprehend, but just floating in the distance was enough for him to feel the momentum it gave off.

"Could it be that Sir does not know our Four Illusory Court is located here?" The surprised look on Lei Yu's face made the youth feel strange. In the Immortal World,

there's not many people that didn't know where the location of the five great Sects were.

As the two looked at each other smiling, "This is embarrassing; I came from the Chaotic Star Sea and had just entered the Immortal World. I'm not familiar with the places and previously strayed into the Southern Wild Lands. I had just left that place in a hurry and arrived here. I won't disturb you anymore and will take my leave." After saying that, Lei Yu was prepared to leave.

"Excuse me."

"Excuse me!"

Lei Yu was just about to leave when a voice came from within the

tornado, "Sir, please stay for a bit!"

Turning his head around, Lei Yu noticed a middle-aged man - a wooden hairpin held his long salt and pepper gray hair in an orderly fashion. Although this person's face looked like he was easy going, but he had a pair of mouse-like crafty eyes that Lei Yu hated. He would often see people on television with those mouse-like eyes and they would all happen to be treacherous individuals. Towards these people, Lei Yu didn't have a good impression of them but since he had already stopped, he couldn't be rude. Lei Yu then smiled, "Is there something you need?"

"Earlier I heard that Sir came from the Chaotic Star Sea?"

"Right." Lei Yu nodded in response but was inwardly shocked. Not even mentioning the chaotic atmosphere this tornado created, to be able to hear his own words while the wind was screaming about while maintaining the formation; this made Lei Yu feel like it was just too incredible. Lei Yu unconsciously focused his spiritual perception on this middle-aged person and realized he was an expert at the mid Fusion Soul stage!

The middle-aged man nodded, "I'm going to be presumptuous and ask: How did Sir with your current strength manage to pass through the dangerous Chaotic Star Sea and arrive at the Immortal World?"

The question by the middle-aged

person was considered a low blow. If this was asked in the modern Mortal World, most likely this middle-aged person would be pummeled by others already. This question was clearly him looking down on Lei Yu!

But since he was in someone else's territory, Lei Yu didn't want to act rashly and lightly replied: "It was all due to luck. There were several risky encounters but it was somehow solved eventually, allowing me to safely arrive at the Immortal World."

"Is that really true?" The middle-aged man's small eyes evaluated Lei Yu.

"It's true!" Lei Yu didn't bother

looking at him in the eyes. He didn't know what this middle-aged guy was up to but he knew he had to be careful.

"Master Uncle, this friend had merely gotten lost." Said the earlier youth.

"Go back and guard your position." The middle-aged person waved his hand and the youth turned around to leave.

Immediately after, the middle-aged person's little beady eyes landed on Lei Yu. "I wonder if Sir would be willing to have some tea in my Four Illusory Court?"

"Oh?" Lei Yu was slightly puzzled by this gesture. He already told the

middle-aged person that he came from the Chaotic Star Sea so why was he inviting him in? Shouldn't the great Sects of the Immortal World be closed to outsiders?

In fact, what Lei Yu didn't know was that even though the Four Illusory Court excelled with formations, the Sect didn't have a lot of disciples. The Sect was almost at the edge of the Immortal World and bordering the Southern Wild Lands, so many cultivators would first past by the other great Sects and wouldn't be willing to continue further to try their luck at the Four Illusory Court. Therefore even if the Four Illusory Court wanted to recruit more disciples, they couldn't because of their location.



But it's not like any average Joe can join their Sect; they do have their own requirements for accepting new disciples. Whether what those requirements are, Lei Yu will understand it once he enters.

Lei Yu felt he shouldn't refuse another person's good intentions, and plus he had nowhere to go to for now so he smiled and nodded, "It is better to accept deferentially than to decline courteously, so thanks for your hospitality!"

# Chapter 290: The Probing of Bei Dou

Large chairs and fragrant teas, this large Sect truly deserved its reputation. Lei Yu now understood what a powerful existence this Four Illusory Court was.

Within the huge tornado was the Four Illusory Court. Although fierce winds were blowing outside and they were within a depression, one could not feel any disturbance inside the Four Illusory Court which was similar to an unyielding firm rock.

If the Void Sect encountered any dangerous situations, they would

need all their disciples to guard the walls and the platforms against the mountain face. But the Four Illusory Court didn't need to. This huge formation only required four people to maintain, especially when they only needed someone at or above the Gold Core stage. The only exception was that the strength of these four people could not differ too much.

The person who laid out that formation was the Sovereign of the Four Illusory Court - Bei Dou.

They were in the main hall waiting for a long time yet Lei Yu still hadn't met with the Sovereign Bei Dou. After all, he was the leader of a Sect so being a bit haughty was not uncommon. Moreover, Lei Yu

had just swung by to take a rest here so not seeing this exalted figure was fine anyway. It saved him the trouble of finding flowery words to say to this person.

A long while later, that middle-aged person with beady eyes came out. "Sorry for the wait, our Sovereign was attending to some matters and will be out shortly."

"There's no need to bother the Sovereign, I'll just drink some tea and take my leave." Responded Lei Yu with cupped hands.

"There's no need to be in such a rush, in fact, I invited Sir to our Four Illusory Court because there was something we wanted to inquire about." The middle-aged

man with beady eyes lightly smiled as he gently sipped a mouthful of tea.

Lei Yu placed his teacup down and knew the situation wasn't that simple. Pretending to be confused was safer than looking astute right now. "I wonder what question you would like to inquire about?"

"I wonder if Sir has been trying to join a Sect everywhere and couldn't get in before arriving here?"

Lei Yu was organizing his thoughts before replying: "Right, all the Sects kept their doors closed. A few days ago, I heard the Void Sect were recruiting disciples so I deliberately went there to participate, but I never expected sudden changes

halfway and could only helplessly leave. I then tried to join other Sects but didn't achieve any results."

"So that's the case... Since Sir wants to depend on a Sect, what do you think about our Four Illusory Court?" The beady eyed middle-aged man lightly smiled, trying to release a refined look that didn't exist.

"Could the Four Illusory Court who is one of the five great Sects, be willing to take me in?" Lei Yu pretended to stand up in shock as his face revealed a look that was quite fitting. If he went to act in a movie, Lei Yu felt he wouldn't do too badly in it.

"That's right." After nodding, the

middle-aged man then said: "Sir may not know, but those that came from the Chaotic Star Sea to the Immortal World would usually seek out Sects in the Northeastern area. Because of the pride in those several great and lesser Sects, they weren't willing to accept outsiders as disciples. My Four Illusory Court is located in the Southwestern area and also happens to be on the other side of where one would come in from the Chaotic Star Sea. After being rejected by the Sects in the front, they weren't willing to fly all the way to my Four Illusory Court to try anymore. Not many know that our Four Illusory Court will welcome all friends from the Chaotic Star Sea."

"Oh?" Lei Yu raised his eyebrows in

surprise. "Is this for real?"

"Of course. Being able to survive in such a dangerous place like the Chaotic Star Sea and being able to cross it all the way to the Immortal World, that requires a person with very special abilities. How can our Four Illusory Court refuse a person like that?"

Lei Yu wasn't sure what motives this man had and didn't dare to ask further. But if he were to agree right away, then he might lower his own value.

"I'm sorry... Although the Four Illusory Court is indeed a powerful great Sect out of the five in the Immortal World, their focus is on laying formations and barriers. I am



completely clueless regarding that  
and my aptitude is poor,  
therefore..."

"It doesn't matter!" At this time, a  
strong voice came from the  
doorway. Lei Yu had long known  
someone had arrived but didn't  
reveal it in case they suspected his  
abilities. He feigned surprise on his  
face before glancing at the person  
coming in.

Upon careful observation, the newly  
arrived person looked middle-aged  
but his actual age couldn't be  
estimated. He had a square jaw and  
looked easy to get along with. He  
also had a full forehead which  
meant his life was blessed with  
good fortune. His lips looked like  
they were carved out from stone

with angles and corners. His pair of slender eyes appeared to glow with intelligence as they seem to be evaluating Lei Yu.

Upon seeing Lei Yu hesitate, the beady eyed middle-aged person stood up and smiled, "This is our Sovereign of the Four Illusory Court, the Grandmaster Bei Dou."

Lei Yu pretended to be shocked and quickly cupped his hands, "Greetings to Senior Bei Dou."

"No need to stand on ceremony." After waving his hand, Bei Dou went over to the hall's main seat and sat down. As for the beady eyed male, he walked over and stood by Bei Dou's side and wasn't as chatty as he was previously.

Since the beady eyes middle-aged man didn't sit down, Lei Yu also stayed standing in the middle of the hall in a respectful manner.

"I heard that Sir came here from the Chaotic Star Sea?" Bei Dou asked rhetorically.

"That's right."

"Then can I ask if you've heard of a certain person?"

Lei Yu lightly frowned, unsure of the intention of this Bei Dou guy. But he still went along and asked: "I wonder which person Senior Bei Dou is referring to?"

The Ceng Hong Villa's Ceng Hong!"

Even though he was shocked inside,

Lei Yu's face still looked very calm. After pretending to think for a moment, Lei Yu smiled "I have indeed heard of him. Ceng Hong Villa in the Chaotic Star Sea does have some fame, and there are very few people that would dare to cause trouble in his territory."

"A few days ago, several friends came to me for help, and one of them mentioned he came from the Chaotic Star Sea, by the name of Big White. I wonder if Sir is familiar with that name?" After saying this, Bei Dou's eyes seemed to narrow into slits as he watched for any changes in Lei Yu.

As if he had experienced this type of situation on numerous occasions, Lei Yu looked very calm. If he were

to reveal his identity right now, it's most likely he wouldn't be able to escape from this place. "Senior Bei Dou, this junior came to the Immortal World alone without anyone accompanying him. And I don't know this Big White person that Senior is referring to."

Bei Dou felt a bit disappointed after not finding any abnormalities with Lei Yu. But he still showed a face full of smiles, "I just remembered I have some important matter to attend to so I'll be taking my leave." He then turned to the side, "Bei Sha, take good care of this little friend. Even if he's not willing to join our Four Illusory Court, don't make things too difficult for him."

"Yes, senior brother." That beady

eyed middle-aged man call Bei Sha replied with a bow.

After watching Bei Dou leave, Lei Yu exhaled a breath of air. It looks like this Bei Dou really came to probe him. There should be very little people that come to this remote Four Illusory Court that's right next to the Southern Wild Lands. And since he had told them he came from the Chaotic Star Sea, it would naturally raise their suspicions. It's fortunate that he was able to muddle his way through this.

"My apologies, my senior brother is always busy and rushing about."

"Don't worry about it." Lei Yu smiled, "If there's no other matters,

I won't continue to disturb you and will be taking my leave."

Bei Sha didn't stop Lei Yu and sent him out of the tornado formation before turning around to leave. At this time, Lei Yu felt an energy fluctuation off into the distance but he wasn't able to sense that person's strength. As a last resort, Lei Yu hid his aura and quickly ran towards an area that looked like barren land.

Around the same time....

At the depths of the desert of the Southern Wild Lands, an ancient looking city was quite lively. And in the center of that city, within a castle...

# Chapter 291: Let Me Atonement For The Crimes

"Father, there was a despicable guy that bullied me!" A girl with a seductive figure and a coquettish face looked a bit strange with two horns coming out of her head, but she was still filled with a demonic allure.

Minotaur Linos appeared to have no mood to deal with his daughter's trifle matter; his thoughts were all on Lei Yu. Another day that he doesn't see Lei Yu meant another day filled with worry. He was about to send his daughter away when a



youth came into the palace main halls.

"Father, there's still no news?"

Hearing someone call out father, the girl was suddenly in shock. Carefully scrutinizing this youth, she noticed he had a handsome appearance and a single horn protruding from his head. His exposed bare upper body revealed a set of sturdy muscles that gave off a manly aura. But his shoulder area was rather horrifying to look at since there were iron hook things piercing through. Although blood was not currently flowing out, one could easily tell that he had suffered quite a bit from it.

"No." Raising his head with

disappointment, Minotaur Linos then glanced at his daughter to the side and said: "Oh yeah, this girl had just returned so come meet her. She is your little sister Mo Bei Li who took your mother's family name."

The youth came up with a smile, "I've already heard from General Tai Lao that I had a little sister, but I didn't expect her to be grown up to such a beautiful girl already."

"You... you're my big brother Romon?"

"Waahh! I finally get to see you! Father always mentions you but I never expected to finally see you now!" The girl suddenly leapt over and grabbed onto Romon's arm like

they were very intimate.

"Uh..." Romon looked at his father speechless.

"Big brother! How come I don't see benefactor here with you?" The girl asked with big eyes.

"Sigh!"

Romon sighed while Minotaur Linos helplessly shook his head. Mo Bei Li then asked in confusion:  
"What? Did an accident occur?"

"You... you only know how to cause trouble everywhere you go, yet such a big incident happened and you don't know a thing?" Reprimanded Minotaur Linos.

"Father!" Mo Bei Li pouted, "I had

been playing in the water region all this time so how would I know what had happened? Quickly tell me!"

"It's like this..." Romon was afraid their father would get angry again and said: "Benefactor was originally together with me but something happened and we were separated. Once I arrived here, I brought thousands of demonic cultivators with me to search the different regions but came up empty handed. It was only later that I found out benefactor was within our Southern Wild Lands but unfortunately, we brushed past each other and never met up."

Mo Bei Li tilted her head in thought, "There was that outsider in our territory, could it..." Thinking to

this point, Mo Bei Li was shocked.

"Could it what?!" Minotaur Linos and Romon asked in unison.

"Could it be that despicable guy?"

"What did he look like?"

"His hair wasn't that long and there were two jade pendants hanging around his neck. I wanted to take one of the pendants and we ended up fighting with each other." Mo Bei Li recalled the previous day's encounter.

"It's him, it should be him!" Romon cried out.

"Where is he now!?" Minotaur Linos looked excited while standing up; his height was double the size of his

daughter.

Mo Bei Li looked scared as her body continuously trembled, "He... he..."

"Where is he? Quickly tell us!" Bull-head was getting frustrated and couldn't hold in his voice, causing the whole main hall to start shaking.

Her father's yell made her shake even harder. Mo Bei Li then whispered, "I couldn't beat him so I had a bunch of demonic cultivators in the water region to go... go... go kill him."

"You damn useless thing! You deserve to die!" Minotaur Linos's eyes went red as he slapped his daughter's face. One could hear a

loud "pak" sound, and Mo Bei Li was sent soaring by her father's powerful blow before landing at the hall's main entrance.

The fiery heat on her face and her muddled mind made the girl suddenly go numb. Ever since she was little, her father had never yelled at or hit her before. She never thought that because of an outsider, today she would suffer such a heavy punishment! She couldn't accept all these grievances so she suddenly burst into tears.

"You still have the face to cry?! If anything happens to benefactor, I will definitely kill you!" The bull-head was truly enraged.

Minotaur Linos knew Lei Yu's

strength from what Romon told him - he was merely at the Gold Core stage. Even if this girl couldn't beat him, it's most likely due to Lei Yu's tricky moves and his extreme speeds. What they all didn't know was that Lei Yu had already formed an infant body and reached the Nascent Soul stage.

"You... you have never struck me before! Because of an outsider, you actually struck me today?! I... I hate you!" While crying and sobbing, Mo Bei Li stood up and was about to leave.

"You stay right there!" Minotaur Linos's voice had a powerful penetrative force. Even the rude and unreasonable Mo Bei Li would listen upon hearing her father's



angry tone, and stopped her stride but didn't turn around.

"Outsider? You dare to say he's an outsider?" Minotaur Linos's voice became hoarse, "If there wasn't your so called outsider, there would be no ancient Greece! If it wasn't for your so called outsider, your father would not be here! If it wasn't for your so called outsider, how would you and your brother come about? It was exactly because of this person that her Majesty the Queen held onto her convictions of cultivating in order to gain her current infinite life! Do you feel that I have said a single wrong thing?"

Mo Bei Li's body trembled and her face froze. A while later, she exhaled a long breath of air before

turning around. "I'm sorry father, your daughter... your daughter is willing to accept her death! Your daughter was in the wrong!"

The bull-head closed his eyes and his two big nostrils breathed out steam. It was obvious that he was in a helpless situation and at a complete loss as to what to do.

Romon was also a bit angry and he knew how his father's temper worked - he would always do what he said. And in his father's entire life, there were only two people he respected: One was Queen Telephassa, and the second was Lei Yu.

But this girl in front of him was his own little sister. Although they

haven't met until now, they were related by blood so he had to put in a few good words on her behalf.

"Father, it's too late to blame little sister now. And we don't really know if benefactor has actually encountered any mishaps. Why don't we first investigate this matter?"

"Do you think he can still survive? The weakest ones in the water region are in the Nascent Soul stage. In order to please this little demoness, those demonic cultivators would definitely chase like mad. I'm certain those that are chasing will include demonic cultivators at the Fusion Soul stage as well. If it's really as I've said, do you think benefactor can escape

this crisis?" While saying this, tears were already dripping down Minotaur Linos's bell like eyes. His huge body fell down onto his knees and two holes appeared on the ground from the force. "Benefactor! I deserve death! You've rescued me but my daughter has sent you to your grave! I've committed a sin! A huge sin!" After gasping for air, the bull-head roared out: "Since I can't force my own hands to punish my daughter, then let me atone for her crimes!"

A moment later, layers of flame rose out of Minotaur Linos's body and the clothes on his body were completely burnt into powder. Romon started panicking while Mo Bei Li was shocked silly and her mind went blank!

"Father! No! If you die like this, Romon... Romon will accompany you!"

While saying that, a huge copper pillar flew into the main hall and floated above Romon's head. As long as anything happens to his father, Romon will not hesitate to smash the copper pillar onto himself.

# Chapter 292: The Golden Tiger Howls

"What are you two doing?!" A voice yelled from the rear. Although the voice was very powerful, it still couldn't hide the owner's soft and seductive tone.

The two stopped their actions at the same time before both looking at the appearance of a great beauty.

"Your Majesty, you probably don't know but..." Minotaur Linos shook, and the flames surrounding his body dispersed. He hadn't finished his sentence yet before Telephassa interrupted him: "He's fine, I dispatched Golden Tiger to check

the area and he found traces of him near the Four Illusory Court, but Lei Yu had quickly left the area. After saying those words, joy and excitement showed in the eyes of Telephassa.

After hearing the Queen's words, bull-head and Romon both sighed heavily while Minotaur Linos sat down on the ground with a thud. If his underlings saw the current image of the great Demon King of the Southern Wild Lands, they would certainly be all dumbfounded.

Mo Bei Li knew she had committed a heinous crime so she stood there pulling at the corner of her clothes. Although no one could have imagined this current scene as the

conclusion, the tears in her eyes and the five finger palm print on her face made her firmly remember this lesson.

"You can't be so willful in the future, do you understand?"

Telephassa's pretty eyes landed on Mo Bei Li's figure and her white jade-like skin hand gently stroked Mo Bei Li's long hair.

"I will remember and won't dare to anymore!" Mo Bei Li had been frightened quite a bit this time. No matter how violent her father's temper was, she had never seen the extent of it like today. Although this incident was considered passed already, her body was still shaking from it.



"It will be best if you truly do what you say." Minotaur Linos sighed heavily again before turning his attention to Telephassa. "Your Majesty, does that mean we've lost traces of benefactor once again?"

With a light smile and eyes shimmering with excitement, Telephassa responded: "Golden Tiger's body came back to report that he left his soul there to continue searching, so I believe we should get some news soon."

Everyone nodded, hoping Golden Tiger would get some positive results.

This Golden Tiger they were referring to was also a demonic cultivator. After a lot of effort in

training and continuous hard work, he was able to evolve. And after being looked after by Telephassa, he eventually crossed the threshold and reached the Soul Splitting stage. Now in the Southern Wild Lands, he had become the third strongest expert and was someone who had reached the late Soul Splitting stage. Although he wasn't as strong as bull-head or the Queen, he had the status of being Telephassa's personal bodyguard. This status made him higher ranking than Tai Lao and Hei Feng by a few levels since he was the most trusted person of bull-head and the Queen.

In another area.

Lei Yu sensed that someone was

coming and quickly hid his aura. He found a depression in the wilderness and hid his body there as a precaution. Lei Yu didn't even know what he was afraid of while hiding left and right, but he didn't dare to act rashly and chose to be careful instead.

Even though he had the two year appointment with the Void Sect, other major Sects may not know about it. Since back then in the Mortal World, many factions had already sent people to draw him in, then it's highly likely they would not give up so easily. If someone was to find out his real identity and was forcefully recruited, Lei Yu was afraid not to mention two years; he might not be able to escape from the Sect after two hundred years. In

order to attend that two year appointment, Lei Yu could not allow any accidents or unfortunate encounters to happen to himself.

As for the previous person that Lei Yu detected, it was exactly Golden Tiger who had come from the Southern Wild Lands. Golden Tiger had a very keen sense of smell and hearing, and add the fact that his spiritual perception was quite amazing as well, making him the perfect choice for this mission.

During the time Lei Yu left the Four Illusory Court, Golden Tiger had just reached the area. But Lei Yu was a perverse existence that was able to hide his aura completely without letting a single trace of energy escaping, so no matter how powerful one's spiritual perception

was, it was useless towards him.

Golden Tiger reported his name and backing, causing the Four Illusory Court's Sovereign Bei Dou to personally come out to greet him. After telling them the whole story, he separated his soul from his body. The body went back to report to Telephassa while his soul remained in the area to look for Lei Yu.

Lei Yu could clearly see a golden tiger standing not too far from the tornado. He didn't dare to make a noise because he didn't know what intentions this demonic cultivator had.

The body and the soul were linked together so after getting instructions from Telephassa, his

soul was naturally aware of everything. One could see Golden Tiger's front claws stretched out and his rear body slightly tilt. His hind legs suddenly assisted his huge tiger head to rise up towards the sky before he started howling that shook the heavens and the earth. Lei Yu's eardrum almost shattered from the howl as the grounds in the surrounding area kept shaking. Even the large tornado formed by the formation stopped spinning momentarily, clearly showing how terrifying this howl was.

After howling, the golden tiger's next two short sentences startled Lei Yu and made him freeze in place.

"Lord Lightning! Her Majesty the

Queen is waiting for you!"

The howl and those words echoed throughout the heavens so even a deaf person could clearly hear everything at this point.

A while later, Lei Yu released his internal energy and a purple light appeared on his feet. He then rose into the air and flew towards that ferocious tiger.

"You mentioned her Majesty the Queen, could... could it been Queen Telephassa?" Lei Yu's voice was trembling a bit as if something was blocking his throat. He constantly swallowed and perked up his ears hoping to clearly hear this golden tiger's response.

"You are Lord Lightning?!" Golden Tiger's body shook and even forgot to control the strength in his voice. A strong gust of wind blew against Lei Yu as he spoke, Lei Yu didn't care about that. What he was most concerned about was the answer to his question.

"I am Lightning."

"This is great, this is too good! You are correct, she is my Queen!" Golden Tiger looked very excited as his big head kept swinging back and forth. In another area, his physical body had already rushed to the main castle hall and said a few words: "My Queen, Lord Demon King, come with me! I've found him!"



Lei Yu's mind was in a daze. For him, it had only been a few years since he had separated from Telephassa and Minotaur Linos and he already missed them a lot. For bull-head and the Queen to have waited over a thousand years, how excited would they look?

"We... we aren't leaving?" Lei Yu urgently and excitedly asked.

Golden Tiger's big mouth formed a grin that revealed his fangs, "Lord Lightning, how can our speed compare to her Majesty the Queen and Lord Demon King? They are rushing here right now and I believe it shouldn't be too long."

Lei Yu's heart started beating like crazy and he kept clenching and

unclenching his fists.

Within the tornado, Bei Dou, Bei Sha and two other fellow apprentice-brothers in the same generation were watching and listening to the whole ordeal. Every sentence they heard made them more shocked than the next.

"We were really misled by that kid; he's not simple at all! He actually has such a close relationship with the Demon King and the Queen of the Southern Wild Lands!" Bei Dou mumbled out loud.

"Right." The beady eyed Bei Sha said at the side. He then had a scared afterthought, "It's fortunate we didn't make things difficult for him, or else if those two powerful

existences found out, our Four  
Illusory Court might no longer  
exist!"

# Chapter 293: Lord Lightning

"You're right." Those at the side agreed, "Previously Golden Tiger came to our Four Illusory Court and said the kid had a very close relationship with the Wild Land's two monarchs. Our Four Illusory Court and the Southern Wild Lands aren't that far apart. Although the Wild Land's Demon King and Queen never step out of their territory, if our Four Illusory Court has conflict with their people, the four great Commanders of their region and their Left and Right Generals could easily break our tornado formation. This would

cause our place to never have any peace and quiet ever again.

"Junior brothers Bei Sha and Bei Guang, don't overly praise their powers and look down on our own strength. My Four Illusory Court isn't a place that anyone can offend either or else we wouldn't be classified as one of the five great Sects!" Bei Dou was only saying this because he thought the two monarchs wouldn't step out of the Southern Wild Lands. If the two really appeared, most likely the entire Four Illusory Court would come out to welcome them.

"Yes! We understand senior brother's lesson!" The two replied and nodded.

Like usual, the tornado kept on spinning while Lei Yu's face had a look of excitement on it. The excitement he was feeling made him extremely restless right now.

Standing to the side, Golden Tiger was extremely surprised in his heart. Even though he had heard a bit about Lightning, the two monarchs of the Wild Lands have never involved themselves in the Immortal World's matters for the past several hundreds of years.

They also have not stepped out of the Southern Wild Lands either and would just hand down everything to their subordinates to take care of.

He never expected that today, this Lightning was able to make the two monarchs break their tradition and personally come out to welcome

him. It was clear to see that this Lightning person held a lot of weight with the two monarchs!

Lei Yu was a bit anxious, "How about we go meet up with them halfway?"

After thinking for a bit, Golden Tiger smiled, "That's good too!"

The two of them was about to fly into the air when a familiar sound was heard. This was the call of a cattle!

Lei Yu was startled by it, "They've come! They're almost here!"

At this time, the four people hiding within the tornado revealed a look of surprise on their faces. Bei Dou shook while saying: "That's..."

that's... that's the voice of the Wild Land's Demon King!"

Those fellow apprentice-brothers of his standing to his side felt their scalps go numb. Bei Sha's surprised was no less than Bei Dou's, "Could the Wild Land's Demon King really... really have come?"

A violent gust of wind blew by, causing the tornado formed by the formation to shake. The tornado then actually shifted a few meters off course and revealed the edge of the Four Illusory Court!

Bei Dou sucked in a breath of air, "Quick! Quick! Stop the Tornado Formation! All disciples of the Four Illusory Court must come out and welcome them!"



The Four Illusory Court was immediately sent into chaos while the tornado gradually stopped rotating leaving only the deep circular groove in the ground. In the middle of this circular groove, the true appearance of the Four Illusory Court was revealed.

Lei Yu and Golden Tiger didn't even notice this because their eyes were staring at the two people approaching them at fast speeds!

A gold and red beam of light were similar to meteors approaching before stopping forty to fifty meters in front of Lei Yu and Golden Tiger.

Ignoring Golden Tiger, Lei Yu and the two across from him were staring at each other. After a short

while, the three of them didn't know what to say. One can clearly see the three had tears in their eyes, and their tears were filled with excitement, longing, and torment.

The bull-head and the goddess-like Telephassa slowly landed on the ground. One step at a time, the three of them walked up to each other.

At this time, dozens of people came out from within the Four Illusory Court and landed in front of their main gate about to salute them. Golden Tiger's humongous tiger tail slammed onto the ground and swept to the side, causing the ground to crack apart. Dust flew everywhere but mainly shot towards the people of the Four

Illusory Court.

These people stopped their movement. Although this attack wasn't aimed at anyone in particular, these people still understood what it was about.

Upon seeing Golden Tiger bare his fangs, everyone stood still without making a sound. It appears as if this stage was set just for Lei Yu and the other two.

Looking at the bull-head Minotaur Linos, Lei Yu was extremely excited. And when looking at the beautiful face before him, Lei Yu's heart beat increased to the point that it felt like it was going to jump out of his chest.

Breathing out several trembling

breaths, Lei Yu was the first to say:  
"Bull-head, long time no see!"

Lei Yu's greetings made everyone present dumbfounded. If someone else greeted Minotaur Linos that way, most likely they would have already ended up as another piece of dust in this area.

Minotaur Linos snorted back some booger a couple of times, "Moo!"

No one knew if he was crying or laughing.

"You've come." The gentle voice lingered in Lei Yu's ears. After clearing his throat, Lei Yu looked over... too beautiful. It was still the same beauty where one was unwilling to touch, afraid that a

touch would scar her perfectly white skin.

Telephassa didn't change her habit of clothing; it was still the white silk draping around her body with gold colored accessories. Her long jade neck and her creamy white breasts were half hidden and half revealed. Her slim waist and her beautiful pair of silky smooth legs was not covered up, even her beautiful feet was revealed for all to see. But somehow, not a bit of dust from the ground dirtied those feet in the slightest.

What moved Lei Yu's heart the most was her pair of eyes. It contained a hint of demonic charm mixed with a mysterious noble aura in them. It was seductive enough

but was still decent. She was a noblewoman that exuded a bewitching charm all the way from her bones. For some reason, Lei Yu could see from her eyes that revealed a look he had never seen before - longing!

Lei Yu exhaled, "How have you been?"

The goddess moved her beautiful legs and walked towards Lei Yu.

The embodiment of beauty had already made all the people from the Four Illusory Court narrow their eyes in love while drool was dripping down their mouths. If someone gave them a painful blow right now, most likely they wouldn't even have the sense to fight back.

Lei Yu's body was frozen in place and didn't know when the goddess had already placed her jade-like hands on Lei Yu's shoulder and planted her small red lips on Lei Yu's forehead with a kiss.

Everyone stared with wide open eyes. If anyone of them received that, most likely they wouldn't mind dying right after it!

Perhaps the only one here that didn't feel anything out of the ordinary was Minotaur Linos. Even Golden Tiger at the side had never seen her Majesty the Queen act in such a way.

Lei Yu's body trembled but he didn't avoid it. Telephassa then sweetly said: "When you left, you did this to

me as well!"

"I'm sorry." Lei Yu was apologetic and softly said: "That time I really had to leave."

Seeing the affectionate scene of those two, Minotaur Linos came up with a suggestion, "Let's go back first and talk later!"

"Ah! Oh... yea, sounds good!" Lei Yu quickly nodded. If this continued, he was afraid he wouldn't be able to endure it anymore. This woman who was the embodiment of a beautiful goddess was currently draped around him, causing his hormones to rapidly rush down to that part of his body.

"Lord Demon King!" Hearing that



Minotaur Linos and company were going to leave, Bei Dou of the Four Illusory Court finally said: "We invite the Lord Demon King to our humble Sect for some tea!"

"No thanks!" Bull-head waved his hand, "I usually don't deal with people of the Immortal World."

Bei Dou was thrown a face full of rejection but he didn't dare complain. He was already rebuffed by Golden Tiger previously and didn't dare to let out a fart. Now this time it was the Wild Land's Demon King, what kind of status did he have? What qualifications did he have to resent him? Most likely Bei Dou wouldn't even dare to allow resentment to grow in his heart.

Around this time, there were countless demonic cultivators flying in the air that blotted out the entire sky. There were over ten thousand of them! This type of scene immediately caused the dozen or so Four Illusory Court figures to stare with wide eyes and mouths agape.

A deafening chorus of voices sounded through the region, "Lord Lightning!"

Lei Yu was also a bit surprised, but upon seeing the leader of this group, Lei Yu smiled. That person was standing on top of a huge copper pillar.

# Chapter 294: A Thunderous Return

Somewhat uncomfortable, Lei Yu gently removed those white jade arms around his neck and smiled, "Don't be like this, there's too many people around."

Telephassa was a bit disappointed. She thought that after reuniting with Lei Yu, she would be in his embrace and wouldn't separate for a long time. But she was the only one that had made all the moves today.

"Benefactor!" Romon leapt into the air and descended to the ground. His toes touched the ground and

not a single sound was heard from his landing.

"Didn't I tell you to change the way you greet me?" Lei Yu smiled as he pinched his single horn.

Romon had a silly smile on him while he scratched his head, "Oh right, how come you're here?"

"It's a long story, there's no point in talking about it right now." Lei Yu helplessly shook his head.

"Everything's fine now and we've met up. Let's all return before we continue chatting!" Interrupted the bull-head.

Everyone nodded and prepared to leave. Lei Yu turned around and faced the group from the Four

Illusory Court. With a smile on his face, "Senior Bei Dou, I hope you can keep today's matter a secret. Can you do that?"

"Ah! No problem, no problem at all! Definitely!" Being suddenly called out by Lei Yu, Bei Dou felt like he had gained quite a bit of face. A close friend of the Wild Land's two monarchs called him Senior, so how could he not feel excited about it?

"Thank you!" Lei Yu continued smiling, "Just pretend today's matter never happened and I will make a special trip to visit you another day! Farewell!"

"Farewell!"

The current Bei Dou was self-

deprecating to himself: This person's strength is very ordinary and only at the early Nascent Soul stage. But he has such an enormous backing behind him, and I was previously probing him back then... I really had a death wish!

"Moo!" This was the loud cry that these tens of thousands of demonic cultivators have been hearing constantly the past few days. One could see that Minotaur Linos's body started turning illusory and gradually, his body increased by many times. The original upright him was now standing on all fours. In just a short moment, a divine bull filled with domineering might appeared before everyone.

"Lord Demon King actually

transformed into his true body!"

Up in the air, waves of astonishment were chatting all at once because they have never seen something like this before. Ever since the bull-head had reached his current power level, he had never transformed into his true body in front of people again.

Everyone watched as this domineering bull strode towards Lei Yu while his nostrils were constantly spraying out white mist, "Please!"

"You... what are you doing?" Lei Yu asked in confusion.

"Thousands of years ago, you sat atop of my back. Don't you want to

experience that feeling again?" Said the huge divine bull.

As those words came out, over ten thousand people suddenly became silent and one could only hear the wind blowing by their ears.

Everyone had their mouths wide open and their jaws almost hit the ground. Did those words actually come out of the mouth of the Wild Land's Demon King who was admired by millions?

"Things are different from the past now. Your status here is... let's not do this." Lei Yu firmly waved his hands and refused to sit. Everyone here felt he was special but Lei Yu knew his own limitations; he was merely a cultivator at the early Nascent Soul stage. He had no fear



like others when facing Minotaur Linos but Lei Yu still had to give him the respect he deserved.

"What does that have to do with anything?!" The huge divine bull muttered as his bell shaped eyes constantly blinked.

"No!" Upon saying that, Lei Yu had already disappeared from his spot with a gust of wind. Looking off into the distance, one could see his figure flying away already.

Everyone was a bit surprised how Lei Yu was able to fly without a weapon, but it was only a short moment of hesitation before they all rushed off to catch up to him.

It was only after the ten thousand

plus demonic cultivators left before those dozen or so Four Illusory Court members heaved a sigh. That Bei Dou and the other three master level existences felt a bit weak in the knees. This was the second time out of their entire lives of seeing Minotaur Linos and their first meeting was still vivid in their memories which they dared not to forget.

Bull-head and Telephassa easily caught up. As for Golden Tiger, although his speed was faster than Lei Yu's, he only dared to fly behind him and not alongside of him.

A mighty and thunderous scene. Those thousands upon thousands of demonic cultivators Lei Yu had previously hid from were now

following behind him. Lei Yu felt in his heart that this was quite imposing and enjoyable, but he knew these weren't his own actual subordinates. These people would only take orders from bull-head.

Lei Yu silently promised himself, "Once I rescue Ai Er, I need to work hard and make the Thunder Rune Sect as imposing as this!"

Lei Yu would always work hard towards his goal, something that was never doubted by others.

Those things that had happened in the past were replaying itself in Lei Yu's mind. And now, he had met up with the goddess that shouldn't have reappeared in his life. Lei Yu's heart was filled with contradictions

and he didn't know how to face them or how to deal with all of them.

The ten plus hours was considered nothing but if it was the bull-head or Telephassa, or even Golden Tiger who were flying by themselves, it wouldn't take that long from the Four Illusory Court to the desert region of the Wild Lands. But no one dared to say anything and just silently followed.

With the tens of thousands of demonic cultivators flying back and forth, it caused the other demonic cultivators in the outer regions to be extremely shocked. Perhaps at this time, the most shocked ones would be the two toads sunbathing in the region where the rivers

crisscrossed each other.

"Elder brother, I'm not seeing things right?"

"Waahh! Her Majesty the Queen is so beautiful!"

"Elder brother! You damn toad wanting to eat swan meat, I'm not talking about that! I'm talking about that person in-between Lord Demon King and her Majesty the Queen!" The smaller toad forcefully kicked his own big brother.

"You see, I knew he wasn't simple. He actually caused the two monarchs to personally capture him!" Even though the larger toad was saying this, his eyes remained on the embodiment of beauty -

Telephassa's figure. Being able to see her once, even if it was from a distance, was still enough for this lifetime.

One could see Telephassa slightly fly closer to Lei Yu and her snow white soft mounds rest against his arm. The two of them then started whispering softly about something.

"He... he... he's a friend of the two monarchs?!"

-----

Upon reaching the real Southern Wild Lands, Lei Yu was shocked to find this place was very familiar. The surrounding environment was a bit different but the city and the castle was exactly the same.

Thousands upon thousands of demonic cultivators raised their heads to watch Lei Yu and the other ten thousand plus demonic cultivators descend. Since the person they were looking for had been found, these people had to once again follow the rules. The rule for prohibiting flight hadn't been permanently changed yet.

After entering the palace, Lei Yu was arranged to stay in Telephassa's bedchambers. Even though there were pretty women to serve him, he refused them all and adhered to taking off his own clothes to bathe.

While this was going on, something else was happening in another area.

A girl was sitting in a bright and spacious office. She was dressed in business attire but it still couldn't mask her seductive figure. She was used to not buttoning the first two buttons of her white dress shirt, which happened to reveal a portion of her enticing soft mounds. Her exquisite face was definitely a man's poison and at this time, she was focusing on a file on the table while carefully marking something.



# Chapter 295:

## Reaction From The Spiritual Bead

"Donk donk donk." The sound of knocking came from the office door. The girl raised her head and picked up a cup of coffee, "Come in." Those words were in fluent Tenglong language.

"Manager." A handsome looking youth clasped his hands together and slightly bowed. "Canada's Madame Bigelow is here, will you see her now?"

After placing her coffee down,  
"Invite her in."

"Understood." The youth then left. The girl stood up and walked towards the floor to ceiling window and looked outside. It had been a few months now yet her mind couldn't forget that person.

A light knocking broke the girl's thoughts, and she walked over to the sofa and sat down. "Come in."

A middle-aged woman with long brown hair came in, so the girl smiled and pointed at the sofa intending for her to sit down as well.

"Miss Nami, we've drawn up the contract on our side and we're only waiting for your people."

The girl took the contract from the

middle-aged woman and carefully read through it. "There's no problem. Regarding the project in the Canadian side, I hope Madame will personally take care of it. We will certainly support you with everything we have." The girl stood up, "Leave the contract with me. Once I've spoken to the Chairman, I will sign it so don't worry about it."

"Then I won't bother you then." After saying that, the middle-aged woman prepared to leave.

It was at this time, the girl's eyes flashed a faint yellow light. Right after that, a golden yellow aura came out from her stomach and started wrapping around her entire body.

This whole scene was witnessed by the middle-aged woman causing her panic. She was so stunned that she was at a loss on what to do.

The girl clutched her chest and struggled to say: "Quickly call for my secretary!"

The middle-aged woman ran to the doorway in panic and motioned for the previous youth to come in.

"Manager! Manager!"

"Quickly call for Liu Hao, quick!"  
The girl's breathing started increasing and the golden light gradually enveloped her.

Filled with panic, the youth quickly took out his cell phone and started dialing a number. "Mr. Liu, that

strange situation is appearing on Manager again, please come quickly! Okay... okay... understood!"

After hanging up the phone, the youth then said: "Mr. Liu is currently in the elevator about to come up. Manager, you must hang on!"

Two minutes later, Liu Hao ran in and saw the middle-aged woman and the youth. "You two go out first!"

"Okay."

"Okay."

One could see Liu Hao run towards the girl and exhaled a breath of air. He closed his eyes and a yellow internal energy wrapped around his

palms. He then placed his palms condensed with internal energy onto the girl's abdominal area and slightly moved it around. The golden light around the girl gradually weakened and a few minutes later, the light eventually disappeared and the girl's eyes returned to its normal color.

After heavily exhaling a breath of air, Liu Hao said: "It's fine now, no more problems." After wiping the sweat on his forehead, "How come it's happening more frequently now?"

This girl was none other than the first person Lei Yu got to know in the Kou country, the girl that took Lei Yu's virginity - Nami.

"I don't know, I can only feel that the thing inside my abdomen has been rather active these few days and I can't suppress it." Nami said with a frown.

"Sigh, it would be great if master was here, he would definitely have a method to fix this. Unfortunately, I can only use my internal energy to temporarily suppress it."

"Oh right, why would you suddenly come here?" Asked Nami.

Liu Hao shrugged, "These past few days, your condition has been coming up more frequent so sister Ying Ying told me to come over more often to take a look. I didn't expect that I would coincidentally encounter it today."

After lightly exhaling her sweet breath, Nami said: "I wonder how young master is doing right now..."

"Don't worry; master will definitely catch up to those two bastards. You should think about yourself first. The Spiritual Bead of Longevity inside you is no small matter, master can tolerate it but you cannot. It would be troublesome if we can't fix it and you give birth to a kid!"

Nami's face blushed, "You're so hateful, don't say that!"

After the Spiritual Bead of Longevity saved Lei Yu and then saved Nami, it had been residing in the latter's body. It was being nourished for a long time before it



started becoming active again. For this bead to be in a cultivator was of course a good thing, but if it resided in an ordinary human's body, it could cause quite a bit of negative impact. If they don't come up with a solution fast, and once the Spiritual Bead of Longevity fully recovers, it's quite possible that Nami's abdomen might start bloating up until finally exploding to her death.

Ever since going to the Tenglong country, Nami rarely saw Lei Yu. Perhaps the two of them felt it would be embarrassing to see each other. After Lei Yu left the Mortal World, Nami requested to go back to the Kou country to assist Cui Ying Ying, and she even learned a lot of knowledge pertaining to business management. She was

now the Manager of the Planning Department of Cui Ying Corporation. This was a position with a lot of responsibilities and because Cui Ying Ying was worried Nami wouldn't be able to handle it, she deliberately arranged for an able person to assist her. This person was exactly her secretary, the previous youth that had appeared. It was fortunate that everything went very well.

Things seemed to have temporarily calmed down for now. It was impossible for the Spiritual Bead of Longevity to make a full recovery in the short term, and it should be fine with Liu Hao around acting as a temporary suppression.

-----

Lei Yu came out of the bedchambers. He was really not used to the clothes that Telephassa had laid out for him but he was helpless right now since his storage ring had been passed on to the old turtle. He had been wearing the same set of clothes for quite a few days now so he had no choice but to wear the new ones laid out for him.

Arriving at the main palace halls, many people were already congregated there. Minotaur Lino's Left and Right Generals - Tai Lao and Hei Feng; there were also the two major region's four great Commanders who had returned; and finally Golden Tiger. Those seven were currently standing in the center of the main hall in a very respectful manner.

At the head of the main hall was Minotaur Linos, Romon, and a familiar looking girl. There was also the embodiment of beauty Telephassa; they were all present.

Lei Yu felt a bit uncomfortable. First, it was the atmosphere of the main hall and second, it was the clothes he was wearing. But even though he felt awkward himself, in the eyes of all these people, Lei Yu was just too handsome to the extreme. The low-necked collar revealed his chest muscles while his long hair that hadn't been taken care of in a long time looked a bit messy. This slight messiness gave one a sense that Lei Yu had experienced many sweet and bitter things in life. The most eye-catching thing about him was the

green lightning brand on his right arm, a brand that truly identified who he was.

"So it's you!" Lei Yu finally remembered that girl.

"I'm sorry benefactor, father has already punished me. I hope that a great person like you will be magnanimous and not bother with someone like Mo Bei Li who is inexperienced and ignorant." The cute girl with the cattle-like horns lowered her head with a sincere look and pouty lips.

"It's fine. This jade pendant is the remains of my mother so I cannot give it to you, so don't get any more ideas about it." Lei Yu smiled.

"I promise I won't!" Mo Bei Li quickly waved her hands about.

"This is my daughter, Mo Bei Li." Minotaur Linos introduced.

Lei Yu smiled with a nod, and then walked by her. It was only now that he realized something - from Tai Lao and his group to the tens of thousands of demonic cultivators flying past his head; it was all to search for him. But since he was worried that it may be something else, he hid his aura from them. After many twists and turns, they've finally met up and the outcome can be considered not too bad.

# Chapter 296: Lack Of Concept

"Benefactor..."

Minotaur Linos didn't even finish speaking when Lei Yu interrupted: "From today onwards, everyone has to either call me little Yu or Lightning, don't call me Lord whatever or benefactor!"

"Little Yu..."

Lei Yu turned around in surprise; this bull-head's reaction was quite fast. He then heard bull-head say: "I have heard all the details from Romon about the events on coming to the Immortal World. Tomorrow,

I will personally lead some of them and demand her back."

"Don't!" Lei Yu's refusal made everyone present surprised.

"Little Yu, you... didn't you risk your life like crazy just to rescue Ai Er? How come..."

Lei Yu exhaled a breath, "The Void Sect said that Ai Er was currently in secluded meditation absorbing spiritual energy. No matter if it's true or not, I don't want to chance it. In case if it's for real, wouldn't our actions cause Ai Er's life be in danger? And if any accidents were to befall Ai Er, I will not hesitate to die along with her."

Telephassa's body suddenly



trembled upon hearing Lei Yu's words; a slight mist couldn't help but start forming in her eyes. Her petite lips slightly opened but she didn't know what to say.

Lei Yu swallowed a few times. He knew that by saying those words would make Telephassa quite sad, but now wasn't the time to explain. He will wait until they were alone together before he clarifies himself.

"How could it turn out like this?" Romon was very clear on this matter. He couldn't help but be surprised upon hearing an ordinary person like Ai Er was in secluded meditation.

"According to the Void Sect's Void Immortal, Ai Er had a set of

extraordinary bone structure and was suitable for cultivation."

"Oh? This is quite inconceivable."

"I thought it was strange as well, but since the matter has come to this point, there's no way to change it. I have a two year appointment with the Void Sect - two years later I will go and take Ai Er away from that place. We can't do it now because I really don't want any accidents to befall her." Lei Yu firmly said.

"Okay, no problem then. Two years later, I will accompany you there!" Said Minotaur Linos.

"No!" Everyone present didn't expect Lei Yu to once again reject

Minotaur Linos's idea. "I wish to rely on myself to take care of this matter. Bull-head, thank you for your good intentions!"

"How can we do that? No way!"  
Bull-head kept shaking his huge head.

Lei Yu wanted to change the subject and asked: "Bull-head, I realize that the people of the Immortal World are really afraid of you. Even one of the five great Sects, the Four Illusory Court are the same, not to mention other people. Can you tell me what that reason is?"

The bull-head thought for a bit,  
"This matter must start from the beginning, so I'll tell you in detail in the future."

Lei Yu nodded and felt there had to be a good reason for this. All the great and small Sects took up a large portion of the Immortal World, yet this bull-head was able to take one-third of the world as his own territory. Lei Yu felt this was rather bizarre.

"What level have you currently reached?" Lei Yu asked. He was very concerned about this matter because just his seven subordinates were already experts at the Soul Splitting stage. So what level was this bull-head at then?

"You can go ahead and guess."  
Smiled the bull-head.

"Late Soul Splitting stage?" Lei Yu didn't want to guess too high

because someone that exceeded the Soul Splitting stage was like a fairy tale for him. So far, the only person he has met that may be on that fairy tale like level was most likely the Void Immortal, and of course Lei Yu wouldn't dare to ask him what level he was at.

The bull-head shook his huge head, "Incorrect, that's her Majesty the Queen's current strength."

Lei Yu was shocked, Telephassa had already reached the late Soul Splitting stage?!

"Could it be that you've already exceeded Soul Splitting and have reached the Boundary Transition stage?" Lei Yu's eyes widened as he swallowed a few times.

One could only see the bull-head shake his head again, "Let's put it this way: If you and Romon still haven't come by now, I'm afraid you guys won't be able to see me anymore."

Lei Yu was in complete and utter shock. "Could it be..."

"That's right; I've already reached the Immortal World's last realm, the Mahayana stage!"

"Heavens!"

Lei Yu was the only one present that was shocked. When Romon first heard about it, the look on his face was no less than Lei Yu's current expression.

What kind of concept was the

Mahayana stage? There was no such thing within Lei Yu's mind. Could it be an existence that can blot out the heavens with a single hand? [1] Although Lei Yu wasn't sure why Minotaur Linos and Telephassa usually never stepped out of the Southern Wild Lands, there has to be a reason behind this and Lei Yu believes they will eventually reveal this to him. [1]

The bull-head lightly smiled, "For me to have achieved my current levels, it was all thanks to the God of War Ares. I focused my studies on the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, and now I have thoroughly understood the combination of the six groups of six lunar stars. And that's why I am feared by all."

Lei Yu had always thought the attack method of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique was ingenious, one could even use the word "exquisite" to describe it. But he never expected by focusing on this technique would allow a person to have such achievements.

He was shocked but Lei Yu wasn't going to envy the bull-head. He believes that eventually, he too would have such achievements. By then, he will truly become an existence that stood at the peak. Lei Yu wasn't trying to seek wealth or any type of vanity; it was just because this had always been his dream.

Lei Yu vividly recalled all that has experienced. If it weren't for the



fact he wasn't strong enough, all those unfortunate things would never have happened. Even if it was merely for the reason to protect those around him, Lei Yu would still have strict demands for himself.

"Let's go back to her previous conversation..." Lei Yu had wanted to change subject but the bull-head would naturally not forget so easily. "I feel that when the time comes, it's more appropriate if I accompany you."

It was natural for one to seek help; at least it would lessen the risks. But since the Void Immortal allowed him to leave, this was similar to setting a gentleman's agreement. If Lei Yu couldn't even get out of this situation himself,

most likely everyone in the Immortal World would think Lei Yu was hiding behind the backing of the bull-head. By that time, even when he relies on his own hard work to gain achievements, everyone would think it was only from the help of the bull-head. And that's something Lei Yu didn't want to happen.

"It's still early now, how about we discuss this in two years?" Asked Lei Yu.

"That's fine." The bull-head nodded.

"Help me with a favor: For the next two years, I need a quiet place so that I can concentrate on my cultivation." Said Lei Yu.

"That's simple; in the rear of the city is the Devil King's castle. That's where Kalchas is also staying." Said the bull-head.

"Prophet Kalchas? He's cultivating there as well?" It was only now that Lei Yu was reminded this person was here as well.

"Correct. His strength is merely at the mid Nascent Soul stage so he has to increase it or else I won't be able to give him any responsibilities."

Lei Yu nodded. In the Mortal World, a person's status was determined by their cultivation level. It was the same in the Immortal World. If you weren't strong enough, you will certainly be ignored by others. Even

if you had the best talent, you still had to work hard on cultivating in order to become successful. This was a rule and a fact that couldn't be changed, no matter which place a person was from.

As night was approaching, everyone in the city was celebrating the return of their totem Lightning. All the demonic cultivators were told by those that knew the whole story about the newcomer Lei Yu. This caused them to hold incomparable reverence to Lei Yu whose cultivation level wasn't very high.

At the highest loft of the castle, the bull-head stood there looking like a mighty being. His hand was holding onto a cup of alcohol he brewed himself, "What is our totem?!"

-----

[1] The author went schizophrenic on us with two completely different thoughts - talking about how strong the mahayana stage is and then suddenly wondering why they don't leave the southern wild lands.

# Chapter 297: The Infatuated Goddess

Over tens of thousands of demons in the city answered in unison: "Lightning!" The momentum filled reply broke through to the heavens.

"I believe everyone knows the origin of our Lightning totem. Today, Lightning has finally returned. From today onwards, this king decrees: "The rule that prohibits flying has been abolished!"

The scene was quite lively as countless demons rejoiced! Even some demonic cultivators at the Gold Core stage who had never flown before rose up into the air.

They started dancing in the air while mumbling, "This feeling of flying... so awesome!"

The city crowd was bustling with activity and joy while the castle inhabitants broke their past disciplined silence and celebrated as well. Even though alcoholic beverages didn't work on them, this celebratory item couldn't be missing. Lei Yu drank whenever he was toasted and didn't turn a single person down.

It's not easy to find an outlet for the long pent up pressure. Although Lei Yu's heart was missing Ai Er, he was still rather happy at this moment. He couldn't ruin the crowd's mood with his own personal issues.

The banquet lasted throughout the night. The bull-head and Telephassa had arranged for their subordinates to hand out a lot of food and alcohol to the demonic cultivators in the city. It was a sleepless night and only at the break of dawn did things start to quiet down.

Inside Telephassa's bedchambers. The beauty supported her chin with her jade like hands as she stared at the man across from her.

"What's there to see on me? There's no need to keep staring right?" Lei Yu said a bit uncomfortably.

"A thousand years. I've waited for you for over a thousand years so can't I look a little bit longer?" Said



Telephassa in an intoxicated manner. Her heart had been long melted by this man in front of her. Even though it's been over a thousand years, she still couldn't forget the look Lei Yu gave her while she was in his embrace. That look was the flames that had melted her cold heart.

"Your majesty..."

"Did you forget what to call me?" Telephassa asked with a pout. The expression she had would most likely cause any man to melt on the spot, but she would only show that in front of Lei Yu.

"T... Telephassa."

"That's much better. Today is our

reunion so does that mean we can mate now?" After saying that, Telephassa felt her face turn red but she really wanted to hear Lei Yu's decision.

Lei Yu was speechless; how could she still be so explicit after a thousand years?

"I'm sorry Telephassa. You should know that I'm already a person with a girlfriend." Lei Yu knew that saying these words would most likely sadden her, but this was nevertheless a fact.

"It doesn't matter. I've said before that you may have unlimited amount of sex slaves and I wouldn't care." Said Telephassa without scruples.

"But she's my lover, not some sex slave!" Lei Yu's voice sounded a bit emotional causing Telephassa to be surprised. "Sorry, I..."

"I know her name is called Ai Er right? She's someone that you were together with before meeting me."

Lei Yu nodded, "Right. After all, she is my first love. Although it's not that explosive heart-stirring kind or one that had weathered the storms of life, it's because of the peacefulness that made me understand her more. I cannot lose her. In my heart, she will always be in the first place."

Telephassa's body trembled from a sob; it was tears that came straight from the heart. "Then what about

me? What am I considered in your heart? A thousand years, I've waited for you for over a thousand years! I've been missing and longing for you throughout these past a thousand years! In order for you not to despise me, I worked hard in cultivating in order to retain my youthful looks. Everything was all for you!" After saying that, Telephassa couldn't talk anymore from sobbing too hard.

"It was fine if I never got to see you for the rest of my life, but now that I've seen you, I too don't want to lose you! I know that there's no end to cultivation and our lives will continue to be extended indefinitely. That's why I will no longer care about your age. But please give me some time, two

years! In two years, I will tell Ai Er everything about us because I don't want to hide anything from her."

"Does that mean I am also very important in your heart?"

Telephassa's eyes widened as she hoped to hear the answer she wanted. She wasn't let down when Lei Yu silently nodded.

A smile broke through Telephassa's tears as she wrapped her arms around Lei Yu's neck. Her soft lips gently affixed themselves to Lei Yu's cheek but she didn't further cross that line. Lei Yu's words were clear - in two years time he will talk to Ai Er. If Ai Er didn't mind, that's when she and Lei Yu can truly be together. She had waited for a thousand years already so what's

another two?

Since this is what Lei Yu said, that clearly meant he was unwilling to forsake this goddess that was infatuated with him. It would be great with Ai Er agreed, but if she didn't, even if he had to hurt her, Lei Yu would have to find the best method to solve this. Ultimately, he didn't want to cause any pain to his true gal.

The next day. Because Lei Yu didn't want to delay his training, Minotaur Linos led him to the so called mysterious Devil King's castle.

The Devil King's castle wasn't that far from the city, even a slow walker would only take two hours to reach it. Even though it was close by,

without the Demon King's permission, no one was allowed to take a single step inside. This was a very mysterious place that contained a lot of pure energy, which made it the perfect place for cultivating.

The so called Devil King's castle was established by a devil's cultivator that had dominated the Southern Wild Lands in the past. According to the bull-head, that person reached the Mahayana stage as well, but no one knew whether that person continued to make further breakthroughs or died.

It was also around the time when the Devil King disappeared, the Immortal World fell in chaos all because of wanting to occupy this

precious territory. Not to mention this precious cultivating area, just the Southern Wild Lands itself would make many people salivate. This was the southernmost tip that was easy to defend and hard to attack. With or without the protection of barriers or formation arrays, this place wasn't easy to break past. That's why it was such a sought-after place.

What made others red with envy was the Devil King's old nest. Buried in the depths of the ancient castle were countless amounts of treasures. One should know for a super expert at Mahayana stage, how could their treasures be ordinary?

This place was surrounded by



barren lands where one could only see a range of uneven sand dunes. Strong winds would blow by kicking up layers of sand that made Lei Yu unconsciously close his eyes.

"It's here." The bull-head pointed at the front where a slightly higher sand dune was.

Lei Yu looked carefully but couldn't find anything different. He could only feel the originally hot desert would have a chilly aura occasionally burst through the sand beneath his feet.

One could see Minotaur Linos lightly clap his hands together, "Open the door!"

The sand dune suddenly collapsed

like quicksand before the gradual emergence of a cave.

The bull-head was the first to jump in. Right after that, Lei Yu followed him without hesitation. The cave entrance didn't seem that high because Lei Yu was only in the air for a few seconds before he landed on the ground.

"Incredible! This is too incredible!" Lei Yu stared around with wide eyes. This place had a luxurious building that was no less than the size of the castle back in the city.

Even though it was buried in the desert, this place wasn't the gloomy darkness as Lei Yu had imagined. Only carefully scrutinizing the place did he find out where the

light was coming from. The walls of this place were constructed with a special material, one that was transparent-like with the role of light reflection. Not only that, the material itself emitted a faint light. Lighting was absolutely not an issue here. And because there was so much of this special material, this place was almost no different to being outside during daytime.

# Chapter 298: Devil King's Castle

Lei Yu could clearly sense that even the walls were filled to the brim with pure spiritual energy. This was indeed a good place for cultivation!

When one followed the walls for a hundred meters, that's where their eyes will come upon a castle made of crystals!

The material of the castle was the same as the walls. The crystal castle was surrounded by the walls and although it looked like a bird cage, Lei Yu wouldn't mind being trapped in such a luxurious looking bird cage at all.

"Lord Demon King, Lord Lightning."

While carefully observing this Devil King's castle, Lei Yu didn't notice not too far from them stood a two-headed demon. But one of its head seemed lifeless as it lay limp. Lei Yu was immediately shocked and cried out: "You're Silo!"

"Lord Lightning remembers me? It's truly my fortune!"

Silo's appearance didn't change at all and still looked the same as back in ancient Greece. Dark gray skin and layers of clearly defined muscles that gave one a feeling of containing explosive power. On top of its snake like head were horns that belonged to the bovine species. Except he only had one horn while

the other one grew on the other head. But thanks to Lei Yu, the other head will never be able to rise up ever again.

"Of course I remember! Back then I was forced beyond circumstances so I hope you don't blame me for it!" Lei Yu didn't spell out what his words meant but the meaning behind was very clear. And his eyes were staring at the lifeless head while he was speaking.

"It's been a thousand years, why would I bother remembering it?" Silo showed a grin with his big terrifying looking mouth.

A sudden chilly and sinister-like wind blew by making Lei Yu shiver. "This place has a ghastly kind of

feeling!"

Even though there was plenty of light here, but the gusts of sinister wind made it uncomfortable.

Bull-head smiled, "Carefully look at what's surrounding us."

Lei Yu looked at his surroundings and noticed at the top of the walls at evenly spaced distance was a red crystal-like stone. And then at the corners where the walls met, there would be a dark red crystal-like stone the size of a human's head. Lei Yu finally understood why this place felt sinister-like with its chilly winds.

Each of those big dark red crystal-like stones had light blue gaseous

bodies floating around it, and the sinister-like chilly winds were released by those light blue gas.

"What are they?" Lei Yu asked.

"Little Yu, you should know that in the Immortal World, there's an item that can be considered currency right?"

Lei Yu nodded, "They're crystal stones. There are different types of them that denote different amounts of value."

"Correct, and all the walls and this entire castle you see before you is formed by those crystal stones."

"What?!" Lei Yu's scalp went numb as his eyes became big and round. He almost didn't believe the bull-



head's words.

"It is, you didn't hear wrong, they are indeed all made up of crystal stones. Even though they are normal crystal stones, it's rare to see such a huge amount of it all in one place." Bull-head lightly smiled as it was obvious he understood this place very clearly.

Lei Yu cleared his throat, and then went towards a corner of the wall. He then gently knocked on the wall and heard a crisp sound in response.

Lei Yu placed his palm on the wall and then closed his eyes. He was then surprised from sensing a very pure spiritual energy within the walls. Just a single palm touching

the wall allowed Lei Yu to feel the vastness of this energy aura!

"This is too incredible!" Lei Yu's breathing was no longer uniform as shocked appeared in his eyes.

The bull-head smiled, "This isn't considered much."

"This isn't considered much?"

"Right, nothing much. You should know that crystal stones are separated into five different qualities. The most ordinary are the white crystal stones, then yellow, blue, and purple."

"Right, that I know of but I haven't found any traces of other crystal stones!" Lei Yu looked around and didn't notice anything. But just the

amount of this normal crystal stones would make anyone go crazy!

"You forgot about the ground."

Lei Yu forcefully cleared his throat and slowly lowered his gaze. Wasn't this the yellow quality crystal stone that he was stepping on?

"Then what about the blue and purple ones?" Lei Yu asked while trembling.

The bull-head's large fingers pointed towards the steps leading into the entrance of the castle. Each layer of steps was neatly carved out into blue and purple steps.

"Who the f\*ck gave birth to this Devil King? How on earth is he this

rich?!" Lei Yu couldn't help start cursing.

Bull-head and Silo both started laughing, and the former then said: "When the Devil King disappeared, everything had been buried by this desert. In fact, the Immortal World fell into chaos was precisely from fighting over this place. The so called fighting for this territory was an excuse. You should know that for a super expert devils cultivator at the Mahayana stage, they would definitely possess some supreme treasure. But everyone only knows there's a treasure somewhere here but they didn't know it was a cultivation paradise.

"No wonder!" Lei Yu's heart was beating like crazy that was no less

than the excitement from seeing Telephassa again. "Back when I was in the outer periphery of the Chaotic Star Sea, I got to know two friends. When they saw the crystal stones, they were extremely excited about it. I had thought back then that these things were best for cultivation purposes, but because there weren't much, I was unwilling to use them. I then later met two toads in the outer region of the Southern Wild Lands where the rivers crisscrossed; they mentioned that using Gold Cores or crystal stones to cultivate was a luxury. I never expected bull-head, that you would have such a good place!"

It's natural for everyone to enjoy the feeling of being praised by others, so this bull-head closed his

eyes and grinned with an intoxicated look on his face.

Lei Yu then asked: "How come you have such a good place yet don't let your own underlings, or even those Commanders of your two regions to cultivate in? As they become stronger, doesn't it mean your power becomes stronger as well?" Lei Yu felt this was weird regarding this circumstance.

Minotaur Linos shook his head, "No way, there's over tens of thousands of demonic cultivators in the Southern Wild Lands. Accurately speaking, there are at least twenty thousand of them. If such a large number of them came here to cultivate, I estimate in less than a month and the crystal stones here

will be completely drained empty."

Lei Yu nodded, "So that's why."

"Even though this crystal stones have the ability to regenerate themselves, once they are completely drained, that ability won't work anymore."

"They actually have the ability to regenerate?" Lei Yu was once again shocked by bull-head's words.

"Correct, those four dark red crystals you previously saw are actually blood crystal stones. The blood crystal stones must be a pair in order to have give out this regenerative ability. Those four perfectly forms two pairs, therefore it allows three to five people

cultivating at the same time and not deplete the energy too fast.

Lei Yu was at the point where he was speechless. Magical things such as this are usually what people are envious of. If the bull-head wasn't protecting this holy ground, most likely it would have been robbed clean by others already.

If it required two of them to form a pair in order to give off a regenerative ability, an idea suddenly formed in Lei Yu's head.

"If we took a blood crystal stone and broke it into two, would it still give off a regenerative ability?"

Lei Yu remembered he attained a blood crystal stone in the outer periphery of the Chaotic Star Sea,



and he is certain that Tian Ye and Yanrong wouldn't be willing to spend it. If it was really possible to split the crystal stone into two and let it give off a regenerative ability to surrounding crystal stones, then that would mean Yanrong's little town will never be poor anymore?

# Chapter 299:

## Inseparably Interconnected

Lei Yu was only thinking these thoughts in his mind and hadn't said it out loud when Minotaur Linos continued: "Unfortunately, a complete blood crystal stone, even if it's the size of a human's head, will lose their regenerative ability once you break it apart."

Lei Yu was a bit disappointed, but after thinking it through, he really shouldn't be disappointed. Even if that idea didn't work, they could still sell that blood crystal stone and gain over a hundred million white

crystal stones. With that, their town could still survive for a very long time.

Lei Yu suddenly thought of something and asked: "Bull-head, isn't the Violet Gold Hall sitting on top of a crystal stone mine?"

"Correct."

"Then why hasn't anyone gone to take it from them?" Lei Yu was puzzled by this.

The bull-head lightly smiled, "Many people are confused by this question as well, but what they all don't know is one reason. Do you know anything about the Breeze Pavilion?"

Lei Yu thought for a moment, "I

don't know much about them, only that they are one of the five great Sects of the Immortal World."

"Correct. Currently, I don't want to involve myself in the affairs of the Immortal World. If it weren't for the appearance of you, little Yu, I'm afraid I would have never stepped out of the Southern Wild Lands. Even though I haven't really paid attention to the matters of the Immortal World, Tai Lao and Hei Feng would often move about outside and report to me what's going on. Regarding the close relationship between the Four Illusory Court and the Void Sect, they are using each other for their own benefits but they also can't do without each other."

"How come?" Lei Yu couldn't understand why. "The main strength behind the Four Illusory Court is their formations. Although the strength of a single member isn't strong, I know that the disciples of the Four Illusory Court will never make an appearance alone no matter the situation. They will always travel with at least four people in their group. As long as they have four people, they can set a formation in a very short time. Not to mention defeating, they could at least easily trap their opponent inside the formation for a while. With such abilities, who would the Four Illusory Court fear? As for the Void Sect, with the Void Immortal as their backing, I believe no one would dare to go pick a fight with them right?" Lei Yu directly

spoke his thoughts out loud.

"There was nothing wrong with what you've said, but that's only on the surface." Pausing for a bit, the bull-head continued: "Even though the Four Illusory Court have their formations as their support, the overall strength of their Sect is rather weak. They only have a few dozen disciples in total, and the strongest of the Four Illusory Court, Bei Dou, is only at the late Soul Splitting stage. As for his three other senior and junior brothers, they are on different levels of the Soul Splitting stage. When the four of them join forces to set a formation, it can cover a huge area and can trap an opponent that's on a single higher cultivation realm than them. They generally wouldn't

have rivals but it's normal for other Sects to have super powerful existences. That's why they are helpless on that aspect and can only rely on the Void Sect. If something were to happen, a formation would be set. And before the reinforcements from the Void Sect arrive, they are fully capable of trapping their opponents down. As for the Void Sect, even if they have the backing of the Void Immortal, their Sect is on top of a cliff between some mountains. It's easy for them to be attacked and hard to defend. That's why they need the Four Illusory Court's formation to help in their defense. As a result, those two forces reached a consensus.

Lei Yu finally understood

everything. It looks like previously he was only half-informed on what was really going on in the Immortal World and had no idea of the complexities deep down.

"In addition..." The bull-head broke Lei Yu's chain of thoughts and he said: "When it comes to the Violet Gold Hall and the Breeze Pavilion, their relationship is even easier to explain."

"Oh? What about them?"

"The concept behind the Breeze Pavilion is all about the group dynamic. You touch one hair on them and the whole body would move out. They have a large amount of members but providing for so many people requires large



amounts of crystal stones.

Therefore they need the Violet Gold Hall to provide for them. Perhaps you might ask: If they have so many people, why don't they occupy the Violet Gold Hall's crystal mine?"

"I was just about to ask that."

Smiled Lei Yu.

"The reason is simple: Mining the crystal stones is an easy process, but it has to undergo a special refinement in order for it to flow out into the market as the currency we use. And the Violet Gold Hall happens to be the only Sect that has this refinement method."

"So that's why." It dawned on Lei Yu how out of the five great Sects, four of them were inseparably

interconnected to each other. As for the Skywalk Sect, Lei Yu wasn't interested in it but the bull-head still explained it to him.

"As for the Skywalk Sect, even though they don't have a formation to protect their Sect like the Four Illusory Court, the location of their base is easy to defend and hard for one to attack. They also have a supreme expert that has the same strength as the Void Immortal as their backing, that's why very little people would dare to have any ill intentions towards them."

"Oh right, what level of strength has the Void Immortal reached?" Lei Yu suddenly remembered and asked this.

"If there's no unexpected surprise, he should be breaking through the Boundary Transition stage and reaching the Mahayana stage soon. But if the Nine Heavenly Profound Thunders don't appear, he cannot make the breakthrough. This is the law of the Immortal World." Said the bull-head.

"Nine Heavenly Profound Thunders?"

"You don't need to understand these things for now because it's simply a matter that's too far away for you." The bull-head smiled.

Lei Yu nodded; it is too far away. He was merely at the early Nascent Soul stage so a matter that was so distantly far away was not worth

thinking about. But when Lei Yu remembered what Romon had said before, he did receive a lightning attack yet it was different from what Romon mentioned. He was supposed to experience it nine times but perhaps it was due to the Dragon Vein that modified it. At least that's what Lei Yu thought.

"Didn't you say that Prophet Kalchas was here as well?" Asked Lei Yu.

"Follow me, he's inside." Along with the bull-head, the two of them stepped onto those luxurious steps. One was in front and one in behind as they walked towards the castle's main entrance. As for Silo, he had already disappeared, possibly to do his own thing while guarding the

Devil King's castle.

While stepping on the steps made of crystal stones, the spiritual energy made Lei Yu very comfortable. The shivering cold he experienced previously by the chilly winds had already been pushed to the back of his mind.

"Master!"

A cold and husky voice came from within the castle. Lei Yu looked over and this was the first time he saw Kalchas's actual face. Kalchas didn't have a face belonging to a human's. Although it was similar with all the five sense organs, he's dark green skin wasn't something humans would have.

Kalchas was extremely thin to the point where he looked like only skin and bones. Lei Yu thought that was strange but didn't think asking the reason would be polite.

"Do you still remember him?" The bull-head smiled as he pointed at Lei Yu behind him.

One could see Kalchas widened his eyes before kneeling on the ground, "Lord Lightning!"

"Quickly get up!" Lei Yu ran up and supported him up. "Prophet, long time no see."

Kalchas had a self-deprecating smile on his face, "I never expected... As a Prophet, I actually couldn't predict that you would

arrive here so soon. And finally meet with... master." Kalchas originally wanted to say Telephassa but changed his mind."

"From now on, you will be cultivating here. If you have any matters, you can have Silo take care of it. Two years of time won't allow you to increase your cultivation by much, but at least it's faster than being outside. Little Yu, I will be taking my leave first." Said the bull-head.

# Chapter 300: Two Years Later

After sending off bull-head, Lei Yu and Kalchas chatted about some stuff in general and the latter went back to his cultivation. Finally alone, Lei Yu started examining the entire Devil King's castle.

The decoration of this place was very unique. Although from the outside looking in, it was a castle, the interior didn't look like some magnificent throne room of a king's. There were actually strange runes everywhere on the walls while the hall was densely packed with random items. There were only some weapon-like items that Lei Yu



recognized, the rest he had no clue what they were. Lei Yu didn't dare to start touching those random items though. After glancing at Kalchas who had already closed his eyes in cultivation, Lei Yu went to look for a spot a bit further away in case they interfered with each other.

Lei Yu walked towards a hallway and noticed there was a door at the end. The door was actually giving Lei Yu a rather strange feeling.

"Why would there be a door there?" The door was made out of wood which was the only material that was different from what the castle was made up of. Due to curiosity, Lei Yu started walking towards it.

In this place, no one was going to limit what Lei Yu could do. Even if he were to take half the items in the castle as his own, no one would make a sound because of Lei Yu's special status. But of course Lei Yu wouldn't do something like that.

After walking up to the wooden door, Lei Yu gently pushed but the door seemed to be stuck or something. The door didn't budge a single bit even when Lei Yu used more strength. He thought this was really strange because based on his strength, an ordinary push or pull had enough power to shatter boulders, yet this door didn't show the slightest sign of moving.

Slightly annoyed, Lei Yu slammed his fists onto the door. After a loud

"bang," the wooden door still showed no signs of change.

"My Lord, what's going on?" Kalchas's voice came from the other end of the hallway.

"Uh, nothing! I'm just looking around." Lei Yu frantically replied, and then there was no more response at the other end.

Fearing that he would affect Kalchas's cultivation, Lei Yu refrained from making any other actions. Since he was already here, he might as well cultivate at this spot!

He sat down cross-legged and then slowly withdrew the internal energy from the infant residing in his

dantian. According to the mantra of his own cultivation method, the plentiful spiritual energy from everywhere was drawn into his body and circulated through his meridians, making Lei Yu feel extremely comfortable. The Spiritual Bracelet of Frost on his wrist was faintly glowing as two streams of internal energy was coming from it and entering Lei Yu's body to assist him in cultivating.

While Lei Yu was unaware, that wooden door Lei Yu was unable to budge started lightly shaking and revealed a crack. It was complete darkness looking inside that crack, but two green dots made a flash before disappearing. What was it? Why would it be so dark behind the

door? Because Lei Yu was fully focused on cultivating, he didn't notice what had just happened.

In another area.

"Long Er, I have to return and let my family's master know what happened!" Said a handsome looking youth in all white while underwater near the Void Sect.

"Lord White, don't worry. I will continue searching for the young master's whereabouts here. If there's any news, I will personally go to the Ceng Hong Villa and let you know."

Big White nodded, "That'll work." With a flash of white light, Big White had already disappeared

without a trace.

No matter how good a relationship the Four Illusory Court had with the Void Sect, because of Lei Yu's request, the relationship between him and the Southern Wild Lands was kept a secret. If the Void Sect were to find out about this, most likely they wouldn't dare to act so arrogant any longer.

Two years later...

Amidst the rolling mountain ranges and enshrouded by fog and clouds was the Void Sect.

"Senior brother, the changes she has undergone is quite a bit!" Said a fat elderly man towards a person standing at the top of a pavilion.

"Right, just two years has allowed her to change from an ordinary person to her current self. It wasn't easy though, and I believe there will never be another Void Sect disciple that had such a treatment."

The two men talking were none other than the Void Sect's Sovereign Kun Feng and his junior brother Kun Xian.

Not too far away was a refined girl standing at the top of the pavilion as well. A gentle breeze blew by, rustling her white silk-like dress. A lock of black hair fluttered beside her cheeks, making her look like a girl that had transcended the mundane world. She raised her white jade like hands and stroked her hair keeping it neat. Her

attractive face would make any man's heart beat a little faster, but it wouldn't make them have evil thoughts. She gave others a feeling that they couldn't get near and was only a white lotus they can appreciate from a distance. If they tried to pick it, they will definitely fall into the pond.

If one didn't observe carefully, they wouldn't notice that her delicate face contained a hint of maturity and cold arrogance. Was she born with it? Nope, definitely not! She was none other than the person that Lei Yu endured untold hardships by travelling through the Immortal Realm in hopes to rescue the love of his life - Nuo Ai Er.

Standing beneath the pavilion were



all the Void Sect disciples peering with mouths agape. The beautiful girl's sudden appearance made them unable to tear their eyes away from her figure. She was just too beautiful!

"Ai Er." A voice from a distance transferred over. The refined girl turned and exposed a slightly sweet smile. She then stepped onto a white light that came out of her sleeves and sped off in a flash.

Those disciples standing below the pavilion were all in a daze as the gentle and elegant figure lingered in their minds.

"Master." The girl gently landed in front of the two elderly people and slightly bowed.

"Ai Er, there's only three more days before your battle, are you ready for it?" Asked Kun Feng.

"Don't worry master, no matter what kind of person he is; Ai Er will not be merciful!" Ai Er's eyes had viciousness to them, but because it was hidden deeply, one wouldn't be able to detect it.

"That's good. With your current early Nascent Soul stage strength, it shouldn't be hard to deal with him. But don't forget, you cannot take his life."

"Ai Er understands."

Kun Feng nodded, "Go."

"Yes!" Ai Er floated away leaving those two elderly people.

"Senior brother, this is really unbelievable. She actually completely forgot about her own lover?" Said Kun Xian with surprise.

Kun Feng lightly smiled, "With the spiritual grounds erasing her memory, I believe she only thinks she's a member of the Void Sect. In her mind, there shouldn't be any other existences."

In another area.

"Little Yu, you really don't need me to accompany you?" The bull-head's big head was swaying about in front of a youth.

"I really don't need it. I'll say those same words - I hope to rely on myself to settle this matter. Perhaps

it's considered nothing for you, but I don't want to be known as someone in the Immortal World that relies on your status to make my way about."

"Then what if you encounter some type of dangerous situation?"

Asked a beautiful goddess walking over with her jade-like legs and a slight frown on her face.

Lei Yu lightly smiled, "Don't worry, the Void Immortal and I had an agreement so there shouldn't be any issues."

# Chapter 301:

## Changing Course Halfway

"No! I'm still worried!" Telephassa clung to Lei Yu's waist. The soft and comfortable feeling made Lei Yu tremble a bit, but this wasn't the time to think about these things.

"How about this - getting to the Void Sect requires three days for me. If there's no news of me another three days after that, bull-head can come look for me. How about that?"

Lei Yu was very determined and those two knew his personality. The

bull-head and Telephassa could only helplessly nod their heads.

As Lei Yu was about to exit the doors of the main hall, he felt a pair of eyes intently staring at him. He lightly smiled and turned around, "Don't worry and wait for my return. I'm sure Ai Er will understand."

"I'll wait for you..." Her gentle lips quivered as Telephassa's heart beat increased. These were the words she really wanted to hear from him. Even though she thought Lei Yu had forgotten his words from two years ago, from what was said, Lei Yu still firmly remembered it. Telephassa was now very satisfied knowing that she had a certain place in his heart.

Those two stared at each other for over ten seconds long. Minotaur Linos to the side felt rather awkward with this scene and lightly coughed a few times.

"I'm leaving." Lei Yu looked away from those beautiful eyes before turning around to leave.

"Don't worry; I believe he will be fine. In three days time, I will immediately set off. If there's any accident, I will block it in advance. Even if Lei Yu gets mad at me, I won't allow any danger to befall him." Said bull-head as he watched Lei Yu's figure disappear into the horizon.

"I believe in him, he has never disappointed me before!" A happy

smile bloomed on Telephassa's face. What she said was indeed correct because Lei Yu had never disappointed her before. A thousand years ago, Lei Yu braved danger and rescued the bull-head from the maze. A thousand years later, Lei Yu was able to exceed the boundaries of ordinary humans in a short time span and step onto the Immortal Realm. And he was even able to stave off all dangers and reunite with her.

Although Lei Yu's true intention of coming to the Immortal World was to rescue Ai Er, how could Telephassa's heart not be moved from such a man that was responsible and remained loyal to a single relationship? She then silently said to herself: I'll be



waiting for you here, you must come back!

After arriving at the outer periphery of the Southern Wild Lands, the region where the rivers crisscrossed, Lei Yu descended onto the ground.

"Hey two toads, are you guys here?" Lei Yu stood on the grass and yelled out while staring at the water.

"Who dares to call me like that? You simply don't want to continue living!" The scene was somewhat similar to two years ago. A large toad jumped out of the waters and sprayed out a poison fog at Lei Yu.

With a mere wave of his hands, a violent wind was stirred up and

blew the poisonous fog away. The toad then stared with eyes filled with shock.

"It's... it's... it's you?" The toad didn't turn its head and yelled out: "Elder brother! Quickly come out! Come out!"

Water splashed out as a larger bodied toad jumped out of the waters. "What is it? Crying ou...?!" His huge green eyes stared at Lei Yu unblinkingly.

"I'm giving you two a gift." Lei Yu lightly smiled as his hands went towards his waist. A moment later, two golden beads appeared in his hand before he then tossed it to the ground in front of the two toads.

"These...! These are Gold Cores!"  
Said the larger toad with wide eyes  
and shock.

"Correct, the gift I'm giving you two  
is a Gold Core each. Even though  
it's not considered much, it should  
at least raise your cultivations a  
bit."

"Eld... elder brother, this... is this  
really a Gold Core? He's not  
intending on harming us right?"  
Said the smaller toad after  
swallowing hard a few times.

"Why would he want to harm us?"

"I don't know."

"Why are you thinking so much?  
Grab it first!" The two transformed  
into middle-aged men before

picking up the Gold Cores from the ground. "It's really a Gold Core! He wasn't lying; it's even a late stage Gold Core!"

Although they were holding onto the Gold Cores, their hearts couldn't help but feel some fear. "Could he really be some psychopathic killer who doesn't even bat an eye after killing?"

There was a reason why the demonic cultivators of the Southern Wild Lands were so eager for Gold Cores. Apart from the rule prohibiting them from flying which happened to be abolished now, there was also another rule that was equally important - it was strictly forbidden for fellow demonic cultivators to fight or kill

each other, otherwise..."

Lei Yu didn't fly directly towards the Void Sect after that but went to the West. What did he want to do? This was something he planned on right after leaving the city.

Without using too much time, Lei Yu gradually felt violent winds blowing against his face. That tornado was still spinning here without stopping.

"Is there something Sir needs?"  
Asked a youth that flew out of the tornado and stopped in front of Lei Yu.

"Such a coincidence, it's you again."  
Wasn't this guy the same Four Illusory Court disciple he met when

he first arrived here?

"You are..." The youth was immediately surprised, "It's you!"

"Right, can you pass a message and say that I wish you meet Senior Bei Dou?" Lei Yu nodded politely.

"Please... please wait for a bit!" The youth didn't even turn around yet and an old voice was heard. "Ah! So it's junior brother Lightning! Quick, please come in! This was the same middle-aged man with the beady eyes that first brought Lei Yu inside - Bei Sha.

It was different from before, now everyone in the Four Illusory Court was treating Lei Yu with extreme respect. This made Lei Yu a bit

uncomfortable, but he knew in his heart that his kindness and respectfulness was not for him, but for the Southern Wild Land's Demon King Minotaur Linos whom everyone feared.

The Four Illusory Court's Sovereign Bei Dou quickly rushed over, and following behind him were two middle-aged men.

This Bei Dou didn't have the arrogance when he first met Lei Yu and was actually very polite. He even gestured for Lei Yu to sit on the head seat but of course Lei Yu declined it since it wasn't a place that was meant for him.

"Junior brother Lightning, I wonder what reason is there for your

esteemed self to visit us?" Bei Dou asked with a smile.

Lei Yu stood up, "Senior Bei Dou, please don't mess up the seniority."

"Nonsense!" Bei Dou smiled, "There's no end to cultivation so why care about time? Please have a seat!"

Lei Yu sat down and cupped his hands, "To be candid with you, I came here because I need the help of Senior Bei Dou."

"Whatever it is, just go ahead and tell me. As long as I am able, I will definitely assist!" Bei Dou slapped his chest and put on a generous appearance, but Lei Yu could tell this was just to put on a show.



"It's like this..." Before coming here, Lei Yu had already thought up a good excuse so he didn't have to think or hesitate. "I was hoping Senior Bei Dou could enlighten me - the Void Sect's Cloud Barrier, is there a method to break the formation?"

"Junior brother Lightning, you're asking about this because...? Could it be...?" Bei Dou and the other three present stared at Lei Yu with surprise.

# Chapter 302:

## Appointment Date

"Ah, I hope these seniors don't misunderstand." Lei Yu lightly smiled, "It's like this: I will be heading to the Void Sect for a matter, but due to some reasons, with have some conflict. Senior Bei Dou should now that's there's three seniors at the Soul Splitting stage as their backing. There's also the existence of the Void Immortal. I'm afraid this junior might anger those seniors on this trip so I want to plan an escape route."

"This... this isn't too appropriate right?" Bei Dou frowned, "Junior brother Lightning should know that

the Void Sect and our Four Illusory Court have a good relationship. If we told the method of breaking their barrier to an outsider, I'm afraid the entire Immortal Realm will laugh at us!"

Lei Yu knew this matter wouldn't be easy and it looks like his first scheme has failed. He can only thicken his face and try the second scheme.

"Oh, is that right... That's fine then, I'll just wait for the Wild Land's Demon King to personally ask about. That should make the matter easier then right?" Lei Yu didn't want to drop the bull-head's name, but this was the only method he had left. This last resort had a high chance of working because the Four

Illusory Court knew his intimate relationship with the members of the Southern Wild Lands.

"You... you mean the Wild Lands Demon King will personally come?" Bei Dou and the others asked with big round big eyes.

Lei Yu smiled, "That's right. Before I came, I already mentioned this to the Demon King. He originally wanted to come here together with me but I didn't want to bother him. Since my face is not enough here, it looks like I'll have to wait for him to personally come here for the discussions. The Demon King and I already planned it out, if we can't come to an agreement in four to five hours time, he will then personally come. Oh, but you

seniors don't have to worry, I believe there won't be any big problems when the Demon King gets here."

"Gulp!"

Lei Yu's ears twitched a bit and wanted to laugh, but he didn't dare show that on his face. He knew that sound was them swallowing their saliva down forcefully.

This basically meant there was no room for discussion. Bei Dou and the other three's smile was rather stiff but they still had to put up a pretense. "Ju... junior brother Lightning, this is something not easy to take care of. You should know the Cloud Barrier formation array was something us four

personally went forth to set down. The whole point was to help the Void Sect protect their headquarters. If it was revealed that our Four Illusory Court leaked the method of breaking the barrier, I'm afraid we can no longer maintain a foothold in the Immortal World."

"If you don't say anything and I don't say anything, how would anyone know?" It looks like there was still room for maneuver here so Lei Yu smiled. "To be candid with you all, I had previously broken into the barrier and was trapped inside the clouds, and almost lost my life. The formation your seniors have setup can be described as absolutely exquisite. I do not dare to risk it a second time so that's why I have this request. But don't worry, this

time I'm the sole person heading to the Void Sect, so with several experts as their backing, would these seniors think my mere self can do anything to the Void Sect?"

Bei Dou was thinking things through. There was a long distance between the Four Illusory Court and the Void Sect, but they were very close to the Southern Wild Lands. If he offended this Lightning person, that equals to offending the entire Southern Wild Lands. If that was the case, even if the Four Illusory Court doesn't get annihilated, they would probably be excluded from all interactions with the outside world. By that time, wanting to move their headquarters would be too late. Thinking up to this point, Bei Dou clenched his

teeth, "Okay! I can give it to you but you have to promise me that you can never let anyone know about it!"

Lei Yu frantically stood up and nodded his head in a serious manner, "Please be rest assured senior Bei Dou. I will definitely be the only one to know about it and I will let the Wild Land's Demon King know everything has worked out here!"

"Good!" Bei Dou turned to the side, "Junior brother Bei Sha, go and bring us the method of breaking the barrier."

"Yes, senior brother."

Lei Yu received top notch treatment



as he left the Four Illusory Court, but these weren't things he wanted. Only when the day he attained success through his own strength was what mattered.

As he was flying towards the Void Sect, Lei Yu used that time to study the method of breaking the Cloud Barrier. It was truly exquisite beyond words. If one didn't have this graphic illustration, most likely they would never be able to leave the formation safely.

Of course if one had extreme strength such as Minotaur Linos, then the barrier might as well not exist in their eyes!

It was said that the trip required three days, but Lei Yu only used two

days of time. His speed was obviously much faster than before. So during these two short years, what strength has Lei Yu actually reached?

While floating outside the Cloud Barrier of the Void Sect, Lei Yu's heart was extremely emotional. He had worked hard for two years and the day has finally arrived!

Only after breathing in and out a few times did Lei Yu finally feel that he calmed down a bit. The emotional state disappeared from his eyes and was replaced by a look of longing. He was wondering how Ai Er was doing these past two years.

"I'm! Here!" A cry that shook the

heavens was heard as it echoed and reverberated through the mountains.

Shortly after.

"Woosh~"

"Woosh~"

"Woosh~"

Three figures flickered and appeared in front of Lei Yu. They were none other than the Void Sect's disciples of the second generation - the three elderly people Kun Feng, Kun Rong, and Kun Xian.

"You seem to be a day early!" Said Kun Feng as he stroked his beard.

"Why are you bothered over a single day? What? Could the Void Sect be afraid?" Lei Yu narrowed his eyes, and his momentum startled those three super experts.

"Scared? You must be kidding. Our Void Sect is not afraid of anything, follow me." After saying that, Kun Feng and the other two entered the foggy clouds and Lei Yu followed without hesitation.

This Cloud Barrier was surely exquisite; no matter how many times you traversed it, there's no way you could remember the correct path. That's why those three weren't worried. But they didn't know that Lei Yu had already fully grasped the method of breaking this formation since he was

pretending to be confused by it.

There were no changes to the Void Sect as it still looked like place from ancient times. Set amidst a scene similar to paradise, the old wooden pavilions added more flair to the ancient feel. With the faint mist that partially obstructed these pavilions, it gave one a feeling of mysteriousness and wanting to investigate its secrets.

After reaching the empty grounds in front of the tallest pavilion, the four of them gradually descended to the ground.

"Please wait here!" After leaving these words, the three of them flew off to the direction of the highest level of the pavilion where Lei Yu

had once visited.

Lei Yu's emotions were all over the place because he was afraid something may have happened to Ai Er these past two years. But after seeing the calm faces of those three, he could tell that Ai Er shouldn't have encountered any type of dangers.

"I only hope that the Void Sect will uphold their agreement so I can safely take Ai Er away." Lei Yu said to himself, but still trembled as he exhaled which showed he couldn't completely calm down.

A while later, a white figure landed on a stone carved sword statue beside the pavilion. Lei Yu glanced over and realized it was none other

than the strongest existence of the Void Sect - the Void Immortal. Lei Yu could instantly recognize him from the unique brand on his forehead.

At this time, Kun Feng and the other two slowly flew down and floated to the side of the Void Immortal. They then glared at Lei Yu in a cold demeanor.

"Little friend, how much have you improved these two years?"

# Chapter 303:

## Memory Loss

Lei Yu didn't want to stand around and chat since he couldn't wait to see Ai Er.

"Enough with the talk, where's Ai Er? How are we going to compete?" According to Lei Yu's thought, as long as Ai Er sees him, she would not hesitate and choose to leave with him. That way, there was no need for them to go through any unnecessary duels. Little did Lei Yu know that he was completely wrong; does Ai Er even remember him?

After a cold "humph," Kun Feng



who was floating behind the Void Immortal said: "You dare to speak to our master in such a tone?"

"I didn't come here today to hear you guys' bullshit! Just say it; what do I need to do to take Ai Er away?"

"You're courting death!" Roared Kun Xian, who usually had a bad temper.

Lei Yu couldn't tolerate this any longer, "If this is how the Void Sect does things, so what if I lose my little life? Aren't you guys afraid of being laughed at for going against your own agreement?"

"You...!" Kun Xian stared in rage as if he was about to explode. But then the Void Immortal interrupted,

"Enough!"

"Master, he..."

"Are you scared that he can really take away a person of our Void Sect?"

Lei Yu looked at the annoying faces of the four; when did Ai Er become a person of the Void Sect? Even though she was forced to remain behind in secluded meditation for two years, Lei Yu doesn't believe it would change anything. Lei Yu knew that Ai Er's heart will never change, the love between two people cannot be that easily wiped clean and forgotten.

Detecting that there was movement about, Lei Yu looked around. Over a

hundred disciples of the Void Sect started gathering around the once empty grounds. Could it be the Void Sect really wanted to go back on their words?

"I'll do as you say and cut the chitchat." The Void Immortal raised his head and looked up. Lei Yu actually didn't notice at the highest level of the pavilion was another person!

"Early Nascent Soul stage?" Said Lei Yu to himself. But what he would never expect was that Ai Er had reached the early Nascent Soul stage in a short two years.

"You can come down." After the Void Immortal said that, a girl in white silk floated down like a

goddess descending to the mortal realm. She happened to float and land exactly in front of the Void Immortal.

The girl then lightly bowed,  
"Grandmaster, three masters."

"The one looking for you has finally come." The Void Immortal pointed at Lei Yu with ridicule in his eyes. The lover that Lei Yu had desperately tried to rescue didn't even recognize him, but Lei Yu hadn't realized this yet.

"Who is she?" Lei Yu didn't see the girl's face yet so that's why he asked this.

No one answered and the girl slowly turned around. She looked at

Lei Yu as if she was staring at a stranger without any emotions.

Lei Yu was surprised and he said with a trembling voice: "You... you're Ai Er?"

Her white silk dress was fluttering from the gentle breeze as her long hair gently moved on her back. Although her face hadn't changed, the aura she exuded was completely different making Lei Yu not dare to confidently confirm her identity.

"I am called Nuo Ai Er, please be a bit more appropriate here!" Ai Er's cold tone startled Lei Yu as he couldn't believe what he heard.

"Ai Er! It's me! I'm your brother Yu!" Lei Yu cried out emotionally.

"I'm going to say it again, please act more appropriately here!" It was obvious that Ai Er felt uncomfortable and annoyed when Lei Yu greeted himself in such a way. "Master, you guys were correct when saying he was a despicable rogue!"

"You! You don't recognize me?" Lei Yu stared with wide eyes.

Ai Er's lips turned into a sneer, her eyes showing her cold aloofness. "Recognize you? If I recognized a despicable person like you who pretended to have a relationship with others, then my eyes must be blind! Enough bullshit, didn't you come here today to duel with me? Make your move!" After Ai Er said that, a white internal energy flew

out of her sleeves. The energy gradually formed physical properties and turned into a sword shimmering white light.

"What did you guys do to Ai Er?" Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and viciously started at the Void Immortal on top of the stone carving and the three behind him.

"What did we do? If you agree to join the Void Sect right now, I will allow you and Ai Er to foster a relationship." The Void Immortal coldly said, ignoring Lei Yu's tone.

"Bastard, tell me! What did you guys do to her?!" Lei Yu's roared out as the rate of his breathing increased.

"Insulting the grandmaster and my

master?! Die!" Those once pair of innocent eyes were now filled with vicious coldness!

Ai Er angrily stormed towards Lei Yu. The sword in her hand made a few rotations and condensed a white internal energy. Before Ai Er had reached Lei Yu, that white energy streaked out at him.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth and fists and roared out in anguish!

"Agggghhh!!!!!"

With Lei Yu as the center, a purple energy aura burst out from his body. The energy aura was extremely powerful, causing the surrounding Void Sect disciples to retreat multiple steps backwards.



The previous white internal energy Ai Er shot out was also dispersed by Lei Yu's energy aura, but she herself did not suffer any effects.

The Void Immortal's face changed, "Fusion Soul stage! You... you've actually reached the Fusion Soul stage!"

"Wh... what?" The three floating behind the Void Immortal were shocked. Kun Feng couldn't believe it, "In two years time, he was able to leap from the Gold Core stage to... to the Fusion Soul stage? How can that be possible?"

The day that Lei Yu left the Void Sect, he was still at the late Gold Core stage. And when those four energies randomly entered his body,

it elevated him into the Nascent Soul stage. While in the Devil King's castle, no matter who it was, there was no way their strength could increase that fast. So what actually happened to Lei Yu during that time?

Lei Yu was unwilling to accept his. He once again looked at Ai Er with gentle eyes, "What's going on with you? What did they do to you? How come you don't recognize me?"

"Why would I recognize you? I am the Void Sect's third generation disciple!" Ai Er's expression never changed. Although she looked like the same goddess amidst mortals he knew, her eyes held that cold viciousness that Lei Yu had never seen before.

"No! You're not Ai Er! You're not Ai Er! Where is my Ai Er? Where is my Ai Er?!" Lei Yu almost went insane as he clenched his fist and his breathing became ragged. The heaving of his chest clearly showed his current emotions.

Lei Yu then raised his head to glared at the Void Immortal and the other three, "You damn motherf\*ckers, what did you do to my Ai Er?!"

"You're courting death!" Hearing her masters being insulted, Ai Er couldn't tolerate it anymore. Even though she looked like a weak girl, no one was going to doubt her Nascent Soul strength. With a wave of her hand, the power that can destroy a mountain billowed out of

her.

# Chapter 304:

## Heartbreaking Anguish

One could see Ai Er close her eyes and her lips mumbling something. From the ground up, a burst of white energy billowed out making her clothes and hair flap around like crazy. She suddenly opened her eyes and all that energy formed a sword qi which flew at Lei Yu's chest at the speed of lightning.

Lei Yu didn't dodge and didn't make any movements. He just stood there silently staring at Ai Er. He didn't bother with the extremely sharp sword qi that was about to arrive at

his chest.

"Whoosh~"

"Bang!"

There was a dull explosion and a trace of blood leaked out of the corner of Lei Yu's mouth. He then coldly said: "Ai Er, you actually used a killing blow?"

"Those who insult the grandmaster and master, die!" The strike only caused a light injury. Ai Er didn't give up and made a second strike, third strike, fourth...

The crazy continuous amount of sword qi forced Lei Yu to step back a few times before he could stabilize himself. "Cough... cough! Blurgh!" And a mouthful of blood

sprayed out. Lei Yu's eyes were bloodshot yet had a sheen of mist on it. He didn't let the tears flow out and cleared his throat, "Are you still Ai Er? Are you still my Ai Er?"

Standing on top of the stone carved sword, the Void Immortal and the other three revealed a light smile on their face. Behind that smile was a look of disdain as well.

"Did I make the wrong evaluation of him? Someone that cares so much about relationships cannot accomplish anything great in the future!" The Void Immortal shook his head, "But his constitution and his perverse improvement speed is a fact."

There was no need to talk about

victory or defeat here because if Lei Yu actually made a move, there would be no way for Ai Er to retaliate. Unfortunately, Lei Yu didn't raise a hand since there's no way he could hurt the one he loved. But there was nothing he could do for the time being as Ai Er's attacks didn't stop coming. Lei Yu could clearly sense that Ai Er's momentum was getting stronger and stronger!

Her initial attacks were like a tickle, while her real attack was coming soon! Ai Er had gained a lot during the two years of cultivation. Those secret skills that ordinary disciples weren't qualified to learn had all been mastered by her.

Lei Yu was shocked when Ai Er's



body started becoming illusory. Just like a ghost in white, her figure flickered between disappearing and reappearing. Her black pupils widened before she clasped her hands together. A sword qi burst into the sky and the huge amount of internal energy shattered the pebbles lying about on the ground.

The huge sword qi flew around in the air once before descending behind her back and stabbing into the ground. This time Ai Er completely disappeared... she had actually fused together with the huge sword!

"That's my secret skill!" Kun Feng proudly smiled.

"I hope the kid is lucky and doesn't

die because of this, or else we would have done everything in vain." Ai Er was an outstanding disciple that was trained by the three during the past two years, but the Void Sect's ultimate goal was still pulling Lei Yu in. Ai Er was nothing more than bait to them.

Lei Yu raised his head and looked at the huge sword qi with a shattered heart. All the previous memories when he was together with Ai Er started playing in his mind.

Was this still the beautiful girl with the long wavy hair? Was this still the girl that had cried by Lei Yu's side multiple times? Was this still the considerate, understanding and meticulous girl of his dreams? Everything she had ever done was

for the sake of Lei Yu... did that cute and innocent Ai Er still exist?

This simple but happy experiences vividly flashed by. There were partings and reunions that were all unforgettable to him. The tears in Lei Yu's eyes couldn't be held back anymore as he raised his head and closed his eyes. The tear drops dripped down his weathered face as it started to soak into his clothes. He felt like his heart was dripping out blood, refusing to believe everything in front of him was real. But this was an undeniable fact. The love of his life, the same person he experienced a multitude of ordeals in hopes of rescuing, was now using a secret skill in order to kill him.

All those experiences from the Mortal World into the Chaotic Star Sea... From killing a tyrant to defeating a Dragon-Snake, and finally arrived at the Immortal World. What he never expected was dying at the hands of the love of his life. Lei Yu gave up. He wasn't just giving up Ai Er; he was giving up - his own life!

The huge sword qi rose up into the air, and the surrounding spiritual energy started rushing into it causing it to look even sharper. Shimmering with a white light, a beautiful yet reaper-like voice was heard: "Descend!"

While merged with the sword, Ai Er and the sword qi quickly shot down.

"Not good! He gave up resisting!"  
The Void Immortal roared out,  
wanting to rush up to block it but....  
It was too late! Ai Er's speed was  
too fast; it went beyond the speed of  
light and penetrated through Lei  
Yu's chest. A hole the size of a palm  
could be seen on his chest and out  
the back. After coming out of Lei  
Yu's back, the huge sword qi was  
now blood red.

Lei Yu smiled. That's right, he  
smiled. This smile contained relief,  
a bit of helplessness, and mixed  
disappointment with the world.

"Agghh!" Lei Yu opened his eyes  
and screamed out in pain. He then  
heavily fell backwards right on top  
of the sword qi that had already  
penetrated him before.

"Sigh, it's over, it's all over!" The Void Immortal helplessly shook his head, everything was too late. Lei Yu's body had already been penetrated twice by Ai Er who had fused into the sword qi. Even if he wanted to save Lei Yu, it wasn't possible with his current strength at the Boundary Transition stage. He possessed a very strong power but was helpless when it came to healing people.

The sword qi stained in red flashed a white light before gradually disappearing. Replaced by it was a girl drenched in blood. Lei Yu coincidentally fell on top of her while she was completely out of energy. Her previous secret skill had completely depleted her internal energy so that when Lei Yu

fell back and landed on her, she couldn't dodge at all.

Ai Er was there lying on the ground while Lei Yu was lying on top of her. "Cough..." Another spray of blood came out of Lei Yu's mouth, showering Ai Er's face.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth and forced his head to turn around. He felt satisfied being able to see the love of his life before his death.

"Ai Er, no matter what, I... I still love you." Lei Yu's tears and blood dripped off his chin and landed in Ai Er's eye.

Being agitated by the tears and the blood, Ai Er unconsciously closed her eyes and suddenly trembled!

Although Ai Er was currently at the early Nascent Soul stage, the spiritual energy had been forcefully shoved inside her originally weak body these past two years. One could say Ai Er can only use the secret skill once, and then her body would be extremely weak afterwards. She had improved by leaps and bounds but these two years was equivalent to a destructive growth with a weak foundation. For Ai Er's current body, there was no way it could handle such a powerful strike.

Taking shortcuts is not the best nor the right way while having a firm foundation has always been the core belief of cultivation.



# Chapter 305: Xue Yu Will Help

For someone that had never experienced such a bloody battle before, she couldn't handle all that blood anymore. After her weakest organ had been stimulated by the tears and blood, scenes of her past started flashing through her mind.

"Brother Yu! I haven't seen you in a long time! You've really become too handsome now!"

"Don't worry Ai Er; I won't let any harm befall you!"

"Go ahead brother Yu; Ai Er will wait for your return!"

"My beloved..."

"You're so hateful; your words are giving me goose bumps!"

Ai Er suddenly opened her eyes and yelled out in anguish: "Nooo!"

After another round of coughing, he sprayed out another mouthful of blood. "Ai Er, don't..."

"Brother Yu! Brother Yu! No, no!" Ai Er looked like she had gone crazy as she turned Lei Yu body's around and wrapped her arms around him. Tears kept streaming down her cheeks and rolling off Lei Yu's face.

"Ai Er, you... you've come back!" Lei Yu was surprised but the pain overruled any emotions he had. "I'm... I'm sorry, I... I came back too

late."

At this time, Ai Er calmed down as she recalled everything. She exhaled while trembling, "Brother Yu, it's not too late, not late at all. At least we're together, so nothing is too late!" Ai Er had placed her fingers on her throat. As long as she used a bit of strength, her throat would be crushed and she would eventually die as well.

If one wanted to die, there was no one that could save them except for the anomaly, Ceng Hong Villa's master - Ceng Hong! Unfortunately, he wasn't here and the Void Immortal and the other shameless people didn't have that ability.

"You... what do you plan on doing?"

Lei Yu quickly asked, surprised by Ai Er's movement.

"Brother Yu, I'm going to accompany you!" Tears started streaming down again as she broke down into sobs. It was her that did all this. Since Lei Yu was in such a state, she didn't want to keep living by herself.

"Wait!" Lei Yu started trembling, and Ai Er could clearly feel her lover in her arms become cool to the touch.

A voice was heard in Lei Yu's mind, "Master, Xue Yu will help you!"

The Spiritual Bracelet of Frost on Lei Yu's wrist suddenly brightened, and two beams of white energy

burst up into the sky. An unprecedented amount of power made Lei Yu's body temperature to start changing.

The surround crowd including the Void Immortal stared with wide eyes in surprise at what was happening.

"What is that? How could it emit such a powerful aura?" said the Void Immortal.

One could clearly see those two beams of energy start descending from the sky, accurately landing on Lei Yu's terrifying chest wound. The wound started rapidly closing, and even Ai Er was staring with her mouth agape. She couldn't believe what she was seeing and had

forgotten about crying.

It was already painful when his muscles were torn apart, and now that it was knitting together, the pain was even worse than before! One hand clenched his chest while the other grasped onto Ai Er's jade-like hand. "Pak pak" cracking sounds were heard, causing Ai Er to bite her lips. Blood started dripping from her lips but she didn't cry out. The bones in her hand had been shattered by Lei Yu's grasp and her face started turning red, but she didn't make any movement afraid that it would affect Lei Yu. Everyone present could clearly tell that Lei Yu's wound was quickly healing!

No one in the Void Sect was going to interrupt it. Ai Er was originally

the bait that was force fed spiritual energy and taught secret skills, everything was to make Lei Yu surrender to their Sect. They never intended for Lei Yu to die so now that he was recovering, who was going to prevent it?

But none of them present had ever seen such a strange situation. All the Void Sect disciples stared with wide eyes and mouths agape as they watched the two energies come out of Lei Yu's bracelet and drill into his body.

Half an hour! It was a total of half an hour that no one present spoke. The wound on Lei Yu's chest was basically healed while there was only a thin line of blood left there.

At this time, Ai Er's face and lips were both pale and it wasn't possible for anymore blood to come from her lips anymore. All this time, she had bared the pain in silence from having all her hand bones shattered by Lei Yu.

Lei Yu exhaled a deep breath, and miraculously sat up from Ai Er's embrace. He then placed the bracelet that had lost most of its luster onto Ai Er's wrist, yet nothing happened. Lei Yu's heart ached when he realized Ai Er didn't make a single sound while bearing her own pain.

After gently picking up Ai Er, Lei Yu acted as if nothing had happened before. Purple internal energy was condensed below his feet while he



started floating up into the air. Within an instant, he was already at the boundary of the Cloud Barrier.

"Stop him!" The Void Immortal yelled out in shock.

The disciples who were already stationed on the platforms and the wall quickly rushed forth and blocked Lei Yu's path.

"Move aside or else... die!" Lei Yu's voice was emotionless while his eyes were filled with killing intent!

There was no hatred from Ai Er's previous ruthlessness since he knew it must have been the wretched Void Immortal who made some underhanded move on her. Lei Yu wanted to kill, but he wasn't

the opponent of these old bastards.  
He could only escape!

"Don't let him leave!" The Void Immortal's voice was heard and all the disciples acknowledged in unison: "Understood!"

Already at the early Fusion Soul stage, Lei Yu wasn't someone these little Gold Core and Nascent Soul clowns could block. Even if he was holding onto Ai Er, it wouldn't hinder Lei Yu's attack at all.

Lei Yu raised his leg up and a huge amount of internal energy circulated towards his leg. He then made a horizontal kick and swept it past five Void Sect disciples. Right, five of them! All five of them had been bisected at the waist by Lei

Yu's kick, and fresh blood spurted into the air like fountains!

Not only can Lei Yu use a weapon to display his Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, he could use his bare hands and his feet. After revolving his energy according to the Thirty-six Lunar Stars, he directly launched the first form with his leg. And this time, the power released was Lei Yu's power of an early Fusion Soul stage so one can imagine how sharp the attack was!

Lei Yu and Ai Er were already drenched in blood, so they didn't mind being tainted with a little more. It's just that after witnessing such a terrifying attack, none of the disciples dared to block their way anymore.

Lei Yu didn't stop and continued forward at high speeds.

"Where do you think you can escape to?!" After that roar, the fat Kun Xian rushed forth and blocked Lei Yu's path.

"Looks like the Void Sect is going back on their word!"

"You want to leave after killing disciples of my Void Sect?"

The Sovereign Kun Feng finally said something behind Lei Yu's back in a cold tone.

"Blaming me when you guys were in the wrong? I was right all along, you guys are nothing but damn f\*ckers who were raised by b\*tches!" Lei Yu viciously responded.

The bad tempered Kun Xian was enraged. He didn't care that Ai Er was still in Lei Yu's arms and sliced out a sword qi straight for Lei Yu.

The internal energy underneath his feet flashed brightly and Lei Yu immediately dodged to the side. The strike kept going and struck a Void Sect disciple, completely slicing him into two halves.

"You killed that one yourself!"

# Chapter 306:

## Appearance Of The Heavenly Thunder Bead

- Appearance Of The Heavenly  
Thunder Bead

"Agghhh! He's pissing me off so much!" Kun Xian angrily roared. He flipped his palms and five beams of energy shot out of his fingers, transforming into five daggers that flew straight at Lei Yu.

Although this Kun Xian was a whole level higher than Lei Yu, his strength wasn't just double Lei Yu's.

Not daring to be careless, Lei Yu quickly retreated and figured there's no way he could easily leave the Void Sect for the time being.

Lei Yu made a thought, and Ai Er in his arms immediately disappeared!

Everyone present was surprised by this, but didn't think too much about it. Kun Xian's speed wasn't slow while his senior brother Kun Feng was even faster. One went to the front and one went to the back, trapping Lei Yu in the middle. The rest of the disciples also rushed up and surrounded the other two directions.

Even if Lei Yu was about to break through the encirclement by the Void Sect disciples, it wasn't a task

he could do in a short time.

"Humph!" After the cold humph, a sharp sword appeared in Lei Yu's hand. The sword was shimmering a white light and exuded an oppressive force. Once Lei Yu injected his internal energy into the sword, the layers of white light melded together with his purple energy.

Lei Yu was holding the Sky Devouring Sword while his long hair partially covered his eyes. In the gaps between the hair, everyone present could see extreme anger in his deep and profound eyes. Add the fact that he was completely covered in blood, Lei Yu looked like he was a god of slaughter!

One could not look down on Lei



Yu's speed. When he was at the Nascent Soul stage, his speed was already comparable to Long Er's Fusion Soul strength. Now that he was at the Fusion Soul stage as well, what speed was he capable of reaching?

Not that Kun Xian and Kun Feng's speed were slow, but when it came to Lei Yu, he was even faster!

After a purple flash of light, Lei Yu's afterimage was still unmoving but he had already rushed towards another area. Without having time to put up any sort of defense, Lei Yu's Sky Devouring Sword already made a slicing motion and a crescent moon shaped energy with starry dots swept out. Those Void Sect disciples didn't have time to

dodge and were all cut in half at the waist!

"I see you are really tired of living!"  
In mere moments, there was already over twenty Void Sect disciples that had died. Kun Feng was naturally enraged as he couldn't endure this any longer, and had already forgotten the words of the Void Immortal to keep Lei Yu alive.

His mouth started chanting something and a white internal energy rose into the sky and enshrouded his entire body. The next moment, Kun Feng's body started turning illusory.

Lei Yu was shocked; wasn't this the same move that Ai Er had displayed

prior? Right, Kun Feng was completely enraged. The current him no longer cared if Lei Yu died or not after taking his attack.

The time he took to fuse together with the sword was several times quicker than Ai Er, and the huge white sword contained a huge amount of energy that caused the surrounding atmosphere to start vibrating. Lei Yu couldn't help focusing all his attention on this humongous sword in front of him.

The surrounding disciples didn't dare to get close because they didn't want to throw their lives away! Since the Sovereign Kun Feng had already activated his secret skill, they didn't need to attack anymore. This also included the fatty Kun

Xian at the other side. Based on the sharpness and power his senior brother exuded, he had no doubt this move would take care of Lei Yu.

"Go!"

Within the huge sword, the roar of Kun Feng's voice was heard. The huge sword started pointing right at Lei Yu. With a flash of white light, the huge sword had already pierced forth; its speed was no less than Lei Yu's which made him beyond shocked.

But this wasn't strange since logically speaking, Lei Yu's naturally born speeds that was comparable to someone at the Soul Splitting stage cannot be compared to a weapon's attacking speed.

Realizing this point, Lei Yu wasn't frantic and actually started madly retreating towards Kun Xian's location.

Lei Yu retreated like mad and it was natural that Kun Xian wouldn't allow him to dodge this. He wanted to block the path of retreat but the moment he saw the huge sword getting closer to Lei Yu, Lei Yu had already collided into Kun Xian's body.

"He's too cunning!" Still standing on top of the stone sword statue, the Void Immortal sneered to himself. It was simple to see why Lei Yu got close to Kun Xian; if the attack really struck him, then the Kun Xian behind him will also suffer. Therefore Kun Feng had to stop his

own attack. Even if this was the secret skill created by his life's work, there's no way he can control it to a perfect accuracy. If he wanted to injure Lei Yu and allow Kun Xian to walk away unmarred, then most likely he would have to reach the Boundary Transition stage in order to accomplish that.

Lei Yu's reaction speed was fast, but Kun Feng was even faster at withdrawing his attack. When the sword was within a foot of Lei Yu's body, the huge sword retracted its internal energy and hovered their motionless!

With a slower reaction, Kun Xian roared out: "Senior brother! Why didn't you finish through with the strike?"

"Dumbass!" Kun Feng yelled back,  
"You're standing behind him, do  
you want to die with him or  
something?"

Kun Xian finally realized this,  
"What a cunning bastard!" He then  
grabbed a hold of Lei Yu's arms and  
trapped him in front of his own  
body.

One could see a grin appear on Lei  
Yu's lips before his body shook. His  
nascent infant body was formed by  
lightning which meant his own  
body was the equivalent. Lightning  
immediately exploded forth,  
"Bzzzt!"

An ear piercing sound was heard.  
Kun Xian, who was only using his  
physical strength to hold down Lei

Yu suddenly trembled. His hands loosened up unconsciously and people could clearly see they were shaking. This was obviously caused by the lightning released by Lei Yu.

"Be careful or else I'll roast you like a pig!" Leaving these words, Lei Yu had already rushed off to another side like a ghost. The Sky Devouring Sword in his hands didn't stop, "Thirty-six Lunar Star's first form!" The crescent moon appeared once again. How could those Void Sect disciples react when they were still dazed from watching the scene before them? Moreover, Lei Yu's speed was simply too fast!

With another attack, limbs were flying all over the place before landing on the ground. The current



Void Sect had become a river of blood similar to a living hell! No, we should call this the Immortal World's hell!

"You...! Don't think of leaving alive today!" Kun Feng couldn't endure his Sect disciples being killed by Lei Yu anymore. His bloodshot eyes glared at Lei Yu and his body became illusory once again. No matter what, he had to slice Lei Yu into a thousand pieces!

Kun Feng's speed was even faster than before as an ear piercing wind was kicked up by the huge sword. Lei Yu felt the pain of the wind on his face that was created by the sword qi.

"Whoosh!"

Lei Yu had no place to escape to!

"Heavenly Thunder Bead!" Lei Yu swiped his hand and a round bead seemed to come out of nowhere. One could see him inject a trace of internal energy into it before he tossed it out towards the huge sword heading straight for him.

"Boom!"

"Crack!"

The armageddon-like proportion of thunder and lightning covered the entire Void Sect! For all those Void Sect disciples floating in the vicinity of the Heavenly Thunder Bead's explosion, some fell from the air twitching while some had been burnt to a crisp! But those that died

were usually disciples in the Gold Core stage.

With such an eye-catching lightning that seemed to come out of nowhere, it caused the huge sword to momentarily pause allowing Lei Yu to disappear from his spot! Once his target was gone, Kun Feng stopped his sword and started gasping for air. His eyes were now completely bloodshot as he gritted his teeth searching for Lei Yu's whereabouts.

# Chapter 307: Pierced By Ten Thousand Swords

That Heavenly Thunder Bead was not the same one that he old ancestor had given him. Lei Yu had devoted himself to studying the manufacturing methods of the Heavenly Thunder Beads that Lei Run Kong had given him. Lei Yu's cultivation realm was much stronger than Lei Rong Kun's, therefore this Heavenly Thunder Bead he personally made cannot be looked down on!

Although the manufacturing method looked easy, it was actually

quite difficult. Lei Yu had to focus his effort into draining and injecting all his internal energy into a spiritual bead in order to achieve its effects. In other words, every single Heavenly Thunder Bead was the equivalent of Lei Yu's entire power, so how can its strength not be formidable?

There were many disciples in the Void Sect and fortunate for them, most of them were not in the immediate vicinity of the explosion. But there were still many that died so the death count from the previous twenty something had now increased to fifty something!

"I definitely didn't evaluate this kid wrongly, such courage!" After the death of so many disciples, it looked

like the Void Immortal didn't care too much about it and was actually seeing Lei Yu in an even higher light.

Lei Yu had flown to the highest point of a pavilion building and looked down. His voice was then heard by everyone in the area.

"Even if I have to die here today, I will still drag as many down as I can with me! As long as you two old bastards attack once, I will use that chance to take down another swath of Void Sect disciples!"

"Such boldness!" The Void Immortal lightly smiled, but this was only said to himself.

Kun Feng and Kun Xian both

frowned, while the faces of the remaining one to two hundred Void Sect disciples paled. There's no way they would doubt Lei Yu's words because they clearly saw what he had done previously. A few casual strikes by him and dozens of lives were taken. If that terrifying bead made another appearance, there's no way for them to escape so they can only wait for their deaths to arrive.

"A bastard that wildly raves! You dare to clamor before me when you're only at the early Fusion Soul stage?" Kun Feng who was a super expert at the late Soul Splitting stage felt like he was losing face. Both his attacks had been cunningly dodged by Lei Yu, so it looks like he had to make an

instant kill move so that Lei Yu couldn't find a chance to escape.

Kun Feng slowly floated towards his junior brother Kun Xian and they whispered with each other for a short moment. Lei Yu's eyes were narrowed to slits now as he coldly stared at the two, "You two b\*tches, you don't dare to say those words out loud? Two experts at the Soul Splitting stage needs to secretly plan to take down someone at the Fusion Soul stage, do you guys even have any face left?!"

"You're cursing at us?!" Kun Xian viciously roared out glaring with wide eyes.

Lei Yu didn't bother responding and glanced over at the Void Immortal



who had been silent all this time. Lei Yu could tell the Void Immortal looked very calm as if the previous deaths weren't his Void Sect disciples. There was even a smile on his face when he looked at Lei Yu.

"Are you letting me go, or do you want me to die here and have your Void Sect disciples accompany me down in hell?" Lei Yu's hands were forced! He didn't want to kill anyone but the situation was beyond his control and he had no other methods.

"It's up to you!" The Void Immortal coldly replied.

While Lei Yu was depressed over those words. He then heard a roar: "Heavenly Rain of Swords!"

Standing at the top of a pavilion, Lei Yu frantically looked up. Above him, over ten thousand sword qi's were descending downwards. They were all pointed towards him in a slanted position so it was clear to see that the sword qi's that covered the sky were all targeting him! Who was it that made such a powerful move?

Following the voice of the roar, it was exactly that despicable fatty Kun Xian. Standing beside him was Kun Feng who had a cold smile plastered on his face.

"Let's see how you'll survive this!" Kun Xian sneered with confidence. When he was previously whispering with Kun Feng, they had already circulated their internal energy.

Having ten thousand swords strike out at the same time was their masterpiece. Between Kun Feng and him, one was good at singular attacks and one was good at group attacks. When they coordinated together, they had always been in sync with each other. As for Kun Rong, for some unknown reason he wasn't participating but that didn't mean Lei Yu's danger had lessened a single bit.

Over ten thousand sword qi's were shimmering with sharpness. Including Lei Yu, no one would doubt the sharpness of those sword qi's that almost looked like physical weapons.

Lei Yu's mind was working on overdrive, wondering what he

should do at this point. How was he going to avoid this? Even if he regretfully dies, at least he will die together with Ai Er! But even if he had to die, he was going to drag down a few more of them along with him!

Lei Yu was about to fly towards an area where there was a large crowd of disciples when at this time... A voice cried out from the outside of the Void Sect, and each cry was louder than the next!

"Young master! It's me Long Er!"

"Young master! It's me Long Er!"

"You better listen clearly Void Sect; hurry up and let my young master come out or else we will attack the

barrier protecting your Sect!

"Long Er?" Lei Yu suddenly came to a realization. When he arrived at the Void Sect, Long Er may have detected his presence since he didn't hide his aura. Being found out was quite normal since Long Er was also at the Fusion Soul stage.

But at this moment, Lei Yu didn't want any of his friends to appear. Of course, the bull-head was an exception. Unfortunately, the stubborn him didn't allow the bull-head to come along which resulted in this situation. Lei Yu had never ever imagined that the situation would have developed to this scenario.

No one had even opened their

mouths yet when the Void Immortal coldly humphed, "Who dares to be brazen outside my Void Sect? Simply courting death!"

After saying that, the Void Immortal had already rushed out and Lei Yu couldn't even see the illusory body clearly.

In an instant, dozens of mournful cries were heard outside. Lei Yu's eyes widened, "No!"

Gradually, everything became quiet outside. Lei Yu clenched his fists as he didn't want anyone that cared about him such as brothers or friends get hurt. Yet because of him, Long Er and Eight Whiskers have probably ceased breathing.

Lei Yu's bloodshot eyes stared at the direction outside the Cloud Barrier as his body trembled non-stop. "You son of a bitch, this daddy will fight you to death!"

After clenching his teeth, Lei Yu dove down but not towards the crowd of disciples. He was going after the slightly weaker fatty Kun Xian!

Lei Yu was fast, but the ten thousand plus sword qi's in the air weren't slow either. The moment Lei Yu made a move, the ten thousand sword qi's flew in unison straight for him.

"F\*ckers! F\*ckers!" Lei Yu's eyes were blood red and he wasn't able to control his emotions anymore.

Everything happened because those Void Sect bastards kidnapped Ai Er and Nuo Hu. Lei Yu couldn't stop thinking about that and couldn't calm down!

"As I've said before, you're courting death!" Kun Xian coldly roared out upon seeing Lei Yu rushing straight for him. He didn't move at all because according to his calculations, those ten thousand swords in the air should be able to slice Lei Yu into meat paste before he even arrives in front of him. Kun Xian had no signs of panic at all!

Lei Yu's speed didn't slow down and at the same time, a pair of golden boots appeared on his feet! This was the bull-head's Ares boots!



Lei Yu's speed suddenly skyrocketed as the Sky Devouring Sword was raised above his head. He then cried out: "Thirty-six Lunar Star, sixth form!"

It was at this time that over ten thousand sword qi's pierced through Lei Yu's body giving off "whooshing" noises. Both Kun Xian and Kun Feng smiled. Even the hundred plus disciples had a grin on their face because Lei Yu had finally been pierced by ten thousand swords!

At this time, the expression of the Void Immortal who had just stepped back in changed. He didn't want Lei Yu to die. Even if Lei Yu had killed dozens of his Void Sect disciples, they were all worth a fart

compared to one Lei Yu! But  
everything was already too late...

# Chapter 308: The Medicinal Pill's Effect

Lei Yu's body had stopped in midair while shaking. The Sky Devouring Sword in his hands was still raised high above his head but he wasn't moving at all.

Over a hundred pairs of eyes were staring at Lei Yu who was being pierced by over ten thousand sword qi's. Their heart was enormously satisfied yet somehow; they felt there was something not quite right?

It was Kun Feng who first realized

there was definitely something wrong, "What's going on? Could his blood be already bled dry?"

Correct, not a single drop of blood came out of the currently frozen Lei Yu. One thing they can be sure of was that he wasn't moving. Even the sword qi's couldn't move his body from his current position.

Even though all of this happened in less than two seconds, a smile broke out of the Void Immortal. "Not simple... he's truly not simple at all!"

Lei Yu had actually not been struck? Yet the slow reacting Kun Xian still had a grin on his face, and the next moment, a meteor-like light flashed by. Kun Xian was still

blinking and before he had even opened his eyes fully, a huge terrifying hole had already appeared on him in that short amount of time! The pain sensors hadn't even reached his brains yet and his body was already falling down. His eyes no longer had signs of life in them but there was still a smile on his face.

With this sudden reversal, everyone had their mouths agape in disbelief! This included Kun Feng and the Void Immortal off in a distance; his previous smile had actually frozen in place.

Lei Yu was gasping for air and was currently at the top of the pavilion he was at before. He was using the Sky Devouring Sword to support his

body while his face hung his signature smile. No matter how one looked at him, it was difficult to tell Lei Yu was in a predicament with the smile on his face.

Lei Yu was very satisfied. With his early Fusion Soul strength, he was able to kill a super expert at the Soul Splitting stage. And this was under the situation where he was surrounded by many enemies.

A light breeze blew by, causing Lei Yu's hair to start fluttering in the wind. But the clothes on his body that had been drenched with blood made no movements at all.

Everyone's gaze was focused on Lei Yu's wrist and noticed a red ribbon. Wasn't this an accessory that only women wore? Why would it be

curled around Lei Yu's wrist?

Even if this was a women's accessory, if Lei Yu didn't have it, most likely the chance of him dying would be at 100 percent.

"This is more than enough." Lei Yu lightly said to himself with a smile.

Kun Feng and the dead fatty Kun Xian both entered the Void Sect at the same time. And they both had entered as direct disciples of the Void Immortal. For him to witness the death of his junior brother where he had been together with for over hundreds of years, Kun Feng dove down and grabbed onto the falling body before gently laying Kun Xian on the ground. This gray haired man was in tears and looked

broken hearted. But did the people of the Void Sect deserve pity? They were considered a Sect that followed the righteous path, yet in order to achieve their goals, they would use any underhanded moves. They had only used such underhanded moves on Lei Yu and Ai Er, but just this alone was enough to drape the clothes of hypocrites onto the Void Sect.

It was around this time that Lei Yu started frowning, "Ai Er!"

Lei Yu could clearly feel Ai Er's life signs had greatly weakened. In desperation, Lei Yu immediately took Ai Er out of his Universal Pouch and held onto her ever weakening body.



"Ai Er, how are you doing?"

"Brother Yu, I... I'm cold!" Ai Er's face was pale and her lips had lost all color. Her hands, those small and delicate weak hands had been mangled beyond recognition. Piercing pain was felt in Lei Yu's heart as he looked upon it.

"I'll hold you tight for warmth!" Lei Yu pressed his body against Ai Er. For these two, it had been a long time since they had warmly held each other like this. But such a cherishable scene looked a bit awkward for their current situation.

"Little friend, I will give you one piece of advice! If you join our Void Sect, I can help Nuo Ai Er recover her internal energy so she can stay

alive. Otherwise, you should know the consequences!" Said the Void Immortal in a cold manner. In fact, his heart was currently aching since Kun Xian was his direct disciple. No matter if Kun Xian was a favored disciple or not, there were still the feelings between a master and a disciple. Kun Xian was different than the other ordinary disciples yet if Lei Yu was willing to join the Void Sect, he was still willing to endure his death.

Ai Er's original amount of internal energy had been forced into her body at the sacred spiritual grounds. Once she initiated the secret skill, it completely drained her. Add the fact that Lei Yu injured her further when he was recovering from his wound, the current Ai Er

could no longer bear it. Unless... internal energy was once again injected into her body. There was a chance that it would extend her life. There was nothing Lei Yu could do when the Void Immortal took this chance to once again throw out a despicable move to have him join.

Lei Yu clenched his jaws, "Does her internal energy really have to be recovered in order for her to not die?"

"Yes!"

Lei Yu slowly exhaled a breath before yelling: "You damn evil bastards; you want me to join the Void Sect? Over my dead body!"

"Oh really? Then it looks like you

will have to suffer the consequences which include throwing in Nuo Ai Er's life as well!" The Void Immortal's voice had no emotions because he had completely given up on Lei Yu. The death of his direct disciple and the loss of so many Void Sect members were considered a very big loss to him! Even if he were to kill Lei Yu, would he have a lot of miraculous treasures on him? Would it even be possible for him to possess countless treasures that equals to all the lives that had been lost today?

One could see Lei Yu had no emotions on his face but there was a flash of light and something appeared in his hand.

This was a round medicinal pill the size of one's fingernail. The pill was transparent with a light blue color, and on top of it were several green lines. Wasn't this the Green Vein Dewdrop pill that Ceng Hong had given him?

Lei Yu used his fingers to open Ai Er's mouth and pushed the small medicinal pill in. Ai Er forced herself to swallow and suddenly, a miracle happened!

Upon entering Ai Er's mouth, the medicinal pill transformed into streams of internal energy and coursed through all her meridians. It was clearly repairing and nourishing her! Ai Er's body exuded a light green light and her face gradually recovered a rosy hue. Lei

Yu had been grasping Ai Er's uninjured hand and felt that it was slowly getting stronger before it firmly grasped his own!

Lei Yu was ecstatic! The effects of the Green Vein Dewdrop pill were indeed exceptional! Back then when Lei Yu received it, he already knew of its effects which were to instantly recover one's lost internal energy. Ai Er's internal energy was now rapidly heading towards a full recovery!

"Wha... what was that?!" The Void Immortal was shocked by the sudden change. He could clearly sense Ai Er's internal energy was quickly recovering, and it was at an even faster rate than what the Void Sect's spiritual holy ground was

capable of!

Ai Er had recovered but Lei Yu had no more strength left. He was panicking over Ai Er's previous condition but now there was nothing for him to worry about anymore, thus Lei Yu sat down drained of strength.

Injecting energy into the red ribbon on his wrist had already used up a large portion of his internal energy. Add the fact he struck with the sixth form of the Thirty-six Lunar Star's technique, Lei Yu barely had any internal energy left.

"You have brought many surprises today, but... you may no longer live!" Lei Yu clearly stated he would rather die than join the Void Sect,

so the Void Immortal had no more second thoughts.

He released his internal energy and his huge aura surrounded the entire Void Sect. All the Void Sect disciples started landing on the ground in order to ease the pressure they were feeling, yet that pressure from the Void Immortal was focusing on Lei Yu! For such a super expert at the Boundary Transition stage, perhaps only the bull-head could deal with him!



# Chapter 309: Who Is This Person?

But this time, the bull-head wasn't going to appear because Lei Yu had come to the Void Sect a day early!

Sword qi! The sword qi was incomparably sharp! The Void Immortal's eyes had suddenly become white and his fingers only slightly moved. A white light flashed and an imposing momentum flew straight for Lei Yu.

Lei Yu was out of strength and definitely didn't have any ability to resist. Lei Yu was already satisfied to be able to die right before seeing Ai Er recover. He... this was his

second time closing his eyes.

He knew there was no way he could escape from the hands of a super expert multiple cultivation realms above him, so he just gave up!

It was at this time that Lei Yu sensed a huge aura appearing in front of him. After hearing a "clang" sound of metallic items clashing, he then heard a girl's groan. Lei Yu immediately opened his eyes and watched as a mouthful of blood spray from Ai Er's mouth. On the right side of her waist, Lei Yu could see a serious injury where her internal organs were visible!

Lei Yu's heart was wrenching in pain as he quickly placed Ai Er on the ground.

"Why? I already know that I can't escape my fate of death, so why did you do such a thing? The Void Sect might not harm you later since you are still a direct disciple of theirs!" Lei Yu cried out hysterically but Ai Er's eyes were gradually without life and her breathing slowed down. "Ai Er, no! Don't die! Stay with me!" Lei Yu seemed to have lost his mind as he started tearing at his own hair. This feeling had made him completely fall apart. He had just recovered Ai Er's life yet in a mere dozens of seconds, she was facing death again! Lei Yu was completely broken!

A spark of green light appeared in Lei Yu's eyes, and the brand on his right arm that had turned green prior suddenly shone brightly.

Lei Yu painfully screamed out; both this heart and his arm were in pain! The two types of pain was unbearable, making him want to just die!

But would he really die that easily? Nope, no way it's that simple!

The Void Immortal's eyes widen once again because Lei Yu had just shown him too many miraculous happenings! He couldn't allow any more reversals to happen!

With a roar, he dashed forth wanting to take Lei Yu's life with a single strike!

"Agghh!" Lei Yu lifted his head and roared out. A beam of light suddenly shot out of the lightning

brand heading straight for the Void Immortal.

The speed was too fast! It was so fast that he, someone who was at the late Boundary Transition stage couldn't react at all. Just like shooting through a piece of paper, the green beam of light pierced through the Void Immortal's chest leaving a hole the size of a finger!

The brand disappeared... Lei Yu's brand had disappeared!

In return, Lei Yu's eyes had turned completely green. His body shook as one hand grabbed the Sky Devouring Sword while the other held Ai Er against his chest.

"Void Sect... exterminate!" Lei Yu's

words were very simple. When he was speaking, the Void Immortal could see Lei Yu's terrifying gaze; those eyes didn't belong to Lei Yu! Whose eyes were those? Terrifying, too terrifying!

The Void Immortal clutched his chest and felt a chill on his back! In his entire life, this was the first time he had actually felt fear!

He had changed, he was no longer Lei Yu so who had he become?

Lei Yu flipped the sword in his hand and pointed it towards the ground, "Go!"

The Sky Devouring Sword flew out of his hand and in an instant, and its speed accelerated in midair! The

speed of the sword was so fast that it seemed to have disappeared!

"Aggggghh!"

A heart wrenching cry was heard causing the Void Immortal to frantically look over.

"Kun Feng!"

That's right; Kun Feng was currently slumped down next to Kun Xian. His eyes were round and wide and in-between his eyebrow, a sword was stabbed into it. Blood was gushing out and dyeing his light colored robe, his white hair, and his white beard completely in red. In a single day, the Void Sect lost dozens of disciples and lost two pillars at the Soul Splitting stage!

"Go to hell for me!" The Void Immortal had gone insane! His two disciples died just like that so how could he not go crazy?

His energy aura billowed out into the surrounding as he ignored the blood spouting from his chest. The Void Immortal opened his arms apart and materialized a sword qi that floated in front of him. With a roar, the sword qi shot up towards Lei Yu's position.

One could see Lei Yu's lips curved into a grin before he closed his eyes. But this time, Lei Yu didn't close his eyes because he had given up. He was doing it out of contempt!

The moment the sharp sword qi arrived in front of Lei Yu, a clear



sound of metals colliding was heard. The Void Immortal's sword qi had been smashed away and dispersed!

Floating in front of Lei Yu was the Sky Devouring Sword that was now giving off a white and green light.

"I'm not going to kill you but Lei Yu will one day return to take your life. We will consider this a type of training for him!" These words actually came out of Lei Yu's mouth! One could see Lei Yu step onto the Sky Devouring Sword before a green light flashed, and he flew off towards the foggy clouds.

The Void Immortal wanted to block Lei Yu but remembering that terrifying gaze staring at him just

seconds ago, he actually gave up!

Lei Yu's memory contained the method of breaking the Cloud Barrier. Even though it wasn't him in control of his body, but it looks like the green eyed Lei Yu knew the path and easily left the place!

Floating outside the Void Sect, there were no signs of Long Er and company's corpses. Lei Yu's body trembled and a mouthful of blood sprayed out. He started falling down while Ai Er who was still against his chest, her condition was unknown.

A golden beam of light rapidly flew towards them and quickly caught the falling Lei Yu and Ai Er. Lei Yu's eyes turned black again and the lightning brand on his arms

reappeared. But the lightning brand had turned back to the previous purple color and had no signs of being green anymore. Not only that, the green lightning brand on his Nascent Soul had also changed into a purple brand.

Lei Yu used his last bit of strength to say: "Go... go to the Chaotic Star Sea. Look... look for Ceng Hong Villa!" Lei Yu then lost consciousness.

"Little Yu! Ai Er!" A youth cried out. His left and right arms each hugged onto a person and below his feet was a huge shield.

No! It wasn't a shield. The surface of the object had traces of lines and patterns that resembled... a tortoise

shell!

-----

The Void Sect had encountered a huge catastrophe causing them to lose a lot of soldiers and had their strength greatly weakened. The Void Immortal sat down in his secret chambers dispirited; his mind kept recalling everything that had happened. "Did I make a mistake? Did I make the wrong choices?"

He suddenly slapped the ground and shattered the floor. "No, I wasn't wrong! That Lei Yu must have some special treasure on him! Next time, I will definitely kill him!"

While he was still enraged, a roar

the shuddered the heavens was heard. Even those Void Sect disciples who were cleaning up the blood jumped up in fright from the roar.

"Void Sect! I am the Southern Wild Land's Minotaur Linos! Immediately dissolve the Cloud Barrier!"

"What?!" The Void Immortal immediately stood up and shivered, "Wild Land's Demon King! The Wild Land's Demon King has actually come?!"

He then recalled two years ago that Tai Lao and Hei Feng came looking for a person yet he ignored them. Could it... could it be there really was some sort of relationship between the Demon King and Lei

Yu?

After swallowing hard, the Void Immortal quickly rushed out and made some hand seals dispersing the layers of clouds.

-----

(T/N: You should all have guessed why the green eyes, and the cause/who it is will be revealed in about 50 chapters)

# Chapter 310: Black Tortoise Shield

Minotaur Linos didn't know if Lei Yu was currently safe or not. If he were to suddenly shatter the Cloud Barrier without cause, his dignity as the Wild Land's Demon King will diminish. He was guessing that upon hearing his name, those inside would be in fear and most likely make the right choices.

Sure enough, a few moments after he roared out, the Cloud Barrier gradually disappeared. The Void Immortal personally came out and all the Void Sect disciples bowed to show their respects to the Demon King.

Although none of these people have ever seen the Wild Land's Demon King, the famous title had long resounded through the Immortal World. No one dared to bad mouth the Demon King or else death would befall them out of the blue.

The Void Immortal recognized Minotaur Linos because during the times of chaos in the Immortal World, he and the bull-head had fought before. One of them was at the Soul Splitting stage while the other was at the Boundary Transition stage. Now, the bull-head had successfully passed the tribulation of the Nine Heavenly Profound Lightnings. Even though he was a single realm higher than the Void Immortal, this step was a complete nightmare to everyone



where it was next to impossible to step past!

"Lord Demon King!" The Void Immortal had changed into something more formal as he respectfully bowed to the bull-head. As for the wound on his chest, the alter Lei Yu didn't want to take his life so it didn't damage any vitals. After recovering for a bit, the Void Immortal looked like he had never received any injuries.

"I want to ask: Where is that person that had come to your Void Sect?" Bull-head had his hands clasped behind his back. The domineering aura he gave off made the Void Immortal not even dare to completely raise his head straight.

"I'm not clear on who Lord Demon King is referring to?" The Void Immortal was quickly trying to figure out what sort of relationship did Lei Yu have with the bull-head? Why would the Wild Land's Demon King, who had rarely stepped out of the Southern Wild Lands suddenly come to the Void Sect because of him?

"Humph! You're pretending to be dumb in front of me?" The Void Immortal was startled as the ear piercing voice reverberated throughout the surrounding. The voice was too difficult for the Void Sect disciples to endure so every one of them were covering their ears.

In a corner of the mountain face, a

stone platform had actually broken off. A mere "humph" by Minotaur Linos had actually caused such a powerful attack!

"I don't dare! I don't dare! Is Demon King referring to Lei... Yu?"

"So you know of him?" The bull-head asked with his eyes widened.

The Void Immortal swallowed hard, "Correct, I know him! He has already taken his lover and left this place!"

"Oh? How come I didn't encounter him?" The bull-head mumbled.

"This, I don't know why but little friend Lei Yu has definitely left. He only used three moves to suppress Ai Er, and those two quickly left

afterwards and didn't idle around here."

The bull-head nodded, "If I find out that you lied to me, then your Void Sect's outcome will be similar to that mountain over there!"

With a roar, the bull-head flicked out his middle finger and a bright bolt of light shot towards a tall mountain off into the distance.

"BOOM!"

"Crash!"

With a flick of the bull-head's finger, the previously towering mountain became a large pile of gravel. How could such a move not have a deterrent effect? The Void Immortal gave a few light coughs, "I

don't dare, I don't dare!"

"Farewell." With a flip of his sleeves, the bull-head disappeared from his spot. The Void Immortal couldn't even see how the bull-head moved or disappeared at all.

After wiping the sweat from his eyebrows, the Void Immortal's eyes became vicious. "Sooner or later, you will have to ascend. Once I breakthrough the Boundary Transition stage, I wanna see how arrogant your people will still be!" After clenching his fists, the brand on the Void Immortal's forehead flashed a red light. "Lei Yu, I'm going to rip you into a thousand pieces to avenge my two disciples!"

At the bottom of a mountain, a

huge dragon was in a pool of blood. And on the head of the dragon was a deep sword cut. After spraying out a mouthful of blood, the huge dragon transformed into a human.

"I'm not dead yet! I'm actually still alive!"

This person was none other than Long Er who had suffered an attack by the Void Immortal. He clenched his jaws as he struggled to stand up and look at the death of his people. "It looks like I'll have to seek out senior Ceng Hong!"

He then struggled to walk towards a catfish that was only the size of a forearm. Ever since Long Er had arrived at the Immortal World, this catfish who had eight whiskers had

followed him and became his right-hand man - Eight Whiskers!

"Don't worry, I will definitely avenge you!" Long Er had a vicious look in his eyes. Even if he wasn't the opponent of the Void Sect, his heart was still bent on revenge!

He struggled to support his body before rising into the air. Long Er then flew off to the side of the Void Sect towards the edge of the Immortal World. There was a light layer of fog here which meant behind it would be the dangerous Chaotic Star Sea.

In the Chaotic Star Sea at this moment, a vigorous looking youth with a bare upper body was standing on top of something that

looked like a huge tortoise shield. The muscles on his body were filled with explosive power as he rapidly flew forward towards a certain direction. His face was filled with panic and his eyes looked extremely worried. He continued forcing himself to go faster and faster and didn't dare to slow down one bit.

"Little Yu, Ai Er, just hang in there!" When he entered the Chaotic Star Sea, this youth had encountered a demonic cultivator. Fortunately this demonic cultivator didn't have any evil thoughts so after this youth's inquiring; he found the general location of the Ceng Hong Villa. He was now quickly rushing there without taking a break.

A trace of golden light flashed in



his eyes as this youth once again injected internal energy into the shield beneath his feet, causing his speed to increase a little more. At this time, a simple looking ring could be seen on his finger. The ring looked very old and was ash gray colored with some strange scribbles on it. Wasn't this Lei Yu's storage ring?

That's right; this person was none other than Nuo Hu who managed to gain the Black Tortoise as his master! The Black Tortoise had given Nuo Hu the storage ring and gifted him with his personal weapon, the Black Tortoise Shield. His current strength wasn't that great - he was only at the late Gold Core stage but his defense wasn't something ordinary cultivators can

break past!

Along the way, Nuo Hu had encountered many instances of demonic cultivators and devil cultivators blocking his path. It was fortunate that their strengths never exceeded the Fusion Soul stage. Nuo Hu struggled and persisted, and even though he couldn't kill them, his opponents couldn't break past his defense so he was able to safeguard everyone's lives.

Lei Yu and Ai Er weren't out in the open with Nuo Hu but stored inside the storage ring. This way, Nuo Hu wouldn't be hindered or burdened by them so he could rush forth at an easier pace.

After many twists and turns, it took

over two months before Nuo Hu reached a certain territory. Off in a distance, two golden beams of light flew towards him. Nuo Hu knew that there were going to be others blocking his path so he landed on a planet and strengthened his defense to ready for a battle.

The newly arrivals were obviously demonic cultivators. Their backs had huge golden wings and their mouth and nose were fused together that curved downwards. It was clear that they were some type of eagle demons.

"Friend, do you need to pass this area?" Asked one of the birdmen, his tone slightly sharp.

"That's right." Nuo Hu didn't allow

his aura to spread out as he maintained his strongest defensive state.

"Don't be so tense friend, the rules here are for you to just leave behind some crystal stones and you can leave."

Nuo Hu was a bit stunned because he had never used crystal stones before, but he knew there were two inside the storage ring. He didn't know what the value of them was but Nuo Hu swiped his hands and a blue colored crystal stone appeared.

The eyes of the two birdmen widened, "It's good that you have crystal stones! Friend, you may leave!"

"Can I ask... how do I get to Ceng Hong Villa?" Nuo Hu asked.

"You are someone of the Ceng Hong Villa?" Those two birdmen angrily stared right as they stored the crystal stone.

Nuo Hu didn't know the problems Lei Yu was involved in. He was originally able to easily leave this place but now, it wouldn't be so simple anymore.

# Chapter 311: The Esoteric Of Defense

"No, I'm just looking for a friend." Noticing their tones changing, Nuo Hu tensed up and coldly stared at his opponents.

"Friends? You have friends at the Ceng Hong Villa?" One of the birdmen asked.

"That's right!"

The wings behind those two fluttered, "Then you cannot go! Leave your life here!"

Nuo Hu's face turned serious, "I already gave you a crystal stone so

what did I do that offended you guys?"

"Humph! The people of Ceng Hong Villa killed our great Roc Emperor! You are a friend of the Ceng Hong Villa so you must deliver your life to us!" The two birdmen clenched their jaws with hatred, intending to kill Nuo Hu. The two then glanced at each other and nodded before taking out their weapons from their waist. They didn't bother allowing Nuo Hu to say anything more and started releasing attacks filled with the fury of a storm.

Nuo Hu angrily stared at them and roared out. A golden light shone from his body and the huge shield resonated and shone brightly as well. It then floated in front of Nuo

Hu and released an energy surrounding him. No matter how much the two birdmen attacked, they couldn't get through Nuo Hu's defense!

After several attacks, those two were at a loss because Nuo Hu didn't retaliate and only focused his effort on defending. Nuo Hu couldn't do anything to these two who were at the late Nascent Soul stage, yet the two birdmen couldn't touch a single hair of Nuo Hu either. This stalemate persisted for a while before the two birdmen retreated several meters back. All three then stared at each other without daring to make another move.

"Let me leave, I have something



important to take care of!" Nuo Hu enunciated every single word.

"Impossible, just wait for your death!" After say that, one of the birdmen made a shrill cry into the air. He then revealed a cold smile, "I believe you will soon be surrounded by our companions. You want to leave? Keep dreaming!"

"Bastards!" Lei Yu and Ai Er had been unconscious for over two months now so Nuo Hu was extremely anxious. He had never killed anyone before but these birdmen had completely ignited the rage in his heart. It looks he cannot hold back anymore... so let's FIGHT!

Nuo Hu roared out and the anger shown in his eyes looked like they

were about to spew out flames. The muscles on his upper body tensed up and enlarged like they were filled with explosive power. Those two birdmen were then startled by this sudden change.

Nuo Hu had been only using defensive moves so can his offensive power take on those two?

One needs to know that his master is an existence that has lived in these realms for over a million years! Although the Black Tortoise isn't a divine beast that has a billion year longevity, it was similar to Long Er who had its own arcane secrets of its divine beast lineage. Nuo Hu didn't know the esoteric of a dragon, but he fully grasped the secrets of a Black Tortoise!

With his overpowered defense, the blunt force can steamroll through the sharp attacks!

"Ahhh!"

Nuo Hu clenched his jaws and rushed out. His huge shield was shining brightly and exuding a golden explosive aura. Seeing that Nuo Hu was getting closer to them, those two birdmen didn't dare to be negligent and made their moves to block him.

From the esoteric of defense, Nuo Hu happened to have a trick up his sleeves and they fell for it!

Nuo Hu's attack wasn't really an offensive attack; he was actually going to use his powerful defense to

reflect their attack. If those two birdmen didn't make a move, Nuo Hu would be pretty helpless in this situation. But since they did make a move, however big their attack power dealt out would be fully reflected back at them! It wasn't easy for Nuo Hu to grasp such an intriguing concept of the Black Tortoise!

A look of shock appeared in the eyes of the two birdmen. A mere kid at the Gold Core stage had actually caused them to suffer an injury?! This kid must have some sort of secret skill! If they continue to stay here, the ones in danger will be themselves! The two birdmen sprayed out a mouthful of blood as they were blown backwards. They began to spread their wings before

turning into two beams of golden light and shooting off into the distance.

Nuo Hu heavily exhaled in relief. If he had to deal with opponents at the Fusion Soul stage, Nuo Hu will be the one to surely die. Even though he could put his entire effort into defending against someone at the Fusion Soul stage, he wouldn't be able to fight back at all. If he tried to use that reflective attack on experts above the Fusion Soul stage, his chances of winning would be equal to zero! Wanting to use his secret skill in order to reflect a powerful attack coming from someone multiple cultivation realms above him? Completely impossible!

Nuo Hu didn't dare to idle around here and focused his spirit. The huge shield brightened and Nuo Hu jumped on top before flying off in a certain direction.

The Chaotic Star Sea was filled with dangers, but Nuo Hu didn't care because he would do anything for Lei Yu and Ai Er.

Nuo Hu knows how wholeheartedly Lei Yu had treated him and his sister, and there was no need to say out loud how close their relationship was. They had already surpassed the relationship of friends and had formed a bond similar to brothers, a relationship just like one's own family!

Because of Nuo Hu and Ai Er, Lei

Yu rushed to the Chaotic Star Sea without hesitation with his previous low cultivation strength. Now it was Nuo Hu's turn, so what should he be anxious about?

After several more days, Nuo Hu was totally exhausted.

He had been chased and attacked endlessly by those birdmen these past few days, but now they didn't dare to continue chasing once he had reached a certain area. It looks like he had already flew beyond the boundary of those birdmen's territory. After exhaling heavily, Nuo Hu realized a person was flying towards him. No, not a person! It was a big grasshopper!

It had a human's body but the head

of a grasshopper, and its eyes were quite terrifying to behold.

"Leave your Gold Core here!" The grasshopper cried out.

Nuo Hu sent out his perception and realized this monster's strength was much stronger than him by a lot. It looks like he'll have another tough battle!

After making preparations to take on his opponent, Nuo Hu slowly descended. The grasshopper wasn't going to let him go and it too descended down onto a small planet with Nuo Hu.

Nuo Hu released his defensive power and the grasshopper also prepared to attack. At this time, a



white light flashed by in the sky.  
The grasshopper looked up and  
when it realized who had come, his  
body started shaking in fright.

The white light shot down in-  
between those two, "Bastard! Didn't  
I tell you before that you're not  
allowed to harm outsiders?"

The grasshopper shivered and  
plopped down on his knees,  
"Grandpa Big White! I... it's been a  
long time... since I've tasted a Gold  
Core!

"If you happened to harm my  
family's young master or his  
friends, dying a thousand deaths  
would not even remedy your  
offense!"

"Yes! Yes!" The grasshopper actually started sweating.

"Scram!"

With a puff of smoke, the grasshopper disappeared without a trace. Nuo Hu's mouth was agape at the new comer... wasn't this a dog? Its whole body was white and looked quite ferocious, except Nuo Hu could see a trace of gentleness in its eyes. On its forehead was a red ruby with gold edges surrounding it.

"Excuse... excuse me, you are...?"

Nuo Hu didn't dare to be rash. That grasshopper was so much stronger than him yet upon seeing this white dog, it ran away in a puff of smoke. This clearly meant the dog was even

stronger than the grasshopper.

"This is the Ceng Hong Villa's territory, why are you here?" The white dog shook its head and its fur fluttered around.

Nuo Hu carefully observed the white dog and was suddenly widened his eyes in shock, "Big White! You're Big White right?"

# Chapter 312:

## Immediate Treatment

Big White was a bit surprised, how did this person know his name?

Wait a minute... his face looks familiar... Big White was racking his brains yet couldn't remember where he had seen him before.

“You don't remember me? It's me! I'm little Yu's sworn older brother! We met each other at the Scaling Dragon Cave!” Nuo Hu reminded him that day, Lei Yu requested Long Er to remove all the water from the main halls before Nuo Hu could come out of the storage ring. It was

then he saw Big White. Although Big White was in human form, there were times when he changed to his true form and the most important point was the red ruby on his forehead always remained the same.

“It’s you! Where’s the young master? Isn’t the young master together with you?” Big White finally remembered who this person was. But these past two years, the changes to Nuo Hu were really quite a lot. His hair had been much longer and his body more buffer, but at least his face didn’t change much.

“Little Yu managed to rescue Ai Er but suffered a serious injury! He had already been unconscious for

two months but before that, he wanted me to bring him to the Ceng Hong Villa.” While explaining, Nuo Hu pointed at the storage ring.

Big White remembered the ring was something that belonged to Lei Yu!

It wasn’t necessary to explain further since Big White understood Lei Yu must be inside the ring!

“Quickly follow me!”

Following behind Big White, their path was unimpeded the entire way because no one dared to block them. Nuo Hu finally realized this Ceng Hong Villa must be some major power in the Chaotic Star Sea.

After flying rapidly, they had finally arrived at their destination. The scenery here wasn't bad at all and it was considered a rarely seen paradise amongst the planets of the Chaotic Star Sea.

Amongst sparse forests, there were many strange looking beasts. These beasts were herbivores and didn't look dangerous, and some actually looked quite cute. At the backdrop of these forests were small green mountains, and at the base of these mountains flowed a river with extremely clear water where one could even see the fishes swimming at the bottom.

Big White and Nuo Hu continued flying by following the river. They then arrived at an expansive open

land where it looked like the pastures of the countryside. At the end of this open flat land was a small house. Outside the house, a girl that didn't look that old was sitting there resting her chin on her hands and staring off into the distance like she was thinking about something. Upon seeing Big White, she immediately stood up with an excited expression on her face.

She wasn't excited seeing Big White but it was the person following behind him. Even though she couldn't clearly see the person's face because of the distance, but what sort of place was the Ceng Hong Villa? Was this a place that anyone could enter? Even if it was Big White, he didn't have the



authority to allow random people to enter. So who could it be? A person that didn't require Big White to gain permission first yet could come in so easily?

It was clear that the girl thought the person behind Big White was Lei Yu!

“Grandpa! Quickly come out grandpa! Brother Yu is back!” She was young so she had a high pitch in her voice. Her cry of excitement even scared off all the surrounding birds resting in the trees.

“Where? Where?” Big White hadn't even touched down yet and an elderly person had already arrived from the rear mountains.

Upon clearly seeing Nuo Hu's face, the young girl said in surprise: "How... how come it's not brother Yu? Who are you?"

"Big White! Are you going beyond your authority? Who allowed you to bring an outsider to my Ceng Hong Villa?" The elderly person angrily stared at Big White before staring at Nuo Hu. Upon observing him, he realized there was something different about Nuo Hu. It was obvious that Nuo Hu was a human yet the aura he exuded didn't belong to a human. What was going on?

While the elderly person was making observations, Big White bowed, "Master, save the young master first!" After saying that, Big

White used his eyes to give Nuo Hu an acknowledgement. Nuo Hu then made a thought and two beams of light rushed out from the ring. The two beams of light grew bigger as it landed on the ground causing everyone panic.

“Little Yu, it’s really you!” The elderly person’s eyes became red.

Nuo Hu then said: “Senior, I am the sworn brother that little Yu had gone through untold hardships to rescue in the Immortal World. And this is his girlfriend who is my younger sister, Ai Er.”

“Master, them two have been unconscious for over two months now! Quickly save them!” Now wasn’t the time for a happy reunion

so Big White immediately told them what Nuo Hu had said prior.

The elderly person nodded. Two beams of green light came out from his palm and each landing on Lei Yu and Ai Er's chest. He then lifted his palms up and the two on the ground started floating. At this time, there was some slight shock on Ceng Hong's face. "Fusion Soul stage? The young master had actually reached the Fusion Soul stage in these two short years?"

"Wh... what?" Big White couldn't believe what he had heard. Ceng Hong then continued: "You guys wait here; I'll take them back to the rear mountains for treatment. Big White, guard the Villa seriously. If anyone intrudes, kill without

mercy!”

“Understood!” Big White nodded.

Today, Big White had broken a vow. It's not like he broke a vow of not eating meat or celibacy, it was the vow to the girl that while in the vicinity of the Villa, he wasn't allowed to speak. But today's situation was urgent so he couldn't be bothered with it.

Not only that, Big White had to go against the words that Ceng Hong left for him because someone had just arrived that he couldn't kill!

“Lord White! Lord White!”

The moment Ceng Hong entered the rear mountains, a cry from the sky was heard.

Upon looking up, “Long Er, how come it’s you?!” Big White said with surprise.

“Grandpa White, young master...” Long Er glanced at Nuo Hu and it seems like his memory was much better than Big White’s. “Aren’t you the young master’s sworn brother Nuo Hu? How come you’re here?”

“Little Yu suffered a serious injury so he and Ai Er are currently being treated by senior Ceng Hong.” Replied Nuo Hu.

“That’s means the young master... was able to escape out of the Void Sect?” Long Er’s eyes widened. He would never forget what happened that day. After yelling out a few times outside the Void Sect, the

Void Immortal attacked them. Since they didn't have the power to resist, the dozens of subordinates he brought with him had all lost their lives.

"That's right." Nuo Hu nodded, "Once I left the place of my master's, I rushed towards the Void Sect. Never would I have imagined that the moment I arrived, little Yu rushed out with Ai Er in his arms. He had no more strength in him anymore but before he lost conscious, he had me come to the Ceng Hong Villa. It looks like senior Ceng Hong has an extremely powerful healing ability."

Big White and Long Er both nodded, but it seemed that they had forgotten one important thing. They

suddenly heard someone behind yell out unsatisfactorily: "You guys dare to not place me in your eyes?!"

The three turned around and saw a girl pouting with anger.

Big White gasped, he had actually completely forgotten about the young miss!

"Young miss! There's no need to introduce Nuo Hu to you since you already know about him. This is Long Er, he was someone I saved before."

"Didn't grandpa mention before? Anyone who intrudes into the Ceng Hong Villa has to be killed! You dare to not listen to grandpa's command?" The young girl cried



out while pointing at Long Er.

# Chapter 313: It's All Up To You

"Young miss... we... we three will go out and guard the Villa!" After making some eye gestures at Nuo Hu and Long Er, the three of them nodded in understanding. They didn't bother with Bao Er's yelling and the three flew off into three different directions.

This place was similar to paradise. Even if one compared the most exotic place in the Mortal World to here, it wouldn't be ranked above the Ceng Hong Villa. And there was one special place here that even Big White wouldn't dare to go to, which was the place where Ceng Hong

refined his pills!

Next to a small structure was a pavilion made out of wood with only two levels. Even though it looked simple, it was tidied up to a presentable manner as if a housewife had taken good care of it.

This was a resting area for Ceng Hong, Bao Er, and Big White. Behind this two story pavilion was a small mountain that wasn't that tall. At the base of the small mountain was a cave, and at the entrance of the cave was a transparent aura completely blocking it. This was a barrier that Ceng Hong put up. Its purpose wasn't to block Big White or others close to him because Big White's loyalty was unquestionable.

Ceng Hong was mainly concerned about outsiders intruding into his Villa since inside the cave was his entire life's work!

The inside of the cave wasn't as dark as one would imagine because there were dozens of crystal stones inlaid all over the walls. The lighting effect of these crystal stones weren't too bad.

The cave wasn't that big and only was about 100 square meters. At the center of the cave was a big pill furnace sitting there. At the bottom was a flame giving off "pak pak" sounds that were continuously heating up the pill furnace.

The entire furnace was the color gold with a height of about 2

meters. It had a diameter of around 1 meter with a dragon engraved on it. On the top of the furnace was a dragon's head acting as the lid.

The room was surrounded by wooden shelves and each shelf had multiple boxes. At the front of each box was clearly labeled the name of the herb.

Behind the furnace was a long bench with a male and a female on it. The ground was currently quite messy with random herbs lying about.

It appears that Ceng Hong was in a rush to save them and didn't bother being tidy, allowing the fallen herbs to stay there for now.

The male and female were obviously Lei Yu and Ai Er who were still unconscious. But their breathing had become smoother and wasn't as chaotic as it was before.

One could see Ceng Hong standing by the bench, each of his hands resting on Lei Yu and Ai Er's wrist. Two streams of light green internal energy were currently slowly entering the two bodies.

His face slowly revealed a look of surprise, and it became shock as time went on. Later, the expression turned serious!

"Damn! This girl's condition is getting better but little Yu's condition doesn't look good!"

After gently lowering Ai Er's arm, Ceng Hong clasped his index and middle fingers together. He then placed his fingers on his own pulse at the wrist and the stream of internal energy entering Lei Yu increased with power.

After a while, Ceng Hong removed his hand and sighed, "Little Yu, I can only stabilize the internal energy within your body but cannot help wake you up. Everything... relies on your own will!"

Ceng Hong took out a square shaped box and opened the lid, causing a light fragrance to permeate the air. Inside the box were four white pills and two red pills the size of marbles that kids usually played with.

After taking out a red pill, he opened Lei Yu's mouth and pushed the pill in. Once the medicinal pill entered Lei Yu's mouth, it melted and transformed into energy going straight for his heart meridian. One could see Lei Yu's chest rapidly moving up and down, and even his clothes started fluttering visibly. This was a normal response so Ceng Hong nodded in satisfaction before putting away the square box.

From the shelves of medicinal herbs, he grabbed a bowl made of metal. He then started grabbing some herbs from various places that had already been dried. One could see Ceng Hong start to crumble these herbs before it turned to powder and falling into the metallic bowl.



He then took a spoonful of transparent liquid from an urn and started stirring it into the bowl. The paste like substance was then applied to the terrifying looking wound on Ai Er's waist. This mixture of herbs may not be able to instantly make Ai Er's wound recover, but their healing effects aren't too bad.

It appears that even though unconscious, the pain Ai Er felt still made her start groaning. Some blood started flowing out of the wound once again.

Ceng Hong ignored the blood and continued applying more of this gray colored medicinal paste. It was only until it had completely covered the entire wound did he stop his

actions.

"How could her hand be crushed into such a condition? This looks a bit complicated but the girl's fate is not bad, I happen to have recently come across some exceptional herbs that will allow her to recover." Ceng Hong said to himself. At this time, his gaze landed on a bracelet on Ai Er's wrist.

"Isn't that little Yu's Spiritual Bracelet of Frost? Why is she wearing it?" He then recalled Nuo Hu's words that Ai Er was Lei Yu's girlfriend. In the Immortal Realm, they were considered dao partners. And even though dao partners may not go through the intimate bonding between men and women,

they are still considered a couple.

"It looks like this girl is very important to little Yu, or else he wouldn't have put the family's heirloom on her!" Because of this reason, Ceng Hong gave extra attention when healing Ai Er.

In another area.

"You have all been searching for Lei Yu's whereabouts for the past two months yet you still haven't found any traces of him?" Minotaur Linos was standing on the raised dais as he lectured the four great generals.

"Lord Demon King, your subjects deserve death! We have searched every corner of the Immortal World and we have even asked every Sect

about it yet have not found any traces of Lord Lightning!" One of the more burly generals replied.

"Trash! You are all trash!" Even though the bull-head had a bad temper, he had always been good to his subordinates. He had been enraged only twice, and twice it was because of Lei Yu. The first time, his anger was directed at his own daughter and now, this was the second time. Thus we can see how important Lei Yu was to him. After all, Lei Yu was his savior. If it weren't for Lei Yu, most likely he would still be trapped in the maze and experiencing suffering beyond words.

"Father, is there still no news?"  
Upon hearing the angry roars of his

father, a youth with blonde hair came into the main hall and asked.

The bull-head helplessly shook his head, "None."

"How about I go look for him?" Said the blonde youth.

"Romon, how is your cultivation?"

"I've made some progress these two years; I'm currently at the mid Nascent Soul stage." The blonde youth replied.

"Not bad, but when compared to little Yu, there's still a big gap!"

It's not strange for the bull-head to compare Romon with the perversely gifted Lei Yu since he was the only ascetic cultivator in

the entire Immortal Realm that had reached the Nascent Soul stage.

"I can't compare to him, especially when my cultivation method is very difficult to begin with."

The bull-head sighed, "Since you already have the strength of the Nascent Soul stage, it should be enough to protect yourself in the Immortal Realm. Go ahead and search the places he has been to then."

"Understood!"

The bull-head sighed again before walking towards the back of the throne and not bothering with the four great generals still in the main hall.

In these short two months, Minotaur Linos had visited the Void Sect more than once to verify their words. But the Immortal Void persisted with the same statement so he couldn't get anything new out of him. He also didn't want to flip the Void Sect upside down because even though his strength was incredible, he'd still be criticized by everyone in the Immortal World. Therefore, this matter had given him a huge headache.

# Chapter 314:

## Refusing To Take A Step Away

Telephassa's beautiful eyes showed how worried she was. Even though Lei Yu had stayed in the Southern Wild Lands for the past two years, he had been concentrating on cultivation and barely spent time together with her. Now that Lei Yu had disappeared, who knew if he was deliberately being irresponsible in making those who cared about him worry.

But this cannot be blamed on Lei Yu since this wasn't what he wanted. Lei Yu wanted to bring Ai



Er to the Southern Wild Lands so he could forever spend his time together with those he loved.

But it seems like fate would not stop interfering with Lei Yu as problems seem to keep piling on top of him. He was a person that was kicked out of the family and started experiencing countless bizarre events.

Romon was standing on top of a huge copper pillar while accompanying him was the pig-head, Tai Lao.

Minotaur Linos made such arrangements because he was worried for Romon being by himself. This was good too since Tai Lao's strength was considered quite

high in the Immortal Realm, he could handle pretty much any confrontation they might encounter.

Romon's destination was the large river below the Void Sect, the Scaling Dragon Caves. That was a place he had visited before so perhaps Long Er might know Lei Yu's whereabouts.

But upon Romon reaching the place, he noticed the river banks were filled with corpses and skeletons. This scene completely shook Romon's heart before he dived deep into the water.

"What happened here?" Romon mumbled to himself as he found the Scaling Dragon Caves were void

of people.

"Young master, what should we do now?" Tai Lao asked from the side.

"We'll return. Since we didn't see little Yu's corpse, that means he's still alive. It looks like the only thing we can do now is to wait." Romon said in a helpless manner.

Tai Lao thought for a bit before saying: "How about we go to the Void Sect and demand Lei Yu's return? If they don't deliver him to us, we'll cause a ruckus or something. I believe that even if the Void Immortal makes an appearance, he wouldn't dare do anything to you or me."

"Even my father could get anything

out of them so do you think we'll get any information from their mouths?" Romon shook his head, "My father must have his reason for not making a move against the Void Sect so it's best that we go back first."

After saying that, Romon didn't wait for Tai Lao's response before he started swimming up to the surface. Tai Lao could only follow behind without a word.

It's not that Romon wasn't worried; it's just that he had no clue on how to even look for Lei Yu thus worrying was of no use.

The Immortal World was extremely big and Lei Yu could be anywhere. It's not like they could completely

flip the whole world upside down  
looking for him right?

None of them would have imagined  
Lei Yu was currently in the depths  
of the Chaotic Star Sea.

After several days, Ai Er's body  
seemed to be getting better. At least  
one could no longer see the  
occasional painful expression on  
her face. And the terrifying looking  
wound she had, it was gradually  
mending together and only leaving  
behind a large scab. As long as the  
scab fell off and after recovering for  
a period of time, most likely not  
even the scar would be left behind.

As for the hand that had been  
crushed by Lei Yu, that was a bit  
more complicated. But after Ceng

Hong injected his internal energy with the addition of top grade medicine, the condition was improving. The shattered bones were slowly mending together and eventually, she would make a full recovery.

Lei Yu's situation wasn't optimistic though because after several days, there still weren't any improvements. The red medicinal pill he ingested did manage to calm down a bit of the messy situation in his meridians, but it didn't have the effect of actually healing him.

Even Ceng Hong couldn't understand why Lei Yu's meridians were in such a chaotic condition.

This was like a test for Lei Yu, but

the test was a bit too cruel.

Even if Lei Yu was to awaken right now, there's no way that with his current strength, he'd be able to change the chaotic situation that was going on in his meridians. This wasn't a normal disorder in the meridians. The originally free flowing meridians seemed to have something blocking it causing his energy and blood to be unable to flow properly. And that was only the first issue.

What caused Ceng Hong a headache was that Lei Yu's heart meridian showed signs of decaying. This wasn't something Ceng Hong could easily cure since it was considered a serious internal injury. The internal injury wasn't caused by

outside influence but was caused by some sort of power within Lei Yu, and that's why the only way for recovery was all on himself as well.

With these multiples issues, the only thing Ceng Hong could do was to help Lei Yu clear his meridians.

Ai Er's condition was slowly getting better. Ceng Hong lightly took the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost from her wrist and put it onto Lei Yu. The bracelet had already lost most of its luster which showed it must have used up a large amount of energy for healing. It still was better than nothing so Ceng Hong had to at least give it a try to see if it would benefit Lei Yu.

He glanced over at the flames that



were slowly dying out. Inside the furnace were some medicinal pills he had just refined, and a few days later he would be able to open it up and use them.

Ceng Hong had already been inside for several days so he started walking out of the cave. This wasn't considered much because at critical times of refining pills, he would stay inside the cave for three to five months. There were even some rare occurrences where he would be there for one to two years!

After sensing that there was an unfamiliar aura in his territory, Ceng Hong rose up into the air and proceeded to fly in that direction.

"Long Er? So it's you." Ceng Hong

was a bit surprised upon arriving behind Long Er.

While on top of a small mountain guarding the area, the dazed Long Er quickly turned around upon hearing the voice. "Greetings Master!"

"How come you're here?" Asked Ceng Hong.

After Long Er told him the entire story, Ceng Hong then angrily said: "Wait until little Yu gets better, we'll go to the Immortal World and demand an explanation from the Void Sect!"

Hearing Ceng Hong's words, Long Er became extremely happy. Long Er wasn't worried about Ceng Hong

at all, even when there was the Void Immortal standing behind the Void Sect. We can see from this that Ceng Hong's strength cannot be underestimated! Perhaps his strength might even be higher than the Void Immortal's!

Another several days later, the unconscious Ai Er finally woke up. Her body was still really weak and she wasn't willing to take a single step away from Lei Yu.

"Ai Er, you haven't eaten anything for a long time. How about a drink of water first?" Nuo Hu handed Ai Er a bowl of water.

She grabbed the bowl but then put it down. The sadness in her eyes would make anyone's heart ache as

her gaze never left Lei Yu's body.

"Your injury has just started improving so you should rest some more." Ceng Hong's voice came from outside the cave.

Ai Er quickly stood up. Because her movements were so sudden, pain shot through her waist. She clenched her teeth to endure the pain, "Senior! You have to save brother Yu! I'm begging you! I'm begging you!"

Ceng Hong smiled first before sighing, "Of course I would use my all to heal him, but his internals are truly in a mess and requires him to slowly recover on his own. The only thing I could do was to clear his meridians allowing his internal

energy to circulate freely."

"Thank you!" Ai Er deeply bowed.

"Ai Er, listen to senior and go get some rest. I can take care of little Yu, okay?" Said Nuo Hu as his heart ached upon seeing his little sister like this.

"No, I won't! If brother Yu doesn't wake up, I will stay with him and never leave his side!" When Ai Er was in her stubborn mode, no one was able to persuade her and could only let it be.

# Chapter 315: Finally Wakes Up

Days and years go by like the flow of a river. Within these several years, many things have changed yet some things remained the same.

Lei Yu was still lying on top of the large bench while the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost had slowly regained its luster. A strong and robust energy was slowly entering Lei Yu's body from the bracelet.

"Brother Yu, I'm going to get some water and help you clean up." Ai Er's hand had fully recovered now. Her internal energy wasn't as strong as it was back then when Lei Yu

saw her at the Void Sect because that energy was forced into her body and not something she cultivated on her own. Nowadays, Ai Er would remain by Lei Yu's side to take care of him while she would occasionally cultivate. After all, she still possessed the cultivation methods of the Void Sect. Ai Er understood one simple fact: As long as she became strong, she would be able to help Lei Yu and not drag him down. Having an immortal life was just the start of it.

Without her realizing it, Lei Yu's eyelashes twitched a few times.

It was peaceful and quiet outside the cave like usual. At the river banks, Nuo Hu was standing there with a bare upper body. In his

hands was a rock that was at least 500 jins that he was lifting up and down. These past several years, he had never stopped his own cultivation. His power kept increasing but unfortunately, it was at a slow rate.

"Sister Ai Er, let me help you!" A young girl sweetly cried out as she ran out of a small hut.

"It's you Bao Er." Ai Er smiled. Five years, it had been a full five years. Ai Er and Bao Er started off as love rivals and slowly became good sisters. There were plenty of embarrassing moments between them, but no one wanted to bring them up now.

Bao Er seemed to have grown up a



lot too. When she saw how gentle and considerate Ai Er was, she too underwent a change. Not only did her arrogant temper change, there was a lot less restrictions on Big White as well. At least the current Big White was allowed to talk inside the Ceng Hong Villa!

Ceng Hong Villa usually did not allow outsiders to enter, but these past five years, Ai Er, Nuo Hu, and Long Er did not leave the place. They were all waiting for Lei Yu to wake up and based on calculations, that time was near!

After removing parts of Lei Yu's clothes, Ai Er grabbed a white cloth and dipped it into the bucket of river water. She then started gently scrubbing Lei Yu's body. These past

five years, Lei Yu hadn't moved one bit but Ai Er insisted on moving his limbs as an exercise. Today was no exception. After scrubbing Lei Yu's body, Ai Er started swinging the limbs and important joints of his body.

Even though Lei Yu was in a coma, his consciousness was actually awake. He just couldn't manage to break through this unseen barrier to wake up.

These past five years, Lei Yu clearly knew Ai Er was by his side meticulously taking care of him.

Today, there was a change inside Lei Yu. The chaotic situation with his meridians had gradually healed after five years and settled down

into their correction positions. After the treatments by Ceng Hong, all the meridians that had been blocked were now clear. And the internal energy that was dispersed everywhere had returned to his dantian.

The faint infant's body had gradually regained its strength, and his internal energy was rippling with power. Even though he couldn't get through that unseen barrier to awaken, his cultivation hadn't stopped all these years. The power from the Dragon Vein would occasionally make an appearance to help him out, making his cultivation speed increase by many levels.

Because he was in a coma, this

allowed Lei Yu to concentrate solely on cultivating. His power had been slowly increasing and only Ceng Hong was able to detect the change.

Ceng Hong understood that there weren't any major problems with Lei Yu anymore and he would awaken sooner or later. One thing he was puzzled about was how come little Yu's family name of Ceng had become Lei?

There were only two explanations: Lei Yu was lying to him, or he was lying to Ai Er and Nuo Hu. It was only Ceng Hong that didn't know the first explanation was the actual fact.

That green energy inside his heart meridian hadn't shown itself these

past five years, making Lei Yu really miss its powerful healing effects. And now there was a throbbing of power inside Lei Yu's body so he pushed it into the infant's body residing in his dantian.

There was a brand on the infant body's right arm that was exactly the same as the purple lightning brand on his arm. According to the Heavenly Thunder Manual's later half portion, Lei Yu withdrew some internal energy from the infant's body and then focused his spirit and entered the infant. When the two fused into one, Lei Yu could feel the vast and boundless power that was under his control.

After shaking a bit, the infant was now surrounded by streams of

lightning. Lei Yu could clearly sense that upon fusing with the infant, the lightning power of the newly formed soul was at least double the power of just transferring out energy from the infant body.

In these five years, Lei Yu had slowly improved from the early Fusion Soul to the late Fusion Soul stage. One could say that he was already touching the barrier towards the Soul Splitting stage, but couldn't make a breakthrough yet. Something like this cannot be rushed and required time. Lei Yu's improvement speed was already fast enough. If he were to forcefully make a breakthrough when he wasn't ready, not only would it be damaging to himself when he failed, even Ai Er by his side would

suffer a backlash.

The current Ai Er was cupping Lei Yu's face as she gently rubbed her nose against his.

"Brother Yu, today Ai Er will tell you a funny story that happened to me when I was in the U.S." Just when she was about to kiss his forehead, she felt a pair of eyes staring at her. Ai Er's heart started beating like crazy and she froze like a statue. Lei Yu was still undressed while Ai Er was bent over cupping his head, and that's how the two stared at each other.

A short while later, Lei Yu grabbed Ai Er and pulled her on top of him. He didn't care about how this looked and just grabbed Ai Er and

kissed her lips. The two closed their eyes and continued kissing in this fashion.

Ai Er's tears had now dripped onto Lei Yu's face before it slid down onto the bench. Those two were now madly expressing their love for each other. This kiss seemed to have melted all the pain those two have experienced. As they continued kissing, the pain no longer existed and was now replaced by two new lives!

Ai Er was still worried about Lei Yu's condition but the latter didn't care one bit. Lei Yu continued to hold Ai Er against him and the two started rolling about on the large bench. With the hot kiss and the touching of each other, even though



Ai Er was wearing clothes, she shivered upon feeling the throbbing of Lei Yu's lower part. She couldn't control her madly beating heart anymore and just as she was about to take off her clothes, Lei Yu stopped her hands.

"Someone's coming." Ai Er quickly stood up while Lei Yu quickly grabbed a piece of animal fur and covered his lower body.

"Sister Ai Er, quickly taste this dish that you taught me to make. Tell me if there's any difference in the one you... ahhhh!" Bao Er screamed outside the cave, her piercing voice echoed throughout the entire Villa.

# Chapter 316: The Strange Wooden Door

Everyone around the Villa heard the scream and quickly rushed towards the cave. Big White and Long Er were a bit apprehensive and didn't dare to get too close since it was still a forbidden area. Ever since Ceng Hong made this cave his place for refining pills, Big White had never stepped close to the vicinity.

Ceng Hong and Nuo Hu arrived in front of the cave entrance and ran inside. They were overjoyed upon seeing that Lei Yu had woken up.

"Little Yu!"

"Little Yu!"

Lei Yu was ecstatic since everyone was okay, "Big brother! Senior!"

At the same time, his perception ability was released and sensed two people outside – Big White and Long Er. Lei Yu was even happier and cried out, "Long Er!"

Long Er swallowed hard. He never imagined that upon waking up, Lei Yu would actually call out his own name, making him extremely emotional.

Ceng Hong's voice echoed out from inside the cave.

"Come in you two!"

"Yes, master!"

"Young master, are you really okay now?" Long Er asked.

Lei Yu nodded, "Don't worry about me but back then when I heard you yelling outside the Void Sect, the Void Immortal rushed out and your voices disappeared. I was extremely worried whether something happened to you guys or not. But it's great seeing you safe and sound now. Oh right, where's Eight Whiskers? He didn't come with you?"

Long Er was grateful upon hearing Lei Yu's concern for him, but once the last part was mentioned, his expression turned a bit ugly. Long Er sighed, "That day when you

arrived at the Void Sect, I was able to detect your presence and immediately summoned all of my subordinates and waited outside the main gates. After waiting for a long time and still not seeing you and actually hearing sounds of fighting, I then started yelling outside. Never had I imagined that old bastard Void Immortal would rush out wipe us all out. Apart from me, all my subordinates were killed which included... Eight Whiskers."

"That bastard deserves death!" Lei Yu slammed his palms on the bench. Although he didn't use a lot of strength, one of the legs of the bench couldn't handle the power and broke. Lei Yu's balance didn't allow him to fall but he still slid down the bench away from the fur

skin covering his lower part. His erect manhood was then exposed for all to see.

Ai Er's face turned red as she couldn't help recall that they almost embarrassed themselves in front of everyone. It was Bao Er standing the furthest back that had big round eyes and mouth agape as she stared with a stunned expression. Lei Yu realized the embarrassing situation and quickly grabbed the fur skin to cover himself up again.

"I will make the Void Sect pay back with their blood!"

It's not strange for Lei Yu to be so enraged. If those bastards didn't try to draw him in when they were in the Mortal World, Ai Er and Nuo

Hu would never have been kidnapped in the first place. Those two people in his life were even more important than his own life, so how can he ignore it? And it was because of that which caused this series of unfortunate events.

It was also because of the Void Sect that made Lei Yu separate from Ai Er for two years, and be injured for the past five years. Today, Lei Yu had made a full recovery and his strength had improved. He had now placed all his anger on the shoulders of the Void Sect and no matter what, he will eventually seek them out to demand retribution!

"Little Yu, there's something I want to ask you." Ceng Hong who didn't speak at all during this time finally

asked.

Lei Yu quickly grabbed the fur skin before kneeling on the ground, "Thank you Senior Ceng Hong for saving my life!"

"Quickly get up!" Ceng Hong quickly went forth to support him up. Lei Yu's salute was necessary because he wasn't even the descendant of the Ceng family. He was already feeling quite guilty from pretending to be a Ceng family member so he was going to find a time to explain everything. Even if he was beaten or killed, Lei Yu wasn't going to hide it anymore since it wasn't fair for Ceng Hong.

"Senior Ceng Hong, what do you want to ask?" Lei Yu waved his



hand and Nuo Hu ran over. Nuo Hu already knew what Lei Yu wanted and immediately withdrew some clean clothes from the storage ring. Ai Er and Bao Er both turned around and a few seconds later, Lei Yu had already put on the clothes.

"How come five years ago, your strength had already reached the Fusion Soul stage? I remember before that, you should still be at the early Gold Core stage right?" Ceng Hong's question wasn't strange because Big White had never told him about Lei Yu's extreme improvement speeds.

Lei Yu laughed. Since the people present weren't those he needed to hide things from, he then explained: "That's because I had the

help with a lot of strange occurrences. Why those strange things happened to me? I don't know, but there are two things that can be explained. Firstly, the essence of the Dragon Vein helped my improvement speed quite a lot."

"Essence of the Dragon Vein?" Ceng Hong couldn't control himself and exclaimed out loud.

"Master, the young master by coincidence was able to absorb the power from a Dragon Vein, that's why he improves so fast when it comes to cultivating. You actually don't know but young master has only been cultivating for less than fifteen years so far." Big White added while standing in the rear.

"This... this is too inconceivable!" Ceng Hong gasped. At first he didn't quite understand why Lei Yu had so many problems but now he realized the cause. Lei Yu possessed a Dragon Vein; therefore he was a candidate that all major powers want to win over.

"There's also the miraculous encounter inside the Devil King's Castle." Said Lei Yu.

"The Devil King's Castle you are referring to...?"

"Many centuries ago in the most southern part of the Immortal World, there was a devil cultivator that had reached the Mahayana stage. I don't know his name but I know that everyone calls him the

Devil King. The castle he possesses is completely made out of crystal stones, which means there's an abundance of spiritual energy there making one's cultivation speed improve faster!"

"I too have heard of this person, but he inexplicably disappeared a few hundred years ago." Ceng Hong recalled from memory.

"That's right. But my friend Minotaur Linos who is the Immortal Realm's only demonic cultivator to have reached the Mahayana stage, now controls the Devil King's Castle. With his permission, I entered the castle to cultivate."

"You're saying you have a demonic

cultivator friend at the Mahayana stage?!"

"Is that for real?"

"That's too incredible!"

Everyone present stared with big round eyes. Ai Er then grabbed Lei Yu's arm, "Brother Yu, how come you have such a powerful friend yet didn't have him help you out back then?"

Nuo Hu laughed, "Ai Er, do you still not understand little Yu? He doesn't like it when people gossip about him and he also doesn't like to bring his troubles to others. So many things happened in the past yet didn't he go about solving them all on his own?"

Lei Yu smiled with a nod. Although he didn't hang around this big brother of his that much, but this big brother completely understood his ways of thinking.

Lei Yu's way of doing things were his personal whim yet still gained the admiration of others. A person that only relied on his own strength was someone that deserved the respect of others.

It was a while before everyone recovered their senses from being so shocked. Ceng Hong then asked: "But that still doesn't explain how you could reach the Soul Fusion stage in a short two years. That's a little hard to believe!"

"There's a strange wooden door

inside the Devil King's Castle. At first I didn't bother too much with it but it was during the later times that I managed to pry into the secrets behind it."

# Chapter 317:

## Understanding And Reasonable

Lei Yu couldn't help recalling the scenes within the Devil King's Castle.

Lei Yu remembered that at first, no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't open that wooden door. Minotaur Linos said he had entered it before and it was completely empty with nothing special inside it.

But Lei Yu was someone different because he possessed the aura of the Dragon Vein. When revisiting



the wooden door another time, the room was bare but there was actually a soul remnant residing there. It was the soul remnant of the castle's previous owner, the Devil King!

By chance, Lei Yu happened to converse with him. The soul remnant was left behind by the Devil King before he left his castle. It was through this that Lei Yu came to realize why the Devil King had suddenly disappeared.

In fact, the soul remnant had something he wanted Lei Yu to do, and that's why it would impart to him the essence of what cultivation was all about. If it wasn't for that guidance, even if Lei Yu had the Dragon Vein and other encounters,

it would be impossible for him to go from the early Nascent Soul to the early Fusion Soul stage in just two years.

After hearing Lei Yu's explanation, everyone came to the same thought – they couldn't help but envy Lei Yu's luck. Not only did he get the Dragon Vein's recognition as its owner, he even had a friend at the Mahayana stage. And then he encountered the Devil King's soul remnant and its cultivation guidance. If this series of good luck had landed on any other person, they too would have reached such a successful stage as Lei Yu.

Except this luck only landed on Lei Yu.

"What did he ask you to do?" Ai Er asked Lei Yu.

"I promised him that I cannot reveal this to anyone." Lei Yu smiled as he lightly stroked Ai Er's long hair.

"You can't even tell this to your dao partner?" Bao Er pouted as she wanted to know as well. Even though it was slightly painful for her to say the words dao partner, she had to ask on principle.

Lei Yu shook his head, "What men do may not always be right, but they would never deliberately do something wrong. There are times that concealing such information is the best and most respectful thing to all parties involved so why keep

looking for an answer?"

Lei Yu's words made Bao Er lose some face. Although his words sounded like they were lecturing her, in Bao Er's ears, those passionate words made her feel like Lei Yu was someone that deserved her to love. This unconscious momentum and the teachings of the principles of being a decent human was something a young girl like her yearned to have[1]. She was currently envying in her heart how Ai Er was able to have Lei Yu and how inseparable they were.

Ceng Hong was very satisfied with Lei Yu's words as his eyes revealed a look of praise in them.

Since his injuries had been

completely healed now, Lei Yu eventually had to fulfill his commitment.

Night time. After leading Ai Er up a path, the two were standing on a small hill while peering at the countless stars in the sky. Some of them looked very close while some looked very far. Thinking back to the past, never would Lei Yu have imagined that today, he would be able to fly in the air freely and have an unlimited lifespan. All the experiences he had made him filled with emotions.

"Ai Er, there's something have to tell you." Lei Yu didn't face Ai Er because the following words were somewhat difficult to say.

"Tell me, I'm listening." Ai Er softly responded as she laid her head on Lei Yu's shoulder.

After exhaling, Lei Yu then said:  
"Do you remember a few years ago, I travelled back into ancient Greece? It was that time when we explored the maze."

"I remember."

"It was during that time that I met a woman. I originally thought I would never see her again but never did I imagine..."

"You didn't imagine meeting her in the Immortal World again, right?"  
Ai Er raised her head and gave a gentle look towards Lei Yu.

"I'm sorry; there are times where I

can't avoid the situation so I wanted to tell you everything upfront. Never would I have imagined that those in the past would become reality. She waited for me for a thousand years..."

Ai Er didn't say anything and Lei Yu didn't know what else he should say. The two of them sat there silently, and the only sounds heard were the cries of the surrounding insects.

After a while, Ai Er was the first to say: "I think you cannot let her down. I have never experienced a thousand years of suffering but I do know how painful it is to be separated from the one you love. Back then when you went to the Kou country, I didn't follow you so you should know how much I

missed you. And when you went to the United States, I couldn't deal with the pain of separation anymore, that's why I packed my bags to go look for you. Then these series of event happened which made me think that I should just die because I didn't want you to face all these dangers for the sake of me."

"You're not allowed to say those things! I had a tough time traversing from the Mortal World to here just so that you'd be safe. And now everything at this point was all worth it." Even though Lei Yu had expended a lot for the sake of Ai Er, five years ago she had stood out and blocked a strike by the Void Immortal that was meant for him. No matter what grievances



Lei Yu had in his heart, he was not going to allow anymore harm to happen to his woman!

"Brother Yu, agree to her since I believe she's in a lot of pain as well. And you happened to have disappeared for five years now, so I believe she has been suffering quite a bit." Ai Er's small hand gently clutched onto Lei Yu's arm.

"Thank you!"

"Why are you thanking me? The man I love has other women loving him as well, that means you are exceptional. But..."

"But what?" Lei Yu turned to look at Ai Er.

"What do you plan on doing with

Ying Ying and Nami? They both love you a lot. I know that in the Kou country, you worked well together with Ying Ying as if your minds were in-sync, and there's also that incident with Nami!" Ai Er pretended to unhappy and pouted, looking like she was half angry and half spoiled.

"This..." For a second, Lei Yu didn't know how to respond since he didn't know how to deal with those two. Although those two were important people to him during his long journey, Lei Yu wasn't sure what positions they had in his heart.

Friends? That wasn't realistic since just recalling that time when he was alone with Ying Ying made Lei

Yu's face turn red. She even threw away all her bad habits just to change for him.

As for Nami... she had intentions to harm him back then but it was all for the sake of her grandmother. For a person to have such filial piety, they would not have a malicious heart. She also promptly stopped her errors and even took the poison because of him. Lei Yu couldn't forget all those things, especially the scene at the hospital where Nami had technically saved him albeit in an indirect way.

"If we have an opportunity to see them again, have them accompany you. I believe no matter what position you give them, they wouldn't decline because when

facing someone they truly love,  
there's no reason they would reject  
them."

Lei Yu felt a bit awkward but still  
nodded.

-----

[1] – I don't know what planet the  
author lives on but no high school  
aged girl likes to be lectured on the  
principles of being a decent human.

# Chapter 318: The Two Special Books

To have such an understanding lover like Ai Er, what kind of man would not be satisfied? Lei Yu pulled Ai Er into his embrace and those two started kissing under such a beautiful night sky.

The so called, one's grace must be repaid; Lei Yu had to first bring Ai Er and Nuo Hu to the most southern part of the Immortal World – the Southern Wild Lands. He had already disappeared for five years now, and most likely the bull-head had already gone crazy waiting for him. That's why he couldn't delay anymore.

“Little Yu, this < > has many herbal plants and their medicinal effects noted down. There’s also this book where I personally wrote, which are the things I’ve learnt from following your grandfather. There’s also a part of the book where I’ve recorded all the most important experiments and results I’ve encountered these several hundreds of years. You should remember everything in case there’s an accident, then you’ll have the ability to heal it. Of course, Ceng Hong does not wish this would be used often but learning extra things is always beneficial.” Ceng Hong passed on two books to Lei Yu.

While holding onto those two books, Lei Yu’s eyes turned faintly red. He had deceived this old man

in front him yet this old man had helped him multiple times without asking for anything in return. Lei Yu simply felt extremely guilty right now.

“I’m actually not...”

“There’s no need to say anything more. Remember, you must memorize everything within those two books because they can be utilized in any circumstances. Also, until you’ve grasped all the information within the books, you can only use generally combined medicinal herbs and cannot refine them, or else your life could be in danger.”

Ceng Hong stopped Lei Yu from speaking further. Lei Yu seemed to

understand what was going on and nodded, “I will remember... could it be that I can also eventually refine medicinal pills?”

“Right, as for the furnace required to refine pills, I only have one inside this cave. I cannot gift this to you because it was created by the old master specifically for me, so it can be considered a supreme treasure even more important than my life.” There seem to be a hidden meaning behind Ceng Hong’s words but it wasn’t very clear.

Lei Yu lightly sighed, “I understand, I will definitely memorize everything in these two books!”

After pulling his hands away from Ai Er’s, Lei Yu walked up to Bao Er.



He looked at the tears that were swirling in her eyes but were controlled from dripping out. Lei Yu smiled, "Bao Er, be good and listen to your grandfather's words. He just doesn't want anything bad to happen to you, that's why he doesn't allow you to leave the Villa. Remember that I will definitely be back to visit you!"

"Brother Yu!" Bao Er couldn't hold back her emotions anymore and cried out before wrapping her arms around his waist. Lei Yu didn't resist it because it embodied her reluctance to separate with him. Once she let go, who knows how long it will be before they meet again.

"Young master."

Upon hearing the voice, Lei Yu turned around to look at Big White. A white flash appeared on Big White as he transformed to his human form.

“Young master, I have an item that I want to give you.” After saying that, Big White’s index and middle fingers clasped together and started chanting something. A white light flashed on his fingers before he placed them on his forehead. A red and white light suddenly merged together and the next moment, a red ruby appeared on his palm. The ruby had gold decorations inlaid around its side that was dazzling to behold.

“What are you doing?!” Lei Yu exclaimed with wide eyes.

“This soul stone has accompanied me for a long time, and now I’m gifting it to you. It contains a very powerful energy inside and may be of help if you are in any danger. It’ll definitely be a useful protective treasure!”

“No!” Lei Yu immediately rejected it, “This is something I cannot take!”

“Young master, although Big White hasn’t accompanied you for a long period of time, I’ve seen everything that you have done very clearly. You deserve my respect, and you deserve Big White to call you young master! I am the same as master in hoping these items will never have to be used by you. If that’s the case, you can always return it to me the next

time you come back. Please don't decline it anymore!" After saying that, Big White placed the ruby in Lei Yu's hand.

He wanted to say something more but upon seeing Big White's sincere eyes, Lei Yu held back. He could feel his nose twitch and if he didn't look away, most likely he would start to cry himself.

After receiving the ruby, Lei Yu couldn't feel any energy fluctuations from it. He didn't bother to ask how to use this ruby because he wasn't even planning on using it. Since he couldn't reject the kindness, he could only accept it for now and return it when he comes back the next time.

Long Er didn't give anything to Lei Yu but he was someone Lei Yu appreciated a lot. Even though they met much later, all of Long Er's subordinates had died for his sake. Just this sentiment has made Lei Yu remember it forever.

"Young master, I have nothing to give you but I will accompany you in leaving! If there's anything you need, I will definitely serve you well!" Long Er cupped his hands.

"No!" Lei Yu shook his head and his eyes were adamant, "You are my brother, I don't need you to serve me. I have remembered everything you have done for me, and someday I will repay it back! But I really can't bring you with me for now because there's something I need to take

care of. And if there's too many people with me, it might become complicated so... I'm sorry!" Lei Yu's tone was very sincere making Long Er unable to respond and could only nod.

"Okay, it's time for us to leave!" Lei Yu turned around, "Big brother, Ai Er, let's go!"

After saying that, Ai Er and Nuo Hu brought out their weapons. Their weapons flashed brightly before they stepped on top of it. Lei Yu didn't require the Sky Devouring Sword anymore and merely condensed internal energy into the soles of his feet before flying into the air.

Upon seeing the three slowly

disappear off into the horizon, Bao Er couldn't hold back her tears anymore and cried out: "Brother Yu! You have to come back! Bao Er will be waiting for you here!"

"Little Yu! Be careful on your journey!"

"Young master!"

The voices were heard from a distance while a surge of reluctance rose in Lei Yu's heart. For these past five years, he has deeply etched what these people had done for him in his heart. He just couldn't open his eyes back then but knew everything, and now that they were suddenly leaving, he too was filled with reluctance.

“Little Yu, there’s something I really wanted to ask but haven’t yet. Since you are fine now, I wanted you to tell me personally.” While they were flying, Nuo Hu neared Lei Yu and asked.

“I know what you want to ask.” Lei Yu lightly smiled, “Big brother wants to know why they call me young master, right?”

“That’s right. When you were still in a coma, I clearly saw how they treated you and it was filled with tender love and care. So what kind of relationship do you have with them?”

After a long and heavy sigh, Lei Yu responded: “We technically don’t have any relationship. In fact, the



story is quite long and interesting  
and it started with...”

=====

# Chapter 319: In Order To Make A Living

Everything was now clear to Ai Er and Nuo Hu. “So that’s the case! No wonder this Spiritual Bracelet of Frost is so powerful, it could even heal your heavy wounds in such a short time.” Said Ai Er while nodding.

“But are you planning on continuing to hide this? I feel like this isn’t the right thing to do...” Nuo Hu was a straightforward person and didn’t like to beat around the bush. And it was because of this personality that he

didn't like deception of any kind.

"I know how big brother feels, but when I was just about to reveal this, I felt they already knew that I wasn't the descendant of the Ceng family. Senior Ceng Hong seems to not want me to puncture this flimsy piece of paper and stopped me when I was just about to say something about it."

"You're saying they know already?"  
Nuo Hu and Ai Er were both surprised.

"Correct, I'm pretty sure they know already. Since there's no one left from the Ceng family, they chose to continue believing in this fake Ceng Yu instead of letting this matter come out to the light."

The two seemed to understand and nodded. Based on Lei Yu's personality, deceiving people close to him wasn't something he would do so there wasn't any need to further doubt him.

The Chaotic Star Sea was indeed filled with chaos. It was fortunate that the locust like creature had recognized Nuo Hu and didn't reveal itself. Instead, it immediately ran off with its tail behind its leg.

But wanting to pass through that Roc Emperor's territory would not be that easy. Back then when Lei Yu and Big White were in the Roc Emperor's territory, Big White had killed all the birdmen that knew Lei Yu's features. But when Nuo Hu passed through the territory, there

were two birdmen that saw him and even called out for backup. Nuo Hu told everything to Lei Yu and the latter merely laughed, “I have a way big brother, just don’t resist.”

With a mere thought, Nuo Hu was stored in the Universal Pouch. This way, Ai Er and Lei Yu would be considered strangers to them. As long as they give the birdmen a bit of their toll fee, Lei Yu can later bring Nuo Hu back out.

“Little Yu, there’s something I don’t understand at all... what’s the use of these crystal stones? I haven’t really seen any markets or stores in the Immortal World. If these crystal stones are really used as currency, what can people buy with them?” Asked Nuo Hu since he couldn’t

understand this.

Lei Yu didn't understand this either in the beginning, but after the bull-head's explanation and the information he found out prior did he finally grasp the usage.

“The way the people in the Immortal Realm run their business is different from the Mortal World. But that doesn't mean they don't need money.” Lei Yu then continued: “Once a cultivator reaches the Gold Core stage, they no longer need food to nourish themselves but they still need to absorb spiritual energy as a supplement for their bodies.”

Nuo Hu nodded, “That I know about.”

“Have you ever thought about one thing? There’s over a hundred million martial cultivators in the Immortal Realm, and what do they rely on to fly?”

Nuo Hu’s eyebrows went up, “Now that you’ve mentioned it, I’ve realized something strange.

Demonic cultivators don’t need to rely on weapons to fly but martial cultivators have to inject internal energy into their weapons to do it, which also includes my Black Tortoise Shield. But where do all these weapons come from?

“That’s the main point. Apart from absorbing a crystal stone, one could use it to create weapons. And it happens to be a necessary ore in creating weapons for cultivators to

use. When one combines crystal stones with normal metal ores, a craftsman can successfully create a weapon for us cultivators.”

“So that’s the reason!”

“There are even some cultivators that solely rely on absorbing the crystal stones in order to improve their cultivation, which requires a large amount of consumption. So with this many uses, that’s why the crystal stones are so precious.”

Even though he was saying this, Lei Yu knew that Romon’s copper pillar and his Sky Devouring Sword didn’t have any crystal stones in them. But they happened to be much stronger than normal weapons, making this mystery something he still didn’t



understand to this day.

This included bull-head's Ares Axe, a weapon that was gifted to him by Ares himself. Although it had been given to Tai Lao, it wasn't a normal weapon at all. Even bull-head didn't understand this himself, so there were many things in Lei Yu's life that he wanted to get to the bottom of.

As they travelled through the Chaotic Star Sea, Lei Yu and company had met many of those that blocked them. Most of them were demonic cultivators and devils cultivators, but fortunate most of them weren't Lei Yu's opponent so they could take care of them easily. There were at times when they met an expert where the three had to

combine their powers to use special tactics or secretive means in order to get through.

After crossing through a foggy barrier, the Immortal World's scenery appeared in front of the eyes of the three. Lei Yu deliberately flew a certain direction in order to go around the Void Sect, and it was fortunate that they didn't seem to notice his presence. His previous actions had caused quite a bit of Void Sect disciples to die. The Void Immortal had been somewhat deterred that day, but he was not a pushover so he will eventually deal with Lei Yu. He had to be extra careful since his current strength wasn't enough to go head on with the Void Immortal yet.

In turn, Lei Yu planned on swinging by the Thunder Rune Sect. After making up his mind, the three of them made their way to their first stop after returning to the Immortal World.

The first to detect Lei Yu and company were the two disciples outside their main gates. Everything was the same a few years ago; this place looked deserted as if there were less and less disciples. Some of them joined the Thunder Rune Sect to use them as a stepping stone in hopes of joining a stronger Sect.

“May I ask if you three are here to seek a master?” Asked a youth as he flew up and stopped in front of Lei Yu and company.

Lei Yu faintly smiled, "You can kind of say that... where's He Chuang? How come I don't see him?"

"You know senior brother He Chuang?" The youth was a bit surprised.

"I do know him; we've met once by fate. Do you know where he is?"  
There was nothing he could do but use polite sentence structures in this part of the Immortal World since the youth was speaking to him in such a way. If he used the slangs of the Mortal World, this youth may not understand him at all.

"Sigh, senior brother He Chuang is really working hard. He's still at the edge of the Chaotic Star Sea waiting

for cultivators passing by.” Sighed the youth. This Thunder Rune Sect was truly quite desolate, even their disciples felt helpless with their situation.

Lei Yu nodded in understanding. Fortunately, He Chuang was coincidentally returning and Lei Yu could sense his aura, that’s why he didn’t ask to go inside yet and waited.

“Could it be brother Lightning?” He Chuang was overjoyed; how could he not be happy upon seeing Lei Yu’s return? It was more than once that the Sovereign brought up how exceptional Lei Yu was.

“Is the Sovereign here?” Asked Lei Yu.

“The Sovereign has gone out and hasn’t returned yet. This two are...?” He Chuang glanced at Ai Er and Nuo Hu besides Lei Yu.

“This is my dao partner and this is my big brother.” Lei Yu introduced.

He Chuang nodded, “If you three would please come with me. Stay here for now; I believe the Sovereign will be back within these two days.”

“How come each time I come here, he’s gone somewhere? Is there some important matters he has to deal with?” Lei Yu asked a bit puzzled.

He Chuang sighed, “There’s nothing we can do. Even though the

Thunder Rune Sect doesn't have a lot of disciples, we still have to earn crystal stones. Our Sovereign is exactly busy dealing with this issue."

It was for certain that the Thunder Rune Sect's situation wasn't good, and Lei Yu had already begun to form some plans. They followed He Chuang to the pavilions for resting and two rooms were given to them while they waited.

In another area.

"Goddamn it! This place is finally the Immortal Realm!" A youth suddenly appeared in a flash as he stared in shock at the vast stars and planets.

=====



# Chapter 320:

## Lightning's Disciple

He was stepping on a steel blade that had a length of 1.6 meters, a handle that was 30 centimeters, and the width of the blade was 15 centimeters. The steel blade looked ordinary but it definitely wasn't simple!

There was a bright golden glow surrounding the blade while it was mixed with a lighter yellow internal energy. Because the golden glow was too bright, one wouldn't notice where his internal energy was. Where did he get this steel blade from?

While flying through the Chaotic Star Sea, his speed wasn't fast but when compared to the modern airplanes, there was no difference.

"I wonder how master is... and this place is so vast, how on earth am I going to search for him?" This person looked around at a loss, but didn't stop flying and kept flying forward.

This place had a lot of planets and most of them were the size of meteorites. Some of them were only about the size of your average city. This person happened to stop at a planet that wasn't that big and looked down.

"This place isn't too bad, there's green grass and a river!" One could

see the fields of green were the vegetation and the blue lines were the water which wasn't hard to tell. This person was quite interested in the area and started slowly descending.

“Stop! Who are you?” A voice cried out. Just as he landed, he quickly turned around and noticed a youth that was about eleven or twelve years old. Although he was young, his body looked quite sturdy and much more muscular than normal kids of his age. One could see this youth purse his lips together as he stared at the newly arrived person with caution.

“There are people here?” This person was suddenly surprised as he revealed a shameless smile.

“Little friend, are there any adults around? I want to ask for directions.”

“Ask for directions? Where did you come from?” Ask the youth.

Although this person in front of him gave him the goose bumps from the smile, at least he didn’t look too despicable.

“I came from a very very far away place.”

The youth pursed his lips and raised his head in thought for a while before saying: “Follow me. Don’t even think of having any evil thoughts because my two uncles are very powerful.”

“Uh...” This person blinked a few

times but still followed behind the youth.

This place gave one the feeling of a rural village. With mountains and vast plains of grass, it gave one a feeling of returning to nature. As they continued walking, this person noticed some unknown animals in large quantities. They were all surrounded by wooden fences which meant these animals were domesticated. If he didn't guess wrong, these animals were grown for their meat. But since these were unknown to him, it would probably be hard for him to swallow their meat so it's best not to care about them for now.

“Uncle! Uncle! There's an outsider that's arrived here!” This youth was

yelling towards a place that looked like a village off in the distance.

This was a small town with not a lot of inhabitants, but it looked very peaceful and quiet and completely different from what this person heard about the Chaotic Star Sea.

A simple and honest looking middle aged man with a small moustache came out. He was wearing a light blue long robe and had a smile on his face but it wasn't difficult to see that his eyes were filled with vigilance. "Friend, what is your purpose for coming to our Yanrong Town?"

After seeing an adult of this place, this person finally cleared his throat and turned serious. "I am here to inquire about dao er[1]."

“Dao Er? Who’s Dao Er?” The middle-aged man seemed to be at a loss, unable to understand the words of this person.

“Uh...” While scratching his head, cold sweat started dripping down this person’s back. After thinking for a bit and changing his speech pattern, “I’m hoping to inquire about a place.”

“Please go ahead.” The middle-aged man politely said.

“Can you please tell me how to get to the Immortal World? I’m in a hurry to locate a friend.” This person said.

The middle-aged man was a bit surprised, “Why would this friend

want to go to the Immortal World? Please don't blame this one for reminding you but the Immortal World isn't a place where one can easily get to. From what I can tell, this friend only has the strength at the early Gold Core stage. Wanting to safely traverse the depths of the Chaotic Star Sea to reach the Immortal World is not an easy feat! I once had a friend that until now, I haven't heard any news from. I have no idea if he succeeded in entering the Immortal World or has halfway... sigh. In short, this friend here must seriously reconsider this."

"It looks like the Immortal World is definitely not an easy place to reach. It seems like that guy from the Violet Gold Hall didn't lie to



me.” This person mumbled.

“Violet Gold Hall? Friend, you’re speaking about the famous Violet Gold Hall?” The middle-aged man exclaimed with wide eyes.

“Right, are there any problems with that?”

The middle-aged man cleared his throat, “The Violet Gold Hall is one of the five great Sects, how come you are familiar with them?”

After thinking for a bit, this person felt there was no need to hide it.

“Back then, there were a bunch of Sects from the Immortal World who travelled to my place in search for my master. They wanted to win him over but were rejected by him.

Later, a person from the Violet Gold Hall said that once I've cultivated my Gold Core, I could find him and join his Sect. He will then help me in locating my master." This person rubbed his chin as he spoke while recalling his memory.

"The ring on your finger, where did you get it from?!" The middle-aged lost control and exclaimed out loud because the tattered looking ring looked very familiar and he was sure he had seen it before somewhere.

"This? This ring and my master's ring are a pair, but it was in the hands of the Pope before. I had to personally go there and persuade the Pope for a long time before he would give it to me. What about it?

Do you recognize it?” This person asked unconsciously but didn’t realize he would get an unexpected result.

“Is your master called Lightning?” The middle-aged man asked.

This person racked his brains in pondering this name but quickly came to a conclusion. A joyous expression was immediately revealed on his face!

“Yes! Yes! Master had once used the name Lightning. It’s the same name he used in the United States when he joined the Bounty Hunters Guild! It has to be master! It has to be him!”

Although he didn’t know what this

person was saying about United States or something bounty hunter, it was clear the two of them were talking about the same person.

“This is great! I never imagined I would encounter brother Lightning’s disciple! My name is Tian Ye; may I know your great name?”

“Liu Hao!”

“Quick, quick! All my fellow brothers and sister in town, our benefactor’s family has come to our small town! Everyone quickly come out to meet him!” This person started yelling in happiness towards the town. In a short dozens of seconds, the main road was filled with the townsfolk. Even though

there weren't a lot of people, there were still several dozens of them. The most eye-catching group was a bunch of beautiful young girls whose eyes were filled with passion, immediately causing Liu Hao to start drooling.

“Brother Tian Ye!” A crude yell was heard causing everyone to turn around.

Liu Hao's eyebrows went up as he said to himself: “Oh crap, this guy's image is too f\*cking chic!”

With fiery red hair, and even his eyebrows and beard were red. The clothes he wore also matched the color of his hair... he was simply a walking flame!

“Brother Yanrong, come meet this person who is brother Lightning’s disciple.”

Yanrong strutted over past the crowd and grabbed onto Liu Hao’s hand. Liu Hao started sweating again – aren’t these people a little over friendly?”

-----

[1] – He’s looking for directions so he started speaking in formal ancient speech.

# Chapter 321: Doing What He Promised

Without letting Liu Hao say a word, Yanrong turned around and faced the townsfolk. “What are you guys standing around for? Go prepare the feast!”

“Oh yea, right!”

There was a sudden flurry of chaos as everyone went off to prepare. It was quite lively as some were killing the animals while others were decorating the place.

Liu Hao made a thought and two beams of light flashed. In front of everyone, two beautiful women

appeared; they were no longer girls anymore.

Even though they had appearances in their late twenties, they still revealed an aura that caused men to swoon all over them. This type of charm wasn't something young girls would have. For women their age, this was the most attractive time for men who enjoyed their mature yet still youthful looks.

“Cui Ying Ying, Nami.” Liu Hao pointed at the two beauties and introduced them in a simple manner.

Even though there were many pretty girls in town, these two still made the men unable to move their eyeballs away. Yanrong's eyes were



round and wide as he swallowed hard, while Tian Ye shifted his gaze off to the side in case he started fantasizing.

There was a townsfolk off to the side about to slaughter an animal yet accidentally put the knife on his hand and started slicing a few times in a daze. The animal being slaughtered was actually staring at this person with a strange gaze as if it was staring at a retard.

“Aghh!” This person finally realized what happened and cried out in pain as the blood started gushing out.

Cui Ying Ying and Nami were both pretty much wearing the same type of clothes – they were still in their

business attire. The most irresistible part was that those two were wearing work skirts that revealed their long slender legs, causing any man to desire reaching out to touch.

After the simple introductions, Liu Hao once again asked about the path towards the Immortal World. Even if there were many obstacles in front of him, he still had to find Lei Yu, a task that was impossible to drop.

The feast at dinner was very luxurious; the town's way of barbecuing the meat had its own unique taste. Liu Hao, Nami, and Cui Ying Ying had never tasted such flavors. Even though they were eating some unknown animal, the

meat was very tender and extremely delicious. Liu Hao personally devoured the entire hind leg of the animal. But the image of Liu Hao eating wasn't as exaggerated as Yanrong; Yanrong was holding onto half an animal and just tearing out chunks of meat with his mouth. Amongst all the men, it seems like Tian Ye was the most cultured. He wasn't eating small bites like a woman but he was much better than the other men. At least he was using a dagger to cut his meat.

In order to make it more fun, those girls that had been saved by Lei Yu had changed to those silky transparent clothing they hadn't worn in a long time. Of course, those silk clothing were on the outside while they were wearing

other clothing on the inside. One of the girls had a flute in her hands and beautiful music was being blown out by her experienced mouth. The other girls started dancing in a beautiful manner creating a wondrous scenery. This was something even Lei Yu had never seen before, but that was because Lei Yu was in such a rush back then. Then again, those girls had just been rescued and wouldn't be in the mood to display their dance abilities so leisurely.

Liu Hao made a swiping motion with his hands and a white bottle filled with clear alcohol appeared in his grasp.

“Maotai?” Tian Ye and Yanrong glanced at each other, “What is

that?”

“It’s a brand of alcohol.” Upon opening the lid, the thick pure scent of liquor came out causing Tian Ye and Yanrong to unconsciously close their eyes to take in a deep breath.

Liu Hao then picked up some bowls on the table and was able to pour out three bowls from that single bottle.

“Fragrant! This smells really fragrant!” Yanrong felt intoxicated with the scent upon sniffing it closely. The usually loud and boisterous Yanrong suddenly took tiny sips as if he was afraid a single gulp would finish it.

After being filled with alcohol and

food, Liu Hao and the other four were now sitting inside a small hut.

“How about I accompany you all to the Immortal World?” Tian Ye said in a straightforward manner.

“How can such a thing work? This town still requires you two to protect it so how can we allow you to come with us?” Said Cui Ying Ying.

“I’m actually really worried about brother Lightning’s safety. Also, you guys haven’t experienced the dangers of the Chaotic Star Sea so you don’t know how scary it is. It’s not a place that anyone can successfully go through. It’s fortunate that I was lucky back then and managed to find a relatively

safe path going there and back. With me guiding you guys, it might improve the safety level for your group.” Tian Ye explained.

Yanrong nodded on the side, “I think you guys shouldn’t refuse it. Brother Tian Ye can take care of you guys along the way, and don’t worry about this town’s protection. Brother Lightning had previously killed a tyrant for us so the current outer periphery of the Chaotic Star Sea is very peaceful, and nothing dangerous has appeared lately.”

It was hard to decline their good intentions so Liu Hao and the two beauties glanced at each other before nodding. “Then we will thank you in advance!”

“No need for such words!”

It was while this group were chatting that Liu Hao and the two beauties found out why Lei Yu was their benefactor.

They had a long journey ahead of them. After resting in town for the night, Liu Hao and Tian Ye no longer delayed this and were prepared to leave. Before they left, Liu Hao left a case of alcohol making Yanrong extremely happy!

In another area.

“The Sovereign is back.” Lei Yu smiled while Ai Er and Nuo Hu stood up in unison. The three of them walked out and the Sovereign happened to be in the midst of



descending to the ground.

Upon seeing Lei Yu, the Thunder Rune Sect's Sovereign became ecstatic. The Sovereign was still wearing the same black long robe with golden embroidery on the edge. Just like other people of the Immortal Realm, his face did not show any signs of aging.

“Lightning, it's really you!”

“Greetings Sovereign.”

“Good, good! It's good that you came back!” The Sovereign was so excited he didn't know what to say. He originally lost hope in Lei Yu since seven years had passed by without any news of him. He had already stopped thinking of this

matter until Lei Yu suddenly appeared again, doing what he had promised before – he had really returned!

He invited Lei Yu and company straight to the main halls of the Thunder Rune Sect and immediately had them all sit to the sides.

“These two are?”

“This person is my sworn big brother, Nuo Hu.”

“Sovereign!” Nuo Hu stood up and cupped his hands, his gentle temperament made the Sovereign nod in satisfaction.

“This person is my dao partner, Nuo Ai Er. Those two are brother and

sister.” Lei Yu introduced his lover sitting beside him.

“It’s truly a beauty that matches with a hero. Lightning, you have really good fortune when it comes to love! Haha...”

Those words made Ai Er blush. Lei Yu cupped his hands, “You’re teasing us... Sovereign, we came this time because we have some things to give you but we have to leave after that. Once we have taken care of some matters, I will definitely come back to fulfill my promise!”

“How come you have to leave again?” Hearing that Lei Yu had to leave, the Sovereign couldn’t help feel disappointed.

“Don’t worry, what this one says, I will surely accomplish!”

“Good! It is good as long as you will return! But do you have an accurate timeframe?” Since Lei Yu has stepped twice into the grounds of the Thunder Rune Sect, it shows he is one that keeps his words. The Sovereign had a good impression of him and this time, he could clearly feel there was something different about Lei Yu but just couldn’t pinpoint it.

After thinking for a bit, Lei Yu faintly smiled, “Perhaps I’ll have to wait until I’m at the late Soul Splitting stage before I can completely take care of my matters. By that time, I will bring my lover and my brother together back

here!”

=====

# Chapter 322: Such An Imposing Name

“Late... late Soul Splitting stage? This...” The Sovereign felt Lei Yu was kidding with him.

“Yeah, it shouldn’t take too long. I want to train from the late Soul Fusion to the late Soul Splitting stage, so it won’t take too much time. I just need to find a suitable place for cultivation and it’ll be good.” This wasn’t considered much to Lei Yu, especially when he already had an ideal location – the Devil King’s Castle. But his casual words had completely stunned the Sovereign.

After a while, the Sovereign cleared his throat, “You just said something about the late Soul Fusion stage... what did you mean by that?” While saying that, one can clearly hear his voice trembling.

Lei Yu finally realized the atmosphere and smiled, “It is indeed what I’ve said, this one has already reached the late Fusion Soul stage.”

The Sovereign suddenly stood up with a “bang.” He ran in front of Lei Yu and sent out his perception to investigate him. But no matter how much he tried, he wasn’t able to detect any energy fluctuations from Lei Yu.

“You... you... you’ve really reached

the late Fusion Soul stage?! Is this for real?” While constantly clearing his throat, the Sovereign looked like he was staring at a monster and couldn’t believe what his ears heard.

“Uh... yes, that’s correct!” Lei Yu once again affirmed.

The Sovereign took a few steps back, “This is incredible, simply too inconceivable!” After saying that in a trembling voice, he then said: “Seven years ago you were only at the late Gold Core stage. When I found out that you had only used up two months time to go from the early to the late stages, I was already shocked beyond words. I never imagined that in these short seven years, you have already



surpassed the Nascent Soul and reached the peak of the Fusion Soul stage. This is simply too unbelievable!”

Lei Yu lightly smiled, “Perhaps my cultivation method is suited for my body. Oh right, I came back here for another reason as well.”

“Oh? What is it?”

While saying that, Lei Yu made a thought and a round ball appeared in his hand. The round ball was transparent and had a light purple glow to it. Ai Er, Nuo Hu, and the Sovereign could clearly sense the round ball contained a very powerful explosive energy inside it.

“This thing looks really familiar!”

The Sovereign looked at it in a strange manner.

After careful consideration, Lei Yu decided there was no longer any need to hide anything. Otherwise, there will be too many things to explain in the future since so much has happened.

“Sovereign, the mortal world’s Lei Sect... do you know of it?”

The Sovereign sucked in a cool breath and his eyes widened.  
“Could... could it be...”

“That’s right; this one is a descendant of the Mortal World’s Lei Sect – Lei Yu!” After saying that, there were no changes in Lei Yu’s demeanor. On the other hand, the

Sovereign's heart started beating like crazy and his eyes looked like they were about to jump out of its socket.

"You're saying that you're the descendant of the Lei Sect?!" Asked the Sovereign as he grabbed onto Lei Yu's shoulder, clearly more excited than before by thousands of times.

"Yes I am." Lei Yu wasn't willing to tell the Sovereign of what happened between him and the Lei family in the Mortal World. Even though he was unwilling to go back to the Lei family, he was still undeniably from that clan. No matter what, in the end his father was still there and Lei Yu was someone that looked heavily upon relationships.

Although he had a big conflict with the Lei clan, but if something happened, Lei Yu would still immediately rush back to their aid. Perhaps people may say he was stupid, but for him, this was a responsibility for being a member of the Lei family.

“Good... good! A genius has appeared in the Lei Sect! Haha...”  
The Sovereign seemed to be overly excited to the point where his voice even changed, but he didn’t care one bit.

“Don’t worry Sovereign, as long as I, Lei Yu is here, I will definitely use all my means to help you and the Thunder Rune Sect. I believe there will be one day that the Thunder Rune Sect will have a position as

one of the five great Sects!”

“Child, just those words of yours is enough! Go ahead and take care of your matters! I will stay and not leave while waiting for your return. During this time, I will also focus on increasing my strength. Ever since our ancestor left, our Thunder Rune Sect had plummeted from the peaks of its glory. I have also stayed too long at the late Fusion Soul stage...!”

It wasn’t difficult for Lei Yu to hear the pain within the Sovereign’s words.

“I have with me three Heavenly Thunder Beads that were created at my current Fusion Soul stage. I believe it should have some uses if

the Thunder Rune Sect was to encounter any issues. Please hold onto them.” Lei Yu then placed those beads into the Sovereign’s hand.

“Three of them?! You actually refined three of them! Wait... you said these were Heavenly Thunder Beads?” Refining these spiritual beads was a special ability for the Lei Sect and other outsiders weren’t able to grasp the concept. But even so, under normal circumstances, a single Lei family member being able to refine one or two of these beads in their lifetime was already an incredible feat. And they were merely Heavenly Flame Beads. Now that Lei Yu actually brought out Heavenly Thunder Beads, the Sovereign felt this was extremely

strange.

Lei Yu nodded and pulled up his sleeves, revealing the unique brand the Lei family members had.

The Sovereign almost fainted and it was only after while did his lips trembled, “You have the lightning brand! You have the lightning brand!”

In the short amount of time with Lei Yu, he, a Sovereign that had experienced the vicissitudes of life almost couldn't handle all the amount of shock given to him. He almost didn't dare to believe all this was real, thinking he must be in a dream or something.

It was a dream for any Sovereign to

bring their Sect to its peak of glory. This wasn't greed or ambition; it was pretty much a responsibility every Sovereign had. Now that the chance was within his grasp, it was unavoidable for him to be so excited. This sudden barrage of good news was similar to him waking up from a nightmare that had lasted hundreds of years.

"There's more." From his Universal Pouch, Lei Yu took out a handwritten book. It was something he had personally copied from the original.

The Sovereign's hand was trembling as he received the book, "The last half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual?"



“The Heavenly Thunder Manual is something only people with the lightning brand are able to cultivate. But after careful research by me, I found out that with a few adjustments of one’s internal energy, it’s suitable for our clan members with the flame brand to cultivate. This cultivation method isn’t bad and it should be useful to you.”

The Sovereign’s mouth opened and closed a few times but no words came out before he exhaled a long breath of air. Lei Yu and company noticed the Sovereign’s eyes had turned red and didn’t know what to say to him. It felt like they would rather be in a dangerous situation than dealing with this current quiet scene. Lei Yu then decided not to

say a thing.

After a while, the Sovereign raised his head and the tears didn't come out. He then smiled from the bottom of his heart, "Thank you!"

What did the Heavenly Thunder Manual represent? Back then, because of the latter half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual and the legendary Sky Devouring Sword, many clan members killed each other resulting in numerous casualties. And now, the Heavenly Thunder Manual had arrived in his hands. This was equivalent to the Thunder Rune Sect taking a big leap forward!

"There's no need to be so polite. You are technically my ancestor

right? As one of the junior generation, this is something that I should be doing. But can you help me with one thing?"

"Just say it!" The Sovereign slapped his chest and said: "No matter what it is, as long as you say it, I Lei Ba Tian[1] will definitely accomplish it!"

"Woa, what an imposing name!" Nuo Hu couldn't help saying in a low voice.

Lei Yu waved his hand, "It's not a huge matter, I just want you to help me create a furnace, one for refining medicinal pills. It'll be fine to finish it by the time I come back. Oh yeah, I have some purple crystal stones with me. Take it as the cost

of materials to create the furnace.” Knowing that the Thunder Rune Sect were having difficulties with their finances, Lei Yu didn’t plan on having them fork out the cost. It’s just that upon hearing Lei Yu mention purple crystal stones, it almost caused Lei Ba Tian to fall out of his chair.

# Chapter 323:

## Holding In The Tears

A block of purple crystal the size of a park bench appeared in front of Lei Yu and Lei Ba Tian. This was without a doubt a block of pure purple crystal stone and it made Lei Ba Tian unconsciously stretch out his hand to touch it.

In order for the Thunder Rune Sect's livelihood, he had been rushing all over the place. After several days, he was only able to earn a few dozen white crystal stones from some small Sects after selling them his Heavenly Flame

Beads. But now, such a large body of crystal was right in front of him causing him to rub his eyes a few times wondering if he was seeing an illusion.

“Sovereign, this block of crystal should be able to be cut up into several hundred normal sized purple crystals. It’s just that I don’t have any methods to cut them up so I can only take out the whole thing. Perhaps the only people capable of cutting it up are the Violet Gold Hall.”

“I can’t accept this, I can’t accept this!” Lei Ba Tian wasn’t a greedy person. Even though he was grateful for Lei Yu’s action, this was the first time in his life witnessing such a large fortune. This block was

equivalent to a blood crystal stone or even more. Even when the Thunder Rune Sect was at its peak of glory, their wealth was only equivalent to what was in front of him right now.

“Don’t decline this Sovereign. I, Lei Yu am a descendant of the Lei Sect so isn’t my wealth equivalent to my clan’s here? So what need is there to refuse it?” Lei Yu’s words made Lei Ba Tian unable to respond.

He grabbed onto Lei Yu’s hand since the extremely grateful him was already speechless. Lei Yu’s arrival to the Thunder Rune Sect had cause humongous changes and he would deeply remember all of this. A decision had started to take root in Lei Ba Tian’s mind.

After taking care of everything, Lei Yu didn't want to delay his journey anymore. He then brought Ai Er and Nuo Hu to the south, his target location was the Southern Wild Lands where Telephassa and the bull-head were waiting. There was one very good news Lei Yu really wanted to tell that infatuated goddess.

Lei Yu's non-stop journeying already revealed how anxious he was.

In another area, Liu Hao and Tian Ye's zigzagging allowed them to avoid many dangers but that didn't mean everything would go smoothly. They had still encountered many cultivators blocking their path, but they



managed to eventually repel them off. All this credit actually belonged to Liu Hao making Tian Ye beyond shocked. It looks like everyone related to Lightning wasn't simple since even his disciple was so powerful!

In fact, Liu Hao was able to become this tough was because of his bright golden broadsword! Where did this broadsword come from? Not many people knew this but there was relationship between his broadsword and a Qilin's power.

Lei Yu's journey wasn't considered far since it only took him about three days. The three of them arrived at the periphery of the Southern Wild Lands where rivers crisscrossed. Lei Yu had already

detected people he was familiar with from a distance so they began descending.

“Has the cultivation process been smooth for you two?”

The two toads were currently sunbathing their backs on land when they sensed the arrival of some people. They squinted through their eyelids in a lazy manner but were suddenly shocked and almost fell into the water.

“Lord Lightning! You... you’re back! You’re really back!” The slightly large toad cried out in shock.

Lei Yu was a bit surprised, “How did you know I was called Lightning? I believe I haven’t told you two my

name before.”

“You don’t know but during these past five years, the Demon King and Her Majesty have sent forth numerous demonic cultivators in order to find news of you. But since there were no traces of you, they issued a new decree. As long as one was able to find traces of you Lord Lightning, no matter which territory the demonic cultivator was from, they would have unconditional freedom to enter the city. In addition, they would be allowed to cultivate inside the Devil King’s Castle for an entire year!” The large toad explained.

Lei Yu lightly frowned, realizing his position in the bull-head’s heart was truly quite important. In order

to search for him, the bull-head would actually offer the Devil King's Castle as a reward when he had never allowed anyone access to it before. And to allow them a full year of cultivation time... this made Lei Yu very touched and at the same time, apologetic. He then said to himself: "I'm sorry Telephassa; I have once again made you worry! Bull-head, I'm coming back right now!"

After exhaling a breath, Lei Yu then smiled. "What are your names?"

"I'm called Little Ha!" The slightly smaller toad was the first to speak up.

The larger toad gave the smaller toad a supercilious look before

smiling at Lei Yu, “I’m called Big Ha.”

“The names of you two are really unique but very easy to remember. Come with me to the city to meet the Demon King.” In front of outsiders, Lei Yu would never say bull-head. Even though Minotaur Linos didn’t mind, Lei Yu still had to be mindful because after all, he was the Demon King of this generation respected by tens of thousands.

Lei Yu’s words and tone of voice were simple and bland, but those words to Little and Big Ha was like a gift from heaven! They were just here sunbathing and happened to encounter Lei Yu, so wasn’t this even luckier than winning the

lottery?

All demonic cultivators new the benefits of entering the city. Not only was it a safe place to reside in, there was even a chance to become a guard of the Demon King. As long as one becomes a guard, their future is practically set to be bright and glorious. Even if their strength was at the Gold Core stage, they will still gain the respect of all demon cultivators that weren't able to become guards. This was a symbol of status that only demonic cultivators that had made some positive contribution were qualified to have.

“Thank you Lord Lightning!” A bright light surrounded the two and immediately two middle-aged men

appeared in front of Lei Yu and company. The looks of those two toads in human form wasn't something one would praise.

They were both obese with jiggly meat on their face that would bounce with every little movement they made. The most exaggerated part was the size of their body was the same thickness from top to bottom. If one was forced to say what was most eye-catching about those two, it would have to be their green eyes. Although the green had become fainter after transforming into humans, one could still see that characteristic clearly. The other eye-catching part was their chest that was no different from the two huge mounds of a woman. Except those two mounds weren't

firm but drooped downwards.

“Uh..... let’s go!”

Lei Yu pulled Ai Er’s hand. Ai Er leapt on top of her sword before the two flew off while Nuo Hu followed behind. The two toads glanced at each other with visible happiness on their fat faces before they tried to catch up while panting with effort.

As they gradually got closer to the city, Lei Yu looked very calm. He wasn’t like last time filled with anticipation but was filled with warmth. Lei Yu felt like he had returned home.

“You guys look! Isn’t that Lord Lightning?” The demonic



cultivators cried out in shock inside the city. Some even flew up to take a closer look before flying off quickly towards the castle. What were they doing? Of course it was to report this good news to Telephassa and the bull-head in hopes of gaining some reward.

“Where did you go these five years? Did you know that Her Majesty and I almost went crazy?! If you still didn’t appear soon, most likely I would have flipped the entire Immortal World upside down!” The ear-deafening voice came from the castle causing nearly everyone to cover their ears, including Ai Er and Nuo Hu. It was only Lei Yu who had tears in his eyes as he inwardly sobbed a couple of times, “I’m sorry! I caused you all to worry!”

=====

# Chapter 324:

## Rewards From The Demon King

Lei Yu's voice wasn't loud and didn't have the bull-head's earth shaking effect, but everyone heard it clearly.

A golden beam of light and a red beam of light both shot out from the castle. After that, two beams of yellow light and a several different colored lights also shot out flying towards Lei Yu.

The calmest people in this scene were Ai Er and Nuo Hu because they didn't know what the Demon

King and the Majesty Queen represented. On the other hand, Little Ha and Big Ha were trembling non-stop, and almost looked like they were going to start crying. “Elder... elder brother, it’s really... really our Demon King! It’s really Lord Demon King!”

“That’s right! There’s also... also Her Majesty the Queen! Quickly look, she’s like a goddess! A goddess that has descended before our mortal eyes!” No one bothered with the words of the two toads.

The scene seemed to have frozen as bull-head’s gaze landed on Telephassa. The latter was staring at Lei Yu while her sweet lips slightly moved as if she wanted to say something, but then swallowed

it back down. She noticed that Lei Yu's hand was holding onto a beautiful girl by his side.

Ai Er and Telephassa cannot be compared on the same level. Previously, Ai Er was a lively and kind-hearted girl. Even though there was a big change to her these past few years, ever since she had recovered her senses, those two types of personality fused into one and caused her charm to be even on a higher level.

As for Telephassa, her beauty oozed out from deep within her bones. She originally had a prestigious position which gave her a remarkable temperament and gorgeous aura. She made people want to touch her yet be

discouraged to tarnish her image. But the kind temperament she showed Lei Yu made him unable to forget, especially when he wasn't able to fully express his intentions towards her.

One couldn't simply compare the looks of the two women because their beauty was on the level of making people suffocate. If one was to forced to give an opinion on what was different between them, there would only be two things: The first was feeling – those two gave people a different realm of beauty that caused all men to be entranced by. The second was their choice of clothing – Ai Er wore a long white gown made of silk which gave her an air of refinement; while Telephassa was in sexy attire that

revealed many areas of her white skin causing men to unconsciously salivate.

This strange frozen scene went on for almost two minutes until Romon who was standing behind the two emperors was the first to speak. “Nuo Hu! Ai Er! We haven’t seen each other in a long time!”

“Oh, it’s Romon! You’re here too!” Ai Er’s voice was like a wind chime. Adding the light laughter in tone, people hearing her voice felt like they were listening to the sound of nature.

Telephassa felt strange because in her entire life, this was the first time she felt like she wasn’t the most beautiful woman in the world.

“Brother! It has truly been a long time since we’ve met!” Nuo Hu grinned as he too intended to break this weird atmosphere. The shield beneath his feet started moving towards Romon. Romon directly jumped off his copper pillar onto Nuo Hu’s weapon and the two hugged each other.

“Uh... how about... how about we first go back before we continue chatting?” The bull-head embarrassedly said as his eyes kept darting back and forth between the Queen and Lei Yu.

Lei Yu smiled, “Sounds good! There are many things I want to talk about with everyone!” Right after that, his glanced landed on Telephassa once again and lightly



nodded.

There wasn't any need to ask because the meaning of this simple nod was very obvious. Telephassa's heart start beating madly as if it was about to burst out of her chest. On her long exposed neck, one could clearly see that she had swallowed hard a few times.

The crowd started flying towards the castle, leaving thousands upon thousands of demonic cultivators with wide eyes and mouths agape. Some even had snot dripping down to their mouth without realizing it.

It was necessary to prepare residences for the three of them because Ai Er was now present among them.

The crowd landed and went inside the main hall, and Lei Yu was the first to break the silence. “How come I don’t see that girl Mo Bei Li?” After looking around, there truly were no signs of that little yaksha that loves to mess around.

Hearing Mo Bei Li’s name being mentioned, the bull-head showed a pleased expression on his face. “After that situation with you back then, that child has really matured a lot. Being envious upon seeing the rapid improvements by Romon and you, and being aware of her own deficiencies, she actually requested on her own to enter the Devil King’s Castle to cultivate. She still hasn’t come out yet.”

Lei Yu nodded in a pleased manner,

“It’s good that she wants to improve. Being her father, you will have to support her more often.”

“That’s of course.” The bull-head nodded.

After those several dialogues, no one else spoke anymore and everyone was just staring at each other. No further topic could be brought up, and even Lei Yu who originally said he had a lot of things to talk about didn’t know where to start from.

Telephassa was still overjoyed at this point but couldn’t reveal it on her face. Her eyes unconsciously met with Ai Er’s, and they both could only smile and nod at each other. The smiles contained

forgiveness and gratitude mixed in it.

“Oh right, I thought of something!” Lei Yu slapped his head, not wanting others to say he doesn’t keep his words. He had promised Little Ha and Big Ha to bring them to meet the Demon King, so he couldn’t go back on his words right?

“What is it?” Asked the bull-head.

“When I arrived at the outermost periphery of the Southern Wild Lands, I encountered two people that have a pretty good relationship with me. It was those two fatties that were following behind us.”

“Little Yu, what are you trying to

say...?" Asked the bull-head.

"There's no hidden meaning behind my words." Lei Yu shook his head. He didn't want the bull-head to open any backdoors for those two because of him. He then smiled, "Didn't you issue a decree that whoever finds me will get some preferential treatment?"

"That's right!" The bull-head nodded, "Someone come here! Go and bring those two brothers called Little Ha and Big Ha to the main hall!"

"Understood!" The two guards did not appear as their voices were heard from the outside.

Above the city, the two fatties were

staring at each other while floating in the air. After a while, Little Ha said: “Elder brother, it looks like we’ve been played with!”

“Stop spouting bullshit! You dare to say something bad about Lord Lightning in this place? You simply don’t want to keep living!” Big Ha lectured loudly.

Pouting his fat lips, Little Ha was unhappy, “I didn’t say anything wrong, isn’t this the case?”

“Okay, that’s enough. Let’s go, we’re going back to our territory!” Giving one last look at the castle, those two were disappointed but didn’t dare say it out loud.

“Are you two brothers Little Ha and

Big Ha?”

Asked a burly guy in armor who had suddenly blocked the path of those two.

“What is it?” Big Ha asked.

“The fortune of you two aren’t bad, the Demon King has summoned you two.” The burly guy smiled.

The two fatties cried out in shock, “Really?! Is it really true?!” Seeing the burly guy nod in acknowledgement, those two became ecstatic.

“You see? You see? I just said it that Lord Lightning was loyal and wouldn’t forget about us!”

Big Ha gave Little Ha a despising

glance, “Be careful since I might  
just tell him what you had just said  
prior!”

“ ... ”



# Chapter 325:

## Getting Along Together

Two piles of meat were kneeling at the main hall and they were none other than Little Ha and Big Ha.

“Given that you two have merit, a mansion will be assigned to you in the city. You guys are also eligible to enter the Devil King’s Castle to cultivate, but you two cannot enter simultaneously.”

“Wahhh...” Snot was dripping down Little Ha as he suddenly cried in happiness. Ever since he was born, this was the first time he got so

close to the Demon King. And he was even able to talk to him! All of this had caused Little Ha to be unable to hold down his emotions anymore.

Big Ha had a face full of smiles, but at the same time felt embarrassed. He pulled the corner of Little Ha's clothes and then with an excited smile: "Thank you Lord Demon King! Thank you your Majesty the Queen!" He then turned around to look at Lei Yu, "Thank you Lord Lightning!"

"You guys may withdraw!"

"Understood!"

After those two left, Lei Yu considered this as paying what he

had promised them. He felt like some pressure had been lifted off his chest as the smile he revealed became a bit more splendid. After recalling Little Ha's prior expression, he almost couldn't hold in his laughter.

"Are there any more matters that need to be accounted for?" The bull-head rubbed his horn with a proud expression on his face. It was obvious he was feeling good from showing how mighty he was in front of Lei Yu.

"Stop messing around, there's really something I need your assistance with." Said Lei Yu while scratching his head.

"You're still saying those polite

words of needing my assistance? Just go ahead and tell me what you need!" Said the bull-head as white mist sprayed from his nostrils.

Lei Yu glanced at Nuo Hu and Ai Er, "Can you allow Ai Er and my big brother to enter the Devil King's Castle to cultivate? There's so much spiritual energy in there so it's an ideal place for them."

"Stop kidding around!" The bull-head stood up with a "bam." Everyone was suddenly dumbfounded wondering what this bull-head was doing. But his following words made others unsure as to laugh or cry: "Not to mention allowing or not allowing, I can even give the castle to you!"

“I don’t want it, something like that is only safe if it’s under your name. Anyway, didn’t I take with me a big chunk of purple crystal stone when I left?” Lei Yu had intended on bringing the crystal stone along with him to improve his cultivation, but never thought he would actually give it away instead.

-----

In the Immortal World, eating and drinking weren’t something cultivators really cared about. It was only necessary when it came to celebrations because this represented their expression of happiness.

Amidst this crowd, there were no separations of lords or servants as

everyone just randomly sat around a large stone table. The alcohol they had brewed themselves was really not bad, causing everyone relish in its taste.

After being satisfied with food and alcohol, everyone was aware on what they had to do. They all had to give some space for Lei Yu to deal with his relationship between Ai Er and Telephassa.

During the banquet, Ai Er and Telephassa had already chatted with each other for a very long time and they happened to have good feelings towards one and another.

Since Lei Yu was so devoted to Ai Er, that naturally meant she had qualities about her that excelled.

In the eyes of Ai Er, Telephassa was worthy of her respect and admiration. Not even mentioning her current status, just Telephassa's devotion to Lei Yu was already enough for her respect.

There were things Lei Yu wanted to say but he didn't know how to start it so he just sat there like an idiot. The two beauties glanced at each other and seemed to form a mutual understanding. They both stood up in unison and with one to the left and one to the right of Lei Yu, they grabbed his arms and pulled him up.

"What are you two doing?" Asked Lei Yu.

"Shall we go to my place?"

Telephassa's eyes glanced at Ai Er. The latter then nodded, "Sounds good!"

Heading into the luxurious bedchambers, the faint aromatic smell would make anyone intoxicated. Even Ai Er was relishing it for a while before opening her eyes, "Big sister, what kind of smell is this? I really like it!"

"You like it too? Come with me!" Leaving Lei Yu to the side, Telephassa pulled Ai Er and the two of them walked towards a wooden shelf in the corner of the room.

"These are spices I specially brought with me from Greece in the Mortal World. I've always been reluctant to use them and have only



used it a few times. And it happens to be when he comes before I'm willing to use it!" As Telephassa was saying this, her eyes glanced towards Lei Yu.

Ai Er giggled, "It looks like this is a very precious item so I cannot snatch it away from big sister."

"It's fine, why are you still being so polite with me?"

Seeing that those two were interacting with each other in a harmonious manner, Lei Yu's heart started fluttering in his stomach. But it was at this time that he felt he was an extra since those two were having fun chatting with each other as if the topics would never end.

The most headache inducing issue hasn't happened yet but it will soon!

-----

Lei Yu brought Nuo Hu, Ai Er, and Little Ha together to the Devil King's Castle. Lei Yu actually had some feelings towards this place because this was where he rose from the Nascent Soul stage to his current strength. It was definitely not an easy experience. Even though one was able to cultivate in this castle made of crystal stones, it'll be impossible to attain the strength Lei Yu currently has based on that alone. His extreme cultivation improvement was mostly due to the coincidence of meeting and being guided by the

Devil King's soul remnant. Of course Lei Yu didn't elaborate the details of the encounter to the others.

Upon entering the Devil King's Castle, those three behind him were extremely excited, especially Little Ha. His older brother Big Ha gave him the right to enter first, making him extremely grateful for that action. After all, those two were brothers. Even though they would at times argue with each other, when something happens, they would still be united in thought. This was something Lei Yu admired about those two and he had already made some plans for them.

"It's so pretty here!" Ai Er couldn't help praise out loud while she

stared around at all the crystals.

“Lord Lightning!” A familiar voice came from the distance causing Lei Yu to turn around with a smile.

“Silo, your strength has improved!”

“It’s all my fault for being so dumb. I’ve already been here for a few hundred years yet have only reached the middle Boundary Transition stage.” It was clear that Silo was not happy with his own cultivation speed.

Little Ha stared with his tiny beady eyes at the fearsome looking Silo and then asked excitedly: “You are Lord Silo?”

Silo coldly looked at the fatty, “You should be the person specially

permitted to enter the castle to cultivate, right?”

Silo’s words clearly showed he knew the story about Lei Yu’s disappearance and reappearance.

“Tha... that’s right.” Little Ha replied after swallowing hard.

“He’s a friend I met by fate so treat him like one of us, don’t treat him like such a stranger.” Lei Yu lightly patted Silo’s shoulder. With Silo’s powerful physique, Lei Yu felt like he was patting a piece of marble.

No one would dare to act so casual in front of Silo, but Lei Yu didn’t receive his anger and instead, everyone could see Silo laugh in a foolish manner.

Little Ha stayed to the side without making a noise. Although he knew Lei Yu wasn't a simple person, he still couldn't understand what kind of status this Lord Lightning had. Why would the totem of the Southern Wild Lands be lightning? And how come all those senior members of the Demon King's retinue are all familiar with him? This information wasn't something he was qualified to know and no one will tell him anyway. But in the future, he will become one of Lei Yu's important Generals.

-----

T/N: Author contradicts himself about the soul remnant so modifications were made. The discrepancy in this chapter was that

the author said Lei Yu didn't tell anyone about the soul remnant but in Chapter 317 he clearly told everyone about it. Also I don't understand why there wasn't a short paragraph of Lei Yu telling them why he was missing for 5 years.

# Chapter 326A: The Dark Room

Mo Bei Li had already heard Lei Yu's voice so she ran out of the castle in joy, "Brother Yu!"

Lei Yu originally had a face full of smiles but upon seeing her appearance, it was replaced with an expression of shock. Lei Yu quickly looked off to the side while even Ai Er and Nuo Hu were in a daze. As for Little Ha, his little eyes were now big and round as blood started squirting out of his nose.

"What... what on earth?"

"Cough... cough...!" Lei Yu cleared



his throat, “Shouldn’t you first put on some clothes?”

“What do you mean put on some clothes? I’ve always been like this when I was in the water territory.” Said Mo Bei Li in a confused manner as she pulled on the three piece string bikini she was wearing.

Mo Bei Li’s snow white skin was exposed out in the open while half her soft looking two towers were revealed. It was only her two pink mounds that were covered up at this point. And don’t even mention the lower half of her body; a glance would immediately cause one to have a nosebleed because it was only covered by a simple small piece of yellow cloth. If one looked at her from the back, it would look

like she wasn't wearing anything at all. Compared to when Lei Yu first encountered her, this was the exact same bikini getup she was wearing.

The big burly Nuo Hu was now scratching his head while his face was blushing. He made a thought and took out some old clothes that used to belong to Ai Er before handing it over to Ai Er.

“Little sister, do you want to wear this? It's so chilly in here, aren't you afraid of catching a cold?” Ai Er felt this was a bit awkward and thought it should be her to be saying this. Although those words of catching a cold towards a cultivator didn't make sense, Ai Er just couldn't come up with anything better on the spot.

“Wahh! You’re the big sister Ai Er that brother Yu always talks about? You’re very pretty!” Mo Bei Li enthusiastically jumped towards Ai Er as her twin peaks wobbled up and down causing extreme temptation.

“Ah, I’m done!” The voice of Little Ha was heard as he sat on the ground with a “plop” as more blood started spraying from his nose.

Lei Yu didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, “I swear, you are too shameful!”

It was only after putting on Ai Er’s clothes was a bloody tragedy stopped from happening.

Upon entering the castle and

greeting Kalchas, they all separated to find their own cultivation space. Once everyone was settled, Lei Yu turned around to leave and went towards that certain hallway.

Different from before, Lei Yu could now lightly push the wooden door and it would open without any obstacles. “Devil King, are you here?”

“Little friend, you’re back!” Inside the dark room, one couldn’t see their own hands in front of them. A sudden green light then appeared as a pair of green eyes floated in midair. The green light came from those eyes and gradually, a terrifying looking face appeared before Lei Yu. The face was a white skull with snow white hair

fluttering on the top, while its empty eye sockets only had a pair of glowing green eyes.

The first time Lei Yu saw it, he completely jumped in fright but now he was used to it.

“Devil King, I’m back and I’ve completed the matters you wanted. But an accident happened so quite a bit of time was used up.” Lei Yu said in an apologetic tone.

One could see the skull was attempting to frown, “It’s a bit difficult if you want to recover the energy inside you.”

Lei Yu was a bit surprised why the Devil King would say that. He had already fully recovered and his

internal energy was now even more vigorous than before. Lei Yu was confused on what the Devil King meant.

“Devil King, you’re talking about...?”

“Cut the bullshit! Sit down cross-legged, focused your energy in your dantian and don’t let any aura escape from your Nascent Soul’s body!” The Devil King roared out so Lei Yu didn’t dare to be slow. He immediately sat down and did what the Devil King told him. Converging his aura wasn’t something hard since before he reached the Gold Core stage, he already had that ability.

Lei Yu slowly closed his eyes and within this small room, a green

light started shining brightly. The light was coming from the floating skull, the remnant of the Devil King's soul.

One could see the skull spray out a green internal energy that went straight into Lei Yu's chest. This powerful aura made Lei Yu feel a bit suffocated, and he even felt pain on his chest that started spreading out to the rest of his body. This was similar to tens of thousands of ants biting one's body and was extremely difficult to endure. But Lei Yu didn't want to show his weakness so he continued enduring without making a bit of noise.

Lei Yu was then shocked...  
completely and utterly shocked!

“Isn’t this the green energy that used to be in my body? How come it made its appearance again?” Lei Yu said to himself in surprise.

As the energy came from the Devil King into Lei Yu’s body, it gradually became a green energy that jumped into Lei Yu’s heart meridian. It was the same as before, Lei Yu felt this unfamiliar energy form. It was like a scared child as it slowly traveled around his body in a cautious manner.

Lei Yu had already forced the pain to the back of his mind but his breathing was no longer uniform. He could only focus on the transformation that was undergoing in his heart meridian right now.



Although his meridians that were all messed up after the big battle had recovered, there were still some parts that had crisscrossed each other that shouldn't have happened. Once that green energy arrived inside his body, it immediately went to fix it and forced it into the correct position.

“Is this energy something he gave me? How could that be possible?” Lei Yu didn't dare to believe it but the facts were in front of him. The green energy slowly recovered and became stronger. Unknown how much time had passed, the green energy seemed to be full of vigor right now. One could see that energy slowly get close to the infant body residing in Lei Yu's dantian. It stopped in front of the purple

lightning brand for a bit before drilling itself into it.

Lei Yu clenched his teeth and fist as he endured. Sweat continued pouring down his forehead and his clothes were now completely drenched. But he continued enduring and didn't scream out because he knew this was a critical moment. Moreover, if he screamed out, everyone outside will definitely try to rush here and that might interrupt this critical moment.

A searing pain was felt on Lei Yu's arm that almost caused him to faint. There were even hissing noises coming from his arm right now.

The pain gradually subsided and Lei

Yu flopped to the ground like a pile of mud. One couldn't see it in this dark room but his face looked like it had been drained of blood and was now pale white.

"I chose you because you have such a strong will. If it were another person, most likely they wouldn't be able to endure this." Said the Devil King's skull.

Lei Yu then weakly asked: "Was this green energy something you gave me? Why?"

"It's very simple! Did you remember our agreement five years ago? You had to help me accomplish a task. That green energy inside you was my insurance as it will grow strong along with your own growth. If my

true body doesn't help you suppress it, there's no way you will be able to control it. By that time, you will only have a physical body but your soul will belong to me! You will never be able to restore your own consciousness!"

Those words of the Devil King wasn't very oppressive, but to Lei Yu it felt like the sick feeling of being raped and afterwards was told the rapist had AIDS. Lei Yu really wanted to stomp this skull into a pile of mud right now but he couldn't do that.

-----

T/N: The author likes to be vague but it has been revealed! Back then when Lei Yu was about to die from

fighting the Void Immortal, some random plot armor unknown entity took over his body and drained the green energy out of the lightning brand. It was the Devil King that took over!

# Chapter 326B:

## Energy Source

“If I had known this before, I wouldn’t have allowed you to help me recover!” Lei Yu angrily said to himself, but there was nothing he could do. He didn’t know what the Devil King was doing prior but now he finally found out.

“Don’t worry, I will fulfill my promise and help you rescue your true body. But will this energy eventually disappear? Also according to my knowledge, I’m not the only person that has a strong will so why did you have to pick me?” In regards to this, Lei Yu had to get to the bottom of it since there

was an energy inside him that was equivalent to a time bomb. Lei Yu didn't know when it'll explode so how could he not feel fear it?

Back then, Lei Yu had a favorable impression of the energy but of course now, that has all disappeared!

Even though that green energy had saved him a few times, this was something the Devil King had done in order to guarantee that he doesn't die. It now appears that everything had been a conspiracy! And it happened to be a very insidious plot!

Helping Lei Yu heal his wounds, and then helping him improve his cultivation levels. All of this was a

conspiracy plotted by the Devil King in order for him to help save his true body!

“Your friend Romon wasn’t a bad choice, except that I cannot manipulate the will of an ascetic cultivator. But someone with a slightly weaker will cannot handle the green energy inside their body so there was only you that was capable of handling it!”

“You bastard!” Lei Yu cursed out as he couldn’t accept this.

“I am a bastard! But it was also this bastard that helped you change the fate of death a few times! It was also this bastard that allowed the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost recognize you as its owner! It was also



because of me, the so called bastard that gave you the chance of being recognized as the owner of the Dragon Vein! Originally everything should have belonged to me yet everyone has befallen you, and you're still not satisfied?" Every single word of the Devil King drew blood, causing Lei Yu's heart to shake.

"Didn't you do this all because of yourself? Wasn't your goal so that I would accomplish tasks on your behalf?" Lei Yu angrily stood up. His emotions were in disarray as he angrily stared at the white skull floating in the air.

Lei Yu felt like his heart was about to shatter. So all these fortunate encounters were due to the green

energy inside his body.

“Don’t be so agitated. If it weren’t for your strong will, and your hard work in cultivation and your innate talents in understanding the mysteries of your cultivation method, I believe that even if you had the energy, you wouldn’t have risen to your current strength. All those fortunate events had only brought you a bit of assistance, while the true reason for you becoming stronger... is yourself!” The Devil King seemed to have suddenly changed to having a very human-like kindness as he praised Lei Yu.

“Cut the bullshit! Once the matter between you and I are finished, I hope that the energy inside me will

disappear!”

“Of course!”

Lei Yu no longer paid attention to him and pulled open the wooden door to go out. He then tried to calm himself down to show a more normal expression when at this time, he noticed Ai Er and others were already sitting around discussing something.

“Brother Yu, you’ve finally come out! I was so worried!” Ai Er ran over and hugged Lei Yu as she said this.

“Wha... what’s going on?” The heavy hearted Lei Yu said as he stroked Ai Er’s hair.

Nuo Hu stood up, “Little Yu, you’ve

been inside the room behind the wooden door for over two months already! If you didn't come out soon, we were going to seek out Lord Demon King to have him come by!"

"Over two months?" Lei Yu's eyes widened. No wonder the Devil King said it was kind of difficult for the energy to recover its strength. It had actually used up so much of his time, it really wasn't worth it! What a hopeless situation where one would waste so much time in order to be planted with an evil curse.

"Nothing going on, I was just in deep meditation so don't worry." Lei Yu smile apologetically. "Everyone should continue to cultivate!" Lei Yu was the first to sit back down. At

least Lei Yu knew that those four different colored energy wasn't related to the Devil King, which made him feel a bit better.

In another area.

“My two friends, can I ask if you two came from the Chaotic Star Sea?” A person suddenly appeared and asked.

Liu Hao and Tian Ye glanced at each other before one of them pointed to the back, “Could that place behind us not be the Chaotic Star Sea?”

This person was slightly surprised because this scene seemed to have happened before. After racking his brains in thought, he finally

recalled... back then when Lei Yu and Big White came here, didn't they say those exact words? The response of these two was exactly like Lei Yu's.

That's right; this person was none other than the disciple of the Thunder Rune Sect, He Chuang.

"This is so funny, the words of you two are exactly like my brother Lightning's." He Chuang gave a light laugh.

Liu Hao and Tian Ye originally wasn't going to bother with this guy but upon hearing those words, the two visibly shook and decided to stay. Liu Hao quickly asked: "You know Lightning? What does he look like?"

He Chuang blinked a few times,  
“You two also know him?”

“Quickly say it, what does he look like? Is he wearing a ring that looks like the one on my fingers right now?” Liu Hao frantically asked as he raised his hand in front of He Chuang’s face.

“I don’t really remember this but the Sovereign had once said that brother Lightning has a brand that only the Lei Sect possesses.”

Liu Hao’s heart was beating like crazy while Tian Ye was overjoyed. Liu Hao then laughed into the air, “Shit, my luck is too good! I immediately got news of master upon arriving in the Immortal World, this is awesome!”

“Uh...” He Chuang looked at Liu Hao with a strange look. “You are... you are brother Lightning’s disciple?”

“Yes I am! Quickly bring me to see my master!” Liu Hao grabbed onto He Chuang’s hand as he said this.

“This...” While hesitating, He Chuang then said: “Brother Lightning isn’t at our Thunder Rune Sect right now. How about you two fist come back with me to meet the Sovereign? His old esteemed self knows much more about what’s going on while I’m merely just a simple disciple.”

“Then let’s not delay anymore friend, please show the way!” Tian Ye made a please gesture with his



hands.

“Please follow me then.”

Tian Ye was fine since he had been to the Immortal World before but Liu Hao was completely spellbound. With picturesque clouds drifting around the mountain ranges, this scene looked like paradise.

They arrived at the so called Thunder Rune Sect and found it strangely quiet. Tian Ye felt weird at first since most of the Sects of the Immortal World refused to take in disciples, so why would there be someone waiting at the barrier between the Chaotic Star Sea and the Immortal World? Now he realized this Sect was one that has deteriorated, and the sword and axe

scars left behind meant this place had experienced a big battle in the past.

As they entered a rather old looking main hall, He Chuang said: "If these two guests can wait here, I will go get the Sovereign."

The two nodded and He Chuang left. After waiting shortly, they felt a strong aura entering their presence so Liu Hao and Tian Ye quickly stood up out of their seats.

Before Lei Ba Tian had arrived, his voice was already heard: "Is it really little Yu's disciple?"

Hearing the two words "little Yu," Liu Hao knew this wasn't an outsider so he grinned in

anticipation. This strong aura crashing against the two was something Lei Ba Tian unintentionally released from being too excited.

“Sovereign.”

Liu Hao copied Tian Ye’s manners and also cupped his hands,  
“Sovereign.”

# Chapter 327:

## Caring About One's Appearance

After Lei Ba Tian's detailed explanation, the two found out Lei Yu was currently attending to some matters and wasn't in the process of rescuing Ai Er. Lei Ba Tian clearly described that Ai Er and Nuo Hu was accompanying Lei Yu when they left two months ago. This clearly showed Lei Yu was successful in rescuing Ai Er and Nuo Hu from the Void Sect's grasp.

“How about this - since you two don't know where to find little Yu, why not just stay at my Thunder

Rune Sect for now? Little Yu said once he is done with his matters, he will definitely return here since this place is his home!”

The two thought for a bit; the waters of the Immortal World were really deep and if one wasn’t careful, they could easily lose a shoe. Even though everyone says the Chaotic Star Sea is dangerous and filled with chaos, the Immortal World is also not an easy place to wander around. If one didn’t have the support of a powerful Sect, they might even find themselves in trouble.

“Then we’ll be disturbing you.”

“There’s no need for such words! One is little Yu’s good friend, the

other is little Yu's pupil, just treat this place as your home and don't be so polite! I will have He Chuang arrange some guest rooms so just stay here with peace of mind, okay?"

The three got up together and cupped hands with each other. Lei Ba Tian then said: "You can cultivate your internal energy in your rooms while physical practices can be done in the training grounds. We have all the facilities necessary so just make yourself at home!"

"Thank you Sovereign! But... I have a request." Liu Hao said a bit embarrassed.

"Please say it!" Lei Ba Tian was

about to leave but stopped and glanced at Liu Hao.

“Can you prepare two more guest rooms? I still have two more friends.”

“When will they arrive?”

Liu Hao waved his hand and two beams of light rushed out of his storage ring. Cui Ying Ying and Nami then both appeared in front of everyone.

Seeing two beauties wearing slightly revealing modern clothing, Lei Ba Tian actually went into a slight daze. He then quickly recovered, “No problem! These two are...?”

Liu Hao covered his grin, “These two are both my master’s intimate

friends!”

“Liu Hao! You itching for a beating?!” Nami was a bit better and only blushed a bit while Cui Ying Ying raised her fist and punched at Liu Hao. Those two were like that as they started chasing each other around. It was quite funny to behold where a Gold Core expert that was similar to a God in the Mortal World was being chased around and beaten on.

“Uh...” Lei Ba Tian and Tian Ye glanced at each other and didn’t know what to say.

-----

To cultivators, the passing of time wasn’t something they would



bother with anymore. Everyone's innate talent was different, so it's not surprising to find some that were getting up there in age before they can reach the Gold Core stage. There were two main reasons for that: First, they were just not born with talent. The second was where one would see an elderly person with a high position in a Sect - which could mean they only started cultivating when they were middle-aged thus giving them such an appearance. But whatever the reason is, most cultivators would have the middle-aged look while only a handful elites of the Sects would have a youthful look. Still, no one would go about asking for other's age because no matter where, that subject was considered impolite.

In the Immortal Realm, seniority was based on strength and not age.

Thunder Rune Sect &ndas

h; Liu Hao, Tian Ye and the two beauties had lived here for two years already. Liu Hao and Tian Ye were not in a rush, but Cui Ying Ying and Nami felt like they couldn't wait any longer. Age comes with the passing of time was a fact of life for them, especially when they didn't have any secret techniques to maintain their youth. If a few more years pass by, Lei Yu would still be a handsome looking youth while those two would start turning wrinkly like an aging pearl. By that time, even if Lei Yu didn't mind, they themselves would be embarrassed to be with him.

“Liu Hao! We can’t just keep waiting like this right?” Said Cui Ying Ying as she shoved open his door.

“Sister Ying Ying, don’t be anxious, I believe master will be back soon! How long can it take to deal with some matters?” Liu Hao tried comforting her.

“But it’s been two years already and he still hasn’t returned. You guys can keep waiting but Nami and I cannot! Can’t you see that another year has passed and I’ve aged another year?!”

Liu Hao understood what Cui Ying Ying was trying to say, but this was a helpless situation. After thinking for a bit, “How about I pass the

cultivation method master gave me to you two? You guys can then start cultivating here, okay?”

“Start our cultivation now? Isn’t it too late? By the time Nami and I reach your level, I’m afraid we’ll be both old and yellow by then.” While biting her lips, Cui Ying Ying turned around and looked off into the distance. A light mist of tears appeared in her eyes before she sighed, “I only hope to see him one more time. Even if I can’t be together with him, I’ll still be satisfied!”

“Ying Ying.” Nami went over to hold onto Cui Ying Ying’s hand.

Cui Ying Ying turned towards Nami, “Nami, I believe you feel the

same way as me. We cannot maintain our youth forever and I don't want to be old by the time I see the man I love again. By that time, I might as well disappear and never appear again."

Nami kept her head lowered and didn't say anything because she was thinking the same thing as Cui Ying Ying. As long as she could see young master one more time, she would have no regrets even if she was to die right after. Ever since her grandma passed away, Nami no longer had any family. Having Lei Yu's group of friends gave her a sense of belonging, but that key to this belonging still fell on Lei Yu himself.

Nami was someone of the Kou

country and to a certain extent, Tenglong people held resentment towards the Kou people. But Lei Yu was someone that had pushed those feelings aside and accepted Nami in a way. Nami now felt like she was already part of this group and even followed Liu Hao to the Immortal World. This wasn't because she wanted to take care of the problem the Spiritual Bead of Longevity was causing her, but it was so she could see Lei Yu one more time.

“Why are you two so depressed? Could one's appearance be that important to you two?” Lei Ba Tian's voice was heard from a distance.

Liu Hao and Tian Ye cupped their

hands while Nami and Cui Ying Ying slightly bowed. The latter then said in a dejected manner: "I just don't want to show my old face towards the person I love for the final time."

Lei Ba Tian opened his mouth about to say something but swallowed it back down. Tian Ye noticed that slight movement and also recalled something and asked: "Did Sovereign want to mention about the Devil's Path cultivation?"

Lei Ba Tian was slightly surprised but still nodded. "Right. Since the two girls place so much importance on their appearance just for little Yu, this kind of dedication is really admirable. I was contemplating if I should talk about such a topic."

Tian Ye was also in thought because this matter was worth considering. But the consequences related to it would be irreparable and filled with pain, so neither one of them wanted to be the ones to talk about it first.

“What? What sort of matter is this Devil’s Path?” Liu Hao asked in confusion.

Lei Ba Tian closed his eyes and clasped his hands behind his back, “This is a method for one to maintain their youth, but the price to pay for that is pain!”

“There’s such a thing?” Liu Hao’s eyes widened. Cui Ying Ying and Nami perked up their ears hoping to hear more of it.



# Chapter 328:

## Forever Young

“That’s right!” Tian Ye then continued with the explanation: “Legends say that female Devil cultivators can look forever young. And there are many human Devil cultivators with extremely gorgeous bodies while their strength cannot be overlooked. They can’t change their looks but they can maintain it, and the appearance of you two are rather suitable for it. But there is an irreversible price associated with it...”

“Quickly tell us!” Cui Ying Ying and Nami’s emotions were in an upheaval since they couldn’t believe

that there was such a thing in this world.

Lei Ba Tian lightly sighed. He knew that girls in love would not hesitate to pay whatever the price without consideration. Since his words had already been spoken, it would be impossible to keep this hidden anymore. “A Devil cultivator must be prepared for never ever having their own offspring.”

Cui Ying Ying and Nami froze. To some people, this price was not considered much but to some that weren't married yet, this was similar to a punishment. They haven't even become old yet and couldn't have any babies in the future? This was a bit difficult for Cui Ying Ying and Nami to accept.

But Lei Yu was like their everything right now. If they didn't see Lei Yu ever again, most likely they would regret it for the rest of their life.

After clenching her teeth, Nami was the first to respond: "I have decided to cultivate the Devil's Path!"

"I have decided to as well!"

Lei Ba Tian looked at the sky and sighed, this was a conclusion he already guessed would happen.

"How about we wait two more years? If two years later little Yu still doesn't come back, I will not obstruct the decision you two have made today. You girls must know that you haven't even wedded yet so I'm afraid you will regret your decision in the future." This matter was really their own private

business and didn't have anything to do with him, but Lei Ba Tian still wanted to point them in the correct path out of the kindness of his heart.

Cui Ying Ying and Nami were really appreciative. They bowed and said: "Thank you Sovereign, we have already decided and won't regret it!"

After sighing heavily, "Fine, I hope that little Yu will not let you two down!"

"Sister Ying Ying, Nami, you two really have decided to cultivate the Devil's path? Could it be that you two don't want to give master descendants? You two don't want to ever hold your own baby?" Liu Hao felt their decision was a bit too

impulsive so he couldn't hold back.

“Liu Hao, isn't there still Ai Er?  
Can't she give birth? As long as Ai  
Er has a baby, what difference is it  
compared to our own baby?” Cui  
Ying Ying lightly smiled while Nami  
nodded from the side.

Those words clearly showed the  
determination of the two and that  
they had staked everything they had  
on Lei Yu. Based on Tenglong  
country's law, a polygamous  
relationship was impossible but  
changing nationalities wasn't  
something difficult. A place that  
allowed this was Africa, so they  
wouldn't regret their decision. Even  
if Lei Yu couldn't accept them for  
now, they will still wait for the day  
he does. This stubborn devotion

had actually touched everyone present.

“Your actions have made me think of someone.” Lei Ba Tian murmured.

Everyone asked in unison: “Who?”

Lei Ba Tian started recalling a sad experience, “Several hundred years ago, my Thunder Rune Sect was the leader of the Immortal World’s five great Sects. Back when we were fighting over the Southern Wild Lands, the Immortal World erupted into chaos. Countless small and larg

e Sects rushed forth in order to get a piece of the treasure. My Thunder Rune Sect had also participated, but

because of my unfilial son developed a relationship with my enemy's daughter, it created a series of calamity for us. In the end, our Thunder Rune Sect deteriorated to this current point.

“So the Thunder Rune Sect used to be one of the five great Sects!”  
Everyone exclaimed in surprise.

Lei Ba Tian smiled in ridicule at himself and then said: “I remember clearly back then, there was a Demon King that came out of the Chaotic Star Sea. The strength of that Demon King was only at the early Soul Splitting stage, but he possessed a very special battle axe and unique martial skill allowing him to stand at the peak where no one was his opponent! Together

with him was a woman, and the Immortal World gave her the title of the Queen of the Southern Wild Lands. Although her strength was weak, the Demon King protected her with his life on the line. That Queen of the Southern Wild Lands was a devil's cultivator, and her purpose of walking the Devil's path was also to wait for her lover's arrival. In order to maintain her youthful looks, she too chose this path. To this day, she must have been waiting for over a thousand years now! In the Immortal World, everyone feared the Wild Land's Demon King and everyone praised the beauty of the Queen. She was basically a goddess and the embodiment of beauty!"

"That man must be really lucky in



order to have such a devoted woman; such a deeply moving story!” Said Cui Ying Ying in sadness.

“Right! And according to legend, the Demon King has a son who is cultivating in the Mortal World who happens to be an ascetic cultivator. In order for that man to find his way to the Immortal World, he deliberately had his son wait in the Mortal World for him.”

“What kind of relationship did the Demon King have with the man? Why would he have his only son stay behind?” Cui Ying Ying asked in surprise.

“Wait a minute...!” Liu Hao’s heart started beating like mad. Everyone

stared at him and noticed Liu Hao was clenching his teeth. He then asked in a trembling voice:

“Sovereign... you’re... you’re saying the Demon King’s son was an ascetic cultivator? And he was in the Mortal World?”

“That’s right, that’s what those people who knew the story had said.” Lei Ba Tian nodded.

“Then what is his son’s name?”  
Asked Liu Hao.

“That I don’t know. In fact, this legend had been passed down through many people so whether it was true or not, I really don’t know. But we do know that the Queen is devoted to a single guy.”

“It shouldn’t be fake... it’s completely true!” Liu Hao said in an excited manner.

“The legend is true? How do you know?” Lei Ba Tian asked in skepticism.

“What is it Liu Hao?” Cui Ying Ying and Nami were both a bit doubtful.

Liu Hao shook Cui Ying Ying and Nami, “Did you two forget about Romon? Romon is an ascetic cultivator! Wasn’t he in the Mortal World solely because he was waiting for master?”

Nami and Cui Ying Ying both felt a buzz in their mind. Although Cui Ying Ying had only seen Romon once, she clearly remembered

things about him. As for Nami, she had never met Romon before but had heard many stories.

“You’re saying the person the Queen had been waiting for over a thousand years... is little Yu?” Lei Ba Tian asked with wide round eyes. Tian Ye who was at the side just stared with a dumbfounded expression.

“It shouldn’t be wrong!” Liu Hao swallowed a few times, “Does that Demon King have a head like a bull’s?”

“That’s right!” Said Lei Ba Tian.

Liu Hao stood up with a bang, “Shit, it’s all true!”

The two beauties were stunned

while Lei Ba Tian sighed in his heart. "What sort of experiences has little Yu encountered? Why does everything seem so miraculous and unbelievable when it comes to him?"

"Sovereign! We have to go to that Southern Wild Lands territory! Tell us, how do we get there?" Liu Hao eagerly asked.

Pointing off in a certain direction, "Straight to the south, everyone knows where it is. During your journey, you can ask anyone and they will be able to point out to you an accurate location."

# Chapter 329: This Daddy Will Go All Out

“Thank you! Sovereign, how about going together with us?” Said Liu Hao in an excited manner.

Lei Ba Tian shook his head with a light smile, “I have to stay here to guard the Sect. Even though it’s a bit boring, our Sect cannot sustain another attack. If I went with you guys, it might take five to six days for a round trip and usually I will never leave the Sect for more than three days time.”

“It’s fine, we’ll go on ahead then!”

Liu Hao glanced at the other three and saw them nod in unison.

Liu Hao made a thought and his ring flashed before Nami and Cui Ying Ying disappeared from their spot.

One was on top of a blade while the other on a sword started rapidly flying towards the southern direction.

In another area.

“Congratulations big brother! You’ve finally reached the Nascent Soul stage!” Lei Yu placed both hands on Nuo Hu’s shoulder in joy.

Nuo Hu had a happy expression on his face, “If it weren’t for cultivating in this castle, I’m afraid I wouldn’t

be able to breakthrough even if given another five years!”

Lei Yu smiled, “Both you and Ai Er have reached the Nascent Soul stage. Who would’ve imagined this could be possible back then? This is too incredible!”

“That’s right!” Nuo Hu then asked: “Little Yu, haven’t you already reached the peak of the Fusion Soul stage already? How come you still haven’t broken through yet?”

Lei Yu was a bit depressed, “I don’t know either. I feel like there’s a power suppressing me so I cannot break through it. I’m currently working really hard on it!”

“Don’t force it. If it doesn’t work,



just stop for a while. Even if your strength stagnates at that stage, I don't wish to see any harm to befall you okay?"

Lei Yu nodded, "Don't worry, I know what to do!"

Three days later, two people were floating at the outer periphery of the Southern Wild Lands.

"This place is the Southern Wild Lands?" Asked Liu Hao as he looked at all the rivers criss-crossing each other.

"It should be right since we're at the most southern area now. And all the people we've met during our journey have mentioned the outer periphery of the Southern Wild

Lands is made up of rivers criss-crossing each other. This has to be the place.” Said Tian Ye as he nodded.

“Let’s keep going and see!” After saying that, the impatient Liu Hao had already flown ahead on top of his sword.

Ever since the Southern Wild Lands got rid of the rule of prohibiting flight, the security had been increased. Minotaur Linos had assigned two of the great commanders to guard the two main territories. Every certain distance would either have guards in the air or on the ground as sentry. Coincidentally, Liu Hao had encountered them.

“This place forbids outsiders from entering, please return where you came from!” A burly guy with an emotionless face coldly said.

Liu Hao frowned, “We are here to look for someone. Is the Demon King present? Oh right, how about Lightning? Is he here?”

“How can any random people meet with the two Lords? I advise you two to quickly leave or else we’ll be forced to kill you. With you two mere Gold Core stage, I’m afraid you bodies will be shattered into nothing!” The burly guy roared as a powerful energy aura crashed into them. The two were having a difficult time resisting and were forced back several meters. The subordinates of the burly guy all

started covering their mouths in laughter.

There were rarely outsiders entering the Southern Wild Lands so

when these two came, they were all naturally curious about this.

“Lightning is my master! I’m here to find my master!” Liu Hao knew he wasn’t the opponent of the burly guy in front of him. Just a simple energy aura had caused Tian Ye and him backwards, clearly showing how powerful his strength was.

Hearing those words, all the Demonic cultivators stopped laughing. That burly guy also became a bit serious and asked: “You say that Lord Lightning is your

master? Do you have any proof?”

“P... proof? How can there be any proof? If you were the son of your mother, what would you do if someone asked you for proof?” Liu Hao had always been blunt like this and didn’t hold back. Tian Ye knew this wouldn’t go good since demonic cultivators had short tempers. Those with a strength disparity would definitely not dare to mess with them, nor would they dare to curse at them. Liu Hao’s words had now caused them trouble; one could even say disastrous trouble!

“You’re courting death! A mere Gold Core stage dares to talk trash in front of me?! Even if you’re the heavenly king’s disciple, I’m still

going to cut you into a thousand pieces!” The burly guy roared. As one of the four great commanders, no one has dared to speak to him like that apart from the Demon King. Of course he would be extremely pissed off being spoken to like that.

After roaring out, the burly guy raised a golden mace. With flick of the mace, a golden light with a powerful energy flew towards Liu Hao and Tian Ye like a wave.

Liu Hao and Tian Ye quickly flew off in different directions and fortunately escaped the strike. But this was just a prelude of the burly guy since he merely waved his weapon and didn't directly issue an attack. Just this simple move made

the faces of Liu Hao and Tian Ye completely change.

The golden mace rotated once and a golden whirlwind shot out straight for Liu Hao. The whirlwind wasn't big and was only about the size of a human body, but no one would doubt its power. As a super expert at the Soul Splitting stage, getting rid of someone at the Gold Core stage was similar to stepping on an insect. The burly guy was only playing around and still hadn't revealed his true strength yet.

"F\*cking bastard!" Liu Hao kept dodging left and right but the whirlwind seemed to have locked onto his body. No matter which direction he went to, the whirlwind would keep following him, yet it

didn't attack him and just continued following!

“Liu Hao, I'll help you!” Tian Ye roared before clapping his hands together. A white light appeared in his palms and slowly condensed into a white orb. He instantly threw the white orb out which collided with the golden whirlwind. Right after that, Tian Ye became dumbfounded!

When his own energy collided into the whirlwind, it was completely swallowed up causing the whirlwind to increase its power but a few levels.

The burly guy coldly sneered while his face will filled with disdain, “Just a simple move and you guys



are so helpless. You actually dare to say you're Lord Lightning's disciple? You're simply living in a dream!"

"Motherf\*cker, this daddy will go all out!" Liu Hao didn't care about falling down and actually grabbed onto the golden sword below his feet. One could hear him roar out: "Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, fifth form!"

A golden light shot out like a meteor and clashed with the whirlwind. A large boom was instantly heard causing the whirlwind to disperse everywhere. The force of explosion causing Liu Hao to fly back several meters before his body started falling. He was then able to quickly step on top

of his sword to stabilize himself before crashing to the ground.

The burly guy stared with wide eyes, “You can actually use our Demon King’s martial skill?! Who are you?!”

All these demonic cultivators were staring with mouths agape. In their whole life, they had only seen their Demon King display his move once but just that once has caused it to be deeply entrenched in their memory. That previous move by Liu Hao was clearly a skill that belonged to the Demon King!

“I already told you but you son of a b\*tch didn’t believe me! There’s also you guys that only laughed in the back! Go ahead and laugh some

more!” Liu Hao floated there with his hands on his hips like a clown that didn’t fear the heavens or the earth. But if he knew this commander was actually a super expert at the Soul Splitting stage, most likely he wouldn’t dare to curse as much as now.

Liu Hao’s identity had been partially confirmed so the burly guy didn’t dare to continue saying anything more. His subordinates didn’t dare to continue laughing either because if this turned out to be true and this kid complained about them, their ending would not be good at all.

“Follow me!” The burly guy didn’t dare to make any more comments. Even if they were Gold Core stage

cultivators and weren't Lei Yu's disciple, he still didn't want to cause any more issues. He then brought Liu Hao and Tian Ye into the depths of the Wild Lands while his subordinates stayed patrolling the area.

# Chapter 330:

## Finally Meeting Again

“Lord Demon King, there’s someone by the name of Liu Hao who says he is Lord Lightning’s disciple. He’s currently waiting outside the main halls.”

Minotaur Linos immediately stood up, “Quickly have him come in!”

The bull-head had heard Lei Yu mention the name Liu Hao before so he was familiar with it. What he couldn’t believe was that Lei Yu’s disciple had reached the Gold Core stage and managed to pass through

the Chaotic Star Sea to get here.

“You are Liu Hao? You are little Yu’s disciple Liu Hao?” The bull-head was acting very warm which lessened his status as Demon King, but he didn’t care one bit.

The burly guy swallowed hard a few times and realized this might be actually true. If the Demon King found out he almost killed this guy, what would happen to him? The burly guy stood to the side completely filled with unease.

Liu Hao was shocked upon seeing the bull-head; is it really a human body with a bull’s head? Isn’t this the bull-head that guards the Palace of Hell? He was thinking this and of course didn’t dare to say those

words out loud. He then smiled, “I am indeed Liu Hao. Do you know where my master is? Is he still here somewhere?”

Seeing how informal Liu Hao was acting, Tian Ye felt cold sweat dripping down his back. He gently pulled Liu Hao’s clothing and kneeled down on one knee, “Greetings to Lord Demon King!”

Liu Hao looked at him and realized he was being rude. Just as he was preparing to kneel down as well, the bull-head strode forth and grabbed onto Liu Hao’s hand. “If little Yu knew his precious disciple had arrived in the Immortal World, wouldn’t he be super happy? Hey dimwit, why aren’t you quickly rushing to the Devil King’s Castle

to tell Silo so he can pass the message onto little Yu?”

“Ahh! Right! Right!” The burly guy wiped the sweat off his forehead and quickly went out. Liu Hao didn’t hold him accountable for his actions was considered him being fortunate today.

Knowing Lei Yu was really here, Liu Hao was so happy that he almost cried. But he endured; he was going to wait until he saw Lei Yu before expressing his emotions. He then started chatting about random subjects with this weird looking bull-headed monster.

“You brat, it’s really you!” Lei Yu cried out emotionally as Nuo Hu, Ai Er, and Romon came striding in



from outside.

Upon hearing that voice, Liu Hao trembled before turning around. When talking about Liu Hao and Lei Yu's relationship, they were actually very close to each other. If it weren't for that fateful day when Liu Hao was taking a dump and meeting Lei Yu, the series of encounters would have never happened and they wouldn't be having today's reunion.

Liu Hao had transformed from his previous fat self to the current somewhat handsome guy. This was all Lei Yu's credit. And the current strength he possessed was forced out of him one step at a time by Lei Yu. Lei Yu had showered upon him a grace that was as high as the

heavens! The two of them were master and disciple in name, but they pretty much treated each other as brothers.

“Master.” Liu Hao clenched his fists as saliva unconsciously gathered in his mouth. After continuously swallowing a few times, his eyes were also turning red. He trembled as he breathed before kneeling with a “plop” on the ground. “I’ve missed you! I’ve really missed you!”

Lei Yu dabbed a tear from the corner of his eye and quickly strode forth to support Liu Hao. “Stop acting like a girl and talking about mushy stuff like missing me!” Right after that and contrary to everyone’s expectation, h

e too hugged Liu Hao. “I missed you like crazy too!”

“Master!”

Lei Yu was in a somewhat better condition while tears only dripped down. As for Liu Hao, he had already started crying out loud. The current scene caused everyone to have a lump in their throat as tears formed in their eyes as well.

Minotaur Linos didn’t know but others understood that Liu Hao and Lei Yu had a very close relationship like brothers. How can others not be moved from seeing this sudden reunion?

Nuo Hu cleared his nose as his voice seemed to be an octave

higher. “Liu Hao, you only remember your master and not about us?”

Liu Hao let go of Lei Yu and gulped down some phlegm before sobbing a couple more times. A bear hug was unavoidable but Nuo Hu’s figure was huge now making Liu Hao unable to give him a complete hug.

Lei Yu felt gratified because his own disciple listened to his words and cultivated diligently. Attaining his current strength was all due to his own hard work. Even though it was a rather absurd situation when those two met, everything after created memories that would never be forgotten and was always fresh on his mind. For Liu Hao to have

gained immortality today was a huge joy to Lei Yu!

After letting go of Nuo Hu, Liu Hao turned to face Ai Er and was a bit surprised. He then choked back a sob and said: “Master’s wife is even prettier now and seems to be different from before!”

“Liu Hao, you haven’t changed one bit and are still so nonsensical.” Ai Er’s eyes were also red which meant she had previously been crying as well.

Liu Hao turned around, “Master, can I give master’s wife a hug?”

Lei Yu didn’t say anything and Ai Er stepped up and hugged him. Liu Hao’s eyes widened, “Wow, it’s very

fragrant! Master's wife, are you using perfume? The smell is very unique!"

"Uh..."

"You brat, you're always spouting nonsense!" Lei Yu half cried and half lectured him."

"Brother Lightning, congratulations on the reunion of master and disciple!" A familiar voice was heard behind him. Lei Yu turned around and shocked because he only noticed Liu Hao prior and didn't even notice Tian Ye at all.

"Brother Tian Ye! How come you're here as well?" Lei Yu asked in shock.

"I coincidentally met Liu Hao and

then came here together with him. We were waiting at the Thunder Rune Sect for two years and happened to find out you were here, so we immediately set off for this place.” Said Tian Ye with a smile.

“How come you guys were at the Thunder Rune Sect?” Asked Lei Yu with surprise.

Liu Hao and Tian Ye started explaining everything in detail to Lei Yu. Once they arrived at the part about finding out about the Southern Wild Lands, everyone was stunned.

Liu Hao then touched his nose, “Master, I also brought them along with me!” After waving his hand with the storage ring, a sly look

appeared on Liu Hao's face. Nuo Hu frantically raised his hand to glance at the ring on his own finger.

"Did Ying Ying and Nami really come?!" Ai Er asked happily while Lei Yu didn't say a word.

"That's of course." Liu Hao stepped backwards a few steps and made a thought. Two beams of light then shot out from the storage ring Liu Hao was wearing. The beams of light landed on the ground and two girls in modern clothing stood there staring blankly at everyone.

Everyone couldn't help but gasp as their stared wide eyes at two familiar faces. Lei Yu also just stared and didn't know what to say.



The two were none other than Cui Ying Ying and Nami who had been yearning for Lei Yu night and day. Once they saw everyone in front of them, those two were also staring in a daze. This sudden meeting would make anyone freeze and have difficulty reacting.

“Nami, am I dreaming? How come I’m staring at him right now?” Cui Ying Ying’s eyes didn’t leave the man in front of her while she asked Nami next to her.

“I don’t know but I also see him too!” Nami used her hands to cover her mouth but it couldn’t block her shocked expression.

# Chapter 331: Sisters Of The Mortal World

“Ying Ying! Nami!” Ai Er ran up and hugged them both. Those two finally realized they were not dreaming and everything was real before them!

“Ai Er! Is it really you? Is it really you?” Asked Cui Ying Ying as her voice choked back a sob.

“It’s me, it’s really me!” There was no need to ask those questions and respond to them, but when humans were shocked, it’s not strange for them to start doubting themselves.

Lei Yu heavily exhaled as he looked at all these important people in his life that he couldn't live without in front of him. His heart was already beating out of control and the joy he was experiencing felt like it wanted to come out of his throat. Lei Yu didn't know what words to use to describe his current emotions; he only knew he was so excited to the point he couldn't speak at all.

“Lei Yu! After millions of miles, I finally get to see you again!” Cui Ying Ying's eyes were red but she was holding herself back not allowing the tears to drip out. She slowly raised her jade like hand out in front of her like she wanted to shake hands with Lei Yu.

Lei Yu pursed his lips and pointed at Cui Ying Ying's hand, "Is our relationship only worth this much?" After saying that, Lei Yu opened up his arms with a light smile.

Cui Ying Ying couldn't hold back anymore and rushed into Lei Yu's embrace. She didn't care that there were people around and started crying. A beautiful woman crying was something that was the most difficult for one to endure, and Lei Yu didn't know how to comfort her.

She was completely expressing her emotions and no one was able to stop her, so one could only wait until everything subsided. Standing off to the side, Nami's tears were coming down non-stop because she too wanted to experience such a

tender embrace. Ever since that night in the hospital room between them two, Nami's love for Lei Yu had become something beyond her control. She had always buried that emotion deep in her heart because she felt she wasn't qualified and too insignificant. She knew Lei Yu's feelings to the Kou people and felt that since she was one as well, she wasn't qualified to be with him. But when she became close to all of Lei Yu's friends, she realized no one looked at her coldly, no one looked down on her, and no one despised her.

Following the flow of time, Nami's love towards Lei Yu could not be held back anymore and that's why she came to the Immortal World with Liu Hao. Today, she finally saw

the person she had been dreaming of day in and day out. Even though she couldn't get that tender embrace, standing far away and looking at him was good enough for her.

After a long time, Cui Ying Ying finally let go of Lei Yu. Seeing such a beautiful woman distraught would make anyone's heart shatter. Lei Yu then smiled, "Don't cry, you're looking at me now, right?"

Cui Ying Ying exhaled while trembling and didn't care about the people present. She then yelled out: "Lei Yu! I love you! I love you! I want to be together with you! Even if I can only stand behind you and see your back, I'll be happy with that! I know your heart only

has Ai Er, and I also know you aren't someone that plays around with multiple girls. But I just hope to be able to say what's in my heart... it's been over ten years now! The feelings I have for you have never changed!" For a woman to be able to say those words out in public, one could see how much in love she was in with the person in front of her. Just this courage alone was enough for everyone to admire her.

Lei Yu's eyes landed on Ai Er and saw the latter smile while nodding her

head. Lei Yu's heart was extremely grateful. He raised his hand and rubbed the tears from Cui Ying Ying's face. Her face was very

smooth. Even though she was a woman in her thirties already, she still maintained it very well. Her skin felt like a baby's causing Lei Yu not daring to exert any strength.

As if she had been poked, Cui Ying Ying stood there stunned as her body trembled and wanted to say something. Lei Yu smiled, "We'll just never separate from each other anymore okay? There's no need to cry."

That tone was so warm and gentle that she almost became drunk from it. Cui Ying Ying felt like she was about to melt! It's been over ten years! Being able to hear those words, even if she were to die right now, she would still be willing!



“I didn’t hear anything wrong right?” Cui Ying Ying recovered and secretly glanced over at Ai Er and noticed her smiling. Only after that did she silently exhale. “What nonsense are you talking about?! This one was just getting something off her chest! What never separate ever again are you talking about?”

Lei Yu laughed. This woman that had always done everything for the sake of him was really too adorable.

“Ying Ying, quit pretending. Everyone knows what those words brother Yu said meant!” Ai Er stuck her tongue out before running over, “I’ve already forced him to give you and Nami a spousal status! You go ask him if it’s true or not!”

“Ai Er, you...” Cui Ying Ying’s eyes widened while Nami to the side felt a buzzing noise in her mind.

“Cough... cough...!” Liu Hao forced himself a cough a few times. “Such an ambiguous scene, can’t you guys save it for the bridal chambers? Look at you all! You’ve completely forgotten about us important figures!”

Ai Er and Lei Yu and everyone present started laughing while only Cui Ying Ying and Nami lowered their heads with a blush. These two women looked like young girls who had just fallen in love and were pulling at the corner of their own clothing.

“What’s going on that everyone’s so

happy about?" A voice like a wind chime came from outside the main hall. Everyone turned around while Nami, Cui Ying Ying, Liu Hao, and Tian Ye stood there completely stunned.

A beautiful goddess appeared in front of everyone wearing the same clothes she usually wore. She still wore white silk clothing wrapped around her upper and lower body. The white silk was embellished with golden accessories and below her white neck showed people a partial view of her jade white chest that would cause any man to drool. Her thin waist would make any woman jealous, and her two long white symmetrical legs were completely exposed for all to see. She wasn't wearing any shoes and

her bare feet looked like white jade as well. Her beautiful eyes landed on Cui Ying Ying and Nami which made her a bit surprised. “What two beautiful girls we have here!”

“Your Majesty!” The bull-head off to the side made a slight salute.

Ai Er smiled and said: “Big sister! Let me introduce them to you!” She grabbed onto Telephassa and pulled her towards Cui Ying Ying and Nami.

“They are my good sisters in the Mortal World and they came together here with Liu Hao!”

“They came from the Mortal World? How come I can’t sense that they’re cultivators?” Telephassa

asked in confusion.

“It was I who brought them here!”  
Liu Hao cupped his hands and said  
in a goofy manner.

“You are...?”

“I am master’s disciple!”

Lei Yu knocked on Liu Hao’s head,  
“You retard! What you just said was  
equivalent of not saying anything!”  
He then smiled at Telephassa, “This  
is my dumbass disciple who had  
broken through to the Gold Core  
stage. He coincidentally found out I  
was here and came.”

After the introductions, Telephassa  
realized those that were in love  
with Lei Yu weren’t just her and Ai  
Er, and that there were two more

girls.

“Your fortune with love is truly not bad! With so many beauties devoted to you, you must have done something great in your past life!” Telephassa covered her mouth with a giggle.

“That’s right, even I am envious to the extreme!” Liu Hao sneered.

“You dare to keep spouting nonsense? Just watch me knock your head to mush!” Lei Yu made a gesture like he was about to smack him, scaring Liu Hao into dodging. This made everyone present start to laugh out loud. Even the embarrassed Cui Ying Ying and Nami started laughing as well.

# Chapter 332: A Peerless Blade

According to the customs of the Mortal World, having a dinner with newly arrived guests was a must. The dinner that night was very luxurious and very lively. Nami and Cui Ying Ying gradually became familiar with Telephassa, Minotaur Linos and others. They started having conversations that would never end. Seeing this scene, Lei Yu felt very happy because as long as they all got along well with each other, this would save a lot of trouble for him in the future.

Seeing these four ultimate beauties, a surge of emotion appeared in Lei

Yu's heart. What did people pursue in their lives?

Fame? That wasn't something Lei Yu bothered with since he often tried to hide his own identity.

Money? This was similar to dirt to Lei Yu since there was no difference to having it or not.

There was no need to even mention power and position because Lei Yu didn't have a single trace of interest in it. Back in the Mortal World's Tenglong country, Chairman Lin had persistently asked that he create his own army group but he kept refusing. Just from that, one can see Lei Yu didn't care about power and position. He was a person that didn't like to be restricted and preferred his



freedom.

While these were going through his mind, he couldn't help but think of one thing that caused a pressure in his heart. The conditions of the Devil King's soul remnant was simply too difficult to achieve. But in order to expel the dangerous green energy from his body, there's nothing he could do. Otherwise, even though he had all these beauties in front of him, he wouldn't have the fortune to enjoy them!

"What's wrong master?" Asked Liu Hao while he shoved a large piece of roast meat into his mouth.

"Nothing, I was just thinking of something. Liu Hao, how much

have you grasped from the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique?” Lei Yu casually asked as he glanced at Liu Hao who looked like he had been starving for over a year.

After quickly swallowing, Liu Hao used his hands to wipe his mouth. “I’ve already fully grasped the first six forms and can easily release the first set of combination.”

Lei Yu nodded in satisfaction.

“What about the cultivation method I gave you? How’s that going?”

Without thinking, Liu Hao replied: “I’m stuck at the peak of the [Detachment] stage but cannot breakthrough no matter what. I have no clue what’s going on.”

Lei Yu lightly smiled, “It looks you brat, have really worked hard cultivating these past few years. At least you’re worthy of my mentorship... here, take this!” With a wave, a book appeared in Lei Yu’s hand. This book was considered Lei Yu’s ultimate treasure and he has never brought it out in front of anyone before, yet he still gave it to Liu Hao without hesitation.

Liu Hao glanced at the book strangely, “Heavenly Thunder Manual latter half? Master, this...” Liu Hao knew Lei Yu was treating this as something extremely precious. Not to mention the original copy, even a hand copied one would not have been brought out yet it was easily placed in his grasp.

“Take it; I’ve already memorized everything inside. This is all I can give you now. I have the same words for you; everyone will depend on your own hard work!” Lei Yu patted his shoulders while saying this.

Liu Hao pursed his lips and looked like he was going to cry. Lei Yu then glared at him, “If you dare to start crying, I’m going to take the book back!”

“Eh? Fine, I’m not crying! Not crying at all!” Liu Hao said this with a smile but the tear in his eye couldn’t help coming out a bit.

Ai Er and Telephassa wanted to see the livelihood of the ordinary c

itizens of the city so they grabbed Cui Ying Ying and Nami out with them. On the main streets, all the demonic cultivators were staring with mouths agape and drool pooling beneath their feet. These four beauties that would cause any man to smile in their dreams all belonged to a single person.

“Brother Liu Hao! My eyes couldn’t recognize Mt. Tai so I hope you can forgive me for my previous offense!” A burly guy holding two bowls of alcohol came over to where Lei Yu and Liu Hao were at. Liu Hao turned to look, “Shit! If it weren’t for how powerful my precious blade was, I would have probably been played to death by you!” But there was a smile on his face, “It was just a

misunderstanding, don't worry about it."

"Good! Brother Liu Hao is truly a magnanimous person. Come, cheers!" After saying that, one of the bowls was shoved into Liu Hao's hand and they both downed the alcohol.

"Lord Lightning, brother Liu, you guys keep chatting while I won't be bothering you anymore!" Lei Yu nodded with a smile while Liu Hao waved his hand before the burly commander left.

"You mentioned something about a precious blade? Also, I'm curious about a matter: how did you know the path towards the Immortal Realm? I remember back then I

have never told you these things.”  
Lei Yu asked in a puzzled manner.

“Master, you must have forgotten about something.” Liu Hao narrowed his eyes with a sly smile.

“What something?”

“It’s that passionate night you had with Nami in the hospital.”

Lei Yu felt extremely awkward as he knocked on Liu Hao’s brain, “Why are you bringing this up? My body was beyond my control that time!”

Liu Hao rubbed his head, “Did you forget that you left something behind in Nami?”

Lei Yu’s eyes widened as he gasped. After swallowing a few times,

“You’re not implying that Nami already has my child right?”

“Uh...” Liu Hao froze for a bit before starting laughing for half the day before finally stopping. “Master, you surely have a good imagination. After that night with Nami, you went to the U.S. for over a year. If she was with child, wouldn’t you be notified of it already?”

This manly man Lei Yu couldn’t help start blushing a bit. “Then you’re talking about...” He then suddenly remembered, “You’re talking about the Spiritual Bead of Longevity?”

“That’s it. These past several years, it appears that the Spiritual Bead of Longevity has recovered inside



Nami's body. More than once, it would undergo some dramatic changes and almost take her life. If it weren't for me taking care of it, most likely you'll never be able to see her again." Said Liu Hao.

"How could I have forgotten about this?! I'm really muddleheaded!" Lei Yu slapped his head and then continued: "What about now? Are there any more side effects from the Spiritual Bead of Longevity?"

"You do really care about your own wife."

"Less bullshit, just tell me quickly!" Lei Yu raised his hand about to smack down causing Liu Hao to quickly reply: "None, none at all! It's already out of her body now."

Lei Yu then asked in confusion:  
“Then where is it right now?”

Liu Hao stood up and waved his hand and a steel blade appeared. The blade was glowing yellow and had a length of 1.6 meters. The handle was about 20: 30 centimeters and had some strange carvings that looked like dragon’s scale. On the blade portion was an eye catching yellow jewel embedded into it. For such a fine blade to appear caused everyone around to glance over in surprise.

“It’s really a good blade!” Lei Yu couldn’t help exclaim.

“Not bad huh? Master, you don’t know but it was gifted to me by an old senior. He was also the one to

tell me how to extract the Spiritual Bead of Longevity from inside Nami. And this yellow jewel is exactly it.”

He didn’t pay attention to it because he was so surprised, but now Lei Yu suddenly sensed a familiar aura exuding in the area. How could he forget this familiar aura that had accompanied him for such a long time?

“Do you know who this old senior is? And what does he look like?”  
Asked Lei Yu.

# Chapter 333: An Open Ended Discussion

Liu Hao shook his head, “I don’t know who he is. His face had a full beard and looked like a Tenglong citizen, but his hair was blonde and he had a large body. He says he’s a fellow cultivator, has an imposing aura and says that he’s your friend. That’s the only reason I would keep this blade since it’s not too bad, and I really like it a lot.” Liu Hao waved the blade around and it was clear he was going through the motions of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique but didn’t release any energy. The wind from the blade still managed

to shatter a bowl on the table, scaring Liu Hao into immediately storing the blade.

“You’ve really received a treasure this time!” Lei Yu was saying this as he started going through his memory of all the people he knew. But after a while, he still didn’t know anyone that had that appearance and knew so much about the Spiritual Bead of Longevity.

Liu Hao smiled, “So master, do you like it? If you like it, I can give it to you!”

Lei Yu smiled and waved his hands, “Save it for yourself because it will be good for you. It’s best that you take it out when you cultivate

because it can give you twice the benefits in half the time. Oh right, that ring of yours belongs to the Pope right?”

“That’s right.” Liu Hao stretched out his hand, “That Pope was making up all excuses in front of me saying how this was the Vatican’s holy item and how he cannot gift it to others. I scolded him for a while and even told him I was an ultimate existence that had surpassed the Sixth Order Warrior. After that, he didn’t even dare let out a fart and scuttled towards me to give it to me. Being a strong expert is so awesome!” Liu Hao’s expression looked just like a person that had gotten a prostitute and someone else was paying for him.

“You brat!” Lei Yu laughed and yelled at him at the same time. When it came to the Vatican’s Pope, Lei Yu didn’t really have good feelings towards him. They did become allies in the end but towards a person with a hypocritical personality, Lei Yu preferred not to be associated with him in the long run. For the Pope to make such a contribution wasn’t a big deal while on the other hand, Lei Yu wanted to meet the person who gave Liu Hao that precious blade so he could thank him personally.

“What did you name your blade?”  
Lei Yu asked.

“I gave it an imposing name called Qilin Blade!”

“Qilin Blade? Black Tortoise Shield?  
Interesting... really interesting...  
haha!”

As the banquet came to an end, the four beauties also came back from the city carrying many small and large bags. After seeing these four like sisters and getting along very well with each other, Lei Yu let out a sigh of relief.

“Little Yu, come with me.”

Telephassa called out Lei Yu’s name before she went towards her bedchambers. Lei Yu glanced at the remaining three with a weird look but then quickly followed Telephassa.

“What is it?” Lei Yu asked as he sat atop of Telephassa’s bed.



Gently holding onto Lei Yu's hand, this was the only time Telephassa would give such a gentle look. Each time Lei Yu encountered this gaze, he would become drowned in those eyes of her.

"I want to discuss something with you." Said Telephassa.

"Discuss about what? Just say it." Lei Yu asked in a serious manner.

After thinking for a bit, her fragrant lips slightly parted: "What are you going to do with Ying Ying and Nami?"

"Do with them? What do you mean do with them?" Lei Yu thought this matter had already been decided on but this clearly wasn't what T

elephassa was asking about.

“Why are you so muddleheaded? They both will slowly age and several decades later, they will even die. What are you going to do about it?”

Being blinded with joy, Lei Yu didn't even think of this matter. Only after being reminded by Telephassa did he come to a realization. “I think if we have them start cultivating right now, it might be a bit too late. And it's unrealistic to forcefully inject internal energy into them like what happened to Ai Er, right?”

“I cultivated the devil's path because of you and have paid the most difficult price for a woman. You should know this right?”

Telephassa tenderly asked.

Lei Yu nodded with a frown, "What you want to say is to have them two cultivate the devil's path as well?"

"That's what I was thinking. It was them two that brought it up to me and it seemed like they were very resolute in their decision. That's why I wanted to discuss this matter with you."

Lei Yu was deep in thought for a while before saying: "I'm afraid they'll regret their decision in the future. You should know that in the Mortal World, how tragic it is if an old couple dies without any offspring sending them off. And for someone to have such a long life, eventually it would become even

more painful in the future.”

Speaking to this point, Lei Yu couldn't help feel some pain in his heart as he thought about his own father. He recalled the longing gaze of his father of wanting him to return to the family and the disappointed look each time he would leave. When it came to his brother of a different mother, he was never in Tenglong country so Lei Yu had no feelings towards him at all. Without him and his brother and only his own clan members, Lei Yu could see how lonely his father would feel.

“What's going on?” Seeing Lei Yu's face filled with sadness, Telephassa gently caressed his cheeks and asked with concern.

With a light smile, Lei Yu replied: “I was thinking of my father. If I can return to the Mortal World, I believe I will forget all the previous matters I had with the clan and at least call him father one more time.”

Telephassa nodded, “I believe you will be capable of taking care of everything.”

After a long sigh, Lei Yu felt fortunate that all his women were so understanding. “Regarding Ying Ying and Nami cultivating the devil’s path, let’s not decide on it yet okay? It’s never too late once they decide to traverse that path. Even if they become old and not pretty anymore, I still won’t despise them. Can we wait until I take care

of my matters first?”

“You are always unwilling to tell me what matter you have to take care of while their situation cannot be delayed continuously. You must keep this discussion at the forefront, okay?”

After pinching Telephassa’s chin, Lei Yu lightly smiled: “Don’t worry, I understand.”

Lei Yu lay down on the big soft bed before thinking carefully through each matter he had to do.

Telephassa had left the room to tell Cui Ying Ying and Nami about Lei Yu’s thoughts.

The reason Lei Yu couldn’t make up his mind wasn’t because of Cui

Ying Ying and Nami cultivating the devil's path. The real reason was Lei Yu wasn't sure if he could accomplish the Devil King's request and he had no clue how dangerous it was. If he actually dies in the process, then it'll mean the emotional support of the four women will have disappeared. Lei Yu has never been selfish and has always thought of others before himself, that's why he couldn't come to a decision with this matter.

-----

“What did he say?” Seeing Telephassa come out, Cui Ying Ying dragged Nami over and anxiously asked. The thing Nami and her were afraid of the most was Lei Yu minding that they wouldn't be able

to have babies.

“Little Yu said he needs to think it over and it’s not because of the baby issue. Give him some time. As one of his lovers, you two must have faith in his ability in solving issues, okay?” Telephassa was over a thousand years older than them so what she said, Cui Ying Ying and Nami would nod in agreement.



# Chapter 334:

## Dancing With Joy

After finding an isolated place, Lei Yu sat down cross-legged. Those that were currently cultivating here were Romon, Kalchas, Little Ha, and Mo Bei Li. Lei Yu didn't dare to directly look at that little yaksha because of what she was wearing. He really couldn't understand if that girl understood the meaning of being shy.

Lei Yu gave up the dream that every man: sleeping together with the four beauties. He came back to the Devil King's Castle because he felt some slight changes inside his body. If he didn't guess wrong,

perhaps he was about to make a breakthrough!

After lightly breathing out, Lei Yu's mind started to calm down. But this wasn't an easy matter because the previous view of Mo Bei Li's exposed parts was difficult to get rid of. Only after a few more deep breaths was he able to toss it to the back of his mind.

Lei Yu activated his internal energy to run for a full cycle before he could make the energy flow at its optimum condition. It was only at this state that he can attempt to break through the peak that has trapped him for over two years.

A portion of the green energy had come out and followed behind Lei

Yu's internal energy as a protector. Lei Yu used to depend on this energy but now it was different, there was even some hate towards it. Unfortunately he couldn't get rid of it and can only allow it to do what it felt like.

“Master! Master!”

A girl's melodious voice was heard in Lei Yu's mind. He then asked internally: “Xue Er, what is it? How is your recuperation so far?”

Back then in order to pull Lei Yu back from the brink of death, Xue Er used up almost all her energy to close Lei Yu's wound. This caused her spirit to almost disappear. Xue Er's main ability was basically to get rid of impurities while Lei Yu

absorbed spiritual energy. Healing his wounds was just a secondary ability, which was why she had used up so much power. It was only after all these years did she finally recover. Lei Yu had been very concerned with Xue Er ever since she had saved his life, and he had entered the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost multiple times just to check on her.

“Master, your improvement speed is really too shocking. In less than ten years, you’re almost at the Soul Splitting stage!” Xu Er appeared extremely excited.

“Your credit is not small regarding my improvement speed.” Lei Yu responded happily.

“This is great!” Xue Er seemed to be even more excited than Lei Yu who was about to make a break through, causing him to feel that it was a bit strange.

“Why are you so excited with me increasing my strength this time?” Lei Yu asked in confusion.

Xue Er’s voice seemed a bit disappointed, “Could it be that master had forgotten my words from back then?”

“Your words back then?” Lei Yu racked his brains and finally realized it! In an apologetic tone: “Look at my dull brain, I had actually forgotten such an important matter!”

“You finally remember?” Xue Er happily asked.

“That’s right. You told me that as long as I reached the Soul Splitting stage and can split my true body and soul apart, you can borrow one of my bodies to appear outside the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, right?”

“That’s right! That’s right!” Xue Er’s elegant demeanor had disappeared and was replaced by her excited appearance. She had always been dreaming of personally seeing the outside world. Although this snow white world was very beautiful, she was surrounded by the loneliness it entailed. Now that she was finally about to get her chance, how can she not be excited?

Back then, her old master was attacked

after having just finished creating the bracelet or else she would have already appeared in reality.

“Don’t worry, as long as I make my breakthrough, I will immediately let you out!”

“Thank you master!”

Without speaking anymore, Lei Yu’s cycle of internal energy had reached its last phase. Once it returned to his dantian would be the time for his breakthrough. Lei Yu had experienced this process many times but he had always failed. This time there were clear changes in his body so Lei Yu was completely

confident in this attempt at breaking through!

As his internal energy got closer to his dantian, Lei Yu took several forceful breaths. His Spiritual Bracelet of Frost then shot out two beams of white energy that dove into his body. Whether Lei Yu was successful or not in his breakthrough, the process will still damage his meridians somewhat so Xue Er was preparing to heal it. Even though she too has underwent the experience with Lei Yu many times, she was never tired of it and her confidence actually increased one try after the next.

Lei Yu clenched his jaws as his internal energy stayed in the last meridian condensing into a ball. He



was preparing it for a final explosive rush to the end point.

“Ready... go forth!”

Shouting that command in his mind, the condensed purple internal energy was like a runaway horse as it madly rushed towards the infant body floating in his dantian. A sound of explosion happened inside his body before Lei Yu sprayed out a mouthful of blood. He still hadn't opened his eyes at this point and was concentrating even harder as the white energy continuously healed his damaged meridians.

Upon the impact of Lei Yu's internal energy, the infant body started shining brightly. The purple

head and the four different colored limbs started giving off a dazzling glow while the entire infant body kept trembling as if something was about to burst out from within.

Suddenly!

That infant body had actually opened its eyes!

Lei Yu was ecstatic but it was still too early to be happy. After suppressing his joyous emotions, Lei Yu once again started breathing deeply in and out. He then used the last trace of internal energy left in the meridian to drill into the infant body.

Instantly!

The infant body started screaming

in a mournful manner. The fog surrounding the infant body started dispersing and the lightning that had been swimming around now started striking at the body.

After trembling once again, an illusory image started separating from the infant's body and flew out from Lei Yu's body. Lei Yu felt his stomach feel empty and opened his eyes. Upon opening them, he was now looking at a pair of eyes that seemed to be smiling back at him.

“Success? Did I succeed?”

After carefully observing this person's appearance, it was practically the same as him. Except that this person's skin had a faint purple tinge to it and his eyes gave

off a faint purple glow. And of course the main difference was this person was completely naked exposing himself for all to see.

Lei Yu attempted to control this body with his thought and the body had actually moved according to his wishes!

“I’ve succeeded!” Lei Yu couldn’t endure the happiness anymore and screamed out in joy. Romon, Little Ha, Kalchas, and Mo Bei Li all looked over. Upon seeing a person identical to Lei Yu flailing its arms and dancing in joy, they were all dumbfounded by the scene.

This purple colored person twisting and dancing around looked rather embarrassing. Its naked body had

stopped mid motion with its arms above its head and its butt pointing in a strange angle. Lei Yu started blushing as the lightning brand on his right arm flashed and the purple person gradually turned illusory before disappearing.

The four of them finally recovered their senses and had an expression on their face like they wanted to laugh out loud but didn't dare to. They all got up and walked over to him so Lei Yu too quickly got up.

“Little Yu, you don't have to be THAT excited right?” Romon laughed as he patted Lei Yu's shoulder.

Lei Yu grinned, “I was just lost in the moment of joy! Heh heh...”

“Congratulations to Lord Lightning for successfully breaking through and reaching the Soul Splitting stage!” Kalchas said with a bow.

Lei Yu smiled, “Thank you! Thank you!”

“Brother Yu!” Mo Bei Li skipped over and grabbed onto Lei Yu’s arm, “Your body is not bad but your dancing isn’t very good!”

“Uh...”

# Chapter 335: The Three Generals

The first person Lei Yu had to relay this news to wasn't his loved ones but the one he currently hated the most: the Devil King!

He strode back to the room with the wooden door and a ghost image appeared exuding a green light.

“Not bad, you have actually reached the Soul Splitting stage in such a short amount of time.” The Devil King said in an enigmatic tone.

Lei Yu coldly harrumphed, “Enough with the bullshit, I only want to get rid of the disgusting energy that

you've left inside my body as soon as possible!"

The Devil King coldly laughed, "There's no need to be in such a rush. All you need to do is to follow the cultivation method I imparted to you, and it shouldn't take too long for you to reach the late Soul Splitting stage. By that time, you can bring my remnant soul along with you to find my true body and we won't owe each other anything."

"We have to make it clear that it's you that owe me!" Leaving these words, Lei Yu immediately turned around and left the small room. He then calmed himself down and began to cultivate once more.

The floating skull stared towards



the wooden door, “You ignorant brat! Once we find my true body, the benefits you’ll gain would be unimaginable!”

Only when Lei Yu consolidated his new power did he finally stand up to leave the castle.

“Little Yu, when do you plan on leaving to take care of that so called important matter of yours?” Asked Telephassa.

Lei Yu lightly smiled, “It shouldn’t take too long, probably within these two years. Once I return and Ying Ying and Nami haven’t changed their minds, then we’ll reconsider having them cultivate the devil’s path.”

Those two didn't get to chat much longer before everyone started arriving at the main hall. The bull-head was the first to happily say: "Little Yu, I heard that you made a breakthrough!"

Lei Yu replied with a face full of smiles, "That's right; I just broke through earlier today."

"Master, you are truly too awesome! I wonder how long it'll take me for me to reach your level?!" Liu Hao had a slight pout while mumbling at the side.

"As long as you work hard on cultivating, this is just a matter of time before it will happen."

Ai Er's face didn't look good, and

Ying Ying and Nami were the same. Lei Yu noticed this and asked: “What’s going on with you three? You’re not happy because I made a breakthrough?”

Cui Ying Ying was the first who couldn’t hold back and asked: “I heard elder sister say you have to leave?”

Hearing these words, a lot of people were surprised. Bull-head and Telephassa already knew about it, but Nuo Hu, Liu Hao, Tian Ye, Tai Lao and the rest had no clue.

“There’s something very important that I have to take care of. If I don’t do it, it’s possible... it’s possible that the future me may not be myself.” Lei Yu didn’t want to explain

everything in detail because he didn't want his friends and family to worry. But there were times when some explanation had to be given, even if it was a little bit.

"I have no clue what you meant by that." Said Cui Ying Ying.

"You will understand in the future and I won't be leaving for the time being. Once my strength reaches the late Soul Splitting stage is when I'll take my leave. Once I return, we will all sit down and discuss that issue!" Lei Yu was inferring to the devil path's cultivation.

Listening to Lei Yu's words, everyone was clear that his matter was rather important and it had to be c

ompleted.

“Master! How about I go with you?”  
Liu Hao asked.

“No!” Lei Yu shook his head, “Your strength is only at the Gold Core stage so it’s best that you stay here and cultivate.”

“What about me?” Romon was already at the late Nascent Soul stage. When it came to a one on one fight, Romon could pretty much go against someone at the early Fusion Soul stage. After all, he was an ascetic cultivator. In the entire Immortal Realm, there was only Romon who chose that path and has managed to reach such a high level.

Lei Yu once again shook his head, “That won’t work; I don’t want any of my friends to encounter the danger that I might meet.”

“Little Yu.” The bull-head cleared his throat. “How about I go take care of whatever matter it is that you need to deal with? You should know that my current spiritual energy is undergoing its own conversion so there’s no need for me to cultivate and I only need to let it run its course. Therefore if your matter is really that problematic, you should let me accompany you and not keep refusing us.”

“If you left, then the strongest person in the Southern Wild Lands will only be Telephassa. Her

strength is only at the Boundary Transition stage which is just like the Void Immortal. If the Void Sect manages to find out our relationship and knows that we both left, there's no guarantee that he wouldn't utilize an all out offense. By that time, even though he may not be able to break through to this place, do you really want so many of your citizens and subordinates to die?" Lei Yu's words made the bull-head silent, and he wasn't even done yet. Lei Yu continued: "Others may not know your mission but how could I not know? Telephassa is your main objective, so don't fail the expectations of Ares!"

"As your friend, I can't even share a piece of your burden... I truly

deserve death!” The bull-head stomped his foot and the main hall started shaking. Everyone was silent and the only noise one could hear were the marching steps of the guards from the outside.

Three people glanced at each other and nodded in unison.

“I..”

“I...”

“I...”

“We are willing to accompany Lord Lightning!” From that chorus of voices, everyone’s eyes landed on the trio and a smile broke on their face.

“You guys...”



“Lord Lightning, we are the left and right hands of the Lord Demon King and her Majesty the Queen. Let us replace the two emperors in accompanying you on your journey. One, we can lessen their worry and two, this will make Lord Demon King feel less conflicted in his heart.” The one that spoke in the lead was Golden Tiger, and beside him were Tai Lao and Hei Feng.

“That’s right! How come we didn’t think of this? Even though they can’t help you by much, at least I will worry less with them by your side!” Bull-head said with a smile.

“Little Yu, stop declining this anymore. Since the three Generals are so sincere in their actions, you should agree to their request.”

Assented Telephassa.

Lei Yu thought for a bit and couldn't think of a reason to reject them. Out of these three Generals, the strongest was at the late Soul Splitting stage and the rest were at the mid Soul Splitting stages. With such a show up of strength all at once, the Immortal Realm would definitely shake from seeing this. Lei Yu nodded, "Then I will first thank the three Generals!"

"No need to be so courteous!"

Thus the discussion came to a conclusion. Lei Yu didn't explain or want to explain what was going on in detail. Humans were selfish creatures and Lei Yu didn't want his women and his fellow brothers to

know he had a strange energy inside him and all his fortuitous encounters were due to this energy. Although he knew they wouldn't care about this, he still didn't want them exposed to this knowledge.

One thing Lei Yu didn't know was that the only reason he was selected and gained the Devil King's energy was because of his awakening. That fateful day when the heavenly lightning struck his body while he was falling off the cliff and awoken his brand; that was the time when the green energy appeared right afterwards. If it wasn't because of that lightning, most likely none of the other fortuitous things would have happened to Lei Yu.

After the decision was made, the

crowd was able to relax a bit. And through Lei Yu's request, Tian Ye was able to enter the Devil King's castle to cultivate as well.

# Chapter 336: Big Sister Goddess

Tian Ye was extremely grateful for such an opportunity, but he was thinking of and greatly missed Yanrong and Tian Dan Er in the Chaotic Star Sea.

As if seeing his thoughts, Lei Yu promised Tian Ye that when given the chance, he would bring the entire town to settle within this city. Regardless of Lei Yu trying to stop him, Tian Ye started loudly kowtowing towards in order to repay his gratitude after hearing this.

Lei Yu then walked towards the

middle of the hall and said with a face filled with smiles, "Let me introduce everyone to a new friend of mine."

"A new friend? Where?" Everyone looked around and didn't notice anyone. They all then stared at Lei Yu in a strange manner.

They all noticed Lei Yu's lightning brand on his right-arm flash before his body gradually became illusory. Right after that, a purple light mixed with white starry dots burst forth from his body while two beams of white energy came out from his bracelet and started merging into one. The bracelet on his wrist disappeared and everyone stared with big round eyes at the appearance of this person, because

it wasn't Lei Yu's soul!

An ultimate beautiful girl with an aura of cold aloofness appeared. Her eyes were filled with excitement and the girl happened to be completely naked as well! Her skin was extremely white and the proportions of her body were big and slim in all the right places. The whiteness of her body was like a white jade that people didn't dare to touch in case they blemished it. The only color apart from her whiteness was the two little pink points protruding from her twin peaks. Add that her long black hair was slightly coiled on her head that showed off her exquisite facial features, her whole outlook would cause any man to go crazy for.

Lei Yu was originally all smiles but when he turned around to look, he almost jumped out of his skin in fright. “Why aren’t you wearing any clothes?!”

This person was none other than Xue Yu who borrowed Lei Yu’s soul to form a body. For such a peerless beauty to be completely naked caused Liu Hao to bitterly cry with arousal.

Xue Yu glanced at herself, “What’s wrong with that?”

Lei Yu helplessly covered his eyes with his hand, “Why are you just like Mo Bei Li who doesn’t care about stuff like that? I give up!”

With over a dozen people in the



main hall, everyone's eyes were about to pop out of their sockets and their mouths were as wide as they could get. With the sudden appearance of such an ultimate naked beauty, even Lei Yu's four beauties had similar reactions. It was only after a while before bull-head asked with hesitation: "Little... little Yu... this... this is your soul? No... no way right?"

Lei Yu wanted to cry. "Someone quickly bring her some clothes!"

With the sudden cry by Lei Yu, Nuo Hu finally recovered his senses and quickly retrieved some of Ai Er's old clothes from his storage ring. Lei Yu kept one hand over his eyes while the other hand grabbed the clothes and passed it to Xue Yu. He

accidentally happened to nudge Xue Yu's soft mound and felt it was cool to the touch but was extremely bouncy. Lei Yu couldn't help swallow a few times, "Quickly put this on!"

Xue Yu couldn't understand why everyone was so shocked but she still began to wear the clothes she was given. Ai Er's clothes were of the modern style which consisted of a t-shirt and a skirt. Even though she now had some clothes on, it still couldn't cover up the seductive aura she gave off.

Without waiting for Lei Yu to say anything, Xue Yu started running around the hall. "Wow, this is the outside world! It's so pretty! Master, what is

this?” Asked Xue Yu as she pointed at the throne in the main hall.

“Oh shit! Is she an alien or a girl with amnesia?” Liu Hao exclaimed out loud.

Lei Yu helplessly shook his head, “Ai Er, you should recognize her.”

“I should recognize her?” Ai Er started blinking while carefully observing this unfamiliar yet beautiful girl. No matter how she racked her brains, she couldn’t think of anything.

“Right, it’s someone you know. Also, bull-head and everyone shouldn’t misunderstand about the situation. She’s borrowing my soul in order to appear in the physical

world. The body is hers while the soul is mine, but she's currently in control of her own body."

Everyone stared with wide eyes while bull-head asked: "Are you saying she's now part of your soul? How did you two fuse together? I can't believe this is possible!" For someone like the bull-head who has seen many strange and odd things in his life, even he said this was too unbelievable which showed this was something that has never happened before.

"Right, the early and mid Soul Splitting stages restrict one's soul while only the late stage does not." Said Lei Yu.

Those at the Soul Splitting stage

and higher already knew about this but for others, this was their first time hearing it.

“Brother Yu, you keep saying I should recognize her but who is she?” Ai Er asked in confusion.

Xue Yu ran over to Ai Er, “You don’t recognize me? I’ve helped you heal your body back then!”

Ai Er once again racked her brains and started mumbling: “Helped me heal my body...?”

“Ai Er, she’s the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost!” Lei Yu twisted his wrist a few times to show that his white bracelet was gone.

“Eh? Spiritual Bracelet of Frost? How could...?”

“Didn’t I just explain it? There’s a soul spirit within the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost and Xue Yu is that soul spirit. She’s borrowing the power of my soul’s body in order to appear in reality.” Said Lei Yu.

Everyone finally realized what was going on. Liu Hao then said in an envious tone: “Master, how come you’re body is covered with treasures? That jade pendant around neck is a cultivating treasure; you also had a storage ring that was a special treasure. And now you’re even hiding a big sister goddess in your bracelet... you’re too shameless!”

“Be mindful of your words or else I’ll give you a good beating!” Lei Yu glared at him.

“I was wrong! Quickly introduce this big sister goddess to us okay?” Liu Hao cupped his fists and showed a bitter face.

Xue Yu left Ai Er and ran over to Lei Yu and grabbed onto him. “Master, let’s see if my guesses are accurate!” This move made the four beauties somewhat jealous. But when they thought about it some more, Xue Yu was technically Lei Yu’s soul body and wasn’t a real person so that calmed them down a bit.

After saying that, Xue Yu ran over to Tian Ye’s said and started pointing one by one: “Tian Ye, Nuo Hu, Romon, Tai Lao, Hei Feng, and Golden Tiger. There’s also master’s four lovers and your idiotic disciple.”

“I’m actually very intelligent!” Liu Hao pouted with an unsatisfied expression.

“Uh...”

“You can actually recognize each of us? Little Yu, isn’t this a bit too incredible?” Telephassa said in surprise.

“There’s nothing I can do since she can see through everything inside the consciousness of my soul!” Lei Yu shrugged. The Spiritual Bracelet of Frost along with the sun and moon pendants were items he couldn’t control.

“That’s enough Xue Yu, you should go back for now. Having my soul leave my true body uses up a lot of



my energy. You will be coming out to help me fight in the future so I'll introduce you to other stuff at a later time, okay?" Said Lei Yu.

Even though she was disappointed, Xue Yu walked to up to the side of Lei Yu, "See you later everyone."

Liu Hao swallowed down a gulp of saliva, "See you later big sister goddess!"

# Chapter 337:

## Heavenly Lightning Tribulation

With a giggle, Xue Yu's body became illusory before becoming two white energy that flew towards Lei Yu's wrist. The Spiritual Bracelet of Frost once again appeared while Lei Yu had a distressed look on his face. The faintly purple skinned Lei Yu was currently standing there wearing Ai Er's clothes. A "rip" sound was heard and Ai Er's t-shirt was ripped by his soul. Lei Yu frantically activated his internal energy to force his soul back inside. Although his speed was almost instantaneous, it still caused

everyone present to roll on the floor in laughter. Lei Yu's powerful and prestigious image had now ceased to exist.

It was at this time...

The rumbling of storm clouds from everywhere could be heard gathering in the skies above.

Everyone ran out of the main hall too look up and noticed the storm clouds covered at least over 10,000 mile area!

There's only one explanation for such a vast amount of storm clouds to gather in the Immortal World!

"Not good! It's centered near the Void Sect!" The bull-head gasped. Just when his voice faded, a thick

column of lightning descended. Even though they were currently in the most southern area, everyone could sense how powerful that lightning was!

Everyone had a serious expression on their faces while Lei Yu couldn't understand why. "What's not good about it? Let it strike him to death!"

"Little Yu! Have you lost your mind or something?"

"Master! How come you don't know what's going on?" Liu Hao and everyone were now staring at Lei Yu.

Being stared like this, Lei Yu felt uncomfortable and asked in confusion: "What is it?"

“Little Yu, you don’t recognize the heavenly lightning?” Asked Telephassa.

Romon slapped his head, “How could I have forgotten this?! Little Yu never experienced the heavenly lightning tribulation and directly condensed his gold core!”

“What did you say?!” Everyone had big wide eyes while staring at Romon.

“That day in the Mortal World...” Romon continued to explain, “A column of lightning descended but it was the Dragon Vein recognizing its owner and not the heavenly lightning tribulation. Once the lightning of the Dragon Vein passed, he condensed his purple

gold core. This was all personally witnessed by me since I was present during that time.”

“Such a thing can happen?” The bull-head and Telephassa glanced at each other with questioning looks.

“Don’t bother with that for now; tell me what’s going on currently.” Asked Lei Yu as he pointed at the huge column of lightning.

“This is the tribulation when breaking past the Boundary Transition stage, and it’s something I’ve experienced before!” The bull-head mumbled.

“What you mean to say is that Void Immortal, he... he broke through

the Boundary Transition stage and is reaching the Mahayana stage?! How could this be?" Lei Yu was frowning. If this really was the case, wanting to use his own strength to defeat him wasn't something he can accomplish in a short period of time!

Lei Yu was busy with many things but he would never forget the reason he came to the Immortal Realm. The hatred he had for the Void Sect wasn't something that will ever be forgotten. He had once promised himself to make the Void Sect suffer the consequences. But now looking at the situation, the Void Immortal and the bull-head had become existences at the same level. Wanting to defeat the Void Immortal was something currently

impossible to accomplish!

The bull-head helplessly shook his head, The Void Immortal's potential was originally n

ot bad, so after cultivating for such a long amount of time, going through this heavenly lightning tribulation isn't anything strange."

"Is there any way to stop his tribulation?" Lei Yu asked.

The bull-head looked at Lei Yu for a while before replying: "Yes!"

Lei Yu's eyes lit up, "What way?"

"Kill him! The heavenly lightning tribulation will take a long time. It's during this tribulation that the person is at their weakest moment.



With my speed and before the tribulation ends, making a move on him would cause his complete annihilation. It's only that..." Reaching to this point, bull-head hesitated.

"Only what?" Lei Yu eagerly asked.

"Trying to prevent this tribulation would cause everyone in the Immortal Realm to despise the saboteur, and result in leaving behind a name of infamy throughout the ages. One needs to understand that for a cultivator to condense their gold core is already extremely difficult, not to mention the last threshold of the Boundary Transition. If people found out someone acted to prevent the tribulation, the Immortal World

might unite together and attack the culprit. Unless you manage to silence all witnesses, otherwise there's no other way of getting mud on your name." Bull-head explained.

Lei Yu smiled while shaking his head, "That's something I wouldn't do either. If our interference really caused his complete annihilation, that would be too villainous of us!" After laughing a bit, Lei Yu then said: "Even if he has reached the Mahayana stage, I will depend on my own hard work to catch up to him because I want to fight with him fair and square!"

One of the reason people were unconsciously attracted to Lei Yu was that he would never perform

underhanded moves against others. Men had to be righteous and just in order to be respected by others!

“I believe you will eventually accomplish that!” Nodded bull-head with a satisfied look on his face. Everyone else had forgotten the embarrassing encounter with Lei Yu’s soul and was now only looking at him with respect and admiration.

“I will continue working hard!” Lei Yu made up his mind and clenched his fists. Once he takes care of his matters, he will focus all his attention on cultivating! Only when he reaches the Mahayana stage will he truly become an overlord in the Immortal World that gained the respect of millions. This wasn’t the glory that Lei Yu desired, but it was

only reaching that point will he be able to stand up and be able to truly protect those around him!

There were a total of six lightning strikes and each one was more destructive than the next. But the strikes didn't come one after another but had a long pause in-between. They also came at random times so one wouldn't know when it would come. Lei Yu said to himself: "Void Immortal, I hope you don't get obliterated by the heavenly lightning because I want to directly kill you myself! I will use my own strength to defeat you!"

After a full day and night, the skies started calming down and the storm clouds gradually dissipated revealing the blue sky once again.

Lei Yu stood there unmoving until the heavenly lightning had come to an end. One could see the hot blood boiling in his eyes, which was the source of his current motivation!

Upon arriving at the Devil King's castle, Lei Yu said to himself: "I had always been counting on the green energy so in the future; I will have to count on my own abilities to become stronger!"

There was no day or night for Lei Yu while cultivating, and each time he would enter a deep meditative state for at least two months at a time. But it was also because of this that his strength continued to increase. Inside the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost, Xue Yu wasn't tired or bored and just continued to

assist Lei Yu by purifying all the absorbed spiritual energy. This allowed Lei Yu's cultivation to yield twice the benefits with half the effort.

Sometime a year later...

Upon slowly opening his eyes, Lei Yu's lips curved into a smile. This was exactly his signature smile. Lei Yu then went to the small room in the back with the wooden door.

"We can leave now!" Lei Yu coldly said.

The Devil King's skull was glimmering with a green light, "You have truly made me shocked. Even without the help of my energy, I'm sure you would have reached this

strength eventually. Not bad, not bad at all!”

“It’s not necessary for you to praise me. Let’s not delay anymore and head out!” Lei Yu’s tone was cold and it wasn’t a tone he would use towards others. But when facing this terrifying looking Devil King’s skull, there was no way he could pretend to be amicable.

“I want to remind you that having more people accompany us it not necessary a good thing. It would actually be easier if you went alone!”

Those words of the Devil King made Lei Yu frown, but he still nodded. “Tell me, where’s this place we’re going to?”

“We’re going to the eastern sea  
edge wherein the Forest of Fog lies!”



# Chapter 338: Forest Of Fog

“Why would your true body be there?”

“Don’t ask so much, just act according to what I tell you!” The Devil King’s tone was adamant.

Lei Yu didn’t care about the tone since he originally wasn’t that interested in it either. He was merely asking out of the blue. Since the guy didn’t want to say it, he was too lazy to bother dwelling on it.

“There are four so called barriers of entry within the Forest of Fog. The first barrier has a guard called the

Swordback Tiger: its strength is the weakest and it's only at the late Fusion Soul stage. It's good at long-range attacks so you need to be careful about it. The second barrier is the Great Dahl Ape: its strength is at the early Soul Splitting stage. Even though it has a powerful offensive and defensive capabilities, its speed is very slow so it shouldn't be considered much for you. As for the third barrier, you need to pay extra attention to it. There's actually two guards there: one is at the late Soul Splitting and the other at the early Boundary Transition stage. They are both of the Large Roc species and are commonly known as the two Demon Roc Emperors. Their attacks are extremely powerful but their weakness is their defensive ability."

“Are you serious?! One has the same strength as me while the other is a level higher than me! How the hell am I supposed to fight them?” Exclaimed Lei Yu while frowning.

“Could it be that you still aren’t familiar with your own strength? Based on your unique cultivation method and special physique, you are at least two levels higher than those at your same realm! You don’t have to pretend to hide this from me because I am very clear about it!”

What the Devil King said was indeed correct. Back then when he was only at the early Gold Core stage, Xue Yu inside the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost mentioned his

strength was similar to someone at the late Gold Core stage. And back then at the outer periphery of the Chaotic Star Sea, he fought with that tyrant Manor Lord. Even though that tyrant wasn't subdued by him in the end, Lei Yu was only at a slight disadvantage during the entire fight. That tyrant was over three levels higher than himself, which shows he is in fact capable of jumping levels in a fight.

Although it would be a difficult fight, as long as he used some strategy and displayed his unique abilities to their utmost, it's not impossible to defeat opponents a few levels higher.

“What happens if upon entering the Forest of Fog, these bunch of

guardians suddenly surround me?”

“You don’t have to worry about that. Each guardian has their own territory and will never take a single step out of it. Your opponents will all be separated and you will not encounter such a problem.”

Explained the Devil King.

“So, what about the fourth barrier? What will I encounter there? Don’t tell me it’s an even stronger existence?” Lei Yu asked in apprehension.

The floating skull nodded its head, “You are spot on. The most terrifying existence of the Forest of Fog will be the Sky Devouring Rat at the late Boundary Transition stage who hasn’t undergone the heavenly

lightning tribulation yet. Although its body is small, its specialty is exactly the same as yours: speed! Its speed is similar to instant teleportation and that's still not the most terrifying aspect. Its teeth are capable of biting through all things and it's coated with highly toxic poison. One cannot be injured by those teeth or even if it's the Ceng family, they still wouldn't be able to save you!"

Lei Yu stomped down, "What the f\*ck?! There's no way I can defeat it then!"

p>

The Devil King cackled in a gruesome manner, "Have you forgotten one of your specialities?

You have the ability to hide your breath and aura. Upon entering the fourth barrier, hide your aura and just directly search for my true body there. Once my remnant soul is released and rejoins my true body, I can then assist you in the fight. By then, killing it will be easy as pie!”

Hearing the Devil King’s words, Lei Yu’s brow went up slightly. “Then doesn’t that mean upon entering the Forest of Fog, all I have to do is hide my aura and directly pass through everything? Why would I need to bother fighting with the other guardians?”

“That won’t work.” The Devil King shook his head, “Only the first outer barrier allows you to enter freely with your strength while

subsequent ones will require defeating the guardians in order to obtain the key to enter the next barrier.”

“The key is inside their body?” Lei Yu asked with wide eyes.

“This is just a metaphor, I’ll tell you more about it when the time comes.” After pausing for a bit, the Devil King continued: “This is all I have to say to you for now. Once you take care of your matters, let’s quickly start the journey.

Remember, it’s best if you went alone or else the fourth barrier’s Sky Devouring Rat won’t be able to be avoided!”

Lei Yu was thinking that wasn’t it basically forcing him to go by



himself? That Sky Devouring Rat is at the late Boundary Transition stage and has the ability to devour anything. If he brought Golden Tiger and company who aren't its opponent, the instantaneous teleportation speed of the rat could easily kill them all before they even have a chance to look for the Devil King's true body.

Lei Yu reached the desert right outside the Devil King's castle and was still figuring out how to explain this to everyone. Off in the distance, a piercing noise was heard that made Lei Yu turn to its direction. It was there that he noticed two people floating in the air.

"Void Immortal? Why did he come here?" Lei Yu frowned as he

whispered to himself. He then hid his aura and slowly went forth. There was only the bull-head confronting the Void Immortal while everyone else stayed inside the castle.

As he got closer, Lei Yu was finally able to hear the conversation of those two. He heard the bull-head coldly say: “You have just reached the Mahayana stage and want to see who would win or lose in a fight? Aren’t you overestimating yourself a bit?”

“Demon King! This Southern Wild Lands that originally belonged to me was taken by you several hundred of years ago. It was also because of you that I was seriously injured back then. Now that I’ve

successfully reached the Mahayana stage, I came today in order to conclude our affairs!” The Void Immortal coldly replied.

Lei Yu was shocked upon realizing those two also had such a relationship in the past.

There was no change in the bull-head’s expression since he didn’t even place the Void Immortal in his eyes. His voice was still cold: “You’ve only reached the Mahayana stage two years ago. Now that you’ve come looking for me, it’s equivalent to courting your own death!”

“Then let’s try it out and the results will be automatically revealed!” The Void Immortal narrowed his eyes as

he said that. He then slowly opened up his arms from left to right and six huge swords made of internal energy appeared floating behind his back. His momentum was much stronger than several years ago!

Lei Yu stared with wide eyes. For two super experts to fight, it would be an extreme pity for anyone to miss out on it!

Lei Yu was currently hiding behind a sand dune and it was fortunate his upper body was bare because his bronze skin color was very similar to the color of the sand. And because those two were both concentrating on each other, they wouldn't notice that there was a pair of eyes staring at them from below.

“Humph, merely acting reckless!”  
The bull-head coldly harrumphed while his two arms shook. A golden colored internal energy rose out of his arms and formed a pair of huge golden axes.

It was no wonder that the bull-head gave the Ares axe to Tai Lao because there was no longer any need for him to use physical weapons anymore!

The Void Immortal was the first to act as he pointed with both hands and all six swords shot out at once. This move was a bit different from when his deceased disciple Kun Xian used back then. Each of the six sword qi's had armageddon like destructive powers, and as long as he wished to, it was capable of

completely destroying the entire city of the Southern Wild Lands. The city would then be just like the Devil King's castle being completely buried by sand!

How would the bull-head allow him such a chance? He waved both arms and the two golden lights were released from his hand.

# Chapter 339: I Don't Want To Kill You

“Whoosh! Whoosh!”

“Bang!”

A single axe of the bull-head was able to block all six of the Void Immortal's sword qi causing the heaven and the earth to shake! The sand dune Lei Yu was hiding behind almost collapsed from the collision! It was fortunate that they still didn't notice Lei Yu while he continued staring at their battle.

Lei Yu wasn't worried about the

bull-head at all because the bull-head explained to him some things back then. Once one reaches the Mahayana stage, there were no longer any levels to distinguish the power differences between each other. It now determined the amount of spiritual energy conversion the person had in their body. It was very clear that the bull-head had broken through for over a hundred years while the Void Immortal had only broken through for two years.

This took a while to explain but everything happened really quickly. The bull-head's single strike and blocked the Void Immortal's six sword qi's while there was still another golden beam of light that was flying towards the Void



Immortal. The Void Immortal didn't have enough time to react and the bull-head's attack landed on him. His body then flew off like a cannonball for over a hundred meters before he finally stopped. A shocked expression was then clearly seen on the Void Immortal's face.

"I told you before that you weren't my opponent. Just leave, I don't want to kill you!" Bull-head lightly waved his arm and a huge momentum was released causing Lei Yu to almost suffocate. This was the true power behind the Mahayana stage?!

Lei Yu knew that although the exchange between the two of them quick and didn't have the expected

large scale destruction, just a mere aura of their attacks could completely crush his existence!

“Don’t think that I only have those moves! Take this attack!” The Void Immortal was like a cloud as his body became illusory and instantaneously arrived in front of the bull-head. His whole body was enshrouded with white energy and his momentum was no less than the bull-head’s. It was only missing a bit of dominance and adaptiveness but this was also the gap between them two.

For someone who focused his cultivation around the sword, the Void Immortal instantly transformed himself into a huge sword. He had used his body to near

the bull-head before transforming to a sword as his attack. Although this move was considered a cheap villainous act, it was still one of his strategic moves he had up his sleeves.

Bull-head looked unusually calm as the golden glow around his body immediately brightened. One could only hear a loud “bang” sound when the Void Immortal was once again forced backwards. When the huge sword reverted back to his original human appearance, one could see blood seeping out of the corner of his mouth. The Void Immortal now had eyes filled with fear as he stared at Minotaur Linos in front of him.

“I’ve been converting spiritual

energy for the past a hundred years while you have only been doing it for two years. Did you really think that upon attaining the Mahayana stage, there would be no difference in levels? Simply laughable! I'm going to say it one last time: leave. Even though I despise you, I don't wish to kill you! Eventually, someone else will be going to take your life but that person won't be me!" Bull-head left these words and turned around to leave. He no longer cared about the Void Immortal who had a face filled with shock.

"What's above the Mahayana stage?!" The Void Immortal yelled at the back of the leaving bull-head when he finally came back to his senses.

Without turning his head, Minotaur Linos said: "Go comprehend

it yourself! I hope that before you die, you are able to comprehend some of the mysteries of Mahayana! This will allow you to live a little bit longer!"

Lei Yu knew that the person bull-head was inferring to who was going to take the Void Immortal's life was himself. But why didn't the Void Immortal ask who that person was? Could it be that he already knows?

Seeing the Void Immortal's dispirited expression, Lei Yu's hate for him had actually lessened a little. But this didn't mean Lei Yu would forgive him. Even though he

doesn't have the strength now, one of these days Lei Yu will pay back everything owed to him!

The Void Immortal slowly turned to leave. His goal was the bull-head but they only exchanged one move; a golden flash of light and the Void Immortal had no ability to counterattack. This clearly showed the power difference between the two was too huge.

The admiration Lei Yu had for the bull-head went up some more, and he also realized something: For a peerless expert, they don't necessarily need to show everyone they are powerful. Just doing things low key will also garner the respect of everyone.

Once the Void Immortal disappeared, Lei Yu floated up into the air and felt the residual powerful aura of the two's battle. Lei Yu didn't dare to stay here any longer because he could start to feel a slight difficulty with his breathing.

With a push of the internal energy at the sole of his feet, Lei Yu started flying towards the city.

Within the main halls.

“You have to leave now? You’ve already reach the late Soul Splitting stage?”

Towards this god-like existence, such a quick improvement in cultivation was still inconceivable

to the bull-head. Lei Yu's advancement was truly too shocking.

"That's right; I've just broken through!"

Bull-head nodded, "Since you're in such a rush to take care of this, just go without any worries. Tai Lao, Hei Feng and Golden Tiger will accompany you there." Just as his voice faded, a group of people came in. They all had happy expressions on their faces except for Ai Er and the other three beauties. They had apprehensive looks on their faces because they knew Lei Yu would be leaving them once again.

"Master! I only have one word for you: So awesome!"



“Was that only one word you dummy?”

“Uh...”

“Lord Lightning, we’ve already prepared everything to accompany you on your journey!” Said Golden Tiger while Tai Lao and Hei Feng nodded along.

This was the originally arrangement but what others didn’t expect was Lei Yu shook his head with a bitter smile on his face.

“What is it? Did something happen?” Nuo Hu was worried Lei Yu had encountered something problematic and was the first to ask.

“You cannot go alone! We have no

idea what you are doing so what if you encounter something dangerous?" Telephassa frantically interjected.

Lei Yu was grateful to see how everyone was so worried about him but he had no choice in this matter. The Devil King also mentioned that having more people along was not necessary a good thing.

Lei Yu had some certainty of beating the first three guards so them coming along was unnecessary.

"It's actually safer if I went alone." Everyone had worried looks as they couldn't understand Lei Yu's words.

Lei Yu lightly smiled, "Golden Tiger,

Hei Feng, and Tai Lao... the strength of you three aren't weak but do you have this ability?" Lei Yu's aura suddenly disappeared without a trace.

Everyone could only feel an empty area where Lei Yu was at but he was definitely standing there. They couldn't detect any of his aura or presence so what was going on?

Nuo Hu, Ai Er, Romon, and the bull-head already knew about this but everyone else was shocked. Their astoundment clearly showed on their facial expression, especially the three that was about to accompany Lei Yu on the journey.

"Lord Lightning! What sort of divine skill is this? How come your

aura has completely disappeared?”  
Tai Lao asked with round big eyes.

Lei Yu released his aura, “This is an ability that I’ve grasped upon reaching a certain level of my cultivation method. It can escape all detection abilities!”

Those that didn’t know finally realized how Lei Yu could always escape in the middle of a crisis. And being able to escape the detection of thousands upon thousands of demonic cultivators was truly mind boggling back then.

“I’m not going to be encountering anything especially dangerous there and I still have my backup help. That’s why everyone shouldn’t be worried because I will definitely be

back in a few months time!”

# Chapter 340: Sea Emperor's Birthday

Lei Yu's promise looked like it wasn't a big deal, but he was mainly doing this so that his women and his friends wouldn't be too worried about him.

Since he had such an ability and his words were so determined, it didn't allow anyone else to rebuke him. If the situation could be solved stealthily but with the three accompanying him causing the situation to turn out into a big fight, then the whole situation was truly unjustified.

This time, Lei Yu felt rather relaxed

leaving which was different from before. All his friends and those close to him were with the bull-head so their safety was pretty much guaranteed. The only thing that caused him to frown was finding a method to get rid of the despicable green energy within his body.

If he didn't accomplish this matter, he didn't doubt what the Devil King said would come true. By that time, his body will remain the same but his thoughts and soul will all belong to the Devil King. Lei Yu will no longer be anything different from a zombie and dying might be the better choice by then!

In order to save time, Lei Yu decided to use his Sky Devouring

Sword. He only had to inject a tiny amount of internal energy into the sword to control its flying ability which was much less when compared to using his feet. Lei Yu had originally not wanted to expose the Sky Devouring Sword to the public that often ever since the bull-head mentioned to him: “I can sense that this Sky Devouring Sword is definitely not simple so you must protect it at all costs!”

While flying through the high altitude of the Immortal World, Lei Yu’s speed can be described as a flash of light. It would not be an easy task if someone wanted to catch up to him at this point.

Although with the current strength of Lei Yu in the Immortal World



wasn't considered something where he could walk sideways unobstructed, he was still nevertheless considered one of the high ranking experts now.

During his time in cultivation, Lei Yu had also completely memorized the two books that Ceng Hong had gifted to him. He had familiarized himself with all the various methods of utilizing the herbs and their effects. But when it came to refining medicinal pills, now that was a cumbersome topic. Lei Yu still carefully memorized the formulas except there were some areas that still required actually hands on practice before he could fully understand it. Without having actual practice was equivalent to not possessing real knowledge. An

example was a so called stock experts: they could talk all they want on the television but a true in-depth analysis required their past experience in the field. Just by reading and talking about the topic, one cannot achieve the desired end results. One has to get their hands dirty in order to gain a method and depth of understanding belonging to themselves.

Lei Yu clearly remembered in the < >, there was an herb recorded that was one of the main ingredients for refining the Green Vein Dewdrop Pill. This herb was extremely rare and was called “Green Revolving Grass.” It was impossible to find this herb in ordinary lakes and rivers and could only be found in the depths of the deep sea. Even the

broad underwater world of the Dragon Scaling Caves did not have such a grass. And there's definitely none around the water territory of the Southern Wild Lands. The only way to find traces of that herb was to head towards the depths of the sea located at the eastern side of the Immortal World. This herb belonged to a family of aquatic plants and was extremely rare. Not only did one require a powerful eyesight ability to search for it, one also needed a lot of luck. So no matter how strong one's eyesight was, it would be useless if they were unluckily in an area without the plant.

Since Lei Yu had to pass through the sea on his journey, he decided

that he might as well travel through the underwater region. He wouldn't regret it even if he doesn't find any since he at least tried. Testing his luck wasn't a bad choice since the loss in time wasn't a huge difference.

After crossing a large portion of the Immortal World, Lei Yu slowed down a bit before descending.

The dark blue waters of the sea were endless and Lei Yu couldn't even see where the next piece of land mass was. With a "plop," Lei Yu dove into the sea. For someone that had reached Lei Yu's current strength, there was not much difference whether they travelled through the air, on land, or in the water.

There was a huge pressure while deep under the sea. If it was back then, Lei Yu probably wouldn't be able to resist it for too long. But now he had no feeling as if the pressure didn't exist at all.

Lei Yu played around by using his internal energy to make it encapsulate his entire body and forcing all the water away. He then childishly laughed, "So it looks like I have the same ability as Long Er!"

This was simply an idiotic statement of his...

Lei Yu then released his perception ability and realized the distance of his senses had been reduced quite a bit underwater. This was the case because there were too many

uneven surfaces, living organisms, and the hydrostatic pressure of the sea. As long as Lei Yu kept his vigilance up, he shouldn't encounter any serious dangers.

As he propelled himself forward rapidly, Lei Yu kept an eye out on the surrounding clusters of corals. He was keeping any eyes out for the rare herb amongst the coral reefs and the seaweeds on the seabed.

It was around this time that Lei Yu was startled. "How come there's so many energy fluctuations up ahead?" Lei Yu could sense in front of him was a crowd of demonic cultivators gathered together. Still filled with vigilance, Lei Yu gradually got closer to the group. At the same time, he lowered a

majority of his aura but didn't completely hide it.

The closer he got, the more shocked he was because there was over a thousand demonic cultivators here. These demonic cultivators were all related to sea creatures of different shapes and sizes. It was nothing out of the ordinary for him to see such demonic cultivators because he met many different species daily in the Southern Wild Lands. The only thing he was curious about was why there were so many of them gathered here today?

Over a thousand demonic cultivators were all gathered outside some type of underwater palace. At the top of the staircase over a hundred steps high was

someone of the fish species on a stage, and it wasn't hard to tell that it was of the eel species. There many types of eels in the sea and was not a bad choice as a food item. The meat can be moist and very delicious tasting. But this wasn't a normal eel and was actually the rarely seen electric eel. Just like Lei Yu, it can release different intensity of electricity as its offensive ability.

This eel was at least three meters long and there was no need to mention that it had formed its essence. Although its body looked slim, its voice was very rough to the ears. One could hear it say to the thousands of demonic cultivators: "Today is our Sea Emperor's millennial birthday. Just leave your presents on the ground and the



guards will come forth to accept it.”

After hearing that, thousands of demonic cultivators started bowing at the waist. Some brought out items from their belongings while some took out items from their mouths. Some even dropped their beloved weapons on the ground right in front of them. Why would they present their own weapons as gifts?

Lei Yu was at a complete loss after witnessing such a scene. Just when he was still in a daze, a shrimp looking guard in an archer's outfit came over and looked at Lei Yu strangely. “Where's your present? Wait! You don't have the aura of a demonic cultivator! You're an outsider!” After saying that, he drew

a weapon from his waist and stood in a stance about to attack. Upon hearing this ruckus, everyone turned over with strange looks in their eyes. When they saw Lei Yu, they all showed ill intentioned looks and began to surround him.

Lei Yu didn't panic or feel any fear. Under his perception ability, the strongest demonic cultivator out of the crowd was only at the early Fusion Soul stage. Although there were a lot of them, just using the Sky Devouring Sword to strike out twice with the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique's first form was enough to take care of all of them.

On top of a stage, the eel coldly harrumphed. "Outsider, why did you come here? Could it be that you

want to cause trouble during our Sea Emperor's birthday? Capture him!" With that command, the thousands of demonic cultivators didn't move but a stream of Shrimp Soldiers and Crab Generals streamed out of the palace and surrounded Lei Yu three levels deep.

# Chapter 341: The Black Tortoise True God

The first one to discover Lei Yu was the shrimp demonic cultivator. He then reached towards Lei Yu with a boastful attitude in front of all his peers because it showed how acute his eyesight was in discovering the outsider.

“Surrender yourself or I can’t guarantee there won’t be any pain!” The shrimp soldier scoffed.

Lei Yu only lightly smiled because he wasn’t placing this mere late Gold Core demonic cultivator in his

eyes. It was already very difficult for the current Lei Yu to meet an equal opponent in the Immortal World. As for the current situation, the strongest was only at the early Fusion Soul stage. Lei Yu only had to act a bit serious and most likely there would no longer any demonic cultivators here left alive.

Upon seeing Lei Yu's expression, the shrimp soldier angrily frowned because this guy was not giving him any face at all. In front of so many people, this outsider was treating his words like a fart. And he was even smiling! This shrimp soldier wanted to grab onto Lei Yu but when his hand touched his shoulder, a strong energy rushed out of Lei Yu's body. It was only a brief instant when all the demonic

cultivators present could smell a very delicious grilled shrimp smell.

Even though Lei Yu didn't take that shrimp soldier's life, his hand would still be crippled now.

The eel on the stage started descending with a frown, "You're truly here to cause trouble?"

Lei Yu gave the eel a strange glance, "I didn't even have a chance to speak and you guys wanted to capture me as an outsider causing trouble. From what I can see, it wasn't me that acted first but you guys."

"An outsider like you dares to act wildly in the Sea Emperor's territory?" The eel roared out. He

previously sensed that there was a powerful electricity like energy that burst out of Lei Yu that attacked the shrimp soldier's hand. His ability was almost the same as Lei Yu so he didn't have any fear.

Thousands of eyes were looking at him. In the eyes of these thousands of demonic cultivators, his status was not low so now was the perfect chance to further enhance his own reputation!

“You still want to be safe and sound after injuring my subordinate's hand?” He then waved his arms at the surrounding shrimp soldiers and crab generals and said: “This guy has some skills so there's no need to make any unnecessary sacrifices. Let me personally handle

him!”

This was something the surrounding demonic cultivators were hoping to see! They started backing up creating a large empty ground for the eel and Lei Yu to show off their moves.

“Outsider, what is your name?” The eel asked.

“Is there really a need for someone that’s about to die to know their killer’s name?” Lei Yu had an expression of disdain. There were experts at the Fusion Soul stage around but it wasn’t this eel in front of him. This eel’s strength had barely reached the late Nascent Soul stage so Lei Yu didn’t even bother looking at him seriously.



“What bravado! Hand your life over now!” After roaring out, power exploded forth from the eel’s thin body before he rushed towards Lei Yu. There were two long whiskers on his head that had started emitting dots of white light. Lei Yu was very familiar with the energy behind that white light because it was actually electricity, except the strength of it was too substandard for Lei Yu to care about.

“Playing with electricity in front of me? I’m like the ancestor of electricity.” Lei Yu’s lips curved into a grin. His forefinger and middle finger then clasped together and a purple light was condensed at the tip of his finger

s. One could only see Lei Yu gently

flick his finger and the purple light shot out at the eel who was currently rushing towards Lei Yu.

The moment the purple light intercepted the eel, a brief flash of light was seen and the eel's body had a startled reaction. Right after that, the eel started falling over onto the bottom of the seabed. Its body had already stiffened up while it still had eyes of confusion.

This attack by Lei Yu made all the present demonic cultivators shocked. Although this eel was not the strongest existence around here, it was still someone that had assisted the Sea Emperor and may be even considered his right-hand man. Someone now dared to kill him which caused an unbelievable

scene to appear before everyone's eyes.

“Outsider! You actually dared... dared to kill Lord Guman?! You... you are finished now!” Shouts were heard from the present crowd and discussions of this event were getting rowdier and rowdier. Lei Yu knew the eel wasn't dead; it was just acting like that because it couldn't handle the amount of lightning currently rampaging around its body. It only had to wait a few hours and the eel would gradually recover. But of course Lei Yu was too lazy to explain himself and only coldly harrumphed out loud. He stomped down on the ground and started shooting off upwards since he didn't want to waste anymore time here.

“You want to leave after injuring a person of mine? It looks like you aren’t placing me, the Sea Emperor in your eyes at all.” A voice that made the underwater area tremble came out from the palace. Lei Yu slowly turned around and suddenly stared with wide eyes in shock.

“I say... I say old senior, why... why are you here?” Lei Yu asked in a stuttering manner at the newly arrived huge creature.

The huge creature that appeared was also staring with wide eyes in shock, “Little Yu?”

“You actually know I’m called little Yu?” Lei Yu felt this was strange because he never mentioned his real name before.

“That brat Nuo Hu told me about it, and he kept mentioning that you had to be safe no matter what. It looks like your fate is truly tough: you were actually able to leave the Void Sect in one piece!”

That’s right, this newly arrived creature was none other than the divine beast Lei Yu had entrusted to take care of Nuo Hu - The Black Tortoise Xuan Wu!

The old turtle remained the same as always. It had a pair of light blue eyes that gave off a pale light, and its long rough neck was over two meters in length. The old turtle had a brown spike on its head and the huge turtle shell on its back had clearly visible patterns on it. Within each pattern was a spike sticking

out that looked beyond sharp.

Lei Yu gradually returned back onto the seabed. Even though the water pressure surrounding him increased once again, this wasn't considered much. Lei Yu then heavily knelt on the ground with a look of respect and gratitude. "Thank you senior for taking care of my big brother! Little Yu humbly thanks you here in sincere gratitude."

This scene had caused the surrounding crowd to become disappointed. The Sea Emperor's appearance didn't create a fight and instead, those two started chatting like old friends? What was up with this?

The old turtle spun around and

after causing a bright flash of light. An elderly man with white hair then appeared in place. He then supported the kneeling Lei Yu up, “Back then, I was afraid the Void Sect would use some dirty methods so I brought little Hu all the way here to the eastern sea region. It was on a small island here that I brought him into the path of an Immortal cultivator. You should be the one thanked for everything because it allowed me to realize little Hu had the aura of the Black Tortoise true god.”

“The aura of the Black Tortoise true god?” Lei Yu was like a monk rubbing his bald head in confusion to the old turtle’s words.

“Come into my palace and I’ll

explain everything in detail to you.” Only after those two started making their way into the palace did the over a thousand demonic cultivators recover their senses. When the old turtle appeared, they forgot to salute him. Now that the old turtle was going back inside, they obviously had to show respect by bowing and saying: “We respectfully send off the Sea Emperor!”

Once the two left, all the demonic cultivators were pushing forward and jabbering about something. As for that eel Guman, he was already pushed to the back of their minds.



# Chapter 342: A Very Generous Gift

As they entered the main hall, the luxuriousness of it was no less than Long Er's Scaling Dragon Cave. The whole ground was made of crystals and although it wasn't actual crystal stones, it was still considered a rare mineral of the seabed. On both sides of the hall were brackets holding onto luminescent pearls which made the main hall quite bright. In the center of the main hall was a golden throne that whoever sat upon, even if it was a child, would give off an Emperor's momentum.

"This place is really not bad." Lei Yu

couldn't help commenting and staring all around.

That huge golden throne could allow five people to sit at once. The old turtle pulled Lei Yu with him to sit down, a special treatment not anyone can enjoy.

“This is all from the appreciation of these underwater brats.” The old turtle smiled.

Lei Yu then asked: “Senior, you had previously mentioned my big brother had the aura of the Black Tortoise true god. What's that about?” Lei Yu was really curious about this.

With a light smile, the old turtle replied: “The Black Tortoise true

god will choose amongst the billions of existences to be his vessel. When little Hu reached the Gold Core stage, there was a strong resonance between him and my Black Tortoise Shield. If it wasn't because of this, there's no way I would have gifted him the shield."

"What kind of power does the Black Tortoise Shield possess? As one of the divine beasts, why would the Black Tortoise choose my big brother?" Lei Yu asked in confusion.

"Little Hu doesn't know about this and needs to continue getting stronger in order to break past the barrier to understand it himself. I'm telling you this today for your own

knowledge but I hope you will keep this a secret from him and allow him to discover it on his own.” Said the old turtle.

Lei Yu nodded to show he would keep it a secret. Right after that, the old turtle continued: “The ancestors of the gods have lived throughout the ages. From the beginning of time, their existence all came from the same source and that source also nourished their power. These bodies of power have been split into six paths; East, South, West, and North are considered one body. The top and the bottom are split into two realms. The two realms are further split into two regions but they are all part of the same source.”

“Uh...” Lei Yu blinked a few times and embarrassedly said: “Senior, can you say it in simpler terms? I didn’t understand a single word you’ve just said.”

“In other words, there were originally six great divine beasts and six great demonic beasts in charge during the ancient times. Right now, the demonic beasts are silent while there appears to be some divines beasts gradually waking up.”

“You’re saying Nuo Hu has been chosen by the Black Tortoise true god as its vessel to awaken in?”

“That’s absolutely right, and you should know that Long Er belongs to the Dragon Clan which is also

the origin point of a divine beast. But of course not everyone of the Dragon Clan is a divine beast. Just like me - although I have the outer appearance of the Black Tortoise Xuan Wu, I've only grasped the ancient Black Tortoise techniques and don't possess the divine beast essence. I've only been blowing my own trumpet all these years. Now when it comes to little Hu...

Hu... if he's able to train longer and increase his strength, he may eventually one day reach the power of the Black Tortoise true god!"

Lei Yu widened his eyes as he couldn't believe his big brother would one day achieve such success! It looks like he definitely can't be allowed to know about this

too early. Although Lei Yu knew Nuo Hu's personality quite well, telling him such a huge piece of news might cause Nuo Hu to feel he'd become strong in the future and actually slack off right now.

“What else is included with the six great divine beasts?” Lei Yu asked.

“At the head of the pack is the Multicolored Divine Bull. Riding on its back is the Vermillion Bird. On its left is the Black Tortoise, on its right is the White Tiger, and at its rear is the Azure Dragon. And the final one being the Lord of all these sacred guardians, a being known as Ares!”

Lei Yu swallowed hard as he was internally shocked to hear the name

Ares! So could the bull-head been already identified as one of the divine beasts a thousand years ago?

“What’s wrong little Yu?” The old turtle asked when he saw Lei Yu’s shocked expression.

Lei Yu shook his head, “Oh, no, nothing. I’ve gained some understanding of the situation so thank you senior, for explaining everything.”

“It’s nothing much, most likely those in the senior generation all know about this.” The old turtle smiled.

“I heard today was senior’s birthday?” Asked Lei Yu.

“Indeed it is. I had originally not



wanted to make a big deal out of it but that kiddo Guman, who I'm favorable towards, wanted to do something for me so I couldn't reject his well wishes."

Lei Yu's hand shimmered and a large piece of

piece of light blue crystal stone appeared. Lei Yu was planning to use this to cultivate while outside of the Devil King's Castle. Now that he found out it was the old turtle's birthday and there wasn't anything else he could bring out, Lei Yu decided to pull out the crystal stone from his Universal Pouch.

"This is a small appreciation from me so I hope that senior accepts it." Lei Yu smiled.

Looking at this two meter long, half a meter wide, and about twenty centimeter thick crystal stone, the old turtle's eyes became round and wide. "Such a big piece of crystal stone... and it's even a blue crystal stone!"

Lei Yu lightly smiled. "I can sense that senior is struggling at the edge of the late Soul Splitting stage. You never know, this item might be the necessary catalyst allowing you to make a breakthrough." From the very beginning, Lei Yu had already sensed the old turtle's strength. The currently Lei Yu even has the ability to sense someone's strength all the way to the late Boundary Transition stage now.

"Where did you get this crystal

from? And such a generous gift, there's no way I can accept it! This is like the ultimate treasure of all cultivators! Also... also there's such a large portion of it!"

The mouth of the old turtle was saying this, but his eyes had never left the crystal a single time. It looks like he was really eager to have such an item but was just embarrassed to accept it.

Lei Yu could see through the old turtle's desire. "Don't worry, this crystal stone wasn't stolen or robbed from someone. I still have some left over for myself so I hope that senior doesn't continue to decline it. This is considered a

is considered a gift for your

birthday, okay?”

“Then... then I can only thank you with sincerity! This old turtle has been stuck at the late Soul Splitting stage for a while now and has never been able to find enough spiritual energy to make my breakthrough. Especially when the underwater environment here is rather weak in the gathering of spiritual energy. Now that you’ve given me such an item, it’s similar to sending me coal during a snowstorm!” The old turtle excitedly said.

Lei Yu’s eyebrows went up; the Immortal World also had the saying of sending coal during a snowstorm?

The old turtle excitedly received the

crystal stone. If Lei Yu had brought out the purple crystal stone instead of the blue crystal stone, most likely the old turtle would be so excited they he wouldn't be able to sleep for several days.

“Oh right little Yu, why did you come to the eastern sea region? And how come little Hu isn't with you?” Asked the old turtle.

“I have an important task to take care of and couldn't bring him along. But don't worry, big brother is cultivating very seriously and had already reached the Nascent Soul stage.” Lei Yu replied with a smile.

“Nascent Soul? This short decade and he's already reached the strength of the Nascent Soul stage?”

Lei Yu's words had shocked the old turtle once again. One needs to know that in order to break through to the Nascent Soul stage from the Gold Core stage; it required a long amount of time. Apart from time, it also required a continuous hard work without a break in order to successfully accomplish it. The old turtle couldn't believe that Nuo Hu would have the strength of a Nascent Soul expert in such a short time.

# Chapter 343: Jade Revolving

The old turtle didn't know but within the Devil King's Castle, a person of average talent would still cultivate faster than someone with exceptional talent out in the regular Immortal World. Especially when Nuo Hu's talent would be considered one of the top out of all the other geniuses. Otherwise, he wouldn't be a Fifth Order Warrior when he was only in his twenties during the time in the modern world.

“Little Yu, what level of strength have you reached now? How come I cannot sense your energy

fluctuations?” The old turtle asked while thinking Lei Yu had used some secret skill in order to block his senses.

Lei Yu originally didn't want to bring up anything about himself but since it was already mentioned, and that he was dealing with his sworn big brother's master, Lei Yu didn't want to hide anything. He then honestly replied: “I am the same as senior, at the late Soul Splitting stage.”

The old turtle was slightly surprised and then started laughing. “Okay, stop joking with this old turtle. Quick, tell me what secret skill you are using in order to hide your own strength?”



Lei Yu felt a bit helpless and understood why the old turtle didn't believe him. Who in this world would believe that in a short decade, he went from an insignificant brat with a newly formed Gold Core to a super expert at the Soul Splitting stage that could be counted one's hand in the Immortal World?

Actions were louder than words so Lei Yu stood up from the golden throne. As he walked to the center of the main hall, one could see his mouth chanting something. The

brand on his right arm suddenly flared up brightly before a column of lightning the shape of a dragon burst forth from his body. This was a dragon covered in lightning that

slowly wrapped itself around Lei Yu. There was a “hissing” noise from the surrounding water and it even started boiling. Right after that, the huge dragon slowly unwound itself onto the ground. Lei Yu then made a thought and a faint illusory purple light flew towards the dragon. The next moment, another Lei Yu with the same looks appeared in front of the old turtle, except the skin of this new Lei Yu had a light purple tinge to it.

The old turtle’s eyes were already round and wide. He was so shocked that he didn’t even realize that he was releasing snot bubbles from his nostrils that were floating upwards to the surface. He was currently glancing non-stop between Lei Yu and his soul body without blinking.

After a long while, the old turtle finally stood up from the golden throne.

“You are truly a monster! An utter true monster! How would anyone in the Immortal World dare to compare themselves to your cultivation speed?!” He then clutched onto Lei Yu’s arm, “It looks like for the Dragon Vein to recognize its owner, the owner would definitely have unimaginable achievements!”

Lei Yu had a faint smile on his face but there was actually some bitterness in his heart. He remembered the Devil King had once said all of these should have belonged to him and not Lei Yu. But what Lei Yu didn’t know was that

even if the Devil King personally went to the spot of the Dragon Vein, the

the Dragon Vein may not recognize him unless he had a strong will and a powerful soul. And one of the main conditions for the Dragon Vein to recognize its owner was something the Devil King didn't know about: it required a righteous person and not an evil one!

"I hope so..." Lei Yu smiled bitterly. "That's right senior, have you heard of something called the Jade Revolving Grass?"

"Jade Revolving Grass? How do you know the name of such a grass?" The old turtle asked slightly surprised.

Lei Yu was overjoyed because it looks like the old turtle knows about it or else he wouldn't respond like that. "I have an old friend that's an expert at refining pills and I happened to learn a bit of pill refining from him. Since I've come to the eastern sea region, I was hoping to find traces of this herb."

There was a sparkle from the old turtle before he smiled, "Come with me."

Lei Yu felt it was a strange reaction but kind of guessed the reason and started getting excited.

He followed the old turtle through several turns in the palace before arriving at a place that looked like a garden. This place had many

varieties of sea grass and multicolored corals but since it was underwater, it didn't give off the smell of flowers where a typical garden would have.

In the center of this so called garden, Lei Yu was staring at a cluster of sea grass that gave off a light green light. His jaws dropped and it was a while before he was able to ask: "That's... is that the Jade Revolving Grass?"

"That's right." The old turtle clasped his hands behind his back,

his back, "The Jade Revolving Grass has a strong ability of replenishing one's spiritual energy. I happen to come across it back then and managed to transplant it here. I

never imagined that I would meet you here and you happen to be looking for it.”

“What effects will there be if I ate the Jade Revolving Grass raw?” Lei Yu asked.

“The Jade Revolving Grass has the ability of replenishing 30% of the consumer’s internal energy. But if it underwent refinement by a master level refiner with the addition of other herbs, I believe it would at least reach the effects of 50% internal energy replenishment.”

Lei Yu swallowed hard a few times. Back then, Ceng Hong told him it took him many tries in order to successfully refine the Green Vein Dewdrop pill to have the effect of

100% energy replenishment. If he managed to have such an ability... and managed to have a few pills on hand, wouldn't that mean he could dominate the entire Immortal World?

Unfortunately, one clump of Jade Revolving Grass can only be refined three times. There was a high chance of failure accompanying it and once one fails, the effects of the grass will be completely gone. Lei Yu had already known how rare the Jade Revolving Grass was in the < > and it wasn't something you could get whenever you wanted. If one didn't have the luck, even flipping the whole eastern sea region upside down may not net any at all.

Lei Yu pointed at the Jade Revolving



Grass while glancing at the old turtle. He didn't know what to say and instead, his face started getting red because he was slightly embarrassed.

“Little Yu, how about

Yu, how about I give you these Jade Revolving Grass as a gift?” The old turtle laughed as he could see Lei Yu's thoughts.

“Really?” The excited Lei Yu gasped out and even forgotten the usual decorum of declining it. The old turtle didn't care about it and nodded, “Let's consider it as a small reciprocal gift from the birthday present you gave me!”

Knowing how precious this main

ingredient for the Green Vein Dewdrop pill was, Lei Yu became extremely ecstatic.

“But...” The word from the old turtle startled Lei Yu and made him perk up his ears for the rest of the sentence.

“But the Jade Revolving Grass has to be refined within three months of being picked or else it will lose a portion of its medicinal properties. Although it’s not obvious, it will actually reduce the success rate when refining.”

Those words of the old turtle made Lei Yu realize why he kept it planted in the garden instead of storing it someplace. For it to lose a portion of its medicinal properties

after being picked for three months, this clearly showed how precious this plant was.

Lei Yu felt an oncoming headache. If he were to pick it now when he didn't know when he would accomplish his task. And if it couldn't be complete it in three months, wouldn't he be decreasing his own success rate of refinement? For someone like Lei Yu that had never refined a pill before, the chances of him succeeding would probably be next to impossible.

“Little Yu, don't you have a task you need to deal with? How about coming back here after you're done? There shouldn't be any difference or issues with that.” The old turtle reminded him.

# Chapter 344: White Scaled Giant Crocodile

Those words sounded reasonable and there wasn't any need for him to keep the Jade Revolving Grass on him. Declining the old turtle might actually make Lei Yu look like he didn't trust him.

Upon returning to the main hall, a youth was seen rushing in. He was about two meters tall and extremely thin, and no different from a stick of bamboo pole. As he was entering the main hall, he was already yelling: "Sea Emperor! There's an outsider causing trou..." Once he

saw Lei Yu and the old turtle sitting together on the golden throne, his eyes glazed over.

Lei Yu stood up and smiled, “My apologies, that was a misunderstanding previously.”

Guman’s eyes landed on the old turtle and saw the latter nod with a smile so he quickly forced a smile. “You are truly powerful. I believe in the eastern sea region, you can be considered an overlord!”

Lei Yu waved his hands and smile, “I’m in no way an overlord, I just happened to be passing by and encountered senio... the Sea Emperor who was an old friend.”

After chatting for a bit, Lei Yu

realized how the old turtle was able to carve out his own territory in the eastern sea region. The surface area of the sea was extremely huge and the further one went out, the more experts there would be. They all happened to be demonic cultivators as well. Within this region, the old turtle's late Soul Splitting stage power could be considered as one of the peak experts, but his territory only took up a small portion of the sea region.

Demonic cultivators had one special ability: the ability to

detect outsiders or non demonic cultivators. No matter how strong that person was; once they entered their range, even if that person was at the Mahayana realm, a mere

Gold Core demonic cultivator would be able to tell him apart from fellow demonic cultivators. This was because normal martial cultivators did not possess the unique aura a demonic cultivator typically had. This was something Lei Yu had experienced before when he was in the water region of the Southern Wild Lands.

“I can’t delay anymore and will be leaving right now.” Lei Yu stood up and cupped his hands.

“When you come back, I’ll have the Jade Revolving Grass ready for you!” The old turtle cupped his hands and sent Lei Yu off.

It wasn’t that Lei Yu was in a rush, it was because the Devil King in his

Universal Pouch released an aura of grievance. If Lei Yu didn't leave soon, and the Devil King happened to suddenly pop out of the pouch... a floating skull would be a terrifying scene for others to behold.

Moreover, Lei Yu didn't have the power to trap the Devil King in the storage pouch since he couldn't even control the trace of energy still inside his body.

After bidding farewell to the old turtle, Lei Yu flew out of the waters and into the air. He figured he would just keep on meeting more and more opponents while underwater and that was trouble he didn't want to attract. And since he already had access to the Jade Revolving Grass, there wasn't any further need to travel underwater.



The surface area of the sea region was no less than the landmass of the Immortal World. Lei Yu didn't require

require a long amount of time of flying but it still took him over half a month at top speeds.

During this time, Lei Yu would occasionally take out the Sky Devouring Sword and practice the new grasped 24th form of the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique. In actual combat, this 24th form would be considered Lei Yu's life insurance so he wouldn't display it unless at the last resort.

Tsunamis or swells were a common occurrence in the Mortal and the Immortal World. As long as there

was a strong enough wind, it would cause a huge wave. The huge waves and the gloomy skies would cause a depressive atmosphere for anyone.

Lei Yu had a foreboding that something would happen but that didn't stop his flying. Even though he wasn't seeking trouble, that didn't mean trouble wouldn't come looking for him. The current region Lei Yu was flying past happened to belong to a White Scaled Giant Crocodile that had cultivated for over 10,000 years and reached the early Boundary Transition stage.

Normal crocodiles should be living in small bodies of water such as rivers and lakes, but this White Scaled Giant Crocodile was different from others. It was an

ancient demonic beast that one rarely encountered, but wasn't ranked within the six major demonic beasts. It was only considered a very strong demonic beast, but even so, it possessed the ability to flip the earth and heavens upside down. Especially in the sea region, it allowed it to fully display its powerful abilities. Its attacks were extremely vicious and this would be considered Lei Yu's bad luck to encounter it out of all places.

"Voluntarily leave behind your Nascent soul or else you won't even have

even have a whole corpse left!"

These words suddenly came from

all directions. The voice came from underwater and had a muffled tone to it, but Lei Yu could hear each word very clearly.

Lei Yu never slowed down because he had already detected a huge demonic cultivator thirty miles out following behind him. It was only now that the demonic cultivator made its move.

Lei Yu didn't panic but he still had to make some preparations. He started raising his internal energy levels so that he could either attack or run away.

"I'm only passing through so please don't make things hard for me!" Lei Yu was floating in midair as his voice travelled in all directions.

Even the surface of the water was trembling which showed how strong Lei Yu was currently.

At this time, there was a disturbance in the waters before a huge wall of water shot up a hundred meters high. Its height almost reached Lei Yu in midair. Once the wall of water crashed back down, water sprayed everywhere in the vicinity.

As the water disappeared, Lei Yu looked closely at the appearance of a towering crocodile. The appearance of this huge crocodile wasn't that much different from other crocodiles except that its body was over forty meters in length. The width of its body was around ten meters, its body was mostly wide, its

eyes were blood red and it had a vertical slit of yellow pupils. With its mouth open, one could see each sharp tooth was about half the size of Lei Yu's body. This was only the hind teeth it used for chewing while the four front sharp teeth used for attacking was pretty much the size of Lei Yu.

Even

of Lei Yu.

Even though they were so far apart, Lei Yu could still smell the fishy stench of the crocodile's breath.

Seeing such a huge creature, Lei Yu's expression never faltered while the green brand on his right arm started flashing faintly. If things

turned south, the powerful force inside him could be easily released at a moment's time.

After licking its lips, the White Scaled Giant Crocodile used a low but ear deafening cold tone: "You dare to intrude upon my White Scaled Giant Crocodile's territory? Leave your Nascent soul behind for my consumption or else I will rip you into shreds!"

Lei Yu's body twitched a bit as he narrowed his eyes. "It looks like you want me to leave my Nascent soul no matter what?"

"That's right!"

Lei Yu coldly sneered, "Since I'm going to die anyway, I might as well

fight it out with you for the hell of it.”

Lei Yu’s words lightly startled the giant crocodile. When others faced him, not many would dare to say such words. He never imagined this human in front of him would have such courage.

Although the White Scaled Giant Crocodile was a level higher than him, Lei Yu had his own unique abilities and the Sky Devouring Sword. Facing such a terrifying and vicious looking demonic beast, Lei Yu was still confident he would be able to safely run away.

But the hot blooded him didn’t want to do that. Once someone strong meets another strong person,



not being able to exchange some moves would be such a pity. This was the first strong enemy that Lei Yu had encountered ever since reaching the late Soul Splitting stage so he wanted to test out his own strength.

# Chapter 345: First Combination

As his voice faded, Lei Yu clapped his palms together and a hissing noise was heard . The sky was already filled with storm clouds but once Lei Yu's palms clasped together, a huge lightning dragon flew down . Its target was precisely the White Scaled Giant Crocodile floating in midair!

The giant crocodile wasn't able to react fast enough from the sudden attack . But since it possessed a naturally thick armor, it didn't care about such a normal looking attack . As the lightning landed on its back, it only felt a slight numbness

and didn't sustain any injuries.

"I never thought you would dare to make the first move! You're simply courting death!" The White Scaled Giant Crocodile dove through the air with its open mouth about to bite at Lei Yu.

Although Lei Yu had a strong body, the size of him wasn't even enough to cover the gap between the giant crocodile's teeth . For such an enormous demonic beast to attack such a small target didn't look quite right . But one still had to admire the White Scaled Giant Crocodile's speed and precision; in a moment's time where Lei Yu hadn't even finished breathing, he was already within the jaws of the giant crocodile.

Lei Yu didn't panic and condensed internal energy beneath his feet . There was a sudden bright light and like a lit firecracker, he blasted off to the side past a gap of the giant crocodile's teeth.

But was the White Scaled Giant Crocodile's attack that simple? Nope, it had already expected Lei Yu to escape from its bite . When Lei Yu hadn't escaped far away yet, a whip like object swept straight for him.

In front of Lei Yu was a giant tail and behind him

was a large mouth: there was no way for him to escape!

Lei Yu clenched his teeth and

injected internal energy into his skeletal structure that contained metallic properties . One could hear a large “bang” before Lei Yu’s body shuddered . His entire skeletal structure felt like it was going to break apart as a look of horror appeared in his eyes.

“This giant crocodile’s attack actually has an anti-shock effect!”

Lei Yu’s body was shaking as “pak pak” sounds was heard from his body . The pain from his body then disappeared without a trace, which was caused by a beam of white light from the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost.

After exchanging two moves, the White Scaled Giant Crocodile didn’t gain any advantages over Lei Yu

causing it to be a bit surprised .  
There weren't many people that  
were able to escape from the  
clutches of his mouth . And in this  
sea region, there were barely any  
demonic cultivators at the  
Boundary Transition stage .  
Moreover, he was almost an  
existence almost on par with the six  
major demonic beasts so how could  
there be any common cultivators  
around here with such an  
extraordinary strength?

This was called a frog at the bottom  
of well looking into the sky . This  
White Scaled Giant Crocodile had  
never left its own territory so it  
naturally didn't know there were  
many existences much stronger  
than Lei Yu in the Immortal World .  
Over a century ago when the

Immortal World was in chaos, the weakest top expert that participated in it was in the late Soul Fusion stage . Now there was already two experts that had reached the Mahayana stage who could deal with this White Scaled Giant Crocodile as easy as flicking dirt from their nails.

Lei Yu's goals was to test

test out his abilities and had no intention of killing this giant crocodile . But just with the giant crocodile's bite and a sweep of its tail, Lei Yu could tell the crocodile wanted to take his life which caused his anger to rise up.

With a roar, Lei Yu interlocked his hands and pushed down, causing all

the muscles in his body to start bulging . Just like a slab of granite, his muscles were now filled with an explosive power.

Lei Yu had enshrouded himself with his internal energy making it similar to an energy shield that surrounded the whole body . He didn't want to experience the direct impact of that huge tail anymore since it was quite a painful experience.

It looks like the giant crocodile's natural defensive body wasn't something Lei Yu could break past in a short time, so the only thing he could do was engage it up close and find a flaw for a fatal strike!

After his decision, Lei Yu started



moving about the giant crocodile with the shield covering him and not giving it a chance to land a strike.

Several fierce pounces by the White Scaled Giant Crocodile netted it nothing but air . Lei Yu's expertise was his speed which was similar to lightning! In front of this monster, Lei Yu was like a little flea making the giant crocodile roar out in annoyance.

After another several rounds of attack that didn't land, white energy suddenly rose out from the giant crocodile . The white energy created multiple round hoops surrounding it before its body started shrinking . Its body kept getting smaller and smaller!

Finally, its body turned into an upright position . There were no changes in its appearance except for its pelvic bones moving back which allowed it the upright posture.

posture.

Lei Yu was shocked . Although demonic cultivators were able to transform into a human form, the current giant crocodile didn't do that while its appearance reminded him of a certain person . And this person was someone Lei Yu hated to the bones!

It was precisely Doctor Tony who had hidden in a secret base in the United States and created a terrifying bacterium! Although

there were stark difference between the two of them, especially their skin color, yet there still remained many similarities!

Seeing his enemy in front of him, Lei Yu's clenched his teeth and his eyes went red . Not giving the just transformed giant crocodile a chance, the Sky Devouring Sword in his hand started emitting a bright light.

Lei Yu then roared out: "Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, first combination!"

This was the first time Lei Yu was using the first combination he had grasped . The Thirty-six Lunar Star technique was split into six parts, and each part had its own style of

attacking . Once someone masters the first six forms, that's equivalent of reaching the Gold Core stage . Mastering all the forms was equivalent of reaching the strength of the bull-head . So how strong was Lei Yu's first combination attack?

The extremely bright purple internal energy contained white starry dots which made it especially eye catching . The point of the Sky Devouring Sword shot out six beams of light, and those beams of lights began to fuse together forming a huge illusory crescent sickle blade . This was only a portion of when the beams of light fused together . On the edges of the crescent sickle blade were five bright stars that each looked like

one of the attack forms of the technique!

The first form was like the base igniter while the other five forms were the

forms were the blade, creating a fusion of attack that achieved its most powerful effect!

From the time Lei Yu roared out those seven words to the time of forming the first combination, not even a second of time had passed by . The crescent blade attack with the five stars had already shot towards the giant crocodile's body.

It didn't dare to hide anything back now: ever since it was born, this was the first time the White Scaled

Giant Crocodile had encountered such a powerful attack . It was now even slightly regretting its previous action of blocking Lei Yu's path.

It was planning on using its own naturally powerful defensive body to block Lei Yu's attack . But just when the attack was less than half a meter before striking its body, it finally revealed a terrified expression.

The shrill piercing sound it emitted would make many anyone's scalp go numb . The giant crocodile finally realized this crescent attack possessed a very strong penetrating power! Since it was unable to escape, the White Scaled Giant Crocodile tensed its scale armor up in attempts to resist with its life on

the line!

“Ahhh!”

“Thump!”

“Pak!”

Several strange sounds were heard . The sharp crescent blade sliced into the White Scaled Giant Crocodile but it wasn't able to break past its hard scale armor and only caused it to shudder violently . Right after that, several large “booms” was heard because it was the explosion of those five stars on the edge of the crescent blade.

The eyes of the White Scaled Giant Crocodile bulged out . If it previously didn't activate its own defense to the maximum

proportions, most likely it would have been already cut in half! And the several explosions were obviously an aftereffect of when the crescent blade wasn't able to kill its opponent off!



# Chapter 346:

## Taking The Nascent Soul

Amongst its white leathered scale were five fresh wounds . Blood was dripping out and splashing into the sea before disappearing without a trace.

The White Scaled Giant Crocodile roared into the air; it had been completely enraged by Lei Yu! It had never suffered any injuries to its body before and now a puny martial cultivator had damaged its natural body armor . How could it not be in rage?

After issuing an ear piercing roar, its white internal energy erupted from the giant crocodile . The white energy coursed throughout its body before all heading towards its mouth . As the internal energy reached its mouth, two long fangs started elongating before it slightly curved.

If one was bitten by those two long fangs, most likely one would be ripped into thousands of pieces!

Lei Yu knew that it wouldn't be easier to defeat a demonic beast who had reached the Boundary Transition stage . He had already finished preparing his second attack and was only waiting for the right time to release it.

Lei Yu was now concentrating on injecting internal energy into his arms so that the powerful energy currently stored inside the Sky Devouring Sword can be easily released at a moment's notice.

The White Scaled Giant Crocodile's speed was considered tyrannical, but Lei Yu's speed was also as quick as lightning!

As the former and the latter struck out, it was the latter that gained the advantage! Lei Yu's attack was a form of energy attack, while the White Scaled Giant Crocodile had to get close to its opponent in order to use its body as the attacking medium!

The victor between the two was

already obvious . Lei Yu roared out each word: “Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, second combination!”

His arms came down, the sword flashed, and there was a bright gleam!

Lei Yu’s attack a formed into an arrow made up of radiant light . With him as the bow and the Sky Devouring Sword as the strings, the arrow was shot out at breathless speeds!

“Twang!”

The Thirty-six Lunar Star technique’s seventh form was the arrow while it contained five eye-catching stars . The moment the White Scaled Giant Crocodile

rushed towards Lei Yu, the arrow pierced through its chest!

The speed was too fast for one to react . The White Scaled Giant Crocodile didn't even get a chance to show off its other special moves before its life was taken by Lei Yu.

While gasping big breaths of air, Lei Yu was actually falling down from the air . He plummeted into the sea before resurfacing and trying to catch his breath.

If that White Scaled Giant Crocodile wasn't taken down by that move, it would definitely be over for Lei Yu . Using two combinations one after another had completely drained Lei Yu of his internal energy . He was so drained

that he almost felt like his soul had left his body . The White Scaled Giant Crocodile had an insanely strong defense, but it was fortunate that after being angered by Lei Yu, it directed its power into an offensive attack instead of maintaining its defense . This was the flaw the giant crocodile had created itself: relaxing its focus on defense was the cause of its own demise!

The moment Lei Yu fell down was also when the waves surged . The White Scaled Giant Crocodile had previously shrunk its size similar to Lei Yu's, had suddenly reverted back into its forty plus meter size upon death . Intense waves was caused by it crashing into the waters that flung Lei Yu dozens of

meters away . Lei Yu didn't bother about any of this because the most important thing he needed now was to recover!

After his brief

brief recovery, he felt a cool sensation circulate inside him . Lei Yu lightly smiled, "Thank you Xue Yu . "

"I never imagined master could kill an opponent at the Boundary Transition stage without using your Nascent Soul! You're truly very powerful!" Xue Yu's voice was transmitted into Lei Yu's mind.

"That's because the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique that the bull-head imparted to me is very

powerful, or else I'd definitely have had to split my soul out to fight . ”

“I thought I'd be able to appear in reality again but didn't expect to be not needed, sigh!” Said Xue Yu while pretending to be disappointed.

“Next time, next time, first help me recover!” After saying that, Lei Yu who was floating on his back in the sea went back to a sitting position and didn't sink into the waters . Lei Yu was in the process of absorbing while Xue Yu assisted by healing and refining the spiritual energy . With the cooperation of the two, Lei Yu's energy recovery rate was clearly much faster now.

It's not entirely that the bull-head's



Thirty-six Lunar Star technique was that powerful that it could pierce through anything . This martial technique was of course an exquisite piece of art, but the power behind was only a singular property . If both Lei Yu and the bull-head stood at the apex of the Mahayana stage, there's a chance that the bull-head would not be Lei Yu's opponent!

Having analyzed the martial technique for such a long time, Lei Yu used his unique powers and integrated it with the Thirty-six Lunar Star's special offensive properties . So with his special lightning attributes fused in, he was able to come up with his own attack methods . On the other hand, the bull-head was only capable of

releasing attacks that contained internal energy and wouldn't be able to achieve the piercing powers

piercing powers like Lei Yu's . With the difference between the two, it will clearly show the gap in power between their attacks.

After several hours of recuperating, Lei Yu finally opened his eyes . He still felt a bit weak but at least it was much better than how he was feeling before.

In the Immortal World whether one was a martial cultivator, a demonic cultivator, or the elusive devil cultivator that Lei Yu hasn't seen yet, they were all full of personal treasures . Lei Yu of course wouldn't let this opportunity of

taking treasures slip by . And there had always been a question he was curious about and he was going to find out soon!

Lei Yu flew up into the air towards the White Scaled Giant Crocodile's corpse that had drifted over a few kilometers away . After descending down, Lei Yu injected his internal energy into the Sky Devouring Sword and stabbed it into the giant crocodile's abdomen . Blood started gushing out while Lei Yu remained extremely cautious . He didn't forget about the explosion that happened to the Dragon-Snake's corpse back then.

After retreating backwards and not seeing any changes, Lei Yu once again went up to the corpse and

dug deeper with the Sky Devouring Sword . Without the protection of internal energy as a reinforcement, the giant crocodile's natural defense was still strong but couldn't resist the Sky Devouring Sword filled with energy.

Upon examining closer, Lei Yu actually found an infant like being floating there! He edged the Sky Devouring Sword close to the infant and suddenly a bright white light flashed as if it was making its last resistance!

This was the Nascent Soul of a super expert at the Boundary Transition stage, something that a Gold Core could never compare to!

The Nascent Soul that lacked a

living body was slowly sucked into the palms of Lei

palms of Lei Yu . After his suppression, Lei Yu was successful in calming it down while the previous resistance disappeared . At this time, the Nascent Soul that was giving off a warm white light really looked like a small infant lying in the palms of Lei Yu.

The infant wasn't very big; it was about the size of a single hand and his two palms managed to cup it perfectly.

With a thought, he stored it inside his Universal Pouch . Right now Lei Yu wasn't in a hurry to use it . Once he took care of all his things, he will have plenty of time to raise his

strength in the future.

While on top of the Sky Devouring Sword, Lei Yu was now slowly absorbing spiritual energy to replenish his internal energy as he continued flying forward.

At the edge of what was considered the eastern sea region, living creatures and other demonic cultivators were seen less often . Lei Yu could clearly feel an enormous pressure in this area, and even the air felt thick in this environment . As he flew forward, he could feel an invisible energy dragging him down . Although it didn't cause too much of an impact, Lei Yu still felt uncomfortable from its effect.

Lei Yu gradually descended onto a

small island . He looked off into the distant gloomy fog but couldn't see anything beyond it.

At this time, his mind heard the Devil King's voice: "This region is the Forest of Fog, a place that no one has dared to take half a step into!"

"No one? Then what about me?" Lei Yu raised the Sky Devouring Sword and cut his hair that had reached his waist already . A chunk of hair fell to the ground and Lei Yu's already wild looking hair looked even messier now.

-----

# Chapter 347:

## Swordback Tiger

While staring at the forest that will filled with the aura of death, Lei Yu felt slightly irritated . With the faint mist enshrouding this place, it had actually hidden this forest within the sea region.

Before entering, Lei Yu had to make some preparations that he couldn't do without . He was holding onto a red ribbon while his Universal Pouch was to the right-side of his waist so that items can be taken out at the shortest amount of time . With the Sky Devouring Sword in his hand, "Can we go now?"



“Use your strongest attack to break apart the outer protective net for the forest!” Reminded the Devil King . Lei Yu condensed internal energy on his feet before flying towards this dangerous forest filled with unknowns.

In the air, the shadow of a person was seen holding a brightly lit sword . An extremely strong aura was fluctuating in the area that was filled with a terrifying amount of lightning . One could see this person clench his teeth before slashing down fiercely . A strong beam of purple energy that was similar to a purple dragon rushed towards the light brown outer protective net of the Forest of Fog.

“Bang!”

“Boom!”

After lightly breathing out, Lei Yu observed the scene become clearer as the barrier disappeared . The scene of dense populated trees appeared before him while there didn't seem to be any other living beings in the area . There was only dead silence.

There were no sounds of insects and no sounds of birds chirping . Even the trees didn't have any leaves on them making this place look like a bunch of dried up vertical corpses . This wasn't strange because this forest had been constantly covered by the mist barrier so

sunlight couldn't enter . There's no

way these trees would be able to survive under those conditions.

Lei Yu then carefully descended to the outer periphery of this Forest of Fog and felt that the pressure here was even stronger . Lei Yu released his spiritual perception in hopes of finding the first barrier's guardian: the Swordback Tiger.

The Devil King had already told Lei Yu about the powers of the Swordback Tiger . It was a beast at the late Fusion Soul stage and it was good at long-range attacks . Lei Yu still had to be careful because before he even reaches the Swordback Tiger, it may launch an attack from a long distance.

When Lei Yu reached the late Soul

Splitting stage, the area of his spiritual perception was greater than before . Although this Forest of Fog took up a large area, Lei Yu's spiritual perception was still able to encapsulate this entire first barrier region.

There was no other living beings in this area except for something on top of a thick tree, where Lei Yu was able to detect a living entity that was breathing . As he carefully got closer, he began to hide his own aura . To be honest, what Lei Yu was doing was unnecessary.

Breaking apart the protective barrier of this Forest of Fog had caused such a large commotion, so how could the Swordback Tiger not know? It of course knew but there

was no need for it to reveal its presence yet . As long as it made sure the intruder couldn't break the second protective barrier, then it would consider itself of fulfilling its duty . It was taking a nap while patiently waiting for Lei Yu's arrival.

Lei Yu decided to walk instead of flying.

The dried twigs underneath his feet were all making "cracking" noises as he stepped on them . With a light stomp, Lei Yu leapt up and landed on a sturdy looking tree . While holding onto the Sky Devouring Sword, he coldly stared at the living being that wasn't too far away . Lei Yu didn't bother to continue hiding because the huge

being was already staring at him from a distance away . Most likely it had already detected Lei Yu a while back.

There was a giant yellow tiger with black stripes that looked no different from any other tigers, except that its body was twice as large as normal . The most unique thing about it was its back: there were spikes about 30 centimeters long sticking out of each of its spinal joints . There were about twenty to thirty of those spikes!

Those two did not bother speaking with each other . The Swordback Tiger knew this person was an intruder while Lei Yu knew he wouldn't be able to pass unless he killed this Swordback Tiger . The

only thing these two had to do was start their life or death battle!

“Roar!”

The ear deafening sound of a tiger's roar was heard . There was a slight grin on Lei Yu's face because this was the biggest tiger he has ever seen in his life . And with those white spikes growing from its back that looked like short swords, placing it in a zoo as an attraction would definitely attract plenty of visitors . But if it was used as a mount, the rider would need to have some skills or need to add some extra holes to their butt.

Lei Yu didn't move yet but the fierce tiger already made its move . One could see it

see it suddenly pounce towards the ground with its back arched . Each of those spikes were shimmering a white light as if they were arrows about to be released . The target was none other than the intruder in front of the tiger: Lei Yu.

Lei Yu didn't put the tiger in his eyes . One had to pay attention to a late Fusion Soul stage demonic beast, but its attack to the current him didn't cause much threat . The Sky Devouring Sword in his hand was exuding a faint purple light . He was waiting; waiting for the best time to not waste too much effort in slicing the Swordback Tiger's throat.

Seconds passed by . The Swordback Tiger had made its preparations for



an attack but didn't launch its spikes because it noticed the confidence on Lei Yu's face . This look of confidence made it have thoughts of wanting to flee, but its duty was to guard this area and even if it were to die, it couldn't take half a step out of this place!

With another roar, those already decaying trees starting falling over from the shaking power of its voice . Not waiting anymore, the Swordback Tiger's back suddenly brightened . Right after that, those short sword like spikes on its back started shooting forth towards Lei Yu.

“Whoosh, whoosh...”

There were a dozen attacks and

their frequency was in a consistent manner . Before the first short spike arrived in front of Lei Yu, there was already another one shooting out from the Swordback Tiger's back.

Lei Yu was in no hurry as he used the Sky Devouring Sword to knock aside those short spikes flying at him . “Ding ding, clang clang . ” Some were knocked flying towards the surrounding trees while some were deflected

some were deflected into the ground . Not a single one managed to touch a hair on Lei Yu's body.

The Swordback Tiger's look of shock was becoming more apparent . After roaring out, its back once again gave off a bright light . Those

areas where the swords like spikes had been shot out from suddenly gave rise to a yellow energy . Lei Yu slightly widened his eyes as he observed those swords starting to grow from the Swordback Tiger's back again . It looks like its main attacks all relied on those sword spikes, but how can such an attack harm Lei Yu at all? No, for the Swordback Tiger to reach the peak of the Fusion Soul stage, there's no way its attacks would be that simple!

After growing out another set of sword spikes, the Swordback Tiger was slowly undergoing a transformation . It didn't know Lei Yu's current strength but seeing how easily he was able to block its attack, it determined Lei Yu was at

least at the Soul Splitting stage .  
This was why it didn't dare to be  
careless.

Although Lei Yu was able to easily resist the giant tiger's attack, he was still constantly scanning his opponent's every move in hopes of finding a flaw . But for the time being, there was no flaw he was able to detect . The giant tiger was extremely devious because the position he was in was protected by trees all around . Even though those trees weren't considered a big obstacle, it was still a minor annoyance where it would affect the accuracy of his attacks and delay his reaction speed . The giant tiger was also keeping low to the ground so its weakness was protected, making Lei Yu unable to

find a place to make his move.

# Chapter 348:

## Refining The Nascent Soul

“Roar!”

With another cry, the Swordback Tiger’s second round of attack was coming!

This time, it didn’t release the sword spikes one at a time instead released a dozen or so all at once . The next moment, the fierce tiger’s figure finally stood up and followed right behind those sword spikes that had been shot out . There was a spike sticking out near its head that looked especially sharp, and

the tiger was imitating a rhinoceros wanting to ram towards Lei Yu.

Lei Yu dodged some of the spikes with his body while using the Sky Devouring Sword to deflect some the others . Upon seeing the Swordback Tiger appear in front of him, Lei Yu roared out: “You came at a good time!”

As his voice faded, the Sky Devouring Sword was rotated to a backswing and swept forth . If the Swordback Tiger continued forward at its trajectory, there would only be one outcome for it: cut in half at the waist!

Right at the critical moment, Lei Yu suddenly saw the Swordback Tiger grin! It was actually grinning!

That swift assault had suddenly stopped in place! The Swordback Tiger then threw its body to the side and its tail that was similar to a metal whip swept by! Lei Yu was shocked; he didn't expect the Swordback Tiger to be this cunning!

What gave Lei Yu a headache wasn't being struck by the tail . It was at the tip of the tiger's tail that he noticed was encased by white bones, making it look like a round ball the size of two fists . And sticking out of that ball were multiple spikes protruding out from it . If that thing smashed into his body, it wouldn't take his life but

the explosive power of it with the enhancement of the Swordback Tiger's aura would definitely cause



him some serious injuries . At that time, wouldn't he be dancing on the palm of that Swordback Tiger?

“What a treacherous move, you actually used a meteor hammer!”  
Roared Lei Yu . And beyond the expectation of the Swordback Tiger, Lei Yu had suddenly disappeared at the last second!

The next moment, Lei Yu reappeared and a purple light flashed by the Swordback Tiger's neck area . Ever since Lei Yu disappeared and its tail whip missed, it was in an unmoving defensive state . Now there was an extra injury at its throat before blood started gushing out . The huge body wobbled a few times before crashing to the ground and

losing its right to breathe.

Lei Yu breathed out lightly before looking at the giant tiger that was lying in a pool of blood motionless . The tiger's skin had actually caused Lei Yu's eyes to light up, but he couldn't just start peeling it off right?

Lei Yu then walked up towards the Swordback Tiger's abdomen, his target being its Nascent Soul . Only when one reached the Mahayana stage would their Nascent Soul disappear so below that stage, most high-leveled experts would have that infant body . Of course there would be strong and weak Nascent Souls, and the higher levels one has surpassed the Nascent Soul stage, the stronger the infant body will be

. But the chances of gaining such strong Nascent Souls was too rare . Lei Yu was fortunate enough to gain the White Scaled Giant Crocodile's Nascent Soul, which was no different from a supreme treasure . As for the Nascent Soul of this Swordback Tiger, it's not too shabby shabby in itself so there's no way Lei Yu was going to let this pass.

After spreading the abdomen apart, a yellow and black striped light shot out towards a certain direction . Lei Yu was still in a daze before hearing the Devil King cry out in his mind: "Quickly chase after it! It's an item that's required to open the second barrier!"

Hearing this, Lei Yu started rapidly

chasing after it . With his lightning like speeds, catching up to the fleeing Nascent Soul was just too easy . Within a hundred meters, Lei Yu was able to immediately intercept it!

Lei Yu flipped his palm and the Nascent Soul had nowhere else to go and could only obediently allow itself to be caught.

“Use your own internal energy to seal it or else it might explode!” The Devil King’s advice was necessary because Lei Yu had already started to feel the infant body start to violently shake . Lei Yu activated his internal energy and a purple light shot out of his body and created a silkworm like cocoon barrier around the infant body . Only when

it gradually stopped shaking did Lei Yu feel relief.

“So why would these things explode?” Lei Yu asked out of curiosity.

There was a slight hesitation upon hearing Lei Yu’s question but the Devil King still answered: “You don’t even know something like this? Every cultivator that has an infant body in them would always give their Nascent Souls a last command before they die . If you hadn’t stopped the Swordback Tiger’s Nascent Soul just in time, most likely the explosion would have devastated this entire region’s forest! As for you, the least you would suffer would be a serious injury!”

“So there’s something like this?” Lei Yu widened

Yu widened his eyes in disbelief . It was this time he recalled what happened at the Ceng Hong Villa with the Dragon-snake . It looks like the Dragon-snake had given its Nascent Soul one last command, so it’s no wonder he encountered the sudden explosion . Even though the force wasn’t that powerful, it was still enough to knock Lei Yu unconscious.

“Quickly take out the infant body of the White Scaled Giant Crocodile . After you refine it, it will help you recover your internal energy and also raise your cultivation a bit . ” Advised the Devil King.

Lei Yu nodded . He first stored the yellow and black striped Nascent Soul of the Swordback Tiger before taking out the white infant body from his Universal Pouch . Lei Yu then closed his eyes and sat down cross legged while the white infant body floated in front of his chest . The white light gave off a soft allure but still contained an explosive power behind it.

Lei Yu enlarged his nostrils and sucked in a deep breath of air . He could suddenly smell something pungent and unpleasant that was difficult to endure . He didn't know where the smell came from but immediately ceased doing that action.

Lei Yu controlled the energy inside

his dantian and had a portion of it appear out of his body . Those strands of internal energy were in the outside world but still maintained a connection with Lei Yu . One could see those strands of internal energy begin wrapping around the infant body floating in front of Lei Yu . Right after that, more strands of energy started leaving his body and appearing in the outside world to wrap around to wrap around its target . Towards the end, Lei Yu's own purple internal energy had completely encompassed the infant body where no signs of the white Nascent Soul was seen anymore.

Suddenly, the white infant body brightened and light flared out



through the tiny gaps of Lei Yu's internal energy . It then started intertwining with Lei Yu's energy and started climbing towards his body . Lei Yu started trembling as large pulses of energy entered into his body and started running rampant . But in an instant, a beam of cool white energy wrapped around them . After being moisturized by the cool energy, the rampant energy started becoming in sync with Lei Yu's own internal energy and no longer ran rampant . It started circulating normally according to the paths of Lei Yu's cultivation before ending in his dantian and merging together . The white cooling energy was none other than Xue Yu's doing from the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost.

The moment the white infant body's energy latched onto Lei Yu's infant body, he started feeling intense pain on his right arm . The pain continued getting stronger causing Lei Yu to clench his teeth . If another person was in Lei Yu's place or one that had less willpower, most likely they would have already lost consciousness . But ever since Lei Yu was young, his mind and willpower had surpassed most others . He had also experienced different types of pain throughout his life so this was something he could still handle . It's just that the more he resisted, the more intense the pain become . One must wonder if he was to just faint, maybe he wouldn't be tortured by this pain anymore.

# Chapter 349: The Great Dahl Ape

When the white energy made contact with Lei Yu's unique brand... "Agggghhh!" Lei Yu's whole body started shaking non-stop.

"Endure it! Once you pass this critical moment, perhaps your strength will increase by leaps and bounds!"

Sweat was pouring out from Lei Yu's entire body. Once could clearly see that his muscles and bones were shaking giving off a strange buzzing noise.

Another burst of internal energy

belonging to the White Scaled Giant Crocodile coursed through Lei Yu's bones and muscles. His internals were already unable to endure any more pressure yet with this new wave of energy, they started shaking even more. One could now clearly see that within every pore of Lei Yu's body, there was a bead of blood coming out. Lei Yu continued clenching his teeth to endure it. This energy was already different to his own internal energy, and the difficulty level was increased since the blood of a demonic beast cultivators were naturally tyrannical and hard to tame. Lei Yu had tried many times to control it with his spirit but found that it wasn't easy at all. It looks like he would have to allow it to slowly adapt inside the infant's body before it would

become a power he could use within his dantian.

After breathing out some turbid air, Lei Yu gradually opened his eyes. There was a brief flash of white light in his eyes before disappearing: his refinement had succeeded!

Lei Yu started withdrawing the internal energy that he had wrapped around the White Scaled Giant Crocodile's infant body. The Nascent Soul that was originally the size of two palms had disappeared without a trace leaving only starry dots that immediately dispersed into the surrounding environment. These were waste remnants of the Nascent Soul which was of no

use to Lei Yu.

“We can continue onwards now!”  
The Devil King’s voice rang out. Lei Yu stood up and started taking off his clothes. Looking at his whole body covered with beads of blood was quite a terrifying sight to behold. Lei Yu made a simple shaking motion and the blood beads scattered outwards and not a single drop was left on his body.

His powerful body was like an obvious contrast in this gloomy looking Forest of Fog. Lei Yu pulled out some new clothes from his Universal Pouch and put them on before he could calmly pay attention to the changes inside his body.

The White Scaled Giant Crocodile's energy wasn't something he could easily tame, but when compared to the Devil King's green energy, it was like a docile kitten. Although this new power wasn't something Lei Yu could control right now, at least it was behaving itself while sitting in a certain corner. It would occasionally shiver in that corner because Lei Yu's internal energy would pass by to provoke it. Eventually that giant crocodile's energy will cave in and by that time, Lei Yu could easily subdue it for his own use.

The portion of internal energy Lei Yu had used up in the previous fight had now been recovered. He also saw some slight growth in his strength within the late Soul

Splitting stage. The increase wasn't particularly obvious but if this was normal circumstance within the Devil King's castle, it would have still taken him at least one or two weeks to gain this. One could see the benefits of refining a Gold Core or a Nascent Soul, but this way of cultivating wasn't something to Lei Yu's taste. It was way too painful painful for people to handle!

Refining a Gold Core was better since it was less difficult and less complicated. Refining a Nascent Soul was completely different: the Nascent Soul itself contained a portion of the original owner's soul so one had to first destroy that before suppressing the tyrannical power it possessed, that's why it



was way more troublesome.

Once again opening his eyes, Lei Yu began to travel deeper into the forest.

There were no living creatures here nor did any dare to step into this region. Even if it was the terrifyingly powerful existence bull-head, he too would not dare to enter this region without a good reason. If he was to find out that within the most inner depths of the forest was a Sky Devouring Rat acting as a guardian, most likely the bull-head would not step foot here by himself. One can't say whether it's easy or hard to deal with the rat because just its speed alone would give anyone a headache. Of course if Lei Yu requested the bull-head's

assistance, he probably wouldn't even hesitate and outright agree to come.

The second protective barrier was also similar to the first one where it was transparent in nature, except that it was a different color: this one was yellow. The pressure this barrier gave off was much more obvious. Lei Yu cracked his neck and other joints giving "pak pak" sounds. With a single thought, a yellow and black striped infant body encased in purple internal energy appeared in Lei Yu's hand.

According to the Devil King's instructions, Lei Yu injected his internal energy into the infant body before suddenly dashing forward with all his might. The next moment, Lei Yu had disappeared

from the spot.

“Boom!”

“Bang!”

Those continuous explosions caused the entire outer

entire outer periphery of the Forest of Fog to shake. The huge barrier had disappeared, and the Swordback Tiger’s Nascent Soul had disappeared along with it amongst the explosions.

Lei Yu was currently standing back where the first barrier of the Forest of Fog was located at, which showed how fast his speed was!

The huge explosion had caused those rotten trees to disintegrate

into wood ash before scattering all over the place. The previously dense area near the barrier was now open land, giving Lei Yu some difficulty to adapting to the sight.

Lei Yu moved forward without reducing his speed. Even if it was deaf, this huge explosion would clearly alert the second barrier's guardian: the Great Dahl Ape.

Sure enough, beyond the second barrier location revealed a small firm mountain! As one looked closer, this wasn't a mountain but a huge black ape!

"That's the Great Dahl Ape?" Lei Yu asked in shock to no one in particular. What appeared before him was an ape that was over a

hundred meters! [1] Its height was seriously no different from a small mountain!

Raising his head, Lei Yu started carefully observing it. It was no different than your typical ape except for its much, much, larger stature. Its arms and chest seemed to be also larger than normal... Its blood red eyes appear to be looking down at Lei Yu with disdain while sharp fangs could be seen protruding from its mouth. One could also see the great ape spray white mist out of its nostrils as it breathed out heavily.

The Devil King's voice was heard: "You have to attack its eyes before it goes berserk or else you'll be in big trouble!"

The Devil King's advice was necessary because Lei Yu didn't want to entangle himself with this huge creature

this huge creature for too long. Even if he was able to dodge its attacks at high speeds, it still required a large amount of time to escape the vicinity of it, not to mention if it went berserk.

Lei Yu took a deep breath before taking out a purple bead from his Universal Pouch. He injected a trace of internal energy into it before tossing it out. The moment it neared the great ape, Lei Yu activated the internal energy inside the bead to detonate it. Suddenly, an overwhelming amount of lightning that covered the skies started

crashing down. The violent booming noises it caused had caught the attention of the great ape. And this happened to be Lei Yu's last Heavenly Thunder Bead!

"Now's the time!" Lei Yu roared out before rushing up. He was using the great ape's lower limbs as leverage before heading towards its head a hundred meters up.

The Devil King had mentioned before that the Great Dahl Ape's defense was unbelievably strong. Even if it encountered a super expert at the Mahayana stage, it was capable of holding its own for a few rounds. Its defensive attributes could almost compare with the Black Tortoise Divine Beast, and the only difference was one's a divine

beast while the other was a demonic beast.

Lei Yu's climbing wasn't slow at all. The Great Dahl Ape's fur was very long which allowed him to have an easier time scaling it. With the overwhelming amount of lightning striking at the great ape like it was tickling it, it had actually drawn the great ape's full attention. And it was precisely this reason that it didn't detect the approaching danger to its huge head!

-----

[1] 100 meters tall is like the length of a football field going upwards.



# Chapter 350:

## Attacking The Weakness

The time it took Lei Yu to climb up was less than three seconds, which was only one cycle of breathing by the great ape.

Once he reached the neck, Lei Yu roared out as he leapt upwards. The Sky Devouring Sword gave out a brilliant shine, “Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, first combination!”

“Boom!”

“Bzzzt! Crack!”

“Owwwwwww!”

There was the sound of lightning striking, there was the sound of Lei Yu’s first combination attack from the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, and there was also the terrifying Great Dahl Ape’s cry of pain. For a short time, the second region of the Forest of Fog was in chaos!

Lei Yu didn’t dare to delay and immediately retreated. His goal was to blind the great ape so that even if it was pissed off, it wouldn’t be able to chase after Lei Yu’s presence. By that time, killing the great ape would be a lot simpler.

Lei Yu landed on the ground and turned around to look. The great ape was clutching at its eyes while

stomping its legs. It looked like it was experiencing great pain! Its eyes were its only weakness since it had thick and rough skin and wasn't afraid of any attacks involving those areas.

Its rage gradually dispersed as it began to calm down and remove its hands. Lei Yu was suddenly shocked. There were only two white smudges on the Great Dahl Ape's eyes! Lei Yu's powerful first combination attack was only able to leave a smudge on the great ape's cornea? The so called weakest part of its body was this powerful? Lei Yu was completely dumbfounded.

The Devil King's voice suddenly heard

in his mind: “You should have used your most powerful attack instead of trying to hide it! Now we’re in trouble because it’s prepared, and wanting to blind its eyes again will be extremely difficult!”

“Less with the sarcastic bullshit! If I used my most powerful attack, how would I have any energy left to kill it? And you, isn’t your remnant soul much more powerful than mine? Why don’t you come out and take care of it yourself?” Lei Yu’s voice was extremely pissed off but the conversation was only within his mind.

The Devil King snapped back: “Why would I do that? If I overuse my energy, the speed in which my soul remnant would disappear would

only accelerate. By that time, I'm afraid I wouldn't even get to see my true body before my soul is dispersed!"

"Shit! How the hell should I fight it?!" Lei Yu was now depressed. This great ape was way too huge and without any weaknesses on its entire body. The only weakness it did have was being protected as both its hands were near its eyes to prevent another attack.

"You damn bastard! You dare to take advantage of me by attacking my eyes when I wasn't paying attention? Hand over your life!" The great ape said in the human language. Its voice was extremely angry shocking Lei Yu in many ways. Lei Yu immediately retreated

back over a hundred meters away from the great ape's attack range in order to wait for an opportunity.

One could see the Great Dhal Ape pummel its own chest while howling a piercing roar. Even though Lei Yu's strength was a bit stronger than

than the ape, he still couldn't take care of it in a short time. Not to mention that the great ape was now in berserk mode and its strength was at least twice as strong as before. Dealing with it now was much harder than before.

"I have to create an opportunity to attack its eyes!" Lei Yu started moving around while the great ape suddenly lowered its body and

slammed both fists on the ground.

“Boom!”

The ground shook like crazy and the vibration actually knocked Lei Yu up over ten meters into the air!

Lei Yu was unable to react with the sudden change before seeing the great ape’s arm sweep over. The next moment, a huge palm slapped Lei Yu with a loud “bang!” Lei Yu was sent flying over several hundreds of meters before he could stabilize his body in midair. A trace of blood was then seen flowing out of his mouth.

“This guy’s attack was really damn powerful! I knew I shouldn’t have taken it head on!” Lei Yu had also

wanted to experience how strong the great ape's attack was, that's why he resisted it head on. Even though his injuries weren't heavy, the feeling of the attack wasn't fun at all.

Lei Yu narrowed his eyes, "If it weren't because I allowed you to hit me, you would be exhausted to death and still wouldn't be able to touch a hair on me!"

"What an arrogant boast!" The great ape roared. It was obvious that it put in quite a bit of strength in its last attack but didn't expect that it couldn't kill Lei Yu. At this time, one could see layers of yellow

of yellow internal energy rising from the great ape's body. This



overwhelming aura had suddenly caused Lei Yu to feel like he was moving about in mud! From the look of things, Lei Yu's speed will naturally decrease!

“Not good!”

Lei Yu loudly yelled before suddenly flying upwards. The great ape's palm swept past his original position and kicked up a wild wind that whipped Lei Yu's clothes into a frenzy.

“F\*cker, let's fight it out!” Lei Yu clenched his teeth as the Sky Devouring Sword hovered in front of him. He then clasped his hands together and layers of purple internal energy swept out. Lei Yu was chanting something and a dark

purple halo energy surrounded his hands. The dark halo energy was like a glove surrounding Lei Yu's hands before he roared out: "Go!"

"Whoosh!"

"Owwwww!"

The moment the halo energy spread out, it dispersed into little bits of starry dots before flying towards the great ape's head. The scattered starry dots didn't seem to contain any attack power but the great ape was still vigilant by covering his eyes with his hands. It was acting this way to prevent any unnecessary pain from those seemingly weak looking starry dots.

Although those starry dots didn't

enter the great ape's eyes, it still landed on the rest of its face and on its hands.

Lei Yu lightly smiled, "What? You scared?"

Upon opening its eyes, the great ape yelled: "What a joke! The defense of I, the Great Dahl Ape is the strongest amongst all demonic beasts! You think I'm really afraid of your attacks?"

Seeing it start to remove its hands, Lei Yu's smile became even brighter.

"Oh really?" Lei Yu was saying this but his

this but his thoughts seem to be controlling something. One could

only see those starry dots start moving up the great ape's face towards its eyes. By the time the ape realized what was happening, it was too late!

Lei Yu roared out: "Break!"

A violent explosion that would numb one's skull came after that.

"Crack! Boom!"

The next moment, the Great Dahl Ape screamed into the air. Its ear piercing voice of pain swept through the entire Forest of Fog. Even Lei Yu felt his ears almost couldn't bear with the sound which clearly showed this guy's pain wasn't light at all.

This was one of the abilities Lei Yu

gained at the Soul Splitting stage. He could control his energy that was outside of him allowing him to freely move it around. The most important thing was that these external energy would not explode for a long time unless it was triggered by Lei Yu's mental thoughts!

This was similar to having countless time bombs and Lei Yu was in complete control of when it would explode.

The strength behind the Soul Splitting stage was powerful but it wasn't enough to cause the Great Dahl Ape to truly lose his sight. After all, this was considered a wide area range attack and the power wasn't focused into a single point.

Lei Yu condensed his internal energy as his body once again rushed forth. The great ape was still dealing with its pain and didn't notice Lei Yu's movement. When the pain gradually disappeared, the great ape finally opened its eyes. At this moment, it was completely stunned! Two purple meteors with white starry dots were actually waiting for his eyes to open!

# Chapter 351: A Cloud Of Dust Rises

Its eyelids didn't have time to close before those two starry meteors collided. There was no crisp sound this time but a muffled thump. It looked like the attack broke through its cornea and went right into the pupils!

The screams were even more ferocious this time as the great ape waved its fists madly around while its feet were stomping all over the place. The surrounding area had been completely obliterated become flat ground!

Lei Yu quickly withdrew because if those random attacks landed on him, he would definitely suffer to no ends!

The Devil King cried out: “When they’re ill, go for the kill! Quickly use your most powerful attack or else there’s no way you can break through its abdomen!”

The Devil King’s advice brought Lei Yu’s retreat to a halt. He then concentrated the on the great ape’s abdomen before roaring out: “Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, fourth combination!”

An axe! Lei Yu’s attack had actually caused his internal energy to materialize a giant axe!



The light given off by the giant axe was unusually dazzling to the eye. At the top of the axe's edge to the bottom were five bright star lights lined up on the blade. The giant axe then cut down in less than a second.

A heart piercing cry came out of the great ape's mouth. Its eyes suddenly opened and traces of blood could be seen. The great ape was now completely blind but appeared to be unusually calm. After that cry, there were no more acts of violent behavior from it.

"You actually managed to break my defense!" The great ape's voice was extremely cold.

"That was my strongest attack." Lei

Yu replied while  
gasping for breath.

The great ape's voice began to grow weaker as it said: "You are strong, except you won't be able to escape your fate of death!" As its voice faded, the great ape toppled over.

After a loud boom, a cloud of dust rose from the ground. This scene was no different than a mountain toppling over. Lei Yu looked towards the Great Dahl Ape's abdomen and noticed a horrendous looking wound. This wound was caused by Lei Yu's most powerful combination skill: the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique's fourth combination. The sharpness of that giant axe cannot be overlooked; it

contained the crescent moon of the first combination, the ultimate speed of the second combination's arrows, and the third combination's ferocious blunt power of the heavy hammer, all added onto the giant axe's attack. Attached on the blade edge were five meteors that played a vital role in its explosive power.

Lei Yu leapt up and landed on the great ape's stomach. He wasn't in a rush to extract the Nascent Soul but sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. After using two combination skills, the energy consumption was really too much for him. Lei Yu had to go through a period of time for recovery.

With Xue Yu's assistance, Lei Yu was still able to completely recover

in a day's time even though this place barely had any spiritual energy and was filled with yin energy. Even the internal injury he received from the great ape's slap had rapidly recovered due to the healing abilities of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost and the green energy. This was also thanks to Lei Yu's skeletal structure that contained metallic properties. With Lei Yu's current strength,

strength, it was difficult to find an opponent that can seriously injure him anymore.

What led to the Great Dahl Ape's downfall was that it looked down on Lei Yu's strength and overestimated its own defensive ability. The omnipotent like

crushing power along with the sharp cutting ability, added by Lei Yu's unique power of lightning created the framework where all things could be cut apart. Let alone some fur that was just defensively stronger than normal.

Lei Yu slowly stood up and retrieved the huge Nascent Soul from the Great Dahl Ape's abdomen. It was such a pity that he couldn't absorb this powerful source since he needed it to crack the third region's energy barrier.

After condensing his internal energy, Lei Yu wrapped it around the great ape's Nascent Soul. He then injected a trace of internal energy into it before throwing it with all his strength. The moment it

collided with the golden energy shield, the heavens and the ground shook like it was Armageddon!

Lei Yu didn't dare to stay here. Even though he trusted his own powerful defensive abilities, he still didn't want to experience the explosive blast wave of what was to come. The current him activated his speed to the maximum and flew off into a certain direction. The Sky Devouring Sword beneath his feet gave off a blinding light making Lei Yu look like a meteor barreling through the lands.

A humongous BOOM echoed for over ten minutes before coming to a stop. The explosion caused dust to completely cover the area and limiting Lei Yu's range of vision. He

didn't dare to take unnecessary risks so he patiently waited for all the dust to settle.

An ear piercing shriek of a

of a bird was heard. Even beyond the Forest of Fog and into the sea region would one still be able to hear this shriek.

Lei Yu frowned and looked over and observed a huge bird enshrouded in a golden light. The wingspan of the huge bird was at least over twenty meters. Its whole body was gold colored and the bird had all the features of an eagle. Its sharp eyes with golden pupils glared at Lei Yu. Its sharp beaks were slightly raised and gave off a bright reflective light. The strangest thing about it was the

two claws beneath its body: Apart from looking extremely sharp, it was also very large making it seem mismatched with its body.

“Be careful, this is the Demon Roc Emperor who is at the late Soul Splitting stage! The strongest ability it has is a gravity attack that can control and lower your speed. Its attacks are also quite powerful so it’s the same tactic as before: a quick battle and a quick kill.

Working in your favor is that its defense isn’t very strong. You have to kill it in the shortest time possible or else when it splits up and there’s two Demon Roc Emperor’s at the same time, the chance of you winning is zero!” The Devil King advised Lei Yu in his mind.



Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless as he circulated internal energy in his feet and floated into the air at the same level as the big golden eagle. The two pairs of eyes looked at each other: one pair of powerful eyes was glaring at another pair of eyes filled with a deep profound mystery. They both couldn't help

both couldn't help shudder since Lei Yu gave others the feeling of elusiveness while the big eagle had eyes that could literally kill someone with a stare!

Upon clenching his teeth, purple energy started rising out of Lei Yu's body and the power of lightning started arcing and enshrouding him within. The green brand on his arm started flickering and a stream of

purple internal energy started rapidly flowing down his arm. Lei Yu clasped his left index and middle fingers together before tapping his right arm and controlling that stream of internal energy. He guided that stream of energy down to his fingers and a fragment of light appeared on his fingertip. The lightning arcing around his body became much more active as if jumping around in joy. The fragment of light that came out of Lei Yu's fingertip suddenly brightened and blinded the surrounding area.

The dazzling bright light caused the Demon Roc Emperor to blink. Lei Yu then roared out: "Now's the time!"

With a single wave, the fragment of purple light the size of a finger flew straight at the Demon Roc Emperor. The speed of it was no less than the attacks from the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique.

The moment the lightning energy attack drew near the Demon Roc Emperor's body, one could see its huge wings effortlessly quiver before it instantly created an airtight defense in front of it.

“Bzzt bzzt!”

The purple lightning energy somehow merged together with the Demon Roc Emperor's golden colored energy before giving off a heart chilling sound. Lei Yu observed the reaction and then,

“You lied to me again! My attack was so easily resisted by that thing!” Lei Yu yelled at the Devil King in his mind.

# Chapter 352: One Splits Into Two

“I didn’t really lie to you. This large Roc relies on its wings as its main defense while its stomach area and the area under its wings are the weakest. But below the stomach area, it also happens to have those sharp claws which are its most powerful weapons. What you have to do is find an opportunity to attack its lower stomach area in the shortest amount of time possible!”

“That’s easy for you to say, how about you go do it?” Lei Yu then roared out and the Sky Devouring Sword appeared in his hand with a bright flash. He was currently

standing there in mid air looking like a Demon King!

Guerilla warfare was something Lei Yu had become good at but when up high in the air, fighting with a bird that dominated air battles wasn't a wise choice. Lei Yu ignored the Devil King's advice of fighting a quick battle and started descending to the ground.

A brief flash was seen in the Demon Roc Emperor's eyes before it folded its wings and dived down as well. Accompanying the shriek of a bird, the Demon Roc Emperor was now displaying its first attack.

Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless as he focused on the Sky Devouring Sword he was holding. His eyes

never left the pair of claws below the Demon Roc Emperor's abdomen. As the distance become closer and closer, Lei Yu roared out: "Perfect timing!" He then swept out and sliced horizontally with the Sky Devouring Sword.

"Bang!"

"Bang bang bang...!"

Hundreds of collision sounds were heard in the third region of the Forest of Fog. Panic could be clearly seen on Lei Yu's face while a look of shock could also be seen on the Demon Roc Emperor.

Lei Yu never imagined this big bird's claws were this sharp and sturdy. It

was actually able to compete with his Sky Devouring Sword for this long and not suffer any damage.

As for the Demon Roc Emperor, its shock was no less than Lei Yu's. Each time Lei Yu attacked with his Sky Devouring Sword, they all contained a powerful lightning power imbued into it. Even though it was proud of its claws' sturdiness and sharpness, as the clashes continued, it could feel bursts of paralysis penetrate into its legs. If these head on clashes continued, the one in the disadvantaged position could eventually be it!

Not only will these bursts of paralysis eventually slow down the Demon Roc Emperor's reaction time, eventually its attacks will also



be affected by it.

Its huge wings quivered once again causing it to suddenly lurch into the air. The Demon Roc Emperor had suddenly chosen to distance itself!

Lei Yu seemed to have found its weakness so how could he give up such a good opportunity and allow it to escape? The second the Demon Roc Emperor rose into the air, Lei Yu also condensed internal energy into his feet and flew up to catch up to it. This style of fighting continued on as if it was hard to tell who would become victorious. They were both at the strength of a late Soul Splitting stage yet somehow Lei Yu appeared to be slowly gaining the upper hand because of

his Sky Devouring Sword.

“Kaaaa!”

“Kaaaaa...!”

Just when their attacks continued as if it was hard to tell the outcome, a harsh ear piercing squawk came from a distance. Lei Yu’s face changed as he cried out in shock, “Not good!”

The figure hadn’t even appeared yet but the wind was already howling towards him. Lei Yu hurriedly dropped down to the ground and right at that moment, a golden bird the exact carbon copy of the Demon Roc Emperor swooped past Lei

Lei Yu’s original position with its

pair of sharp claws grasping down. If Lei Yu had avoided that at the last second, most likely him who had metallic properties in his skeletal structure would still be ripped into two!

After hiddenly gasping to himself, Lei Yu adjusted his body to his best battle posture. He didn't remove the internal energy still condensed in his feet so that he could run away at a moment's notice.

“This is real bad! This is the other half of the Demon Roc Emperor who has reached the early Boundary Transition stage, someone even more difficult to deal with!” As the Devil King's voice sounded off, Lei Yu started to feel sick of hearing him. But now wasn't

the time to stop him from talking because he had to find a solution immediately to deal with these two enemies.

“You two plan on ganging up on me?” Lei Yu knew he had no chance with dealing with two strong opponents at the same time so he tried to trick them with words.

“I’ve always done things this way. If you want to break past the last barrier, you’ll have to do it over our two dead bodies!” Said the Boundary Transition stage Demon Roc Emperor.

Upon hearing those words, Lei Yu’s heart sank to the bottom of the ravine. Seeing that he now had to kill the two of them, he was a bit

regretful for not listening to the Devil King's advice. Fighting in the air was disadvantageous to Lei Yu but at least he would eventually find a flaw and reach the Demon Roc Emperor's lower abdomen area. He would most likely suffer some injury at the meantime but would still manage to deliver serious blow to the big bird's weak area. Since Lei Yu brought the battle to the ground instead, it looks like he had just created

just created a situation where his own risk level had increased by a lot. What should he do now?

His arms took a wider stance before Lei Yu started speaking in his mind: "Xue Yu, it looks like you'll have to materialize to help me or else

there's no way I can deal with these two experts!"

"Master, leave that Boundary Transition bird to me!" As Xue Yu's voice faded, a purple aura started rising out of Lei Yu's body. A purple dragon then burst out of his body and landed on the ground with a brilliant white flash. Suddenly, a stunning beautiful girl appeared next to Lei Yu.

The two big birds were startled from what they witnessed. The big bird at the Boundary Transition stage then asked: "That's your soul?" It was obvious that it didn't believe its eyes because how could one's body and one's soul have such a huge difference in appearance? This was something it had never

seen or heard of before.

Lei Yu didn't bother replying. He and Xue Yu nodded to each other before they both shot up into the sky. The soul had left the body: Lei Yu's original body was only at the early Soul Splitting stage but his defensive power was still extremely powerful. Xue Yu on the other hand, had the soul body which contained Lei Yu's most powerful offensive powers, but her defense had weakened by a lot. A single heavy injury may cause the soul body to immediately lose all combat capability.

This was going to be a tough battle. It was the first time the two of them were working together and they had to quickly end the fight. The best

scenario was to quickly kill off one of the big birds first!

Lei Yu's target was the big bird at the late Soul Splitting stage while Xue Yu chose the Demon Roc

the Demon Roc Emperor who exceeded Lei Yu's level, being at the Boundary Transition stage.

Countless number of blurred images of those four appeared and disappeared in mid air. The speeds of each of them derived through their training were extremely shocking!

That big bird at the Boundary Transition stage sensed how powerful Xue Yu's attacks were so it didn't dare take them head on. It



actually decided on dodging when it could, fleeing when it couldn't! For the time being, Xue Yu couldn't gain any advantages over it.

On Lei Yu's side, he wasn't having a good time at all. Although he was managing to barely avoid the attacks from the big bird, he wasn't able to release any powerful attacks to threaten it. For a brief moment, the four of them stopped and eyed each other at a frozen stalemate while none of them were willing to make the first move.

Lei Yu lightly exhaled before conversing with Xue Yu in his mind: "Xue Yu, it looks like we can't win if we fight separately. How about we..."

Xue Yue responded to Lei Yu through their mind transmission and both reached a consensus. Their sights both landed on the Demon Roc Emperor who was only at the late Soul Splitting stage.

Lei Yu roared out: “Now’s the time!”

“Whoosh~!”

“Whoosh~!”

Lei Yu and Xue Yu both rushed out at the same time towards the weaker Soul Splitting big bird. Xue Yu was responsible for attacking while Lei Yu with his Sky Devouring Sword was nearby to prevent the stronger Boundary Transition Demon Roc Emperor from interfering.

Xue Yu's attacks were all vicious and filled with explosive power. After several loud sounds, many patches of feathers had been forcefully blown off from the weaker Demon Roc Emperor. Xue Yu was on a roll as she kept on attacking non-stop, hoping that one of her moves would land a fatal blow!

# Chapter 353:

## Fighting Alongside Each Other

“Bang!”

A loud sound that shook the heavens and the earth was heard. Xue Yu felt this was strange since this wasn't something she had caused with her attacks. Her face suddenly changed, “Not good... master!”

Lei Yu's shaky voice from covering her back cried out: “Don't turn around, it's now or never, kill it!”

Xue Yu clenched her teeth as a

bright purple and white light rippled out of her body in waves. The two colors started merging into one while she raised both of her arms above her head. The air shimmered and started rotating there forming something before she made a throwing motion and roared out: “Thirty-six Lunar Star technique, second combination!”

“Whoosh!”

What materialized in the air was a bow and arrow before the arrow shot straight towards the big bird. Upon seeing this heaven sundering bow and arrow, the big bird was scared out of its wits especially when noticing the power behind the arrow! It was just about to protect its abdominal area with its

wings but it was too late. The Thirty-six Lunar Star technique attack released by Lei Yu's soul body, which was in control by Xue Yu, reached speeds beyond everyone's imagination.

The brightly shimmering arrow managed to drill through a gap in the Demon Roc Emperor's wings!

“Noooo!”

Xue Yu heard the Boundary Transition Demon Roc Emperor behind her screaming out. Xue Yu's opponent had already been blasted off into the distance by the arrow as a loud sorrowful shriek followed it. Eventually, it landed on the ground.

Lei Yu was holding onto his injured

shoulder while coldly staring at the Boundary Transition Demon Roc Emperor. What he saw was actually fear in its eyes

and not anger!

Lei Yu felt this was a bit strange and just when he was prepared to fight together with Xue Yu, another sorrowful shriek was heard. This piercing cry almost made Lei Yu lose all function of his ears!

This super strong entity had suddenly disappeared in front of him! Lei Yu was shocked and immediately started searching everywhere. He even released his spiritual perception to the maximum but still couldn't find any traces of it!

“What’s going on? How did this happen?” Lei Yu asked in confusion.

The Devil King’s voice sounded off in his mind and his tone was filled with surprise. “Oh, I understand now! This third region only has one Demon Roc Emperor!”

“What do you mean?” Lei Yu asked in surprise.

“The Soul Splitting stage one was its true body while the Boundary Transition one was its soul body. Once the true body dies, the soul will also cease to exist! The reasoning is as simple as that!”

Lei Yu was overjoyed from hearing this; he was truly too lucky! Lei Yu



already knew he was in for a tough battle when dealing with these two birds. Even if he doesn't die in the process, he would still be seriously injured. It was fortunate that he and Xue Yu could communicate with their minds or else if those big birds heard what he was planning, most likely that tactic wouldn't be pulled off that easily. Although his shoulder was ripped up by that big bird causing many bones to break, it wasn't a big deal because he had Xue Yu and the Devil King's green energy to help him recover.

The Demon Roc Emperor had died but Lei Yu was really curious about its

its cultivation method. How did its true body and soul body cultivate

separately? Was this some unique ability that only it had?

Lei Yu's thought process was felt by the Devil King so it explained: "This Demon Roc Emperor isn't really a demonic beast but considered a divine beast. Although it cannot be compared to the six great divine beasts, its rank is still considered one of the more powerful divine beasts. All divine beasts or demonic beasts have inherited ancient memories. Once they reach a certain cultivation realm, an ancient seal within their minds will be unlocked. So most likely, the cultivation method of the Demon Roc Emperor was one of those inherited memories unique to their race."

Lei Yu nodded, "So that's how it is."

"Hurry up and recover so that you can extract the Demon Roc Emperor's Nascent Soul!"

Lei Yu sat down with his eyes closed while Xue Yu slowly disappeared. The Spiritual Bracelet of Frost then appeared on his wrist once again.

There's a reason why the Devil King didn't want Lei Yu to immediately remove the Nascent Soul. When they first encountered the Swordback Tiger's Nascent Soul, it had tried to fly away which meant this was the last command it was given. The giant ape's Nascent Soul didn't try to fly away which meant no last command was given to it. Now when it came to this Demon

Roc Emperor, one had to prepare for all scenarios.

From a high point of view, the Forest of Fog that was originally filled with dead trees crisscrossing each other had now become flat land in certain areas. There were even many cracks and ravines in the ground that show the huge battle Lei Yu had

Yu had with the guardians.

In the area of the third region, a purple beam of light shot into the sky that was released by Lei Yu. The current him was constantly repairing his body and rapidly absorbing the thin spiritual energy in the air in order to restore his body back to normal.

Lei Yu suddenly opened his eyes and two physical beams of light shot out of them!

Those two beams of light stabbed into the ground leaving a deep mark. It was clear that the light contained lightning energy because of the crackling sounds!

“No way? Am I really making another breakthrough?” Lei Yu sucked in a breath of cool air as he examined the internal changes. All the signs did indicate that he was now at the peak of the late Soul Splitting stage. Just a slight reach and he could break through into the Boundary Transition stage, but in reality, wanting to pass this barrier wasn’t a simple thing.

Lei Yu wasn't anxious at all about this while the Devil King was the one that seemed to be the urgent one. "Try breaking through once! I will help you clear out any obstacles in the meridians!"

"Break through right here? After breaking through, I need a large amount of spiritual energy to recover. The spiritual energy is so weak here so it's not the right place!" Lei Yu retorted.

The opinion of the Devil King and Lei Yu were completely different. The Devil King wanted Lei Yu to become stronger because only then would the success rate improve for reaching his true body. That's why he was so anxious for Lei Yu to grow stronger. On the other hand,

Lei Yu knew that after breaking through, he

breaking through, he would have to refill all the internal energy his dantian and Sea of Energy would be lacking. Doing it at this place where spiritual energy was so weak would be truly difficult to bring him back to his optimal state.

“Don’t you still have some crystal stones inside your Universal Pouch?” The Devil King anxiously asked.

Lei Yu shook his head, “How can I compare that little thing to the Devil King’s castle? No way, no way! It’s too risky!” Lei Yu understood the needs of his own body and he wasn’t going to listen to the Devil

King's plan.

“Sigh! You are so stupid! If that day you hadn't used the Green Vein Dewdrop pill on Ai Er and saved it instead, today you wouldn't have a problem of fully refilling your internal energy after breaking through!”

“Screw you! Ai Er's life is more important than mine! What are your words implying?!” Lei Yu continue to angrily roar back: “Everything you've made me do is all for yourself isn't it? With you being such a selfish individual, what rights do you have to lecture me? I'm telling you, if you keep forcing me to do stuff I don't want to do, I'll rather give up this task right now!”



“Whatever!” The Devil King sighed, “Beautiful girls are the roots of all troubles: she is your stumbling block on the road to being truly powerful!”

Lei Yu didn't bother with him and slowly opened his eyes to stand up. He wanted everything to be perfect before he made a breakthrough. He too wanted to be a super powerful expert but being too eager might be counterproductive. If something did go wrong, by that time things would become irreversible.

# Chapter 354: One Body Two Nascent

Lei Yu quickly walked up to the golden Demon Roc Emperor and used his Sky Devouring Sword to pry out a golden object. A light brightly flashed before Lei Yu's eye sight landed on a powerful infant body. This was probably the most powerful Nascent Soul he has ever laid eyes on. If he was able to use this energy and convert it into his own internal energy, most likely he would improve by leaps and bounds. Unfortunately, he needed this infant body to open up the last protective barrier shield.

Just as Lei Yu was feeling a bit

regretful, he suddenly widened his eyes in surprise! There was another shimmering light inside the Demon Roc Emperor's abdomen!

“What on earth is going on?”

Lei Yu peered inside and was completely shocked! Within the Demon Roc Emperor's dantian area, there was another golden shimmering infant body!

The Devil King's voice was also showed signs of shock, “One body two nascent!”

“One body two nascent?”

“I never imagined this could've happened! This Demon Roc Emperor chose to separately cultivate its body and managed to

cultivate two nascent infant bodies. This is simply too inconceivable!" The Devil King's voice sounded even more shocked while Lei Yu's eyes widened even further. He then proceeded to extract the second Nascent Soul from the Demon Roc Emperor's body. Even though the power of this second one wasn't as strong as the first, it was still an incredible object to behold.

Lei Yu swallowed down his saliva, "Awesome, this is too awesome!"

"You can breakthrough now right? This extra infant body can make up for the energy that you need after making your breakthrough!"

Urged the Demon King as he still hadn't given up.

Lei Yu helplessly nodded, “Fine!”

Lei Yu wasn’t against breaking through; he was just concerned with the issues afterwards. And now that there was a Nascent Soul he could use to replenish his energy, there was nothing to fear any longer. Moreover, his strength would inevitably increase exponentially after breaking through which in turn would increase his safety level. Why would Lei Yu continue to refuse the Devil King?

Lei Yu grinned before sitting down cross-legged. The latter half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual started circulating through his body causing streams of lightning to roar in his Sea of Energy before

descending upon the infant's body. Lei Yu's Nascent Soul was different from others where it was made up of six different colors. If you were to add the green brand on its arm, that would actually make it seven different colors.

The colorful infant's body wasn't due to the Devil King's credit but something Lei Yu gained on his own. Little did Lei Yu know that each different colored limb had Armageddon like powers but he wasn't able to activate it yet because of his current level.

"The sky descends, and the path opens up; split!" Lei Yu recited the first sentence of the last paragraph of the Heavenly Thunder Manual. This was last gate leading towards

the path of being truly strong. If he were to succeed, Lei Yu would step on the road towards the ultimate crisis: the Nine Heavenly Profound Lightning tribulation! Lei Yu had never experienced the lightning tribulation before so he was wondering if it would actually come when he exceeds the Boundary Transition stage.

stage. Now he'll have to wait to see how strong his latent comprehension ability is when he's at the late Boundary Transition stage.

Lei Yu continued to recite the mantra as his nascent soul started undergoing some big changes. At the center of the infant's body, one could see it start splitting apart to

reveal the infant body's heart!

Lei Yu swallowed hard as he had reached the most critical moment. If there were any mistakes in the process, the infant body's heart would burst and Lei Yu would face the threat of death!

After gasping for air, Lei Yu started carefully controlling this tiny little heart. He used his internal energy to surround the little heart before extracting it out of the infant's body and allowing it to float within his Sea of Energy.

The Devil King's voice was then heard: "I'll open up the path for you!" As his voice faded, a powerful energy shot out of the green brand on the infant's body. At this point,



Lei Yu could feel that the gap between his own power compared to the power of the green energy was getting closer! If he could successfully breakthrough, he had a 100% chance to control the green energy! But this wasn't the time to think about these things because he had to fully concentrate during this critical moment.

Lei Yu carefully used his internal energy to propel the little heart to circulate throughout his meridians. Within each meridian, there were little tiny lightnings dancing around which caused no harm to Lei Yu himself. But the little heart couldn't handle a single touch by them so Lei Yu had to continue using his internal energy to

energy to protect it.

He had to propel the little heart through multiple meridians before reaching his own heart. Once those two hearts merged into one would be the time where he could activate the gate towards the Boundary Transition stage!

Lei Yu's back was already drenched with sweat as he couldn't make a single error. He was trying to maintain a smooth breathing rhythm and was even trying not to allow his body to make any big movements.

The green energy was opening the way and taking the brunt of the lightning attacks so that little heart enshrouded by internal energy

wouldn't suffer as much. Right behind the little heart was Xue Yu's white energy. In case the little heart suffered an attack, Xue Yu could immediately rush up to help it recover it so that it wouldn't shatter.

The little heart continued to slowly travel forward being protected by these three different energies.

How long was the path of Lei Yu's meridians? They were already taking the shortest route but unfortunately, there weren't any direct paths from the Sea of Energy to his heart.

Lei Yu's breathing was becoming more rapid but he made sure his body didn't have any big

movements. Seconds and minutes went by and the little heart was getting closer to Lei Yu's heart. One would think that they were about to succeed but when they were at the last meridian, a powerful lightning descended like a torrent. The green energy brightened to block this naturally formed lightning inside his body. Meanwhile, the little heart enshrouded with Lei Yu's internal energy started shaking in fear, and suddenly showed signs that it wanted to retreat.

Lei Yu sucked in a deep

in a deep breath, "Endure it! Persist through!"

Sweat had already drenched the ground where Lei Yu was sitting on

and the airflow surrounding him had already created an invisible barrier. He wasn't going to give up and wouldn't let his nascent soul suffer any damage because it was the accumulation of his cultivation from all these years!

After clenching his teeth and trying to calm his breathing, Lei Yu separated his purple internal energy to fight alongside the green energy. As for Xue Yu, she had her energy replace Lei Yu's to enshroud the little heart tightly. It was only after all of this did the little heart gradually calm down.

After the crazy lightning attack subsided, the three energies once again moved forward. As they passed the last meridian, the green

energy and Xue Yu's energy both retreated. As if the little heart had found its mother, it suddenly rushed forward like mad to arrive at Lei Yu's actual heart. The two merged as one and a purple light shot out from his heart meridian. The light went straight to Lei Yu's dantian where the infant body was floating and formed an independent meridian connection with it. The two were now linked together!

"I've succeeded! I've succeeded!" Lei Yu shouted with joy.

"Quick, take out that extra Demon Roc Emperor's Nascent Soul! You've used up too much internal energy and must immediately replenish it!" Advised the Devil King. Lei Yu quickly nodded and

used his internal energy to surround the golden colored Nascent Soul to refine it. The refinement process was exactly the same as what Lei Yu did to the giant crocodile's Nascent Soul. He then gradually calmed down...

# Chapter 355: Sky Devouring Rat Appears

Absorbing the Nascent Soul was quite quick and didn't take too much time. Compared to breaking through to the Boundary Transition stage, Lei Yu only used a third of the time so about a day was used. Strangely, the pain was negligible as well.

After breathing out deeply, Lei Yu felt his spirit tremble as a tiny purple light appeared in both his pupils. It wasn't something that can be seen easily but it was definitely present.



After cracking his neck, Lei Yu stood up with a smiling expression on his face. His lips were slightly curved to reveal his usual signature smile.

“Congratulations!” The Devil King’s voice sounded off in his mind.

“There’s something I don’t understand and was hoping you’d explain to me.” Lei Yu started conversing with the Devil King in his mind.

“Go ahead.”

“What degree of strength is the green energy you left in my body at? How come I have a feeling that I have the ability to force it out of my body now?” Lei Yu’s tone was very

calm but the Devil King was in shock.

“You... what did you say?! What did you say?!”

Lei Yu smiled, “I remember back then you said that with my strength, I can fight with opponents two levels higher than myself, right? From how things look, the energy you left in my body should be at the last Boundary Transition stage. This means the power you can exert in your current condition is also at that level right?”

“You... what do you plan on doing?”  
The Devil King’s

voice was trembling. He wanted Lei Yu to get stronger quicker so that

the chances of breaking through the 4th region would be higher. He had actually forgotten that Lei Yu had the ability to jump levels in a fight! Only now did he remember this but Lei Yu had already found out about it.

“I don’t plan on doing anything... it’s just that I really dislike having this energy within my body!” Lei Yu then roared and purple energy started rising off his body. Purple light started flashing in his eyes and within his dantian, a powerful green energy was then forced out following the stream of his own internal energy.

The Devil King roared: “You think you can really get rid of me that easily?” Immediately after, a

dispersing power started fluctuating.

Lei Yu heavily breathed out. The green energy had accompanied him for a long time. At times, he would rely on its power instead of relying on his own. Now that he had forced it out of his body, Lei Yu started to feel a bit of reluctance.

With a thought, a skull came out of his Universal Pouch. “You actually managed to force my energy out of your body?!”

Lei Yu looked down to the brand of his right arm which had now turned back to purple. He then raised his head to look at the floating skull, “I merely don’t like that energy inside my body. Don’t worry; I will still

complete what I promised you.  
Even if I were to die, I will still keep  
word to the best

best of my ability. I will still be  
breaking through the 4th barrier!"

"Are your words for real?" The  
Devil King asked with wide eyes.

Lei Yu coldly smiled, "You've  
technically followed me for twenty  
something years; could it be that  
you still can't tell what kind of  
person I am? I am someone that  
will do what they promise! But..."

The skull slightly frowned, "But  
what?"

"You have to honestly tell me what  
you're planning after you've found  
your true body." Said Lei Yu.

“Don’t you want to know how to cultivate after reaching the Mahayana stage?” The Devil King’s words had stirred Lei Yu’s appetite. Lei Yu then hesitatingly asked: “There’s actually cultivation methods for after the Mahayana stage?”

“That’s of course, but you need to rescue my true body first and then I’ll tell you everything afterwards.”

“That’s fine.” Lei Yu nodded.

A smile appeared on the Devil King’s face as he said: “Your choice has inadvertently saved your own life or else I would’ve killed you without hesitation!”

“What did you say?” Lei Yu was

suddenly startled!

The Devil King returned back into the Universal Pouch but what shocked Lei Yu was the Devil King's words inside his mind: "Carefully observe your infant's body!"

After hearing that, lei Yu quickly sent his spirit inside and noticed the green colored brand still on his infant's body! His heart sank to the bottom of the abyss, "Why? Why? I had clearly forced the green energy out already yet my Nascent Soul still has some left?"

The Devil King coldly laughed once, "The moment your formed your Nascent Soul, I had already injected already injected a portion of my

energy inside it. If I personally didn't act, there's no way you can get rid of it. And I have the ability to shatter your infant's body anytime I want!"

"You're despicable!" Lei Yu clenched his fists.

"Don't worry. Since you've held onto your side of the bargain, I will naturally not go back on my words. As long as you save my true body, I will definitely remove all remnants of my energy!"

Lei Yu had originally been super excited thinking that he had gotten rid of the Devil King's green energy yet he never imagined the green energy was like a medicinal patch that was near impossible to peel



off. But Lei Yu was also thankful for his decisions because if he had refused to continue to the fourth region, most likely the Devil King would immediately destroy his Nascent Soul. By that time, regretting would be too late.

Lei Yu wasn't an ungrateful person. Even though the Devil King was using the green energy to force him to do things, it still accompanied for a long time and had saved him on many occasions. If it weren't for the green energy's existence, Lei Yu would never have reached the strength he has today. In a different perspective, Lei Yu should be thankful to the Devil King. It was because of this that Lei Yu had decided to continue helping the Devil King. But who would've

thought that in the end, he was still threatened to do something he already planned on doing.

After the brief delay, Lei Yu still had

Yu still had to go open the last protective barrier. And it so happens that a much more difficult to deal with presence was waiting in anticipation: the Sky Devouring Rat!

After calming his anger, Lei Yu took out the other Nascent Soul of the Demon Roc Emperor and started flying forward. At this place, a black barrier gradually appeared before Lei Yu which caused him unable to see what was inside.

Lei Yu injected internal energy into

the Nascent Soul and threw it out. He wasn't avoiding the blast like previously but stood in place. He then started spinning the Sky Devouring Sword by the handle forming an airtight protective shield in front of his body.

A huge explosion was heard while a blast wave arrived. It was then easily resisted by the Sky Devouring Sword since it was now imbued with Lei Yu's power. He found that he could freely control his internal energy to the point where the explosion had no impact on him whatsoever. It looks like reaching the Boundary Transition stage had greatly improved his strength.

The place of explosion created a huge mushroom shape of debris

that rose up thousands of meters high. The flames mingled within the mushroom had caused this scene to be spectacular to behold. Lei Yu was even a bit regretful for not fully charging his smartphone to record this amazing sight.

Just as Lei Yu recovered his thoughts, a black blur at least three times faster than him charged over. It bypassed the spinning Sky Devouring Sword and brushed past his left arm.

# Chapter 356:

## Heaven Path's Stone Stele

Suddenly sucking in a cool breath of air, Lei Yu then looked down and noticed his left arm was missing a piece of meat!

“Watch out, it’s coming again!”  
Alerted the Devil King.

Lei Yu swallowed hard before he made a thought, stopping the spinning Sky Devouring Sword. He then released his spiritual perception in order to sense where this ridiculously fast Sky Devouring Rat was.

“Found it!” The Sky Devouring Rat was coming at him in a straight line. Lei Yu immediately dodged and the black blur flew by like a bullet.

“Its speed is too shocking! How the hell am I supposed to fight it? I can’t even catch up to it!” Lei Yu had lost his cool.

“Quick! Lock into its position so it can’t attack you. Then look for a chance to quickly hide and withdraw your aura!” The Devil King’s words seemed panicked.

With Lei Yu’s current strength, normally he would be able to handle someone at the late Boundary Transition stage. But this Sky Devouring Rat was an existence

that even if the bull-head was here, it would cause him a huge headache. That's why there's nothing they can do but follow their original plan of hiding.

Lei Yu nodded and didn't dare to be careless. This Sky Devouring Rat's biting power was really too shocking. Lei Yu was only lost in thought for a moment previously and he was already missing a piece of his arm. If he wasn't completely focused, most likely this throat would have been torn off already.

After once again dodging sideways to escape an attack, Lei Yu then suddenly descended onto the ground. At

the same time, he was also

withdrawing his aura. The single rush by the Sky Devouring Rat had caused it to appear a few kilometers away before stopping. It didn't have a powerful spiritual perception like Lei Yu's, so just as it turned around to rush forth for another attack, its target had disappeared without a trace!

The Sky Devouring Rat flew around the air in different directions leaving blurs that crisscrossed each other. This showed how terrifying its speed had reached!

Lei Yu was greatly shocked. "This guy's speed is way too terrifying! There's no way I can accurately predict its attack path!"

"Don't get so anxious and just keep



walking straight. Do you see that mountain over there? At the base of that mountain is a stone stele, and below that stone stele is where my true body lies. Once you get there, just release my remnant soul and everything will be concluded!" Said the Devil King.

Lei Yu followed the directions of the Devil King and looked over, finally noticing the mountain. Perhaps he was still too far away because he didn't see any stone steles at the base of it.

As he started running, Lei Yu would occasionally look up into the air. The Sky Devouring Rat was flying all over the place before stopping at one position. Only when it stopped did Lei Yu finally get to see its

appearance.

Where was the Sky Devouring Rat's awesome aura? This thing's appearance was not qualified to have such a fear inducing name. It looked no different than an ordinary mouse except that its two front teeth (incisors) on its upper jaw were pointed instead of being flat.

flat. So apart from its teeth, there was no difference to your common mice.

The terrain of this place wasn't elevated and was surrounded by a lot of trees. Even though there weren't any leaves for cover, the dense branches crossing each other also created the same effect.

Actually being here made Lei Yu understand why the Devil King had picked him to find his true body. The ultimate goal was that he was capable of hiding his aura to avoid the Sky Devouring Rat's bite. It looks like the Lei Sect's cultivation methods had its own ingenious uses and wasn't any less impressive than the Thirty-six Lunar Star technique.

To hide and avoid was one thing, but rodents were born with a sense of smell that were more sensitive than other animals. Since they usually lived in dark and dirty places, and their visions were poor, they would have starved to death early on if they didn't have a keen sense of smell.

Lei Yu was able to hide his aura

which stopped his energy fluctuation from spreading, but there's no way he could hide the scent of his body. This was the key point to his demise!

One could see the Sky Devouring Rat twitch its nose and started shaking its whiskers. It was able to very quickly detect the approximate location of Lei Yu and rush down. Its movement speed was so quick that it was no different from teleporting!

Lei Yu was shocked and frantically raised his speeds. And it was because of this that he revealed himself.

Lei Yu's speed was quick but the Sky Devouring Rat was three times

faster. In an instant, it had already had already caught up and arrived in front of Lei Yu. Its pair of small eyes kept blinking furiously as it obviously couldn't see Lei Yu's appearance that clearly. The rat then suddenly started speaking in the human language.

“Breaking into the fourth region proves that you have a bit of strength, but you still need to get past me in order to attain the treasure!”

“Treasure? What treasure?” Lei Yu asked in surprise.

“Aren't you here for the treasure?” Asked the Sky Devouring Rat in a shrill voice. Its tone was almost

whisper like but Lei Yu was still able to hear it clearly.

At this point, Lei Yu stood there stunned like he was struck by lightning. “What are you talking about? I’m here to rescue the Devil King’s true body so what’s that got to do with a treasure?”

“Devil King?” The Sky Devouring Rat was thinking for a while before asking: “You’re here for the Devil King that’s been restrained beneath the Heaven Path’s Stone Stele?”

Hearing those words, Lei Yu was a bit relieved. At least this part of Devil King’s words weren’t a lie and his true body was truly being sealed here.

“Looks like I can’t go anywhere unless I pass your obstruction!”

“You’re definitely not something good if you’re related to that Devil King. Looks like I praised you in error!” The Sky Devouring Rat sharply yelled.

Lei Yu swallowed hard and didn’t dare to be careless since this little creature had the ability to devour all things. Even though the Sky Devouring Rat couldn’t see him clearly, Lei Yu had to bear in mind that its sense of smell was very powerful.

Upon slightly moving the Sky Devouring

the Sky Devouring Sword, it created

a buzzing noise which made the Sky Devouring Rat think Lei Yu was about to attack. Its terrifying speeds were once again displayed.

“Woosh!”

There were no sounds of the wind or a trace of its movement. Since the distance was too close, Lei Yu didn't have time to dodge and was bitten by the rat back and forth.

Once, twice, three times, four times...

Lei Yu was completely filled with wounds! Although the injuries he suffered weren't fatal, his whole body was already soaked in blood. Even if he doesn't die immediately, Lei Yu will soon meet his demise!



“What do I do? There’s no way to dodge it! Its speed is even faster than my lightning speeds!” Lei Yu frantically yelled.

The Devil King couldn’t come up with anything for the time being. This rat was a thorn that was extremely difficult to pull out! Lei Yu’s body shook as he forced the blood off his body. He didn’t dare to use his hands to wipe the blood in case the rat used that moment to make a fatal attack.

Lei Yu was in despair as he watched the rat zoom past him over and over again. The Sky Devouring Sword had struck out multiple times but never hit the target.

While covered in blood from top to

bottom, Lei Yu shook his wrist and two beams of white light shot out of the Spiritual Bracelet of Frost. It then began to heal Lei Yu's injuries as best as it could.

“Motherf\*cker! Calculations! Calculations! This daddy will show you our modern world's mathematical calculations!” Cursed Lei Yu as he was completely enraged by the Sky Devouring Rat.

# Chapter 357:

## Attacking In Advance

His eyes couldn't catch up with the Sky Devouring Rat's speed but Lei Yu's spiritual perception was locked onto it. Even so, he still couldn't escape the terrifying speeds of its attack once it started moving.

This little thing was truly a huge headache. Lei Yu took a few deep breaths to calm down and to gather his thoughts. He had already made some calculations in his mind as he experienced the Sky Devouring Rat zooming back and forth in the air. The Sky Devouring Rat travelled at

speeds three times faster than his own movement speed, but it was only twice as fast when it came to Lei Yu's attack speed. With this said, Lei Yu only had to strike out his sword earlier at the trajectory path of the Sky Devouring Rat. The rat's collision with his sword would be equivalent to him making an attack, right?

In other words, this advance attack was used when the speed of its target was too fast for the weapon in hand. Wasn't this method similar to someone on the ground shooting down an aircraft in the sky of the modern world? Before the enemy aircraft arrives at a certain point, you quickly calculate the path of the aircraft and the time it will arrive at a certain point. You then

shoot out a missile at the location and by the time the missile reaches it, it will be the same time the aircraft arrives there creating the desired collision effects!

That's why Lei Yu was thinking since he couldn't compare with this damn rat in speed. The only thing he could do was make those calculations and hope for the best. Lei Yu began to calm down and no longer felt the

previous rage. He started using his spiritual perception to help calculate a series of data points for the trajectory path.

The current distance the Sky Devouring Rat was located at was over ten kilometers. According to

the distance, Lei Yu concluded that the time it will take the rat to reach its corresponding position would be less than half a second. During this time, Lei Yu only had to move his sword a short distance and control his power for the impact, and it will inevitably hit the target!

“Now’s the time!” Without hesitation, Lei Yu swung out his Sky Devouring Sword. In an instant, a crescent shaped attack containing five starry dots appeared. This was the Thirty-six Lunar Star’s first combination ability. Lei Yu watched with a grin as the brightly lit sword swung towards an empty area. He could sense that the Sky Devouring Rat was rapidly flying towards the impact point where his attack was heading towards.

“Boom!”

A bright light blinded the area. Lei Yu's Thirty-six Lunar Star's attack burst apart as the dispersed starry dots made one unable to open their eyes. It was at this time that Lei Yu revealed an expression of shock, “Not good, my attack didn't hit it!”

The moment before Lei Yu's Thirty-six Lunar Star attack landed, the Sky Devouring Rat veered off its trajectory path in order to barely dodge past. The rat was shuddering in fear because it almost became a rat firework.

Lei Yu didn't dare to be careless and forcefully calmed his breathing. Both hands grasped the Sky Devouring Sword and his power

billowed out. If that Sky Devouring Rat wants to make another attack, it would first have to get past his defensive lightning barrier.

Unfortunately Lei Yu was wrong because it seems like... the rat

rat wasn't afraid of lightning! It rushed in from a distance as if it didn't care about Lei Yu's powerful lightning ability. It then forcefully bit down on Lei Yu's right arm!

Lei Yu clenched his teeth. The pain wasn't at the point of being unbearable, but with so many wounds, even Xue Yu and the Devil King's energy combined wouldn't be able to keep up the amount of injuries he was taking on. This time Lei Yu had definitely encountered a crisis!



Right after attacking, the Sky Devouring Rat was about to turn around and finally end Lei Yu's life! Lei Yu's previous attack had almost taken its life so its little heart was now engulfed in rage.

The speed of it turning around was even faster than its flying speed. The eyes of the Sky Devouring Rat then suddenly glowed brightly. It originally could only see things up close but its strength surged allowing it to now see things within a hundred meters away. This allowed the rat to aim accurately for a vulnerable spot on Lei Yu: his throat! No matter what heaven shaking abilities Lei Yu had, and as long as he hadn't reached the Mahayana stage yet, biting down on his throat would pretty much

guarantee his death!

Lei Yu had no idea what the Sky Devouring Rat was planning but he still maintained his guard to his utmost ability. He couldn't understand why his unique lightning ability had no effect on the damn rat. Since it wasn't afraid of lightning and he had no way to attack it, there was only one outcome to this battle: Lei Yu was waiting for his own death!

Lei Yu actually didn't have any regrets coming here because it allowed him to experience the strength of different

of different powerful beasts in this world. The one thing he couldn't let go of was that upon his death, his

lovers will definitely try to look for him. But at this time, the only thing that can change his predetermined outcome was if a miracle appeared.

Sometimes one's fate cannot be changed, but Lei Yu narrowed his eyes and coldly harrumphed. How could someone like him that would never admit defeat give up so easily? He slowly folded up his sleeves exposing his toned muscles. In the upper portion of his right arm, the lightning brand started giving off a faint purple light.

Lei Yu had decided to throw everything he had on the line regardless of what price he had to pay. Even if he was to die, he would still at least get some return out of it!

It was precisely because of the Sky Devouring Rat's increase in eye strength and Lei Yu folding up his sleeves that produced the next unexpected event between those two!

The bite speed of the Sky Devouring Rat was ridiculously fast but Lei Yu had prepared to be wounded in order to injure the rat as well.

Just as the Sky Devouring Rat was under a hundred meters from Lei Yu, it actually veered off course! Its body didn't stop as it hurtled by, but its eyes that were the size of green beans was staring directly at the brand on Lei Yu's right arm!

"You are someone from the Lei Sect? That's the Sky Devouring

Sword in your hands?”

The Sky Devouring Sword in Lei Yu’s hand had already been swung around once and was about to slash down. But upon hearing those words, he stopped his actions midway and asked in surprise: “How did you know?”

The Sky Devouring Rat started squeaking a

started squeaking a few times before asking: “You’re a descendant of the Lei Sect?”

“That’s right, I indeed am!” Lei Yu will never change this identity of his. Even in the Mortal World where he experienced many unhappy things at the Lei family, or

when he told outsiders that he was part of Martial Sect, he had always regarded himself as someone of the Lei family. He still had that sense of belonging even though he was kicked out of the family. It's just that he would say it out loud to others that he had nothing to do with the Lei family, which was something that had brought him pain to this day.

“Why is the Sky Devouring Sword in your possession?” Asked the Sky Devouring Rat.

“The Sky Devouring Sword is... wait a minute...!” Lei Yu sucked in a breath of cool air, “I have the Sky Devouring Sword while your name is Sky Devouring Rat... could it be that you're somehow related to my

sword?”

The Sky Devouring Rat had actually slowly landed onto Lei Yu's palm, seemingly unafraid that Lei Yu would suddenly attack it. Its little squeaky voice then said: “Young master, although I'm not sure if that's the correct title of yours, the Lei Sect has only ever produced three people that have the lightning brand. The first generation's Sovereign, the second generation's Sovereign, and of course the third generation's Sovereign. Perhaps the third generation's Sovereign might be young master you?”

Lei Yu's brains had completely short circuited and couldn't think straight. He originally was about to fight to the death with his opponent

yet suddenly it was now calling him young master? Could there really be some intimate relation between the Sky Devouring Rat, the Sky Devouring Sword, and the Lei Sect?



# Chapter 358:

## Exploited By You

“Who exactly are you?” Lei Yu’s heart was beating erratically as he stared at the little thing sitting on his palm.

The Sky Devouring Rat licked its forelimbs before replying: “I am the first generation’s Sovereign’s Demon Beast General: Heaven’s Path Rat!”

“Heaven’s Path Rat? You... aren’t you called Sky Devouring Rat?”

“To tell you honestly, this Forest of Fog was created in order for us to wait for the third generation’s

Sovereign, which is you. If my guess isn't wrong, you should be Lei Rong Kun?"

Lei Yu's eyebrows twitched, "No, that's not me. I'm not ancestor Lei Rong Kun but I was fortunate enough to have met him once by fate."

"What did you say?!" The Sky Devouring Rat jumped into the air while its two hind legs straightened out. It was staring at Lei Yu who was suddenly filled with shock.

"What I've said is a fact; I truly am not ancestor Lei Rong Kun. I am merely a descendant of the Lei Sect. According to the explanation the ancestor gave me, I should be the Lei Sect's fourth... fourth

descendant to inherit the lightning brand. It was precisely this reason that the old ancestor passed the Sky Devouring Sword and the latter half of the Heavenly Thunder Manual to me.” Lei Yu explained.

The Sky Devouring Rat was in thought for a while before asking: “What is your name?”

“Lei Yu.”

“I am also the second generation’s Sovereign’s Forward General: Heaven’s Path Rat. I am here waiting for the third generation’s Sovereign Lei Rong Kun to retrieve the treasure that belongs to the Lei family. In order to recognize each other

easier, my name was changed to Sky Devouring Rat so that it will be similar to the Sky Devouring Sword. My big brother's name is now the Heaven's Path Rat. My big brother and I were originally filthy animals cast aside by the population. Our master happened to enlighten us one day which allowed us to achieve the current strength you see today." The Sky Devouring Rat murmured.

Lei Yu understood that this little thing's master was the second generation's Sovereign, except he couldn't figure out why the Immortal World would have the Lei Sect's existence and not have it at the same time.

Lei Yu was really curious so he

asked and got an answer.

The Lei family was originally the Lei Sect, a big family that awed the four seas from their business based powers. And their battle strength couldn't be look down on either. Due to their advanced development and trainings that evolved, a portion of the Lei Sect disciples managed to enter the Immortal World and establish a base for future generations. The Thunder Rune Sect was indeed the evolvement of the Lei Sect while the Mortal World's Lei family achieved their status from their inheritance.

Hearing this, Lei Yu finally got his answer that the Thunder Rune Sect was indeed of the same bloodline as his Lei family. "What is that

treasure you were talking about?  
Am I qualified to go check it out?”  
Lei Yu asked.

“You are a descendant of the Lei  
Sect and possess the most supreme  
lightning brand, so why wouldn’t  
you be qualified? Young master,  
come with me!”

As its voice faded, the Sky  
Devouring Rat squeaked a few  
times

times before slowly flying off. It  
kept its speed slow just so that Lei  
Yu could keep up with it.

Within this fourth region, it was too  
filled with rotten trees and eerily  
silent. This area had suffered the  
least damage because no large area

of attacks was used like the previous ones. The Sky Devouring Rat had a tiny body so Lei Yu didn't feel a large area attack would help him at all, and would actually waste a lot of his internal energy. As for the Sky Devouring Rat, it had not been pushed to resort to its true abilities. Otherwise, this entire region would have definitely been completely obliterated.

Accompanying the Sky Devouring Rat, they started flying towards the large mountain. On the way there, Lei Yu was looking at the scenery and noticed it was no different from the other regions: they were all filled with dead trees. But as they got closer to their destination, Lei Yu started feeling a familiar aura.

“What is that?!” Asked Lei Yu as he pointed at a huge stone stele off into a distance.

Although its facial expression was difficult to distinguish, one could feel a kind of sadness as the Sky Devouring Rat replied: “That is my big brother who transformed into a stone stele in order to suppress that so called Devil King that young master mentioned.”

“Why would something like this happen?” Lei Yu asked with wide eyes.

“If it weren’t for young master’s identity, I would definitely have not let you go. A few hundred years ago, the Devil King came to this Forest of Fog in order to steal the Lei Sect’s



supreme treasure.

supreme treasure. He managed to bypass the three barriers and came straight to the fourth region. My big brother... he was only at the late Boundary Transition stage so there's no way he could beat the Devil King who was already at the Mahayana stage. He gave up his soul and turned into a stone stele in order to suppress the Devil King beneath it. Big brother told me that the stone stele will be named the Heaven's Path Stone Stele while my name would be changed to Sky Devouring Rat so that the third generation's Sovereign will recognize me easier."

Hearing the Sky Devouring Rat's words, Lei Yu frowned and clenched

his fists. He then started cursing at the Devil King in his mind: “You became like this because you were coveting my Lei family’s treasure! You’re a goddamn despicable villain!”

“Heehee, unfortunately for you, you’ve found out too late!” The Devil King’s voice was more shrill and ghastly than before. Beyond Lei Yu’s control, the skull flew out of the Universal Pouch and rushed straight below the Heaven’s Path stone stele.

“Quick, stop him!” Lei Yu screamed in shock as he pointed at the demonic looking skull.

Hearing this, the Sky Devouring Rat flew at its maximum speed. A black

shadow flashed by and blocked in front of the skull. “You’re the Devil King?!” The Sky Devouring Rat yelled out.

“So you’re still around.” Said the Devil King’s remnant soul before slowly turning around towards Lei Yu. “You’ve actually managed to acknowledge each other in such a short time. Looks like I made a mistake on this step, but it doesn’t really matter. Since my true body is right

body is right in front, I want to see what you guys can do to stop me!”

“You son of a b\*tch! So I’ve already been your chess piece ever since the Mortal World!” Roared Lei Yu as his eyes turned blood red and his body

shook.

“That’s right; you have been completely used by me. That Sky Devouring Rat was too annoying, actually giving up its soul to trap me beneath the stone stele. In my helpless situation, I could only stimulate your soul with a portion of my own soul in order for you to draw out the lightning brand. With that, I was able to also plant a seed of my power within you. From that day on, even if you want to get rid of me would be an impossible thing. Your entire life... has been fated to become my servant! Haha...”

“F\*ck you motherf\*cker!” Lei Yu was completely enraged. All this time he was being used by the Devil King.

All those flowery words and all those pointers in cultivation, everything was for him to enter the Forest of Fog. Only when he entered this place would Lei Yu successfully help him rescue his true body. What hiding aura to escape the Sky Devouring Rat? What less people the better? All of it was bullshit, complete bullshit!

“Curse, go ahead and curse all you want!” The Devil King coldly laughed before turning around again. “Little mice, you think your big brother was that divine? If it weren’t for that day when I was attacking the protective barrier and suffered some injuries, did you think your big brother could’ve subdued me that easily?”

# Chapter 359: A Trace Of Unwillingness

“Young master, kill his remnant soul! Kill him!” The Sky Devouring Rat had gone crazy thinking about the culprit who put its big brother in such a state. It started attacking like crazy but it was useless, all its attacks went through the skull as if it was nothing but air. The skull was simply an existence that nothing could touch!

Lei Yu’s eyes were blood red with rage. He never imagined that everything was kept in the dark by this bastard. For nearly twenty

years, he was filled with gratitude and formed a dependence on the green energy. Upon reaching the Immortal World, he found out the origins of it and started loathing it. And now it had turned to hatred. Lei Yu even felt like destroying himself just so that energy in his body would disappear for good!

After gasping for air, Lei Yu tightened his hand around the Sky Devouring Sword. "Devil King, you came here all because of my Lei Sect's treasure. You even used my identity in order to smoothly enter this last region. I can only hate myself for not realizing your plot earlier!"

"There's no need to be so angry."  
The Devil King smiled and

continued saying: “The words I’ve said to you will still count. I will impart to you the cultivation methods after the Mahayana stage and will also gift you with a supreme treasure. But the supreme treasure of mine will have to be exchanged for the favor of your Lei Sect’s treasure, haha...”

“There’s one thing I don’t understand: How did you manage to pass through the Chaotic Star Sea to reach the

Mortal World in your state?”

“You dummy!” The Devil King smiled, “You should know the Chaotic Star Sea has four great guardians right? I... am one of them!”



“What?!”

“What?!”

Even the Sky Devouring Rat was shocked. Never would they have imagined that the Devil King was one of the four great guardians of the Chaotic Star Sea!

“Now you should I understand why I’m able to freely enter the Mortal World, right?”

When he previously saw how the Sky Devouring Rat’s attack was useless against the Devil King, Lei Yu knew that it would be the same outcome for him. That’s why he gave up on killing the Devil King and forced himself to calm down.

“Are you really some sort of

invincible existence?” Asked Lei Yu with his eyes narrowed.

Hearing Lei Yu’s words, the Devil King’s nonexistent brows twitched, “Before I wasn’t... but now, my abilities are near invincible in the Immortal World! After killing this little mouse, you will then become my servant. Once I gain the Lei Sect’s treasure, I can easily leave the Immortal World and reach the destination that everyone has worked so hard for: the Celestial World! Haha...”

“Ahhhh, slash!”

The Sky Devouring Rat and the Devil King both widened their eyes and revealed looks of shock. They were shocked because the current

Lei Yu had a light smile on his face.

“You... want to control... me? Stop... dreaming!” Lei Yu roared out while his whole body shook. He was holding the Sky Devouring Sword which had been stabbed inside his stomach. One could see Lei Yu contort with pain as he pushed the Sky Devouring Sword deeper inside him. The ground where he was had been drenched in

in blood already.

“Young master! What are you doing?!” The Sky Devouring Rat cried out in a piercing scream. It wanted to stop Lei Yu at its fastest speed but was stopped by Lei Yu’s words. “I refuse to be a servant, especially a servant to this villain!

Today, I will extract my Nascent Soul from my abdomen and shatter it. Then we'll see how he's going to live up to his own fantasy!"

Lei Yu's breathing accelerated while his face was filled with sweat. His face also paled making the current him look slightly terrifying to behold.

"What use is there? Humph!" The Devil King continued: "You thought that you could get rid of me by shattering your Nascent Soul? You're the one that's dreaming!"

The Devil King no longer bothered with Lei Yu's fate and started flying towards his target, the Heaven's Path stone stele!

The Sky Devouring Rat flew towards Lei Yu and landed on his shoulder. It then condensed its voice into a thin line of energy which was then transmitted into Lei Yu's ears.

“Don't worry young master; he's not going to succeed.”

“Eh? Lei Yu's breathing trembled as he looked at the Sky Devouring Rat upon his shoulder. He watched it nod with confidence in its green bean sized eyes.

Lei Yu stopped his actions of extracting his Nascent Soul but didn't immediately pull the sword out of his abdomen. He then continued watching the Devil King as its skull got closer to the

Heaven's Path stone stele.

The Heaven's Path stone stele was about five meters tall and three meters wide. Even though it wasn't that big, it still looked quite unique since the surface was filled with runes that

runes that Lei Yu couldn't make heads or tails out of. The only thing he knew was that the runes weren't engraved onto it but seemed to be naturally appeared when the stone stele was formed.

"Haha, I'm about to succeed!" This was the last time the Devil King's voice was heard as he entered the Heaven's Path stone stele.

For a while, there weren't any

noticeable changes but Lei Yu and the Sky Devouring Rat continued staring.

It was at this moment that the runes of the stone stele suddenly brightened! The runes were being illuminated by a green light which allowed one to clearly see the strokes of each rune!

Lei Yu's eyes widened as he felt the energy seemed very familiar! Wasn't this the same as the Devil King's green energy? Could it be that the Devil King is about to succeed in escaping the stone stele?

"Young master, I think... he's definitely going to die this time!" The Sky Devouring Rat whispered in Lei Yu's ears.

“Oh?” Lei Yu appeared to have forgotten the pain in his abdomen and asked with raised eyebrows: “What do you mean?”

The Sky Devouring Rat then explained: “It has already been a few hundred years since my big brother’s soul transformed into the Heaven’s Path stone stele. The Devil King’s true body has been pretty much melted into nothingness with only a trace left, and it was this slight trace that made the remnant soul unable to discover the reality of the situation. Since he chose to enter the Heaven’s Path stone stele, he has fallen into my big brother’s trap. The remnant soul has finally arrived to its cursed body, he’s dead for sure!”



Lei Yu

for sure!”

Lei Yu gasped as he couldn't believe what he was hearing. The moment he focused on the stone stele again, he started seeing runes shooting out from the ground as well. The Sky Devouring Rat advised Lei Yu to back away so they both retreated over a hundred meters.

“Boom!”

A mushroom cloud burst into the skies. Lei Yu once again witnessed a terrifying scene and completely believed what the Sky Devouring Rat had said. It looks like the Devil King was truly finished this time.

At the top of the mushroom cloud,

a green halo shot into the sky creating another loud boom. The green light then disintegrated into the surrounding area and disappeared without a trace. Lei Yu could feel a trace of unwillingness from it! This sense of unwillingness didn't come from Lei Yu but came from the Devil King.

“He is dead, but the thing inside me...” As the green halo light disappeared, Lei Yu immediately sent his spiritual awareness towards his Nascent Soul. The green brand was still there, causing his emotions to sink to the depths of despair.

“Don't worry young master; there might be method to dissipate the remnant energy inside your body.”

Said the Sky Devouring Rat.

“What method?” Lei Yu’s eyes immediately widened. He pulled out the Sky Devouring Sword from his abdomen and Xue Yu frantically used her power to heal Lei Yu’s wound. As for the green energy... it didn’t move at all as if it was some type of dead matter residing inside Lei Yu.

“Even though there is, it’s going to be slightly difficult. How about young master first come with me to go retrieve the Lei Sect’s supreme treasure?”

# Chapter 360: Test Of The Earth Vein

What was this supreme treasure of the Lei Sect? Lei Yu had no clue but could only guess that it must be something extremely precious since the Devil King wanted it as well. His heart was filled with anticipation as he followed the Sky Devouring Rat past the stone stele towards the small mountain.

“Young master, this mountain has been sealed by the Lei Sect’s second generation’s Sovereign. You have to use the Sky Devouring Sword to chop the mountain in half before the treasure can be revealed.” The Sky Devouring Rat mumbled

towards Lei Yu as he stopped midair.

Upon hearing this, Lei Yu nodded as he grasped the Sky Devouring Sword with both hands. He lightly exhaled before exerting internal energy out of his body and injecting it into the sword. He then flew upwards into the sky before he started roaring out.

The strength to pluck mountains and rivers, and easily sweeping all obstacles away!

With Lei Yu's powers infused into the Sky Devouring Sword, it started shining brightly. The brightness was so bright that even the Sky Devouring Rat who had such poor vision, had to close his eyes.

“Ahhhhhhhhh~!”

The bright beam of light that shot forth was like a huge war blade: the purple energy mixed with white starry dots cut through the air with a whistling noise as it headed straight for the tip of the mountain.

A beam of light sliced into the top of the mountain and pierced all the way to the bottom. Lei Yu watched as the mountain shook nonstop. This small mountain appeared to exude a powerful aura so if he didn't use all his strength, anything weaker would be unable to split it in half.

The mountain only shook but did not

collapse. The area where Lei Yu split the mountain apart seemed to have separated into two parts forming two identical small mountains. And straight in the middle was a huge gap caused by the light beam.

Lei Yu looked at the Sky Devouring Rat and asked: "What do we do now?"

"Please follow me young master." After saying that, the Sky Devouring Rat flew forward towards the gap. Lei Yu quickly followed since he wanted to know what sort of treasure it was that would make the Devil King take such huge risks to seize.

As they got closer, Lei Yu could

clearly feel that somewhere within the gap, there existed an extremely powerful energy! What could it be?

“Young master, this is the closest I can bring you. You should personally enter the area while I wait for you out here.” The Sky Devouring Rat stopped its flight while saying this to Lei Yu.

After hesitating for a moment, Lei Yu nodded: “Okay.”

Lei Yu gradually descended onto the ground since he had decided to walk instead.

There’s a common saying: Both feet on the ground would calm a wavering heart, and both hands gripping a blade will solidify one’s



courage.

No matter how versatile flying was, this was not Lei Yu's choice of fighting style. He preferred to use the ground to help him explode forth his main focus of being fast. Lei Yu was unable to do this in the air because his speed was affected by one important factor: he didn't have wings.

Even though there shouldn't be any danger up ahead, at least being on the ground would ease Lei Yu's heart somewhat.

As he got closer, Lei Yu could feel the powerful energy flowing all around him. After holding his breath and clenching his teeth, he ignored the consequences

consequences and continued walking forward!

At times, the Gods will favor those that are courageous causing miracles to occur. But those people must also have a kind heart and a sense of justice. Even though the Devil King was powerful and courageous, he harbored evil intentions so he couldn't achieve his desires even unto death.

“What kind of place is this?”

Lei Yu started mumbling to himself but what he never imagined was someone actually responding!

“Never expected that you've absorbed the Dragon Vein's essence as well.”

“Who?! Who’s that speaking?” Lei Yu anxiously look around and even spread his spiritual perception everywhere. But apart from the white fog hiding the environment, Lei Yu couldn’t see anything suspicious. He also started feeling strange when his perception was unable to perceive anything living in the area.

“There’s no need to try searching because you won’t be able to find me. Since you are able to absorb the Dragon Vein’s essence, most likely the Earth Vein will not reject you. But you must first pass three tests if you want to absorb the Earth Vein. Once you’ve successfully passed the three tests, the Earth Vein will recognize you as its owner. By then, the Dragon Vein inside you will be

the pillar while the Earth Vein will become your foundation. And your achievements in the future will definitely not be small!” Lei Yu couldn’t figure out who was saying those words and only felt like it came from everywhere. Even his spiritual perception was unable to detect any energy fluctuations so there was no way to find the source.

Lei Yu’s scalp became numb as he recalled what he had heard in the past. This universe had the Heaven, Earth, and Dragon Veins. By fate and chance, he was able to absorb the Dragon Vein. Even

Vein. Even though Lei Yu had never figured out the actual benefits of the Dragon Vein, he at least knew it had helped him somewhat. Never

would he have imagined that the Earth Vein would be located here!

“Who are you? How did you know this place is the Earth Vein?” Lei Yu asked respectfully.

The voice was gentle but was filled with a majestic power that made Lei Yu unconsciously act respectfully towards it. “You should be humbly calling me old ancestor since I am the Lei Sect’s second generation’s Sovereign: Lei Chen.”

“Lei Chen? Lei Chen?” Lei Yu started sifting through his memories of the ancestral records he had read in the past before he suddenly remembered the second generation’s Sovereign. He was dumbfounded for a second before

performing the necessary rituals of his status: Lei Yu immediately kneeled down. As the saying goes: One must kneel to the heavens and the earth, and one's own parents. One must also make three bows to the ancestors and the Gods. Lei Yu would never kneel down before anyone other than those mentioned, so when meeting an old ancestor, these ritualistic actions was a must.

“Old ancestor, where are you exactly? How come I cannot see you?” Lei Yu asked.

“It doesn't matter if you can see me or not. Time is of the essence, I only have enough to tell you about the three tests so you need to look out after yourself!” After pausing for a

bit, the second generation's Sovereign's voice was heard again: "You must complete the 'strength, heart, and will' tests before the Earth Vein will recognize you."

"What do you mean by strength, heart, and will?"

"It means you must possess a powerful strength, a strong heart, and an indestructible will. Those three qualities complement each other.

complement each other. For example: If you have powerful strength but unable to handle an emotional blow, then you would fail. Having the first two qualities but lacking determination would also not work out in the end. I can

only advise you of these things and you'll have to figure everything else on your own." The voice gradually appeared further away. Lei Yu called out a few times but didn't get a response, so most likely the old ancestor had left this area already.

Through his contact with the Devil King, Lei Yu found out that cultivators were able use their will to leave behind a remnant body or voice. Even though these remnant conscience are able to embody a trace of their owner's will, they are unable to function like its true body. The remnant conscience of the old ancestor was only his voice, that's why Lei Yu was unable to see his figure.

Just as Lei Yu was in deep thought



about this, the area started changing! The fog gradually dissipated and Lei Yu's eyes widened at the surrounding environment!

“This isn't the previous environment, where am I?” Lei Yu was shocked as he looked at a bridge for humans to cross. This place was definitely not the Forest of Fog... so what kind of scenery was he witnessing?

Lei Yu started walking forward while his heart was filled with uncertainty. He stepped onto the wooden arch bridge and looked down at the river, noticing several bright red carps swimming about. Everything looked so real and didn't appear to be an illusion!

“Mother, stay here and enjoy the sun for a bit while I go to the market. I will sell these furs first before buying some white rice for us.” A simple and honest sounding voice drifted into Lei Yu’s ears.

# Chapter 361: Wild Mountain Boars

Upon looking closer, Lei Yu noticed a twenty something year old man . He had an honest appearance, the stubble outlines of a beard, and wearing clean looking clothes albeit filled with patches . The honest look of this young man gave others a feeling that he was easy to befriend.

As for his mother, she was sitting on a wooden chair that appeared to be handmade . She had her eyes closed and was sitting in a small courtyard with a low fence surrounding it . As Lei Yu looked further, the woman was actually an

elderly party instead of middle-aged . The hair by her temples was white, her face was full of wrinkles, and she was most likely an elderly at a high age . Her kind looking face had made Lei Yu's heart quicken because he unconsciously thought of his own mother . Although his own mother wouldn't be this old, and even if she did look this old, as long as she was alive, Lei Yu too wished he could wait upon his mother like this.

That young man inadvertently noticed Lei Yu in a daze on top of the wooden bridge . "Hello, what are you looking at over there?"

All of this truly seemed real, making Lei Yu feel helplessly drawn into it . Perhaps everything was real

because the Earth Vein might have the power to transport him to another world.

Lei Yu responded: “This brother, can you please tell me what place is this? I seemed to have lost my way .” Lei Yu had noticed the clothing of this person and it didn’t look like what one would wear in the modern era.

“So that’s what happened!” The young man then came over, “This place is surrounded by sheer cliffs and rock walls to nowhere . Only after passing that Silicon Mountain will you return back to the main road . And behind this Silicon Mountain is our biggest town, the Silicon Town . I’m about to head to the market of Silicon Town so how

about we travel together? We can watch each other's back during the journey and once you reach the town, it's as simple as asking around and you'll be able to find the way to your destination . ”

Lei Yu cupped his hands, “Then I'll thank you in advance!”

Since he was here, he might as well make the best of it . The Earth Vein had given him a test so he had to complete it . Besides, the old ancestor had told him to participate in this so defying it wasn't something Lei Yu planned on doing . Moreover, he had no method of leaving this place so he might as well integrate himself into this world . Getting to know this interesting new world was not a bad

idea.

This wasn't Lei Yu's first time of being brought into another world; he had also visited ancient Greece . He wasn't too surprised about being magically sent here since this was his second time . He was actually trying to suppress his excitement of such a novel concept.

The young man cupped his hands and asked: "May I ask for your great name?"

"Lei Yu . " He didn't bother hiding his name since this appeared to be a different world . This place shouldn't have anyone that would recognize him, especially when Lei Yu still wasn't sure if this place was real or not.

“My name is Zhou Jun Sheng . ”

Lei Yu was a bit surprised because his name was scholarly and refined while his image was the brawny type, completely different from what one would imagine . Although this Zhou Jun Sheng looked honest, he seem to release an invisible heroic aura.

Seeing the strange look on Lei Yu’s face, Zhou Jun Sheng started laughing . “My father was a scholar who taught at a village . My name was given by my father . ”

“Where is your father now?” Lei Yu asked.

There was a slight change on his facial expression before Zhou Jun



Sheng sighed, “He died of a serious illness a while ago...”

There was a slight change on his facial expression before Zhou Jun Sheng sighed, “He died of a serious illness a while ago...”

Zhou Jun Sheng’s face started looking uglier at this point so Lei Yu frantically said: “I’m so sorry, I’m so sorry!”

“Don’t worry, it’s been over ten years now and I was still a child back then . It’s just really unfortunate that I cannot serve him to his elderly years . ”

“Jun Sheng!”

Hearing his old mother call out, Zhou Jun Sheng smiled: “Please

wait a moment, I'll bid farewell to my mother first before we set out . ”

Lei Yu nodded . Seeing how filial Zhou Jun Sheng was, the impression Lei Yu had of him increased a lot . There's a common saying: A filial son would also do right by their friends, and he will also be loyal to his lord.

These types of people have been historically respected by all people . Even though this Zhou Jun Sheng's current living conditions were tough, Lei Yu believed that he will later attain great achievements in life.

After bidding his mother farewell with a few words, Zhou Jun Sheng led Lei Yu out of the small village

and towards the Silicon Mountain .  
The path they were on was rugged  
and wet due to the previous rainfall  
. Lei Yu could tell Zhou Jun Sheng  
often took this route because he  
was able to traverse these slippery  
grounds very easily and would  
advise Lei Yu to be careful from  
time to time.

Lei Yu would of course not be  
hindered by these mundane things  
and would often be in front of Zhou  
Jun Sheng due to his quicker pace.

Lei Yu would of course not be  
hindered by these mundane things  
and would often be in front of Zhou  
Jun Sheng due to his quicker pace.

“Brother Lei Yu, we have to be  
careful in this area . There are

numerous poisonous snakes and beasts about in this mountain forest . We must pass this mountain before dark or else it'll be very dangerous if we're stuck here for the night . ” Advised Zhou Jun Sheng.

Lei Yu lightly smiled, “Then we'll increase our pace . ”

Zhou Jun Sheng tightened the hemp rope around his body to prevent the animal furs from falling off his back . He then began to speed up his pace behind Lei Yu . Zhou Jun Sheng was internally surprised at Lei Yu's leg strength because Lei Yu wasn't even breathing hard after traversing so long on the mountain path . It was as if Lei Yu didn't know what the

words tired meant.

Little did he know that Lei Yu was accompanying him in order to conceal his abilities . If Lei Yu was by himself, he'd already have flown into the sky instead of wasting time walking through the mountains.

“Be careful brother, there are some wild boars that live around here and they often forage in these parts of the mountains . If we're fortunate enough to hunt down one or two of them, we can exchange them for some money . But these guys are extremely fierce so if we happen to encounter them, brother should hide behind me and let me deal with them . ” Advised Zhou Jun Sheng.

Lei Yu's heart was slightly touched by those words . They merely met by chance yet this Zhou Jun Sheng treated him with such care . Looks like not only was he good natured, pure and honest, he was also a loyal guy like those mountain heroes.

“Then I'll thank you in advance . ”  
Lei Yu cupped his hands.

Halfway to their destination, sure enough there were the snorting noises of some wild boars . Zhou Jun Sheng became vigilant and strode in front of Lei Yu . “Be careful brother, I'm afraid those wild boars aren't too far from us . ”

There were a total of two wild mountain boars that leisurely appeared . Their big snouts

twitched a bit, clearly sensing Lei Yu and Zhou Jun Sheng . The wild boars then quietly got closer to the two humans.

Halfway to their destination, sure enough there were the snorting noises of some wild boars . Zhou Jun Sheng became vigilant and strode in front of Lei Yu . “Be careful brother, I’m afraid those wild boars aren’t too far from us . ”

There were a total of two wild mountain boars that leisurely appeared . Their big snouts twitched a bit, clearly sensing Lei Yu and Zhou Jun Sheng . The wild boars then quietly got closer to the two humans.

That Zhou Jun Sheng actually

ripped off a tree branch the size of one's arm with his bare hands . Lei Yu couldn't help feel a bit surprised because this type of strength was definitely something ordinary people did not possess.

“Come at me!”

After shouting out, Zhou Jun Sheng rushed off waving that tree branch with the thickness of an arm . The two wild boars had thick and rough skin so they weren't afraid of being struck . One of them also started charging forward to meet Zhou Jun Sheng.

The wild boar with a slightly smaller stature had stayed in place while the bigger one started thrusting its tusk.



After being struck by Zhou Jun Sheng a few times, the bigger wild boar felt powerless since it was unable to get near him . It snorted a few times before running off to the side.

Since the wild boar and Zhou Jun Sheng appeared to be at a standstill where neither of them dared to step forward, the wild boar had decided act differently when it noticed Lei Yu standing off to a distance . Since Zhou Jun Sheng was so powerful, it had decided that: wouldn't it be better to run off towards the weaker looking human? It seems like the wild boar's brain wasn't as stupid as one thought, but there's no way it would expect that Lei Yu was the true terrifying existence here.

# Chapter 362:

## Selling A Snake's Gallbladder

Seeing the wild boar charge over, a faint smile formed on Lei Yu's lips . He flipped his palm and was about slap down on the pig-head when at this time, Zhou Jun Sheng's shout could be heard . "Don't even think of hurting my friend! Hand your life over!"

After the enraged roar, the branch in Zhou Jun Sheng's hand was now in the air before directly slamming on top of the wild boar's head . After a loud "bang," the wild boar started staggering in dizziness .

Seeing this opportunity, Zhou Jun Sheng took out a blade on his waist and sliced at the neck of the wild boar . The wild boar immediately started flailing about before slumping over in its own pool of blood.

The smaller wild boar hurriedly turned around to escape after seeing this scene . Zhou Jun Sheng didn't bother chasing after it and just shouted: "I'll let you off today!"

"Are you alright brother? You didn't get frightened, right?" Zhou Jun Sheng asked in a panic.

If others were to ask him this, Lei Yu would probably feel like laughing in their face . But when this Zhou Jun Sheng asked, Lei Yu

actually felt touched . They've just met by chance, chatted some random words on their journey, and this Zhou Jun Sheng had treated Lei Yu like a good friend already . He even rushed forth in order to save Lei Yu, so how could he not be moved by this show of friendship?

“I'm fine, everything's fine . ”

“That's good then!” Zhou Jun Sheng pulled out the blade lodged in the wild boar's neck before carefully skinning it . The whole process took over half an hour because his actions looked like he was afraid of damaging the fur and wouldn't be able to sell it at a good price.

Watching the skies darken, the two of them had only travelled a little

over halfway before encountering the wild boars . This meant that there's no way they'd be able to leave the mountains before it got dark.

“It's all my fault that my hands weren't agile enough and wasted our time . But don't worry brother, I will definitely protect you while we stay overnight in this forest . ” Said Zhou Jun Sheng while smacking his own chest.

“It's not a big deal . I heard that the meat of wild mountain boars is delicious, and they aren't as fatty as the domesticated pigs . Just in time when I'm hungry, how about we... roast it and have a taste?” Said Lei Yu as he pointed at the dead wild boar on the ground.

Zhou Jun Sheng smiled, "That's easy to take care of . Wild boar meat is difficult to roast so it's perfect to kill our time throughout the night . " After dropping the fur he was carrying on his back, he then used some dry branches to spread apart the wild boar's skin so that it could dry for a bit . Only after this did he take out a fire stick to prepare a small campfire to roast the wild boar.

These two ate happily into the middle of the night . The wild boar meat was indeed very delicious; it wasn't greasy at all and the succulent meat had a slight chewiness to it . Since the two couldn't finish the entire wild boar, they wrapped up the leftovers in some wax paper so that they could

eat it along their journey.

“Brother, you should go to sleep now . Once the sky brightens, we’ll begin our journey again . ” Said Zhou Jun Sheng.

“What about you?”

“I’ll be staying on guard of the surroundings . Since we’ve just roasted some meat here, I’m afraid the wild beasts may have smelt the food and might come over . ”

Lei Yu wanted to say something but upon seeing the sincerity in Zhou Jun Sheng’s eyes, he lightly coughed while nodding . Lei Yu then picked up a piece of flat stone to use as his pillow.

Lei Yu wanted to say something but

upon seeing the sincerity in Zhou Jun Sheng's eyes, he lightly coughed while nodding . Lei Yu then picked up a piece of flat stone to use as his pillow.

As we all know, Lei Yu didn't actually need to eat any food . He knew how much energy one consumed after fighting so he wanted Zhou Jun Sheng to eat something to recover.

Throughout the night, Lei Yu happened to hear several clear “pak pak” sounds . He understood that it was Zhou Jun Sheng slapping himself in order to stay awake.

“This was a brother worth making a friend out of! But... once he leaves this test, most likely he will never



be able to see him again . ” Lei Yu felt a slight unwillingness in his heart.

“Brother, it’s time to wake up so we can continue on our journey . If we can sell the fur for a good price today, we’ll be able to make it back the next day . My mother is still waiting for me to refill the rice barrel . ” Zhou Jun Sheng called out from the side.

Lei Yu sat up and pretended to rub his eyes like he had just woken up . He then grabbed a water bag belonging to Zhou Jun Sheng and washed up a bit . The two then continued their journey towards Silicon Town.

The scene at the base of the

mountain gradually greeted Lei Yu's eyes . He finally realized that this town was truly not large at all; it was half the size of the typical towns he was used to . But perhaps it was their location at the base of a mountain that it was especially lively in there . There were many people trying to sell their mountain specialties and other strange things that piqued Lei Yu's curiosity.

“We're here; it's just right up front .” Zhou Jun Sheng pointed at the especially lively main street . This place had a lot of people crying out their wares, and there were even some government officials and nobles walking around hoping to find some unique things for their collections.

“So this is Silicon Town?” Lei Yu asked.

“So this is Silicon Town?” Lei Yu asked.

“That’s right brother, you can casually find someone to inquire on how to get to your final destination . I have to take these furs to the market area to sell . ” Zhou Jun Sheng smiled as he shifted the furs he was carrying on his back.

Lei Yu almost couldn’t bear seeing Zhou Jun Sheng’s tired looking face . He didn’t get any sleep last night and today, he had to try his best to sell all his fur before hurrying home . This guy’s life was truly difficult.

“You take care of your things here

while I'll go elsewhere to ask around . I'll come look for you later on . ” Lei Yu waved his hand and started towards the inner depths of the market.

Lei Yu noticed many stalls selling common fruits such as pears and dates etc . There were also some stalls that sold things like unique decorative items, handmade clay figurines, and pendants one would wear on their waists.

Lei Yu didn't have any money this world used so he could only look but unable to buy . Since he was penniless, there was a saying about: When in Rome, do as the Romans . Lei Yu proceeded to pull out a huge snake's gallbladder from his Universal Pouch . It was the size of

a typical human's head so he just held it out in his hands while standing at empty spot next to another stall.

“Come on over! Take a look! Take a look at this thousand year old snake gallbladder!” Lei Yu imitated the words of those old wuxia movies he had watched in the past.

Lei Yu's words attracted a group of onlookers as they moved closer to take a look.

A snake's gallbladder was a common item that woodcutters and fishermen could easily get their hands on . But a thousand year old snake's gallbladder was unheard of which made a large amount of people come over just to check out

this unique item.

A fat middle-aged man with a full beard stepped forward, “Little brother, is that really a thousand year old snake’s gallbladder?”

A snake’s gallbladder was a common item that woodcutters and fishermen could easily get their hands on . But a thousand year old snake’s gallbladder was unheard of which made a large amount of people come over just to check out this unique item.

A fat middle-aged man with a full beard stepped forward, “Little brother, is that really a thousand year old snake’s gallbladder?”

“Of course! My snake’s gallbladder

is like a great medicine; it can be steeped into medicinal liquor that's able to refresh one's mind, get rid of illnesses, and even avert disasters!" Lei Yu couldn't even remember where he learned this set of words.

"Are you for real? Don't think you can pull a fast one over our eyes here!" The middle-aged man looked around at the surrounding people and started a commotion in the crowd.

"Could it be that you dug up some insect shit from somewhere and wrapped it up to cheat our money?"

"That's right! I bet you that's what's going on!"

Lei Yu knew what was going on;

they were trying to make up stuff to lower the value of the snake's gallbladder . That way, anyone that manages to get it will be picking up a treasure for cheap.

People with knowledge in this area would be able to notice its uniqueness with a glance . The snake's gallbladder was green and still had a slight fishy smell . Although it had dried up already, retaining its color and smell would mean it was definitely a superior grade item.

“If you don't believe it, you can give it a try . ” Lei Yu unhurriedly said.



# Chapter 363: A Rascal Noble

“Try? How are we supposed to try it out?” Asked the fat middle-aged man.

Everyone knows that as long as it is an ingredient that’s part of a medicinal tonic, the item would be considered a treasure . But even if it truly was a treasure, no one has ever heard of it taking effect immediately . Even if this snake’s gallbladder was real, how would they “give it a try” to see if it was real or not? Most of the crowd was only here to watch a show . If it was real, they’ll call out bravo; if it was fake, they’ll just consider watching

a comedy show . They were basically here just to enjoy themselves this afternoon in town.

Lei Yu then turned to the crowd and asked: “Is there anyone present experiencing deficiency in the body or suffering from an illness? Or maybe someone whose eyes can’t see or focus properly?”

There were actually one or two people that stepped forward . They figured: Since it didn’t require money and it might even cure their illness, why not?

One of them was an elderly man with a thin body and yellow unhealthy skin . Lei Yu noticed this old man’s clothes were filled with patches everywhere . It appears that

even though he was sick, most likely he didn't even have money to get treated.

The other person was completely different . He was a young man with a smooth face and healthy skin . He was wearing a set of white clothes with a silver cloth belt at the waist . In his hands was a folded up fan with a pendant hanging off the end.

At this time, he was squinting his already small eyes pretending to have problems with his vision . It was pretty clear to Lei Yu that this guy was some rich noble here to have some fun.

“Old senior, which part of the body do you feel is uncomfortable?” Lei Yu walked forward to support the

elderly man.

“This old fool is a woodcutter of the mountains . I gather firewood and hunt small animals as a form of living . Ten years ago, I accidentally slipped and fell down the mountain . It was fortunate that I’m still alive, but because my family doesn’t have money, I wasn’t able to seek out treatment . Whenever there’s wind or rain, all the bones in my body feel like there are millions of ants biting all over . ” Explained the old man.

Lei Yu nodded with a smile . He then quickly searched through his memory of the <> to see which herbs he could use to eliminate the chills and repair the bones that have suffered traumatic injuries.

“I’ve got it!” Lei Yu then continued saying: “Old senior, because your injury was over ten years ago, my snake’s gallbladder cannot be used to treat you . But I have a prescription to treat you and the herbs necessary are all very cheap . As long as you go to the drug store to pick up those herbs to boil, you will start seeing relief in just five days . ”

“There’s such a thing?” By the tone in his voice, it was obvious the old man didn’t seem to believe Lei Yu . He had been enduring the pain all these years not because he couldn’t afford the medicinal herbs . The herbs were actually quite cheap but the fee to see a doctor for treatment was expensive so he was helpless to do anything about it . He kept

dragging this out over the years yet such a kind hearted person randomly pops up today, which made him skeptical of Lei Yu.

“Of course . Even if I’m cheating you, there’s no great loss to you since the cost is so cheap . You might as well give it a try . ” Lei Yu casually replied.

After thinking it through, the old man felt it made sense and nodded in agreement . Lei Yu then started telling the list of herbs to the old man; there weren’t a lot so it was easy to remember . The old man then left afterwards.

Someone in the crowd then shouted: “Hey, this is your so called try it out for us? You expect to

cheat us here by putting on a quack doctor show?”

Someone in the crowd then shouted: “Hey, this is your so called try it out for us? You expect to cheat us here by putting on a quack doctor show?”

“This is merely a snake’s gallbladder, or did you think I have a panacea here that can cure all illnesses in this world?!” Lei Yu sneered and continued: “If it was really a panacea, I’d leave it for myself to live forever instead of selling it here! A bunch a commoners that don’t know good from bad, scram if you’re not buying!”

“Wait a minute!”

“Swoosh!”

The sound of a fan closing was heard . The previous young man who hadn't said a thing smiled, “Friend, you still haven't allowed me to try out this thousand year old snake's gallbladder yet so we can't just let it go like that . ”

Lei Yu gave him a cold glance, “Your appearance looks healthy and your blood is filled with vitality, aren't you just here to cause trouble?”

“Let me tell you...!” The young man coldly harrumphed, “My father is a tycoon in this Silicon Town . What I have is plenty of money so I'm gonna go straight ahead and try it out . If this truly is a treasure, then



I'll definitely buy it from you . If you happen to be swindling the public here, don't blame me for destroying your stall and breaking your legs!"

Lei Yu has seen many troublemakers in his life, yet he was a bit surprised to find this type of people existed in this strange new world as well . It looks like tyrants can appear anywhere and teaching them a lesson isn't something he was shy about.

Lei Yu folded back his sleeves, "Since this noble sir wants to try out the medicinal effect, one would need an illness this snake's gallbladder can treat . Otherwise, how can we test it out if you have a headache or a brain inflammation?"

Lei Yu folded back his sleeves,  
“Since this noble sir wants to try out  
the medicinal effect, one would  
need an illness this snake’s  
gallbladder can treat . Otherwise,  
how can we test it out if you have a  
headache or a brain inflammation?”

“That’s right! Young noble Chen,  
testing out a medicine requires the  
correct sick person right?”

The crowd started discussing  
amongst themselves . These people  
here were afraid of this little bully  
of the Chen family . This brat’s  
family was beyond wealthy and was  
usually rude and unreasonable . He  
would pretty much rob anything  
good he sees, and has never paid  
out any money when the bill came .  
With money and power, no one in

the town dared to provoke him.

“Stop being so f\*cking long winded!” The young man planted one foot on top of a nearby trailer, “Cure my eye illness if you have the ability!”

“Oh? What a coincidence! My thousand year old snake’s gallbladder is exactly useful when it comes to one’s eyes . May I ask young noble Chen, what is wrong with your eyes?” Lei Yu asked with a faint smile.

“I can’t see clearly! Damn! I can’t see that well, everything’s a blur in front of me!” The so called young noble Chen squinted his eyes and waved his arms about with a despicable look on his face.

This corner of the market was getting so lively that it started drawing more and more people, causing the other end of the market to quiet down . Many traders were curious about the commotion and started heading in that direction as well . Even Zhou Jun Sheng became curious so he packed up his unsold fur and tried squeezing in with the crowd.

He was surprised to see Lei Yu and just when he was about to call out, he noticed Lei Yu look at him and shake his head . Only then did Zhou Jun Sheng stop his actions.

At this time, a flash was seen in Lei Yu's hand and a sword appeared out of thin air . This attracted everyone's shocked gaze with eyes

round and wide.

He was surprised to see Lei Yu and just when he was about to call out, he noticed Lei Yu look at him and shake his head . Only then did Zhou Jun Sheng stop his actions.

At this time, a flash was seen in Lei Yu's hand and a sword appeared out of thin air . This attracted everyone's shocked gaze with eyes round and wide.

Lei Yu lightly smiled and used his sword to cut a piece the size of a fingernail from the snake's gallbladder . “Swallow it . Any symptoms your eyes are suffering from, will be immediately cured . ”

This young noble Chen didn't

hesitate to grab the piece of snake's gallbladder from Lei Yu's hand .

“Everyone, if my eyes cannot be cured today, I hope everyone will be my witness when I drag this fraudster to court . If it does cure me, then I will definitely buy this snake's gallbladder . ”

“What a rascal, do you dare to eat it?” Lei Yu had a strange look on his face that one cannot see through . Especially his eyes; no one dared to stare at it longer than three seconds . Even this self proclaimed super awesome young noble Chen didn't dare.

“Stop being so arrogant and just watch me eat this thing . If there aren't any changes, I will make you regret it!” He lifted his head up and

placed the snake's gallbladder inside his mouth before swallowing it without chewing.

Everyone knows that there's only a single word to describe a snake's gallbladder: bitter . No one would dare to chew on it or else that bitterness would permeate the entire mouth . The taste of it was so bad that it was just like eating a mouthful of Chinese Goldthread.

After a while, the young noble Chen angrily glared: "There's no effect, this daddy still can't see clearly!"

Lei Yu shook his head, "Don't use the words 'this daddy' in front of me because I'm giving you a taste of flight . Right, there's a side effect of using this snake's gallbladder: It

will give the consumer the ability to fly into the air for a short period of time . ”



# Chapter 364:

## Crystal Stones As Currency

“Fraudster! You big fraudster! Let me see you make me fly!”

Lei Yu’s eyebrows slightly rose up, “You want to fly right? Sure, how about a spin to the Silicon Mountains?” As his voice faded, one could see Lei Yu’s fingers move slightly and a strong formless energy rushed out of his fingertips . As if his fingers were connected to the young noble Chen, the young noble Chen’s mouth was agape when he started floating into the air . Lei Yu flipped his fingers and the

young noble Chen started flying away towards the Silicon Mountain.

Lei Yu naturally wasn't going to take his life but a small punishment was in order . That young noble Chen started flying towards the Silicon Mountain where Lei Yu had just walked through . Behind the young noble Chen were still several people part of his retinue, and they were all scared stiff . Lei Yu smiled, "Why aren't you chasing after your young noble? Do you think my magical medicine has enough juice to send him back into town?"

"You... you just wait!" Those lackeys immediately rushed off towards the mountain . If anything bad happened to their family's young master, they'd probably be beaten

to death by the town's tycoon upon returning to the manor.

“Wow! This is too amazing, too amazing!”

“This thousand year old snake's gallbladder is truly a divine object, a divine object!”

The crowd was all full of praises . The previous middle-aged man that wanted to lower the price was filled with apology, “I didn't know the special abilities of this medicinal item so please don't take offense to my previous actions . ”

Lei Yu waved his hands and smiled, “You only wanted to lower the price which is normal for trading, but that guy came here to deliberately

cause trouble . That's why I had to give him a small punishment . This snake's gallbladder is merely a snake's gallbladder, so how could it give people the ability to fly?"

"Eh? Haha, haha..."

"Haha..."

Seeing the rascal being punished, the crowd felt happy about it and their eyes showed a hint of friendliness when they looked at Lei Yu.

"Brother! Brother truly made a good move . " Zhou Jun Sheng made his way through the crowd and arrived in front of Lei Yu.

"What happened? How come the fur hasn't been sold yet?" Lei Yu

asked with a smile.

One could see Zhou Jun Sheng helplessly shake his head, "It looks like my mother will go hungry another day . It's really irritating but if I cannot sell the fur, so I'm unable to buy more rice for the house . "

Lei Yu's eyebrows faintly rose up from hearing that . He had a lot of crystal stones on him but it's probably not the currency of this world . The only thing he could do was to help sell those furs for a good price . Since most of the crowd hadn't dispersed yet, Lei Yu once again cried out:

"The weather is turning cool soon . I have with me several pieces of

fine looking fur that can be turned into warm leather clothing . If anyone is interested, please come up to buy it . ”

As Lei Yu’s voice faded, it appeared not too many people were interested in it . Then it was that same middle-aged man who walked up to look at the fur.

“How much are the fur?” Asked the middle-aged man.

“How much are the fur?” Asked the middle-aged man.

Zhou Jun Sheng gave Lei Yu a look of gratitude before smiling at the middle-aged man, “Only two crushed crystal stones . ”

“Crystal stones?” Lei Yu exclaimed

in surprise.

“That’s right... is it too expensive?”  
Zhou Jun Sheng asked in a strange manner.

The middle-aged man was also surprised . He looked at Lei Yu and didn’t understand his reaction.

Lei Yu never imagined that this world would also use crystal stones as currency . If he knew this earlier, he wouldn’t have had this righteous and friendly brother sell that fur for such a cheap price.

Lei Yu hadn’t paid attention to the currency people were exchanging for goods in the market, that’s why he was so surprised . It looks like he could be considered a tycoon here

as well with the crystal stones he had in possession . Thinking to this point, Lei Yu unconsciously laughed out a bit.

“What’s wrong brother?” Zhou Jun Sheng asked.

Lei Yu shook his head, “No, nothing . Brother, you don’t need to sell that fur anymore . I have with me...”

“No way!” Zhou Jun Sheng interrupted Lei Yu’s words .

“Brother doesn’t need to help me out like this . The money I earn from selling the furs is more practical . If I just took brother’s money, then there’s simply no way I can return this favor!”

“No way!” Zhou Jun Sheng



interrupted Lei Yu's words .

“Brother doesn't need to help me out like this . The money I earn from selling the furs is more practical . If I just took brother's money, then there's simply no way I can return this favor!”

Lei Yu was once again moved by Zhou Jun Sheng's righteous aura . He then nodded in a pleased manner before thinking to himself: “I definitely have to help him somehow before I leave . At least make it so that his mother and he can live a life without worrying about clothes or food . ”

“This brother is really an upright individual . I will buy your furs and I will give you an additional crushed crystal stone, but I do have a

request that comes with it . ” The middle-aged man immediately took out three pieces of crystal stones Lei Yu was used to seeing, but they were only one-third the size of a normal stone.

“What request do you have?” Zhou Jun Sheng asked.

“I was hoping you two will accompany me to a restaurant and have a drink with me . It is my honor to get to know the two of you and I merely want to show a token of my goodwill . ” The middle-aged man smiled as his eyes revealed a touch of sincerity . He wanted to figure what’s the mystery behind Lei Yu’s profound eyes was and also show his respects to Zhou Jun Sheng’s righteous blood.

“This...” Zhou Jun Sheng glanced at Lei Yu.

“Since this friend is so sincere, brother and I shouldn’t refuse .” Lei Yu smiled faintly . He also knew why Zhou Jun Sheng was hesitating but didn’t say out loud.

Accompanying the middle-aged man, they arrived at a restaurant . Although this restaurant wasn’t the most luxurious one in the town, it still showcased its own elegant flair . The second floor tables they went up to were against the window overlooking a small river . The weather had started to turn cool and the willow trees next to the river had started to turn yellow, but the scenery was still pleasant enough to give it a different sort of

atmosphere.

The food here seemed quite normal and Lei Yu came to a conclusion after a while: This world was very similar to the ancient times of his own world except for the currency and the people here didn't have any special abilities.

There were large plates of meat and large bowls of wine being brought up . Zhou Jun Sheng had a slightly unhappy look on his face but Lei Yu patted his shoulders and said:  
“Brother, just be patient a little bit longer . ”

After that, Lei Yu started chatting with the middle-aged man for a while before excusing himself to the restroom . At a place where no

one was around, he then flew off into the air towards the Silicon Mountain . While in the air, he happened to notice some people on the ground supporting a familiar youth that was filled with bruises . Lei Yu smiled to himself and continued flying.

There were large plates of meat and large bowls of wine being brought up . Zhou Jun Sheng had a slightly unhappy look on his face but Lei Yu patted his shoulders and said: “Brother, just be patient a little bit longer . ”

After that, Lei Yu started chatting with the middle-aged man for a while before excusing himself to the restroom . At a place where no one was around, he then flew off

into the air towards the Silicon Mountain . While in the air, he happened to notice some people on the ground supporting a familiar youth that was filled with bruises . Lei Yu smiled to himself and continued flying.

“Auntie, auntie!” Lei Yu arrived at the small farmhouse surrounded by a fence.

“Who is it? Who are you?” Zhou Jun Sheng’s mother stood up and asked.

“I am Jun Sheng’s good brother; he wanted me to come pick you up to go back to the Silicon Town . ” Said Lei Yu.

The old woman shook her head,

“My son should be in the town’s market doing some small trades right now, so why would he have you pick me up?”

“Auntie, you don’t know but Jun Sheng and I became good friends quickly and become sworn brothers . He is currently at my house right now and wants you to go over as well . ” Lei Yu didn’t have a good explanation so he could only come up with a lame excuse.

“I’m not going! My son isn’t someone that will owe others favors so it’s impossible he would leave me at home like this . If he really wanted me to go, he would have personally came back to escort me there, so how would he have you pick me up?” The old woman was

very stubborn . Lei Yu then said to himself: “This son and mother duo’s temper is so similar, what should I do? I can’t just force her there right?”

Lei Yu had good intentions, but didn’t want it to cause his new sworn brother to be unhappy . Just when seemed to be out of options, an idea formed in his head.



# Credits

Translator: [omgitsaray translations](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)